Early Rehoboth

Documented Historical Studies of Families and Events in This Plymouth Colony Township

Ref
974.4
B77

By
RICHARD LEBARON BOWEN

46- 6207

VOLUME I

Re: Walkin

PRIVATELY PRINTED
REHOBOTH, MASSACHUSETTS
1945

PEDIGREE CHART

Norma Hansen Zaniewski
8924 W. Plainfield Ave.
Greenfield, WI 53228-2230

Chart No. ______

______ Person No. 1 on this chart is the same person as No.____ on chart No.____.

Date ______

b. Date of Birth
p.b. Place of Birth
m. Date of Marriage
d. Date of Death
p.d. Place of Death

CHART No. 1 MILWAUKEE COUNTY GE ICAL SOCIETY Rev. 1985

4 Philo Averill (Father of No. 2)
b. 20 March 1768
p.b. New Preston/Kent Litchfield CT.
m. 16 April 18; Greenfield, Saratoga Co NY
p.m.
d. 22 October 1844
p.d. Hire Twp, McDonough Co IL

2 Norman Chancellor Averill (Father of No. 1)
b. 11 Jan 1815
p.b. Vevay, Switzerland Co, Indiana Terr.
m. 1 Aug 1844
p.m. Tennessee/Colchester, McDonough Co
d. 13 Feb 1902
p.d. Richmond Twp, Miami Co KS

5 Rebecca RICE (Mother of No. 2)
(Cousin of James Capron)
b. 27 April 1775
p.b. New York
d. 09 Sept. 1849
p.d. Colchester, McDonough Co IL

Fraternal

1 Sarah Jane Averill
b. 18 Oct 1849
p.b. Tennessee Twp, McDonough Co IL
m. 15 Sept 1867
p.m. Pilot Mound, Boone Co IA
d. 31 July 1897
p.d. Albany, Gentry Co. Mo.

Maternal

6 (Father of No. 3)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

3 Martha E Clayton (Mother of No. 1)
b. 10 Oct 1828
p.b.
d. 03 Jan 1908
p.d.

7 (Mother of No. 3)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(Rev) John Wesley White
b. 30 Nov 843 — 01 July 1929
p.b. Millville, Clayton Co IA; Centerville, Appanoose Co IA

8 (Capt) Moses Averill (Father of No. 4)
b. 06 March 1722/3
p.b. Preston, New London, CT
m. ~1748/9
p.m. New Milford CT
d. 22 Jan 1784
p.d. Washington, Litchfield Co CT

9 Martha Cogswell (Mother of No. 4)
b. 11 Nov 1728
p.b. Ipswich, Essex Co MAS.
d. 10 July 1781
p.d. Washington, Litchfield Co CONNecticut

(Not George Rice!)

140 Capt. John Rice (Father of No. 5)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d. Saratoga Co NY

11 (Mother of No. 5)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d. Saratoga Co NY

12 (Father of No. 6)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

13 (Mother of No. 6)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

14 (Father of No. 7)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

15 (Mother of No. 7)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

16 Isaac Averill (Father of No. 8, Cont. on chart No.____)
b. 10 Apr 1680, Topsfield, Essex MA
m. 16 May 1709 - Rehoboth
d. after 1744 +

17 Esther WALKER (Mother of No. 8, Cont. on chart No.____)
b. Mar. 1688 Rehoboth MA
d. after 1758 - Litchfield Co CT

18 Edward Cogswell (Father of No. 9, Cont. on chart No.____)
b. 9 Aug 1686
m.
d.

19 Hannah BROWN (Mother of No. 9, Cont. on chart No.____)
b. 1691 - Ipswich MA
d. 06 Jan 1771, Milford, Litchfield CT

20 (Father of No. 10, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
m.
d.

21 (Mother of No. 10, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

22 (Father of No. 11, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
m.
d.

23 (Mother of No. 11, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

24 (Father of No. 12, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
m.
d.

25 (Mother of No. 12, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

26 (Father of No. 13, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
m.
d.

27 (Mother of No. 13, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

28 (Father of No. 14, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
m.
d.

29 (Mother of No. 14, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

30 (Father of No. 15, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
m.
d.

31 (Mother of No. 15, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

Averill Ancestors

Norma (Hansen) Zaniewski

PEDIGREE CHART

Name of Compiler

Address 8924 W Plainfield

City, State Greenfield WI 53228

Date 9 Oct 1991

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same person as No. 418 on chart No. A-2

Chart No. A5(a)

b. Date of Birth
p.b. Place of Birth
m. Date of Marriage
d. Date of Death
p.d. Place of Death

16

(1672) 4 ? Walker
b. 15— (Father of No. 2)
p.b. ~~Scotland~~ or/Eng.
m. ca 1617 England
p.m.
d. ca 1650?
p.d. England

10

Indians burned his house – King Phillips War

(836) 2 (Deacon) Philip Walker (Sr)
b. 1625 (Father of No. 1)
p.b. (Northampton?) England
m. ca 1654
p.m. Dedham
d. bur. 21 Aug 1679
p.d. Seekonk (Rehoboth)

became the richest man in Rehoboth

ca 1643 Rehoboth

(1673) 5 (? Molly Browne)
"Widow Walker" (Mother of No. 2)
b. ca 159–
p.b. (Northampton?) England
d. ca 1650?
p.d. "Seekonk" Colony

Fraternal

9

(418) 1 Philip Walker (Jr)
b. Mar 1661
p.b. Rehoboth MA
m. ① 31 Dec 1687
p.m. Rehoboth
d. 17 Feb 1739/40
p.d. Rehoboth, Bristol Co MA

Maternal

1637 "John + Dorothy"

(1674) 6 Michael Metcalfe – Dedham
b. 17 June 1586 (Father of No. 3)
p.b. Tatterford, Norfolk, England
m. ① 13 Oct 1616
p.m. Waynham (near Norwich, Eng.
d. 24 Dec 1664
p.d. Dedham MA

manufacturer – his company: "Dornick" decor – a type of damask – persecuted by Archbishop Laud – took away his [illegible] leaving the [illegible] + put many people out of work

(837) 3 Jane (or Joane) Metcalfe
(Mother of No. 1)
b. 24 Mar 1632
p.b. St Edmondsbury, Norfolk, Eng.
d. 24 Oct 1707
p.d. Rehoboth, Bristol, MA

(1675) 7 Sarah Ellwyn
(Mother of No. 3)
b. 17 June 1593
p.b. Heigham, Norfolk, Eng.
d. 30 Nov 1644
p.d. Dedham MA

(419) Mary Bowen
(Spouse of No. 1)
b. 3 Oct 1664 d. 8 May 1694
p.b. Rehoboth p.d. Rehoboth

12

8 Walker
b. (Father of No. 4)
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

9
(Mother of No. 4)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

10 Browne?
b. (Father of No. 5)
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

11
(Mother of No. 5)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(3348) 12 (Rev) Leonard Metcalf
b. 1545 (Father of No. 6)
p.b. Apperside, North Riding, Yorkshire (in Wensleydale)
m.
p.m.
d. 22 Sep 1616 – Tatterford
p.d. West Barsham, Norfolk (estate)

(3349) 13 Amy
(Mother of No. 6)
b. 15
p.b.
d. 22 Dec 1602
p.d. Tatterford Norfolk, Eng.

(3350) 14 Thomas Ellwyn
b. 1566 (Father of No. 7)
p.b.
m. ① 1591
p.m.
d. 1648
p.d. Heigham, Nfk, Eng.

(3351) 15 Elizabeth Benslye
(Mother of No. 7)
b. 15—
p.b.
d. 1605–
p.d. Heigham Eng.

13

16 Walker
b. (Father of No. 8, Cont. on chart No.)
m.
d.

17
b. (Mother of No. 8, Cont. on chart No.)
d.

18
b. (Father of No. 9, Cont. on chart No.)
m.
d.

19
b. (Mother of No. 9, Cont. on chart No.)
d.

20 Browne?
b. (Father of No. 10, Cont. on chart No.)
m.
d.

21
b. (Mother of No. 10, Cont. on chart No.)
d.

22
b. (Father of No. 11, Cont. on chart No.)
m.
d.

23
b. (Mother of No. 11, Cont. on chart No.)
d.

(6796) 24 (? Michael) Metcalf
b. ca 1500 (Father of No. 12, Cont. on chart No.)
m. Yorkshire, Eng
d.

25
b. (Mother of No. 12, Cont. on chart No.)
d.

26
b. (Father of No. 13, Cont. on chart No.)
m.
d.

27
b. (Mother of No. 13, Cont. on chart No.)
d.

(6700) 28 William Ellwyn
b. (Father of No. 14, Cont. on chart No. A5(b))
m.
d.

(6701) 29 Alice (?)
b. (Mother of No. 14, Cont. on chart No.)
d. 1602-3 Heigham England

30 Bensley
b. (Father of No. 15, Cont. on chart No.)
m.
d.

31
b. (Mother of No. 15, Cont. on chart No.)
d.

CHART No.

(Medieval England)

Averill Ancestors

FOUR GENERATION ANCESTOR CHART

Name of Compiler Norma (Hansen) Zaniewski
Address 8924 W Plainfield
City, State Greenfield WI 53228
Date Nov 1990

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same person as No. 6700 on chart No. A5(a)

(16) Chart No. A5(b)

b. Date of Birth
p.b. Place of Birth
m. Date of Marriage
p.m. Place of Marriage
d. Date of Death
p.d. Place of Death

(13)

(6700)
1 William Ellwyn
b. ca 1535 ?
p.b. Heigham, Norfolk, Eng.
m. 15
p.m.
d. 1610/11
p.d. Heigham, Norfolk, Eng

(14)

(13,400)
2 (?) Elwyn (Father of No. 1)
b. ca 1505 ?
p.b.
m.
p.m. Norfolk, Eng.
d. before 1556
p.d. Norfolk

3 (13,401) (Mother of No. 1)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(15)

(26,800)
4 Peter Elwyn (Father of No. 2)
b. ca 1480
p.b. Woodalling
m.
p.m.
d. 1557
p.d. Woodalling, Norfolk, Eng.

(26,801)
5 Lucy (Mother of No. 2)
b.
p.b.
d. bef. 1556
p.d.

(26802)
6 (Father of No. 3)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

7 (Mother of No. 3)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(53,800)
8 John Elwyn
b. ca 1450 (Father of No. 4. Cont. on chart No.____)
p.b.
m. of Woodalling, Norfolk, Eng.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

(53,601)
9 Catherine
b. 14— (Mother of No. 4. Cont. on chart No.____)
p.b.
d. of Woodalling, Norfolk, Eng
p.d.

(53,602)
10
b. (Father of No. 5. Cont. on chart No.____)
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

11
b. (Mother of No. 5. Cont. on chart No.____)
p.b.
d.
p.d.

12
b. (Father of No. 6. Cont. on chart No.____)
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

13
b. (Mother of No. 6. Cont. on chart No.____)
p.b.
d.
p.d.

14
b. (Father of No. 7. Cont. on chart No.____)
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

15
b. (Mother of No. 7. Cont. on chart No.____)
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(6701) Alice Spouse of No. 1.
b. 15
p.b. Eng.
d. 1602/3
p.d. Heigham, Norfolk, Eng.

Form A24. Copyright by The Everton Publishers, Inc., P.O. Box 506, Logan, Utah 84321, publishers of THE GENEALOGICAL HELPER. Send for a free catalogue with lists and full descriptions of many genealogical aids.

OUR AVERILL REHOBOTH ANCESTORS

Before telling about this particular group of ancestors, it may be helpful to learn a little bit about what early Rehoboth was like. All of these families came to live there except the Metcalfs, whose daughter Jane went to live there as wife of Philip Walker. The original settlement was actually the area called "Seekonk," purchased from the Indians with the aid of Philip's maternal uncle, Mr. John Browne, one of the Plymouth Colony Assistants. Actually, some of the purchase conflicted with the Royal grant of Rev. Roger Williams who founded Rhode Island, though at the time he did not resist, and they were governed by Plymouth Colony, soon spreading out into that colony's rightful territory. The part of Seekonk (later called Rehoboth) where Philip Walker and Richard Bowen lived is now in East Providence, Rhode Island, but the reversion did not occur during their lifetimes. The accompanying map shows this better than I can explain it.

All these families came to New England for religious freedom during the Great Migration of the 1630's and some of them resided at first in Massachussetts Bay Colony but, finding Puritanism there too strict, moved in a very few years to the less oppressive Plymouth Colony. Our Welsh Baptist Bowens were among those. Others like Mr. John Browne were more inclined toward the beliefs of the Mayflower Pilgrims than Puritans. His nephew Philip Walker, however, upon marrying Jane, daughter of Michael Metcalf of Dedham, one of the staunchest of Puritans, became a devout Congregational deacon. The hard work of taming the wilderness by the sweat of one's brow and establishing a cultured society (they provided well for teachers and schools from the start) plus time and proximity gradually drew sons and daughters of these opinionated proprieters to marry across religious lines.

Since these families differed so much in religious ideology, what did they have in common to build a cohesive, mostly smooth-running society? A cursory reading of the 1836 History of Rehoboth, selected pages of which are included here as source material, reveals that, for one thing, this was a very class-conscious settlement in which one's rank in society back in England was of primary importance. They even had a "gentlemen's agreement" not to allow others to settle there without permission of the selectmen. Only 58 "lots" were granted. The size of the lots was guided by the amount of the applicant's estate! Though that was not uncommon in early New England, this group was overall wealthier than most. On the bright side, taxes were apportioned in the same way.

> "About the year 1643, a joynt agreement was made by the inhabitants of Sea-conk alias Rehoboth, ffor the bringing in of their estates; that soe men's lotments might be taken up according to person and estate, as alsoe for the carrieing on of all publick chardges both for present and future; furtheremore the means and interest of what is heare expressed is that by which lands, now granted by the Court of Plymouth to the towne, is to be divided according to person and estate, as is expressed in this following list."

The list of how much each of the proprietors owned is on pages 25/6 of the history, and you may read it. Widdow Walker, being a widow,

had an estate of £50, one of the lesser amounts, but she was by no means poor for many others had the same estate, including her grown son James. Her brother, Mr. John Browne, had the largest--£600, and his son John £50. Richard Bowen had £270 and Richard Bowen, Jr., from whom we descend, had £134. (Widow Walker's son Philip, thrifty and industrious, was later to become the wealthiest man in Rehoboth.)

No effort has been made to determine how many of those living in Seekonk in 1643 were armigerous, but presumably quite a number of them may have been. Our Averill ancestors living there included at least four gentle families entitled to use coat armory: Bowen, Browne, Elwyn and Metcalfe. It would not be surprising to learn that there were more, for we have not discovered the origins of some of our foremothers.

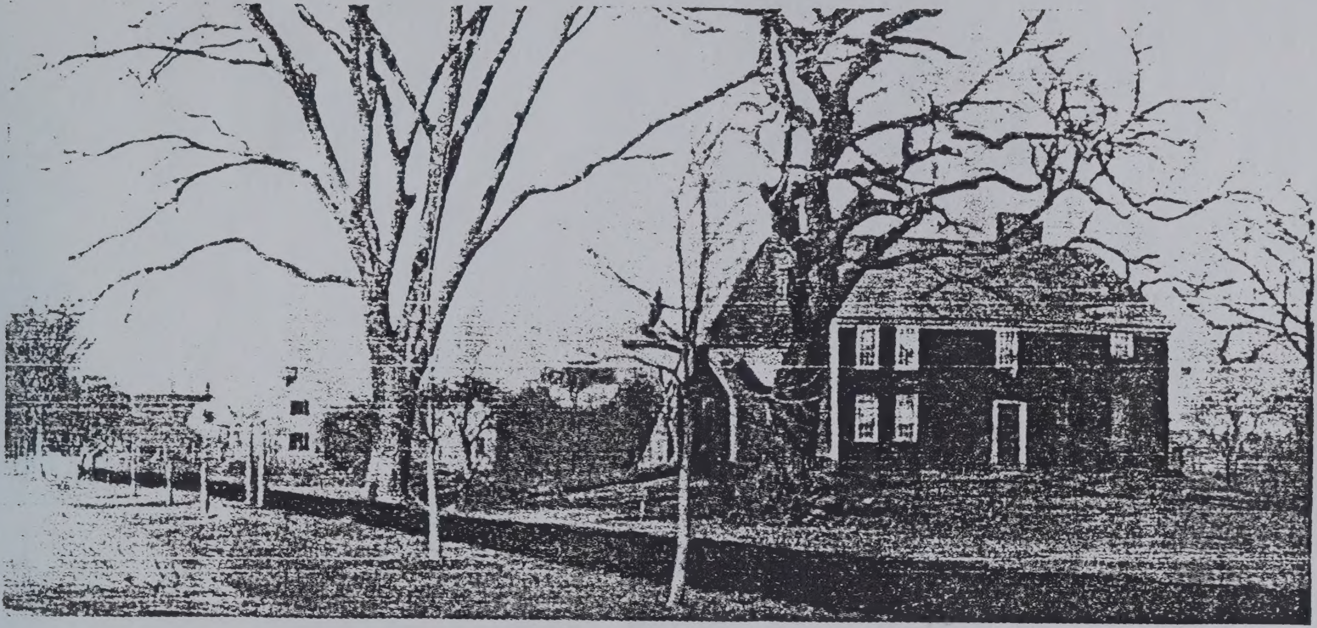
The Rehoboth history states that "Seacunk was first granted to people of Hingham, but they were soon joined by Mr. Newman and the majority of his church at Weymouth, who had grants as early as 1641" but that only Newman came from Weymouth.* Some of those from Hingham did come. Our John Sutton, a carpenter by trade and undoubtedly in great demand among those attempting to create homesteads in the wilderness, is on the list of those there in June 1644. He was a 1638 Hingham proprietor. Some of those on the 1643 list of 58 alotments failed to come, so we may assume Sutton purchased one of their lots, though which one is not a matter of record. The list of 58 is considerably different from the original by 31 June 1644 when the proprietors drew shares "for divisions of the woodland between the plain and the town."

Interestingly, the new list included Obadiah Holmes, a Baptist minister, for many of the families, including Bowens, had Baptist sentiments. Holmes conducted meetings in private homes during the 1640's, for the cards were stacked against him by the Puritan majority who pushed through their own agenda in favor of Rev. Samuel Newman. Our Richard Bowen, one of the seven selectmen (they called them townsmen; we would now say aldermen) attempted to carry out whatever policy was enacted by vote, in an impartial way. Nevertheless, by 1655 a schism of Rev. Holmes' followers had occurred, and much bitterness between the two sides. Though they did not believe in Congregationalism, the Baptists were being taxed to support Rev. Newman and his church. The case was taken to the Plymouth court, to compel them to pay. Mr. John Browne, "being one of the magistrates then sitting in that court, and one of the inhabitants of that town," but believing that people should not be forced to support a church they did not believe in, agreed to pay the tithes of the dissenters for a period of seven years himself, though he, himself, should move away from the place. The details are told in the history. (This is especially interesting to us because Obadiah Holmes, later of Rhode Island, is also our ancestor, though not in the Averill lines but the Pearce lines.)

Life went on, Rehoboth grew through several purchases from the Indians, and our ancestors prospered, at least until the outbreak of King Philips War of 1675/6 in which some of our kin fought and others were killed. The histories give details. Many more are supplied in this book.

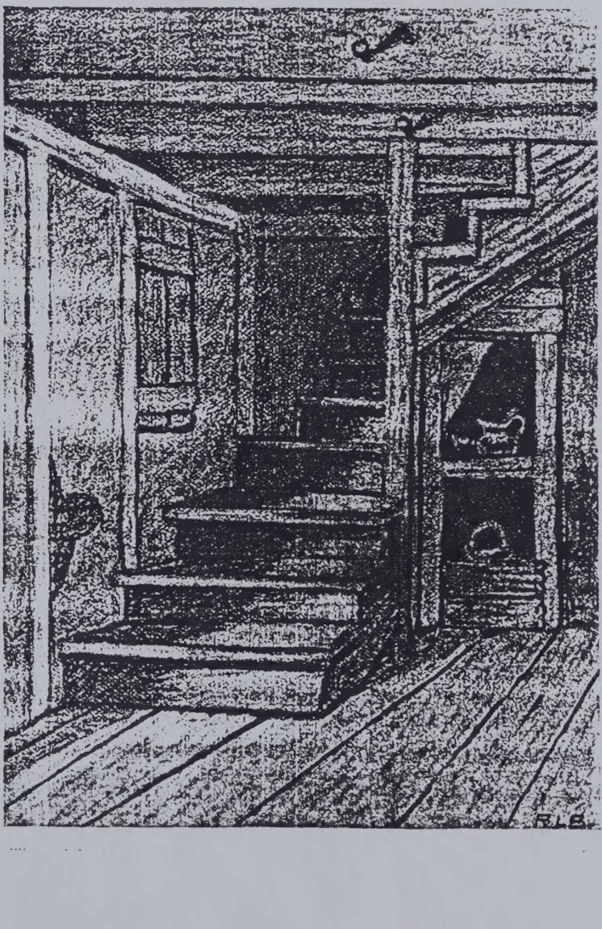
---

*Evidence, however, suggests more did come from there.



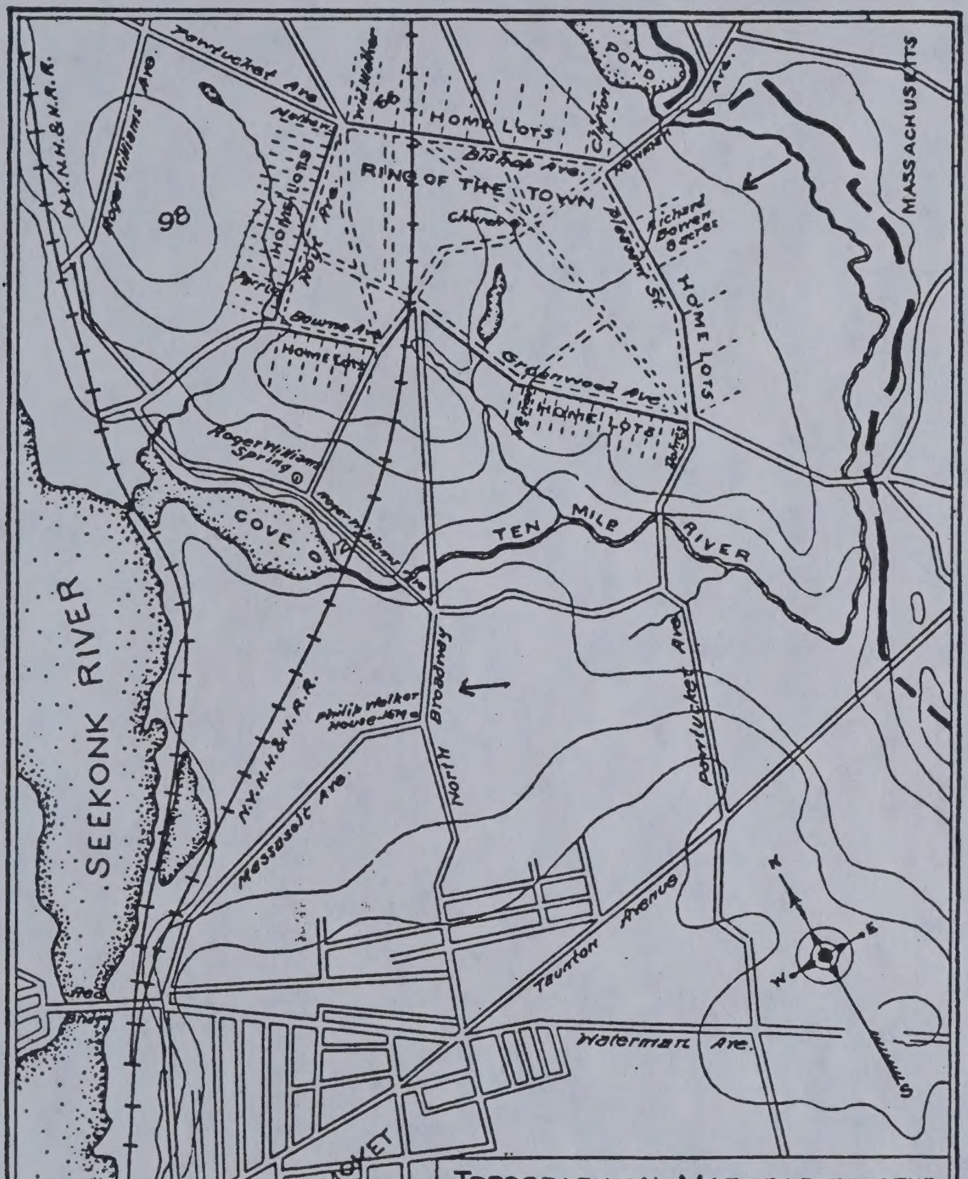
From My Ancestors in America.

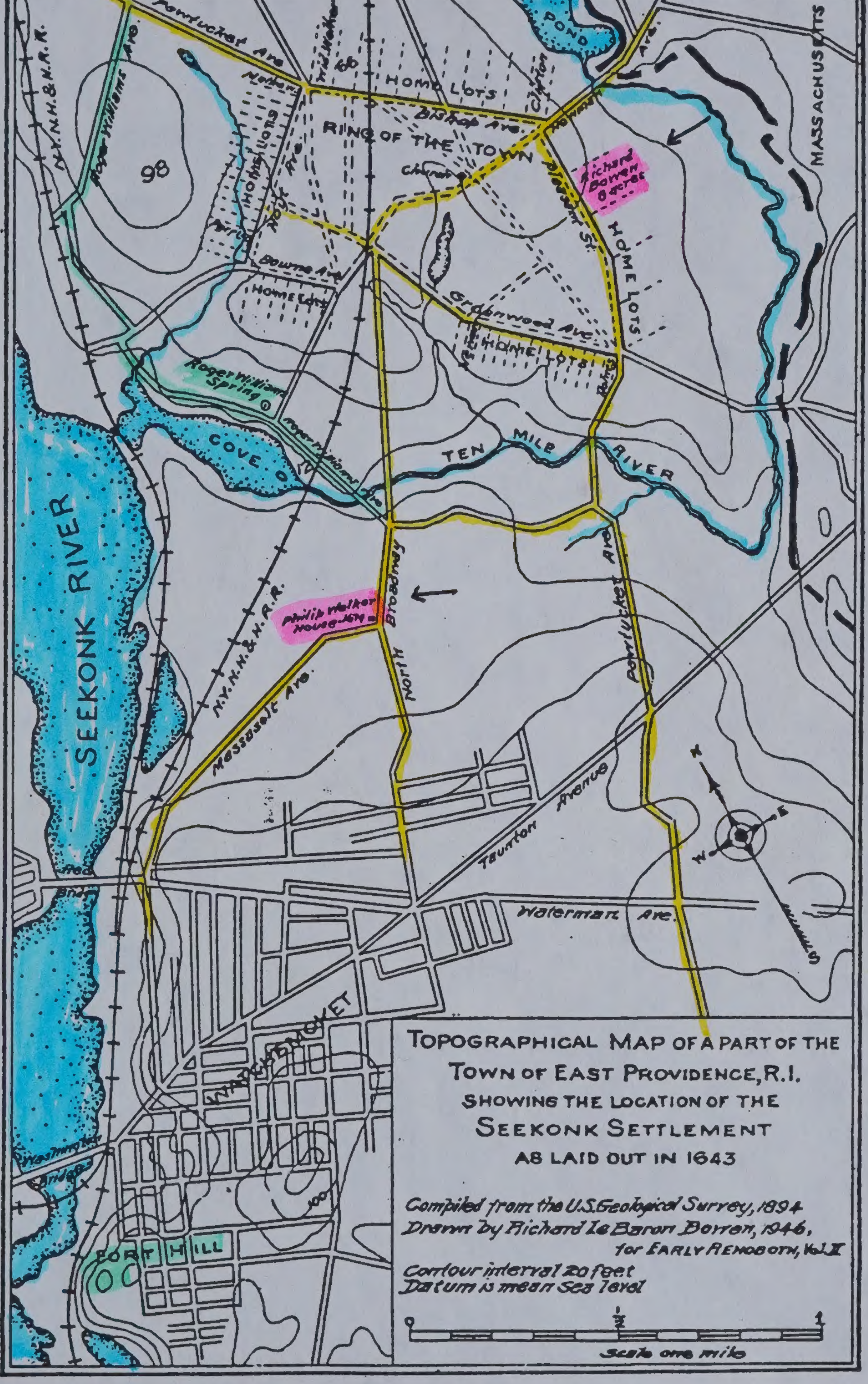
Deacon Philip Walker's house, corner of Massasoit Ave. & North Broadway, E. Providence RI, as it appeared in 1890. The house is still standing, and still in the possession of descendants. The right hand half is the original house built by Deacon Walker in 1679; the left hand half was added about a hundred years later. This is the oldest surviving house in Old Rehoboth, built 36 years after the settlement of Seekonk in 1643.



Right- original attic staircase in the old Philip Walker house, home of Mary (Bowen) Walker who died in the epidemic on 8 May 1694. (Pencil sketch-R.L. Bowen, 1892) The ancient staircase was removed in 1899 to provide space for a bathroom.

Arrows on this map show locations of the homes of Esther (Walker) Averill's grandparents. She grew up in the "Philip Walker House." The larger than average size of their home lots is indicative of the families' standing in the community. (Also note Bishop Ave. at top of map--is that a clue to where Isaac was staying when he met Esther?)


Pawtucket Ave.
N.Y.N.H.&H.R.R.
Roger Williams Ave.
98
POND
Newman Ave.
MASSACHUSETTS
HOME LOTS
Bishop Ave.
RING OF THE TOWN
Church
Richard Bowen 8 acres
Pleasant St.
HOME LOTS
Bowne Ave.
Home Lots
Greenwood Ave.
HOME LOTS
Roger Williams Spring
COVE
TEN MILE RIVER
SEEKONK RIVER
Philip Walker House-1674
North Broadway
Pawtucket Ave.
Massasoit Ave.
Taunton Avenue
Red Bridge
Waterman Ave.
N
E
W
S
WATCHEMOKET
Washington Bridge
FORT HILL
100
TOPOGRAPHICAL MAP OF A PART OF THE
TOWN OF EAST PROVIDENCE, R.I.
SHOWING THE LOCATION OF THE
SEEKONK SETTLEMENT
AS LAID OUT IN 1643
Compiled from the U.S. Geological Survey, 1894
Drawn by Richard Le Baron Bowen, 1946,
for EARLY REHOBOTH, Vol. II
Contour interval 20 feet
Datum is mean Sea level
0
½
1
Scale one mile


Pawtucket Ave.
N.Y.N.H.&H.R.R.
Roger Williams Ave.
Newman
Wilmarth
HOME LOTS
POND
Clifton
Ave.
Bishop Ave.
RING OF THE TOWN
Church
Richard Bowen 8 acres
MASSACHUSETTS
98
HOME LOTS
Hoyt Ave.
Perrin
Bowne Ave.
HOME LOTS
Pleasant St.
HOME LOTS
Greenwood Ave.
HOME LOTS
Roger Williams Spring
COVE
Roger Williams Ave.
TEN MILE RIVER
SEEKONK RIVER
Philip Walker House-1674
North Broadway
Massasoit Ave.
N.Y.N.H.&H.R.R.
Pawtucket Ave.
Taunton Avenue
Waterman Ave.
Red Bridge
WATCHEMOKET
Washington Bridge
100
FORT HILL
N
E
S
W

TOPOGRAPHICAL MAP OF A PART OF THE
TOWN OF EAST PROVIDENCE, R.I.
SHOWING THE LOCATION OF THE
SEEKONK SETTLEMENT
AS LAID OUT IN 1643

Compiled from the U.S. Geological Survey, 1894
Drawn by Richard Le Baron Bowen, 1946,
for EARLY REHOBOTH, Vol. II

Contour interval 20 feet
Datum is mean Sea level

0
½
1

Scale one mile

Coats of arms which belonged to our Rehoboth families:

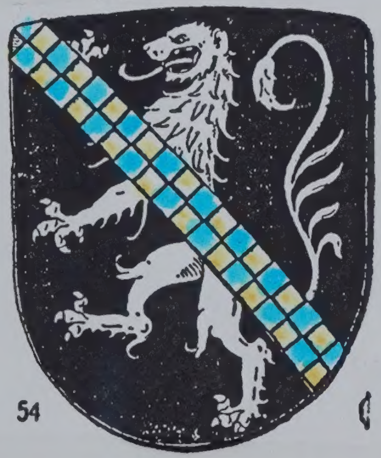
Bowen Azure, a stag argent, with an arrow stuck in the back and attired or.
Crest: A stag standing, vulned in the back with an arrow proper
Motto: Esse quam videri (To be rather than to seem)

Browne Sable, a lion silver, a bend checky gold and azure
Crest: A demi-lion silver

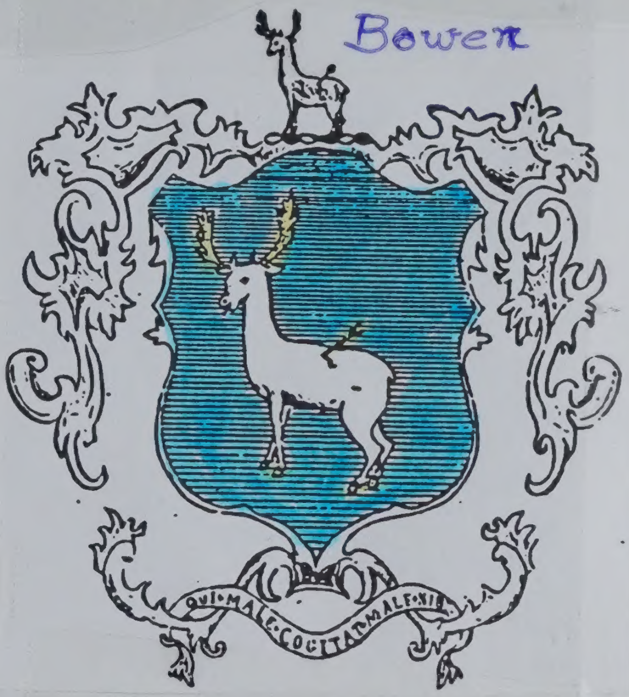
Metcalf Argent, three calves statant, sable
Crest: A talbot sejant argent, spotted liver color, resting the dexter paw on an escutcheon, or

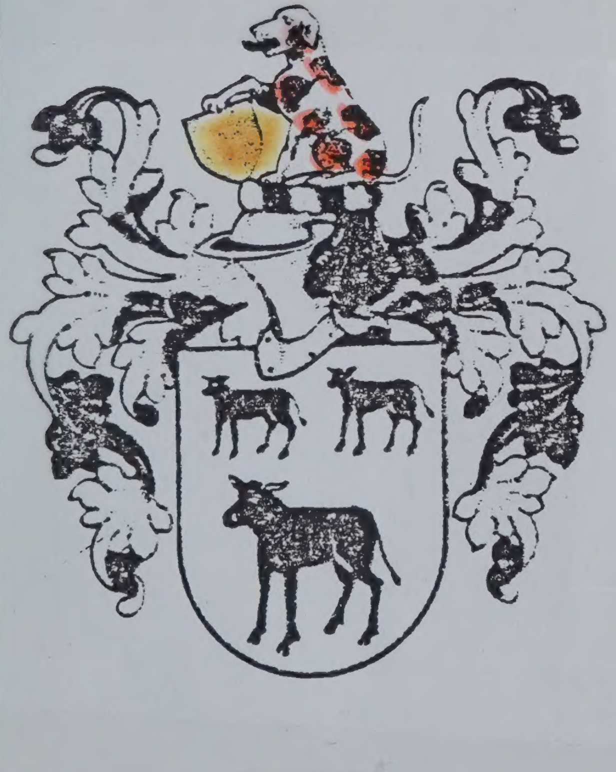
Ellwyn Silver, a chevron gules between three martlets, sable

Browne



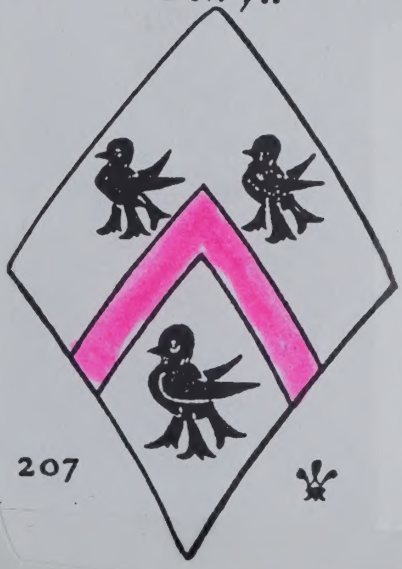
Bowen





METCALF

Elwyn



Smead®
No. 150C
HASTINGS, MN
LOS ANGELES-CHICAGO-LOGAN, OH
McGREGOR, TX-LOCUST GROVE, GA
U.S.A.

SUTTON FAMILY

Of all our old Rehoboth kin, the least has been found in print about our Suttons, though what little there is shows that they were useful and respected citizens. John Sutton, our forefather, was a carpenter working at his trade in the small city of "Attleburry" (Attleborough) Norfolk, England, at the time of the Great Migration to New England. It is claimed, though good documantion has not been published, that his father was Henry and his grandfather Theron Sutton. Our foremother's given name was Julian; her maiden name has not yet been discovered.

During the reign of King Charles I, Archbishop William Laud, violently opposed to every other sect, became Anglican Arshbishop of Canterbury, and under him a bloody wave of persecution esued. Norfolk was considered a hotbed of Puritanism; many there were massacred because they would not renounce their faith-which they dared not do for the sake of their immortal souls. It is not surprising that so many fled. As early as 1635 a number of Norfolk families fled to New England. A group of them started a new settlement which they called Hingham in honor of their former place of residence.

In 1638 John and Julian Sutton and their four children, including our little Esther, were aboard the ship "Diligent" bound for Hingham where they were duly admitted as inhabitants and gifted with a 4-acre home lot where John, with the help of the oldest child, John Jr, constructed a home and carpenter shop. Carpenters, of course, were much needed by families trying to carve out a new existence in the wilderness, so perhaps the Suttons came there partly for economic opportunity as well as freedom of conscience.

The family stayed in that place about five years, during which time two more little daughters were born, though one died. Early in 1644 they decided to join with other Hinghamites in moving to a brand new settlement of a little less strict religious requirements which had just begun at Seekonk, called "Rehoboth." Good carpenters were much in demand. A number of the new settlers were rather well-to-do and willing to pay well for good construction. Before leaving, they deeded the lot in Hingham to young John, their only son, who may have been fresh-married, though if so no record of their marriage has been found. Young John carried on the carpentry business there for over a decade, then moved to Scituate in Plymouth Colony where, in 1661, he married a local girl, Elizabeth House, andhad a large family. Little John III was born in 1663.

When John Sr. and Julian moved to Rehoboth they took the rest of their children, four daughters. A fifth little daughter, Hannah, had since died. So many records have not survived that it is impossible to give their birth orders accurately, byt our Esther married Richard Bowen, Jr.; Mary married Sgt. John Fitch; Anne married John Daggett, Jr. and Margaret married Joseph Carpenter, who came from a well-to-do and literate family.

SUTTON FAMILY (2)

Because our Suttons came from such a strict Puritan area in old England, it might be assumed that they were themselves strict Puritans, but I have not found that in writing though it may be so. Many of the Hinghamites who came to Rehoboth did so to get away from Puritan (Congregational) bigotry. It is interesting to note that when John Jr. moved to Scituate there were other Suttons there. Many early historians assumed they were related to our family, but that does not appear to be the case. One of them, George Sutton of Tenterden, Kent (which is in a different part of SE England) was a Quaker, who later migrated to North Carolina to be part of a Quaker group there.

Those who are familiar with the ancient history of England will remember that East Anglia in which Norfolk is now situated) was settled by the Angles and Kent by Jutes with a few others later. That was so long ago that much migration within Britain occurred in the thousand intervening years, however, and Kent and Norfolk are close by water. The name Sutton is a place-name, meaning "southtown" in old English. There are many little bergs called Sutton in England.

For more information see the family record sheet in this section, and the Bowen Family section regarding Esther (Sutton) Bowen's children, plus a few more details in our collection. There are a few notes on another page regarding Esther's sisters' Carpenter/Fitch/Daggett families.

It is not possible to tell the amount of John Sutton's estate, as one can of our families on the 1643 list. They were affluent enough to donate their Hingham home and carpentry business to their son when they bought the Rehoboth place, and undoubtedly goods or real estate to their daughters at time of marriage. As they grew older there were more distributions of assets.Rehoboth Deeds Vol 3, pt 1, 146 says, 28 May 1669 - "John Sutton of Rehoboth, carpenter, with consent of his wife Juliom Sutton deeded to Jonathan Fuller of Rehoboth 3 acres and 3 rods of upland at Wachemachett. Wit: William Carpenter and Joseph Bowen. (grandsons?)

It is interesting to note from the Rehoboth history that when the town of Rehoboth was laid out there were 58 lots with lists of amounts of the proprietors' estates. But some of them did not actually settle but rather sold their holdings to approved newcomers. It was not shown whom the Suttons purchased from, but the 1644 list, which does not include amount of estates shows additions and deletions still totals 58 residents, one of whom was John Sutton. On 31 June 1644, the proprietors drew shares "for divisions of the woodlands between the plain and the town," with the richest proprietors getting the largest acreage in accordance with the customs of that day and age.

John Sutton died 1 June 1672 leaving "Goods and Chattles totaling £55-03-00. Inventory taken by "Lieftenant Peter Hunt, Ensigne henery Smith and William Carpenter. (Plymouth Co. Wills V3 part 1, pg 53) Julian, our foremother, died 4 June 1678. "Inventory of the estate of Widdow Julian Sutton" submitted by son-in-law John ffitch of Rehoboth £27-16-02, taken by Peter Hunt, Nicholas Pecke, Daniel Smith & William Carpenter.Jr. (ibid V3 pt2, pg 55). She left to son-in-law Fitch "the charges he had been at with her."

SUTTON FAMILY (2)

Because our Suttons came from such a strict Puritan area in old England, it might be assumed that they were themselves strict Puritans, but I have not found that in writing though it may be so. Many of the Hinghamites who came to Rehoboth did so to get away from Puritan (Congregational) bigotry. It is interesting to note that when John Jr. moved to Scituate there were other Suttons there. Many early historians assumed they were related to our family, but that does not appear to be the case. One of them, George Sutton of Tenterden, Kent (which is in a different part of SE England) was a Quaker, who later migrated to North Carolina to be part of a Quaker group there.

Those who are familiar with the ancient history of England will remember that East Anglia in which Norfolk is now situated) was settled by the Angles and Kent by Jutes with a few others later. That was so long ago that much migration within Britain occurred in the thousand intervening years, however, and Kent and Norfolk are close by water. The name Sutton is a place-name, meaning "southtown" in old English. There are many little bergs called Sutton in England.

For more information see the family record sheet in this section, and the Bowen Family section regarding Esther (Sutton) Bowen's children, plus a few more details in our collection. There are a few notes on another page regarding Esther's sisters' Carpenter/Fitch/Daggett families.

It is not possible to tell the amount of John Sutton's estate, as one can of our families on the 1643 list. They were affluent enough to donate their Hingham home and carpentry business to their son when they bought the Rehoboth place, and undoubtedly goods or real estate to their daughters at time of marriage. As they grew older there were more distributions of assets.Rehoboth Deeds Vol 3, pt 1, 146 says, 28 May 1669 - "John Sutton of Rehoboth, carpenter, with consent of his wife Juliom Sutton deeded to Jonathan Fuller of Rehoboth 3 acres and 3 rods of upland at Wachemachett. Wit: William Carpenter and Joseph Bowen. (grandsons?)

It is interesting to note from the Rehoboth history that when the town of Rehoboth was laid out there were 58 lots with lists of amounts of the proprietors' estates. But some of them did not actually settle but rather sold their holdings to approved newcomers. It was not shown whom the Suttons purchased from, but the 1644 list, which does not include amount of estates shows additions and deletions still totals 58 residents, one of whom was John Sutton. On 31 June 1644, the proprietors drew shares "for divisions of the woodlands between the plain and the town," with the richest proprietors getting the largest acreage in accordance with the customs of that day and age.

John Sutton died 1 June 1672 leaving "Goods and Chattles totaling £55-03-00. Inventory taken by "Lieftenant Peter Hunt, Ensigne henery Smith and William Carpenter. (Plymouth Co. Wills V3 part 1, pg 53) Julian, our foremother, died 4 June 1678. "Inventory of the estate of Widdow Julian Sutton" submitted by son-in-law John ffitch of Rehoboth £27-16-02, taken by Peter Hunt, Nicholas Pecke, Daniel Smith & William Carpenter.Jr. (ibid V3 pt2, pg 55). She left to son-in-law Fitch "the charges he had been at with her."

with the descent from Vernon.

Broun. *See* BROWN, BROWNE.

Brown. Gilbert le Brun, and William, Normandy 1180–95, MRS. The name Brunus, or le Brun, frequently occurs in Normandy 1180–98, MRS; but it was so frequent in England in the next century (RH), that it probably included other families besides Norman, which it would be difficult to discriminate without extensive research. Some will be noticed under BROWNE.

Browne, a family evidently of foreign descent, one of whom, Hamo le Brun, was Lord of Stapleford and Tarvin, Cheshire, t. Henry II. This line is armorially connected with an Irish line, of whom William Brone witnessed the charter of Dunbrody 1178 (Mon. ii. 1027). Nigel le Brun had a writ of military summons 1309, and Fremond Bruyn was one of the Barons of Ireland 1315-17 (Palgr. Parl. Writs). From this line descend the Lords Oranmore.

Browne. Turulph, a companion of Rollo, obtained, 912, the barony of La Ferté (Firmitas), near Evreux, now la Ferté-Fresnel. His grandson of the same name lived t. Rich. I. (La Roque). Radulphus de la Ferté lived before 1000. William, his son, gave the forest of Notre Dame des Bois to St. Evroult Abbey. Hugh de la Ferté is mentioned by Wace at Hastings. Richard de la F. accompanied Robert of Normandy to Palestine 1096, and had eight sons, the youngest of whom, Gamel de la Ferté, surnamed le Brun, settled in Cumberland, where he had baronial grants from Waldeve Fitz-Gospatric, t. Henry I. The family of De La Ferté, also called le Brun, long flourished in Cumberland, and its name gradually changed to Broyne, Broun, and Browne. Anthony, younger son of Robert le Broune, M.P. for Cumberland 1317-1339, was father of Robert, from whom descended the Marquises of Sligo, Barons Kilmaine, and Viscounts Montague.

Norman People (RP 175)

NORMAN PEOPLE

(Walker) (p.437) see or Walcher: See WALLIKER
(which says - Richard Wilekier was in
Normandy (1180-95)

(Browne) → see clipping

Elwyn } not in book because ~~not in~~ only London
Metcalf } families ~~was~~ were looked.
Bersley }

(Sutton) - p 411 - long entry - Joad
related to Nevilles

Averill Ancestors

PEDIGREE CHART

Norma Zaniewski
8924 W. Plainfield Ave.
Greenfield, WI 53228-2230

Date

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same person as No.____ on chart No.____.

Chart No.____

b. Date of Birth
p.b. Place of Birth
m. Date of Marriage
d. Date of Death
p.d. Place of Death

Paternal

Maternal

1 Esther Walker
b. 21 Dec 1688
p.b. Rehoboth, Bristol MA
m. 16 May 1709
p.m. Rehoboth
d. after 1744
p.d. New Preston, Litchfield CT

Isaac Averill
(Spouse of No. 1)
b. 10 Nov 1680
p.b. Topsfield, Essex MA
d. after 1744
p.d. New Preston CT

2 Philip Walker, Jr.
(Father of No. 1)
b. Mar 1661
p.b. Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony
m. 31 Dec 1687
p.m. Rehoboth
d. 17 Feb 1739/40
p.d.

3 Mary Bowen
(Mother of No. 1)
b. 3 Oct 1666
p.b. Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony
d. 8 Mar 1694 (epidemic)
p.d. Rehoboth

4 (Deacon) Philip Walker
(Father of No. 2)
b. 1625
p.b. England
m. ca 1654
p.m. Dedham MA
d. bur 21 Aug 1679
p.d. Seekonk (Rehoboth) Plymouth Colony

5 Jane Metcalfe (or Jo Anna)
(Mother of No. 2)
b. 24 Mar 1632
p.b. St Edmondsbury, Norfolk, England
d. 24 Oct 1707
p.d. Rehoboth, Bristol, MA

6 Richard Bowen Jr
(Father of No. 3)
b. 162—
p.b. Ilston? Glamorgan, Wales
m. 4 Mar 1656
p.m. Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony
d. ca 1732?
p.d. Rehoboth

7 Esther Sutton
(Mother of No. 3)
b. ca 1626
p.b. Attleborough, Norfolk, England
d. 1675
p.d. Rehoboth,

8 Walker
(Father of No. 4)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d. after 1625
p.d. England

9 Molly? Browne
(Mother of No. 4)
b. 159— (Sister of Plymouth Co. Asst John Browne) & cousin of Anna (Browne) wife of Gov. Winthrop
p.b. (? Rutland Co?) England
d. ca 1650
p.d. "Seekonk" (Rehoboth) Plymouth Colony

10 Michael Metcalfe
*1637 "John & Dorothy"
(Father of No. 5)
b. 17 June 1586
p.b. Tatterford, Norfolk, England
m. 13 Oct 1616
p.m. Waynham (near Norwich) England
d. 24 Dec 1664
p.d. Dedham MA

11 Sarah Ellwyn
(Mother of No. 5)
b. 17 June 1593
p.b. Heigham, Norfolk, England
d. 30 Nov 1644
p.d. Dedham MA

12 Richard Bowen
(Father of No. 6)
b. ca 158?
p.b. Glamorgan? Wales
m. ca 1615?
p.m. lived at Kittle Hill (near Swansea)
d. 14 Feb 1674/5
p.d. Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

13 Ann (? Born)
(Mother of No. 6)
b. 15—
p.b. Wales?
d.
p.d.

14 John Sutton
+ 1638 "Diligent" to Hingham
(Father of No. 7)
b. ca 1595
p.b. Attleborough, Norfolk, England
m. before 1621
p.m. " "
d. 1672
p.d. Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

15 Julian
(Mother of No. 7)
b. ca 1600 Norfolk & Eng?
p.b.
d. 4 June 1678
p.d. Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

16 Walker
(Father of No. 8, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
m.
d.

17
(Mother of No. 8, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

18 Browne
(Father of No. 9 Cont. on chart No.____)
b. Coat of arms:
m. Sable a lion (silver) on a chief
d. chequy gold & azure

19
(Mother of No. 9 Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

20 (Rev.) Leonard Metcalfe
(Father of No. 10, Cont. on chart No.____)
b. 1541 Appleside, -
m. No. Riding, Yorkshire
d. 22 Sep 1616 Tatterford, Norfolk

21 Amy
(Mother of No. 10, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d. 22 Oct 1602, Tatterford

22 Thomas Ellwyn
(Father of No. 11. Cont. on chart No.____)
b. 1566
m. 1591
d. 1648 Heigham, Norfolk England

23 Elizabeth Bearsley
(Mother of No. 11, Cont. on chart No.____)
b. 15__
d. 1605, Heigham

24 Bowen
(Father of No. 12, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
m. Wales
d.

25
(Mother of No. 12, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

26
(Father of No. 13, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
m.
d.

27
(Mother of No. 13, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

28 Henry Sutton
(Father of No. 14, Cont. on chart No.____)
b. 15—
m. of Norfolk co Eng.
d.

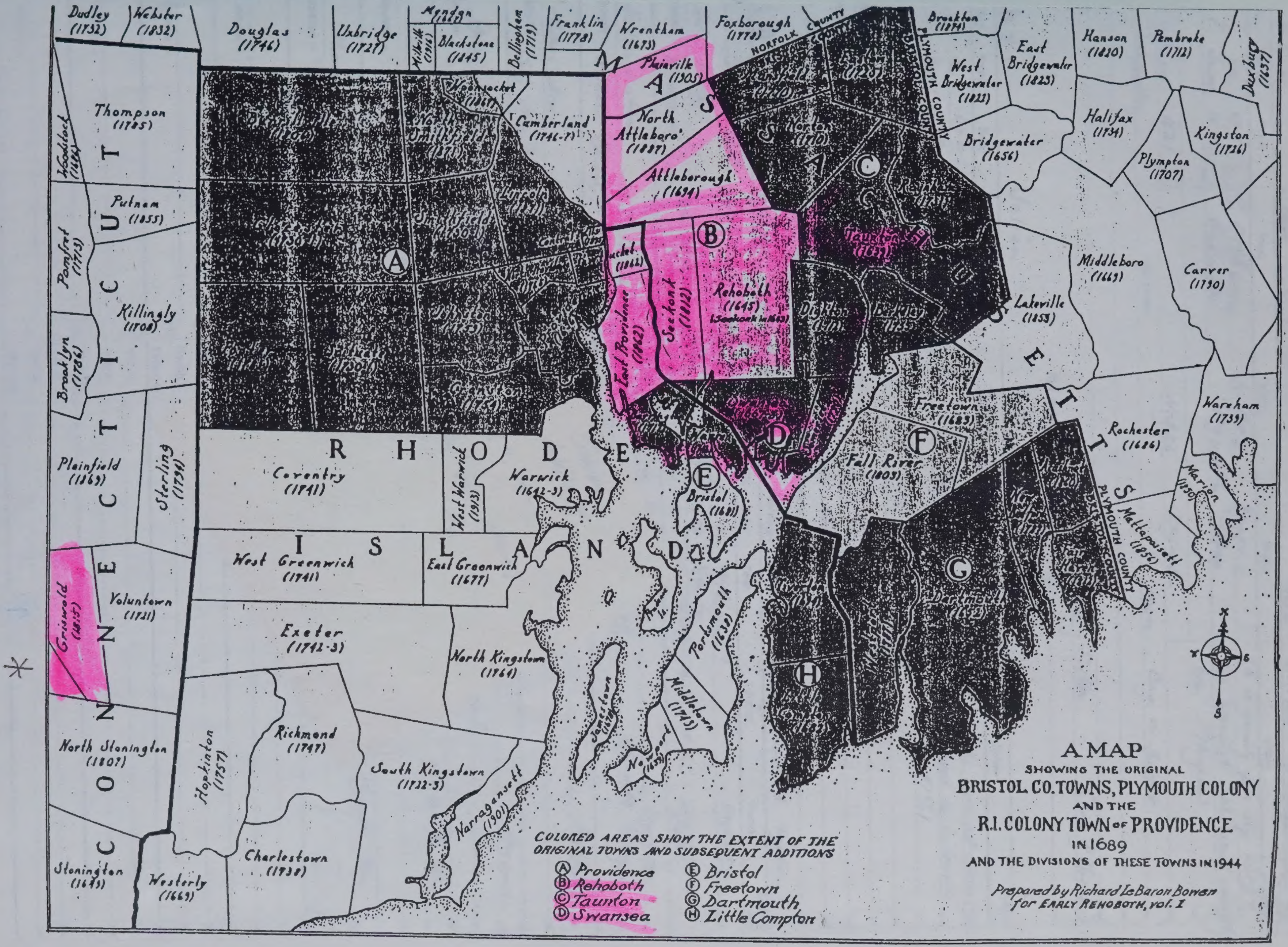
29
(Mother of No. 14, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

30
(Father of No. 15, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
m.
d.

31
(Mother of No. 15, Cont. on chart No.____)
b.
d.

CHART NO. 1 MILWAUKEE COUNTY GENE ICAL SOCIETY Rev. 1985

The inter-related families told about in these pages lived mostly in the areas highlighted in pink. After Isaac and Esther (Walker) Averill were married in Rehoboth (now East Providence) they went to live in Preston CT, just SW of what is shown as Griswold here.


Dudley (1732)
Webster (1832)
Douglas (1746)
Uxbridge (1727)
Millville (1916)
Mendon (1667)
Blackstone (1845)
Bellingham (1719)
Franklin (1778)
Wrentham (1673)
Foxborough (1778)
NORFOLK COUNTY
BRISTOL COUNTY
PLYMOUTH COUNTY
Brockton (1874)
West Bridgewater (1822)
East Bridgewater (1823)
Hanson (1820)
Pembroke (1712)
Duxbury (1637)
Plainville (1905)
MASSACHUSETTS
Woonsocket (1867)
Cumberland (1746-7)
North Attleboro' (1887)
Attleborough (1694)
Norton (1710)
Bridgewater (1656)
Halifax (1734)
Kingston (1726)
Plympton (1707)
Thompson (1785)
Woodstock (1686)
Putnam (1855)
Pomfret (1713)
Killingly (1708)
Brooklyn (1786)
Taunton (1639)
Rehoboth (1645) (Seekonk in 1812)
Seekonk (1812)
East Providence (1862)
Pawtucket (1862)
Dighton (1712)
Middleboro (1669)
Carver (1790)
Lakeville (1853)
Freetown (1683)
Swansea (1667)
Warren
Fall River (1803)
Rochester (1686)
Wareham (1739)
Marion (1852)
Mattapoisett (1857)
Plainfield (1869)
Sterling (1794)
Coventry (1741)
West Warwick (1913)
Warwick (1642-3)
Bristol (1681)
RHODE ISLAND
West Greenwich (1741)
East Greenwich (1677)
Portsmouth (1638)
Griswold (1815)
Voluntown (1721)
Exeter (1742-3)
North Kingstown (1764)
Jamestown (1678)
Middletown (1743)
Newport (1639)
CONNECTICUT
North Stonington (1807)
Hopkinton (1757)
Richmond (1747)
South Kingstown (1722-3)
Narragansett (1901)
Charlestown (1738)
Stonington (1649)
Westerly (1669)
A
B
C
D
E
F
G
H
N
E
S
W
*

A MAP
SHOWING THE ORIGINAL
BRISTOL CO. TOWNS, PLYMOUTH COLONY
AND THE
R.I. COLONY TOWN OF PROVIDENCE
IN 1689
AND THE DIVISIONS OF THESE TOWNS IN 1944

Prepared by Richard LeBaron Bowen
for EARLY REHOBOTH, vol. I

COLORED AREAS SHOW THE EXTENT OF THE ORIGINAL TOWNS AND SUBSEQUENT ADDITIONS

- Ⓐ Providence
- Ⓑ Rehoboth
- Ⓒ Taunton
- Ⓓ Swansea
- Ⓔ Bristol
- Ⓕ Freetown
- Ⓖ Dartmouth
- Ⓗ Little Compton

Sutton.
Look for more details in
"Early Rehoboth" and
Bristol County early records

Family Record (Averill Ancestors)

Family No.

Sutton
Surname

Father – John SUTTON

1638 + "Diligent" to Hingham (Plymouth Colony)

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1595	"Attlebury"	Norfolk	England	(6 in family per ship list)	
Death	1	June	1672	Rehoboth	Plymouth	Colony	So youngest 2 children evidently	
Buried							born in Hingham	
Married		before ca	1621		Norfolk	England		

Occupation carpenter, Military Church Cong. or Baptist?

Places Lived

Other Wives

His Father's Name Henry Sutton (son of Theron)

His Mother's Maiden Name

Mother – Julian

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1600?				Good records have not survived	
Death	4	June	1678	Rehoboth	Plymouth	Colony	Details confused by historians	
Buried							See NEHGR 91:61	

Occupation Military Church

Places Lived

Other Husbands

See Bowen Family for children of Richard Jr + Esther (Sutton) Bowen

Her Father's Name

Her Mother's Maiden Name

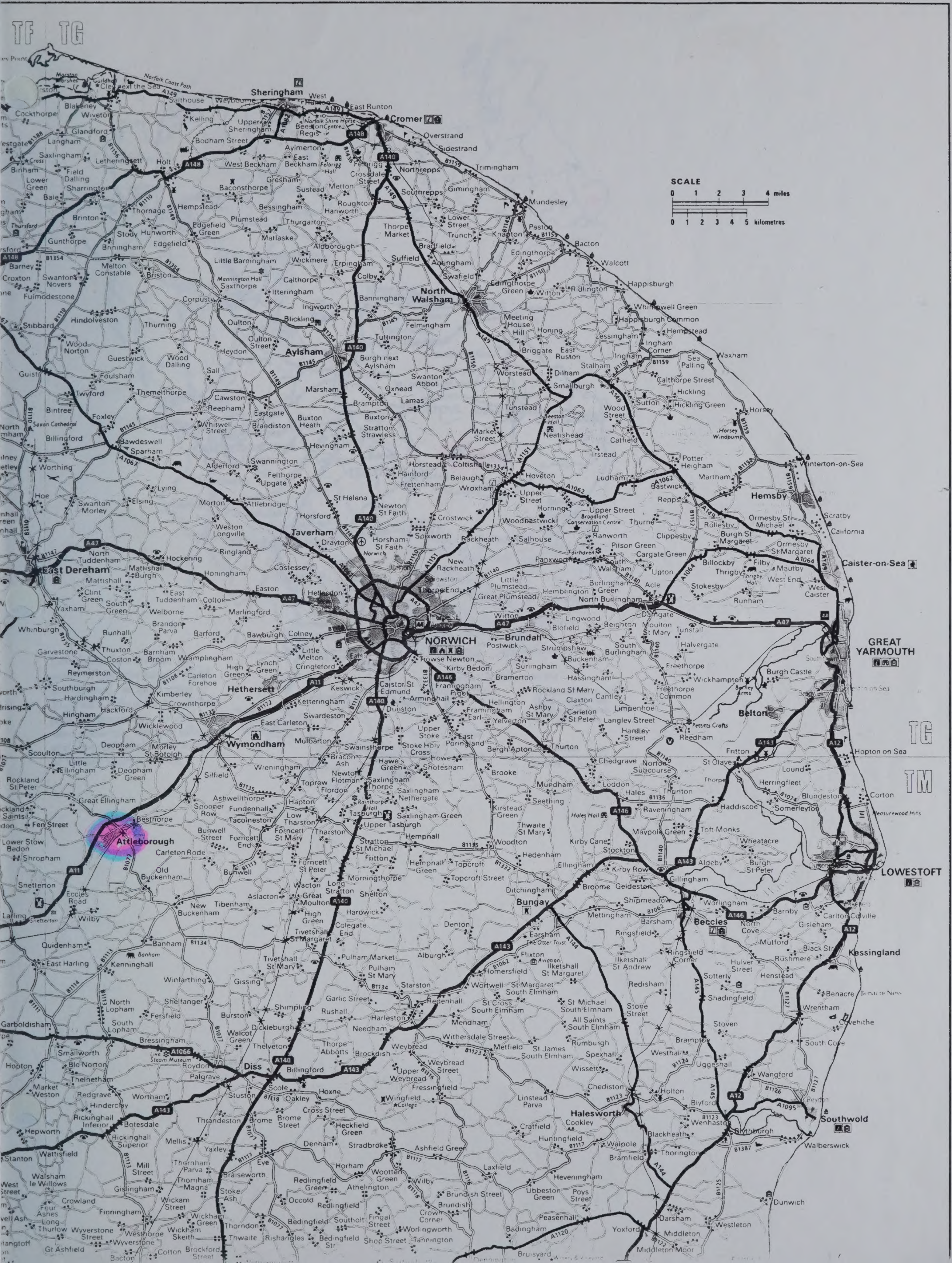
Children (Birthdates + order uncertain – Perhaps Hannah + Margaret younger + b. Hingham)

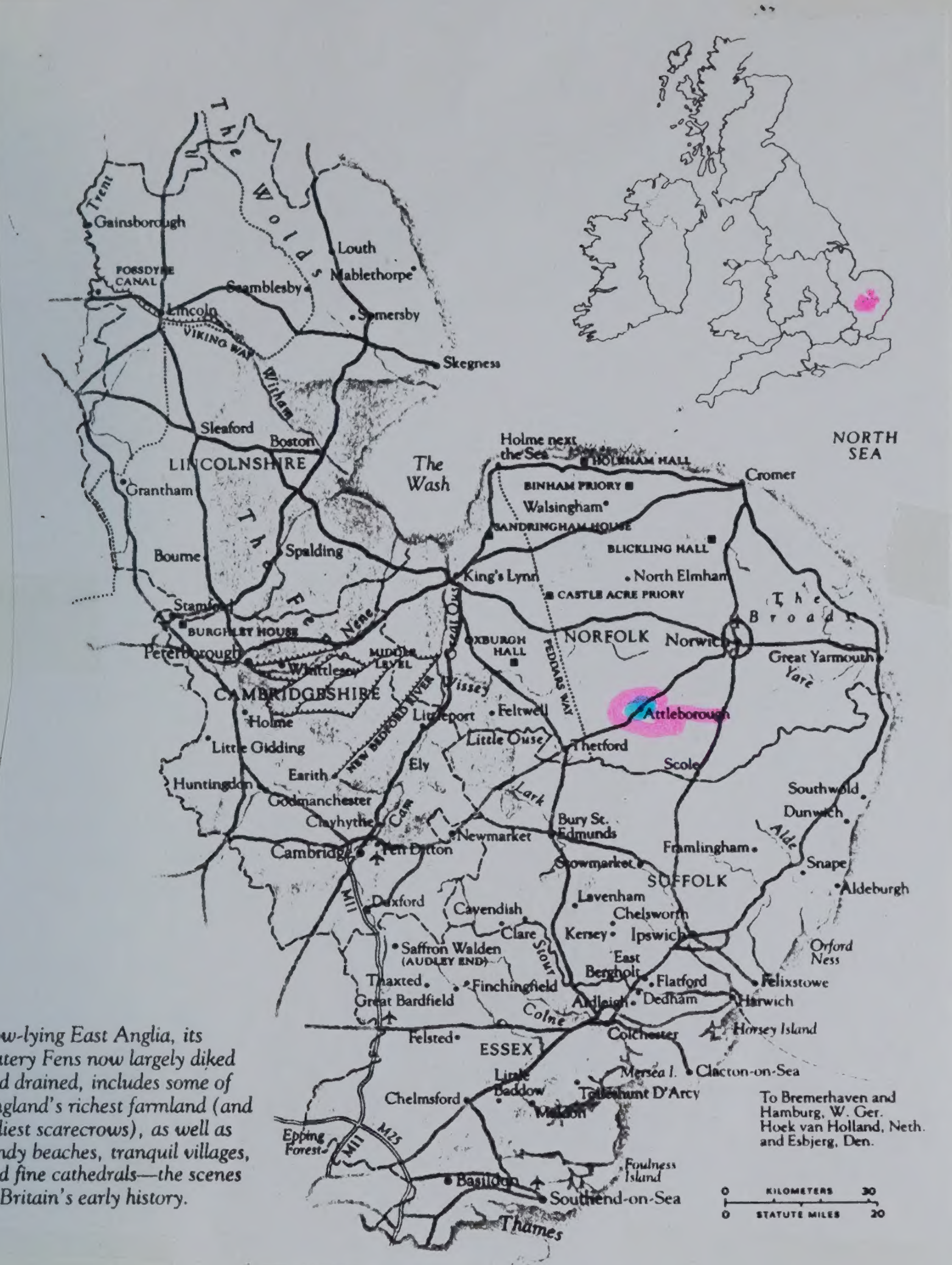
Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. John Sutton	Birth		ca	1621	Attleborough?		England	
		Death	? 6	June	1692	Situate			
	Spouse - Elizabeth House 2 (Samuel') (-1679+)	Married	(2?) 1	Jan	1661	(Recd fa's lands in Hingham - sold & moved to Situate)			
+	3 Esther Sutton	Birth		ca	1627			England	
		Death			1675	Rehoboth		Plymouth Colony	
	Spouse - Richard Bowen, Jr.	Married	4	Mar	1646	"		"	
	2. Mary Sutton	Birth		ca	1626			England	
		Death				Rehoboth			
	Spouse - (Sgt) John Fitch (-1698)	Married		ca	1650	"			
	4. Anne Sutton	Birth		ca	1629			England	
		Death		after	1673	Martha's Vineyard?			
	Spouse - John Daggett, Jr. (ca1626-1673)	Married	23	July	1651	"			
	6 Hannah Sutton	Birth		ca	16	Hingham		Plymouth Colony	
		Death		Oct	1642	"			
	Spouse - died young	Married		–					
	5 Margaret Sutton	Birth		ca	1638	Hingham		Plymouth Colony	
		Death			1700	Rehoboth?			
	Spouse - Joseph Carpenter (1633/4-1675)	Married	25	Nov	1655	Rehoboth		(Baptist)	
	7.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	8.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	9.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	10.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

Sutton


TF
TG
SCALE
0 1 2 3 4 miles
0 1 2 3 4 5 kilometres
Norfolk Coast Path
Sheringham
Cromer
Overstrand
Sidestrand
Trimingham
Mundesley
Bacton
Walcott
Happisburgh
North Walsham
Aylsham
Holt
East Dereham
Taverham
NORWICH
Brundall
Wymondham
Hethersett
Attleborough
Hemsby
Caister-on-Sea
GREAT YARMOUTH
Belton
Hopton on Sea
Lowestoft
LOWESTOFT
Beccles
Bungay
Kessingland
Southwold
Halesworth
Diss
Walberswick
Sutton
Stalham
Wroxham
Hoveton
Horsey
Winterton-on-Sea
Reedham
Loddon
Harleston
Eye
Scole
TG
TM
A11
A47
A140
A143
A146
A148
A149
A12
A144
A1066
A1062
A1064
A1151
B1145
B1159


Trent
Gainsborough
FOSSDYKE CANAL
The Wolds
Louth
Mablethorpe
Scamblesby
Lincoln
Somersby
VIKING WAY
Skegness
Sleaford
Boston
LINCOLNSHIRE
Grantham
Bourne
Spalding
Stamford
BURGHLEY HOUSE
Nene
Peterborough
Whittlesey
MIDDLE LEVEL
CAMBRIDGESHIRE
NEW BEDFORD RIVER
Holme
Little Gidding
Earith
Huntingdon
Godmanchester
Clayhythe
Cam
Cambridge
Fen Ditton
Mill
Duxford
Holme next the Sea
HOLKHAM HALL
BINHAM PRIORY
Walsingham
SANDRINGHAM HOUSE
BLICKLING HALL
King's Lynn
North Elmham
CASTLE ACRE PRIORY
OXBURGH HALL
NORFOLK
PEDDARS WAY
Norwich
Great Yarmouth
Yare
Cromer
NORTH SEA
Wissey
Littleport
Feltwell
Attleborough
Little Ouse
Thetford
Ely
Lark
Scole
Southwold
Dunwich
Alde
Newmarket
Bury St. Edmunds
Framlingham
Stowmarket
SUFFOLK
Snape
Aldeburgh
Lavenham
Cavendish
Chelsworth
Clare
Kersey
Ipswich
Orford Ness
Saffron Walden (AUDLEY END)
East Bergholt
Flatford
Felixstowe
Thaxted
Finchingfield
Dedham
Harwich
Great Bardfield
Ardleigh
Colchester
Horsey Island
Felsted
ESSEX
Mersea I.
Clacton-on-Sea
Little Baddow
Tolleshunt D'Arcy
Chelmsford
Maldon
Epping Forest
M11
M25
Foulness Island
Basildon
Southend-on-Sea
Thames
To Bremerhaven and Hamburg, W. Ger. Hoek van Holland, Neth. and Esbjerg, Den.
0 KILOMETERS 30
0 STATUTE MILES 20

Low-lying East Anglia, its watery Fens now largely diked and drained, includes some of England's richest farmland (and jolliest scarecrows), as well as sandy beaches, tranquil villages, and fine cathedrals—the scenes of Britain's early history.

NEHGR Vol 15

"Diligent" passenger List

DANIEL CUSHING'S RECORD.

DANIEL CUSHING of Hingham, one of the Founders of New England, left the following record of Norfolk emigrants. Mr. Cushing, we are told, in the excellent Address by Solomon Lincoln, Esq., on the two hundredth anniversary of the settlement of Hingham, "was conspicuous in the annals of that town, in various public offices, especially in those of Town Clerk and a Magistrate." He left among his papers an account of those emigrants, which is appended to Mr. Lincoln's Address. It had not before been printed. It was thought the propriety of admitting it here would not be questioned, and the Author of the Address being applied to, kindly allowed it to be added to the other lists in this work.

"A list of the names of such persons as came out of the town of Hingham, and Towns adjacent in the County of Norfolk, in the Kingdom of England, into New England, and settled in Hingham, in New England, most of them as followeth :—

1633. Imprimis, in the year of our Lord God 1633, Theophilus Cushing came from Hingham in Norfolk, and lived several years at Mr. Hains's (Hayne's) farm and many years before he dyed he lived at Hingham, in New England, and there he dyed, being about 100 years old, and was blind about 25 years of the said time. 1

* 1633. Edmond Hobart, senior, came from said Hingham, with his wife and his son Joshua and his daughters Rebekah and Sarah and their servant Henry Gibbs, into New England, and settled first at Charlestown and after, the said Edmond Hobart and his son Joshua and Henry Gibbs settled in this Town of Hingham. 3

Also Ralph Smith came from Old Hingham and lived in this town. 1

1633. Also Nicholas Jacob with his wife and two children, and their cosen Thomas Lincoln, weaver, came from Old Hingham, and settled in this Hingham. 4 1

1633. Also Edmond Hobart and his wife came from Old Hingham, and settled in this Hingham. 2

1633. Also Thomas Hobart came from Windham, with his wife and 3 children, and settled in Hingham. 5

1634. Thomas Chubbuck and his wife came and settled in this Hingham. 2

1635. Mr. Peter Hobart Minister of the Gospell, with his wife and 4 children, came into New England, and settled in this town of Hingham, and was Pastor of the Church years. 6

1635. Mr. Anthony Cooper with his wife and 4 sons and 4 daughters and 4 servants, came from Old Hingham, and settled in New Hingham. 14

1635. John Farrow and his wife and child came from Old Hingham, and settled in New Hingham. 3

1635. William Large and his wife came and settled at New Hingham. 2

Also George Ludkin his wife and son. 3

* Edmont Hobart (Hubbard) an Dodge ancestor

1637. John Tower and Samuel Lincoln came from Old Hingham, and both settled at New Hingham. 2
Samuel Lincoln living some time at Salem.

49

1638. Mr. Robert Peck preacher of the Gospell in the Town of Hingham, in the County of Norfolk, in Old England, with his wife and 2 children and two servants came over the sea, and settled in this Town of Hingham, and he was teacher of the Church. 6

1638. Mr. Joseph Peck and his wife with 3 sons and daughter, and 2 men servants and 3 maid servants came from Old Hingham and settled in New Hingham 10

1638. Edward Gillman, with his wife 3 sons and two daughters and 3 servants, came and settled in this Town of Hingham. 8

1638. John Foulsham and his wife and two servants, came from Old Hingham and settled in New Hingham. 4

1638. Henry Chamberlin shoe maker his wife and his mother and two children, came from Old Hingham and settled at New Hingham 5

1638. Steven Gates his wife and 2 children, came from Old Hingham, and settled in New Hingham.

37

1638. George Knights his wife and child came from Barrow, and settled in New Hingham. 3

1638. Thomas Cooper and his wife and two children and two servants and two other persons (viz:) John Tufts and Robert Skouling, came from Old Hingham, and thereabout, and settled in New Hingham. 8

1638. Mathew Cushing and his wife and 4 sons and one daughter, and his wife's sister Frances Ricroft, widow came from Old Hingham and settled at New Hingham. 8

1638. John Beale, shoemaker, with his wife and 5 sons and 3 daughters and 2 servants, came from Old Hingham and settled at New Hingham. 12

1638. Elizabeth Sayer and Mary Sayer came from Old Hingham, and settled in New Hingham. 2

1638. Francis James and his wife and 2 servants (to witt) Thomas Sucklin and Richard Baxter came from Old Hingham and settled in New Hingham. 4

1638. Philip James his wife and 4 children and two servants (viz) William Pitts and Edward Michell came from Old Hingham and settled in New Hingham. Philip James dyed soon after he came. 8

1638. James Buck with his servant John Morfield, came from Old Hingham and settled in New Hingham. 2

1638. Also in the same ship that the above named persons came in, came divers other persons out of several towns near to Old Hingham, (viz:) Steven Paine with his wife and 3 sons 4 servants, came from Great Ellingham and settled in New Hingham. 9

✓ 1638. John Sutton and his wife and four children came from Atleburraye, (Attleboro') and settled in New Hingham. 6

(Averill ancestor)

1638. Steven Lincoln and his wife and his son Steven, came from Windham, and settled in New Hingham. 3

1638. Samuel Packer and his wife and child came from Windham, and settled in New Hingham. 3

1638. Thomas Lincoln and Jeremiah Moore came from Windham, and settled in New Hingham. 2 ← Abraham Lincoln's forefather.

1638. Mr. Henry Smith and his wife and 3 sons and two daughters, and three men servants, and 2 maid servants, and Thomas Mayer came from Ha**en Hall in Norfolk, and settled in New Hingham. 13 ?

1638. Mr. Bozone Allen and his wife and two servants came from Lynn, in Norfolk, and settled in New Hingham. 4
Also William Riply and wife and 4 children. 6

1638. Mathew Hawk and his wife, and his servant John Ferring, came from Cambridge, in Old England, and settled in New Hingham. 3

96

All the persons above named that came over in the year 1638, were 133, came in one ship called the Diligent of Ipswich; the master was John Martin of said Ipswich. All before named that came before were 42 persons.

133
42
175

All of them settled in this * * Town of Hingham.

1639. Edmond Pitts and his wife and child and his brother Leonard Pitts and Adam Foulsham, came from Old Hingham and settled in New Hingham. 5
Frances Ricroft died in a few weeks after she came; and Mr. Robert Peck his wife his son Joseph and his maid went to England again in the year 1641.

1638. William Riply and his wife and 2 sons and two daughters came from Old Hingham, and settled in New Hingham. 6

1635. John Smart and his wife and 2 sons, came out of Norfolk, in Old England, and settled in New Hingham. 4

1637. Henry Tuttil and his wife, and Isaac Wright, came out of Norfolk, and settled in New Hingham. 3

1637. William Ludkin, the Smith, and his wife came from Norwich, and settled in New Hingham. 2

1637. From * * * in Norfolk came John Cutler, and his wife 7 children one servant. 9

10
19

All the persons that came from Norfolk in Old England in several years (viz:) beginning to come in the year 1633, until the year and in the year 1639, were 206. The most of them came from Old Hingham, and the rest of them from several other towns thereabout and settled in this town of New Hingham."

	£	s.	d.
20. Abram Martin	60	10	00
21. The Teacher	100	00	00
22. Edward Seale	81	00	00
23. John Browne	50	00	00
24. Mr. Howward	250	00	00
25. Mr. Peck	535	00	00
26. Mr. Obediah Holmes, now Robert Wheaton's.	100	00	00
27. Edward Smith	252	00	00
28. Job Lane, now Robert Abell's.	50	00	00
29. Thomas Hitt	101	00	00
30. James Walker, now John ffitche's.*	50	00	00
31. Thomas Blyss	153	00	00
32. The Governor's lot, now Richard Bullock's.	200	00	00
33. Isaack Martin, now Thomas Wilmot's.	50	00	00
34. Robert Morris	94	10	00
35. Edward Bennet, now Rich. Bowen's, Jr.	134	10	00
36. The Pastor	100	00	00
37. Mr. Henry Smith	260	00	00
38. Mathew Pratt	239	00	00
39. John Megg's	120	00	00
40. Thomas Clifton, now Stephen Payne's Jr.	160	00	00
41. Joseph Torry, now John Peck's.	134	00	00
42. Tho. Cooper	367	00	00
43 Robert ffullor	150	00	00
44. John Allen	156	00	00
45. Ralph Allen	270	00	00
46. Edward Gillman, now Joseph Peck's.	306	00	00
47. Tho. Houlbrook	186	10	00
48. Will. Carpenter	254	10	00
49. John Houlbrook, now Nicholas Ide's.	186	10	00
50. Robert Titus, now Robert Jones's.	156	10	00
51. Will. Sabin	53	00	00
52. Stephen Payne	535	00	00
53. Mr. Browne	600	00	00
54. Edward Patteson, now John Woodcock's.	50	00	00
55. Peter Hunt	327	00	00
56. Robert Martin	228	10	00
57. Robert Sharp, but now Rice Leonard's.	106	00	00
58. Richard Bowen	270	00	00

[Proprietors' Records, vol. I. p. 1.]

At a meeting of the proprietors of Seekonk, (the date of which is torn off, though it was probably among the first,) it was voted, that nine men should be chosen to order the prudential affairs of the plantation, who should have power to dispose of the lands "in lots of twelve, eight, or six acres, as in their discretion they think the quality of the estate of the person do require." This applied to house-lots. It was further ordered, "that all other lots to be divided according to person and estate. One person to be valued at £12 sterling in the division of lands, and that no person should sell his improvements but to such as the towne shall accept of;" also voted, "that the meeting-house shall stand in the midst of the town."

On "the 21st of the 4th month" [June,] a town meeting was holden, but the records of it are so mutilated as to be mostly illegible. It appears, however, to relate to a new division of land. It was resolved, that on every fortieth day, a meeting should be holden by all the inhabitants "for the consideration and acting of such necessary affairs as concern the plantation."

"At a town meeting, the 31st day of the 4th month [June], 1644, lots were drawn for a division of the woodland between the plain and the town. Shares were drawn to the number of 58, as follows:

1. Mr. Winchester,
2. Mr. Leonard,
3. Peter Hunt,
4. William Cheesborough,
5. Ralph Allin,
6. John Holbrook,
7. John Perram,
8. The Schoolmaster,
9. Matthew Pratt,
10. William Carpenter,
11. Ephraim Hunt,
12. Samuel Butterworth,
13. Edward Patterson,
14. James Browne,
15. Richard Bowin,
16. Mr. Newman,
17. Mr. Peck,
18. Walter Palmer,
19. Abraham Martin,
20. John Sutton,
21. Robert Morris,
22. John Matthewes,
23. Isaac Martin,
24. James Walker,
25. Robert Titus,
26. Edward Seale,
27. George Kendrick,
28. ———,*
29. Thomas Bliss,
30. The Pastor's,
31. Stephen Payne,
32. Edward Smith,
33. William Smith,
34. James Clark,
35. The Governour,
36. Edward Bennett,
37. Obadiah Holmes,
38. Mr. Browne,
39. Thomas Cooper,
40. Thomas Holbrooke,
41. Thomas Hitt,
42. John Allin,
43. John Meggs,
44. William Sabin,
45. Mr. Henry Smith,
46. Zachery Roades,
47. Edward Gilman,
48. Thomas Clifton,
49. Joseph Torrey,
50. Thomas Dunn,
51. Robert Martin,
52. Widow Walker,
53. John Miller,
54. Mr. B——,*
55. The Teacher,
56. John Cooke,
57. Ralph Shepherd,
58. John Reade.

On "the 3d of the 5th month [July], 1644," the inhabitants signed a compact in the following words:

---

* Instead of a capital letter, the small letter is frequently doubled.

* These names I was not able to decipher.

by George Lincoln
From History of Hingham pp 227-8 (Genealogy Vols II/III)

SUTTON.

JOHN "and his wife and four children came from Atleburraye and settled in New Hingham, 1638." (Cushing's MS.) But little is known here of his fam. or of his personal history. That land was early granted to him by the inhabitants of Hing. will be seen by the foll. extract. Suffolk Deeds, vol. iii. pp. 401, 402, 403: "To all Xpiañ people to whom these p^{r}nts shall Come John Sutton junior of Cittuate in New England Carpinter" . . . conveys to "Mathew Cushen Senior of Hingham" . . . "my house & all my house lott Containeing fower accres of land" . . . "w^{ch} was giuen by the Town of Hingham to John Sutton my father" . . . "And another Lott Containeing twelue accres of Land" . . . "on the great plaine" etc. This conveyance was made 2 Dec. 1653, and acknowledged before "Jo: Endecott Gov^{r} the 22th day of December," 1660.

Hannah, perh. a member of this fam., d. in Hing. Oct. 1642. (Hobart's Journal.)

NATHANIEL of Scit s. of John and gr. s. of George,* an early settler of that town, m. in Hing. May 26, 1709, Margaret Ray, dau. of James and Elizabeth (Foster) Ray. She was b. in Hing. Feb. 6, 1682–83.

Child, b. prob. at Scit., —

i. RAY, 1709–10. m. in Hing. sec. pre., Aug. 1, 1734, Susannah Tower, dau. of Hezekiah and Elizabeth (Whiton) Tower. She was b. in Hing. Apr. 16, 1707, and surviving him, m. (2) Nov. 22, 1739, Chasling Worrick. Ray d. 20 Sept. 1737, æt. 27 yrs. His ch., b. in Hing. sec. pre., were: 1. *Susanna*, bt. Oct. 19, 1735, d. 18 Dec. 1737. 2. *Sarah*, Sept. 18, 1737, d. 7 Nov. foll.

* error - he was not grandson of George.

Ancestor of Abe Lincoln

the first settlers of Hingham, with the year in which lands were granted them in the town:

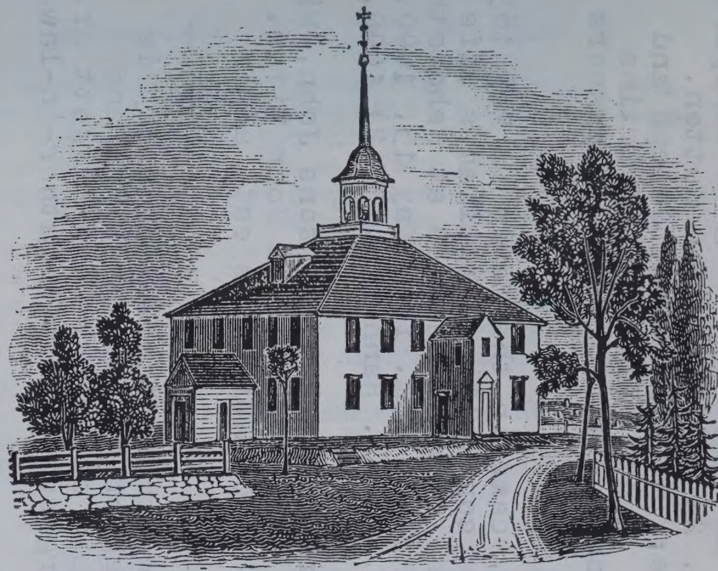
1635.
Joseph Andrews,
Thomas Chubbuck,
Henry Gibbs,
Edmund Hobart, sen.
Edmund Hobart, jr.,
Joshua Hobart,
Rev. Peter Hobart,
Thomas Hobart,
Nicholas Jacob,
Thos. Lincoln, weav.
Ralph Smith,
Jonas Austin,
Nicholas Baker,
Clement Bates,
Richard Betscome,
Benjamin Bozworth,
William Buckland,
James Cade,
Anthony Cooper,
John Cutler,
John Farrow,
Daniel Fop,
Jarvice Gould,
Wm. Hersey,
Nicholas Hodskin,
Thomas Johnson,
Andrew Lane,
Wm. Large,
Thomas Loring,
George Ludkin,
Jeremy Morse,
William Nowlton,
John Otis,
David Phippeny,
John Palmer,
John Porter,
Henry Rust,
John Smart,
Francis Smith,
John Strong,
Henry Tuttil,
William Walton,
Thomas Andrews,
William Arnall,
George Bacon,
Nathaniel Baker,
Thomas Collier,
George Lane,
George Marsh,
Abraham Martin,
Nathaniel Peck,
Richard Osborn,
Thomas Wakely,
Thomas Gill,
Richard Ibrook,
William Cockerum,
William Cockerill,
John Fearing,
John Tucker.
1636.
John Beal, senr.,
Anthony Eames,
Thomas Hammond,
Joseph Hull,
Richard Jones,
Nicholas Lobdin,
Richard Langer,
John Leavitt,
Thomas Lincoln,
Adam Mott,
Thomas Minard,
John Parker,
George Russell,
William Sprague,
George Sprague,
Thomas Underwood,
Samuel Ward,
Ralph Woodward,
John Winchester,
William Walker.
1637.
Thomas Barnes,
Josiah Cobbit,
Thomas Chaffe,
Thomas Clapp.
William Carlslye,
Thomas Dimock,
Vinton Dreuce,
Thomas Hett,
Thomas Joshlin,
Aaron Ludkin,
John Morrick,
Thomas Nichols,
Thomas Paynter,
Edmund Pitts,
Joseph Phippeny,
Thomas Shave,
Ralph Smith,
Thomas Turner,
John Tower,
Joseph Underwood,
William Ludkin,
Jonathan Bozworth.
1638.
Mr. Robert Peck,
Joseph Peck,
Edward Gilman,
John Foulsham,
Henry Chamberlin,
Stephen Gates,
George Knights,
Thomas Cooper,
Matthew Cushing,
John Beal, jr.,
Francis James,
Philip James,
James Buck,
Stephen Payne,
William Pitts,
Edward Mitchell,
John Sutton.
Stephen Lincoln,
Samuel Parker,
Thos. Lincoln, farm.,
Jeremiah Moore,
Mr. Henry Smith,
Bozoan Allen,
Matthew Hawke,
William Ripley,
John Buck,
Thomas Jones,
Thomas Lawrence,
John Stephens,
John Stoddard,
Wid. Martha Wilder,
Thomas Thaxter.
1639.
Anthony Hilliard,
John Prince.

* In 1635, Rev. Peter Hobart and his associates from Hingham, in the county of Norfolk, in England, began a settlement in this town at a place called *Bear Cove*, which was afterwards called Hingham. "The house-lots of the settlers, as already stated, were drawn 18 September, 1635. The Rev. Peter Hobart was there on that day, and drew a lot with the twenty-nine." Mr. Hobart continued to discharge the duties of his office till his death, in 1679, at the age of seventy-five. He was a man of piety and talents, and had four sons, who all became respectable ministers. Rev. John Norton was ordained colleague pastor with Mr. Hobart a few months before his decease. Mr. Norton died in 1716, and was succeeded by Rev. Ebenezer Gay, who continued in the ministry nearly sixty-nine years, and died in 1787, at the age of nearly ninety-one years. Rev. Henry Ware, D. D., the successor of Mr. Gay, was ordained about seven months of his decease, and continued about eighteen years, when he resigned to accept the Hollis professorship of divinity in Harvard University. Rev. Joseph Richardson, his successor, was settled in 1806. The *Second* church in Hingham was formed in 1745; Rev. Daniel Shute, D. D., their first minister, was ordained the next year. He was pastor here more than fifty-five years. His sight failing him, he ceased from his public labors in 1799, and died in 1802. Dr. Shute had a seat in the convention which formed the Constitution of the United States. Rev. Nicholas B. Whitney succeeded Dr. Shute in 1800. The *Third* church was formed in 1807, and Rev. Henry Colman, the first minister, was ordained the same year. Rev. Charles Brooks, the next minister, was ordained in 1821.

The following is a representation of the ancient Congregational church in the village of Hingham, the oldest house of worship now

* Rev Peter Hobart was our many-great uncle in our Dodge (not Averill) line.
Son of Edmund Sr.

Note: Hingham England is near Attleborough, Norfolk. Probably our Suttons came first to Hingham MA for that reason, though they moved on to Rehoboth later. (Some of our other ancestral families are listed here, but in our Averill lines, as Suttons are.)
(Pearce) & Dodge ancestral lines)



Southern view of Hingham Church.

standing in New England. It was erected in 1680, was 55 feet in length, 45 in breadth, and the height of the posts was 20 feet. It cost the town the sum of £430 and the old house. Two additions have been made to the building; the first about the year 1730, and the second in 1755. These additions were made, however, without materially altering the external appearance and form of the house. It is yet in a good state of preservation, and its frame of oak bears no mark of dilapidation or decay. It cannot now be ascertained at what particular time the first meeting-house was erected; it was, however, a small building, surrounded by a palisado, for the protection of the worshippers from Indian assault. Its situation was very near, if not the spot, on which the post-office now stands, near the academy. Around it, upon the declivities of the hill, the dead were buried, where, after a repose of nearly two centuries, they were disturbed by the march of improvement. "The meeting-house is gone—the soil upon which it rested is gone—the worshippers are gone. Not a solitary monument points out the spot where were deposited the remains of the brave, the virtuous, the learned, who laid the foundation of our social improvements and religious blessings."

The village of Hingham is built at the head of a bay, which is an arm of the great bay of Massachusetts. Owing to its situation, it is rather irregularly built, embracing within its limits a number of sandy elevations. The township is seven miles in length, and about five in breadth. The soil in many parts of the town is rich and fertile. There are in Hingham 1 woollen factory, an iron foundry, a brass foundry, and salt works. In addition to these there is the usual variety of mechanical works, as is found in most

Sutton

Pioneers of Massachusetts by Charles Henry Pope

Daggett page 141 - John. Watertown, appl. frm. Oct 19, 1630, adm frm. May 18, 1631. Propr. Rem. to Rehoboth and then to Martha's Vineyard. Propr., frm. and deputy. He m. at Reh. 23 (9) 1651, Ann Sutton. He made will May 13, 1673; beq. to wife; to sons John, Joseph and Thomas; daus. Elizabeth and Hephzibah. Lands chiefly at "Martins Vineyard." Friend Isaac Robinson and son-in-law John Eedy overseers of his est. on the islands.

Carpenter page 89 - William, carpenter, came in the Bevis in May 1638. Settled at Weymouth, With him came his son William, William's wife Abigail and 4 of their ch. under 10 yrs. of age. Settled at Rehoboth. Bought lands of Indians 30 (11) 1641. He was adm. frm. May 13, 1640. Constable 1640; deputy 1641. (Reg. IX, 52) Ch. Hannah b. 3 (2) 1640, Abiah and Abraham v. 9 (2) 2643.

Will dated 10 (10) 1658, prob. 21 Apr. 1659, beq. to sons John, William Joseph, Abiah and Samuel; daus. Hannah and Abigail; son John Titus. Wife exec. Large estate, many books. Widow Abigail's est. admin 7 Sept. 1687, by son William.

I cannot say how accurate the above are, since the Sutton entry is mixed up; but if the above are OK, daughter Ann Sutton's husband must have been much older than she. (Did she marry John Daggett Jr. b 1626 instead?) The second entry is about Margaret Sutton's father-in-law. She married the son Joseph.

Surprisingly, Pope did not have any Fitch entry. Daughter Mary married John Fitch, Jr. See Bowen section for more about our ancestress, Esther Sutton.

Daggett is usually called Doggett in the old records. On 15 June 174 John Butterworth III age 63, testifying in court about his childhood (he was grandson of Alice (Bowen) Wheaton) said that in the beginning Seaconk was under "Plimouth Government but not Plimouth Patent," and that Mr. Doggett, a good friend of his, was an interpreter with the Wamponoag Indians. (See Early Rehoboth Vol 2:12/3--this testimony contains much interesting history.) ibid V3:166 says, 9 Oct. 1677. John Doggett of Rehoboth in consideration "of a valuable sum in Lands & other goods" without naming them, deeded to "My Brother Thomas Doggett of Edgartown on Martha's Vineyard", Mass. "my home or house lott containing twenty-two acres...within...Rehoboth." Signed, John Doggett and Anne Dogget. (Bristol Co. Deeds VI:22). By the way, my sources tell me that the Doggetts were an ancient baronial Norman French family, early to England. (Ann Sutton Doggett's husband John was no baron, of course, but there were illustrious ancestors back there somewhere.)

SUTTON FAMILY

Contributed by William Arthur Whitcomb of Dedham, Mass.,
as compiled for him by
Howard Dakin French of Natick, Mass.

Edward Forrester Sutton, M. D., now of New York City, author of "Genealogical Notes of the Sutton Family of New Jersey," printed in 1900 for private distribution, has been constantly adding to the information concerning the family, and recently he has sought to correct serious errors occurring in the first three generations. No birth record of William Sutton of Eastham has ever been found, but recent researches have developed evidence that he was a son of George[1] Sutton of Scituate. Nothing has been found to indicate that William Sutton could have been a son of John[1] Sutton of Hingham and Rehoboth.*

With the help of an interested descendant, the contributor of this article, search was made under the guidance and with the assistance of the compiler, and the results are here combined in a revised and enlarged statement (now brought up to date) of these early generations.

This contribution will eliminate the serious errors which appear in Monnette's "First Settlers of ye Plantations of Piscataway and Woodbridge Olde East New Jersey," 1930–1935, Banks's "The Planters of the Commonwealth," 1930, Pope's "The Pioneers of Massachusetts," 1900, and in the earlier records of Savage and those who copied from him. On page 144 of "An Ancestral Chart and Handbook," 1935, by Mrs. Olive Barrick Rowland, a Sutton family tree is printed which claims William Sutton as the first generation appearing in Massachusetts in 1666, though other Suttons of an earlier day are mentioned by her in comment and in a footnote.

A search for the immediate ancestry of this William Sutton of Barnstable and Eastham on Cape Cod and of Piscataway, N. J., led also to a thorough study and revision of the families of John[1] Sutton of Hingham and of George[1] Sutton of Scituate, and the facts disclosed by this search are given below.

John[1] Sutton (our line)

The "History of the Town of Hingham," vol. 3, p. 227, states

---

*All places mentioned in this article are situated within the present limits of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, unless another State or region is indicated in the text or may be easily inferred from the context.

that John[1] Sutton "and his wife and four children came from Ateburraye and settled in New Hingham, 1638" (Cushing's MS.), but little is known of his family or of his personal history.* The following abstract proved that land was granted to him at an early date by the inhabitants of Hingham: "To all Xpiañ people to whom these prnts shall Come John Sutton junior of Cittuate in New England Carpinter . . . conveys to Mathew Cushen Senior of Hingham . . . my house & all my house lott Containeing fower accres of land . . . wch was giuen by the Town of Hingham to John Sutton my father," This conveyance was made 2 Dec. 1653 and acknowledged before "Jo: Endecott Govr the 22th day of December," 1660. (Suffolk Deeds, vol. 3, pp. 401-403.)

(See NHGR 15:26 bottom of page)

Charles E. Banks in his "Planters of the Commonwealth," p. 193, gives the family of John[1] Sutton as follows: John Sutton, Mrs. Elizabeth Sutton, Hannah Sutton, John Sutton, Jr., Nathaniel Sutton and Elisabeth Sutton, but no authority for the names is stated. A photolithograph of Cushing's original list of early settlers in Hingham, New England, entitled "A list of the names of such persons as came out of the town of Hingham, and towns adjacent, in the County of Norfolk, in the Kingdom of England, and settled in Hingham in New England," is in the Library of the New England Historic Genealogical Society in Boston. It was printed in 1865, before the handling and aging of the manuscript which rendered it almost unreadable in parts had taken place. The printed description of this photolithographed material states: "The Cushing whose list of the early settlers of Hingham is here quoted was Daniel Cushing, eldest son of Matthew, born in England in 1619. He was for many years town clerk of Hingham, and died, according to Hobart's Diary, 3 Dec. 1700."

Two of Daniel Cushing's memorandum books have a great variety of entries. One of them, containing twenty-two leaves, has written on it "Daniel Cushing his Books, 26 July 1682," and the last three pages contain a list of the names of the early settlers of Hingham. The second of these three pages has this statement concerning the Sutton family: "1638 John Sutton & his wife & four children came from Atleburraye & settled in New Hingham 6." The number "6" evidently refers to the total number of the family as Cushing knew it. This is the whole of the Sutton record and no name is given except that of the head of the family, "John Sutton." Concerning these persons, the following entry appears at the end of the list: "All the persons above named that came over in the year 1638, were 133, came in one ship called the Diligent of Ipswich; the master was John Martin of said Ipswich." (See Register, vol. 15, pp. 26, 27.)

The list of John Sutton's family given by Banks not only does not appear in the original but is without authority.

✓ John[1] Sutton, the passenger on the *Diligent*, who removed in 1643

---

*On page 151 of "My Children's Ancestors," 1913, by Rev. R. T. Cross, it is stated that John[1] Sutton was the son of Henry Sutton, who was the son of Theron Sutton, and that he came from Attleborough, England. Four children, John, Ester, Anna (who married John Daggett), and Margaret are given. No authorities for this English ancestry are given, and it remains for further search to determine its accuracy.

New England Historic Genealogical Register Vol 91:61-68

Sutton

to the inland town of Rehoboth, a place of religious tolerance, died there 1 June 1672 (Vital Records of Rehoboth, p. 879; *Mayflower Descendant,* vol. 19, p. 165).* In the Rehoboth records will be found the burial of Julian Sutton, his widow, 4 June 1678, whom Savage (vol. 4, p. 254) mistook for a man and stated that "no more is known of him." Savage also notes that in 1644 land was assigned in Rehoboth to John^1 Sutton, but he fails to state that John settled in that town soon afterwards and that there he and his wife died. Until his death John^1 Sutton was called "Senior," but thereafter his son, John^2 Sutton, became "Senior" because of his son John^3 Sutton.

John^2 Sutton (the only son of John^1 Sutton as yet discovered) apparently lived first at Hingham, but later removed to Scituate, in the Plymouth Colony, where, on 2 December 1653, he sold the lands "which the town of Hingham gave to John Sutton, my father." He was therefore of age at this date. Frequently mentioned in the Scituate records, he married there, 1 Jan. 1661, Elizabeth House (Vital Records of Scituate, vol. 2, p. 283), the daughter of Samuel House (*ib.,* vol. 1, p. 185). She may have been a second wife; but she could not have been a wife of John^1 Sutton, who was then living at Rehoboth with his wife of another name. John^2 Sutton had a large family, one of whom was John^3 Sutton, born 28 Feb. 1663 (*ib.,* vol. 1, p. 349).

The records of the births of other children of John^2 Sutton appear as follows (*ib.,* vol. 1, p. 349):

Elizabeth, b. 20 Oct. 1662.
Mary, b. 22 Jan. 1665.
Sarah, b. 3 Nov. 1667.
Hannah, b. 3 Nov. 1669.
Hester, b. 25 Oct. 1671.
Benjemen, b. 22 Mar. 1674/5.
Nathanell, b. 31 July 1676.
Nathan, b. 6 Aug. 1679.

Among these names are the six which Banks used in his family of John^1 Sutton, as well as others which could not be included in the "6" of the Cushing records. That John^2 Sutton was now "Senior" accounts for the error into which Banks fell in making up his ship's list, which was based, not on a ship's log, but on Cushing's record written in 1682, and containing only the name of John^1 Sutton.

In defense of the appearance of these names Banks states in the preface (p. xiii) to his book: "Additions of this kind have been made to a number of the ship's lists, particularly in cases like the Hingham, Massachusetts, emigrants in the Cushing MSS., . . . The names of these have been supplied by the compiler from various sources to make the lists complete."

John^2 Sutton, Senior, of Scituate, "aged 70 years or there abouts" in his will dated 12 Nov. 1691, mentions these names as those of his children (See *Genealogical Advertiser,* vol. 2, pp. 104, 105). As he was born about 1620, he could not have been John^1 Sutton, the immigrant, since he would have been not over eighteen years of age in 1638, yet he could have been the John^2 Sutton who received the land from his father John^1 Sutton, as has been shown.

---

*Cf. "Inventory of the estate [totaling £27-16-02] of the widdow Julian Sutton taken by the subscribers the 18th of June 1678, exhibited to the Court holden at Plymouth te fift of July 1676; on the oath of John ffitch of Rehoboth. Peter Hunt Nicholas Pecke Daniel Smith William Carpenter" (Plymouth County Deeds (Wills), vol. 3, pt. 2, p. 207) and "An Inventory of the Goods and Chattles [totaling £55-03-00] of John Sutton of Rehoboth deceased the first of June 1672 taken by Lieftenant Peter Hunt Ensigne henery Smith and William Carpenter" (*ib.,* vol. 3, pt. 1, p. 55).

In attempting to find out the individuals who comprised the family of John^1 Sutton, the following deductions may be safely made. According to Cushing's manuscript, the Sutton family on the *Diligent* consisted of John^1 Sutton, his wife, and four children.

As has already been stated, John^1 Sutton gave his Hingham property to his son John^2 Sutton, then over 21 years of age, who had come with him from England on the *Diligent.*

Hannah Sutton, evidently a second child, perhaps born at Hingham, died young at Hingham in October 1642 (History of Hingham, vol. 3, p. 228).

Three Rehoboth women, Ester (Esther or Hester) Sutton, who married 4 Mar. 1646 Richard Bowen, Anne Sutton, who married 23 9 mo. 1651 John Daggett, Jr.,* b. about 1626, and Margaret Sutton, who married 25 Nov. 1655 Joseph Carpenter (Vital Records of Rehoboth, p. 354), do not fit into any other family, and therefore were probably children of John^1 Sutton, because Julian Sutton in her nuncupative will, dated 25 Apr. 1678, refers to "the rest of the children," who were evidently then living (Plymouth Deeds (Wills), vol. 3, pt. 2, p. 210). The "Carpenter Memorial," p. 45, states that Margaret Sutton, the wife of Joseph Carpenter, was a daughter of John Sutton.

The nuncupative will of Julian Sutton also shows that she conveyed to her son-in-law, Sergeant John Fitch "in reference to charges he had been at with her." As Mary Fitch, daughter of John and Mary (Sutton) Fitch, was married 11 May 1667 to Thomas Armsbee or Ormsby (Vital Records of Taunton, vol. 2, p. 184), her grandmother, Mary (Sutton) Fitch, was born probably in England as early as 1626.

The probate records of John Fitch and of his wife Mary Fitch (Bristol County Probate Records (handwritten), p. 341), together with the death records (Vital Records of Rehoboth, p. 823), clearly show that this child was named Mary.

From the above facts, the family of John^1 Sutton consisted of himself, his wife, Julian, and his children, John, Mary, Ester, Anne, Margaret, and Hannah. The six of the family of John^1 Sutton referred to in Cushing's manuscript included four of these six children. A study of these six children, with the dates of their births, leads to the conclusion that Cushing, in his compilation made about 1682 (forty-four years after the arrival of the *Diligent*), may have forgotten two of the daughters, or perhaps never even heard of them. 9

This John^1 Sutton is the same one whom Deane's "History of Scituate," p. 346, and Savage's "Genealogical Dictionary," vol. 4, p. 233, call the son of George Sutton. John^2 Sutton (John^1) is the ancestor of all the Suttons of Scituate, where the name survived until the second quarter of the nineteenth century. George^{1} Sutton of Scituate, as will be shown, left no descendants there.

---

*An account of John Daggett, Jr., and his family is given in My Children's Ancestors, 1913, by Rev. R. T. Cross, p. 146, under Nos. 34 and 35.

Deane gives John^{3} Sutton but one wife. According to the Plymouth Records he married, 6 June 1692, Abigail Clark (*Mayflower Descendant,* vol. 13, p. 205), who died after 1712; and he married secondly, 3 Dec. 1719, Ann (or Anne) Cole (Vital Records of Scituate, vol. 2, p. 283).

Children by first wife (Vital Records of Scituate, vol. 1, p. 283):

Seth,^{4} b. 3 Apr. 1706.
Anna, b. 30 Apr. 1709.
Nathan, bapt. 28 Sept. 1712.

Child by second wife, probably:

John, b. 27 Nov. 1720.
Perhaps others.

According to Monnette, William Sutton of Eastham, on Cape Cod, and Piscataway, N. J., "was one of the seven sons of John Sutton of Hingham." Such a statement, not in accord with the historical facts, originated in a manuscript pedigree (not of the Sutton family), compiled by various hands during recent years, which upon this point at least, is entirely devoid of authority.

GEORGE^{1} SUTTON

GEORGE^{1} SUTTON, as far as it is now known, was not related to John^{1} Sutton. As a servant in the party of Nathaniel Tilden, of Tenterden, co. Kent, England, he sailed in 1634 on the *Hercules* of Sandwich, co. Kent, England. He may have been one of those poorer Puritans who often worked their passage to America with wealthier relatives or friends. Within two years of the settlement of the group at Scituate he married Sarah Tilden, daughter of Nathaniel Tilden. In New England, Nathaniel Tilden, "Gentleman," an elder of the church, who held important offices of trust, was accorded the position due to his social status, education, and comparative wealth.

On this same voyage of the *Hercules* was Simon Sutton, a servant in the party of William^{1} Hatch. He may have been related to George Sutton, but his name disappears from the records, and beyond the fact that he served as a witness to the will of Nathaniel Tilden in 1641, nothing is known of him.

William^{1} Hatch had a son William^{2} Hatch, also a passenger on the *Hercules,* and the close friendship between the latter and George Sutton is of particular interest. William^{2} Hatch died in Virginia in 1657, but before he undertook that long and dangerous journey he made his will, and entrusted the keeping of it, not to his own brother-in-law, Lt. James Torrey, the town clerk, but to George Sutton.

Nathaniel Tilden died in 1641, and the following year his widow Lydia married Timothy Hatherley, who thus became stepfather-in-law of George Sutton. Hatherley and his lifelong friend, James Cudworth, men of the very first prominence in the Plymouth Colony, were liberals in principle. When the Plymouth Colony, following the lead of Massachusetts, enacted penal laws against the Quakers, these two alone, of all the magistrates, entered a strong protest. They paid for their temerity by the loss of political position and influence. Cudworth was, indeed, fined for holding intercourse with Quakers (merely with the intention of discovering their tenets), and eventually disfranchised, but he lived to see the turn of the tide and to be reseated as a magistrate. Hatherley died while still under the ban.

Their courage bore fruit. Their personal influence was such that the Plymouth penal laws, though similar to those of Massachusetts, were not enforced with the Massachusetts rigor. No Quaker suffered death in the Plymouth Colony, and Quaker congregations, barely tolerated at first, sprang up and eventually flourished, particularly on Cape Cod.

As might have been expected, one such congregation developed at Scituate, the home town of Hatherley and Cudworth, and it eventually attracted members of some of the best local families, including Cudworth's own, but it grew slowly, and was not numerous enough to need a meeting-house until 1678.

However, ten years before that date, or about the year 1668, George^{1} Sutton, who had been so closely associated with these disinterested champions of Quakerism, emigrated with most of his family to North Carolina. His presence there and his identity are clearly shown by the following paper in the Massachusetts State House archives: "I Joseph Sutton of Corralinah doe Testify that in the yeare 1671 my mother Sarah Sutton did Receive in Corralinah from the hands of Caleb Lambe the sum of fiue pounds in English Goods sent with a bill of Ladeing which fiue pounds was in full of a Legacy Giuen by my grandfather Mr Timothy haterly and payed or sent by my onkell Mr Joseph Tildens Executrix: he the said Joseph Tilden being appointed to adminnester to the estate of Mr. hatherley: I say that I witnes and Testify that this fiue pound was payed and receiued on the accoumpt abouesaid: In witness whereof I have heeronto sett my hand this 23 of May 1673 Witnessed pr me James Cudworth Joseph Sutton" (Plymouth Colony Deeds, vol. 3, pt. 2, p. 320).

A document on file in Boston (Suffolk Early Court Files, Case 1221, paper 73) shows an account of a "bill of Sale of Joseph Sutton of Roinoke" received by George Searson. This is on the reverse side of a paper headed "New England," and beginning "Know all men by these presents that I John Bonner of Boston," etc. The story of his family in those places was recently told by Mrs. Cora Sutton Castle, Ph.D., of San Francisco, Calif.

Anglican Virginia had not been so hard on the Quakers as Puritan New England. George Fox found them numerous there when he visited the Old Dominion in 1672. The northern parts of North Carolina, when opened for settlement a few years earlier, received Quakers along with other Virginia immigrants; indeed Bancroft exaggerates so far as to say that North Carolina was settled by Quakers. While this is not the case, it is certain that the complete religious freedom of a new and unorganized province was attractive to many settlers, and certain it is that after Fox's missionary visit of 1672 the sect grew and flourished amazingly in North Carolina, so that before the end of the century a Quaker had been elected Governor. In no other Colonial Province, excepting Pennsylvania and West Jersey, were the Quakers as numerous and powerful.

It is fair to conclude that the Quaker faith had as much to do with George Sutton's removal to North Carolina as it did with William Sutton's to Piscataway in New Jersey.

That George Sutton and his family were Quakers in their new home, there is small doubt. One of the earliest Quaker meeting houses in the Province was built towards the end of the seventeenth century on "Sutton's Creek," so called because it bordered the lands of George or his sons. Joseph^{2} Sutton, one of the latter, married Deliverance Nicholson, whose family had suffered persecution for Quakerism in New England.

GEORGE^{1} SUTTON, a settler in that part of the present North Carolina which, after bearing various other names, is now Perquimans County, died there 12 Apr. 1669, aged about 56, leaving a numerous posterity. His wife, SARAH TILDEN, born at Tenterden, co. Kent, England, in 1613, and baptized in St. Mildred's Church, Tenterden, 13 Jan. 1613, died in what is now Perquimans County, 20 Mar. 1677, aged 64.

Children, born at Scituate, order of births of sons not positively known:*

1. JOSEPH,^{2} b. about 1637; d. in Perquimans County in 1695; m., probably as late as 168–, DELIVERANCE NICHOLSON. (See Lynn Vital Records, vol. 2, p. 279, marriage of Christopher and Hannah (Redknap) Nicholson 22 Oct. 1662 at Lynn.)

ii. DANIEL, b. about 1639; m. at Charlestown, Mass., in 1667, MARY COLE, probably daughter of Isaac Cole of Charlestown, a passenger on the *Hercules* with George Sutton and the Tildens, bapt. 20, 11 mo. 1639/40. (First Church of Charlestown, p. 48.)

   Child:

   1. *Daniel,*^{3} b. at Charlestown.

iii. WILLIAM, of Scituate and Eastham, and of Piscataway, N. J., Quaker, b. about 1641; d. "28 of 4m. 1718" ("The Times of the Decease of Sundry Friends in and about Woodbridge," New Jersey Friends Record, p. 2); m. (1) at Eastham, on Cape Cod, 11 July 1666, DAMARIS BISHOP, d. 6 Feb. 1682/3, daughter of Richard and Alice (Martin) (Clark) Bishop; m. (2) 3 Jan. 1683/4 JANE BARNES, daughter of John Barnes.

   William^{2} Sutton first appears at Barnstable,† on Cape Cod, where, on 5 June 1666, he was haled to court and fined for purloining the Bible from the meeting house, "one pound, and for telling a lye about the same, ten shillings." His departure from the town was probably expedited by these occurrences, and a few weeks later, at the neighboring settlement of Eastham, he took refuge in matrimony with Damaris Bishop.

   William Sutton was a Quaker. If he was a son of George of Scituate, he may have been named for William Hatch, his father's

---

*John William Linzee, in his manuscript copy of the Tilden Genealogy, presents the family as here given.

†Barnstable was founded in 1639 by a mass emigration from Scituate led by the Rev. John Lathrop. The early relations between the two towns were, therefore, particularly close. The earliest church records of Scituate are still preserved at Barnstable, whither they were carried when the latter was founded.

most intimate friend. Three of his children, Thomas, Mary, and Joseph, bear the names of their Tilden great-uncles and great-aunt.

   Children by first wife:

   1. *Alice,*^{3} b. at Eastham 13 May 1668.
   2. *Thomas,* b. at Eastham 11 Nov. 1669; m. in April 1693 Mary Adams of Woodbridge, N. J.
   3. *Mary,* b. at Eastham 4 Oct. 1671; m. 23 Dec. 1689 Daniel McDaniel of Piscataway, N. J.
   4. *Damaris,* b. at Piscataway about 1673; d. in 1733; m. Benjamin Force of Woodbridge.
   5. *John,* b. at Piscataway 20 Apr. 1674; d. in 1750; m. about 1695 Elizabeth (? Conger).
   6. *Judah,* b. at Piscataway 24 Jan. 1675; m. 5 May 1698 Emma Canter (or Carter).
   7. *Richard,* b. at Piscataway 18 July 1676; m. (1) 25 Jan. 1702 Sarah Runyon; m. (2) Anne Boucher.
   8. *Joseph,* b. 27 June 1678; d. 19 Dec. 1682.
   9. *Benjamin,* b. 24 Feb. 1680; d. 22 Dec. 1682.
   10. *Daniel,* b. at Piscataway 25 Feb. 1682; m. (1) 31 Oct. 1704 Patience Martin; m. (2) 25 Aug. 1724 Lydia Collier.

iv. NATHANIEL, b. about 1643; d. in what is now Perquimans County, in 1682; m. in Virginia, in 1668, DEBORAH ASTINE.

v. LYDIA, bapt. 13 Sept. 1646.

vi. SARAH, bapt. 3 Dec. 1648; d. in infancy.

vii. SARAH, bapt. 15. Sept. 1650; m. in what is now Perquimans County, in 1668, JOHN BARROW.

viii. ELIZABETH, bapt. 28 Aug. 1653; m. in what is now Perquimas County in 1674, RALPH FLETCHER.

Clippings

Sutton

Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts

SUTTON,

Ambrose, carpenter, Charlestown, b. 1612, at Westwell, near Burford, Eng.; went to Aquidnet in 1638. [L.]

Elizabeth, spinster, Charlestown, dau. of John Sutton, late citizen and draper of London, dec., and of Elizabeth, sometime his wife, gave letter of attorney 23 (5) 1641, to Francis Lisle of Boston and Walter Blackborne of London, haberdasher.

George, planter, Scituate, prop. frm. 5 March, 1638-9; atba. 1643. Town officer. He m. March 13, 1636, Sarah, dau. of Nathaniel Tilden. Ch. Lydia bapt. Sept. 13, 1646, Sarah bapt. Sept. 15, 1650, Elizabeth bapt. Aug. 28, 1653.

✓ John and his wife came from Attlebury, Eng., in 1638, and settled at Hingham. Propr. [Ch.] Hannah d. Oct. 1642.
He made will 12 Nov. 1691, ae. about 70 years; beq. to wife Elizabeth and ch. John, Nathaniel, Nathan, Elizabeth, Mary, Sarah and Hester.

This confuses father & son

Lambert, Charlestown, adm. chh. 4 (2) 1641, frm. May 29, 1644. Rem. to Woburn; taxed, 1645.
He d Nov. 27, 1649. Will dated 8 (9) 1649, rec. Mdx. Deeds I, 13; wife Elizabeth; John Russell, Jr., and Mary Russell.

Richard, Roxbury, propr. before 1650. Wife Sarah d. 12 (9) 1672.

Founders of American Families – by Meredith Colket – p. 303

Sutton, JOHN Came on "Diligent" 1638, Hingham (Mass.) 1638, Rehoboth 1643. d. Rehoboth 1 June 1672. Carpenter. *Register* 91:61 (family).

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620 - 1700 – by Frank R Holmes page ccxxxi says the surname SUTTON is from a town in Devonshire, England, a place name. in Old English sud = south tun = town, or South town.
His list of those with the surname includes
✓ John Sutton from Attleburg, Norfolk, England to Hingham MA 1638

Note: NEHGR 91:61 (which see, enclosed) proves our family not related to George Bowen of Situate – even though John Sutton, Jr moved there – and not related to William of Eastham or George Bowen, a Quaker of Plymouth Colony who removed to North Carolina.

Genealogical Dictionary of First Settlers of New England by John Savage Vol IV(?) pages 233-4

SUTTON, BARTHOLOMEW, Boston, by w. Hannah had William, b. 3 Mar. 1667; Hannah, 12 Apr. 1669; and by sec. w. Eliphael had Catharine, 15 Apr. 1670. DANIEL, Boston, by w. Martha had Daniel, b. 19 Feb. 1667. GEORGE, Scituate 1638, m. 1641, Sarah, d. of Elder Nathaniel Tilden of the same, had John, b. 1642; Lydia, 1646; Sarah, 1648, d. soon; Sarah, again, 1650; and Eliz. 1653; but Deane tells not of his d. JOHN, Hingham, came in the Diligent, 1638, with w. and four ch. as the rec. of blessed Daniel Cushing assures us, from Attleburg in Co. Norfolk, a town a. 15 ms. from Norwich, but less than half that dist. from Hingham; encourag. the sett. of Rehoboth, where ld. was assign. him 1644, but forfeit. by non. rem. As he is call. sen. perhaps one of his ch. may have been s. John; but of the stock I gather no more. JOHN, Scituate, s. of George, m. 1661, Eliz. d. of Samuel House, had Eliz. b. 1662; John, 1664; Mary, 1666; Sarah, 1668; Hannah, 1670; Esther, 1673; Benjamin, 1675; Nathaniel, 1677; and Nathan, 1679; was an ens. in Philip's war, and d. in 1691, by his will ment. w. and all the ch. exc. Eliz. and Benjamin, wh. perhaps were d. ANO. JOHN, wh. d. at Rehoboth 1670, is by Deane thot. to be s. of Simon, and by me of the first John. JOSEPH, freem. of Conn. sw. 1658, was of unkn. town. JOSEPH, Boston, by w. Sarah had Sarah, b. 31 July 1659. JULIAN, Rehoboth, was bur. 4 June 1678; but no more is kn. of him. LAMBERT, Charlestown, was adm. of the ch. 4 Apr. 1641, liv. in Woburn, freem. 1644, d. 27 Nov. 1649. RICHARD, Charlestown, a householder 1677, may have been of Roxbury 1650, where his w. Rachel d. 10 Nov. 1672, and a propr. of Lancaster 1653. RICHARD, Andover 1664, may aft. have liv. at Reading. SIMON, Scituate 1647, perhaps br. of George, of wh. we kn. no more, but that he was witn. of Nathaniel Tilden's will, and was there 1643. WILLIAM, Eastham, m. 11 July 1666, Damaris Bishop, had Alice, b. 13 May 1668; Thomas, 11 Nov. 1669; Mary, 4 Oct. 1671; may be the man of Newbury, wh. m. 27 Oct. 1679, Mary Gassell, or Gaffell, as Coffin has the name, and d. 7 May 1690. Of ano. William the inv. was giv. 20 June 1680 by his wid. Sarah. One William was a soldier in the Phips expedit. of 1690 under Gallup.

George went to North Carolina,

error – he did stay in Rehoboth but had daughters there

ours

✓

error → He was John Jr, my known son.

error →

or

sion from Weymouth included the birth record of "Abia" (correctly designated as William's son), which was read by the county clerk of "Abra." and spelled out accordingly.

In a serious distortion, Amos Carpenter claims that the *Register* refers to "Abia daughter, and Abraham son, born Feb. [*sic*] 9, 1643, children of William Carpenter."[57] The unmistakable impression is of a single record of a multiple birth, rather than two records, each of a single birth, made several years apart. Forty years earlier, before he had discovered William^2's will and knew of Abigail's existence, Carpenter had contributed to a genealogy of the Vinton family,[58] in which Abiah's birth record (cited from "Geneal. Reg., Oct. 1854") is depicted as separate from and in conflict with that of the same date naming Abraham; there is no reference to twins. Savage presents Abraham *or* Abiah as having been born at Weymouth on the date in question,[59] indicating that he, too, considered their birth records as conflicting, rather than representing a multiple birth. Carpenter's mischaracterization of the 1643 birth records seems to reflect his determination to make all other evidence relating to William^2 Carpenter's children comport with the name order in his will.

From the absence of all but a birth record for so-called Abraham and the abundance of records of Abiah, Carpenter correctly recognizes that Abraham's existence is highly dubious and that male Abiah's is certain. But instead of rejecting the idea of a multiple birth, he notes that Abiah's sister Abigail is named immediately after him in their father's will and concludes that the name Abraham was mistakenly entered, not for Abiah, but for Abigail.[60] This has always been rebuttable with the evidence that Abigail had married John Titus by 1650 and is now refuted directly by her 1629 baptismal record. It is therefore reasonable to conclude (in keeping with the note on the town clerk's file card) that a single Carpenter birth—Abiah's—occurred at Weymouth in 1643. The record of so-called Abraham was almost certainly a repetition of Abiah's, with his filial status correctly given but his name misstated (virtually the reverse of the first record). Abiah's sexual misidentification in the first record probably resulted from confusion of *Abiah*, a boy's name from the Bible, with the almost identical *Abia* (as it appears in his birth record), a girl's name from Greek mythology.

The Shalbourne baptismal records make it clear that the four children who accompanied William^2 and Abigail (Briant) Carpenter on the *Bevis* in 1638 were John, Abigail, William, and Joseph. And careful analysis of Massachusetts records leads inescapably to the conclusion that three, not four, children were born to the couple following their arrival at New England: Samuel, Hannah, and Abiah.

Reflecting the prevailing standards of nineteenth-century genealogical scholarship, Amos Carpenter's *magnum opus* has not fared well, above and elsewhere. Nevertheless, such compilations serve as useful points of departure for further research.

(See over)

---

[57] *Carpenter Family*, 46.

[58] John A. Vinton, *The Vinton Memorial* (Boston, 1858), 480–81.

[59] James Savage, *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England*, 4 vols. (Boston, 1860–62), 1:337.

[60] *Carpenter Family*, 46, 47.

Re: Sutton (See over) Margaret Sutton (sister of [illegible] Esther (Sutton) Brown)
m. Joseph Carpenter

SUMMARY

1 WILLIAM^1 CARPENTER was born about 1576. His wife may have been the ALICE CARPENTER who was buried at Shalbourne, Wiltshire/Berkshire, on 25 January 1637[/8]. In 1638, aged 62, he emigrated from "Horwell" [i.e., Wherwell, Hampshire] with his son and daughter-in-law, William and Abigail Carpenter, and their family. No further record is found for William^1; he died probably during the voyage or shortly after his arrival in New England.

Only known child of William^1 Carpenter:

2 i WILLIAM^2 CARPENTER, b. ca. 1605; m. ABIGAIL BRIANT.

2 WILLIAM^2 CARPENTER (*William*^{1}) was born about 1605; he died at Rehoboth, Massachusetts, on 7 February 1658[/9?].[61] He married at Shalbourne, on 28 April 1625, ABIGAIL BRIANT. She was baptized at Shalbourne on 27 May 1604, a daughter of John^A and Alice Briant, and was buried at Rehoboth on 22 February 1686/7.[62]

William and Abigail (Briant) Carpenter, with their four eldest children, immigrated to Massachusetts on the *Bevis* in 1638.

Children of William^2 and Abigail (Briant) Carpenter, first 5 bp. at Shalbourne:[63]

i JOHN^3 CARPENTER, bp. 8 Oct. 1626; m. HANNAH (SMITH?).[64]
ii ABIGAIL CARPENTER, bp. 31 May 1629; m. (1) ca. 1649–50, JOHN^2 TITUS, son of

---

[61] Rehoboth VR [orig.], 1:50.

[62] Rehoboth VR [orig.], 1:57.

[63] For information not cited earlier or below, see *Stevens-Miller*, 1:264–65.

[64] John's widow was named Hannah (*Carpenter Family*, 44); it is, however, not certain that she was the mother of some or all of his children. Amos Carpenter suggests that her maiden name was *Hope* on the unlikely grounds that she gave a child that name. Seversmith presents evidence that Hannah was probably the daughter of William^1 Smith of Weymouth (and Rehoboth), Mass. (and Huntington and Jamaica, L.I) (*Colonial Families*, 2:544, 549–50).

Robert^1 Titus of Rehoboth[65]; (2) Rehoboth, 9 Nov. 1692, Jonah Palmer Sr.[66]

- iii William Carpenter, bp. 22 Nov. 1631; m. (1) Rehoboth, 5 Oct. 1651, Priscilla Bennett,[67] prob. dau. of Edward^1 Bennett of Rehoboth;[68] (2) there, 10 12m [Feb.] 1663[/4], Miriam "Saile,"[69] dau. of Edward Sale/Sarle of Weymouth and Rehoboth.
- iv Joseph Carpenter, bp. 6 April 1634; m. Rehoboth, 25 Nov. (not May) 1655, Margaret^2 Sutton,[70] dau. of John^1 Sutton of Hingham and Rehoboth.[71]
- v Samuel Carpenter, bp. 1 March 1636[/7], bur. Shalbourne, 20 April 1637.
- vi Samuel Carpenter (again), b. say 1638; m. Rehoboth, 25 May 1660, Sarah^2 Redway, dau. of James^1 Redway of Rehoboth.[72]
- vii Hannah Carpenter, b. Weymouth, Mass., 3 2m [April] 1640; m. Joseph^2 Carpenter, son of William^1 Carpenter of Providence, R.I.[73]
- viii Abiah Carpenter, b. Weymouth, 9 2m [April] 1643; m. prob. Mary^2 Redway (*James*^{1}).[74]

Gene Zubrinsky, author of several articles published in The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, *taught sociology at Ventura College (California) for twenty years and is now engaged as a musician and bandleader. He resides at 559 Pala Drive, Ojai CA 93023.*

RULES FOR QUERIES

Queries are published without charge for subscribers only, as space is available. Those submitting a query should already have completed basic research on the problem and reached an impasse. Queries should include at least the following data: (1) first and last name of the person being sought; (2) at least one date (birth, marriage, or death) for the person, or some other way of narrowing the time period; and (3) place where the person lived—the state or colony and, ideally, the county and town of residence.

---

[65] Lillian Lounsberry (Miner) Selleck, *One Branch of the Miner Family . . .* [ed. Donald Lines Jacobus], (New Haven, 1928), hereafter cited as *Miner Family*, 167–68; NYGBR 12 (1881):94.

[66] Rehoboth VR [orig.], 1:163; *Miner Family*, 168; NYGBR 12(1881):94.

[67] Rehoboth VR [orig.], 1:44.

[68] See James S. Elston, *Descent from Seventy-Nine (Now Ninety-Two) Early Immigrant Heads of Families*, 2 vols. (Burlington, Vt., and Middleboro, Mass., 1962–71), 1:16.

[69] Rehoboth VR [orig.], 1:44.

[70] Rehoboth VR [orig.], 1:44.

[71] For these Suttons, see *Stevens–Miller*, 1:269–70, and Howard Dakin French, "Sutton Family," NEHGR 91(1937):61–65.

[72] Rehoboth VR [orig.],1:44; *Early Rehoboth*, 1:130–31.

[73] *Carpenter Family* (p. 46) says that Hannah and Joseph were married on 21 April 1659; Mary Holman (*Stevens–Miller*, 1:264) accepted this date as deriving from an authentic record but suggested that the year was a misreading of 1657. This oft-repeated date should be regarded with great skepticism: It is identical with that on which her father's will was proved, and substantiation of it has not been found.

[74] *Early Rehoboth*, 1:132–33.

Stevens-Miller I:269-70 (Re Sutton)

by Mary Holman's

NATIONAL
23-680

NATIONAL INSERTABLE-TAB INDEXES ENABLE YOU TO MAKE YOUR OWN SUBJECT ARRANGEMENT, USING PLAIN INSERTS ON WHICH TO WRITE YOUR OWN CAPTIONS.

The Beaded edge on tab makes it easy to insert captions

Made in U. S. A.

(Averill Ancestors)

Family No.

Walker
Surname

Family Record

Father — WALKER

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1585? ○			England	May have been from Northern	○
Death		ca	1633/4? ○			"	England - Philip's accent	○
Buried			○				sounded Scottish	○
Married	During or before		1616? ○					○

Occupation　　Military　　Church Anglican? Not Congregational ○

Places Lived ○

Other Wives ○

His Father's Name Walker ○

His Mother's Maiden Name ○

(See Browne Coat of Arms on another page)

Mother — (? "Molly" ? *) BROWNE To Rehoboth 1643 (as "Widow Walker")

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1590? ○		Rutland, Northampton or Lincolnshire, Eng.		Sister of Mr. John Browne of	○
Death		after 18 Feb	1646/7 ○	Rehoboth		Plymouth Colony	Plymouth Colony - Member of	○
Buried			○				Board of Assistants - very	○

Occupation early Purchaser of land at Rehoboth (Seekonk)　　Military　　Anglican?　　Church　　powerful + wealthy. ○

Places Lived Younger Relative, evidently, of Rev Robert Browne b. Tolethorp, Rutland, d. N. Hants; and seemingly of Wm. Cecil (Lord Burghley) ○

Other Husbands Treasurer to Queen Elizabeth or his descendant Al-bini Cecil. There are unfilled gaps - see Mayflower Quarterly May 1984 pp 57-61. ○

Her Father's Name Browne ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name ○

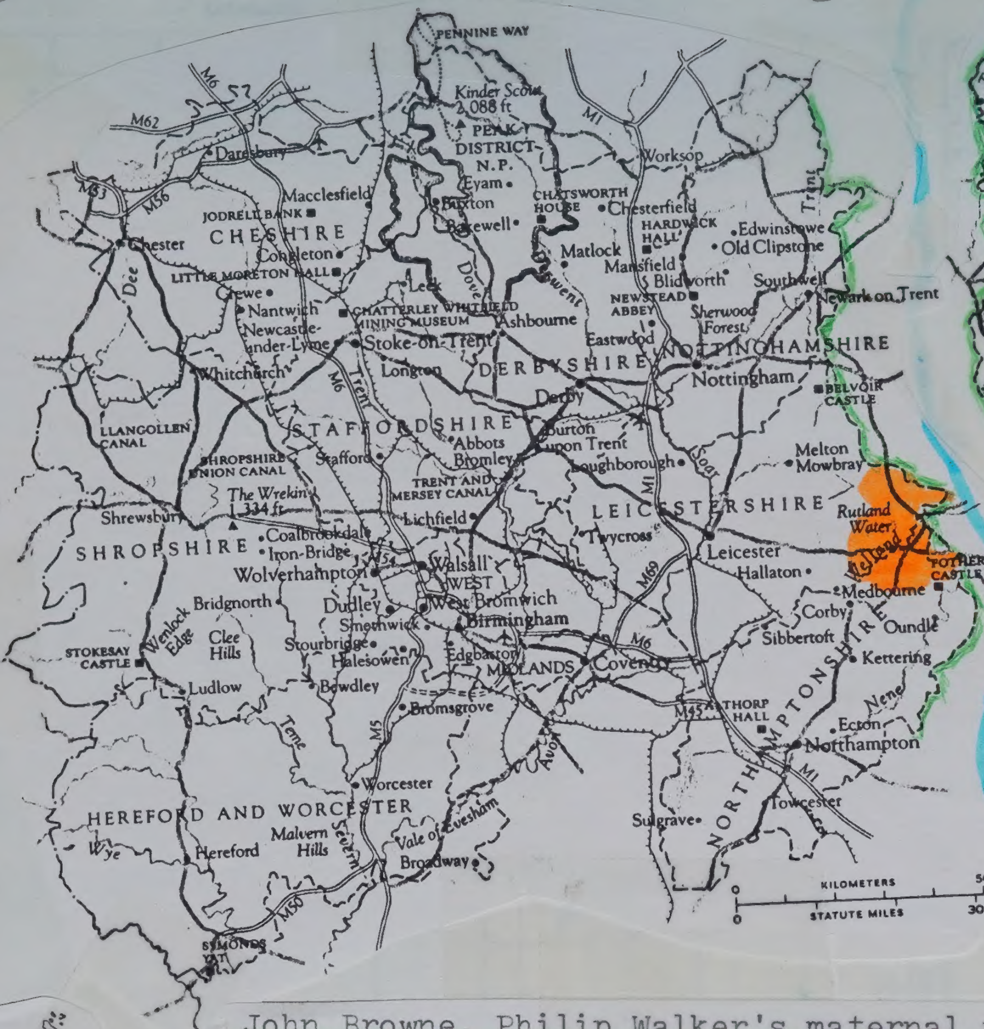
Children (oldest two sent to live with Uncle John Browne of Plymouth Colony in 1635)

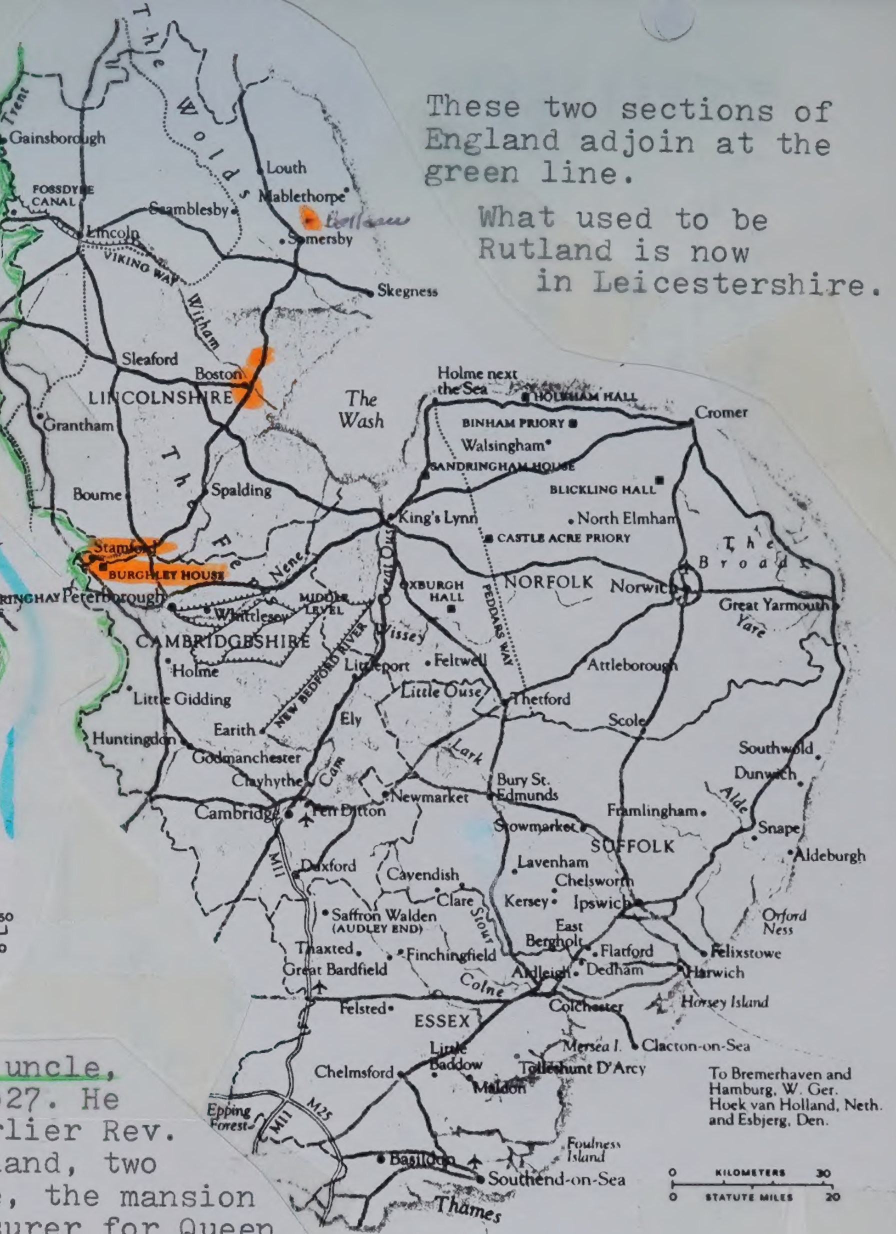
Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Sarah Walker ○	Birth		ca	1618			England	○
		Death		Dec	1676	Taunton		Plymouth Colony	○
	Spouse - John Tisdale (1614-1675) (Killed by Indians K-P War, 27 June 1675) ○	Married		ca	1643	Duxbury?		"	○
	2. James Walker ○	Birth			1620			England	○
		Death	18	Feb	1691/2	Taunton			○
	Spouse ① Elizabeth Phillips ② Sarah (Richmond) dau John Rew widow Edward ○	Married	① ② 4	ca Nov	1645 1678				○
+	3. Philip Walker ○	Birth		ca	1626/7?			England	○
		Death	21	Aug	1679	Rehoboth			○
	Spouse - Jane Metcalfe (1632-1708) ○	Married		ca	1653/4	Dedham		Mass. Bay Colony	○
	4. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	5. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	6. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	7. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	8. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	9. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○

* An Averill Family tradition was about Esther (Walker) Averill's "Grandmother Molly" (perhaps pet name for Mary). That could have been confusion, though, since her mother, who died when Esther was little, was Mary (Bowen) Walker.

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information -- then list each on the reverse side. ○


PENNINE WAY
Kinder Scout 2,088 ft
PEAK DISTRICT N.P.
M62
M6
Daresbury
Macclesfield
JODRELL BANK
CHESHIRE
Chester
Congleton
LITTLE MORETON HALL
Crewe
Nantwich
Newcastle-under-Lyme
CHATTERLEY WHITFIELD MINING MUSEUM
Stoke-on-Trent
Whitchurch
Longton
Leek
Ashbourne
Eyam
Buxton
Bakewell
CHATSWORTH HOUSE
Chesterfield
HARDWICK HALL
Matlock
Mansfield
Blidworth
Worksop
Edwinstowe
Old Clipstone
Southwell
Newark on Trent
NEWSTEAD ABBEY
Sherwood Forest
Eastwood
NOTTINGHAMSHIRE
Nottingham
DERBYSHIRE
Derby
BELVOIR CASTLE
LLANGOLLEN CANAL
SHROPSHIRE UNION CANAL
STAFFORDSHIRE
Stafford
Abbots Bromley
Burton upon Trent
TRENT AND MERSEY CANAL
Loughborough
Melton Mowbray
The Wrekin 1,334 ft
Shrewsbury
Lichfield
LEICESTERSHIRE
Rutland Water
Coalbrookdale
Iron-Bridge
SHROPSHIRE
Tycross
Leicester
Welland
FOTHERINGHAY CASTLE
Wolverhampton
Walsall
WEST MIDLANDS
West Bromwich
Birmingham
Hallaton
Medbourne
Bridgnorth
Dudley
Smethwick
Corby
Oundle
Sibbertoft
STOKESAY CASTLE
Wenlock Edge
Clee Hills
Stourbridge
Halesowen
Edgbaston
Coventry
Kettering
Ludlow
Bewdley
Bromsgrove
THORP HALL
Nene
Ecton
Northampton
NORTHAMPTONSHIRE
Teme
Worcester
Towcester
HEREFORD AND WORCESTER
Malvern Hills
Vale of Evesham
Severn
Sulgrave
Wye
Hereford
Broadway
SYMONDS YAT
M50
M5
M69
M1
Trent
Dove
Soar
Avon
KILOMETERS 50
STATUTE MILES 30


The Wolds
Trent
Gainsborough
FOSSDYKE CANAL
Lincoln
VIKING WAY
Louth
Mablethorpe
Bellau
Scamblesby
Somersby
Skegness
Witham
Sleaford
Boston
LINCOLNSHIRE
Grantham
The Wash
The Fens
Bourne
Spalding
Stamford
BURGHLEY HOUSE
Peterborough
Nene
Holme next the Sea
HOLKHAM HALL
BINHAM PRIORY
Walsingham
SANDRINGHAM HOUSE
Cromer
BLICKLING HALL
King's Lynn
North Elmham
CASTLE ACRE PRIORY
The Broads
OXBURGH HALL
NORFOLK
Norwich
Great Yarmouth
Yare
MIDDLE LEVEL
Whittlesey
CAMBRIDGESHIRE
Wissey
Feltwell
PEDDARS WAY
Holme
Littleport
Little Ouse
Attleborough
Little Gidding
NEW BEDFORD RIVER
Thetford
Earith
Ely
Scole
Huntingdon
Godmanchester
Lark
Southwold
Dunwich
Clayhythe
Cam
Bury St. Edmunds
Newmarket
Cambridge
Fen Ditton
Framlingham
Alde
Snape
Aldeburgh
Stowmarket
SUFFOLK
M11
Duxford
Cavendish
Lavenham
Chelsworth
Saffron Walden (AUDLEY END)
Clare
Kersey
Ipswich
Stour
East Bergholt
Orford Ness
Thaxted
Finchingfield
Flatford
Felixstowe
Great Bardfield
Dedham
Harwich
Ardleigh
Colne
Colchester
Horsey Island
Felsted
ESSEX
Mersea I.
Clacton-on-Sea
Chelmsford
Little Baddow
Tolleshunt D'Arcy
Maldon
To Bremerhaven and Hamburg, W. Ger. Hoek van Holland, Neth. and Esbjerg, Den.
Epping Forest
M25
Foulness Island
Basildon
Southend-on-Sea
Thames
KILOMETERS 30
STATUTE MILES 20

These two sections of England adjoin at the green line.

What used to be Rutland is now in Leicestershire.

John Browne, Philip Walker's maternal uncle, was living near Boston, England, in 1627. He is said to have been related to an earlier Rev. Robert Browne, born in Tolethorp, Rutland, two miles from Stamford and Burghley House, the mansion of William Cecil, Lord Burghley, treasurer for Queen Elizabeth. He wrote, "Robert Browne is of my blood." About age 70 John Browne went to England for 4 years to settle the tangled estate of Sir Henry Vane. He stayed at Bellau, the home of Lady Frances Wray, Cecil's great grand-dau. through Albinia Cecil, possible ancestor. So was Christopher Browne (-1518) Sheriff of Rutland 1492-1509. Earliest of the family was John Browne, merchant of the Staple at Calais, France, & Alderman of Stamford, Lincolnshire in 1376/7.

(Averill Ancestors)

Family Record

Family No.

Walker ②
Surname

Father — (Deacon) Philip WALKER

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1626/7 ?	○			England	"second wealthiest man in Rehoboth"	○
Death	21	Aug	1679	○	Rehoboth (Seekonk)		Plymouth Colony	His uncle (and parents) Anglican	○
Buried				○				or Baptist – His status as Cong. Deacon	○
Married				○				may have been due to influence of strict Puritan Michael Metcalfe, his father in law	○

Occupation Saw Mill proprietor, sawyer, entrepreneur, Military – huge contributions for K-P War – Church (Congregational) ○

Places Lived farmer, poet – copied Bible text for Indians burned his house down – widow had it rebuilt. ○

Other Wives Rev. Newman – new version – weaver – constable. (See copy of his poem ○

about King Phillips War in "Early Rehoboth" by RL Bowen pp 25-52.)

His Father's Name Walker ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Browne ○

Mother — Jane METCALFE

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	24	Mar	1632	○	St Edmondsbury,	Norfolk	England	(Her father was persecuted by	○
Death	? 24	Oct	1702 ?	○	? Rehoboth,	Bristol	MA	Archbishop Laud – Michael Metcalf	○
Buried				○	(or Roxbury ?)			employed over 100 families in his "Cornish" weaving mills – (see Metcalfe family) His	

Occupation Military Church leaving the country put all those people

Places Lived (Cong. – (Puritan)) out of work – disastrous to the local economy of Norfolk).

Other Husbands ② 2 June 1684 John Polley of Roxbury (1618-1689) ○

Her Father's Name Michael Metcalfe ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name Sarah Ellwyn ○

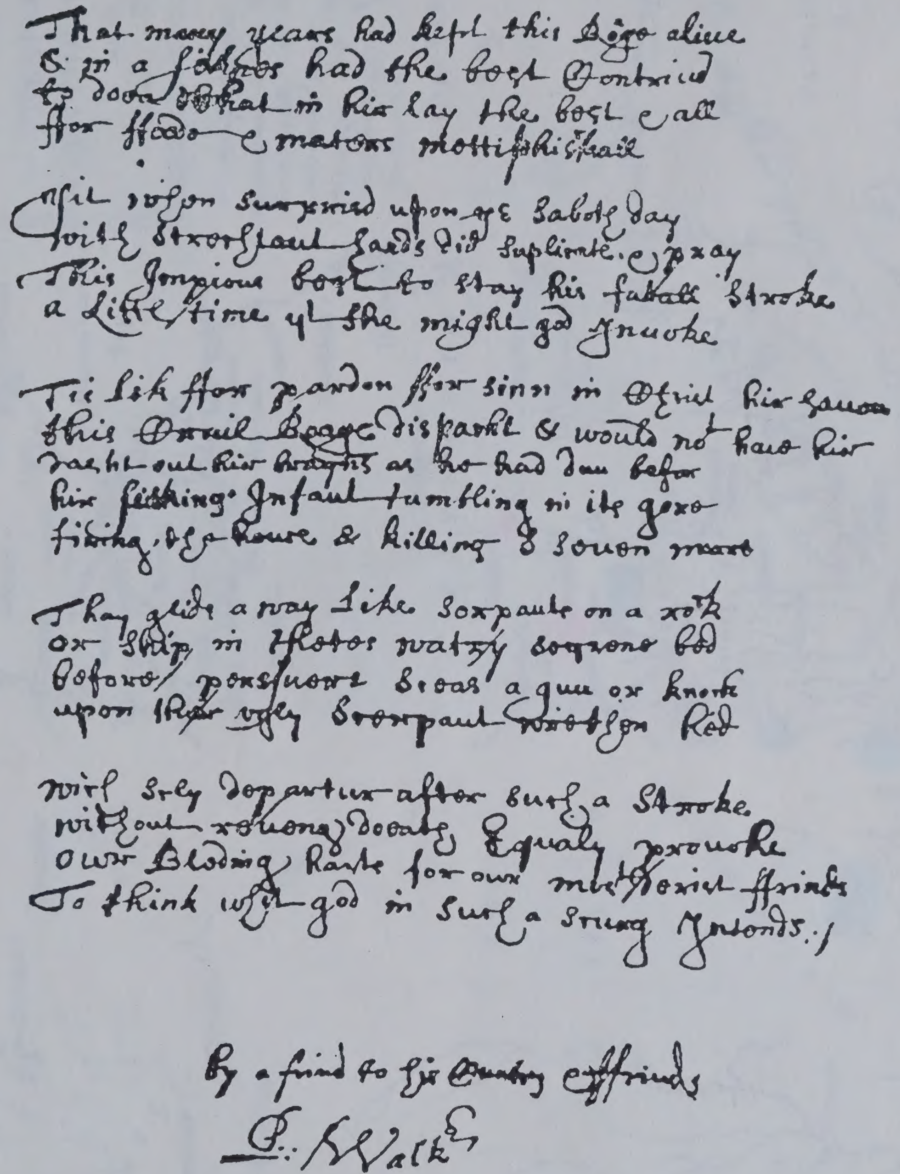
Children All born in Rehoboth

Sex	Full Given Name		Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Samuel Walker	○	Birth		Feb	1655	Rehoboth		Plymouth Colony	○
			Death	12	Aug	1712				○
	Spouse – ① Martha Ide (1654-1700) ② Elizabeth ( ) she m② 1714 John Smith	○	Married	① 11 ②	Nov	1681 17__	″			○
	2. Sarah Walker	○	Birth	16	Feb	1657				○
	(Feb)		Death	2	Aug	1693				○
	Spouse – Abraham Perrin (1647-1694)	○	Married	27	Dec	1677				○
+	3. Philip Walker, Jr.	○	Birth	–	Mar	1661				○
			Death	17	Feb	1739/40				○
	Spouse – ① Mary Bowen (3 ch)(1666-1694) ② Sarah (1676-1739)	○	Married	① 31 ②	Dec ca	1687 1695				○
	4. Elizabeth Walker	○	Birth		Mar	1661/2				○
			Death			1664				○
	Spouse – Drowned in river – age 2½	○	Married		—					○
	5. Mary Walker	○	Birth		May	1663				○
			Death	3	May	1694				○
	Spouse – (age 31 – unmarried ?)	○	Married		—					○
	6. Experience Walker	○	Birth		ca	1665				○
			Death	10	Nov	1674				○
	Spouse – (age 9)	○	Married							○
	7. Elizabeth Walker (again) (5 children)	○	Birth	1	Apr	1666				○
			Death				Swansea ?			○
	Spouse – Henry Sweet (– Dec 1704) of Swansea	○	Married	31	Mar	1687				○
	8. Michael Walker	○	Birth	1	Mar	1666/7				○
			Death		Feb	1676/7				○
	Spouse – (age 10)	○	Married		—					○
	9. Ebenezer Walker	○	Birth		Nov	1676				○
			Death	13	Mar	1717/8				○
	Spouse – ① Mehitable Wilmarth (– 27 Oct 17__) ② Dorothy Abell (1677-1741) She m② John Reed	○	Married	① 19 ② 11	Nov Oct	1700 1703				○
	10. Martha Walker	○	Birth		before	1680				○
			Death							○
	Spouse – (No further record)	○	Married							○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side. ○

Copied from "Early Rehoboth" by Richard LeBaron Bowen



That many years had kept this Rogo alive
& in a hollow had the best Contrived
to doom what in his way the best of all
ffor ffedo & maters [illegible]

Wil when surprised upon ye Sabath day
with stronghand hands did suplicate & pray
This Impious best to stay his fatall Stroke
a Little time yt she might god Invoke

Tis lik ffor pardon ffor sinn in Christ hir savour
this Cruil Rogge dispaht & would not have hir
reacht out hir brayns as he had done befor
hir sucking Infant tumbling in its gore
firing the house & killing 8 seven more

They glide away like serpents on a rock
or ship in floters watry sorrows bed
before persuers [illegible] a gun or knock
upon thier ugly serpent [illegible] Red

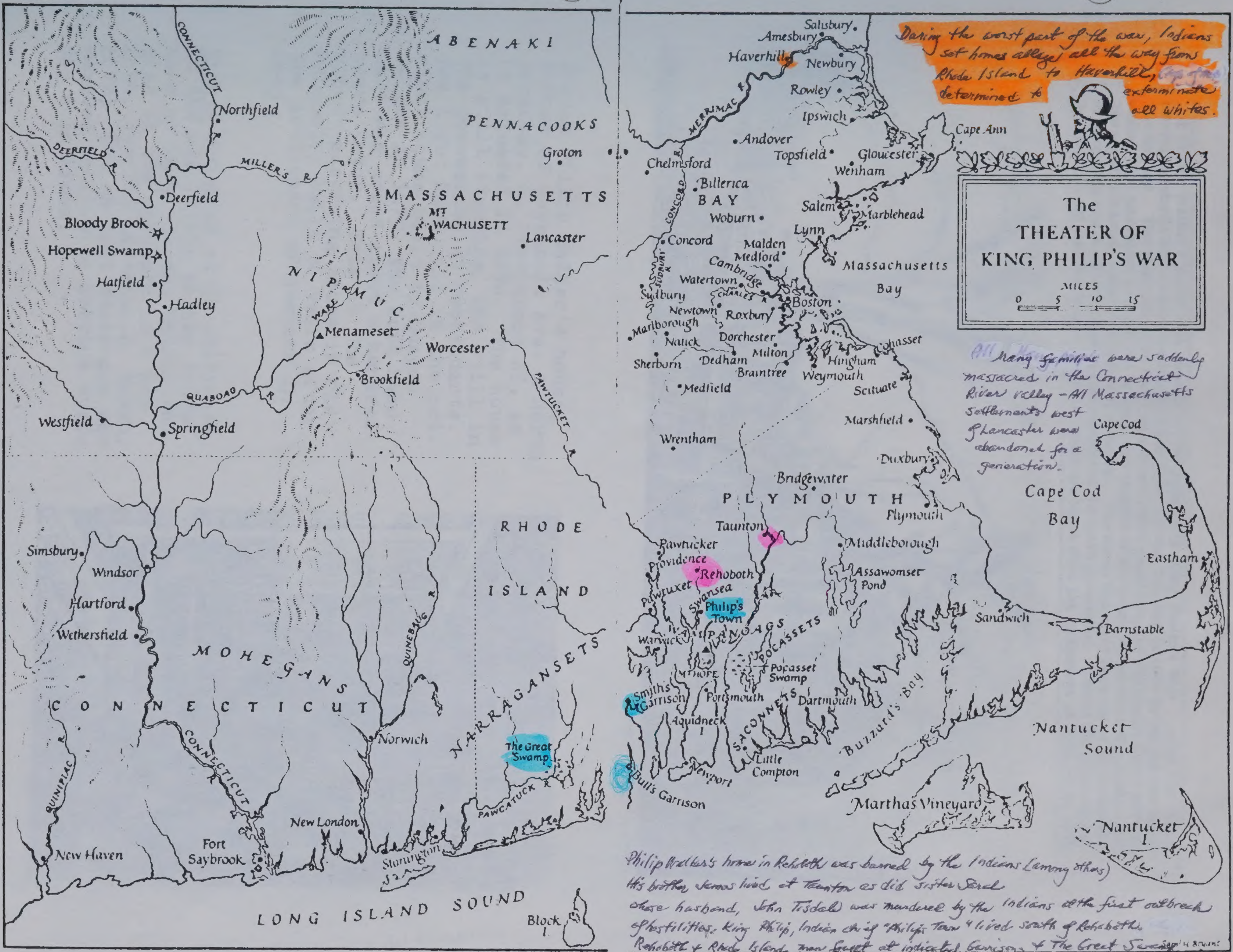
With [illegible] departur after such a Stroke
without revenge doeath Equaly provoke
our Bleding harts for our murthered ffrinds
To think what god in such a sting Intends.,/

By a friend to his Country & ffriends
P: Walker

An exact size photostatic reproduction of five stanzas of Philip Walker's poetry commencing on page 15 of his poem entitled "The ffirst smile of god in this land" (see *post*, page 46), together with his signature at the end of his eighteen-page manuscript. This is the only known extant handwriting and signature of Philip Walker, and is here published for the first time.

These stanzas record the murder of Rachel, the wife of Thomas Mann, and of her infant daughter, a heretofore unknown Indian atrocity committed at Swansea on 24 June 1675, the date of the outbreak of King Philip's War.

In addition to the historical importance of his poetry, his orthography is of particular interest in that it shows rather an unusual combination of sixteenth and seventeenth-century handwriting styles. For instance: his capital "C" is decidedly sixteenth-century, as is his small "h" with the top loop below the line; double "f" for capital "F"; "x" for "r"; and the lowered capital "C" for the "&" sign. Mixed in with these characters are also found the seventeenth-century capitals "B, I, L, R, S, T, and Y"; the small "h" with loop above the line; "e", and the "&" sign. The recorded handwriting of no other Rehoboth man seems to have had the styles of two centuries jumbled to the extent found in Philip Walker's writing, of which the foregoing five stanzas are only a small sample.


ABENAKI
CONNECTICUT R.
Northfield
DEERFIELD R.
MILLER'S R.
PENNACOOKS
Groton
MASSACHUSETTS
Deerfield
Bloody Brook
Hopewell Swamp
Hatfield
Hadley
MT WACHUSETT
Lancaster
NIPMUC
WARE R.
Menameset
Worcester
Brookfield
QUABOAG R.
Westfield
Springfield
PAWTUCKET R.
Salisbury
Amesbury
Haverhill
Newbury
MERRIMAC R.
Rowley
Ipswich
Andover
Topsfield
Gloucester
Cape Ann
Wenham
Chelmsford
Billerica
BAY
CONCORD R.
Woburn
Salem
Marblehead
Lynn
Concord
Malden
Medford
Cambridge
Massachusetts Bay
SUDBURY R.
Watertown
Sudbury
CHARLES R.
Boston
Newtown
Roxbury
Marlborough
Dorchester
Natick
Milton
Cohasset
Sherborn
Dedham
Braintree
Hingham
Weymouth
Scituate
Medfield
Marshfield
Wrentham
Duxbury
Bridgewater
PLYMOUTH
Plymouth
Cape Cod
Cape Cod Bay
RHODE ISLAND
Taunton
Pawtucket
Providence
Rehoboth
Middleborough
Assawomset Pond
Pawtuxet
Swansea
Philip's Town
WAMPANOAGS
POCASSETS
Warwick
MT HOPE
Pocasset Swamp
Smith's Garrison
Portsmouth
Dartmouth
Aquidneck I.
SACONNETS
Buzzard's Bay
Newport
Little Compton
Bull's Garrison
Sandwich
Barnstable
Eastham
Nantucket Sound
Martha's Vineyard
Nantucket I.
Simsbury
Windsor
Hartford
Wethersfield
MOHEGANS
QUINEBAUG R.
CONNECTICUT
CONNECTICUT R.
Norwich
NARRAGANSETS
The Great Swamp
PAWCATUCK R.
QUINIPIAC R.
New London
New Haven
Fort Saybrook
Stonington
LONG ISLAND SOUND
Block I.
MILES
0 5 10 15
Sam'l H Bryant

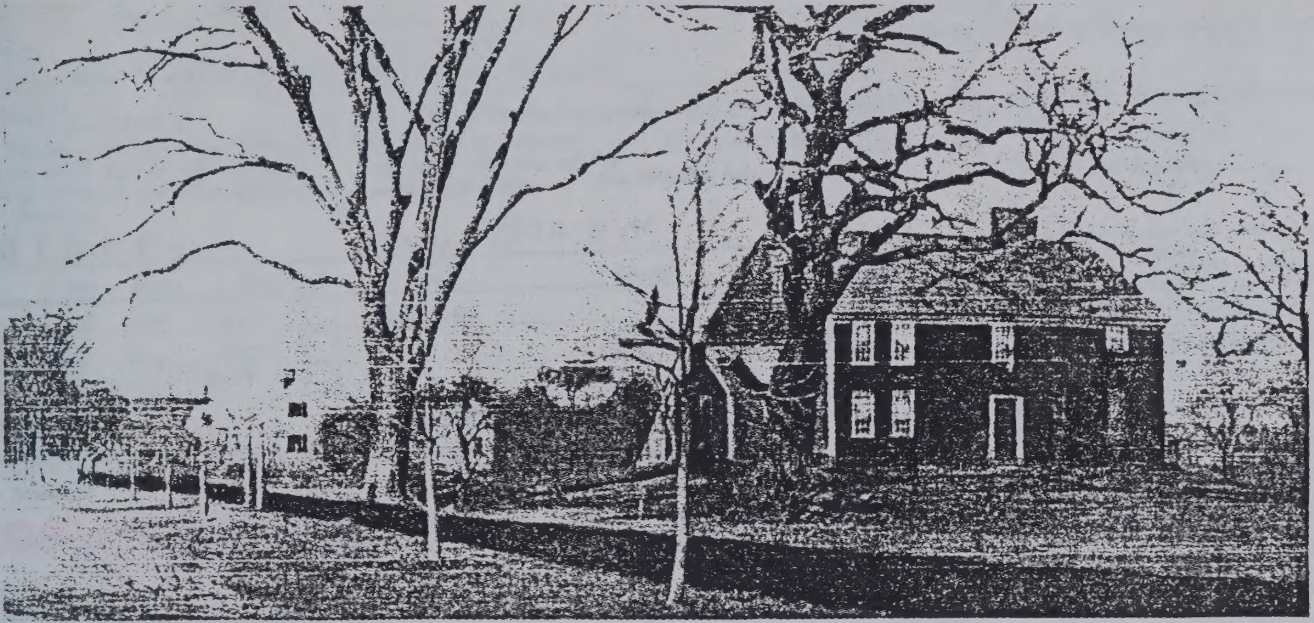
The
THEATER OF
KING PHILIP'S WAR

During the worst part of the war, Indians set homes ablaze all the way from Rhode Island to Haverhill, determined to exterminate all whites.

~~All~~ Many families were suddenly massacred in the Connecticut River valley - All Massachusetts settlements west of Lancaster were abandoned for a generation.

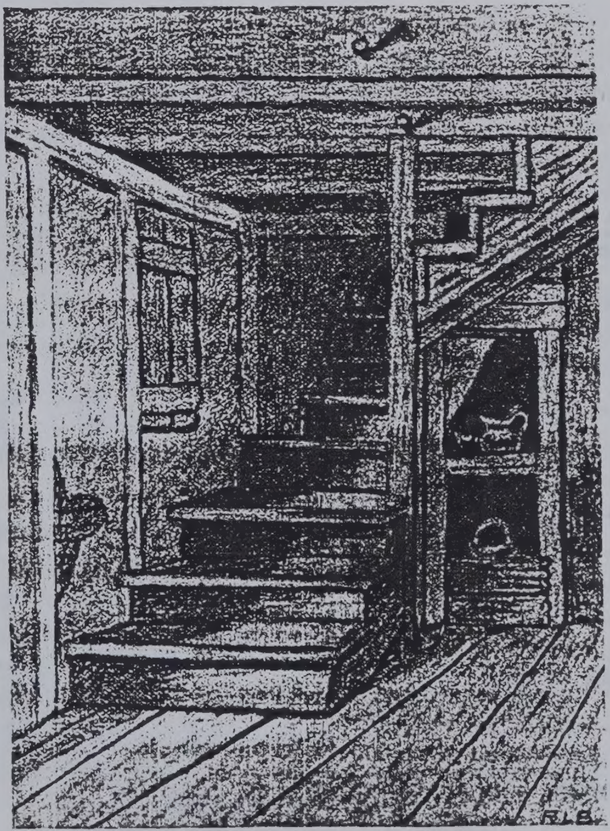
Philip Walker's home in Rehoboth was burned by the Indians (among others)
His brother, James lived at Taunton as did sister Sarah
whose husband, John Tisdale was murdered by the Indians at the first outbreak
of hostilities. King Philip, Indian chief "Philip's Town" & lived south of Rehoboth.
Rehoboth & Rhode Island men fought at indicated Garrisons & The Great Swamp

§ Philip^2 Walker's house was burned by the Indians in King Philip's War. After the war he started to rebuild his house on the foundations of the old one, but died in 1679 before the new house was finished. The same year, two hundred and sixty-five years ago, the Plymouth Court gave his widow Jane permission to finish the house at the expense of the estate, so we know the documented history of this house, which is still [1944] standing. The house has never been out of the possession of the family and is still occupied by descendants in the tenth generation. This is the oldest surviving house in old Rehoboth, and was built thirty-six years after the settlement of Seekonk in 1643.



From My Ancestors in America.

Deacon Philip Walker's house, corner of Massasoit Ave. & North Broadway, E. Providence RI, as it appeared in 1890. The house is still standing, and still in the possession of descendants. The right hand half is the original house built by Deacon Walker in 1679; the left hand half was added about a hundred years later. This is the oldest surviving house in Old Rehoboth, built 36 years after the settlement of Seekonk in 1643.



Right- original attic staircase in the old Philip Walker house, home of Mary (Bowen) Walker who died in the epidemic on 8 May 1694. (Pencil sketch-R.L. Bowen, 1892) The ancient staircase was removed in 1899 to provide space for a bathroom.

Family Record

(Averill Ancestors)

Family No.

Walker ③

Surname

Father – Philip WALKER, Jr

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		March	1661/2	○	Rehoboth		Plymouth Colony	(Now E. Providence RI)	○
Death	17	Feb	1739/40	○	"	Bristol	Massachusetts		○
Buried				○					○
Married	31	Dec	1687	○					○

Occupation Military Church Wavered – Congregational & Baptist. (See below) ○

Places Lived home "1 mile SW of the ring of the greene." See photo. ○

Other Wives ② Sarah (   ) m. ca 1695. Her maiden name has not been found. (It would appear that though his parents were strict Puritans, Philip Jr. went along with Mary who, being a Baptist, believed in adult baptism only. Sarah took over the care of his 3 very young children – had them baptized along with her first baby, Sarah Junior) ○

His Father's Name Philip Walker, Sr. ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Jane Metcalfe ○

Mother – Mary BOWEN

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	3	Oct	1666	○	Rehoboth		Plymouth Colony	See "Early Rehoboth" by R.L. Bowen	○
Death	8	May	1694	○	"	Bristol	Mass.	p. 41 for account of her death – 3rd victim of a big epidemic (typhoid fever?) leaving 3 small children.	○
Buried	epidemic – age 28			○					⑨

Occupation Military Church Baptist ○

Places Lived see photos – including sketch of stairway in her home. ○

Other Husbands ○

For children of Isaac and Esther (Walker) Averill
See Averill Family

Her Father's Name Richard Bowen, Jr. ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name Esther Sutton ○

Children – (see notes)

Sex	Full Given Name		Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
+	1. Esther Walker (Baptized 4 July 1697) age 8½	○	Birth	(21	Dec	1688 –	Batch (A184690 – 1720) (per IGI Microfiche) Rehoboth –		Plymouth Colony	○
			Death		after	1749	New Preston	Litchfield	Connecticut	○
	Spouse – Isaac Averill (1680 – 1749+)	○	Married	16	May	1709	Rehoboth	Bristol	Mass.	○
	2. James Walker (6ch)	○	Birth	3	Sep	1690	"			○
			Death	28	Nov	1747	"			○
	Spouse – Elizabeth ( )	○	Married			17 –	(Renewed covenant 3 Oct 1735)			○
	3. (Captain) Philip Walker III (8ch)	○	Birth	13	Aug	1693				○
			Death	5	Nov	1742				○
	Spouse ① Mary Chard (– 8/3/1737) ② Ann Martin (1699 – 1747) m/2 Jeremiah Allen	○	Married	① 7 ② 17	Dec July	1721 1737/8				○

In addition to these 3, Walker genealogy gives Ebenezer Walker b. 21 Oct 1688 – No further record. This is impossible if Esther b. Dec 1688. Is this poss. entry for Esther?? Did the date come from correspondence with the author by misinformed relatives – or vital stats?

Children of Philip & Second Wife, Sarah (   ) Walker:

Sex	Full Given Name		Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	4 Sarah Walker	○	Birth	8	Jan	1695/6				○
			Death			17				○
	Spouse – ① Thomas Kilton ② ______ Holdridge	○	Married	① 3 ②	Feb by	1724 1739				○
	5 Mary Walker	○	Birth	19	Mar	1699/1700				○
			Death			17				○
	Spouse – ① Josiah Ide (– Nov 1731) ② ______ Robinson	○	Married	① 18 ②	June by	1724 1739				○
	6 Jane Walker	○	Birth	21	Mar	1702				○
			Death		after	1739				○
	Spouse – Samuel Newman, Jr. (– 1739+) (the minister's son?)	○	Married	25	Dec	1724	Rehoboth			○
	7 (Deacon) Nathaniel Walker	○	Birth	31	Jan	1703/4				○
			Death	30	Apr	1783			Rhode Island	○
	Spouse – Anna Sweeting (May 1707 – Mar 1772)	○	Married	11	May	1727				○
	8 Daniel Walker (was in military expedition to Quebec Canada in 1759)	○	Birth	10	Oct	1706				○
			Death			1768+	Otter Creek, Clarendon (on 1 Apr 1768)		Vermont	○
	Spouse – Mary Perry	○	Married	1	Jan	1729/30	(To Coventry RI then Rutland VT)			○
	9 Stephen Walker	○	Birth	7	Aug	(1710?)				○
			Death			17	Pomfret	Windham	Connecticut	○
	Spouse – ① Rebecca Millerd (1706 – 1737) ② Mehitable Harris (of Roxbury MA)	○	Married	① 3 ② 20	Jan July	1733/4 1738				○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side. (Note: Pomfret CT was first settled by families from Roxbury CT – as Mehitable's home town – my see Windham Co History)

○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

Re: Broome / Walker

intrigued against the king, supporting Henry VI in his fight for the throne. His army was defeated and himself slain at the Battle of Barnet. The manor of Penrith again became forfeited to the Crown, and was given by the king to his brother Richard, Duke of Gloucester, afterwards Richard III. The duke repaired the castle and for a time resided there.

The manor continued to be held by the Crown until 1696, when Penrith and several other manors were given by William III to his Dutch follower, William Bentinck, whom he created first earl of Portland. In 1787 the manor of Penrith passed by purchase to William, fifth Duke of Devonshire.

It may be of interest to record here the fate of the once powerful Neville family, who at one time held the great castles of Raby, Branspeth, and Middleham. Ralph Neville became the first Earl of Westmorland. He married Joan, daughter of John of Gaunt, and Richard Neville (the Kingmaker) was their grandson.

In 1569 the "Rising in the North" took place, the intention being to put Mary, Queen of Scots, on the throne. Neville of Raby joined the insurgents and on the the 10th November 1569 summoned his retainers to Raby Castle.

> Neville sees
> His followers gathering in from Tees,
> From Wear, and all the little rills
> Concealed among the forked hills—
> Seven hundred knights, retainers all
> Of Neville, at their master's call
> Had sate together in Raby's Hall.
>
> —*Wordsworth*

After the feast they marched south, reaching Tadcaster, but finding no help coming from the south, as they expected, the rebellion collapsed and they retreated in disorder.

All Neville's property was forfeited to the Crown, and it is said that Sir Harry Vane, an ancestor of the Duke of Cleveland, persuaded James I to let him purchase Raby Castle, at a cheap price, by representing it to be merely a hillock of stones.

re John bro. of "Walker" ie

Afterwards, when James saw the place, he exclaimed in his Scotch brogue, "God's truth, mi lord, ca' ye that a hullock o' stanes? By my faith, I ha' na sic anither hullock in a' my realms."

The City of Carlisle has been a place of importance from very early times. The Ancient Britons had a settlement there, and the place where the Norman castle now stands appears to have been used by the Britons as a hill-fort surrounded by a palisade and ditch.

It was the Luguvallium of the Romans, situated at the end of the great Roman road from York to Carlisle, passing over Stainmore, through Brough, Appleby, Penrith, and the Forest of Inglewood. It was also near the western end of Hadrian's great wall stretching from the Solway to the mouth of the Tyne.

Very little is known of what happened on the castle hill during the long period of the Roman occupation — some 350 years — a period long enough for the works of the first Roman garrison to have become objects of archæological interest to those of the later period. This is a fact we are apt to overlook, and many of us assume that all Roman remains are of about the same date.

During the earlier part of the Roman occupation there is good reason to believe that the centre of military power was not at Luguvallium, but twelve miles to the west, at a place now known as Old Carlisle, where are the remains of a very large camp with earthworks and the foundations of numerous buildings. After the departure of the Romans, the Celts or Ancient Britons resumed their occupation of Luguvallium, or Caerluil as they called it, a Celtic name which, with only slight change, has survived through the ages to the present time.

Some time between A.D. 670 and A.D. 685, Ecgfrith, king of Northumbria, took Carlisle and a large district round it into his kingdom of Northumbria, and later St. Cuthbert built an abbey there, for the English by this time were being converted from the worship of pagan gods to Christianity. For nearly two hundred years after Ecgfrith, Carlisle remained part of the kingdom of

pp. 139-41

MEDICINE
ENUE
3226

WALKER-BROWNE FAMILY

Rehoboth, Mass.

——— Walker, born and died in England; married ———^{1} Browne, born in England, died at Rehoboth, Mass., in or shortly after 1647.

The "widow Walker," first name unknown, is the earliest American ancestor of this family.

On the *Elizabeth* in April 1635 sailed "James Walker 15 yers & Sarra Walker 17 yers: Seru$^{t's}$ to Jo^n Browne a Baker & to on W^m Brasey linen drap in Cheapside Lond p Cert. of their Conformity." On the same ship we find "Jo: Browne 40" and also Richard Walker (24) and William Walker (15), who may have been cousins but probably not brothers of the other two Walkers.

→ Apr. 1635

The mother of James and Sarah soon followed them, and was one of the first purchasers and proprietors of the town of Rehoboth, as well as one of the company who first settled there. The name of Widow Walker is in the list of those who in 1643 gave in the value of their estates for a pro rata distribution of lands; her estate was valued at £50. The division was made the following year, and her name appears as late as 18 Feb. 1646/7, but thereafter disappears. In the 1643 list, James Walker's estate (also £50) was entered next to that of Widow Walker, but he forfeited his allotment, as did also Mr. John Browne. They had settled in Taunton, and evidently preferred to remain there. Philip Walker, afterward Deacon, in the description of his lands in the Proprietors' Records at Rehoboth, speaks of a £50 right "that was my mother's," and when Philip died in 1679, James Walker, although living in Taunton, was an appraiser of his estate.

Mr. John Browne, evidently brother of the Widow Walker, was a man of prominence. He settled in Duxbury by 1636, and in Taunton in 1643. He was an Assistant of Plymouth Colony for seventeen years from 1636, and a Commissioner of the United Colonies for twelve years from 1644, and died at Swansea, Mass., 10 Apr. 1662. On 23 Nov. 1655, he gave to "his cousin John Tisdill" a dwelling house he had bought, "and house he lived in at Taunton, to John Tisdill and his cousin James Walker, John Tisdill's brother-in-law." James Walker and his sister Sarah came over as "servants" of John Browne, and Walker settled with him in Taunton. The wife of James Walker was Elizabeth Phillips, so his relationship to Tisdale did not come through her. It is evident that Browne was uncle of the two "servants" who crossed with him, that they followed his fortunes to Taunton, and that Sarah Walker, sister of James, became the wife of John Tisdale, and named her son James Tisdale after him. John Browne's son, James Browne of Swansea, was guardian of John Tisdale's youngest daughter, Abigail, in 1677.

Duxbury 1636 / Taunton 1643

James Walker died at Taunton, 18 Feb. 1691/2, aged 73; and Deacon Philip Walker was buried at Rehoboth, 21 Aug. 1679.

References

J. B. R. Walker: Memorial of the Walkers of the Old Plymouth Colony (1861), pp. 1-3, 5, 6, 18, 121.
J. C. Hotten: The Original Lists (1874), pp. 60, 61, 68.
New England Hist. and Gen. Register, 9-219.
James Savage: Gen. Dict. of New England (1862), 1-269; 4-393, 395.
C. E. Benton: Ezra Reed and Esther Edgerton (1912), p. 39.

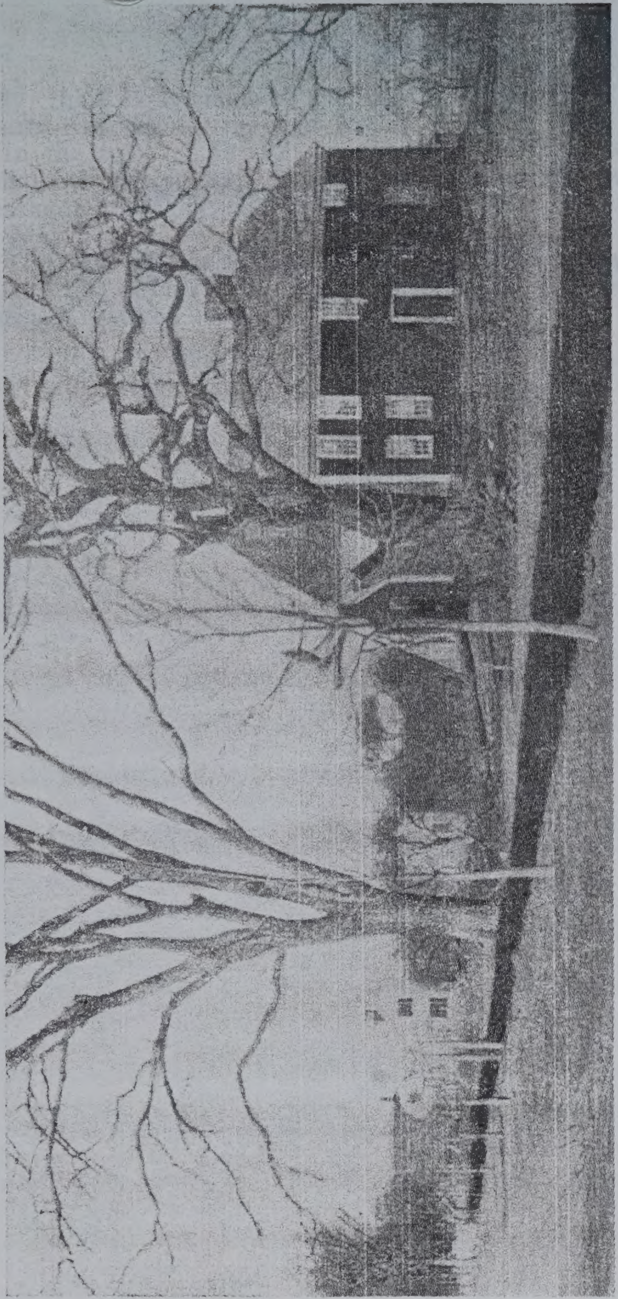
Sarah^2 Walker, born in England (perhaps London), about 1618, died at Taunton, Mass., in Dec. 1676; married John^1 Tisdale, born in England, , killed by the Indians at Taunton, Mass., 27 June 1675.

References

J. B. R. Walker: Memorial of the Walkers of the Old Plymouth Colony (1861), p. 18.

(Chart II, Line 16)

Ancient house - The Walker Homestead



From My Ancestors in America.

Deacon Philip Walker's house, corner of Massasoit Avenue and North Broadway, East Providence, Rhode Island, as it appeared in 1890. The house is still standing. The right-hand half is the original house built by Deacon Philip Walker in 1679; the left-hand half was added about one hundred years later. On his death, in August 1679, the building was uncompleted, and on 1 Nov. 1679 the Plymouth Colony Court gave his widow Jane permission to finish it at the expense of the estate.

This was also the home of Philip Walker, Jr., whose wife, Mary Bowen, died on 8 May 1694 during the Rehoboth Epidemic. See pages 106 and 107.

Due to boundary line changes, this house, originally in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, was later in Seekonk, Massachusetts, and finally in East Providence, Rhode Island.

Early Rehoboth

Documented Historical Studies of Families and Events in This Plymouth Colony Township

Ref
974.4
B77

By

RICHARD LEBARON BOWEN ← This man is our distant cousin.

46- 6207

VOLUME I

Re: Walker

PRIVATELY PRINTED

REHOBOTH, MASSACHUSETTS

1945

The sons of Maturin and Hannah (Pike) Bellew,—James, 26 years old, and Peter, 25 years old, are listed, but the name of their eldest brother, John, who was living in Providence and whose name is in a ten months earlier tax list, is not in the list. On 29 Oct. 1684 the Assembly allowed him £3 for cure of his wound received in the late Indian War, and it may well be that his war service secured him tax exemption. Of the four living sons of Widow Mary (Harris) Borden, daughter of William Harris, only the names of the eldest son, Richard, about 23 years old, and Joseph, the third son, 19 years old, appear in the list, while the names of the second son, William, about 20 years old, and Mercy (later Lieutenant), the fourth son, 16 years old, are missing. These few unanswered questions are sufficient to point out the possibilities of additions to this list.

Examining next the three earlier tax lists, one wonders why the names of Henry Fowler, Richard Prey, Thomas Cooper, Thomas Baker, and John Belloo appear in the rate list of 31 Oct. 1687 and ten months later are not in the list of August 1688, and why the last twelve names appearing in the rate list of 1 Sept. 1687 are thirty days later crossed off the list of 31 Oct. 1687, and ten months later disappear entirely from the rate list of August 1688.

The possibilities of making a more complete male inhabitant list of Providence for August 1688 are practically unlimited, for the early records contain a great deal about most of these men. With the revised alphabetical list of 1688 male inhabitants, printed in this chapter, as a starting point, it is first necessary to make a separation of the names into families, and then a study of each individual family, which will show missing names of fathers or sons. Then a check of these families with the known families will show any name not included in the list.

In any study of this tax list it must be constantly borne in mind that the inhabitants were opposed to Governor Andros' taxation, and that every expedient was probably employed to keep off this list. The subject is a fascinating study, and the writer will feel rewarded for his work if some one interested in the early history of the Town of Providence will continue on, from the point where he has left off, and construct a list as complete as additional research can make it.*

---

* The writer is indebted to Bradford Fuller Swan, Esquire, Assistant Editor, *Rhode Island Historical Society*, for carefully checking the proof pages of this chapter with the original records quoted.

Re: death of Mary (Bowen) Walker's death.
(deceased) mother-in-law of Isaac Averill

CHAPTER VII

An Early Epidemic

Research in the old Rehoboth, Massachusetts, records has brought to light a heretofore unknown epidemic,* thought at first to have been smallpox, but possibly one of the so-called "malignant" fevers,† that swept through the town in the month of May 1694, two hundred and forty-eight years ago. Out of the thirty-five people in seven families, sudden death claimed the lives of ten, four out of twelve in the Perrin family, and four out of the families of its relatives. When this plague had finally ceased its ravages there were left three widowers, three widows, six fatherless children, seven motherless children and six orphans. Of a total of fourteen deaths recorded in Rehoboth for that year, one occurred before the May epidemic, and only three in the seven months following.

This virulent epidemic occurred fifty-one years after the 1643 settlement of Seekonk, later called Rehoboth. No mention of it is made in any of the town or church ‡ records, and only a grouping of the deaths by years has brought to light this two and a half century old catastrophe, the severity of which is better understood when it is known that in the year before, 1693, the town had only one recorded death, that of Abraham^2 Perrin's wife, Sarah, and in the year following the epidemic, 1695, a total of only four deaths, which was about the normal yearly death rate.

The frontispiece in this book shows the house, now (1944) standing, of Philip^2 Walker whose twenty-eight-year-old wife Mary,^{3} daughter of Richard^2 and Ester^2 (Sutton) Bowen, was the third victim in this epidemic, leaving her husband with three small children, ranging in age from six years to nine months.

The writer is unable to find mention of any other nearby 1694 epidemic. In the town of Providence, Rehoboth's nearest neighbor, there were two recorded deaths in April; none in May; one in

---

* In the early days the country was periodically swept by epidemics that were "appalling in their virulence and merciless fatality". Smallpox was a dreaded visitor and early fell upon the inhabitants of the colony of Rhode Island, especially those of Newport and Providence, and many died.

† Another disease which was called by such names as "Milignant fever", "black vomit" and "yellow fever" raged in 1690/1 with great violence in the colony of Rhode Island, especially at Newport where the assembly, then in session, did little business and private trade transactions were practically suspended.

Dr. Cotton Mather preaching at Boston in 1698 said that "the smallpox had four times been a great plague upon us. In one twelve months about 1,000 of our neighbors had one way or other been carried into their long home".

Samuel Sewall in his Diary mentions an epidemic of "Fleet-Fever" [probably yellow fever] at Boston in July 1693 [5 *Mass. Hist. Col.*, vol. V, p. 380].

John Josselyn, writing in his book "An account of two voyages to New England", 1674, speaks of arriving in Boston in 1671 and finding "the inhabitants exceeding afflicted with griping of the guts, and Feaver, and Ague, and bloody Flux". Late in the century, from 1691 to 1693, there was an epidemic of yellow fever in Boston [*A Brief History of Medicine in Massachusetts*, by Henry R. Viets, M.D., 1930].

‡ Rev. Thomas Greenwood, ordained pastor of the Church of Christ at Rehoboth 24 Oct. 1694, kept some records but makes no mention of this epidemic.

July; three in November; and one in December, a total of seven deaths recorded for the year 1694.

In the town of Bristol, now in Rhode Island, with which the Rehoboth people had considerable connection, there were three deaths in 1694, one each in July, August, and December, but none in May.

The only clue as to the nature of this 1694 sickness is contained in the bill of charges,* dated 7 May 1695, of Thomas Read and Samuel^3 Walker, executors for the estate of their brother-in-law Abraham^2 Perrin, where appear the following items:

> "Paid for two girls, tending and diet, one five weeks, the other 18 weeks, £2/06."
> "For diet and tending the youngest child [Ruth] one year until the 25th of May 1695, £7/00."

Dr. Harold Bowditch says that "on the evidence of the length of time the two Perrin girls were sick, this epidemic was consistent with typhoid fever; that typhus fever and typhoid fever were not differentiated until many years later; that diseases were called by their most prominent symptoms, and that we shall not be able to identify the causes from any of the old records. Typhoid, too, has complications which may last, such as phlebitis (inflammation of a vein) and especially neuritis with resulting paralysis which may last as long as two years—consistent with the long care which had to be given to little Ruth Perrin.

"Further, the fact that so many connected individuals were infected suggests a dietary cause and infected backhouses, clothes, etc. With no knowledge of sterilization, ordinary washing would be useless. With relatives and neighbors running in and out, sharing the family's meals, and means of their ultimate disposal, it is no wonder (if it was typhoid) that one after another fell victims."

Dr. Ernest Caulfield, of Hartford, Conn., who has spent fifteen years in research on Colonial Epidemics, says that on the available evidence he could not make an exact diagnosis of this epidemic, and without more time for study would not even suggest one. He makes the following comments, which he says, may, or may not, be helpful:

"There was a severe epidemic in Stonington, Connecticut (which is very near the Rhode Island boundary), during March, 1694, and it was probably influenza. There is a good account of it in the REGISTER, vol. XLIX (1895), p. 285. I do not believe the Rehoboth deaths were caused by dysentery (or "Flux") because of the season and the age distribution of deaths (mostly adults). I am certain that it was not diphtheria, or measles or any of the childhood epidemic diseases. It could have been "spotted fever", or meningitis, but we have no records of that disease in this country before 1800. It might have been a typhoid fever epidemic, though I doubt if all the deaths would have occurred in May had typhoid fever been the cause".

"I am not certain that the items concerning the care of the children for long periods of time necessarily mean that they were sick. I gather that they were left without parents and the expenses might have been for ordinary care."

---

* *Post*, p. 117.

"Taking everything into consideration, my guess is that it was smallpox or influenza. Had it been a severe type of influenza it is a little difficult to understand why it was limited to a small group. A lot would depend upon the total population of the town at that time. The colonists naturally were terribly afraid of smallpox and strict precautions could explain the limitation of the epidemic."

Of course, it must be remembered that in the early days these virulent plagues were usually so fatal (especially smallpox) and so dreaded by the inhabitants that the relatives were generally the only people who would go near a stricken family, as is so plainly illustrated in this Rehoboth epidemic.

On the matter of nursing, nothing is known except the three items in the executors' bill: *

> "To Leftenant [Samuel^3] Walker for a week's work tending the Sicke, 12s."
> "Paid to others for help tending the sicke, 11s."
> "For sugar for the sicke . . . & veale for the Sicke."

Perhaps the "veale" for the sick was for making jelly similar to our calf's foot.

The item in the executors' bill,* "paid for two coffins & digging two graves, 11s, 7d"—two coffins and two graves for three people, is easily explainable. Thirteen-year-old daughter Elizabeth^3 died on the 14th of May, and before she could be buried her father Abraham^2 died, and they were both put in the same coffin and buried in the same grave.† Son Abraham,^{3} Jr., was buried five days later.

The only mention in the records of medical attendance in this epidemic is the item in Widow Perrin's account ‡ in the settlement of her husband John^3's estate, "to the Doctor for phisicke for her husband, £1/00", and item in the account § of the executors of the estate of Abraham,^{2} 7 May 1695, "to the doctors for phisicke for the sicke, 16s".

It would seem that the charges for "phisicke" were a little out of proportion in the two estates; £1/00 for the estate with one death and 16s for the estate with four deaths.

In the early days of Rehoboth there was so much intercourse between that town and its nearest neighbor, the Town of Providence, and with parts of Rhode Island, that in order to understand better the medical situation in Rehoboth it is necessary to review briefly the known doctors in the surrounding territory.

---

* *Post*, p. 117.

† This was a quick, simple burial. We know that in smallpox cases interments were immediately made in a nearby field, and never in the regular cemetery. In Rehoboth, so late as 1778, James Wheaton's wife, Sarah, died of smallpox on 29 June, and he died on 8 July, nine days later. Both were buried on their own farm in what is now a patch of pine scrub, easterly of their house, and rough field stones mark the graves. In Burial Hill Cemetery, about two miles away, are two slate stones erected to their memory. These stones say that they died of smallpox, which is the only knowledge we have of what may perhaps have been another unrecorded epidemic.

‡ *Post*, p. 119.

§ *Ibid.*, p. 119.

Of course, the first mention of doctoring was in 1623 when Edward Winslow journeyed from Plymouth to Sowams, later a ward of Rehoboth, and cured the sick Massasoit.

The earliest mention of a doctor in the Town of Providence was in 1638 when Thomas James, physician, went over into Seekonk, with Roger Williams, to attend the Narragansett Indian murdered by Arthur Peach of Plymouth. Dr. John Clarke was at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in 1638, and moved to Newport the following year. "John Green, Surgeon", Roger Williams's contemporary, removed to Warwick, R. I., in 1643. Robert Jeffries, gentleman, was authorized at Newport in 1641 "to exercise the functions of Chirurgerie". In 1648 Roger Williams wrote to John Winthrop of Connecticut for advice and medicine.

In 1663 Dr. Samuel^2 Fuller of Plymouth negotiated with the town of Rehoboth to settle there as physician, but for some unknown reason never came. On 1 Mar. 1664 the Rhode Island General Assembly licensed Capt. John Cranston, of Newport, "Doctor of phissick & Churrurgery" to practice throughout the whole colony. In 1668 Richard Smith of Wickford, R. I., was writing to John Winthrop of Connecticut for advice and medicine.

At Rehoboth 16 June 1676, "ther was an agreement made with Docter Dunster by the towne. The said docter promising to be helpful to the Towne for three months as a chyurgen: Promising to do his best indevor with the help of God to cure any of our towne y^t may be wonded by the enemye or come to be lame or hurt upon the towne or countrye service during the said three months beginning at the date hear of. The Towne ingaging to him three pounds in money to procure instruments and medeciments for healing and also of an accomodation of a suitable place and his diet and twenty shillings a month" [*Rehoboth Town Meetings*, Book II, p. 15].

Rev. Samuel Lee, pastor of the church at Bristol, in a letter * "June 25, 1690 at Mount Hope" to Dr. Nehemiah Grew, London, speaks of "one Mr. Arnold a practitioner in Physick of good request in Rhode Island". This was beyond doubt Caleb Arnold of Portsmouth, R. I., son of Gov. Benedict Arnold. There was also James^2 Tallman of Portsmouth who was practicing "Physic" previous to the end of the seventeenth century, and after.

For more than twenty-five years after King Philip's War Dr. Richard^3 Bowen † was located at Rehoboth and was the only resident physician taking care of the sick in that town and in nearby Providence. For a period of time well into the eighteenth century the Town of Providence was dependent on Rehoboth for its doctors. Dr. Bowen, then thirty-five years old, was undoubtedly the attending physician in this 1694 epidemic.

We know from the probate records * that he attended Gilbert Brooks who died on the 30th of June the following year.

If additional help was required in the epidemic emergency Dr. Bowen might reasonably have been expected to call in his stepfather, Dr. Samuel^2 Fuller, who was living at Middleborough, seventeen miles away, or call for help from Rhode Island. The records mention only two other doctors as being in Rehoboth anywhere near this time.

A Doctor Hanson is mentioned in 1692/3 as having been "paid two bushels of corn, 4s 6d", by the town of Rehoboth on the order of the Selectmen. For what service is not stated. So far as known this is the only mention of him in the records. Nothing more is known of him.

John Green, mariner, of Newport, R. I., made his will † at Rehoboth, 4 Sept. 1694. He calls Jeremiah Child ‡ [wife Martha] his landlord. Dr. James Collins [who had a wife Elizabeth] of Boston wrote the will "from the mouth of Mr. John Green before Nicholas Peck, Esq & his wife and Mrs. Childs". Green "was suddenly taken in a fitt" and died before he could sign the will. Who this Dr. James Collins was is not known to the writer. He was certainly in Rehoboth, perhaps to attend Green. In the will

bequests are made to Dr. Collins and to a Dr. William Hughes (spelled also Hues) of Boston, who later signed for his bequest by making his mark H.

---

* *The Colonial Soc. of Mass.*, vol. XIV (1912), p. 144.

† In 1663/4 when Dr. Richard^3 Bowen was about three years of age his father Thomas^2 (*Richard*^{1}) died leaving his wife Elizabeth a widow with Richard the only child. She married secondly, at Middleborough, Mass., about 1665, Rev. and Dr. Samuel^2 Fuller, son of Dr. Samuel^1 Fuller of Plymouth who was one of the signers of the "Mayflower" compact in 1620, and New England's earliest physician. She died at Plympton, Mass., 11 Nov. 1713.

Samuel^2 Fuller, born at Plymouth about 1625, died at Middleborough 17 Aug. 1695 in his 71st year, was one of the 26 original proprietors of Middleborough, which is about 17 miles east of Rehoboth. In 1676 the Indians burned his home at Middleborough, and he removed to Plymouth, returning after the war was over. Although educated for the ministry, he practiced medicine, as did most ministers; perhaps best exemplified by Rev. and Dr. John Clarke of Newport, R. I. In 1663 he negotiated with the town of Rehoboth to settle there as doctor, but never came. His mother [Bridget Fuller] was also asked to come as mid-wife. He was the first minister at Middleborough and preached there for several years although he was not ordained until 1694. By his biographers he is called a sober, grave, industrious, enlightened and self-denying man. When he married for the second time he had four motherless children ranging from 9 down to about 2 years of age. When the first child Elizabeth, by his second wife, was born in 1666, the last child by his first wife was 3 years old.

When Thomas^2 Bowen returned to Rehoboth from New London, Conn., in December 1662, he was a very sick man, having been under the medical care of Gov. John Winthrop. As there was no resident doctor located at Rehoboth at that time it is possible that Dr. Fuller of Middleborough attended him, and became acquainted with Elizabeth Bowen whom he afterwards married.

Thomas^2 Bowen in his will proved in February 1664 directed that his wife Elizabeth should bring up his son Richard "in the feare of the Lord and teach him to write and read". The son probably obtained his medical knowledge from his stepfather Dr. Fuller. Later in King Philip's War, with the shortage of medical skill, young Dr. Bowen had plenty of opportunity to practice.

In 1676 most of the inhabitants were driven from Rehoboth and Providence by the Indians who had burned their houses. In three or four years after the end of the war most of the inhabitants returned, and Dr. Richard^3 Bowen, who was the first settled physician in Rehoboth, attended the sick there and in the nearby Town of Providence, being the only recorded physician up to the early seventeen hundreds.

Dr. Richard^3 Bowen, who was the progenitor of a long line of famous Bowen doctors, covering a period of more than 150 years, educated two of his four sons to the profession. Col. and Dr. Thomas^4 Bowen, born in 1689, practiced in Rehoboth with his father and was 48 years old when Dr. Richard^3 died. He had three sons, one of whom, Ephraim,^{4} lived in Providence with his uncle, Dr. Jabez,^{4} from the age of 9; studied medicine with him and became a doctor. He had six sons, two of whom, William^5 and Pardon^5 Bowen, became noted physicians in Providence and vicinity.

The second son, Dr. Jabez,^{4} born in 1696, 41 years old when his father Dr. Richard^3 died, had a large practice in Rehoboth and nearby Providence, where he moved to the home lot of Roger Williams, a few rods north of St. John's Church, corner of North Main and Bowen Streets. Bowen Street was named after him. The house is still [1942] standing. He had a doctor son who succeeded him and a doctor grandson who died in Glocester, R. I.

For additional on 4th and 5th generation Bowen doctors see *Sketches of R. I. Physicians*, by Usher Parsons, M.D., 1859.

* *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. I, p. 153.

† *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. I, pp. 103–4.

‡ He ran a tavern. Judge Samuel Sewall in his diary says: "13 Sept. 1697—Lodged at Child's, Rehoboth" [5 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vol. V, p. 459].

After the turn of the century there are records of Rehoboth people sending out of the town for medical skill, as shown on 23 Feb. 1721/2 in the account * of the estate of Joseph^3 Peck, Rehoboth—"to Docter Tolman, 10s". This was undoubtedly James^2 Tallman (Peter^1), born at Portsmouth, R. I., about 1668, died there in 1724, calling himself in his will, "doctor of Physic". The will of Thomas Barnes of Providence, 24 Sept. 1706, refers "Especially to my careful & kind Doctor Mr. James Tallman".

On 18 Mar. 1728/9 the account of Jacob Ormsbee, administrator of the estate of his sister Esther Redway,† Rehoboth, deceased, lists the charges: "to Doctor Sweeting, 23s; to Doctor Walbridge, 48s; to one Jorney to Norridge [Norwich] to fetch Doct. Walbridge £2/08; to keeping the doctor and his horse one week, 12s". This was probably Henry^2 Sweeting of Attleboro, son of Mr. Henry^1 Sweeting of Rehoboth. We do know that he was called doctor in 1743.

The first epidemic death in May was that of the wife of Benjamin Allen who had just moved into the town from Salisbury, Massachusetts. Just where he lived we do not know. We do know, however, that the focal center of this epidemic was in the northwest corner of the "ring of the greene" ‡ where George Kendrick, on the west, and John^2 and Abraham^2 Perrin lived side by side on three home lots on the north side of what is now Hoyt Avenue, between the present Bourne Avenue and the Wannamoisett Country Club house, in the town of East Providence [Rumford], R. I. In these three houses occurred six of the ten epidemic deaths, four in the house of Abraham Perrin, one in John Perrin's, and one in George Kendrick's.

Philip^2 Walker's house § was about a mile southwest of the "ring of the greene". Ephraim Hunt's house was about three-quarters of a mile southeast on the west side of the "ring of the greene" on what is now called Greenwood Avenue. Ensign Thomas Willmarth lived on this same street about two hundred yards south of him. This section of the "ring" is now called "East Providence Centre".

An analysis of the Rehoboth deaths for the year 1694 shows that the first one was that of Isabell Newsome, the 3-day-old daughter

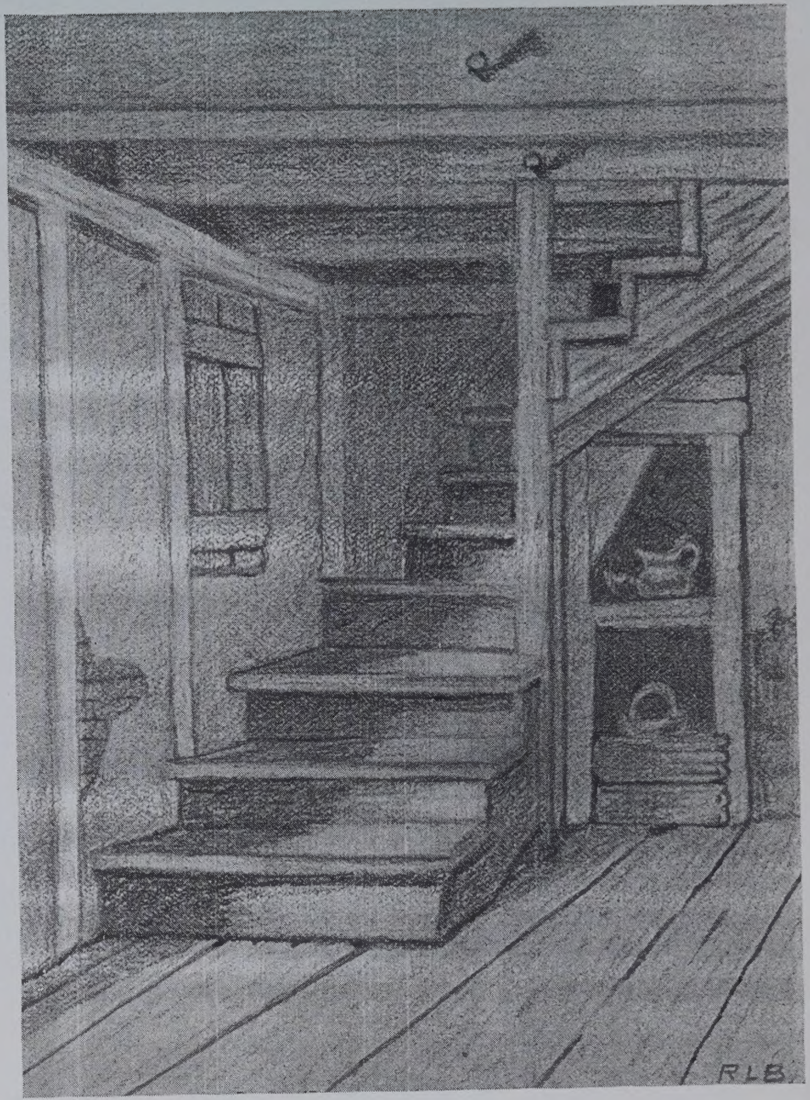
---

* *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. IV, p. 40.

† *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. VI, p. 219.

‡ The home lots were first laid out fronting a rectangle which extended northeast and southwest about half a mile wide by about three-quarters of a mile long, the total distance around being two and seven-tenths miles. Each settler fenced the front of his home lot, and this fence extended around the rectangle, which was called the "ring of the greene", or common. The settlers' houses stood on their "home lots" back of the fence, and the "greene" or common in front of the houses and fence was the common pasture for cattle. The first church stood in the center of the green, about seventy-five yards from where the present Newman Congregational Church now stands.

§ Philip^2 Walker's house was burned by the Indians in King Philip's War. After the war he started to rebuild his house on the foundations of the old one, but died in 1679 before the new house was finished. The same year, two hundred and sixty-five years ago, the Plymouth Court gave his widow Jane permission to finish the house at the expense of the estate, so we know the documented history of this house, which is still [1944] standing. The house has never been out of the possession of the family and is still occupied by descendants in the tenth generation. This is the oldest surviving house in old Rehoboth, and was built thirty-six years after the settlement of Seekonk in 1643.



The original attic staircase in the old Philip Walker house, home of Mary (Bowen) Walker who died on 8 May 1694 during the Rehoboth Epidemic. From a pencil sketch made by the author in 1892. This ancient staircase was removed in 1899 to provide space for a bathroom. See pages 106 and 107.

date given for the skirmish by both Mather and Hubbard in their contemporaneous narratives.

> "On 20 May 1676 there came to the Councils hand a letter signed by Jn^{o} Allin, secretary, in the name of the Council of Hartford, on Conecticot, which was communicated to the General Court [of Elections] then setting [at Boston], who returned an ans^{r} thereto, & is as followeth:
>
> > ". . . cn 24 May* Capt. Thomas Brattle, wth a troope of horse, about fiuety, sent out to the pursuing of the ennemy that had newly donn spoyle at Seaconcke, when coming wth a smale party of foote there, marcht to the falls of Pacatucke [Pawtucket] River, being on Seaconke side. Spying Indians on the other side, left the foote on Seaconck side, the horse, marching vp the rieur about a mile, wth some difficulty got ouer, marched doune to the ennemy, put them to the rout imediately, killed seuerall of them, took seuerall armes, wth amnition, keetles & other things, wth two horses; burnt great store of their fish they had catch^{d}, wth coates & shooes they had left behind. One man was lost there, & Cornet Elljot† wounded in the hand, the dead man carried to Seaconck and buried‡ there. An Indian boy was taken, that on examination affirmed this party of the ennemy was 3 or 4 hundred & belonged to Nepsuchnit" [*Mass. Bay Records*, vol. V, p. 97].

The preceding pages show in a small way how a little research will supply the wealth of additional details so necessary for a more complete and better history of King Philip's War. The failure to do original research in prime source records; the consequent lack of study of these available records by our historians; and their willingness to accept and repeat the outline history as written by the two contemporary historians, Mather and Hubbard, are responsible for the paucity of detail in the history of this Indian war.

These original documents, together with the poetry of Deacon Philip Walker printed in the following chapter, give us a far better first-hand understanding of the background of this war and a greater appreciation of its frightfulness than can be obtained by reading all the printed narrative histories. The words of eye-witnesses written at the time, on the spot, give a true sense of tragedy not found in the recitals of "traditions" no matter how skillfully written.

---

* Hubbard said that "a party of Indians were discovered at Rehoboth busy fishing in a river thereabouts [the Pawtucket Falls was a famous Indian fishing place] and that Captain Brattle was sent up about the 23rd of May and with the help of some of the inhabitants [of Rehoboth] killed eleven or twelve of the Indians with the loss of one man only". He makes no mention of Ensign Eliot's being wounded [Hubbard's *Narrative* (Drake Ed. 1865), vol. I, p. 226].

Mather said that "on 23 May some of our troops fell upon a party of Indians (about fifty in number) not far from Rehoboth and slew ten or twelve of them with the loss of only one Englishman". No mention was made of Ensign Eliot's being wounded [Mather's *Brief History* (Drake Ed. 1862), p. 150].

The Boston Merchant writing between 5 May and 4 Aug. 1676 to his friend in London, said that "on 24 May Captain Brattle was sent for with his troop to Rehoboth where he slew twelve Indians with the loss of one man and one slightly wounded" [Drake's *Old Indian Chronicle* (1836), p. 122].

† 24 May 1676—"Cosin [nephew] Jacob came home from Seakunk wounded in his hand, his clothes shot throgh and through" [Rev. John Eliot's *Records of the Church in Roxbury;* N. E. Hist. & Gen. *Register*, vol. XXXIII, p. 298].

[Cornet] Jacob Eliot was the eldest son of Jacob of Boston, the elder brother of Rev. John, the celebrated Indian Apostle of Roxbury. Jacob Eliot m. 9 Jan. 1665 wid. Mary Wilcox. He was later a captain, deacon, and one of the selectmen in 1677. He d. 16 Aug. 1693 [Savage, *Gen. Dict.*, vol. II, p. 109].

‡ There is no record of this burial at Rehoboth.

CHAPTER II

Deacon Philip Walker, Poet

In the manuscript collection of the American Antiquarian Society at Worcester, Massachusetts, is an heretofore unpublished eighteen-page manuscript* consisting of two poems and a prose article written in 1676 by Deacon Philip Walker of Rehoboth, totaling some 4,000 words. This is his only extant literary work, and we now know that the versatile Walker in addition to being a farmer, weaver, sawmill proprietor, deacon of the church, constable, and incidentally the second richest man in Rehoboth, was also a poet and writer of no mean ability.

This Walker manuscript is closely written in a small hand and compactly covers 17⅔ pages, which measure 3½ inches in width by 5¾ inches in length, and, from the historical events it records, appears to have been written between 26 March and 30 May 1676. It is divided into three parts: (1) "Captan Perse and his coragios Company", a poem on the Indian ambush and tragic death of Captain Pierce and his company at Rehoboth on 26 Mar. 1676, and on the general New England policy of fighting the Indians, 5 pages of 131 lines, including the title and 2 duplicate lines, principally in four-line stanzas, containing some 1,038 words; (2) "The Stragamen of the Indians", in prose, a proclamation from Satan to his servants, the Powwahs, 1⅔ pages, 62 lines including title, containing some 520 words; (3) "The first smile of God in this land", a poem contrasting the ideals of the founding fathers with the present abandonment of them with God's consequent punishment of New England, 11 pages of 336 lines including 1 cut off and 3 ending with signature, principally in four-line stanzas, containing some 2,406 words, a total of 529 lines of approximately 4,000 words.

---

* This manuscript was first copied by the American Antiquarian Society in 1928 with the idea of later publishing it in the Society's *Proceedings*. It was first called to the writer's attention in June 1943 by his friend Dr. Harold S. Jantz, Professor of Modern Languages and Literature at Princeton University, who came across it in the course of his intensive research in the libraries and historical societies throughout New England for early manuscript prose and poetry for his History of Early American Literature which he has in preparation. He found much new material, especially manuscript verse, about a third of which has been published in the *Proceedings* of the American Antiquarian Society, under the title, *The First Century of New England Verse* by Harold S. Jantz (1944). On pages 53 to 57 he briefly analyzes the work of Philip Walker, and on page 113 announces a subsequent special study of Walker's "Captan Perse and his coragios Company".

The Walker manuscript was at one time bound in a volume of printed pamphlets. On the first page of the manuscript, superimposed upon other writing is inscribed "Samuel Curwin, his Booke", apparently the last owner. On the same page is also found the name "John Curwin" and "John to the hon[ ]". This volume probably came to the Antiquarian Society shortly before 1831 at the same time as the Curwin Papers, which are really the Rossiter Cotton Papers containing much Curwin material.

It is interesting to theorize on how this Philip Walker poem came into the possesssion of the Curwin family. Samuel^3 Curwin was born 12 Oct. 1674. His father was John^2 and his grandfather George,^{1} a captain in King Philip's War, but there is no Rehoboth record showing that either was ever in Rehoboth. There are two possible explanations. The first is that Walker gave the poetry to his minister, Noah^2 Newman, and that it came into the possession of the Curwin family through the Newman's. Capt. John^2 Curwin was a brother-in-law of Rev. Noah^2 Newman of Rehoboth, having married, in 1665, Margaret^3 Winthrop, daughter of Gov. John^2 Winthrop, whose other daughter, Elizabeth,^{3} had married, in 1658, Rev. Antipas^2 Newman, of Wenham, brother of Rev. Noah^2 Newman of Rehoboth. Both Capt. John^2 Curwin and Rev. Antipas^2 Newman were neighbors at Salem. The town of Wenham was set off from the original town of Salem.

The second possible explanation is that Philip Walker gave the poem to Thomas Mann, the murder of whose wife and babe by the Indians is so graphically described, and that Mann gave it to his step-father, John Corwin, of Scituate, Plymouth Colony, and that the latter gave it to the Rev. John Cotton, Minister Noah Newman's friend at Plymouth, and that later it came into the Curwin family, finally becoming a part of the Cotton papers in the possession of Rossiter Cotton, a descendant of Rev. John Cotton.

To the historian, this Rehoboth manuscript record of King Philip's War is an extremely valuable contemporaneous document which adds much new detail to our all too scanty records of that war. Deacon Walker brings out some heretofore unknown facts, the most important of which is, if we read him correctly, that Capt. Michael Pierce marched in force from Newman's garrison in Rehoboth to reconnoiter the Indians without waiting for Captain Mosely and his company who were to have joined him. We also learn for the first time about the brutal murder of Thomas Mann's wife, Rachel, and her infant daughter.

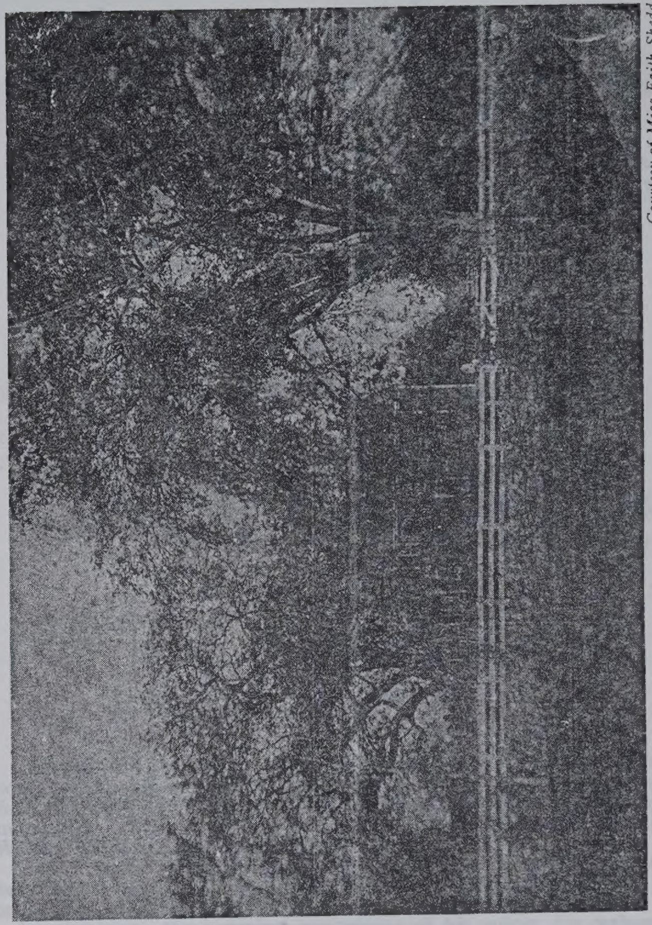
Little or nothing is known about the early life of Philip Walker. He was the son of "Widow" Walker, who first appears in Seekonk at the founding of that township in 1643 when he was about fifteen years of age. His name first appears in the Rehoboth records on 9 Sept. 1652, at which date his mother was undoubtedly deceased. Two years later he married. Whatever formal education he may have had as a boy, must have been obtained overseas before he emigrated to New England.

The first name of his mother or that of her husband is not known. There is fairly conclusive evidence that she had two other children, Sarra, born 1618, and James, born 1620, both of whom came to America in 1635 with their uncle John Browne, who for many years was a Plymouth Colony Assistant and one of the Plymouth Colony Commissioners of the United Colonies.

On 15 Apr. 1635, there sailed for New England from London, England, on the "ship *Elizabeth*, William Stagg, master, James Walker, 15 years of age, and Sarra Walker, 17 years of age, servants of Jo. Browne, a baker, and one William Brasey, a linen draper in Cheapside, London, per certificate of their conformity". On 17 April other passengers boarded the ship, including Jo. Browne, aged 40 years [3 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vol. VIII, pp. 259–262].

Later, in 1643, we find John Browne and the two Walker children, James and Sarra, at Taunton, Massachusetts, and John Browne and James Walker, together with Widow Walker, proprietors in the new Township of Seekonk.

On 10 Jan. 1643/4 the Seekonk lots of John Browne, James Browne, his son, and James Walker were ordered forfeited for failure to move their families to the new Seekonk township [*Rehoboth Town Meetings*, Book I, p. 37]. John Browne and his son later removed to Seekonk (Rehoboth), but James Walker forfeited his Seekonk lands



Courtesy of Miss Faith Shedd

The house built by Philip Walker, poet. From a heretofore unpublished photograph taken about 1860. Finished in 1679, and still standing, this is the oldest authenticated poet's house in New England. For the story of this Walker house, and picture, see *post*, pages 28 and 50.

and remained in Taunton, where shortly afterward he married* a Taunton girl.

It appears that Widow Walker was either a sister or sister-in-law of John Browne, and that some time after Widow Walker's two children came to New England, in 1635, she followed with her younger son, Philip, and was settled by John Browne at Rehoboth in 1643.

On 23 Nov. 1655 John Browne of Rehoboth gave to his cousin (*i.e.*, nephew) John Tisdill, who had married Sarra Walker, a dwelling-house he had bought at Taunton. He also gave to his cousin (*i.e.*, nephew) James Walker his own house that he had lived in at Taunton [*Plymouth Colony Deeds*, vol. III, p. 181].

Deacon PHILIP^2 WALKER (——^{1}), weaver, husbandman, sawyer, and poet, born about 1628, died intestate, and was buried at Rehoboth 21 Aug. 1679, the same day that his friend Stephen Paine, Senior, was buried. He married, probably at Dedham, Massachusetts, about 1654, JANE^2 METCALF, born at St. Edmondsbury, co. Norfolk, England, 24 Mar. 1632, daughter of Michael^1 and Sarah (Elwyn) Metcalf. Michael Metcalf was a Dornix† weaver in the city of Norwich, where he was made freeman 2 June 1618, and where he is said to have employed some hundred or more men. Widow Jane (Metcalf) Walker married, secondly, 2 June 1684, John Polley of Roxbury and lived there until her death on 24 Oct. 1701.

In October 1679 James Walker‡ (probably Philip's brother) and Samuel Walker (24 years old), eldest son of Philip Walker, appraised his property for £685, a large estate for that time when the average was nearer £150. On 1 Nov. 1675, the Court held at Plymouth, before Josiah Winslow, governor, "ordered that the now house in building shall be finished out of the whole entire estate . . . and that the widow shall have a comfortable and convenient being therein during her widowhood" [*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. VI, pp. 27–8].

Two days after Pierce's Fight, 28 Mar. 1676, the Indians fell upon Rehoboth and burned most of the houses, barns, and other buildings, including Philip Walker's dwelling house. After the Indian war was over, Philip Walker first rebuilt his sawmill, which we know was in operation on 16 Feb. 1676/7 for on that date his ten-year-old son Michael (named after his grandfather Michael Metcalf) fell into the water wheel and was carried into the river under the ice and drowned

---

* Gov. Edward Winslow in a letter to Gov. John Winthrop written from Plymouth on 4 June 1646 said: "The bearer . . . an industrious and well affected young man desires me to entreat you to further him in a seemingly just demand: He being lately married, it seems that there is one Samuel Crum a wine cooper lately came from sea and a kinsman of his wieus that is departed this life with you. whereupon in his wiues behalf he desires letters of administration he having no other kindred so nearly allied in the country, and therefore I prey you shew all lawful favor. His name is James Waker [Walker], and I shall take any kindness to him as done to myself, and therefore I beseach you, being he is a stranger and put him in some course to accomplish it" [*Winthrop Papers*, vol. V, p. 82].

† Or "Dornick", a kind of material used for curtains, carpets, and hangings, so called from Doornik, or Tournay, a city in Flanders, where it was first made [Phillips' *Dictionary*, London, 1706]. A similar damask-linen was made at Dornoch in Sutherlandshire, Scotland.

‡ For an account of the Walker family, see *Memorial of the Walkers of Old Plymouth Colony* (1861), by J. B. R. Walker. This is an excellent genealogy and is one of the best written at that period.

[*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. V, p. 209]. He next built a new house (perhaps starting it in 1678) on the foundation of the old one. This is the oldest surviving house in old Rehoboth, built thirty-five years after the settlement of Seekonk in 1643. It has never been out of the possession of the family and is still owned and occupied by a descendant in the tenth generation.

So far as actual documentary proof is known to the writer, the Philip Walker house,* finished in 1679 and still (1947) standing on Massasoit Avenue, East Providence, Rhode Island, is the oldest poet's house in New England. Few seventeenth-century houses are so unquestionably dated. Against this documented evidence is the tradition that the Col. Dudley Bradstreet house in Andover, Massachusetts, was the home of his mother, Anne Bradstreet, the earliest known New England woman poet, whose first book of verse was published in England in 1650. However, the claim made for this Anne Bradstreet house seems to rest solely on tradition.†

Returning to Walker's eighteen pages of manuscript, we find that a study of this document adds greatly to our knowledge of the man. In the first place, his penmanship shows a mixture of sixteenth and seventeenth century style letters, with the latter predominating. A good example of sixteenth-century handwriting is found in the letter of old John Kingsley, shown *ante*, page 21. Some of the characters in this letter were in use as early as 1538. Secondly, Walker's handwriting demonstrates that he was a constant writer, for it is of that non-hesitant style where one letter flows into another, proficiency in which is acquired only by continual practice. In the early Rehoboth records, with the exception of Edward Smith, Rehoboth's first town clerk, none of the town clerks had Philip Walker's free and easy style of penmanship. The town clerks were only occasional writers and most of their handwriting shows a labored effort. Walker must have been a prolific writer, for in this one manuscript he penned some 4,000 words, a continuous writing effort which it is safe to say was unequalled by any early Rehoboth man other than the two ministers, Samuel Newman and his son Noah.

A search of the Rehoboth record books fails to disclose any of Walker's handwriting. This being the case, it is necessary to look

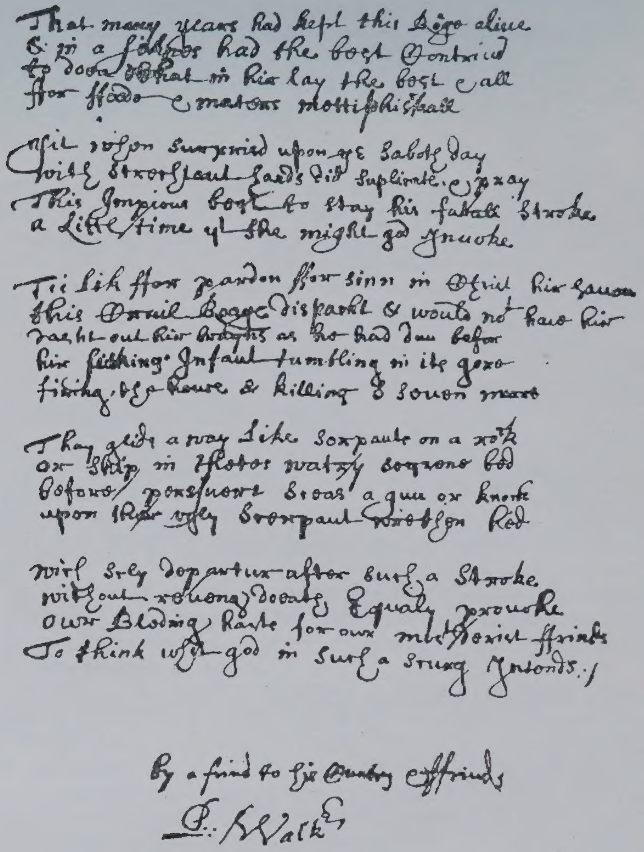
---

* Much about Philip Walker will be found in *Early Rehoboth*, vols. I and II. In volume I is a picture of the Walker house taken about 1890 and a sketch of the old attic stairway.

† Sarah Loring Bailey, writing in 1880, said: "The tradition has always been that the Bradstreet house was the residence of Mr. Simon Bradstreet. That it was the home of his son, Col. Dudley Bradstreet, is authenticated. The latter died 1702. He married 1673. His mother [Anne Bradstreet] died the year before. His father, Mr. Simon Bradstreet, removed to Salem about the time of the marriage, doubtless relinquishing the house to his son. It is stated in the Journal of Mrs. Anne Bradstreet that their house was burned to the ground [10] July 1666. Undoubtedly they built another immediately. The tradition has been that the frame of the house was brought from England; but, however this may be, it is not likely that Mr. Simon Bradstreet was homeless for seven years, or, if he had within so recent a period built a house, his son would immediately build a new one. Some years ago the writer, whose birthplace the house was, took some pains to trace its history through the centuries". Without any proof to substantiate the statement, a picture of the Bradstreet house is shown opposite page 137, under the title "Home of Mr. Simon and Mrs. Anne Bradstreet, Col. Dudley Bradstreet, Rev. Thomas and Rev. John Barnard, and Rev. William Symmes, D.D." [Bailey's *Historical Sketches of Andover* (1880), p. 127].

At the break of day, 22 Feb. 1697/8, Andover was attacked by the Indians; Lieut. Col. Bradstreet's house was rifled, his kinsman Wade, Capt. Chubb, his wife, and three more slain and some houses and barns burned. The town records were taken away by the Indians [*Ibid.*, pp. 182–3].

R. Chubb



That many years had kept this [illegible] alive
& [illegible] a [illegible] had the best Contrived
to doe what in his lay the best & all
ffor ffood & [illegible] [illegible]

Whil when surprised upon ye sabath day
with [illegible] hads did suplicate & pray
This Impious best to stay his fatall stroke
a Little time yt she might god Invoke

Tis lik ffor pardon ffor sinn in Christ hir sauor
this Cruil [illegible] dispatcht & would not haue hir
racht out hir brains as he had don befor
hir sucking Infant tumbling in its goro
fiering the house & killing [illegible] more

They glide away like serpents on a rock
or ship in [illegible] watry regions bed
before persuers [illegible] a gun or knock
upon their vgly serpent [illegible] hed

with [illegible] departur after such a stroke
without revenge doeth equaly prouoke
our Bleding harts for our [illegible] ffrinds
To think what god in such a [illegible] Intends.

By a frind to his Country & ffrinds
P: Walker

An exact size photostatic reproduction of five stanzas of Philip Walker's poetry commencing on page 15 of his poem entitled "The ffirst smile of god in this land" (see *post*, page 46), together with his signature at the end of his eighteen-page manuscript. This is the only known extant handwriting and signature of Philip Walker, and is here published for the first time.

These stanzas record the murder of Rachel, the wife of Thomas Mann, and of her infant daughter, a heretofore unknown Indian atrocity committed at Swansea on 24 June 1675, the date of the outbreak of King Philip's War.

In addition to the historical importance of his poetry, his orthography is of particular interest in that it shows rather an unusual combination of sixteenth and seventeenth-century handwriting styles. For instance: his capital "C" is decidedly sixteenth-century, as is his small "h" with the top loop below the line; double "f" for capital "F"; "x" for "r"; and the lowered capital "C" for the "&" sign. Mixed in with these characters are also found the seventeenth-century capitals "B, I, L, R, S, T, and Y"; the small "h" with loop above the line; "e", and the "&" sign. The recorded handwriting of no other Rehoboth man seems to have had the styles of two centuries jumbled to the extent found in Philip Walker's writing, of which the foregoing five stanzas are only a small sample.

elsewhere for the explanation of his practiced hand. We know that he was closely associated with the Newmans, both father and son. From the settlement of the town in 1643 until his death in 1663, Samuel Newman was busily engaged in compiling a concordance to the Bible. The first edition was published in London in 1643, followed by a revised edition in 1650, and another revised edition in 1658; he was undoubtedly working on a fourth revision at the time of his death. This was a tremendous job of copying and, as it was impossible for Samuel Newman to do it alone, he must have had plenty of help.

It is suggested that Philip Walker's fluency in writing may have been acquired in his younger days by way of countless hours spent in copying from the Bible for Samuel Newman's concordance. This would explain how Walker became such a practiced penman.

Philip Walker's free-flowing penmanship, with each letter carefully formed and the whole exceptionally legible for the date and style of writing, tells much about him,* as does his spelling, which is a rare example of phonetic spelling even for the unorthographic seventeenth century,—of which more later.

Only a brief reading of his verse and prose is necessary to bring him out of the shadowy centuries and into the light as a deep-thinking, forcible, religious man who had his own individual ideas about current events and was not at all afraid to express them. We find him with a somewhat unexpected knowledge of ancient, medieval, English, and New England history; Greek and Roman mythology; some knowledge of the physical sciences; of English writers of the period; and also considerable knowledge of the Bible.

Deacon Walker was undoubtedly a self-educated man, for whatever regular schooling he had must have been obtained before 1643, when as a boy of about fifteen years of age he came with his mother to the Seekonk settlement. From that time on, the business of clearing land, house building, planting crops, and providing food for his mother and himself must have precluded any further formal schooling. Under the circumstances, the extent of knowledge displayed in his verse and poetry is astonishing. With the exception of the Newmans, he probably had as good a general education as anyone in Rehoboth.

Walker's education must have been obtained by extensive reading, with perhaps some help from Samuel Newman. From the founding of Seekonk in 1643 there were plenty of books in the settlement. Samuel Newman had a large library, but unfortunately there is no record of the names of the books. On his death he left his "library" to his son Noah, who was later a minister, but the only book mentioned by name in his will is his "Concordance" which he left to his son Samuel. One of Walker's nearest neighbors was William Carpenter, who came to Seekonk in 1643 and was buried there on 7 Feb. 1658/9. He had a considerable library and in his will, made 10 Dec. 1658, he mentioned the following books: "Ainsworth's five books of Moses, Canticles, and Psalms; Brightman's Revelation; Concordance to the Bible (probably Newman's); Mahew's Four Evangelists upon the fourteen chapters of Saule (or Paul); Latin books; Greek and Hebrew grammars, Greek Lexicon; Perkin's Works; Barrow's Private Contentions called Harts Divisions; a book of Psalms; a Dictionary; Bibles (3), Practice of Piety, a volume of Prayer; Perkin's books, Christ's Sermon on the Mount; Burrough's Jewell of Contentment, the Oil of Gladness; Dr. Jarvis' Catechism, and Helen's History of the World" [*Plymouth Colony Wills*, vol. II, pp. 80–83].

Deacon Walker made many suggestions about the conduct of the war, some of which were ultimately adopted. He advocated an all-out war to kill the Indians as fast as possible; that the English leave the garrison-houses and fight; that more friendly Indians be employed to help kill the enemy Indians; and even offered the novel plan of giving the enemy poisoned liquor.

All through Walker's work, runs the belief that the Lord is punishing the English for their sins by turning the Indians loose on them with fire and death. This same theme is found in all the writings of this period, and is especially to be noticed in the contemporaneous letters of Newman, Cotton, Kingsley, and other writers printed in this book. This is not surprising for New England was largely ruled by the Law of Moses.

Walker displayed an unusual power of direct expression and the ability to use some rather uncommon words with just the right meaning to express his thoughts, as for instance, in the first stanza of his poem on "Captain Perse and his coragios Company" where he said "picaring", which is undoubtedly the phonetic spelling of the now obsolete word "pickeering", meaning reconnoitering or scouting—just the word he needed. Then there is that line about the death of the Narragansett Sachem "Miontonimo" (*Quanonshet*), near Pawtucket on 11 Apr. 1676, where he said, "his buffel head on a powl thay raysed". Here he gave a complete word picture of *Quanonshet*, for a "bufflehead" is a duck, the male of which has a remarkable fullness of feathers on the head with plumage black above and white below.

Although a poor speller, Deacon Walker had a good command of language and put his thoughts into words regardless of his ability to spell. There is no doubt as to what he meant, for his words as he spelled them usually had the exact number of syllables. In his words "goea", "whoea" and "doea" he carried out the same inflection with the addition of a syllable which doubtless had something to do with his dialect. Once we have the idea of his phonetic spelling we can usually determine the right word. The following are a few of his phonetic spellings: "Cru" for crew, "dun" for done, "Elikssander" for Alexander, "gilti" for guilty, "gresi" for greasy, "inosent" for innocent, "juils" for jewels, "otion" for ocean, "powl" for pole, "sed" for said, "sitty" for city, "Urope" for Europe, and "Zurksses" for Xerxes.

---

* According to the principles laid down by Frith, Walker's type of handwriting indicates that he was unpretentious, benevolent, good-hearted, liberal, cautious, and that he was of high intelligence with a well-regulated mind; of logical reasoning power, imagination, talent; a lover of detail and slightly sensitive [*A Guide to the Study of Graphology*, by Henry Frith, F.A.S., London, 1886].

Walker's verse and prose are written partly in a dialect unlike anything known in early Rehoboth. The writer has read in manuscript more than 3,000 pages of original Rehoboth records and has found no such words as "goea", "doea" and "whoea". They usually have the "e" ending but never the "ea". Then, to name just a few, are the words "toun, bang, hant, saes, goake", etc. These are all foreign to any written words known to have been in use in Rehoboth. In the preceding and following chapters are shown some half dozen contemporaneous letters written by Rev. Noah Newman, Rev. John Cotton, John Kingsley, Lieut. Nathaniel Thomas, Lieut. Peter Hunt, Maj. John Pynchon, and extracts from numerous other letters, which taken together give an accurate cross-section of the words in use and of common spellings in Walker's period.

The writer suggests that Walker * was a Scotchman and that he wrote in a Scottish dialect. Due to his sometimes fantastic phonetic spelling this statement is difficult to prove, for the evidence is not too conclusive, but the idea is nevertheless worth further investigation. Seekonk was founded by English, Irish, Welsh, and Scotch settlers, so that the verse could have been written in the dialect of any of these countries. It does not seem to be in English dialect, certainly not Irish or Welsh, which leaves only the Scottish. Consulting the Scottish Glossary † in the poetical works of Robert Burns, we find that Walker's "blud" may be the Scottish word "bluid"; "toun", toun, a hamlet; "bang", bang, to beat; "hant", hae, to have; "saes", sae, so; "goake", gowk, a fool or simpleton.

In his two poems there are four lines in which he seems to have used Scottish words. The first and strongest case is the line, "they may goea goake with them the self same way". Here he has apparently used the Scottish word "gowked" meaning foolish, which is just the right word. In his line, "That Sasaman has & may Saes bee" he has probably used the Scottish word "sae", which means "so" and is the word needed. In his third line, "But give it out they never so wear bangd", the Scottish word "bang" means to beat, and this dialect word was apparently selected to rhyme with "hanged". In his fourth line, "Lets search y^e Cort y^e Cuntri toun & Sitty", the Scottish word "toun" means hamlet or farmhouse.

Among the manuscript letters in the Massachusetts Historical Society is a letter written from Taunton, Massachusetts, on 1 Sept. 1671 by James Walker (supposed brother of Philip) to Governor Prince of Plymouth Colony. A copy of this letter was printed in the *Collections* of the Society in 1800, vol. VI, page 197. The letter as printed could easily have been written by a university man, for the spelling, capitalization, and punctuation are carried to such a

---

* "Lower in his *Surnames* says that the name Walker signifies either (Anglo Saxon *wealeere*) a fuller or an officer whose duty consisted in walking over or inspecting a certain piece of forest ground. In the north of England a fulling mill is still called a *walk*-mill. The same custom obtains in the south of Scotland where the Walkers are numerous" [Walker's *Memorial of the Walkers of Old Plymouth Colony* (1861)].

† *Poetical Works of Robert Burns*, with a complete Glossary (Edinburgh 1787, London 1819), Boston, 1847.

degree of perfection as to raise a question of its authenticity. An inspection of the original letter shows it to have been edited* in ink by a later hand, apparently for the 1800 printing. The original letter has been so much written over that it is practically impossible to make a true *verbatim* copy. The following transcript is the best that could be made:

> much Honored Sir:
>
> after my humble respects presented to you th[ ] are to aquaynt you with Philips answer to yo[ ] Letter my soons beeing visited with the ague, forced mee to procure brother Haruie to goe ouer to coosen James Broune with the letter, whoe sent for m^r Williams to interprit; m^r Williams not beeing well, came not til afterwards; yet coosen James & brother haruie went downe to mount hope & the dance beeing broken vp Philip, & the most of his cheefe men weare much in drinke; only Acumou[in] & tom sancsuik† weare sober soe that Philip could not then giue a answer. only there passed sum words betwixt Philip & cosen James, & Philip struck of coosen James Brounes hat. the day following the went agayne to Philip & m^r Williams with them the ltter being red, & Philip caused fully to vnderstand it, they could get noe positiu answer about Philips comeing to Plimmoth, because m^r Eliot had sent for him to Boston, & he looked for another mesenger that day which mesenger they met about [two] miles from Philips house which mesenger tould them y^t his message was to desire Philip to bee at Punkapoge [the present town of Stoughton] the last day of this weeke at boston the tusday following. Philip & tom Exclmed much agaynst sasiman‡ fo reporting that anie of the naragansit Sachems were there. not farther to troble you; but rest desiring the good lord to be with you, & [guide] you in all youre weightie afayres yours to serue .
>
> James Walker
>
> Taunton, sep^t: 1: 1671:
>
> for our much honored
> Gouernour m^r Prin[ce]
> at Plimmoth
> these
>
> [Original letter, *Massachusetts Historical Society*, Governor Prince Papers, No. 76.]

In the following pages will be found Walker's verse and prose transcribed *verbatim* by the writer from photostats made from the original manuscript in the American Antiquarian Society, with footnote comments and explanations. For a full understanding and appreciation of this work, it is necessary to know something about the background of King Philip's War, which will be found in the preceding and two following chapters.

Deacon Walker's first and longer poem, entitled "Captan Perse and his coragios Company" is an epic graphically describing the tragic ambush and almost total annihilation by the Indians of Capt. Michael Pierce and his whole company at Rehoboth on 26 Mar. 1676 in what is know as "Captain Pierce's Fight", as follows:

---

* It is hard to understand why these seventeenth-century letters are not printed *verbatim* "as is" without having the spelling, capitalization, and punctuation first carefully edited and modernized. Volumes of these ancient letters have been printed and in some cases so glorified by the editor that it is impossible to tell whether the writer was a university graduate or a man with little schooling. These original letters are oftentimes our most valuable source evidence and the only clue to the writer's education.

† He was one of the captains of Philip's father, *Ousamequin*, and called "*Saunkussecit* of Wauchimoqt", as written probably by Roger Williams, and "*Sunck Suit*, called Tom of Wachamoqt" as witnessed by Benedict Arnold, Indian interpreter [*Early Rehoboth*, vol. II, p. 8].

‡ This was John Sassamon whose body was found in 1675 under the ice on Assowomset Pond.

[C]aptan Perse and his coragio^{e} Company

[ ]ero[ ]
[ ]
[ ]kon[ ]
[I]ndian:
huntrs or cow kilers
cald
y^{t}
roves
woods
[*Walker's note*]

IT ffel unlucky y^{t} thi march* wos Soner
then thi apoynted time to y^{t} meroner†
in thy picaring‡ thou Lacks^{t} thos muskitters
and his Experianc gaynd mongst Buckaneers

•

Which are a Ruged Cru of hunting rouers
much Like thes Sauag Sneking brutish grovers*

* hunters in y^{e}
woods
[*Walker's note*]

But man Euents cannot at all fforcee
it is the eternall gods propriitee
ffor ^{t}was decreed by y^{t} Eternal power
y^{t} gave them being to fixe y^{t} fatal ower

That orders men & times & ends & all
Efittiant Cases Epidemicall
not as the ould Philosiphers beleve
prodiggious planits Il Efectts doe give

They did like Hectters whoea well deserve y^{t} nam[e]
New ly Intered in the bed of ffame
Whoea lost ther Blud not much unlike to marter[s]
by disadvantage with thes helish Tarters

In ffighting for ther Cuntry & ther ffrinds
have dun ther dooea mad hear ther final Ends
meethinks ther vallou^{r} should our harts provoke
To take reveng ffor Such a dredfull stroke

---

* In the first stanza of his poem Deacon Walker states unequivocally that Captain Pierce marched his company to attack the Indians at Rehoboth before an appointed time when he was to have been joined by a company of musketeers under the command of a "meroner" who had gained his experience among buccaneers. The noun "meroner" is perhaps an incorrect spelling of "marooner", the old meaning of which was buccaneer. On the other hand, the word may be an incorrect spelling of "mariner". In either case there can be no doubt as to the identification of the mariner and musketeers referred to, for the man could have been none other than that famous mariner Capt. Samuel Mosely and the musketeers his Boston company of privateers.

It has always been inexplicable that Captain Pierce should have marched his small company of English across the Seekonk Plain to attack the Indians at Blackstone River, a distance of some five miles away from the Newman garrison-house, at a time when it was generally known that the Indians were concentrating in very large numbers around the town. That he was to have been joined by Captain Mosely but decided to make the attack alone without waiting for reinforcements places the whole affair in an entirely different light, for this fact is mentioned by none of the historians and is an extremely important addition to our meagre knowledge of Pierce's Fight.

Deacon Walker's statement cannot be lightly passed over, for it is an "on the spot" record made by one of the town officials who was in a position to know what he was talking about. In addition to being a deacon in Mr. Noah Newman's church, he was also one of the two Rehoboth constables and was undoubtedly quartered in Minister Newman's garrison-house, the Rehoboth headquarters of Captain Pierce.

According to Hubbard, "Captain Pierce being apprehensive of the Danger he was in, by the great Numbers of the Enemy, like to overpower him with their Multitude, he sent a Messenger, timely enough to *Providence*, for Releif; but . . . whether through Sloth or Cowardice, is not much material, this Message was not delivered to them to whom it was immediately sent; by Accident only some of *Rehoboth* understanding of the Danger, after Evening Exercise (it being on the Lord's Day, March 26, 1676) repaired to the Place; but then it was too late to bring help" [Hubbard's *Narrative* (Drake Ed., 1865), vol. I, pp. 174–5].

The only authentic account of the losses suffered in Captain Pierce's Fight is contained in a letter written from Rehoboth on 27 Mar. 1676 (*ante*, page 14), the day after the fight, by Rev. Noah Newman of Rehoboth to his friend the Reverend John Cotton at Plymouth, and in his second letter dated 19 Apr. 1676 (*ante*, page 15), telling of Rehoboth's three days' labor in burying the English slain in Pierce's Fight.

† Capt. Samuel Mosely was one of the most conspicuous and best-known officers in King Philip's War. A cooper by trade, he later became a skillful mariner and married Anne, daughter of Governor Leverett's sister Anne, wife of Mr. Isaac Addington.

Our authority for the composition of Captain Mosely's company is found in the letter written in 1675 by the unknown Boston merchant to his friend in London in which he said: "Immediately after [20 June 1675] notice came hereof of the trouble at Swansea to the Governour of the *Massachusetts* Colony (*Boston* being Metropolis, and the Honourable *John Leveret* Governour thereof). Drums beat up for Volunteers and in three Hours time were Mustered up about an Hundred and ten Men, Captain *Samuel Mosely* being their Commander. This Captain *Mosely* hath been an old Privateer at *Jamaica*, an excellent *Souldier*, and an undaunted Spirit, one whose Memory will be Honourable in *New-England* for his many eminent Services he hath done the Publick. There were also among these Men about Ten or Twelve Privateers that had been there sometime before . . . There went out also amongst these Men one Cornellis, a Dutchman, who had lately been Condemned to die for Piracy" [*The Present State of New England with Respect to the Indian War* (London, 1675), pp. 4, 5—*John Carter Brown Library*].

James Savage said that Captain Mosely, "in the way of trade, visited Jamaica and other parts of the West Indies where his adventurous spirit was excited and schooled, perhaps, by Sir Henry Morgan and associate Buccaneers, the result of which was his bringing home to Boston two prizes from some unmentioned enemy" [probably the Dutch]. These two vessels were prized by the Governor and Council on 9 Apr. 1675 as follows: "The shallop *Edward & Thomas*, £57:13:00; The shallop that *Roads* went out in, £15. On 9 July 1675 John Roads, Peter Grout, Richard Foulers, and Randall Judson, condemned malefactors, petitioned the court from jail" [*Mass. Bay Records*, vol. V, p. 45].

At Swansea on 29 June 1675 "our horsemen with the whole Body of the Privateers under Captain *Mosely* pursued the Indians a mile and a quarter on the other side of Myles' Bridge" [Hubbard's *Narrative* (Drake Ed., 1865), vol. I, p. 70].

There is plenty of evidence that Captain Mosely was well known to the Indians and greatly feared by them. On 11 Oct. 1675 Roger Williams wrote from Providence to Governor Leverett at Boston saying that "he was requested by Captain Arthur Fenner of Providence to give him notice that he had it from a native that Philip's great design is . . . to draw Capt. Mosely and others of your forces, by training and drilling, and seeming flights, into such places as are full of long grass, flags, Sedge, &c., and then environ them round with fire, smoke and bullets. Some say no wise soldier will so be caught; but as I told the young prince on his return lately from you, all their war is comooting; they have commootined our houses, our cattle, our heads, &c., and that not by their artillery, but our weapons; that yet they were so cowardly that they have not taken one poor fort from us in all the country, nor won, nor scarce fought one battle since the beginning" [*Narr. Club Publications*, vol. VI, p. 375].

In the Narragansett Swamp Fight on 19 Dec. 1675, nine of Captain Mosely's company were slain and ten wounded. The Boston merchant writing under date of "the 9th 1675" said: "Our Forces entered the Fort, Captain *Mosely* being in the front, the *Indians* knowing him very well many directed their shot at him, as he afterward told the General [Winslow] that he believed he saw 50 aim at him" [Drake's *Old Indian Chronicle* (1836), p. 49].

Captain Mosely had great success in destroying the Indians and "by some was thought to take too great a delight in that exercise. The easy manner in which he was allowed to pass through some seemingly arrogant assumption of responsibilities" has been attributed by some writers to his close alliance with Governor Leverett and other influential persons in Boston. However, this contention is not substantiated by the records.

Captain Mosely was largely a free-lance fighter and fought the Indians whenever and wherever he found them without too much restraint or direction from any military commander. No captain in the Massachusetts Bay, or in any other colony, had such discretionary power. The extent of this extraordinary freedom from military direction is shown in the action of the General Court of Election held at Boston, 5 May 1676, which considered Captain Mosely's "conditions" under which he would serve as "a comander over such volunteers as may here after present themselves". His conditions were in brief as follows: "That neither he nor any of his company may be ordered to keep garrison but may always be at liberty to seek out and molest the enemy. That he may not be ordered under the command of any commander that is or may be sent out unless upon a sudden emergency for the special service of the country to join with other forces for their strengthening, but not to be obliged to continue with them longer than the emergency require. That his commission may be as large as may consist with the safety of the country and not to be bound up in marches or executions to particular places but to leave it to his best discretion for destroying the enemy, excepting only special orders from General Court or Council on special occasions. That the profit from captives or plunder be divided among himself and company".

The court appointed Maj. John Pynchon [son-in-law of Rev. William Hubbard], Maj. Thomas Savage, Mr. Humphrey Davy, and Capt. Lawrence Hamond a committee to confer with Captain Mosely and consider the conditions under which he would serve as commander. All of these "conditions" were accepted by the committee which in addition recommended that the country supply the company with money, ammunition, provisions, clothing, etc., and that it be quartered in towns at public charge. The committee made its report the same day and the court "allows, approves, and confirms the return of the committee as an act of this Court" [*Mass. Bay Records*, vol. V, pp. 94–96].

‡ "Pickeering", an obsolete word meaning reconnoitering, skirmishing, marauding, scouting.

Stought hartts stood too^t till last disdaynd to [fly]*
Such Ods has mad the Rooges er since mor shy
who have no cas to brag of victtory

But give it out they never so wear bangd*
I hoape in time thayl all be shot or hangd

[2] Tis sed at York there is a scarlet dyer
Ift bee a ridl antiant ffame a lyer
Itt may bee fferd wee^r hudwinkt in a trance
as was our vergin queene † by Imps from france

Fo^r maters ffraue as if y^t Dragon beste
were hither flone to make his helish nes^t
With opn jaes Intending to devour
y^t child of grace Lord god upone him Shour

The Vials of thy wrath apear for thine
Lett all the poure of heven & earth Combin[e]
Let hell know it is Curbd by poure devine

Show now thi self Lord in owr habitations
who hast so Scatterdly disposd our Stations
& gives us Corig and providence from thee
for thers no other help or place to ffee

Lett shops & Crops & men of all Estates
Sett hartt & hand to fight without debate
For non there now can thinke ther Safe Securd
How er Suplyd within owr owne Imurd
Improve the utmost depending creturs can
Leve the sucksses to him y^t rules Each man

Though what here spoke is but a singl notion:/
and Like a drop lett ffall into the otion
Yit my advice If I might hered bee
Tist to make a vertu of nesesitee:/

Arme & Incorig owr Indins whot wee Can
a theef revers may prove an honist man
the Boston Islanders ‡ Capcod § Monhegon ‖
ffo^r honer profitt Smal thay^l fight winnegon ¶

---

* Outnumbered more than ten to one, and fighting back to back in a ring surrounded by Indians standing "thirty deep", there was no alternative for the English other than to fight to the inevitable end. The Indians were victorious due solely to their overwhelming numbers. Their loss was great, said at that time by *Hubbard* to have been one hundred and forty, a figure probably not too greatly exaggerated. Although victorious, the Indians never forgot the mauling they received in this fight and throughout the rest of the war were extremely shy about engaging another company of English.

† The virgin queen was undoubtedly Elizabeth (1533–1603), daughter of Henry VIII and Anne Boleyn. Through thirty difficult years she and her ministers played off Spain against France. Under Elizabeth's reign the English Church was re-established by the 1559 Act of Uniformity, restoring, with modifications, the Prayer Book of Edward VI, and finally barring the door on Rome. The same year saw the expulsion of the French from Scotland, and the 1561 Peace of Edinburgh removed the danger of a French invasion of England by way of Scotland.

‡ The "Boston Islanders" were the praying Indians around Boston who were recruited by Major Gookin. A company of some fifty Indians was sent from Boston to Mount Hope under the command of Captain Isaac Johnson to serve with the Massachusetts Expeditionary Forces. Of these Indians, only seventeen remained in service in Plymouth Colony under Captain Henchman on 31 July 1675; these accompanied him in his pursuit of Philip after his escape from Pocasset Swamp.

§ The "Cape Cod" Indians were the Plymouth Colony allies throughout the war.

‖ The "Monhegan" Indians were those under the sachem Uncas. Some fifty of them marched from Rehoboth as allies of the English in the pursuit of Philip and in the later skirmish at Smithfield, R. I., on 1 Aug. 1675, proved themselves faithful to the English and excellent fighters.

¶ Deacon Walker appears to have been stumped in finding the right word to rhyme with "Monhegon". However, his knowledge of the Indian language seems to have saved the day, for in the Narragansett Indian word *Wunêgin*, meaning "well or good", he had a word that would not only rhyme (the way he spelled it) but also had just the right meaning [Roger Williams' *Key into the Language of America* (1643)].

[3] If with ther help god give to us Suckses
wee may to them Ingage & not transgres
Thay shal bee regan^t of ther nation here
weel them defend If any els apere/

ffor thers a proverb no^t beyond belefe
Imploy a wily Ro^{a}g to cach a thefe
The Cas becas in good & bad thers simpathe[e]
as Contry Cases Caes Antipothee

Iff this bee dun thay mih^t with grea^t discretion
y^t y^e Comand & staf be in our nation./
by such a prudent politick Contrivanc
wee may Expectt the varments ferst Conivanc

Call fforth our Burgers lett them now goea out
Such as ar manly wise discrett & stout
for tis a shame the hethen Cananit
Should know Sum people are in such a fright

That Law nor reson neither Curig Can
prevail to Face a hethen bruttish man
Its known there now none can be safe securd
How Er Suplyd within owr owne Imurd
[*The above two lines are crossed out; similar
lines appear on p. 2 of the MS.*]

Wods good Turn ought as thay by threat to hold us
ffor dayly news and every voyce doth call us
Whear garisons * are mand leave two or three ner toun
Lett all the rest goea fight y^e Enemee

[4] for prudent Surgons Spread ther Salf quit r[ound]
acording to the greatnis of the wound:/
God only knows to what this war Portends
ffelt most by us y^t Loose owr dearest ffrinds

Thes murthros Rooges like wild Arabians thay
Lurk heare & there of every thing make pr[ey]
all Lives Estats in Cruill wise thay take
throuout the Cuntry dredfull havok † make

So by degres a Lingring death wee dy ‡
If wee dont Study how to bee as sly
in owr surprisals to find them in ther ne[st]
ffor all Advantages with enimis is best

---

* Although located right in the center of the Indian war territory, Rehoboth had to shift largely for itself, for strangely enough Plymouth Colony failed to furnish troops to help protect the town. The result was that for many months after the outbreak of the war the male inhabitants holed up in the garrison houses and remained there. Deacon Walker thought that this was all wrong and that only two or three should remain in a garrison-house and that the rest of the men should go out and fight.

John Kingsley in his letter (*ante*, p. 20) written as late as May 1676 to his honored friend, a preacher of the gospel at Hartford, Conn., says that he is "ill of fever or ague and is not able to bear the sad stories of our woeful days when the Lord made over wolfish heathern to be our lords, to fire our towne, shout & Holow, to cal us to com out of our garisons . . . we are shut up in our garisons & doe not dare to go abroad".

† The best contemporaneous account we have, in fact the only account of the destruction committed by the Indians in Rehoboth, is contained in John Kingsley's letter in which he says the Indians "set fire to our towne, burnt our milles, break the stones, ye, our grinding stones, & what was hid in the earth they found, corne & fowles, kild catel & took the hind quarters & left the rest . . . they burnt cartes wheels, drive away our catel, ships [sheep], horses", etc.

‡ After the burning of Rehoboth the danger of starvation stared the survivors in the face. John Kingsley in his letter to Connecticut, asking for help, says that "every rod of grond neare garison is

Doughtles twer best ffor all owr soulderee
that hunt thes wolves to march a nights to S[ee]
Wheare they Pirado in ther Randevos
And so slaught them with our pouder new

In som new ffiguer Artiliris never Sho[ws]
That way is best y^t bangs them with most b[lows]
& all the Indians Living neare Improvd
wee are Concernd & mightily beehoved

Ther wifs & Childern as Hostigis retayn
that Men may faithfull be y^e Case remai[n]
ffor tis ther Alys give to us this trobl
Therfor ther obligations more then dubl

Who cant but judg whot ffancy melancoly
Wont deale to ffooles acording to ther ffoly
no stone unturnd no strattagem thay leave
Like helish Saters boath us & ours bereve

[5] Off all our Cumforts in this presant world
to ffyer and sword our Carkases are hurld
affter abusd to Savig bests a pray
thay doea & will doea thus from day to day

Tis very Just to doea the best wee Can
to yous all mens by Sword or poysned dram *
to Send Such Souls to ther own place mor fitt
If God Sucksed & say amen to It:/

ffor thers no sister of the musis nine †
with Ovids pen nether Tertulas witt
No Homer in hes Trogan warr define
a Cruil actt so as thes Rooges actt it

The inosent will now ofendid bee
to her reprof for the Indulgancee
So much decladd to brutes so like y^e divel
which chariti it self would count an Evill

And thos that have had pure & Zelos ends
must rest Content with labor for ther payns
Where ends were reall to cas blind souls to se
Ther benifacttors Shall rewarded bee

By him y^t knows and serches harts and trisce
The hole Creatione & Its Secricye

---

broken vp & where house & barne stood now put in beanes & squashes; but alase, what will doe against famin . . . famine stares vs in the face . . . I heare you have store of corne . . . It is better to die by sord than famen. Therefore I beg in my Lordes name to send Us some meal . . . I doe not beg for money to bild houses . . . If any will send meale, pray let deacon [Philip] Walker distribit it. I knowe no man like minded". See *ante*, p. 20.

As a result of this letter, the Colony of Connecticut collected 600 bushels of wheat to be sent to Boston and Seekonk (Rehoboth). On 30 May 1676 it was recommended (*ante*, p. 23) that "Deacon Walker, of Seaconk, receive and distribute what shall be sent to Seaconck".

* This suggestion of poisoning the Indians' liquor was a novel idea. At the time the Indians burned the houses in Rehoboth they undoubtedly first rolled all the barrels of cider out of the cellars before putting the torch to the houses. Had this cider been poisoned there might not have been enough live Indians left the following day to burn the town of Providence.

† The nine goddesses—Calliope, Clio, Erato, Euterpe, Melpomene, Polymnia or Polyhymnia, Terpsichore, Thalia, and Urania—who presided over poetry, art, and science.

Deacon Walker's only known prose, entitled "The Stragamen of the Indians", is in the form of a proclamation from Satan to his servants the Powwahs or Indian priests, as follows:

[6] The St[ra]gam[e]n
off the Indians

As a corupt tre brings forth Evill frugh[t] & a corupt ffountayne corupt & noysom stre[mes] So doath owr hethen Enimis being Corupt in the ffountayne and rate of the mater streme forth Poysned waters of death as Cayne the first Murtherer as Nero, Diocletian, and Domitio, Thos Hethen murthring Emperours y^t wear such monsters of nature whos mad rage agaynst the Christians, as out of Hell fomd out ther veno[m] So that Som of them Commanding themselves to be worshipt as gods misrably tormenting the Chri[stians] with new devised various torments dayly that som of them put a hundred to death Every day [of] The weeke throuout y^e yeare Except ther own bearth day which t[hey] Cept and Comanded y^e peopl so to doea to ador ther I[ ] gods & to Joak ffrolik & Satisfy ther Insatiabl [lust?] By the Comand of thes monster wear most of the ap[ostles] & antiant Champions For fayth Zeal & holines pu[t] [to] death: as you may read in the history of y^e Church [and the] Book of marters, Folio: 46 Section. 70 & 1 bok p[age . . .] Like thes monsterus beasts are our presant Enem[ies] who atend only an evil Speritt sugested by Satan The princ y^t ruls in this world whos regiment is the Children of disobedianc him thay only adore and ser[ve] and he by ther powas as bale prests proscribs t[hem] to his Law will and plesur declaring to them he [ ] The princ of darknes and profound hevines; but l[ike] a sutl Serpant in a Sophistik way So bewitc[hes] Them y^t he perswads them darknes is Light and evil is good: as he did y^e woman: bewiching Her with whot great things he can doea for them:/

That he is sole Eperour of the Kingdom of Acro the Mis[ter] Captayn of the great dungin Eurebos King of hell and Controuler of the Infernall ffier[s] Teling them his Corts being without Suters begins to howle and y^t ther Captayn Jenerall no Longer indure therfor ses he wee now ma[ke] to you our Suplicatione. Y^t ye Comit all cind [of] Cruilty [ ] you [ ]
[7] that your multiduds fflock dayly at the gates of our dungin ffor owr Insatiabl Chayos soe hee with his thousand ravinous Jawes is abl to Entertayne an Infinight Number of such Soules seing owr Intres and Magniphiset Kingdom is by you suported & upheld. wherfor Wee Comend you & give you harty thanks for your former servis & advis you to Continu [to] goea on as you have begon and doea your Indevors To have & purchas the place which wee have prepared for you under the most wiked foundatione off owr dweling place: far ye well. Wishing you such Philisity which wee desyer & intend fflnaly to reward & recompenc you with this Charter.

Given at the Senter of the earth in y^t owr darke Place wheare all the rablment of Divels for This purpos wos Caled into owr most Doloros Court and Consistory under the Carector off owr [t]erabl Seale. ffor the Confermatione of the [ ] premises:/ Far weell owr ffrind Powwah:/*

The founding of New England and its development in a religious way is the theme of Deacon Philip Walker's second poem, entitled "The first smile of god in this land". This poem contains some of his most colorful verse and considerable new historical data on the Indian war.

---

* "Powwaw" is the Narragansett Indian name for their priest. Roger Williams says: "These Priests and Conjurers (like Simon Magus) doe bewitch the People, and not onely take their Money, but doe most certainly (by the helpe of the Divell) worke great Cures, though most certaine it is that the greatest part of their Priests doe merely abuse them and get their Money, in the times of their sicknesse, and to my knowledge long for sick times; and to that end the poore people store up Money, and spend both Money and goods on the Powwaws, or Priests in these times, the poore people commonly dye their hands, for alas, they administer nothing but howle and roar, and hollow over them, and begin the song to the rest of the people about them, who all joyne (like a Quire) in Prayer to their Gods for them" [Roger Williams' *Key into the Language of America* (1643)].

The ffirst smile of god in this land

[a]s Sinthias Beuty in Aurora bright
[ff]rom Estern orison bursts forth hir light
[w]hen Sabl darknes had Conseld hir hed
washing hir tresses in hir Liquid bed

Expeles the dark outvise the twinkling tapors
Whos Scorching beames exhayle unholsom vapors
[ff]rom Earth corupted from the watri scy
[ff]or want of heat naturs great Enimy

[So] has our Light from Sixtenehundred twenty *
[Th]rou gods permitanc shind gloriosly and plenty
[Wha]ts ers the cas she now eclipst we see
[And] loer [plunged down in] misire

[8] The souls y^t first from Urope Came
To trase ould Neptuns Thetes Streme
ffrom Germain Banks & Nether Lands
to gitt out of the Prelats hands

Playnly declard thay Came for zeale
to practis whot god did reveale
by grace & Sprit from holy writ
Not as Sir John Comandid it

A great atempt to seeke strang Lands
in peopl pore twos heavens hands
y^t sperited ther minds and hartts
and Led them safe to desartt parts

It was not hoapes of presant worly tresur
off Ginayes Gould or Canans Ease & plesur
of India Silke Erabias Spice Invited
No. no y^e hasard shows y^t grace Exited

Wee Came to wild America
whos native brood to divels pray
a savig race. for blud y^t thirst
off all y^e nations most acurst

ffrom ffamin, Scurvi, feare thay past
and yit for all god did at last
as he in wisdom most devine
purg ther dros from purer Coyne

Knowing an advers State is best
to bring Elected Souls to rest
god hee of earth man made a Hectter
his grace & Sperit ther directer

Ther daring aspectts more afrights
then Joshua did the Cananits
owr newfound neibours of the land
twas not in them twas hevens hand

[9] To thee bee praysd o god Eternall
Though Hell thay raysd the Sprits Infernall
thou Layds them all gaves us Sucksetion
But sinc weef made a great degretione

There is som Secritt way unknowne
[T]hat maks our land & peopl grone
[ffr]om Acans sin or som transgretione
In the levite ministratione

---

* Landing of the Pilgrims at Plymouth in 1620.

[So]m Judas or som Ananias
[T]he hand of heven now will try us
[S]om Like Gahasa raking for
[T]hat which pur justis doth abhor

[Th]es things Examin Now whil weef lesur
[Wh]il thayr a spoyling of our Tresur
[Our] los y^t great our goods & Lands
[and] many lives by Cruil hands:

[I]n this our great Advercitee
[le]t us Consider what may bee
[th]e Case owr glorious angry god
[how] hevi on us Lays his rod

[Im] shure wee our Arant have forgott
y^t makes us ffeele the hethens shot
[   ] not a Scurg gods raysd to bee
[wh]o equalis our Cruiltee

Consider

[W]hat was our Arant heare & what was not
[Wh]at wee atendid have whot weef fforgot
[Ju]stis and mercy doea & fear our god
our hartt not word alon to shape his rod:/

[10] Not to be proud nor yit the world atend
y^t to to much is Each mans hyest End
Which to ayne under a pious Cloke
has Casd owr god in this most dredfull Stroke

To shew if wee of godlines make gayne
hel punish Sinn with Sinn & wont mayntayn
Profesing peopel in a way not good
thou maskt within a pharasaik Hudd:

To streme the deepes so many thousan Mils
to have such ffavours and Inioy Such Smiles
off hevens bounty in our hemisphere
To rays Such Stocks & Flocks and have such chere

To Inioy Such oracls under a mercy Seate
& give his holy things to dayes a monstrous Cheat
Which holy Justis cant Indur to See
and not reveng Such greate Hipocrice

If wee
Intend to rays Estats & glory
In Such a hudwinkt hipocrittik Story
God will Consum us & our Eys Shall See
No mor Such hevens bounty given thee

Has not a ffilthy Averritious mind
Cropt & Debucht thi beutious virgin hew
Like crawling Ivi ever more Inclind:
to metamorphis * statly tres in vew

As many sums being adid up together
as many Clouds Combining mak foul wether
So many Sinns the productts Punishment
Yit Som ther are y^t are mor Eminent

[11] And cry to heven with a louder Call
For som ther is y^t are mor Capitall

---

* Metamorphosis—To change or pass from one form or shape into another; transformation with or without change of nature.

Sinc Sivel Laws has drawn a grand Protest
a gaynst Each Sinn in open vew to man
That he y^t hath agaynst the Law transgrest
Shall sufer then who rationaly Cann

But Judg thay are Som Secritt Hidn Crimes
Handed a Long by great or Small or all
That doea predominat in thes our tims
y^t doea for Justis at Bar of Judgment Call

When ould Roomes teachers ffelt the Smak of riches
non ther could Stand but of ther dabing Creaturs
& Still the substanc of the world bewitches
Lik blasting Comits or prodigious meturs

All such as Leafe religion pure for welth
or any other bace or by regard
how ever here in great Estate & helth
Shall by ther maker have their Just reward

Lett us not slight owr felow neibours then
y^t doea desent from us in Aprihention
who cary singuler Like honest men
Seem not to make like us so great declention

If thay in som things Ear we Er in others
The proudist hartts the wildest hart Im schure
Lett pratting pharisie deny ther brothers
Tent what we say but what god ses is pure

Hant wee had charity love & respectt
To thes abominabl Swinish Bruts
Letts now upon Such willy frams reflectt
Beefor to Late with Shame make our recruts

Letts not Justifi the wikid and Condem
[page cut] tis dredful
[ ] The [ ]

[12] Thers many aspects bears a fface devine
belovd of god & pretious in his sight
hantt we adord Dianos horid Schrine
To prop our Caling or our Crafty Slight

Ther was an actt to all our Land prodigious
tent to bee thought the ffounder was Perfidious
Wittingly in y^t for he is judgd to be
on ffearing god & Indevring good yit hee

and many others are to bould and Laarg
To give proud Ignorant Sottes such seriaus Charge

To send a ffelow of so low degre
y^t woss Subservil as wee know was hee
put ffrom his master upon Jelose
To prate and preach give lawes & teach
to men above his spher & reach

That he had given ofenc unto
befor now Sent to such a Cru
this dirful Commet Clerly schous
ffrom whenc wee see a Torent flows

Thou god by Just & righteous hand
Shoud pour was bound to clear the land
of gilti blud confest by hee
that hanged last * was of the three

---

* On 8 June 1675 *Tobias* and his son *Mattashunannamo* were hanged for the murder of John

That Sasaman * has & may Saes bee
it has bin well his Patron & hee
had gon to Roome Or other partts had went
When hee a preest to Asawome † was sent

Sassamon, the educated Indian who had been secretary to King Philip. When the third Indian, *Wampapaquan*, was hanged he "broke the halter", as stated by both Roger Williams and Gov. John Easton. He was reprieved and later shot and is said to have confessed that he and the other two Indians had killed John Sassamon.

* In 1676 Rev. William Hubbard wrote that "The Occasion of *Philips* so sudden taking up arms the last Year, was this: There was one *John Sausaman*, a very cunning and plausable *Indian*, well skilled in the English Language and bred up in the Profession of Christian Religion, imployed as a Schoolmaster at Natick, the *Indian* Town, who upon some Misdemeanour fled from his place to *Philip* by whom he was entertained in the Room and Office of Secretary and his Chief Councellor whom he trusted with all his Affairs and secret Counsels.

"Later he had Occasion to be much in the Company of *Philips Indians* and of *Philip* himself: by which means he discerned . . . that the Indians were plotting anew against us; the which out of Faithfulness to the English . . . [he] informed the Governor [Winslow of Plymouth], adding also that if it were known that he revealed it, he knew they would presently kill him . . . *Philip* therefore soon after contrived the said Sausamans Death, which was strangely discovered notwithstanding it was so cunningly effected, for they had murdered him [29 Jan. 1674/5], met him upon the Ice on the great Pond [Assowomset (Middleborough) about 15 miles southeast of Rehoboth], and presently after they had knocked him down, put him under the Ice, yet leaving his Gun and his Hat [ducks] upon the Ice that it might be thought he fell in accidently through the Ice and was drowned; but being missed by his Friend, who finding his Hat [ducks] and Gun, they were thereby led to the Place where his Body was found under the Ice.

"When they took it up to bury him, some of his Friends, specially one *David*, observed some Bruises about his Head, which made them suspect he was first knocked down before he was put in the water; however, they buried him near about the Place where he was found, without making any further Inquiry at present: nevertheless *David* his Friend [a Sogkonate Indian named *Chowohumma*], reported these Things to some English at *Taunton* . . . occasioned the Governor to inquire further into the Business, wisely considering, that as *Sausaman* had told him, If it were known that he revealed any of their Plots, they would murder him . . . wherefore by special warrant the Body of Sausaman being digged again out of his Grave, it was very apparent that he had been killed and not drowned, and by a strange Providence an Indian was found that by Accident was standing unseen upon a Hill, had seen them murther the said *Sausaman*, but durst never reveal it for fear of losing his own Life likewise, until he was called to the Court at Plimouth . . . where he plainly confessed what he had seen" [Hubbard's *Narrative* (Drake Ed., 1865), vol. I, pp. 60–63].

At a Court held at Plymouth 1 June 1675, "Tobias [alias *Poggapanoffoo*, one of Philip's Councellors] & Wampapaquan his son and Mattashanamo" were charged "that they did with joint consent upon the 29 Jan. 1674/5 at a place called Assowamsett Pond, wilfully and of sett purpose, and of Mallice fore thought, and by force and armes, murder John Sassamon, an other Indian, by laying violent hands on him and striking him, or twisting his necke, until hee was dead; and to hide and conseale this their said murder . . . did cast his dead body through a hole of the iyce into the said pond . . . wee, of the jury, one and all, both English and Indians doe joyntly and with one consent agree upon a verdict . . . that the prisoners [above named] are guilty of the blood of John Sassamon, and were the murderers of him according to the bill of inditement. The verdict of the jury being accepted by the court, the sentence of death was pronounced against them . . . to be hanged by the head untill theire bodies are dead . . . executed the 8 June 1675, on Tobias and Mattashunannamo. On some considerations [the rope broke in hanging] Wampaquam was repiued for a month . . . but shot to death within the said month" [*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. V, p. 167].

In 1675, John Easton, the Quaker Governor of Rhode Island, wrote a "Relation" of what he knew of the beginning of the war. His ideas differ from those of Mather and Hubbard as will be seen by the following extract:

"In the Winter in the Year 1674, an Indian was found dead, and by a Coroner's Inquest of Plimouth Colony iudged murdered. He was found dead in a Hole thro Ice broken in a Pond with his Gun and sum Foulls by him. Sum English suposes him thrown in, sum Indians y^t I iudged intelegabell and impartiall in y^e Case did think he fell in and was so drouned, and that the Ies did hurt his Throat, as the English said it was cut; but acnoledge y^t sumetimes naty Indians wold kill others but not as euer they herd to obscuer as if the dead Indian was not murdered. The dead Indian was caled Sansimum and a Christian y^t could read and write. Report was he was a bad Man, y^t King Philip got him to write his Will, and he made the Writing for a great Part of the Land to be his, but read as if it had bin as Philip wrote; But it came to be known, and then he run away from him.

"Now one Indian informed that three Indians had murdered him, and sheued a Coat y^t he said thay gave him to conseall them. The Indians report y^t the Informer had playd away his Coate, and these Men sent him y^e Coate, and after demanded Pay, and he not to pay, so acused them, and knoing that it wold pleas the English so to think him a beter Christian, and the Reporte came y^t the three Indians had confesed and acused Philip so to imploy them, and y^t y^e English wold hang Philip; so the Indians wear afraid, and reported y^t the English had flatred them (or by threats) to

ffor by relation thou hes layd in grave
wos Litl better then a sutl Knave
or els was wrongd by Coman fams reportting
as much as any with his truls was Sportting

[13] But in the mode demur with his Confessor
much Like a Sutl Secrit fols transgreser
So was his master Philip found in print
Now drawinge own reportt in blud not Ink

---

bely Philip y^{t} thay might kill him to have his Land, and y^{t} if Philip had dun it, it was ther Law so to execute whome ther Kings iudged deserved it, y^{t} he had no Case to hide it.

"So Philip kept his Men in Armes. Plimoth Gouerner required him to disband his Men, and informed him his Jealousy was falce. Philip answered he would do no Harm, and thanked the Governer for his Information.

"The three Indians wer hunge, to the last denied the Fact; but one broke the Halter as it is reported, then desired to be saved, and so was a littel while, then confessed they three had dun the Fact; and then he was hanged [shot]. And it was reported Sausimun before his death had informed of the Indian Plot, and y^{t} if the Indians knew it they wold kill him, and that the Hethen might destroy the English for their Wickedness, as God had permitted the Heathen to destroy the Israellites of olde.

"So the English wear afraid and Philip was afraid, and both increased in Arems. But for four Yeares Time, Reports and Iealosys of War had bin veri frequent, y^{t} we did not think y^{t} now a War was breaking forth; but about a Week before it did, we had Case to think it wold. Then to indever to prevent it, we sent a Man to Philip, y^{t} if he wold cum to the Fery we wold cum over to speke with him. About four Miles we had to cum; thither our Messenger cum to them; they not aware of it behaved themselves as furious, but sudingly apeased when they understood who he was and what he came for, he called his Counsell and agreed to cum to us; came himself unarmed, and about 40 of his Men armed. Then 5 of us went over, 3 wear Magistrates. We sate veri friendly together", etc. [*A Relation of the Indian Warr*, by M^{r} Easton of Rhoad Island, 1675—J. Munsell, Albany, N. Y. (1858)].

William Sabin, the Rehoboth miller, was a veteran Plymouth Court grand juryman, having served in that capacity for many years. He was foreman of the jury that brought in the verdict of guilty against the three Indians for the murder of John Sassamon which resulted in two being hanged on 8 June 1675. This hanging precipitated the opening of King Philip's War, which sixteen days later burst forth in all its horrors with the Indian massacre of the English at Swansea.

† Perhaps Deacon Walker's "Asawome" was the departed original owner of Assawomsett pond where John Sassamon was found under the ice. The Assawamset tribe of Indians occupied an extensive territory in which were located the present towns of Lakeville and Middleborough. The sachem's residence was in Assawamset Neck lying between Assawamset and Long Ponds.

On 29 Oct. 1668, *Pamontaquask*, alias the Pond Sachem, being weak in body, made his last will and testament bequeathing all his lands at Assawamsett or elsewhere, to his [ ] *Tuspaquin*, alias the Black Sachem for life and after his decease to *Soquontamouk*, alias William his son. Five Indians present witnessed the will including Pelex, alias *Nanauatauate*, son-in-law to John Sassamon [*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. XII, p. 229]. "Old *Watuspaquin*" and his son "Will *Watuspaquin*" deeded to Felix (*Nanauatauate*), 11 Mar. 1673, 58½ acres of land at Assowamsett [*Ibid*., vol. XII, p. 230].

In March 1673, "old *Watuspaquin*" joined by his son "William *Tuspaquin*" made John Sassamon a gift of a 27 acre home lot at Assowamsett Neck [*Ibid*., vol. XII, p. 230]. John Sassamon gave this land to his son-in-law Felix in marriage with his daughter Bettey as appears in "a line or two rudely written by John Sassamons owne hand and witnessed only by old *Watuspaquin*" [*Ibid*., vol. XII, p. 230].

On 23 Dec. 1673, "old *Watuspaquin*" and "William *Watuspaquin*" gave a free grant or gift of land to a woman called *Assowetough* a tract of land called Nahteawanet the bounds of that neck is by the little swamp place called Mashquomoh to a pond called Sasonkususet to a great pond called Chupipoggut. "This we have given unto *Assowetough* with the consent of all the chief men of Assowamset that she might enjoy it peacefully without mollestation neither by us nor by ours or under us after us. But she shall have it forever especially her eldest daughter". Witnesses: the marks of Tobias, alias *Poggapanosso* [probably the Tobias hung for the murder of John Sassamon], old Thomas, *Pohonohoo*, and *Kankunuki* [*Ibid*., vol. XII, p. 235]. *Assowetough*, alias Betty do freely give and bequeath, 14 May 1696, the above tract of land unto my daughter Mercy & to her heirs forever. The X mark of Betty alias *Assowetough* [*Ibid*., vol. XII, p. 235].

Before Governor Winslow, 5 Mar. 1678/9, it was ordered by the court that all such lands as were formerly John Sassamon's in our colony shall be settled on Felix, his son-in-law, as his own proper right to him his heirs and assigns forever [*Ibid*., vol. XII, p. 230].

Tuspaquin, alias *Watuspaquin*, alias the Black Sachem, and his son William, alias *Watuspaquin*, made many land conveyances among which were sales to Edward Grey and Josiah Winslow, 30 June 1672; to Benjamin Church of Duxbury, house carpenter, and John Tomson of Barnstable, lands in Middleborough, 3 July 1673; and to John Tompson and Constant Southworth, 14 May 1675. Jr

Grey/Church

Hee y^{t} has hops to chang such bruts is out
he hangs but Juils in a Swinish Snout

Incarnat divels sent from the infernall Lake *
Like helish monsters make our harts to ake
Thes are the Satirs make Jeneral devistation
With Such like roges mayntaynd by Corporation:

But If the incom of the profit went
not mor to privat Intrest & intent
to gayn a proffit by Such Larg donations
Specttators Sone would See great olterations

When thes donations first promoted were
Charity & reson woud our greatest Care
ffor owr own christian ffamilys & race
to bred them up in knowlidg parts & grace

[A]nd it were well If it converted weare
to Such a way Comitted to the Care
of sum by oath y^{t} thay might ffaithful bee
Not only ffamd For good by Charitee
as other plases wher wee find thay bee
give oath & bond ffor ther ffidelitee †

ffor ast has bin tas dun no good to none
but to owr enimys and to ther ffrinds alone
Pamperd them up with arts & parts & pour
To rayn on us this dredffull bludy Shouer

[14] But blud ffor blud Shal bee ther portion Just
If by Indulganc som don^{t} betray our trust
by keping rogs & Serpants in our brest
& so betray & ruin all the rest
which if thay doea y^{e} wish & harty pray
thay may goea goake ‡ with them the self same way

ffame has repeated news now goeas
Thers ffalen many of our ffoose
tis sayd the Sothern § forses stout
Mongst many hav kild a rogea oth rout
Miontonimo ‖ that gresi lout

* By the "infernall Lake" he probably meant Assawomsett Pond where John Sassamon was found under the ice. Deacon Walker is also comparing the brutal and wanton nature of the Indians with that of the satyrs in Greek Mythology, who were "woodland deities having goat-like ears, pug noses, short tails, and budding horns, and were of a wanton nature and very lascivious".

† At this point Deacon Walker had written thirteen of his seventeen and one-half pages of manuscript, and we now seem to have enough data to determine, without much question of doubt, the date on which this work was written. The first poem in the manuscript is on Pierce's Fight, and as this took place on 26 Mar. 1676, he probably commenced writing the manuscript shortly after that date.

In the three foregoing stanzas Deacon Walker is much worried about the honest and equitable distribution of the donations of corn and wheat promised to relieve the near famine condition at Rehoboth. On the 4th or 5th of May 1676, John Kingsley of Rehoboth wrote (*ante*, p. 20) the minister at Hartford saying that "famine stares us in the face" and requests that Rehoboth be sent supplies of corn or meal, further commenting that "if any will send meal pray let Deacon Walker distribute it. I know no man like minded".

As a result of this letter, Connecticut collected 600 bushels of wheat to be sent to Boston and Seekonk (Rehoboth), and on 30 May 1676 recommended (*ante*, p. 23) that "Deacon Walker of Seaconk receive and distribute what shall be sent to Seaconck". From this record it is apparent that after 30 May 1676 there was no further need for Deacon Walker to worry himself about the honesty and fairness of the grain distribution, for he was to be the sole distributor. Therefore, his manuscript was evidently written between 26 March and 30 May 1676.

‡ *Goake* is possibly the Scottish word *gowk*, meaning a "fool or simpleton" — a term of contempt.

§ The day after Pierce's Fight at Rehoboth, four Connecticut volunteer companies began their march into the enemy's country. Among the Captains of these companies the most conspicuous was George Denison of *Southerton*.

"On 11 Apr. 1676 Captain *Denison* with an 100 English volunteers . . . and as many *Indians*

with Life has Lost his Apish Coate*
& by a hack thay cut his throate
his buffel head† on powl‡ thay raysd
ffor all Such news the lord bee praysd

Hast Lost thy hed & pibald Coate
thou now shalt sing a nother noate
weel pack the up & wee will make
thees gay as any ratl Snake

Thou now mongst rablment of divels
y^t hast been cas of many Evils
must yell & cry & ly nerdy
Gnash knaw & ffry Eternaly

The Impious actts off thes Infernal bests
actted abroad & in ther helish nests
would Swell a volum to a magnitud
one hidious actt ner us I hear Includ

A Serious modist well disposid woman
Well Spoak of all and Ill bespok of no man
y^t oft relevd a Sordid Cruil brute
y^t like a beger to hir oft mad Sught
y^t m[ ] [*line not completed*]

[15] That many years had kept this Roage alive
& in a siknes had the best Contrivd
to doea what in hir lay the best & all
ffor ffoode & maters mettiphisckall§

. . ranging the *Narraganset* country, near *Poluxit* [Pawtucket], they fall upon a party of the enemy commanded by that famous but very bloody and cruel Sachem, *Quononshot*, otherwise *Myantonomy* who the English formerly presented with a rich Lace Coat . . . " [The Boston merchant's letter to London, 22 July 1676, signed "N.S.", Drake's *Old Indian Chronicle* (1836), p. 91].

‖ This was Nanuntenoo, a son of Miantunnomoh and chief sachem of all the Narragansetts. The first name by which he was known to the English was Canonchet. He was also sometimes called Miantunnomoh, after his father. He is said to have commanded the Indians at Pierce's Fight. He and some 42 Indians were killed or captured in April 1676 by the Connecticut troops and under the watchful eye of Capt. George Denison, Canonchet was taken to Stonington, Conn., "and that all might share in the glory of destroying so great a prince, and come under the obligation of fidelity, each to the other, the *Pequods* shot him, the *Mohegins* cut off his head and quartered his body, and the *Ninnicrosts* men made the fire and burned his quarters, and, as a token of their love and fidelity to the English, presented his head to the council of Hartford" [The Boston merchant's letter to London, Drake's *Old Indian Chronicle* (1836), p. 92].

*"His Apish Coate" means that he was aping the English by wearing the gorgeous Lace Coat presented him by Governor John Leverett when, at Boston on 18 Oct. 1675, "Quananchetts, sachem, in behalf of himself, Cananacus, the old Queen, and Pomham", signed an agreement to deliver to the Governor and Council at Boston, on or before 28 Oct. 1675, all the hostile Indians that had fled to Narragansett. This agreement was witnessed by Richard Smith of Narragansett, James Browne of Swansey, Samuel Gorton, Jr., of Warwick, and an Indian Interpreter [*Acts of the Commissioners of the United Colonies*, vol. II, pp. 360–1]. Quananchetts failed to carry out the agreement.

John Cotton, writing from Plymouth 19 Apr. 1676, says: "On Lord's day, Apr. 9, some Connecticut forces, Capt. George Denison being chiefe, took and killed 42 Indians, of which *Quanonshet* was one, who was taken in that coat he received at Boston . . ." [Original letter, Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, pp. 101–2].

† Buffle-head is a North American duck having the feathers of the head elongated, with plumage black above and white below [Funk & Wagnalls *College Dictionary* (1946), p. 161].

‡ At Swansea on 24 June 1675 the Indians adopted the practice of cutting off the heads of the slain English and putting them on poles stuck in the ground. Thereafter the English mounted the head of every dead *sachem* on a pole. The English first started the practice in 1671.

§ Metaphysical—Beyond or above the physical or experiential; transcendental. Dealing with abstractions; apart from or opposed to, the practical. Designating certain poets of the 17th century, notably Cowley and Donne, whose verses were characterized by metaphysical conceits and extravagant imagery, intended to demonstrate the learning of the authors; term originating with Dr. Samuel Johnson. Fantastic; fanciful; imaginary. Supernatural or preternatural [Funk & Wagnalls *College Standard Dictionary* (1941), p. 721].

Yit when surprisd upon y^e Saboth day
With Strechtout hands did Suplicate & pray
This Impious best to stay his fatall Stroke
a Littl time y^t She might god Invoke

Tis lik ffor pardon ffor Sinn in Christ hir Savour
this Cruil Roage dispacht & would not leave hir
dasht out hir brayns as he had dun befor
hir Sucking Infant tumbling in its gore
firing the house & killing Seven more*

* The five preceding stanzas tell of a heretofore unknown Indian atrocity at the outbreak of King Philip's War, committed near the Rehoboth line in Swansea on 24 June 1675. This incident is not mentioned in any of the early records or contemporary histories.

Deacon Walker in his simple lines of poetry pictures the savage, ferocious, and diabolical cruelty of an Indian to a kindly young married woman who had fed and nursed him in his sickness, and who on the day of the Indian uprising asked in payment for all this kindness only that he stay his tomahawk for a moment so that she might make her peace with God. Ignoring her plea, he killed the suckling babe at her breast, dashed out her brains, set fire to the house, and murdered seven more persons.

This young woman was a Rehoboth girl, Rachel^3 Bliss, born there 1 Dec. 1651, daughter of Jonathan^2 and Miriam (Harmon) Bliss. When twenty-three years of age she married in Rehoboth, 28 Oct. 1674, Thomas^2 Mann, a *third* rank Swansea Baptist, born in Scituate, Plymouth Colony, 15 Aug. 1650, son of Richard^1 and Rebecca Mann. (Cf. *Early Rehoboth*, vol. I, pp. 36, 38, 39, 42, 43, 56, 63; vol. II, pp. 40, 45, 54, 55, 144.)

Thomas^2 Mann was severely wounded in Capt. Michael Pierce's Fight in Rehoboth on 26 Mar. 1676 and was one of the only three English survivors. He was a long time recovering from his wounds, the seriousness of which may be judged by the bill of £12 to the Town of Rehoboth for his care and subsistence, exceeding by many times the cost of any other wounded soldier.

There can be no doubt that the mother and her "sucking infant" mentioned by Deacon Walker can be no other than Rachel Mann and her unnamed daughter, recorded in Rehoboth as having both been buried on — June 1676. This is the only Rehoboth or Swansea record during King Philip's War where a mother and child are both buried the same day. The burial entry "— June 1676" in the Rehoboth records is clearly an error and should read "24 June 1675". There is no record of as many as seven persons being killed by the Indians at either Swansea, or Rehoboth, on any day in June 1676. In Rehoboth there are only three burials recorded for June 1676, and there are no Plymouth Colony 1676 returns for Swansea.

As required by law, William Carpenter, Town Clerk, made a return to the Plymouth Court of the marriages, births, and burials in Rehoboth for the years 1675 and 1676 [*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. VIII, pp. 62–4]. This return lists eight burials in 1675 and thirty-seven in 1676, a total of forty-five. The entries are haphazard and not in consecutive order by months. The burial of "Rachel Man, the wife of Thomas Man, in June 1676" is preceded by four November entries and followed by entries in July, May, August, and June. Twenty-two entries later, on the next page, appears "Thomas Mans child buried in June 1676", preceded by entries dated in September, May, and March and followed by entries of March and February. In the Rehoboth Town Records the entry "Thomas Mans child" reads "———, daughter of Thomas Mann".

This disorder of records apparently bothered the town clerk, for in his 1680 return he makes the following comment: "Lett none maruell att the promiscuous and disorderly setting downe of the names of such as are or may be married, or doe or may be born, or may dye; for they are sett as they were brought to mee, as disorderly as they are sett downe. If the Courts order had bin minded respecting this matter, they had bine otherwise placed then they are".

If any more evidence is necessary to prove that Rachel Mann died in 1675 and not in 1676 as recorded in the Rehoboth records, we find it in the second marriage of her husband Thomas Mann, who married at Rehoboth on 3 July 1676 Mary^3 Wheaton, born at Rehoboth 4 Nov. 1656, daughter of Robert^1 and Alice^2 (Bowen) Wheaton. If his first wife died in June 1676 as the Rehoboth record reads, then he, a childless widower, would have had to marry a second wife in about ten days after the murder of his first wife and infant child, which, to say the least, is not at all probable.

"Surprised on the Sabath day" is a bit of poetical license on the part of Deacon Walker. The massacre at Swansea took place on Thursday 24 June 1675, on which day the inhabitants gathered at the church where they met "in the way of Humiliation". The Sundays for the month of June 1675 were the 6th, 13th, 20th, and 27th, on none of which days are any Swansea deaths recorded. The calendar for the year 1675 is the same as that for the year 1943.

Deacon Walker's statement that at the time the Indians killed the mother and infant they also killed seven others and set fire to the house is partly corroborated by William Hubbard, who writing at approximately the same time said: "On the 24th of *June* 1675 was the Alarm of War first sounded in *Plimouth Colony* when eight or nine of the English were slain in and about *Swanzy*: They first made a Shot at a Company of English as they returned from the Assembly where they had met in way of Humiliation that Day, whereby they killed one and wounded others: and then likewise at the same time they slew two Men on the High-way, sent to call a Surgeon and barbariously the same Day murdered six men in and about a Dwelling-house in another Part of the Town: All of which Outrages

Thay glide a way Like Serpants on a rock
or Ship in Thetes watry Segrene bed
before perssuers Sceas a gun or knock
upon ther ugly Scerpant wrethen hed

With sly departur after Such a Stroke
Without reveng doeath Equaly provoke
Owr Bleding harts for owr most derist ffrinds
To think what god in Such a Scurg Intends

Wee rang may in our northern Climats Could
Unsheltered may heaven Canope behould
& rays Som Stars y^{t} in our hemispher
Which in owr Latitude wee See no^{t} here

Whearby wee Lern Astroligi mor like
Then artt of mars or Stratigams to fight
owr best bred Souldiars & Artilires
in Stid of drilling regiments may* trees

[16] Rang in Battalia & Sound a charg to y^{m}
Beat a retreat & so Cum home agen
Tent artts of disiplin acomplish can
Surpris ther rear ther wing or van

No ffigur fform or batlment
ther Amboscades Sly prevent
a bace Sly Ill contrived rout
y^{t} art nor manhud can^{t} find out

If Zurkssest† with his great Armad
or Scanderbag‡ y^{t} Castrion princ
or Ziscos§ troopt might hear pirado
but Like the ffrankes might son goea henc

If warlik greeks y^{t} rang bätalias first
or hardy germans of the froson Zone
the ffaythles Turks would wish themselves acurst
great Tamnerlin‖ might fight himself alone

& Elikssander¶ thou to mars trew born:/
Whos multituds soupt Meedyanders dry
thayd Shak ther tressis turn tany back in scorn
quockwish say thay & so away thay fly

---

were committed so suddenly, that the English had no time to make any Resistance" [Hubbard's *Narrative* (Drake Ed. 1865), vol. I, p. 65].

On 24 June 1675, the following nine burials are recorded at Swansea: Gershom Cobb, Joseph Lewis, John Salisbury, John Jones, John Fall, Nehemiah Allen, Robert Jones, William Lohun, and William Salisbury. William Hamon was buried 29 June 1675 [*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. VIII, p. 61]. This list contains the names of the seven men that Deacon Walker said were killed by the Indians at the house which they burned after killing Rachel Mann and her infant daughter. Rachel Mann's mother was a Harmon, and it may be that William Hamon was a relative. Further research might establish the location of the particular house where this massacre took place.

As required by law, Nicholas Tanner, Town Clerk, made a return on 4 Mar. 1675 to the Plymouth Court of the marriages, births, and burials for Swansea "which were this year" [*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. VIII, p. 61]. The burials number fourteen of which nine are men buried on 24 June 1675, and one, William Hamon, buried on 29 June 1675. The first burial recorded is that of Deliverance Peck, wife of Nathaniel Peck, 30 Apr. 1675. The other thirteen burials are those of men.

* To observe May-day—May pole.

† Probably Xerxes (519?–465 B.C.) A Persian king (486–465); grandson of Cyrus the Great; defeated by the Greeks at Salamis.

‡ Scanderbeg, George Castriot (1403–1468). An Albanian chief, the national hero of Albania; maintained Albanian independence against Turkey.

§ Ziska (1360?–1424). A Bohemian general; leader of the Hussites.

‖ Tamerlane (1336–1405). A Tatar conqueror of Asia.

¶ Alexander the Great (356–323 B.C.), King of Macedon; conqueror of Asia.

Lets search & try let us not bee begild
ffor presant Judgment shouls our Camp^{s} defild
Lett no man plead y^{m} ffreer than another
to such Id Say a Pharicy^{s} thy Brother

Lets search y^{e} Cort y^{e} Cuntri toun & Sitty
the Tribe the house the person find tis pity
to mis the knowledg of the thing or things
ffor which gods angry, & his Judgment brings

Lets serch owr selves Each man his Secrit hart
And Search the templ in Each privat partt

[17] Thay y^{t} offended are when thay doea make
du aplicatione & in dugin take
At what is sayd in thes asertions trew
That he may See y^{ts} half an Ey to vew

Let him fforbeare to mind such things y^{t} can
ffor my Inditers no State Religon* man
no no his genos runs a nother way
Whille hee has hartt to think or mouth to pray

To his most glorious all hartt scerching god
to mind his dispensations ffeare his rod

So Let it bee thou Independant being
Great god allmighty Infinight all seing
behoulding all things nought is hid from thee
Lett no man swell or kik or wink at whot
is her inscertid omited or forgott

or like the Comons of the Rushians Say
Non should but kings & prests & prelats pray
that is a Rudimentt y^{ts} termd to bee
by Lerned Pall but Begerlle

So blest be god & all the hevenly host
Sinc Christs asention y^{t} the holy ghost
has reposest his own regenorat harts
Lightnd by grace expeld the thikist darks

Casd by y^{t} vale that Sinn & Sateayn Cast
& yit thers much y^{t} through Coruptions last

doging and Cloging all owr sinful naturs
both good & bad all though refined Creturs
but bering witnis gaynst owr selves Adoring
owr god of grace in humbl wise Imploring

---

* State Religion means the Congregational denomination, as that was the "State" religion of Massachusetts Bay Colony, and no man could become a freeman unless he was a member of the Congregational Church. This requirement was not so strict in Plymouth Colony, although the Congregational was the recognized official church.

Deacon Walker was an ardent follower of Rev. Samuel Newman and his son Rev. Noah Newman. From the death of Samuel Newman in 1663 to the organization of the Town of Swansea on 5 Mar. 1667/8, the Rehoboth Congregational Church was split apart by dissension, with the Baptists in control. In 1668 the Baptists left Rehoboth and under the religious leadership of John Myles founded Swansea. (Cf. *Early Rehoboth*, vol. I, pp. 25–46.) Rev. Noah Newman became pastor of the Rehoboth church, and in the spring of 1670 Philip Walker became junior deacon of the Church, serving with the senior deacon, Thomas Cooper.

That Deacon Philip Walker was a liberal, broad-minded man is proved by the fact that after Swansea was destroyed by the Indians, he fed for one month a John Myles, probably the minister, head of the Swansea Baptist Church, and the man who was large responsible for the dissensions in the Rehoboth Congregational Church. (Cf. *Early Rehoboth*, vol. II, p. 45.)

In Christ that hee by Imputation may
by his ffree grace our darling Soule Convay
to that Eletiam* Paradise may rayse
[? *line cut off from bottom of page*]

[18] To serve the times or Clos with a traditione
is horid Sin & wors then Superstitione
but gospel truth in gospel tims to Imbrace
it renders men how Ere Estemd has grace

Not say as other Men becas thay say it
it may undo thee & thi Soul betray it
y^t is a Evil termd in wright to bee
by Lernid Palle blind zeal Hipocrisce

Such Christians made by Sathans act not grace
Shall have ther portions with the hethens race

Lord god of sperits trew grace of thee wee beg
therfor from thee the only ffountayn hed
wee have all good returning back agen
Boath glory honer prays for them Amen:/

ffinis
by a frind to his Cuntry & ffrinds

P. Walke^r

[Four more lines, cancelled and illegible]

An interesting picture of the Philip Walker house is shown opposite page 26. This illustration is from a heretofore unpublished photograph owned by Miss Faith Shedd, the present occupant and owner of the house. This original photograph, taken about 1860, or a little earlier, is on glass, 4¼ inches high by 5¾ inches long, the back protected by a coating of black paint. The photograph is bordered by an engraved scalloped copper mat, the whole enclosed in a plain daguerreotype style embossed copper frame.

A picture of this Walker house, reproduced from a photograph taken about 1890, together with a picture of the original attic staircase, reproduced from a pencil sketch made by the author in 1892, will be found in *Early Rehoboth*, vol. I.

A comparison of the 1860 and 1890 pictures adds to our knowledge of the house and its surroundings. See *ante*, page 28. The 1860 photograph shows a stone wall in front of the property on the west side of the street now called North Broadway. This wall was not in existence in 1890, but for many years after that time this particular strip of road was a quagmire. The roadway was later filled in to a depth probably equal to the height of the old stone wall.

The 1860 picture shows two magnificent elms, one in the foreground, and the other at the end of the house, both in vigorous condition. The 1890 picture shows half of the elm at the left of the house to be dead. It eventually died and was cut down about ten years ago.

The right (northeast) end of the present house is the original part. The other end was added some hundred years later. Through the years no important structural changes have been made in the house, the sides of which are at present covered with shingles which were nailed over old clapboards fifty years ago. Many years since, all of the downstairs fireplaces were fitted with early type Franklin stoves. The original plank front door now serves as the cover for a cistern.

Some fifty years after Philip Walker was writing poetry in Rehoboth there was another poet in the part of the town known as the Rehoboth North Purchase, set off in 1694 as the town of Attleborough. His name was Joshua Barres and he seems to have suffered the proverbial fate of poets, poverty. At a Proprietors' Meeting in 1727 he presented a petition in the form of five stanzas of poetry asking the gift of ten acres of common land. For once his poetry paid dividends, for it got him not ten acres of land, but eleven.

At a meeting of the proprietors of the Rehoboth North Purchase held at Attleborough on the first Tuesday of June 1727 for a division of land, Joshua Barres presented the following petition:

"Your Honours Now I do Implore
To Read my poor petition
I hope your Hearts will open be
To pitty my Condition.

"Ten acres of the Common Land
I pray that you would give
Then Thankfull I will be to you
As Long as I do Live.

"Such a Kindness I must Confess
from you I dont Deserve
When I'm in Health I freely work
Why should you Let me starve.

"From Day to Day my Dayly Bread
I get it by my sweat
But to my sorrow I Beg and Borrow
When sickness doth me Let.

"No more in Rime Here at this Time
No more I have at Hand
And so I'll End your faithfull Friend
And Servant To Command.

"Joshua Barres

"Attleborough June y^e 5th 1727".

"Upon the Hearing of the above said petition of Joshua Barres there were sundry persons in the said Meeting which Were proprietors Which gave him Land To Take up upon their Rights in the afore

---

* Elysian—Belonging to Elysium; hence, supremely blessed or happy. Elysium—Greek Mythology. The Greek paradise or abode of the blessed dead, variously represented as in midair, or in the sun, or in the center of the earth next to Tartarus, or in the Islands of the Blest. A place or a condition of supreme delight; a paradise [Funk & Wagnalls *College Standard Dictionary* (1941), p. 380].

sd devision their Names are as followeth: William Whipple, Half an acre; Mr. David Freeman, one acre; John Slack, half an acre; Mr. Joseph Bucklen, one acre; Deacon Mayhew Dagget, one acre out of his Rights; Sam^{ll} Tiler gives the one half of sd acre & Dagget the Rest; Mr. Nathaniel Carpenter, one half acre; Mr. Jonathan Sprague, Half an acre; Pentecost Blackinton, Half an acre; Decon Samuel Newman, one acre; Mr. William Richardson, half an acre; James Bucklen, half an acre; Mr. John Chadwick, a quarter of an acre; Mr. Samuel Day, one acre; Samuel Titus, a quarter of an acre; Doct. Thomas Bowen, half an acre; Capt. John Foster, half an acre; and Capt. Foster put up for Major George Leonard, one acre.

"It was voted at the sd Meeting That Joshua Barres should have Liberty to take up the above said Land before any of the present Division be Laid out — Fourteen acres of land more or less, eleven acres of which was given sd Barres" [*Proprietors' Records Rehoboth North Purchase*, Town of Attleborough (copy at Taunton Registry of Deeds), vol. I, Books I, II, pp. 77-8].

This land was laid out to Joshua Barres on 29 Sept. 1727 by Thomas Wilmarth and John Slack, committee, and Anthony Sprague, surveyor [*Ibid.*, vol. I, Books I, II, pp. 78-9].

CHAPTER III

The Massachusetts Military Expedition to Mount Hope

On 21 June 1675, the day following the first attack by Philip on the people of Swansea, Gov. Josiah Winslow sent a letter to the Massachusetts Council asking for aid "only in protecting Plymouth Colony from the allegiance of Philip with the Narragansett and Nipmuck Indians which tribes are within the jurisdiction of Massachusetts", stating that if Plymouth could have "fair play" with their own Indians he trusted that they could take care of themselves. On the back of the letter is a copy of the answer of the Council dated 21 June "at 5 o'clock", assuring him of immediate assistance and that they would dispatch messengers with all speed to both the Narragansetts and Nipmucks.

The same day the Massachusetts Council commissioned Capt. Edward Hutchinson, Seth Perry, and William Towers to take a warning message to the Narragansetts and to leave a letter with Roger Williams at Providence [*Mass. Archives*, vol. LXVII, papers Nos. 201, 202; *Bodge*, p. 88].

The following letter written from Wickford by Roger Williams to Gov. John Winthrop, Jr., at Connecticut, gives the details of the meeting between the Boston Commissioners, headed by Captain Hutchinson, and the Narragansett Indians:

> From Mr. Smith's at Nahigonsik, June 25, 1675.
>
> Sir,—This inclosed of a former date comes to my hand again at Mr. Smith's. Mr. Smith is now absent at Long Island. Mrs. Smith, though too much favoring the Foxians (called Quakers) yet she is a notable spirit for courtesy toward strangers, and prays me to present her great thanks for your constant remembrance of her, and of late by Capt. Atherton.
>
> Sir, this morning are departed from this house Capt. Hutchinson and two more of Boston Commissioners from the Governor and Council of Boston to the Narragansett and Cowesit Indians. They came (three days since) to my house at Providence, with a letter to myself from the Governor and Council at Boston, praying my advice to their Commissioners and my assistance, &c., in their negotiations with the Narragansett Indians. I (within an half hour's warning) departed with them toward the Narragansett. We had one meeting that night with Quaunoncku, Miantunnomu's youngest son, and upon the opening of the Governor's letters, he readily and gladly assented to all the Governor's desires, and sent post to Mausup, (now called Canonicus), to the Old Queen, Ninicraft and Quawnipund, to give us a meeting at Mr. Smith's. They being uncivil and barbarous, and the Old Queen especially timorous, we condescended to meet them all near the great pond, at least ten miles from Mr. Smith's house. We laid open the Governor's letter: and accordingly they professed to hold no agreement with Philip, in this his rising against the English. They professed (though Uncas had sent twenty to Philip, yet) they had not sent one nor would: that they had prohibited all their people from going on that side, that those of their people who had made marriages with them, should return or perish there: that if Philip or his men fled to them, yet they would not receive them, but deliver them up unto the English.

Swanzy	
[2]John Wheeton, alive	
Thomas Buffington, alive	
[3]John Brown	John, son
Rehoboth	
* Jonathan Wilmarth, alive	
* Sampson Mason, alive	
[4]Joseph Baker	John, son
* John Hull [Hall]	Edward, son
* John Ridaway	James, son
* Josiah Perry	Josiah, son
* John Ide	Timothy, brother
* Thomas Kindrick	Heirs
* Joseph Daggett	John, son
* John Martin	John, son
Little Compton	
Benjamin Church	Thomas, son
Attleborough	
[5]Jonathan Freeman	Jonathan, son
*[6]John Fitch	Joseph Brown, heir
Barrington	
Benjamin Allen	Joseph, son
Richard Alen	Joseph, nephew
[7]John Reed	John, son
Kingstown	
William Bradford	John, son
Marshfield	
Josiah Winslow	Isaac, son
Wrentham	
[8]Thomas Man	Thomas, son

In this list of grantees to land in Narragansett Township No. 4, ten of the names of Rehoboth soldiers in the Narragansett Expedition are recorded, and three, Jeremiah Sabin, John Carpenter, and John Miller, Jr., are missing, probably due to their heirs having failed to file claims. In this list "Josiah" Perry is undoubtedly the "Jasiel" listed in the Rehoboth records. Only two of the claimants, Jonathan Willmarth, Jr., and Sampson Mason, Jr., were alive to make claim in person.

Besides the thirteen men in the regular draft quota for Rehoboth, there were undoubtedly others who volunteered for the Expedition. As there was no draft made on Swansea these volunteers probably included men from both towns. The new names appearing as grantees in the above list are John Wheeton, alive; John Brown; John Reed, who was probably the John Jr. killed by the Indians in Pierce's Fight at Rehoboth 26 Mar. 1676; and Thomas Man, who was wounded by the Indians in the same fight. We know that two of the thirteen soldiers in the Narragansett Expedition, John Fitch, Jr., and John Miller, Jr., were killed in Pierce's Fight.

The addition of these four men, not mentioned in the Rehoboth records as having served in the Narragansett Expedition, brings the number of Rehoboth men in this service to a total of seventeen.

The presence of all these Massachusetts * and Plymouth Colony troops in Rehoboth during King Philip's War was bound to have a future effect on the town. The soldiers became acquainted with the townspeople, and we later find many of these young men settling in Rehoboth and Swansea. The Rehoboth inhabitants were especially well acquainted with the men in the companies of Captains Prentice and Mosely, who had extended services in Swansea and Rehoboth. Capt. Isaac Johnson's company of seventy-five men was recruited from Roxbory, Dorchester, Milton, Braintree, Weymouth, Hingham, and Hull, and from this company alone we find John Barnes, Benjamin Wilson, John Lovell and Nicholas Weymouth settled in Rehoboth or Swansea.

Of all the company commanders who served at Rehoboth and Swansea, Capt. Samuel Mosely,† a privateer in the West Indies, was undoubtedly the most popular and efficient.

Deacon Philip Walker, constable at Rehoboth, was also a poet and during the war wrote a poem ‡ about Pierce's Fight entitled, "Captan Perse and his coragios Company", one stanza of which reads:

> "It Fell unlucky that thi march wos soner
> then thi apoynted time to that meroner
> in they picaring [pirating] thou Lackst thos muskitters
> and his Experiance gaynd mongst Buckcanners"

Philip Walker is apparently deploring the lack of experience of Capt. Michael Pierce, and praising the experience and fighting ability of Captain Mosely and his company of pirates who had spent considerable time in Rehoboth, having been there in June and in December 1675, and probably at other times.

---

[2] John^{2} Wheeton, son of Robert,^{1} was born at Rehoboth 20 Apr. 1650. He married Elizabeth ——— and had ten children born at Swansea. Styled blacksmith, he deeded land to son James 8 Mar. 1714 [*Bristol County Deeds*, vol. IX, p. 561].

[3] John Brown, son of Mr. John Brown, was born at Rehoboth the "last Friday" in September 1650.

* This name appears on the original Rehoboth record of "those engaged in the Narraganset Expedition".

[4] There is no mention of a Joseph Baker in the early original Rehoboth records previous to 30 Mar. 1719, at which time a Joseph Baker of Barrington married Margaret Chaffee at Rehoboth.

[5] Savage says that Jonathan Freeman, Dedham, freeman in 1684, was a soldier in Captain Mosely's company in the Narragansett Expedition in December 1675. The earliest mention of him in the original Rehoboth records is on 22 Oct. 1688 when he registered his cattle earmarks. On 9 Jan. 1689, Jonathan and David Freeman "took up an old grey mare and a suckling coult". On 1 July 1689 Jonathan married Mary Woodcock, of Rehoboth. David Freeman of Rehoboth married, 4 Apr. 1684, Margaret Ingraham of Swansea.

[6] This is clearly the John Fitch, Jr., who was killed by the Indians in Pierce's Fight at Rehoboth 26 Mar. 1676.

[7] This would seem to be the John^{2} Read, Jr., who was killed in Pierce's Fight at Rehoboth 26 Mar. 1676. He had a son John^{3} born at Rehoboth 8 Dec. 1669.

[8] This is clearly the Thomas Man who was wounded by the Indians in Pierce's Fight at Rehoboth 26 Mar. 1676.

* Bodge's *Soldiers of King Philip's War* contains very complete muster rolls of these Massachusetts companies transcribed from the records in the State Archives. The grantees in the four Narragansett Townships total 478 names, and many more appear in the three succeeding Township lists, all of which are printed in this history. There are few similar records for Plymouth Colony.

† Capt. Samuel^{2} Mosely (Maudsley), b. at Braintree 14 June 1641, son of Henry^{1} Mosely of Braintree (who came in the *Hopewell* in 1635), was a cooper and early removed to Boston. In the way of trade he visited Jamaica, and other parts of the West Indies, where his adventurous spirit was excited and schooled, perhaps by Sir Henry Morgan and associate Buccaneers, the result of which was his bringing home to Boston two prizes from some unmentioned enemy. He was a captain in Philip's War, showed gallant spirit and great success in destroying the Indians; by some he was thought to take too great a delight in that exercise. He d. in January 1680 [Savage, *Gen. Dict.*, vol. III, p. 179].

‡ The writer is indebted to Prof. Harold Jantz of Princeton University for a copy of this poem, which he discovered and transcribed from the original manuscript.

Miller, Sr., John Miller, Jr., and X of Hannah Miller. Acknowledged on 12 Apr. 1680 by John Miller, Sr.

The witness signature "John Miller, Sr." is written above the names of the other two witnesses with a small arrow pointing to it [*Ibid.*, vol. IV, p. 354].

31 Mar. 1680—Jonathan Bliss of Rehoboth, smith, Jane Walker, widow, and Samuel Walker, both of Rehoboth, administrators of the Deceased Philip Walker confirm the exchange of lands between said Bliss and Decon Philip Walker, now deceased, "there having passed no instrument or confirmation betwixt them", the Walkers to get 24 acres in Wachamockett Neck and Bliss to get 26 acres on the east side of Palmer's River in Rehoboth. Witnesses: William Carpenter, Sr., and Ester Smith [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 131].

21 May 1680—Anthony Perrey of Rehoboth, yeoman, for a valuable consideration deeded to Robert Miller of Rehoboth, tanner, 9 acres at Palmer's River in Rehoboth. Witnesses: William Carpenter and Samuel Peck [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 274].

21 May 1680—Peter Hunt of Rehoboth, smith, for valuable consideration deeded to Robert Miller of Rehoboth, Tanner, 5 acres salt marsh in Swansey. Witnesses: William Carpenter and Nicholas Peck [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 275].

14 June 1680—Stephen and Nathaniel Paine of Rehoboth, "whereas our grandfather Mr. Stephen Paine lately deceased" had sold to Decon Philip Walker of Rehoboth one-eighth part of a share of meadows and uplands and swamps at "Anannoiset and New Meadow Neck" in Swansey now confirm to Jane Walker, widow, and Samuel Walker, administrators of the estate of said Philip Walker. Witnesses: Nicolas Peck and William Carpenter [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 132].

24 May 1681—John Paddock of Swansey, planter, for £5 deeded to Obediah Bowen of Swanzey 7 acres upland in Rehoboth at Rocky River. Signed: John Paddock and X of Anna Paddock. Witnesses: Timothy Brookes, John Thurber, and John Browne [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 128].

14 July 1681—George Robinson, Sr., of Rehoboth for good grounds deeded to "my two sons Samuel and George Robinson, both of Rehoboth" equally 50 acres of land in the North Purchase of Rehoboth, etc., at a place called "Bushe". Witnesses: Joseph Peck, Jr., and William Carpenter, Sr. [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 93].

10 May 1682—Samuel Bullock of Rehoboth, yeoman, for £3 deeded to Samuel Luther of Swansey 4 acres swamp land on the East side of Palmer's River in Rehoboth. Witnesses: Nicholas Tanner and Tho. Eastabrook [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 367].

14 Oct. 1682—Richard Arnold of Providence for a valuable consideration deeded to John Butterworth, Jr., of Rehoboth all rights "in a saw mill & corn mill . . . In Rehoboth upon the River commonly called the Mill River, being the full one half of the said mill being in partnership with widow Walker". Witnesses: William Carpenter, Sr., and Ester Smith [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 203].

7 Jan. 1683—Whereas the Town of Rehoboth voted 16 Mar. 1679 to give Reverend Samuel Angier the house, lot, and Barn which the Town had lately purchased from Mrs. Margery Flint [Rev. Noah Newman's house] for the minister, a committee appointed by the town, Daniel Smith, Esq., Capt. Peter Hunt, Lieut. Nicholas Peck, Gilbert Brooks, Anthony Perrey, and Jonathan Bliss for the town of Rehoboth granted the land to Mr. Angier. Witnesses: Thomas Cooper, William Carpenter, Sr., John Butterworth, and Thomas Read [*Ibid.*, vol. VI, p. 35].

17 Apr. 1683—Peter Hunt of Rehoboth, smith, for a valuable consideration deeded to Sampson Mason of Rehoboth, shoemaker, 12 acres in Wachamoket Neck in Rehoboth. Signed, Peter Hunt and X of Elizabeth Hunt. Witnesses: John Serch and John Hals [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 378].

25 June 1683—John Allen, Sr., of Swansey quitclaimed to Noah Mason and Samuel Mason of Rehoboth 30 acres in Rehoboth. Signed, John Allen and X mark of Christian Allen. Witnesses: James Brown, Tho. Eastabrook, and John Brown [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 370].

20 Sept. 1683—Richard and John Martin of Rehoboth deeded to John Shaw land in Rehoboth [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 326].

27 Nov. 1683—Samson Mason of Rehoboth for a valuable consideration deeded to Samuel Butterworth of Rehoboth 14 acres at Wachemokett in Rehoboth [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 314].

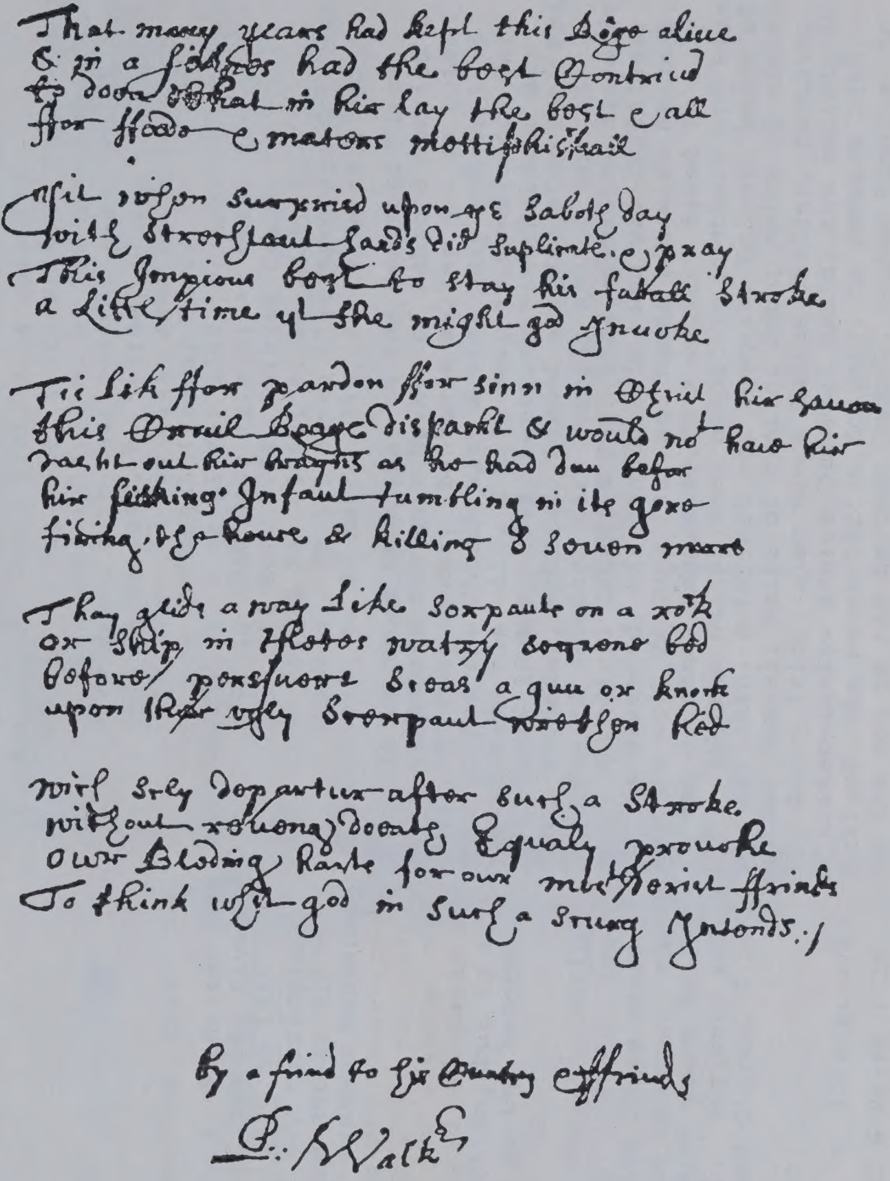
27 June 1684—"Jonathan Wright of Flushing in Queens County upon Long Island in America, son and heire apparent of Capt. George Wright of said Flushing—'Whereas my aforesaid father George Wright hath by a deed of gift bearing date the 2cond day of ffebruary Anno. Dom.: 1683' granted all Right title, etc. to me to 'a certaine home Lott of ground lying & being att Rehoboth allies Seacounke in Plymouth Colonie in New England' deeded to John Doged Rehoboth land in Rehoboth, 'That is to say certaine p^{e}cells of Lands together with fifty pounds estate of Comonage . . . lying and being within the Township of Rehoboth aforsaid, as namely sixteen acres of Land (more or Less) Lying and being in Wachamokett Necks in the second devision; and is together with a p^{e}cell of Land belonging to the said John Doged; all which together maketh thirty & five acres and some odd Pe'cells bounding on the western end with a high way: The Eastern end buting upon the next Range of Lotts the Northerne side a lott formerly belonging to Nicholas Tanner Butt now in the posession of John Butterworth; and on the southeren syde with a Lott formerly belonging unto Thomas Cooper but now in the Posession of Thomas Willmouth alsoe one peice of Land more Containing of eight acres lying and being at the Mill River Lotts; Lying all alonge by the side of the said John Doged his meadow, and adjoyning to the great plaine;

"'Alsoe six acres of Land Lying upon the eastern side of the Swamp called holmes swamp, being a p^{e}ice of thirty acres of Land layed out in one p^{e}sell The which six acres is yett undevided from the Land of the said John Doged; and some other Land which make up the said Tract; and when the said thirty acres was laid out it bounded . . . every way with the common; alsoe halfe a Devision of meaddow lying on both Sides of the River called palmers River the one p^{e}te Lying by the Streame of the said River about halfe a mile on the eastern side of the said River Distant from the other p^{e}ce which Lyeth on the western side of the said River alsoe two Lotts being in estimation about nine acres Lying and being upon the plaine called The Great plaine; as alsoe fifty pounds estate of Comonage; all which said Demified p^{e}cells of Land the said meddow plaine Lott and Comons excepted contain about thirty acres The said Lands and comons with the appurtenants and every peice and p^{e}sell thereof called and known by what name foever, wood Land Marsh meadow, Pasture, Commons or what'" [*Ibid.*, vol. V, pt. 2, p. 281].

The above-mentioned deed of gift of George Wright of Flushing, Queens Co., Long Island, conveying all his rights to lands, etc. in Rehoboth to his son and heir Jonathan Wright of Flushing, Long Island, dated 2 Feb. 1683/4 (see ante, p. 146) is recorded in Rhode Island, in *Providence Deeds*, vol. I, pp. 88–9].

11 Mar. 1684/5—John Shawe of Rehoboth, Tayler, for £20 deeded to John Butterworth of Rehoboth 18 acres at Wachamoket Neck in Rehoboth, it being the land that "I purchased of Richard and John Martin on Sept. 20, 1683". Signed: John Shaw. Witnesses: Samson Mason and William Carpenter [*Plymouth Colony Deeds*, vol. V, p. 325].

7 July 1685—Daniel Smith, as agent of the Town of Rehoboth, appeared at this session of His Majesties Court of Assistants at New Plimouth and set forth bounds of said Town of Rehoboth, a part of which follows: "The first grant of the sd. Township being eight miles square granted



That many years had kept this boye alive
& yn a fathers had the best contrived
to doon what in his lay the best & all
ffor ffode & maters [illegible]

Which when surprised upon ye Sabath day
with strongfaul hands did suplicate & pray
This Impious best to stay his fatall Stroke
a Little time yt she might god Invoke

Tis lik ffor pardon ffor sinn in Christ his name
this Cruel Beast disparkt & would not have hir
racht out hir brayns as he had dun befor
hir sucking Infant tumbling in its gore
firing the house & killing & seuen more

They glide away like serpents on a rock
or ship in [illegible] watry sequence bed
Before pursuers be as a gun or knock
upon their ugly serpent wretchen hed

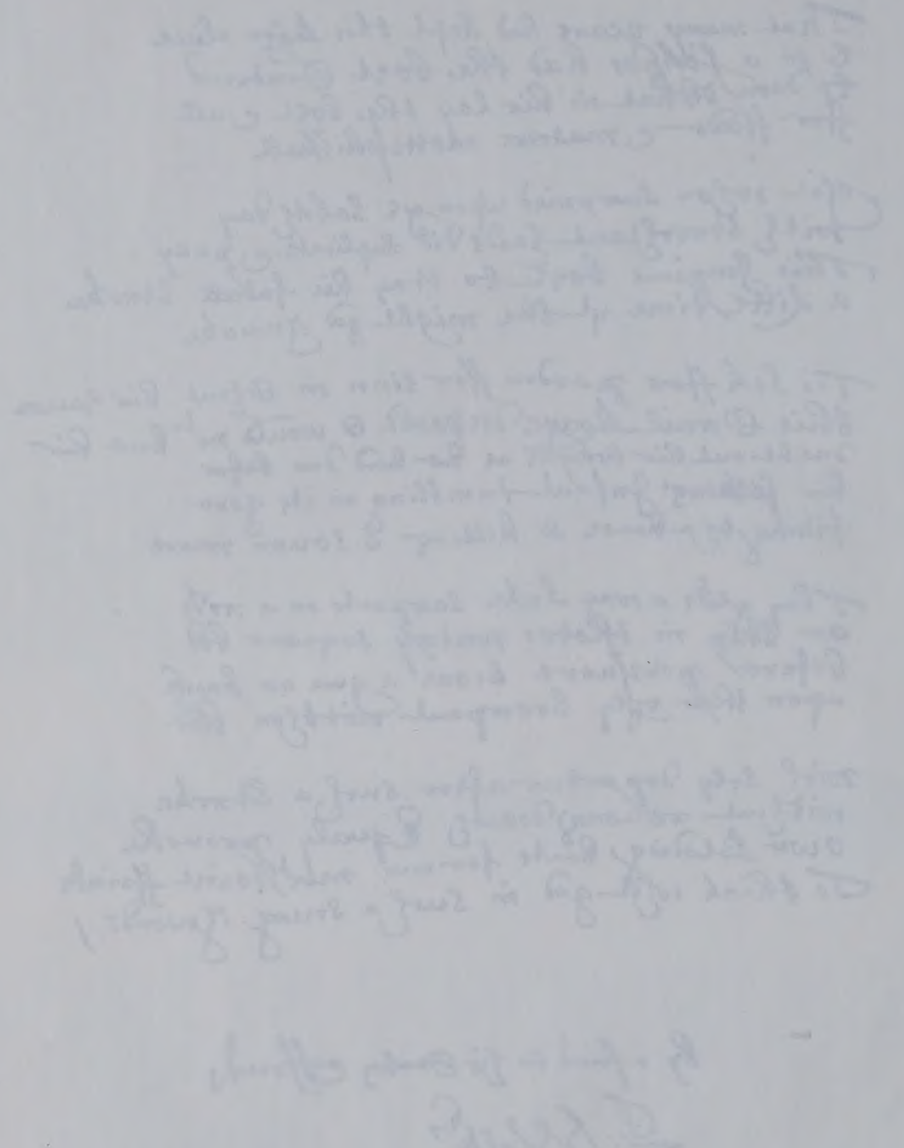
with sely departur after such a Stroke
without reuenge doeth Equaly prouoke
our Bleding harts for our murthered ffrinds
To think wt god in such a strang Intends./

By a frind to his Country & ffrinds
P. Walker

An exact size photostatic reproduction of five stanzas of Philip Walker's poetry commencing on page 15 of his poem entitled "The ffirst smile of god in this land" (see *post*, page 46), together with his signature at the end of his eighteen-page manuscript. This is the only known extant handwriting and signature of Philip Walker, and is here published for the first time.

These stanzas record the murder of Rachel, the wife of Thomas Mann, and of her infant daughter, a heretofore unknown Indian atrocity committed at Swansea on 24 June 1675, the date of the outbreak of King Philip's War.

In addition to the historical importance of his poetry, his orthography is of particular interest in that it shows rather an unusual combination of sixteenth and seventeenth-century handwriting styles. For instance: his capital "C" is decidedly sixteenth-century, as is his small "h" with the top loop below the line; double "f" for capital "F"; "x" for "r"; and the lowered capital "C" for the "&" sign. Mixed in with these characters are also found the seventeenth-century capitals "B, I, L, R, S, T, and Y"; the small "h" with loop above the line; "e", and the "&" sign. The recorded handwriting of no other Rehoboth man seems to have had the styles of two centuries jumbled to the extent found in Philip Walker's writing, of which the foregoing five stanzas are only a small sample.



An exact size photostatic reproduction of five stanzas of Philip Walker's poetry commencing on page 11 of his poem entitled "The first smile of god in this land" (see post, page 60), together with his signature at the end of his eighteen-page manuscript. These, the only known extant handwriting and signature of Philip Walker, and is here published for the first time.

These stanzas record the murder of Rachel, the wife of Thomas Mann, and of her infant daughter, a heretofore unknown Indian atrocity committed at Swansea on 24 June 1675, the date of the outbreak of King Philip's War.

In addition to the historical importance of his poetry, his orthography is of particular interest in that it shows rather an unusual combination of sixteenth and seventeenth-century handwriting styles. For instance, his capital "C" is decidedly sixteenth-century, as is his small "h" with the top loop below the line; double "f" for capital "F"; "e" for "e"; and the lowered capital "C" for the "&" sign. Mixed in with these characters are also found the seventeenth-century capitals "B, I, L, R, S, T, and Y"; the small "h" with loop above the line; "e", and the "&" sign. The recorded handwriting of no other individual man seems to have had the styles of two centuries jumbled to the extent found in Philip Walker's writing, of which the foregoing five stanzas are only a small sample.

Here is yet another Averill/Walker connection

Pg 160

See p 283 Averill Genealogy

WALKERS OF THE OLD PLYMOUTH COLONY V43
ADDENDA

By Kendall P. Hayward of Hartford, Conn.

Over a century has passed since J. B. R. Walker published his Memorial of the Walkers of the Old Plymouth Colony ... and of their descendants 1630 to 1860 (Northampton, Mass., 1861). Few, if any corrections have found their way in print, as the author did a remarkable job for these Walkers of eastern Massachusetts. As the families began to migrate, however, to Connecticut and New York, the author obviously relied on correspondence, rather than upon the records, and here we begin to observe a lessening of standards. The following is intended, not as detraction, but to support and supply a few missing dates on the Rehoboth branch of the Walker family.

* Pages 124, 132: Benjamin⁴ Walker (Samuel³, Philip², Philip¹), b. Rehoboth, Mass., 12 Aug. 1703, d. Ashford, Conn., 1787. He is credited with three wives who seem to escape verification. The statement that he had five children born in successive years in July is true only for the years 1729-1731. Benjamin and wife Mary were admitted to the Ashford Church, 7 Dec. 1729.

Children: born Ashford

i. Elizabeth⁵ } both b. 14 May, d. 15 Aug. 1726.
ii. Mary⁵ }
iii. Benjamin, b. 28 Feb. 1728, d. 6 March 1728.
iv. Elizabeth, b. 11 July 1729, bapt. Ashford 1st Church, 4 Jan. 1730.
v. Benjamin, b. 20 July 1730, m. Ashford, 26 Mar. 1758, Mary Johnson.

younger cousin/nephew

* ours Esther Walker³ (Philip² Philip¹)

165

vi. Ebenezer (Lt.), b. 23 July 1731, d. Ashford, 27 Sept. 1806; m. there 10 Jan. 1754, Hannah Smith, b. 1729, d. 10 March 1803 aged 76 (g.s.). He was known as Ebenezer Walker 2nd.
vii. Mary, b. 1 Sept. 1732, d. by 1775; m. Ashford, 3 March 1757, James Averill who m. (2) 6 Mar. 1775 Mrs. Mary Parsons of Somers.
viii. Ephraim, b. 15 Feb. 1734/5, d. Ashford, 21 Mar. 1811: m. Ashford. Abigail Yeomans, b. Tolland. 20 Feb. 1735, d. Ashford, 13 Oct. 1808, dau. of Elijah and Abigail (Cook) Yeomans.
ix. Hannah, b. 9 May 1737, d. 9 July 1737.
x. Ruth, b. 15 May 1738, d. Lyme, N.H. 2 Dec. 1821 in 84th year (g.s.); m. as 2nd wife, 28 Nov. 1770 (rec. both Westford Ch. recs. and Hebron VR), Peter Post, b. Hebron, 22 April 1736, d. Lyme, N.H., 7 Nov. 1811 aged 75 (g.s.), son of Thomas and Dinah (Brown) Post.
xi. Samuel, b. 1 or 11 May 1742, d. Ashford, 1 June 1791 in 50th year (g.s.); m. there (Westford Ch.), 17 Nov. 1768, Bethiah Crary.
xii. John, b. 10 Nov. 1743, d. by 1777; m. Ashford (Westford Ch.) 2 March 1769 Mary Ann Kilbourn.
xiii. Joseph, b. 24 March 1746, d. 18 March 1769.

find Ashford Ct (Eastern Windham Co.)

James⁵ Averill (Wm⁴ Wm³ Wm² Wm¹) was younger cousin of Isaac³ Averill (Wm² Wm¹) who m. Esther Walker in 1709 - both lived in Windham Co CT.

Walker

It should be noted here that on the Hartford First Church records a Benjamin Walker of Ashford married 8 April 1756 Mary Jones. Benjamin Walker Sr. as noted above joined the Church with a wife Mary and in 1778 when he made his will, a wife Mary is mentioned. This will, dated 19 Nov. 1778, mentions his children Benjamin, Ebenezer, Ephraim, Samuel and daughter Ruth Post, and heirs of daughter Mary Averill and of son John, dec'd. A codicil dated 14 Jan. 1784, mentions his wife Mary as deceased. His son Ephraim, who was childless, made his will 26 June 1802 and names his wife Abigail, who was deceased according to a codicil dated 20 July 1809. Ephraim Walker then names his brothers and sister: Benjamin, Ruth Post and Ebenezer Walker; heirs of brother Samuel; heirs of brother John; heirs of sister Mary Avery [sic]; also niece Eunice Chaffee, daughter of sister-in-law Eunice Cummings dec'd; the society in Westford, the Presbyterian Society, to receive £200; and the son of his brother Samuel, nephew Timothy, to receive the lands. This will was proven 27 March 1811.

Pages 127, 139: Ebenezer⁴ Walker (Ebenezer³, Philip², Philip¹), b. Rehoboth, Mass. 9 Dec. 1716, d. Ashford, 5 July 1799 in his 83rd year (g.s.); married (1) 26 Jan. 1737, Bethiah Brown, b. Rehoboth, 8 July 1718, d. Ashford, 7 Oct. 1771 in her 53rd year (g.s.), daughter of William and Elizabeth. This Ebenezer was known as Ebenezer Walker 1st in the Westford Church records.

He was dismissed from the Rehoboth Church 8 Jan. 1769 and united with the Westford Church 30 April 1769. He married (2) in 1772 Huldah Wilmarth who survived him. See his will dated 12 Jan. 1798: "whereas I the said Ebenezer Walker on or about the center of April 1772 and before my intermarriage with the said Huldah who was single & unmarried & Called & knowne by the name of Huldah Willmarth did make and execute a certain writing of agreement to & with the said Huldah," etc. Of his children, the eldest, Ebenezer Walker, born 27 Jan. 1738/9, died at Ashford, Conn. 24 Jan. 1814 aged 75; married 13 Sept. 1765, Sibrana or Sabrina Whittaker, born 1 Feb. 1744/5, and died at Ashford, 4 Oct. 1825 aged 80, daughter of Joseph Whittaker. This Ebenezer Walker and his wife united with the Westford Church, 3 May 1772, and he was known as Ebenezer Walker 3rd. The youngest child, Dorothy Walker, born 21 Sept. 1749, married in Ashford, 25 Oct. 1770, Squire Hill, and was called of New York State in her father's will.

Can we learn anything from this regarding migration from Rehoboth gradually to Windham Co Ct (Ashford then there) to help answer questions about our Sturbridge Dodge ancestors? (Freeman/Chace + Smith?)

The Journal of American Genealogy

VOLUME II
NINETEEN TWENTY-TWO

NUMBER 4
FOURTH QUARTER

An Early Colonial Homestead in the Seventeenth Century

"Seekonk," Massachusetts, Now East-Providence, Rhode Island, Was the Home of Philip Walker in 1678. The House in Which He Lived is One of the Earliest Colonial Homesteads of New England

BY

REVEREND EDWIN SAWYER WALKER, A. M.

AMONG the ancient Colonial Homesteads of New England, there are few that bear so early a date as that erected in the year 1678, in ancient "Seekonk" Massachusetts, now East-Providence, Rhode Island, by Philip Walker. In the year 1641 came Rev. Samuel Newman, a non-conformist minister from Weymouth, and purchased a tract of land, eight miles square, of Massasoit, the Indian Chief, for settlement. With Mr. Newman came a large portion of the members of his church, from Weymouth, Massachusetts, and they named the new settlement "Rehoboth." In 1643, those lands were divided among fifty-eight persons, who thenceforth

V2

constituted the most energetic and progressive community in the colony of old Plymouth.

Among the leaders was Philip Walker, prominent alike in civil and religious affairs, who became one of the wealthiest of the citizens. The location chosen by him for his future home was unsurpassed in its beauty and in the fertility of its soil. It was situated on "Watchemoket Neck," on what is now known as the Providence River, on the road from Providence, Rhode Island, to what is now the little hamlet of Rumford, three miles away. By industry and business capacity he accumulated a property which was considered large in those days. He took the oath of fidelity, in 1658, and served in varied public capacities, from time to time, among which was that of Deputy to Plymouth, in 1669.

In 1675 the little colony became the scene of a reign of terror, by the outbreak of what was known as King Philip's War. Rehoboth, being an isolated plantation, was especially exposed to the incursions of the savages. Philip Walker was in that gallant fight with King Philip in which the people of Rehoboth repulsed and overcame his Indian forces, and sent thirty of them to their long hunting-grounds. That was in August, 1675. In the month of March, 1676, just after what was known in history as "Pierce's Fight," the Indians fell upon Seekonk and burned forty houses, with their outbuildings, among which were those of Philip Walker. After that bloody conflict, which lasted for a full year, during which the lives of six hundred of the colonists were sacrificed, and property to the amount of over a million of dollars was destroyed, the war was closed by the death of King Philip, in the autumn of 1675. Peace being restored the people went resolutely to work again, and commenced to rebuild their devastated homes and to restore their family altars.

The various offices held by Philip Walker, and his generous contributions made for the common defence, and for the cause of Christ, are evidences of his sterling character and of his usefulness as a citizen. Among those who lost no time in rebuilding, there is no doubt that he was foremost, and that the "Old Homestead," which now has braved the storms of more than two and a third centuries, was commenced as early as 1676 or 1677, and completed as early as 1678. At any rate it is known that he was living therein, and there died, in the prime of life, August 21, 1679.

At the time of his death he owned land and estate valued at £861, and, as the record shows, was one of the wealthiest men in Rehoboth, where there were eighty-three estates.

Previous to the year, 1879, the precise location of his burial place had been lost for three or four generations. In the summer of that year Mr. Christopher Dexter, a lineal descendant of Philip Walker and one of the owners of the "Old Homestead," after a thorough search among the hundreds of fallen grave stones, in the ancient burying-ground at Seekonk, finally succeeded in his quest. Lying deeply imbedded in the turf, and almost covered over, he found the ancient slate stone, one among hundreds of a similar character, on which was rudely chiseled this simple inscription:

P. W.
1679
Ye 21. August.

As the town record shows that PHILIP WALKER "was buried August 21, 1679," and the rude, ancient stone was in the vicinity of the graves of other Walkers, of later generations, there was no reason to doubt that it marked the grave of that old pioneer, of the seventeenth century. Mr. Dexter, with true and laudable reverence for the memory of his ancestor, caused to be erected a new and substantial granite monument to mark the now memorable place, with this inscription:

The Grave of
PHILIP WALKER;
Buried
Ye 21. August 1679
to his memory
Aug: 21. 1879.

The House, as its present condition shows, was constructed with a view to durability, and must have been at the time a marvel of architecture. The interior, with its low ceilings and small windows, its upper rooms finished, on sides and ceilings, in panels of wood, and the living rooms below, with heavy wooden cornices, shows that no expense was spared, in building, to render it at once substantial and elegant.

The farm, as it is to-day, embraces about ninety-six acres, and

the title to it has never been changed since the original deed was made by Massassoit, conveying it to PHILIP WALKER. It is now occupied by one of his lineal descendants.

The drive leading up to it, from East Providence, along Massasoit Avenue, is one in which the visitor inhales the purest air and enjoys the finest of roadside scenery. The grand old elm trees, which appear in the foreground, stand magnificent after the storms of more than two centuries have swept their spreading branches, being six feet in diameter, and excelled in size by few, if any, in New England, save the famous Great Elm, in Lancaster, Mass.

Through eight successive generations, beginning with Philip Walker, this "Old Homestead" has been the shrine of men and women whose memories abide. After Philip was Samuel Walker, who served under Major Bradford in King Philip's War. He was styled "Capt.," "Gent." and was a Representative to the General Court in 1705. Then follows Timothy Walker, who, as the record shows, "exerted great influence in the affairs of Rehoboth." Next, Colonel Timothy Walker served as a soldier at the time of the Lexington alarm, April 19, 1775, and down to July, 1779. He was Representative to the General Court in 1756-7-8, and Delegate to the Provincial Congress two years, 1775-5, holding sessions at Concord.

Next, Captain Timothy Walker served in the war of the Revolution, holding a Captain's commission, and represented the town of Rehoboth in the Legislature in 1810-11. Dying in the year 1814, he left, as the surviving heirs of his estate, including the "Old Homestead," five daughters, Mary, aged twenty years; Sally, aged eighteen; Lucy Ann, aged sixteen; Arvilla, aged eleven and Eunice, aged eight years. The last two of these married two brothers, Edward Dexter, Jr., and Henry H. Dexter, from whom descended, respectively, Christopher Dexter and Abbie S. Dexter, to whom the estate descended, being held until recent years, when, upon the death of Christopher Dexter, it descended to his daughter, Mrs. Jessie D. Shedd, who is the present owner and occupant.

Kept in the best of repair, as it still is, there is reason to believe that this "Old Homestead" may yet endure for another century.

JOHN TISDALE

Taunton, Mass.

John^{1} Tisdale, born in England, , killed by the Indians at Taunton, Mass., 27 June 1675; married **Sarah^{2} Walker**, born in England, about 1618, died at Taunton, Mass., in Dec. 1676, daughter of ——— and ——— (Browne) Walker [see Walker-Browne Family herein].

John Tisdale or Tisdall first appears in Plymouth Colony records on 7 June 1636, when "John Tisdale, yeoman, entreth an accōn of battery against Steven Hopkins, Assistant to the gov̄mt, by whom the said John was dangerously wounded, as he affirmeth." Stephen Hopkins was one of the *Mayflower* passengers, a man of standing, and in a position of authority. What caused him to attack young Tisdale, we are not informed. The Puritans, whatever their detractors may allege against them, had a sense of justice and were no respecters of persons. Hopkins was found at fault and was fined £5 "to our sov. lord the King, whose peace he had broken, wch he ought after a speciall manner to haue kept, and also . . . . forty shillings to the plaintiffe."

On 2 Oct. 1637, "Tenn acres of land are graunted to John Tisdall, lying crosse to Greenes Harbor Payth, haueing the com̄on lands on the east and west sides, the lands of Georḡ Hall lying on the south side, and the lands of *Edward Hall lying on the north side." And 6 Nov. 1638, "John Tisdall, vpon the good report made of him, & of his good carryage, is allowed to keepe house and plant for himself, p̄uided that he so continue his carryage still." On 6 Apr. 1640, "John Tisdall is graunted enlargment at the lower end of his lott, if there shalbe found any spare land, when Mr Collyer, Jonathan Brewster, and Willm̄ Bassett haue view the place, p̄uided that there be a heigh way left for cattell to passe to and from the com̄on by."

He was propounded freeman, 7 Sept. 1642, and admitted 7 Mar. 1642/3. He was listed as one of the Duxbury men able to bear arms in 1642. He served on the Grand Inquest, 5 June 1644, 1 June 1647, 4 June 1650, 7 June 1652, 7 June 1653, and 5 June 1671, and was on trial juries, 5 Nov. 1644, 4 Oct. 1655, 4 June 1657, and 1 Mar. 1663/4. He was on a jury 29 Oct. 1650 to determine the cause of death by drowning of Thomas Cooke. He was Constable of Duxbury, 4 June 1645.

In 1653 he was fined 20 shillings for permitting the substitution of a cow by his fellow-appraiser when they were appointed to appraise a cow belonging to John Bryant of Taunton. This is the only flaw in his public record.

After his settlement in Taunton, he was employed often in public office. He was Constable of that town, 8 June 1655 and 7 June 1659; and a Selectman, 1672 to 1675 inclusive. On 3 June 1674, he was Deputy from Taunton to the Plymouth General Court. On the list of freemen at Taunton, 29 May 1670, he appears with his sons John, Jr., and James.

He was killed by the Indians in the attack on Taunton, 27 June 1675, during King Philip's War. The houses of James Walker and John Tisdale were burned. Letters of administration were granted, 1 Nov. 1676, to John,

* Edward Hall (Part of our Dege Family)

Family of Sarah (Walker) Tisdale — our Phillip Walker's sister.

Walker —
(Averill Ancestors)

James, Joshua and Joseph Tisdall. The Court ordered, 6 Mar. 1676/7, that the eldest son should have a double portion, and an equal share to the other three sons and to the four daughters.

The will of James Tisdall, Sr., not dated or signed, was probated 2 Nov. 1676 on the oath of Mr. James Walker, Sr. It named his sons, John, James, Joshua and Joseph, and daughters Elizabeth, Sarah, Mary and Abigaill; and wife, executrix. He gave to his son James, "the land upon which his house standeth and about five acres of land lying on the east side of the Great River over against his house, [other land and] alsoe my lott att Swansey and my meddow att Sabegegansett and my share in the Iron workes, after the Death of his mother." The sons made a mutual agreement for distribution 4 June 1677, also with their brothers-in-law, John Smith, James Dean, and Nathaniel French, and with Mr. James Browne of Swansea as guardian of Abigail. [Plymouth Colony Wills, 3-2-24.]

Qualifying ancestor, Society of Colonial Wars.

References

N. B. Shurtleff: Plymouth Colony Records, 1-41, 42, 66, 102, 145; 2-45, 52, 71, 83, 151, 155; 3-9, 32, 42, 64, 78, 115, 163; 4-50; 5-56, 92, 112, 143, 144, 164, 212, 219, 276; 7-38, 75, 83, 115; 8-69, 175, 182, 190, 199.
C. E. Benton: Ezra Reed and Esther Edgerton (1912), pp. 37-39.
G. M. Bodge: Soldiers in King Philip's War (1906), p. 461.
Taunton, Mass., Vital Records (printed), 3-200, 201.
J. B. R. Walker: Memorial of the Walkers of the Old Plymouth Colony (1861), p. 18.
The Mayflower Descendant, 21-29 to 34.
Clarence Etienne Leonard: Fulton-Hayden-Warner Ancestry (1923), pp. 262, 263.
Pedigrees of Samuel Putnam Avery (1925), pp. 195-222.

James^{2} Tisdale, born at Duxbury, Mass., about 1644, died at Middleboro, Mass., 15 Jan. 1715, aged 71; married at Dedham, Mass., 5 Nov. 1666, **Mary^{2} Avery**, baptized at Barkham, Berkshire, England, 19 Dec. 1645, died at Middleboro, 9 Sept. 1713, aged 66, daughter of (Dr.) William^{1} and Margaret (Albright) Avery.

He was Constable of Taunton, 1 June 1675; Surveyor of highways, 5 June 1678; on a trial jury, 29 Oct. 1678; and on the Grand Inquest, 1 June 1680.

The will of James Tisdale, Sr., of Dighton, dated 2 Oct. 1713, proved 7 Mar. 1715, gave to his "only son James Tisdale Junr." lands and "my share in the iron works in ffreetown." To "daughter Mary Haskins I ratify and confirm what I gave her family by deed of gift, namely my house and land in Taunton at the ware, and to my Granddaughter Mary Haskins (who hath nursed me) I give my silver porringer." To daughter Martha Hodges, his little silver dram cup. Legacies to son-in-law John Hodges, Jr., daughter Margaret wife of Josiah Winslow, and daughter Sarah Johnson. To grandsons, Ebenezer Winslow, Eliphalet Hodges, and Merrick Johnson, 200 acres in the old Township of Taunton. [Probate Rec. Bristol County, 3-213.]

The son, James, Jr., settled in Lebanon, Conn.

Walker

References

N. B. Shurtleff: Plymouth Colony Records, 5-165, 258; 6-36; 7-214.
Dedham Records, B. M. and D. 1635-1845, p. 10.
J. B. R. Walker: Memorial of the Walkers of the Old Plymouth Colony (1861), p. 19.

Mary^{3} Tisdale, born at Taunton, Mass., about 1672, died after 1718; married **Richard^{2} Haskins**, born probably at Plymouth, [say 1660], died at Norwich, Conn., 26 Dec. 1717.

References

J. B. R. Walker: Memorial of the Walkers of the Old Plymouth Colony (1861), p. 19.

(Chart II, Line 15)

Insurance Company of Philadelphia, he is the third generation of the family to work for the firm. He has also done work on a degree in mathematics at Drexel University.

Children:

i. Richard Livingston, III[5], b. Lancaster, Pa., 11 Dec. 1967.
ii. Michael Geoffrey, b. 29 August 1970.

§ § §

TISDALE

Many early residents of Taunton, Massachusetts, came there from Taunton, England, or the vicinity in Somerset or Devonshire. However, John[1] Tisdale was a late arrival in 1651, and a manuscript Tisdale genealogy by Samuel Tisdale, written in 1851 and on file in the Old Colony Historical Society, Taunton, stated he was baptized in Ripon, Yorkshire, 7 Nov. 1614, son of Thomas and Ruth Tisdale. This allegation has not been checked, but could be at the Society of Genealogists Library in London, or at the Yorkshire Parish Register Society.

1. JOHN[1] TISDALE, born apparently in England about 1614, was "killed by the Indians, the 27th June 1675" [Bowen, 3:65n; see Plymouth Colony Records, 8:69], according to Shadrach Wilbore, Taunton Town Clerk. His gun was recovered from the Indians at Rehoboth on 1 August 1675 [Bowen, 1:85]. This was early in King Philip's War.

He married Sarah[2] Walker*, who died in Dec. 1676 [E. H. Reed, *NEHGR*, 17:236].

He was first of record in Plymouth Colony on 7 June 1636, when he bought suit against Stephen Hopkins, *Mayflower* passenger and Assistant, for battery, by which he was "dangerously wounded" [Walker]. Hopkins was fined £5. and ordered to pay the plaintiff 40/- [M. T. Savage]. On 2 Oct. 1637 he was granted ten acres in Duxbury, where he was freeman on 7 March 1642/3, and constable from 4 June 1645, for one year. He owned land (lot 23) now described as east of Assonet Station in Assonet Village, where his son Joshua settled. The high profile rock there is called the "old man of Joshua's Mountain" [Bowen; M. T. Savage].

He bought the land in Taunton on 26 Dec. 1651, in a part of the town which is now Berkley, Mass. In 1653 he was fined 20/- for "appraising a substitute cow" [Waterman, 331]. He was chosen constable on 8 June 1655 and 7 June 1659 for one year terms, and served as Selectman from 1672 to 1675. On 28 Dec. 1659 he was assessed taxes of £1.10s.10d. for nine people on eighty-two acres, the fifth highest assessment of forty-seven [Bowen, 1:19]. On 1 Nov. 1667 he and other owners of "a Certaine Necke of land knowne by the name of Mattapoisett" sold it to William Brenton for £35. He was Deputy to the Plymouth General Court for the term which began 3 June 1674.

A letter of administration was granted 1 Nov. 1675. On 9 July 1689 John[2] Tisdale, Sr., John, Jr., and James were listed in Major William Bradford's quitclaim deed to Taunton.

Children, first four born in Duxbury, and the remainder born in Taunton, order uncertain:

i. John[2], d. Dec. 1677; m. Taunton 23 Nov. 1664 Hannah[3] Rogers, daughter of John Rogers of Duxbury.
2. ii. James, b. 1643; d. 15 Jan. 1715, aged 71; m. 5 Nov. 1666 Mary[2] Avery.
iii. Joshua, b. 1646; d. Freetown, Mass., 1718, aged 72; m. Taunton 5 July 1688 Abigail[2] Andrews.
iv. Elizabeth, m. John Smith.
v. Sarah, m. James Dean.
3. vi. Joseph, b. 1656; d. 1722; m. August 1681 Mary[3] Leonard.
vii. Mary, d. 1711; m. Taunton 9 Jan. 1676/7 Nathaniel French [E. H. Reed, 17:34].
viii. Abigail, b. 1659, ward of James[2] Browne in 1677; d. perhaps 1749; m. Taunton 1 Feb. 1683/4 Edward Bobit (or Babbitt) [Reed, 17:37].

2. JAMES[2] TISDALE, born in Duxbury, Plymouth Colony, probably in 1643, died in Taunton, Massachusetts, 15 Jan. 1715, aged 71.

He married in Dedham, Mass., 5 Nov. 1666, Mary[2] Avery*, who died in Middleborough, in that part which is now Lakeville, Mass., 9 Sept. 1713, aged 66, according to Benton [*Reed-Edgerton*, 38]. Middleboro, as it is spelled today, was not, however, incorporated as a town before 1800, nor was Berkley incorporated until 1735, although it is referred to in some sources as existing earlier. Most likely the entire region was within the early boundaries of Taunton.

He was freeman in Taunton 29 May 1670 and in 1675 was listed among the heads of families. Lands at Assonet were conveyed to James Tisdale, James Walker and others by Constant Southworth, treasurer of Plymouth Colony, on 12 Nov. 1677. James Tisdale was a petitioner for the Town of Dighton incorporation, 11 Oct. 1708 [Lane], an owner of the iron works at Freetown, and served as constable, surveyor of highways and militiaman [Benton, 38].

Children, listed by Benton:

i. James[3], went to New Lebanon, Connecticut.
* ii. Mary, m. *ca.* 1690 Richard[2] Haskins.
iii. Martha, m. John Hodges, Sr.
iv. Margaret, m. Josiah Winslow.
v. Sarah, m. John Johnson of Lebanon, Conn.
vi. Ebenezer, d. young.

3. JOSEPH[2] TISDALE, born in Taunton, Plymouth Colony, about 1656, died there in 1721/2, in his sixty-fifth year.

He married in August 1681 Mary[3] Leonard*.

He inherited a large estate from his father [Walker].

Children, probably all born in Taunton:

i. Joseph[3], b. 1682; m. Taunton, by Major Thomas Leonard, 13 March 1706/7, Ruth[3] Reed ["Marriages," *NEHGR*, 13:254].
ii. Elkanah, b. 1684.
iii. Mary, b. 1686; d. 28 March 1719; m. Taunton 11 Feb. 1707/8 Joseph Winslow of Swansea.
iv. Hannah, b. 1688; d. 7 March 1715, aged 26; m. Taunton 8 Feb. 1710/1 William[3] Hodges of Norton [*Ibid.*; Bowen's *Woodstock*, 7:70; see Gardner, 15].
* v. Sarah, b. 1690; m. Thomas[3] Read of Dighton.
vi. Abigail, b. 1692; m. Ephraim Hayward of Bridgewater.
vii. Elizabeth, b. 1694; m. Elkanah Leonard of Middle

THE FIRST GENERATION

JOHN TISDALE

Son of Thomas and Ruth Tisdale
Born 7 November 1614 in Ripon, Yorkshire, England ✓
Married in the 1640s to Sarah Walker
Died 27 June 1675 at Taunton, Plymouth Plantation, New England

Children:

	Date of birth	Place	Date of marriage	Spouse	Date of death
John, Jr.	1642	Duxbury	1664	Hannah Rogers	1677
James	1644	"	1666	Mary Avery	1715
Joshua	1646	"	1688	Abigail Andrews	1718
Elizabeth	16	"		John Smith	1726
Sarah	1651	Taunton	1674	James Dean	1726
Joseph	1656	"	1681	Mary Leonard	1721
Mary	1658	"	1676	Nathaniel French	1731
Abigail	1660	"	1683	Edward Babbitt	1697

In the early 17th century, the lads of England must have thrilled to the thought of starting a new life in America where land was plentiful for the asking. Opportunity beckoned and youthful ambition responded with no thought of hardships, starvation, savage foes, or loneliness and isolation of the wilderness. Such must have been the case of John Tisdale who appeared in the Plymouth Plantation about 1634. He is reported to have been the son of Thomas and Ruth Tisdale who lived in Yorkshire, England. With him John brought the Tisdale coat of arms (which has been passed down to a member of the tenth generation in Canada) and a great table of carved English oak, which he was known to have in Duxbury and which is mentioned in the wills of members of later generations.

The first evidence of John's presence in Plymouth is the Court record of a suit he brought against Stephen Hopkins for assault in which he, John, was "dangerously wounded." Hopkins was a Mayflower passenger said to have a quick temper which often got him in trouble. But he had a way of understanding and treating with the Indians that made him a valuable member of the colony. In this suit, the Court fined Hopkins five pounds and ordered him to pay forty shillings to the plaintiff.

The early laws of the colony required permission of the magistrates before any person was allowed to live alone or keep house or plant for himself. In 1636 pursuant to this law "John Tisdale upon good report made of him and his good carryage is allowed to keep house and plant for himself provided he shall continue his carryage still." In 1637 John had a grant of 10 acres at Green Harbor path, had land at Hounds ditch, and at Namasakeeset in Duxbury where Miles Standish, Edward Winslow, and John Alden had settled.

In his suit against Stephen Hopkins, John was designated "yeoman" or farmer. In September 1642 the General Court admitted him a "freeman," a position secured only by attachment to the church and by a very exemplary life. It gave him standing in the community and a place in the town meeting. About this time he must have been married.

John married Sarah Walker who came to Plymouth in the barque "Elizabeth" in 1635. She and her brother James were listed in the ship's manifests as "servants of John Browne, baker, and William Bracy, linen draper." John Browne was Sarah's uncle and she and her 15-year old brother were in his care. John Browne and James Walker settled at Taunton. The widow Walker, Sarah's and James' mother came to America with her other three sons a few years later and settled at Rehobeth. After their marriage, Sarah and John Tisdale lived first at Marshfield then Duxbury where their three sons John, James, and Joshua and their first daughter Elizabeth were born. Perhaps this daughter was named for the ship that brought her mother across the ocean. Three daughters and the youngest son Joseph, were born after the family moved to Taunton.

Government in the Plymouth Plantation was uncomplicated and direct with every freeman accepting his responsibilities. Town meetings and a constable governed local affairs and Representatives were sent to the General Court which considered affairs of the whole Plymouth Plantation. The office of Constable was one of great responsibility and honor in colonial times for it involved enforcing the laws. The most respectable and trustworthy persons were chosen for this office. John Tisdale was Constable in Duxbury in 1645 and served as Constable of Taunton in 1655 and 1659. He was a Selectman in 1650, 1658, and 1672 -'74. He was the Taunton Representative to the General Court in 1674-'75.

In 1643 more land was needed and a tract of land about twenty-five miles west of Plymouth was purchased from the Indian sachem Massasoit by persons from Plymouth who divided the land and drew lots for it. John Tisdale was the purchaser of lot 23. He sold his land in Duxbury and moved his family to Taunton. He built his home on the east side of the Great River at Assonet, about three and one-half miles from Taunton Green, and bordering what is now Berkley. Above the site rose Mount Hope, the home of the Indian known as King Philip.

The Old Colony records show that John Tisdale served as a Grand Juryman 11 May 1650 on the following case: "Thos Cook, aged about twenty, late of Ipswich, traveling toward Equednyy [now Newport, R.I.] accompanied by a youth about twelve years of age, both of them lodging at the ordinary att Taunton the 5 day of May 1650 and upon the 10 10th day of the same month the body of the aforesaid Thos Cooke was found dead in the river about six miles from the town Whereupon a jury of twelve men was impannelled to inquire how and on what means became ye untimely death. The names of the jury are hereunto expressed:

Henry Andrews, foreman of the jury

William Porter
Prevent Williams
John Dean
Walter Dean
Hezekiah Love
Thos Linkon "

Richard Stacy
James Bobbitt
John Tisdall
Anthony Slocum
Nathaniel Woodward

The eleventh day of May the jury brought in their verdict. "Ye youth by the advise of the said Thos Cooke did take a cannowe without the knowledge of the owner thereof and making hast away lest he be perceived did stand in the end of the Cannowe to paddle away and did fall into the river and so by accident was drowned and came to his end. Henry Andrews, foreman"

When the North Purchase was obtained from King Philip in 1663, John Tisdale, Sr., and John Tisdale, Jr. were listed among the buyers. Again, in 1672, the Tisdales were among the buyers of the South Purchase this time, John Sr., John Jr., and James Tisdale.

John Browne, who had brought Sarah Walker to New England, deeded a house in Taunton in which he had lived to John Tisdale in 1655. This house is probably the one John gave to his son John, Jr., when he married Hannah Rogers in 1664. When James married Mary Avery in 1666, a house was built for him on some of John's land east of the Great River. When Sarah and Elizabeth married they were given dowries. Grandchildren came to gladden the hearts of John and Sarah in these busy years.

Taunton records show that John Tisdale on a voyage to Rehobeth on 4 June 1668 "did use the countreys stock of powder". Did Sarah go with him on this trip to visit her mother?

In October 1670, Ensign Leonard and John Tisdale, Sr. were appointed a committee to see to the execution of the Court order prohibiting the transportation of planks, boards, bolts, or bark out of the area. These items were in such great demand in the West India trade that they brought high prices, but were needed for homes in Taunton.

During the years 1642 to 1673 many preparations for war were made in anticipation of trouble, not only from the Indians but from the Dutch as well. Plymouth, Marshfield, and Duxbury joined forces in 1643 and John Tisdale's name is on a list of "Those able to beer armes in Duxburrow." On the whole, however, these were years of peace, but with the death of Massasoit, troubles with the Indians increased. As early as 1670, King Philip, who had been friendly, was secretly plotting against and bitterly complaining of the spread of the settlements. On 8 July 1671 at a council meeting held in Plymouth, it was "agreed that a hundred men should be pressed out of the several townes of this jurisdiction to be in readiness at Plymouth on the morning of the 7th of August next to go forth on the said expedition under the command of Major Josiah Winslow* * * It is also agreed that forty of our trustiest Indians should also be promised to be in readiness to go forth to be helpful in said enterprise. The eight day of August next to be the time of setting forth: on which day the towns of Taunton, Rehobeth, Bridgewater, and Swansey are to cause their soldiers that are to be sent forth to give meeting to the major and the rest of the company at or near Assonett, about John Tisdale's farm."

The expedition did not "go forth" but was abandoned 24 July 1671 after Philip consented to a conference which was held in the church at Taunton. Philip denied any hostile designs against the English but John Bradford proved his statements false. Chagrined by exposure of his

And I give to my grandchild John Tisdall the thirty acres of land that was layed out to mee on the south east syde of Apes meddow and the remainder of my estate I leave wholly to my wife as my sole executrix."

The will was not signed nor dated. James Walker brought it to the attention of the Court and these notations are attached to it:

"This is a true copy of the last will and Testament of John Tisdall Sen^{r} whoe is deceased.

Mr. James Walker, Sen^{r} produced this writing unto the Court at Plymouth the second of November 1676: and made oath that to the best of his knowledge and remembrance that which is written above is the purport and substance of the will and mind of John Tisdall, Sen^{r} deceased concerning the disposal of his estate.

Attested per me
Nathaniel Morton, Sec'y

"The inventory of the estate of John Tisdall, Senior, of Taunton deceased exhibited to the Court of His Majesty held at Plymouth the 2nd of November 1676, on the oathes of John Tisdall and Joshua Tisdall

	£	s.	d.
four oxen	17	00	00
a cart, a pair of wheels, and 3 yoaks with the irons	4	0	00
4 calves and 3 yearlings	5	0	00
6 swine and three little pigs	4	06	00
1 steer and 2 two-year old heiffers	5	0	0
6 kine	17	0	0
1 brass kettle and a brass skillett			
1 feather bed and 2 pairs of sheets, 3 blankets			
2 bolsters. 2 feather pillows, 1 rugg and a towell			
1 chamber pott, a platter, a porringer and 2 spoons		6	00
1 chamber pott more, an apple roaster, an Indian bagg		2	06
1 pair of loomes and what belongs to them	1	00	00
1 tub, 1 paile and other timber ware		16	00
4 borriers		4	00
3 glass bottles, pound and quarter wool, 1 small bar iron			
2 guns and his wearing apparel	4	16	00
8 yards bed tisking, table napkins and pillow beares	2	12	00
2 board clothes		5	00
2 beds, bolsters and ropes	3	17	00

	£	s.	d.
Woolen yarn and a pair of Stilliyards	2	01	00
3 hoes		5	00
6 platters and other small pewter	2	5	00
1 iron skillet, 2 brass pans		14	00
1 brass kettle, 1 iron pott and pott hooks	1	4	00
1 copper, liron pott and a sieve	1	4	00
2 barrell and a paile and a butter tub			
An axe, one pair andirons and a spitt	1	5	00
1 frying pan, 2 plow chains, and 1 log chain	1	4	00
2 shares and coutters		14	00
3 paire of pitch forks and a warming pan		6	05
4 seins, and boughs & pole rings		13	00
1 horse and saddle	2	5	00
4 sheep and beef the country had for soldiers	3	4	00
2 hydes	1	0	00
Debts owing him by others	8	0	00
3 spinning wheels		10	00
His share in the iron works	20	00	00
1 hyde and 2 bar	1	6	00
Hinges for dores, half of a wheel plow, pot hangers	1	16	00
A barn and other small buildings	20	0	00

October (76)
George Macy
William Witherell

Note: This inventory does not include the lands owned by John Tisdale, Senior.

the settlement of the estate, and his mother's death took their toll. He was buried in the Neck of Land burying ground. An inventory of his estate was made by his wife, John Richmond, William Wetherell, and Samuel Smith. As the eldest son he was entitled to a double share of his father's estate which he had received. Hannah his wife was named administratrix.

On 5 March 1677 old style (15 March 1678 new style of dating) the following inventory of the estate was presented to the Court: (values of items have been omitted)

The real estate included: "16 acrees on the west of the highway with the house and barne & orchyard: 6 acrees of improved land on the east syde of the highway; a prsell of meddow called the Great Meddow; about 100 acrees of Dormont land; and another purchase of land; 22 acrees of land Called the 22 acree Devision; a purchase Right in Townes Commons."

The livestock included: "one yoake of oxen; 7 cows; 3 three-year old steers; 2 two-year old cattle; 3 yearlings, one mare and a colt;2 two-year old horse kind & 4 swine."

Tools were:"working tools and ould cart and iron-bound wheels; 2 plows, 2 chains on an old yoake and a pair of horse traces; 2 rings; 2 wedges, 4 axes; 2 chisels; 1 drawing knife, 1 sword, 1 band saw, 1 broad axe; 1 scythe and 2 pitchforks."

Household items were: "2 flocke beds with their appurtenances, 7 sheets 14 table napkins 3 pillow cases; a feather bed with all appurtenances belonging to it; 7 yards of cotton cloth and linen; wearing apparel and a parcel of cloth in the loom; 2 brass kettles 2 brass pans 2 brass skillets; a hand skimmer and a ladle and warming pan; for pewter--4 platters 2 basons, 1 small platter; 6 porringers and a quart pot and bottle and sucking bottle; a pair of tongs & bellows and an iron pot; 8 spoons and some wooden dishes and trenchers; 2 chamber pots and 1 cullender 3 glass bottles; 2 chests 1 box 2 sieves, 3 bedsteads & 1 table; for arms and musket 1 sword powder and belt; leather to make shoes."

The whole estate less debts amounted to 368 pounds 17 shillings. "It is ordered by the Court that the woman shall have her thirds of the lands in the Lands where the house barne and orchyard is with so much land as Comes to her thirds which is 96.6.8 and the thirds of the p^{r}sonall estate is 59.19.10 * * * and the Court hath graunted her 40 pounds towards bringing up the Children* * * the Court also hath graunted that if the widdow shall be nessesitie of more for the bringing up of the children: then shee shall have more: and that the Remainder of the lands which is 198 pounds 13 shillings 4 pence Which being Devided into five p^{r}tes * * * and the son shall have a Double p^{r}te of all the estate both personall and Reall: and that the heire shall have the libertie to pay all or any of his sisters theire portions: and keep theire p^{r}te of lands."

When Hannah was left a widow she had four small children: Abigail, age ten years; John, age eight; Anna, age five; and Remember, age eighteen months. As was the custom in the colony at that time, she soon married Thomas Terry, who was born about 1631 and died in 1691. Hannah and Thomas had three sons: Thomas, born before 1679; Benjamin, born in 1683; and John, born in 1684. They also had a daughter Lydia Terry who married Benjamin Jones on 18 February 1720 and had eleven children. In the will of his father Thomas Terry is said to be " not of sound mind" and is to have a guardian.

MEET THE TISDALES

Descendants of John Tisdale
Of Taunton, Mass.
1634-1980

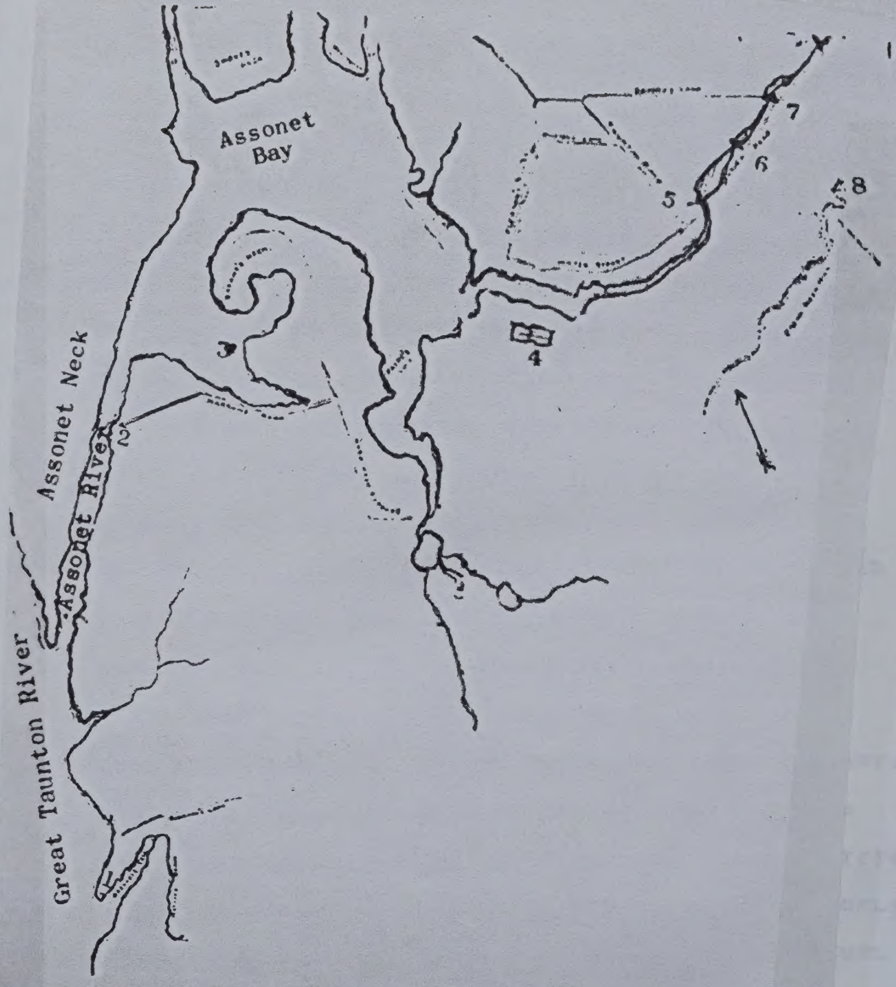
BY
ROSA D. TISDALE

This says Tisdale arms
(of Rpsn ?) were —
not copied – see Crest

Shown similar —
Compare to:

Gen Armory Teasdale
Az, a thistle ppr btwn
3 pheons ~~Argent~~
Crest: An arm in armour

INC.
1981


Assonet Bay
Assonet Neck
Assonet River
Great Taunton River
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8

MAP OF ASSONET RIVER and vicinity

1. Winslow Point
2. Hathaway's wharf
3. Shepard's Cove
4. Cemetery
5. Tisdale's dam and pond
6. Porter's dam and pond
7. Winslow's dam and pond
8. Joshua's Mountain

Pages from Genealogy of Colonel Israel Tisdale
and His Descendants
by Edith Francena Tisdale (1909)

Re: Sarah Walker's family (sister of Philip Walker)

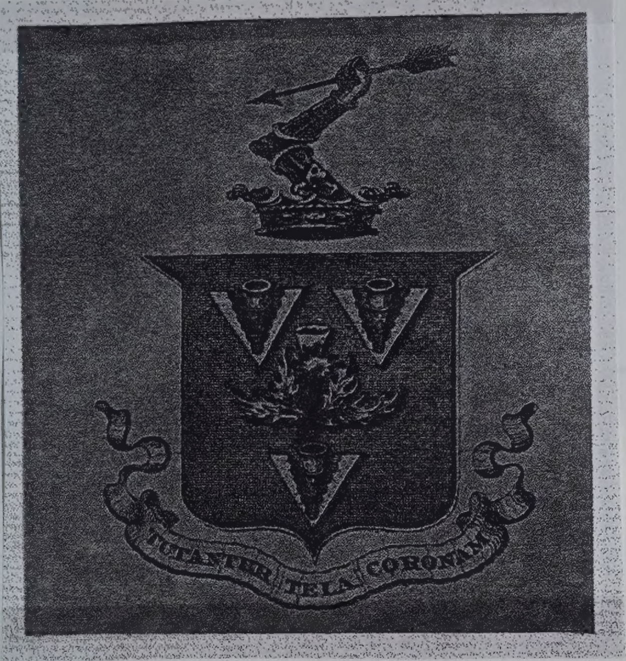
ARMS

Crest, out of a ducal coronet, or, an armed arm erect, holding in the hand an arrow, all ppr.

Motto — Tutantur tela coronam. (Weapons guard a crown.)

NOTE.— Lest others may have as little knowledge of heraldry as the compiler, the following definitions of abbreviations used in the foregoing descriptions are appended:

Ar. Silver, or white.
The *fess* is formed by two horizontal lines drawn across the field, comprising the central third part of the escutcheon, emblematic of a military girdle.
Pheon. The head of dart or arrow.
Az. Blue.
Couped. Term used when the head or limb of an animal, or when any other charge, is cut off by an even line.
Sa. Sable, black; depicted by cross lines, horizontal or perpendicular.
Or, Gold, or yellow.
Ppr. Proper; applicable to every animal, tree, vegetable, etc., when borne of the natural color.



FIRST GENERATION

Tradition has brought the first settler of the name in America from the town of Wales, in England, but no authentic record of the fact is known to exist. In 1854 an effort was made to ascertain the origin of the Tisdales in England, and for this purpose the aid of H. A. Somerby, an American gentleman long resident in Great Britain and a thorough-going antiquarian, was invoked. He found in Ripon, Yorkshire, a record of the baptism of John, son of Thomas and Ruth Tisdale, November 7, 1614, and this John is thought to be progenitor of the American name.

The precise date of John Tisdale's immigration to the Old Colony is not known, nor in what ship he arrived; but it is supposed to have been in 1636 or 1637. He first settled in Duxbury, or Marshfield, where he had a grant of ten acres at Green Harbor path; he also owned land at Hound's ditch and Namasakeeset, the sale of which to William Brett, in 1657, is duly noted in the colonial records. He was one of the twenty-six original purchasers of Freetown, and received the twenty-third lot, upon which a part of Assonet Village is located, and also possessed considerable land in Taunton.

In 1643 Plymouth, Duxbury and Marshfield combined in the organization of a military company, and John Tisdale's name appears in a "list of those able to beer arms in New Plymouth," under "Duxborrow, 1643."

In 1645 he was elected constable of Duxbury and held the office for several years. In Emery's "History of Taunton" we read that "the office of constable was one of great responsibility and honor in colonial times as representing the civil government and being the chief exponent of law. The most respectable and trustworthy persons were chosen to fill this office."

About 1650 John Tisdale removed to Taunton. Here he held some public offices: May 11, 1656, he was one of a coroner's jury of twelve men on a case reported in the old colonial records; a selectman in 1650 (?) and 1658; constable in 1655–1659; Representative to Plymouth General Court in 1674–1675; and seems to have been a person of no little importance in the community.

His home in Taunton was on the east side of Great River, some three and a half miles from "the Green," bordering upon what is now the northern boundary of the town of Berkeley, and overlooked Mount Hope, the home of King Philip. He incurred the displeasure of the Indians by his hearty espousal of every course of the English to keep them in subjection. As early as 1671, four years before the "Great War," his house was a rendezvous for the English troops and was thus in constant peril, and when the war came, in 1675, his property was destroyed and himself murdered. This is substantiated by the old colonial records: "John Tisdale was killed by Indians June 27, 1675."

John Tisdale married Sarah Walker, who came from London in the barque *Elizabeth.* She was the daughter of "Widow Walker," of Rehoboth. She was seventeen years of age when she reached America in 1635, and died in 1676. Children:

JOHN, b. about 1642.
JAMES, b. about 1644.
JOSHUA, b. about 1646.
ELIZABETH, date of birth unknown.
ABIGAIL, date of birth unknown.
SARAH, date of birth unknown.
JOSEPH, b. about 1656.
MARY, b. about 1658.

By John Tisdale's will the large real estate was given almost wholly to his sons, but a controversy arose between several of the sons-in-law with reference to the division of the property, which, "1 November, 1676," resulted in decrees of administration being "granted joyntly unto John Tisdale's sons, John, James, Joshua, and Joseph, to administer the estate of John Tisdale, Sr." This was settled in 1677, the eldest son taking a double portion, and the residue being equally divided among the sons and daughters.

WILL OF JOHN TISDALE, SR.

TAUNTON (1675)

I, John Tisdale, Sr., of Taunton, being sick and weak yet of perfect memory, doe dispose of my estate as followeth: —

I give to my eldest son, John Tisdale, all my tract of land on the east side of Taunton River, bound on the south by Meadow Brook, on the north by Stone Bridge Brook, on the west by the Great River and highway and on the common on the east, with the housin that is on it to him and his heirs forever, being six score acres, more or less.

Also to James Tisdale, land on which his house stands and about five acres east of Great River, and four lying by Stone Bridge, and also land called new lot west of Great River (six acres) only the mowing meadow that is in it his mother shall enjoy while she lives, and also my lot at Swansey and my meadow at Sakegegunsett [Segreganset?], and my share in Iron Works after the death of his mother.

Also I give to my son, Joshua Tisdale, my share of land at Assonett and the meadow that appertaineth to it and my two acres of meadow in Assonett lying near John Hathaways house.

Also to my son, Joseph Tisdale, the house I now live in and the housin about it, and the lands and meadows adjoining to it, and the old orchard with the two acres of land that joynes it, and three acres of swamp lying by James Burte's land and my Apes meadows with two acres of land on the west side of it, to him and his heirs forever, but Joseph shall help Joshua to build for him as good a house as that I now live in.

To my daughter Elizabeth 5 pounds.

To my daughter Sarah, 5 pounds, of which she has received 300 of iron. for that there is but 5 shillings due.

To my daughter, Mary, my share in North purchase and my lot at Rumford.

To my daughter, Abigail, my land on north-west side of Three Mile River. To my grandchild, John Tisdale, 30 acres of land on southeast side of Apes Meadow, and the remainder of my estate wholly to my wife as my sole executor.

APPRAISAL OF ESTATE OF JOHN TISDALE, SR.

"The inventory of the estate of John Tisdall, Sr., of Taunton, late deceased, exhibited to the Court of His Majesty hell'd at Plymouth the 2d of November, 1676, on the oaths of John Tisdall and Joshua Tisdall":

		£	s.	d.
Item.	4 oxen	17	0	00
Item.	A cart and a paire of wheeles and three yoaks with the irons	4	0	00
Item.	6 Swine and three Little piggs	4	6	00
Item.	4 Calves and three yearlings	5	0	00
Item.	1 Steer and 2 two-year-old heiffers	5	0	00
Item.	6 Kine	17	0	00
Item.	Brass Kettle and a Brass skillett 1 feather bed and 2 paire of sheets, 3 blankets 2 bolsters, 2 feather pillows 1 Rugg and a towell	ton		
Item.	1 Chamber pott and a platter and a porringer and two spoons	0	6	00
Item.	1 Chamber pott more, an apple roaster and an Indian bagg	0	2	06
Item.	1 paire of loomes and what belongs to them	1	0	00
Item.	1 tubb, 1 paile and other timber ware	0	16	00
Item.	4 borers [supposed borers or augers]	0	4	00
Item.	3 glass bottles and pound and a quarter of wool, 1 small bar iron			
Item.	2 Guns and his wearing apparil	4	16	00
Item.	8 Yards of Bedticking and table napkins and pillow beares	2	12	00
Item.	2 board clothes	0	5	00
Item.	2 Beds, bolsters and ropes	3	17	00
Item.	Wollen yarn and a paire of Stilliyards	2	1	00
Item.	3 Hoes		5	00
Item.	6 platters and other small pewter	2	5	9
Item.	1 Iron skillett, two brass pans		14	06
Item.	1 Brass Kettle, 1 Iron Pott and pott hooks	1	4	00
Item.	1 Copper, 1 Iron Pott and a seive	1	4	00
Item.	2 Barrell and a paile and butter tub		7	00
Item.	An axe, one paire of andirons and a spitt	1	5	00
		£.	s.	d.
Item.	1 frying pan, 2 plow chains and a log chain	1	4	00
Item.	2 shares and Coulters		10	00
Item.	3 paire of pitchforks and a warming pan		6	06
Item.	4 seives and troughs and pole rings		13	00
Item.	1 Horse and saddle	2	5	00
Item.	4 sheep and beif the country had for souldiers	3	10	00
Item.	2 hydes	1	0	00
Item.	debts owing to him by others	8	0	00
Item.	3 spinning wheels		10	00
Item.	his share in the Iron Works	20	0	00
Item.	1 hyde and a bar	1	6	00
Item.	hinges for dores and half of a wheel plow and pot hangers	1	16	00
Item.	A barn and other small buildings	20	0	00

October (76)

George Macy
William Wetherell

	Debts owing from the estate:	£	s.	d.
Item.	to rate for souldiers wages	9	0	00
Item.	To things found out since the aforenamed particulars, as horse traces, a cross cut saw, and old harrow, and old cheese press, one-half an hundred of cedar boards, and a part of a chain.			

The lands of John Tisdall deceased:

Item. meddow land, plowed land, pasture land where his house was, eighteen acres.

Item. 20 more at the Three Mile River and 2 acres of meddow.

Item. his part in the North Purchase.

Item. His part of the late purchase down the Great river.

Item. seaven more below his house lying upon the great river.

Item. more meddow and upland, 6 acres.

Item. his lands at assonett which is well known.

Item. three acres of meddow that hee bought, being at the foot of it (three more neare unto that, his right in meadow).

[Here the record is missing.]

JOHN, Jr., eldest son of John and Sarah (Walker) Tisdale, was born in Duxbury about 1642, and died December, 1677. Like his father, he was interested in town affairs, and probably held some minor offices. He married, November 23, 1664, Anna [or Hannah], daughter of John Rogers of Plymouth and Taunton, and granddaughter of Thomas Rogers of the *Mayflower*. The ancient record reads: "John Tisdell, Jr., m. Hana Roggers of Ducksberry Nov. 23, 1664." Children:

Abigail, b. July 15, 1667; m., December 2, 1685, William Makepeace.

John, b. August 10, 1669; d. January 26, 1728; m., 1700, Deborah, daughter of Thomas Dean. She was born about 1675 and died 1703 [or 4]. One child, *John*, b. 1702.

Anna, b. January 27, 1672; m., July 4, 1695, Hon. George Leonard, son of Thomas Leonard.

Remember, b. July 8, 1675.

JAMES, son of John and Sarah (Walker) Tisdale, was born in Duxbury, 1644, and died January 15, 1715. He married, November 5, 1666, Mary Avery, who died September 9, 1713, aged 66 years. Children:

James, b. about 1670; d. May 3, 1727; m., 1700, Abigail Coleman; moved to Lebanon, Conn., where she died November 18, 1726. His second wife was Mindwell ——.

Mary, b. 1672; m. Richard Hoskins of Taunton.

Martha, b. 1674; m. John Hodges of Norton.

Margaret, b. 1675; m. Josiah Winslow of Taunton.

Sarah, b. 1677; m. John Johnson of Connecticut.

Ebenezer, b. 1682; d. November 11, 1705.

JOSHUA, son of John and Sarah (Walker) Tisdale, was born in Duxbury in 1646, and died in Freetown in 1718. He married, July 5, 1688, Abigail, daughter of Henry Andrews. Children:

Joshua, b. April 1, 1689.

Samuel, b. March 3, 1691; d. 1769; m., January 30, 1724 [or 5], Mary Church of Little Compton, R.I. Children:

- *Samuel*, b. June 22, 1727.
- *Mary*, b. January 7, 1729.
- *Deborah*, b. February 16, 1730.
- *Sarah*, b. February 22, 1732.
- *Abigail*, b. December 19, 1738.
- *Rebecca*, b. November 24, 1742.

Elizabeth, b. June 2, 1693; m. George Winslow, son of Job and Ruth Winslow.

Hepzibah, b. March 19, 1695.

Abigail, b. April 11, 1697.

Henry, b. May 17, 1699; m., October 24, 1728, Elizabeth Billings of Little Compton, R. I.

Mary, b. 1701.

Barnabas, b. 1703.

Ephraim, b. 1707.

ELIZABETH, daughter of John and Sarah (Walker) Tisdale, was born in Duxbury, date unknown; married John Smith.

ABIGAIL, daughter of John and Sarah (Walker) Tisdale, was born in Taunton, date unknown, and married, February 1, 1683, Edward Bobit [or Babbitt]. Only two sons have been found, though there may be other children:

Seth, date of birth unknown; m. Sarah Cooper.

Nathan, b. 1694; removed to Norton; m. Mary Snell [or Snellum]; d. February 25, 1759. Eight children.

SARAH, daughter of John and Sarah (Walker) Tisdale, was born in Taunton, date unknown; married James Dean.

JOSEPH, fourth and youngest son of John and Sarah (Walker) Tisdale, and great-great-grandfather of Col. Israel Tisdale, was born in Taunton in 1656, and died in 1721. He was apparently a favorite with his father, who bequeathed to him the homestead. He is said to have been a man of large possessions, and, in 1705, was Representative to the General Court in Boston. August 16, 1681, he married Mary, daughter of Major Thomas Leonard of Taunton. Major Leonard was a distinguished man of his day, and in civil and religious matters exercised commanding influence in Taunton.

After Joseph Tisdale's death his widow removed to Bridgewater, residing with her daughter Abigail until her death, in 1726. Children:

Joseph, b. 1682.

Elkanah, b. 1684; d. in middle life.

Mary, b. 1686.

Hannah, b. 1688.

Sarah, b. 1690.

Abigail, b. 1692.

Elizabeth, b. 1694.

MARY, youngest daughter of John and Sarah (Walker) Tisdale, was born in Taunton, in 1658, and died May 18, 1731. January 9, 1676 [or 7], she married Nathaniel French. A daughter, Sarah, was born October 4, 1680.

Ancestral Lines Revised
by Carl Boyer III (1981) WI JKS# 569 B73 } → pages 127-9

Pages 213-4 "Ancestral Lines" - Boyer (unchanged in new book)

§ § §

WALKER OF REHOBOTH

The family name is thought to come from a person whose occupation involved walking, perhaps a fuller or an inspector of forests.

1. (unknown)[1] WALKER, who died no doubt in England, was the progenitor of the Rehoboth family of the name.

He married a lady known only as the "Widow Walker," who was apparently a sister of John[1] Browne, Plymouth Colony Assistant (q.v.), who mentioned his "cousin John Tisdill" (Tisdale, q.v.) in his will. She lived in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony.

She apparently came to Plymouth after her children, who embarked from London on the *Elizabeth* in April 1635: "James Walker 15 yers & Sarra Walker 17 yers: Serv^{t}'s to Jon Browne a Baker & to on[e] W^{m} Brasey linen drap in Cheapside Lond p Cert. of their Conformity." John Browne, aged 40, was on the same ship, which perhaps docked at Hingham, Massachusetts.

The Widow Walker is listed among those who in 1643 gave the value of their estates for a pro rata distribution of lands in Rehoboth; her estate being valued at £50. Her name appears on the records as late as 18 Feb. 1646/7. She had been among the first to settle in Rehoboth, with land in Seekonk.

Children, born in England:

- * i. Sarah[2], b. *ca.* 1618; m. John[1] Tisdale.
- ii. James, b. *ca.* 1620; d. Taunton 18 Feb. 1691/2, aged 73; m. (1) Elizabeth[2] Phillips, dau. of William, m. (2) Sarah (Richmond) Rew, widow of Edward Rew and dau. of John Richmond [Walker].
- iii. Philip, b. *ca.* 1628; bur. Rehoboth 21 August 1679; m. prob. at Dedham, Mass., *ca.* 1654 Jane[2] Metcalf [Bowen, 3:27].

§ § §

BROWN OF PLYMOUTH AND WANNAMOISETT

As might be imagined, the genealogy of the Brown families of Bristol Counties, Massachusetts and Rhode Island, present some complex problems. While the second Brown line, below, is supposed to be linked to the first, according to the genealogy of the Bosworth family and to *The Carpenter Memorial*, the precise relationship has not been proven.

Mr. John[1] Browne, Gentleman, and his descendants have been the subject of research published by the compiler in 1973 under the title, *Bristol Browns*, and in a new edition, in 1980, as part of volume one of *New England Colonial Families*. The section below is an abridgement of that text, in which will be found all references.

✓ 1. Mr. JOHN[1] BROWNE, Gentleman, was born in England, perhaps about 1580. He died in Swanzey, then a part of Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, 10 April 1662. His will, dated 7 April 1662, was proved twelve days later.

His wife Dorothy, alleged without proof to be a Beauchamp, died in Swansea 29 Jan. 1673/4, aged 90 years.

According to Nathaniel Morton's *New England Memoriall*, published in 1669, he traveled in the Low Countries and became friendly with John Robinson, pastor of the Pilgrim church at Leyden, Holland. Apparently he made his first trip to America aboard the *Lyon*, William Pierce, Master, in 1631, leaving from London on the 22nd of June and arriving in Boston twelve weeks later, with wife Dorothy and Mary, John, James and William Browne. John Browne, "aged 40," sailed from England on board the *Elizabeth* with William Stagg as the Master, under a certificate of conformity dated 17 April 1635 with James Walker, 15, and Sarah Walker, 17. There is strong probability that the Walkers were relatives to Mr. John[1] Browne, but the John Browne on board the *Elizabeth* may have been another person altogether, having been board about 1595? and having been listed as a baker. Mr. John[1] Browne was a shipbuilder in Plymouth Colony at least as early as 1647.

He was chosen one of the Assistants to the Governor of Plymouth Colony in Jan. 1635/6 and was elected again each year for nineteen years with the exception of 1646. By 1639 he had moved to Cohannet, with Capt. Miles Standish and others, and he was a proprietor there when it was incorporated as the town of Taunton.

He was a friend of Massasoit, the chief of the Wampanoag Indians, and as a result his son James had his life spared during King Philip's War in the 1670s by Massasoit's heir. As John Browne was the representative of Plymouth in frequent dealings with the Indians, he served with Edward Winslow to negotiate the purchase of the lands comprising the present towns of Seekonk, Rehoboth, East Providence and Pawtucket.

As well as serving with the colonial leaders as an Assistant, he was a member of the Council of War in 1642, 1646 and 1653, and Commissioner of the United Colonies of New England from 1644 to 1656, serving longer than any other. In 1643 he was an incorporator of the town of Rehoboth, and he served there as Townsman in 1645-1646 and 1650-1651. He was one of the wealthier men in town, and had extensive interests in the New Netherlands as well. In 1645 he helped preserve Plymouth Colony's jurisdiction in his area from an encroachment attempted by the Massachusetts Bay Colony with the 540 —

- continued on reverse -

This speculation may sound silly later on if we learn more - but since R.L. Bowen in "Early Rehoboth" made such an issue about Deacon Philip Walker's phonetic spelling, saying it sounded Scottish - does the underlined hold any clue? Tisdale married Philip's sister, and became a protegee of her Uncle John Browne. A Yorkshire accent might sound sort of Scottish - could the families have met in the Old Country? - Only a thought.

Ancestral Lines - Carl Boyer Pages 234-5

TISDALE

Many early residents of Taunton, Massachusetts, came there from Taunton, England, or the vicinity in Somerset or Devonshire. However, John[1] Tisdale was a late arrival in 1651, and a manuscript Tisdale genealogy by Samuel Tisdale, written in 1851, in the Old Colony Historical Society, Taunton, states he was baptized in Ripon, Yorkshire, 7 Nov. 1614, son of Thomas and Ruth Tisdale. This allegation has not been checked, but could be at the Society of Genealogists Library in London, or at the Yorkshire Parish Register Society.

1. JOHN[1] TISDALE, born apparently in England about 1614, was "killed by the Indians, the 27th June 1675" [Bowen, 3: 65n; *vide* Plymouth Colony Records, 8:69], according to Shadrach Wilbore, Taunton Town Clerk. His gun was recovered from the Indians at Rehoboth on 1 August 1675 [Bowen, 1:85]. This was early in King Philip's War.

He married Sarah[2] Walker*, who died in Dec. 1676 [E. H. Reed, *NEHGR*, 17:236].

He was first of record in Plymouth Colony on 7 June 1636, when he brought suit against Stephen Hopkins, *Mayflower* passenger and Assistant, for battery, by which he was "dangerously wounded" [Walker]. Hopkins was fined £5. and ordered to pay 40/- to the plaintiff [M. T. Savage]. On 2 Oct. 1637 he was granted ten acres in Duxbury, where he was freeman on 7 March 1642/3, and constable from 4 June 1645, for one year. He owned land (lot 23) now described as east of Assonet Station in Assonet Village, where his son Joshua settled. The high profile rock there is called the "old man of Joshua's Mountain" [Bowen; *ibid.*].

He bought the land in Taunton on 26 Dec. 1651, in a part of the town which is now Berkley, Mass. In 1653 he was fined 20/- for "appraising a substitute cow" [Waterman, 331]. He was chosen constable on 8 June 1655 and 7 June 1659 for one year terms, and served as selectman from 1672 to 1675. On 28 Dec. 1659 he was assessed taxes of £1.10s. 10d. for nine people on eighty-two acres, the fifth highest assessment of forty-seven [Bowen, 1:19]. On 1 Nov. 1667 he and other owners of "a Certaine Necke of land knowne by the name of Mattapoiset" sold it to William Brenton for £35. He was Deputy to the Plymouth General Court for the term which began 3 June 1674.

A letter of administration was granted 1 Nov. 1675. On 9 July 1689 John[2] Tisdale, Sr., John, Jr., and James were listed in Major William Bradford's quitclaim deed to Taunton.

Children, first four born in Duxbury, and the remainder born in Taunton, order uncertain:

i. John[2], d. Dec. 1677; m. Taunton 23 Nov. 1664 Hannah Rogers, daughter of John Rogers of Duxbury.
2. ii. James, b. 1644; d. 15 Jan. 1715, aged 71; m. 5 Nov. 1666 Mary[2] Avery.
iii. Joshua, b. 1646; d. Freetown, Mass., 1718, aged 72; m. Taunton 5 July 1688 Abigail[2] Andrews.
iv. Elizabeth, m. John Smith.
v. Sarah, m. James Dean.
3. vi. Joseph, b. 1656; d. 1722; m. August 1681 Mary[3] Leonard.
vii. Mary, d. 1711; m. Taunton 9 Jan. 1676/7 Nathaniel French [E. H. Reed, 17:34].
viii. Abigail, b. 1659, ward of James[2] Browne in 1677; d. perhaps 1749; m. Taunton 1 Feb. 1683/4 Edward Bobit (or Babbitt) [Reed, 17:37].

(she was orphaned age 16/17)

2. JAMES[2] TISDALE, born in Duxbury, Plymouth Colony, probably in 1644, died in Taunton, Massachusetts, 15 Jan. 1715, aged 71.

He married in Dedham, Mass., 5 Nov. 1666, Mary[2] Avery*, who died in Middleborough, in that part which is now Lakeville, Mass., 9 Sept. 1713, aged 66, according to Benton [*Reed-Edgerton*, 38]. Middleboro, as it is spelled today, was not, however, incorporated as a town before 1800, nor was Berkley incorporated until 1735, although it is referred to in some sources as existing earlier. Most likely the entire region was within the early boundaries of Taunton.

From - "Ancestral Lines Revised" by Carl Boyer III port of one Richard Wright of the town.

On 29 Oct. 1645 the town meeting voted that he should undertake to buy Wannamoisett (now East Providence and Barrington, R. I.) from the Indians for £15. worth in commodities with the provision that the Indians would move from the land and John Browne would retain title to it. He settled there permanently.

He represented Plymouth Colony's opposition to placing Roger Williams' charter in effect in Rhode Island while on a trip to Providence, and then went to Shawomet to support the followers of Samuel Gorton against interference from twenty Massachusetts Bay families. He was a liberal concerning religion, to the extent that his was the first magistrate's voice to offer the opinion that support of the church should not come from taxes. In 1665 he pledged his own property as a bond that the church could be supported from voluntary contributions. Yet he "persecuted" his son James for becoming a Baptist, and sued the Reverend Mr. Samuel Newman of the Church of Christ as a result of slander, for which he was awarded the handsome sum of £100., which he then refused to take.

Various records mention his shipyard, which was probably in Bullock's Cove, and numerous dealings in land. He was a member of the highest class, and his son-in-law, Mr. Thomas Willett, who had come to New England also on the *Lyon* in 1631, became in 1664 the first English mayor of the City of New York.

The Clarendon Papers at the Bodleian Library, Oxford University, reveal that the reason he left public service in Plymouth Colony in 1656 was that he returned to England in the service of the Vane family as steward of their properties while Sir Henry Vane was imprisoned by Cromwell, the dictator of England. Upon the Restoration in 1660, when Charles II returned to the throne, Mr. Browne sailed to his home in Wannamoisett. Apparently he had spent some of the time in England at Raby Castle in Durham. That is not far from Scotland!

When he died of fever he was buried in Little Neck Cemetery at the head of Bullock's Cove in Wannamoisett. In his will he left 1700 acres of Narragansett lands to the children of his son John, who had died ten days before he did, and he was able to leave a large estate valued at £665.1s.2d., but including only 6/- in cash!

Children, probably born in England:

i. John^2, d. 31 March 1662; m. (1) unknown, m. (2) *circa* 1660 Lydia^2 Buckland.

2. ii. James, d. Swansea, Mass., 29 Sept. 1710; m. 1654 Lydia^2 Howland.

iii. Mary, d. 6 Jan. 16--, bur. Little Neck; m. 6 July 1656 Capt. Thomas^1 Willett.

iv. William, possible son, passenger on the *Lyon*, 1631.

2. Mr. JAMES^2 BROWNE, born probably in England about 1623, died in Swansea, Massachusetts, 29 Sept. 1710, aged 87, and was buried in Little Neck Cemetery in what is now Riverside, Rhode Island.

He married about 1654 Lydia^2 Howland*, who was buried with him.

He was in England in 1659 when James Cudworth wrote to him there. Possibly he went to visit his father, although the circumstances are not known. In 1665 he succeeded his brother-in-law, Thomas Willett, who was then Mayor of New York City, as Assistant in Plymouth Colony, which post he held also in 1666 and 1673-1683. He was chosen Deputy from Rehoboth in 1666, and from Swansea in 1669, 1671, and 1683.

For some time he was in the center of controversy over control of the church in Rehoboth, which ranged between Congregationalists and Baptists. On 2 July 1667 he and Mr. Myles, the Baptist minister, were each fined £5. for setting up a public meeting without permission of the General Court, while a Mr. Tanner was fined 20/-. On the 30th of October following the Baptists were given permission to organize the town of Swansea, with a Baptist church under Mr. Myles, the church being the first of that denomination in Massachusetts. Thus while James Browne served, with John Allen and Stephen Payne, Sr., as a Selectman for Rehoboth in 1666-1667, he was next to serve Swansea as grand enquest in 1668. The records of the two towns were mixed for years afterwards.

As Plymouth Colony Assistant and Lieutenant of the Swansea Military Company, James Browne played an important role in King Philip's War. On 14 June 1675 he went to King Philip, then chief of the Wampanoags, with a friendly letter from Governor Winslow, and, finding the Indians hostile, warned the colony of impending war. A member of the tribe, Petonowowett, later said Mr. Browne would have been killed that day had not Philip intervened personally. When the war actually began on Sunday, 20 June 1675, it was son James^3 Brown who took the word to Plymouth. On "Fasting Day," the following Thursday, nine settlers were killed while on their way home from church, and on 18 July fifteen were killed in an ambush. That month Mr. Browne, who was one of the five (of seven) Assistants taking the field during the war, led twelve men from Swansea in pursuit of the Indians across the Seekonk plain, with help from the Mohegans and eleven men from the Mt. Hope garrison under Lt. Nathaniel Thomas. During the war he went to Philip twice but found him "very high and not p'swadable to peace."

His will, dated 25 Oct. 1694, was proved 11 Jan. 1711.

Children, born in Plymouth Colony:

i. James^3, b. Rehoboth 4 or 21 May 1655; d. Barrington, Mass., 15 May 1718; m. 5 June 1676 Margaret^2 Denison.

* ii. Dorothy, b. Swansea 29 August 1666; d. Rehoboth 2 June 1727; m. Swansea 12 Nov. 1690 Joseph^2 Kent, Jr. (son of our ancestor in the Pearce line.)

iii. Jabez, b. Swansea 9 July 1668; d. Barrington, R. I., July 1747; m. (1) Jane, m. (2) 14 Feb. 1740/1 Abijah Wheaton.

§ § §

—Over—

BROWN OF REHOBOTH

The compiler's search for the parentage of Deacon John Brown, Jr. or 2d, Gentleman, has extended over a period of twelve years and has not been successful; however, appropriate deeds bear further study. A complete search of grantor and grantee indices relating to John Browns, with appropriate follow-up, may reveal mention of John Brown's place of birth or previous residence. The research into the deeds done by Charles Delmar Townsend in 1979 is outlined in the text below.

Brown data gleaned from research in other records, during the course of the search for the ancestry of Deacon John Brown, has been published in the compiler's *New England Colonial Families, Volume 1.*

Pioneers of Massachusetts - by Charles H. Pope

TISDALE,

John, yeoman, Duxbury, brought suit in court 7 June, 1636; planter and propr. 5 Nov. 1638, atba. 1643, constable 1645. Of Taunton, Dec. 26, 1651, bought land at Dux. of Wm. Brett.

John, Sen., was killed by the Indians 27 June, 1675. His wife Sarah d. Dec., 1676. His will prob. 2 Nov. 1676, beq. to sons John, James, Joshua and Joseph; gave to daus. Elizabeth, Sarah, Mary and Abigail. The Court made note that the two younger had endangered their lives in protecting the property. [Plym. Col. Rec.] An agreement was made 4 June, 1677, between these four sons and the three sons-in-law, John Smith, James Dean and Nathaniel French.

456

John Tisdale, Sen., above was husband of Philip Walker's sister Sarah Walker.

The John Brown, baker who came on the "Elizabeth" in 1635 bringing Sarah and James Walker - though of the same name as their uncle, apparently was not a relative and the youngsters were not really apprenticed. It appears this was a ruse to fool the authorities for emigration purposes. He did bring them to their real uncle. nz

(all the John Brown(e)s)

BROWN, etc., cont.

John, ae. 40, came in the Elizabeth April 17, 1635. The baker

John, embarked June 22, 1632. Not identified.

John, tailor, ae. 27,, with servants Thomas Hart, ae. 24, and Mary Denny, ae. 24, cert. from Baddow, Essex, came in the Desire in June, 1635. Not identified.

The uncle

✓ Mr. John, gent. In his younger years, travelling in the low countries, he became acquainted with and took a good liking to the church at Leyden. [Mor.] Came therefore to Plymouth; taxed in 1632; frm.; Asst.; one of the comrs. of the United Colonies. Rem. to Rehoboth before 1646. [See Samuel Eddy.] Town officer, deputy, magistrate. Ret. to Eng. before 1659. [Letter of Thos. Mahew to J. Winthrop, Jr.] and became the steward of Sir Harry Vane. Came back to R. about 1661. John B. m. at Plymouth, 26 March, 1634, Phebe Harding. [Ply. Col. Rec.]

He d. in the spring of 1662. [Mor.] Will, dated April 7, 1662. Dau. Mary, wife of Thomas Willett, gr. ch. Martha, wife of John Saffin, gr. ch. John Brown, son of John; gr. ch. Joseph, Nathaniel, Lydia and Hannah B.; son James and wife Dorothy execs. [Reg. VI, 94, and XXXVI, 368. The widow d. at Swansey Jan. 27, 1673, in her 90th year. Her will dated 17 Dec. 1668, prob. 29 March, 1674, beq. to dau. Mary Willett and her ch.; to Sarah, dau. of dau. Sarah Eliot, dec.; to son James and daus.-in-law Lydia and Dorothy B. and their children.

John, mariner, Salem, propr. and memb. chh. 1637; frm. May 2, 1638. Chosen ruling elder 1660. Wrecked on return from Virginia; lost vessel and goods, but arrived at Sal. in 1661. Had new ship built by William Stephens. Ales (Alice) presumed to be his wife, memb. chh. in 1637. Ch. Jonathan, (d. 1667; est. admin. by his father;) John bapt. 16 (7) 1638, Jacob and Samuel bapt. 13 (1) 1641, John bapt. 1 (3) 1642, James bapt. 17 (5) 1642, Joanna bapt. 9 (2) 1643, Eliza bapt. 23 (10) 1643, Eliza bapt. 14 (2) 1644, Nathaniel bapt. 28 (5) 1644.

His will dated 2 Jan. 1683, prob. 24 Nov. 1684, beq. to gr. ch. John and Abiel B.; to 4 ch. of his dec. son James B.; to son-in-law Samuel Gardner, Jr. and his wife.

John, Salem, one of the Assts. of the Mass. Bay Co. in Eng. and one of the Council of Governor John Endecott at the beginning of his term, April 17, 1629. He came in the Talbot; gave bond for return freight 28 Sept., 1629, being sent back with his bro. Samuel for speeches and practice tending to mutiny and faction. See Samuel, below. [Reg. XXXV, 250; Suff. De. 1.]

WALKER, etc., cont.

Nicholas Cowling. Admin. on the est. of N. C. late of Bristol, Eng. was gr. to his sister Susanna W. and her husband I. W. 7 Aug. 1669.

The brother

✓ James, ae. 15, apprentice to John Browne, baker, came in the Elizabeth in April, 1635. Sarah, ae. 17, servant to William Bracey, linen draper, Cheapside, London, came in the same. He settled at Taunton; atba. 1643; juryman, 1643; frm. 4 June, 1650. James, (Walker,) lately married, had letter from Gov. Winslow of Plym. Col. to Gov. Winthrop, as he went to admin. on the est. of his wife's kinsman Samuel Crum, 4 (4) 1646. James W., Jr., m. at Taunton 23 Dec. 1647, Barsheba —. James W., Sen.; his wife Elizabeth d. 30 July, 1678; he m. 4 Nov. 1678, Sarah Rew. He performed a marriage in 1680. [Plym. Col. Rec.]

John, Roxbury, memb. chh. 1633; frm. May 14, 1634. His wife memb. chh. 1633-4. Dorcas W. was bur. April 17, 1640.

John, Hingham, propr. 1636; rem. to Marshfield, atba. 1643; son-in-law of Arthur Howland; called into Court 6 June, 1643. He m. 20 Oct. 1654, Lydia Reid; ch. Lydia b. Sept. 30, 1655, John b. Oct. 26, 1657.

Admin. Dec. 28, 1663; wife Lydia, daus. Lydia, Martha and Mary, under age. [Reg. VI, 187.]

Richard, shoemaker, from Marlborough, Eng., came in the James April 5, 1635.

Richard, ae. 24, came in the Elizabeth April 15, 1635.

Richard, Salem, propr., frm. March 4, 1633-4. Prescis, [Persis or Priscilla,] Salem, memb. chh. 1639; ch. Abraham and Sarah bapt. 6 (10) 1639.

Richard, residence not stated, deposed in the Burnap case in 1653, ae. about 41 years. [Arch. 38 B.]

Richard, Boston, propr., allotment vacated 21 (1) 1636. His wife, Anne, formerly wife of Robert Houlton, was in Court for intemperance 30 (2) 1638.

Richard, gent., Lynn, juryman, 1636, propr. 1638; captain; deputy; planter; surety for Howes of Mattacheeset, 1638. Rem. to Reading; propr. 1644; town officer. Lent money on mortgage to Sir Richard Temple in 1669, and cancelled the bond in 1670. He deposed in 1676, ae. about 65 years. Ch. Tabitha b. 1647. [Mdx. De. I.]

He, (residence not stated,) joined in 1639 with William, Thomas and Robert Talmage, bros. of his late wife Jane, in a letter of attorney for the collection of moneys from the overseers of the will of John Talmage of Newton Stacey in the co. of Southampton, husbandman, the bro. of their father, Thomas Talmage, and from the execs. of the will of their bro. Symon Talmage. [L.]

Capt. Richard W. bur. 16 May, 1687. Admin. of his est. gr. 19 June, 1688, to widow Sarah.

Robert, linen webster, Boston, memb. chh. 1631-2, frm. May 14, 1634; propr.; cowkeeper 1638. Shop-keeper. He deposed April 10, 1679, ae. about 72 years, that he resided with his father in Manchester, co. of Lancaster, Eng. in the year 1623; that he there knew Mr. Henry Sewall and his son Henry who came to Newbury, N. E., they being his overthwart neighbors. [Ess. Court Rec.] Wife Sarah; ch. Elishua b. 14 (12) 1635, (m. Dec. 12, 1660, Benjamin Thurston,) Zacharias b. 15 (7) 1637, John b. 22 (7) 1639, Sarah b. 15 (9) 1641, bur. 19 (10) 1643, Jacob b. 21 (1) 1644, Joseph b. (5) 1646, Thomas and Mary bapt. 22 (2) 1649, ae. about 10 days, Eliakim b. 3 (5) 1652, d. 30 (7) 1654, John d. 22 (5) 1652, Mary b. 1 (9) 1654.

He d. May 29, 1687. Admin. of his est. gr. 17 Aug. 1687, to widow Sarah. The widow d. Dec. 21, 1695. [S.]

Robert, probably error for Augustine, in bapt. rec. of Hannah in Charlestown 27 (7) 1640.

Samuel, Reading, propr. 1643. Rem. to Woburn. With wife adm. chh. about 1650. Town officer. Deposed April 2, 1661, ae. about 44 years. Licensed to sell strong waters in April, 1662. Ch. Samuel b. 28 (7) 1643, Joseph b. 10 (1) 1645, Hannah b. 11 (2) 1647, d. 28 (2) 1648, Israel and Hannah b. 28 (4) 1648, John b. 14 (12) 1649, Benjamin b. June 4, 1652, d. 26 April, 1653.

He d. Nov. 6, 1684. Admin. of his est. was gr. to sons Samuel and Joseph.

N. B. The Samuel of Woburn who m. Ann, widow of Arthur Alger, and had several children, whose widow deeded land in 1702 to sons Isaac and Ezekiel, seems to the writ-

Note - by NZ.

Pope evidently did not include Philip Walker as a "pioneer" because he was of the 2nd generation - nor his mother the "Widow" because [illegible] ? She was one of the original Rehoboth purchasers.

—over—

NEHGR 36:252-3 (July 1881)

Obviously not our John Browne, but an interesting true story.

JOHN AND SAMUEL BROWNE'S APPLICATION TO THE MASSACHUSETTS COMPANY, 1629.

Communicated by WILLIAM B. TRASK, Esq., of Boston.

STUDENTS of early American history are generally conversant, we presume, with the story of the two brothers, John and Samuel Browne, "the lawyer and the merchant," the former being an Assistant, who were joined with other members to be a Council of the Massachusetts plantation or colony, of whom Endicot was confirmed as Governor. Soon after their arrival here, if not previously, differences of an ecclesiastical nature arose. The Brownes and others set up Episcopacy, maintaining views at variance with the two ministers, Skelton and Higginson, who did not "use the book of common prayer," and were non-conformists. "Their speeches and practises tending to mutiny and faction," as it was alleged, "the governor told them, that New England was no place for such as they; and therefore he sent them both back for England, at the return of the ships the same year."

The article here printed settles the question, nearly, as to the time of arrival in England, and gives the name of the vessel in which they sailed.

Mr. Felt (Hist. Salem, i. 66) has fac-similes of the autographs of the two Brownes, "taken from the Colony Records. The termination of the surnames is worn away," he says, "but the deficiency is supplied by the like which precedes, except the final. The document which we print has perfect autographs, and fac-similes of these are here given.

For further information in regard to the Brownes, see the following works: *Suffolk Deeds*, Lib. i., pages xiii., xxii., xxi Young's *Chronicles of Massachusetts*; *Transactions and Collections of the American Antiquarian Society*, iii.; Morton's *Memorial*, 147.

Whereas we John Browne & Samuell Browne haue certayne Chestes & truncks & other goods in the shippe called the Talbott, if we shall haue libertye to take them out of the sayd shippe, we doe hereby promise, that if the Comittee (w^{ch} was appoynted betweene the Company of Massachusetts baye in Newe England & vs the last Court) shall order vs to paye for the fraight of the sayd goodes, then we will paye the sayd fraight vnto the Trer^{u} of the said Company at what tyme y^{t} shalbe appoynted, And likewise if they shall order that we shall paye any thing for o^{r} passage homewards bounde, we will paye the same in like manner what shalbe awarded, in witnes whereof we haue herevnto subscribed o^{r} handes this 28th daye of September 1629

Jo: Browne

Samuell Browne

[Endorsed:] A note of m^{r} Samuell & John Brownes to pay freight for back bownd if it bee agreed so by the Comittee

Genealogy of New England Families
Vol II - by Wm Cutter
R929.3 C991
(18-)

Obsolete -
contains every information

(The Walker Line).

(I) The "Widow Walker" was one of the first proprietors and purchasers of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, now Seekonk, and one of the company who first settled in the town. Her name is recorded there in 1643. Children: James, Sarah, Philip, mentioned below.

(II) Philip Walker married, about 1654, ~~Jane Butterworth, of Rehoboth~~, (or possibly Jane, daughter of Michael Metcalf, of Dedham). In 1659 his occupation was given as weaver. His home farm overlooked the Providence river in Seekonk, and he became one of the wealthiest men in the town. He held various important positions, serving as surveyor in 1657, as constable in 1659, and as selectman for several years between 1666 and 1675; he was deputy to the general court in 1669, and was also a deacon of the church. Children: Samuel, Sarah, Philip, mentioned below; Elizabeth, Mary, Experience, Elizabeth, Michael, Ebenezer, Martha.

(III) Philip (2) Walker, son of Philip (1) Walker, was born in March, 1661-62. He married (first) 1689, Mary Bowen, who died in May, 1694. He married (second) ———, who died in Seekonk, February 6, 1739, aged sixty-seven years. He died February 17, 1739-40. Children by first wife: Ebenezer, James, Philip. By second wife: Sarah, Esther, * Mary, Jane, Nathaniel, mentioned below; Daniel, Stephen.

(IV) Nathaniel Walker, son of Philip (2) Walker, was born January 31, 1703-04, died April 30, 1783. He married, May 11, 1727, Anna Sweeting, daughter of Henry Sweeting. She was born May 1, 1707, died March 23, 1772. He joined the church, March 23, 1733, and held the office of deacon. He was representative to the general court in 1750 and 1751. Children: Nathaniel, mentioned below; Enos, Susanna, Amos, Ephraim, Amos, Esther, Lewis, Benjamin.

(V) Nathaniel (2) Walker, son of Nathaniel (1) Walker, was born September 5, 1728, died March 24, 1814. He was a blacksmith, and lived in North Providence or Pawtucket, Rhode Island. He was admitted to the church September 9, 1764. He married Nabby Smith, of Rehoboth. She was born May 8, 1731, died September 24, 1822. Children: Betsey, Samuel, Susan, Mary, Nathaniel, Abigail, Sally, David, Cynthia, married Cromwell Hill (see Hill VI).

New York Genealogical & Biographical Record (Vol 43) R929.1 N5-3 Pg 190 April 1912

No. 52. (Registration of Pedigree) **WALKER**..............**WILLIAM ISAAC WALKER**

1. ...... **Walker,** a widow, appears in Rehoboth, Mass., as one of the first purchasers and proprietors of that town. Her name is on the list of land owners there in 1643. When she came to this country is not known; nor where she came from; nor is the date or place of her birth known. Her name appears in Rehoboth as late as 1646; after which her name disappears from the record. She appears on the record as "Widow Walker." Nothing is known of her husband.

Res. Rehoboth, Mass.
Children: James, Sarah, Philip, and others.

MB

2. **Philip Walker,** b. ......, at ......; d. ......, buried Aug. 21, 1679, at Rehoboth, Mass.; m. ......, about 1654, at ......, to **Jane** ~~...... (dau. of ...... Butterworth, of Rehob~~oth, or dau. of Michael Metcalf, of Dedham), b. ......, at ......; d. ......, 1702, at Roxbury, Mass. She m. (2) June 2, 1684, to John Polley, of Roxbury, Mass. as his 4th wife

Res. Philip Walker resided at Rehoboth, Mass., where he was a deacon in the church. He was a weaver; constable of Rehoboth in 1658; representative General Court, Massachusetts, 1669; selectman; "the most thrifty man in the town."
Children: 1st m. (Walker), Samuel, Sarah, Philip, Elizabeth, Mary, Experience, Elizabeth, Michael, Ebenezer, Martha. By her 2nd m., none that are known of.

3. **Philip Walker,** b. March .., 1661 (or 1661-2), at Rehoboth, Mass.; d. Feb. 17, 1739-40, in 78th year, at Rehoboth, Mass.; m. (1) Dec. 31, 1687, at Rehoboth, Mass., to **Mary Bowen,** b. ......, at ......; d. ......, buried May 8, 1694, at Rehoboth, Mass.; m. (2) ......, at ......, to **Sarah** ......, b. ......, at ......; d. Feb. 6, 1739, in her 68th year, at ......

Res. Rehoboth, Mass.; admitted to church there April 25, 1697; buried in Seekonk Cemetery, gravestone.
✓ Children: 1st m., Ebenezer, James, Philip; 2nd m., Sarah, Esther, Mary, Jane, Nathaniel, Daniel, Stephen.

4. **Nathaniel Walker,** b. Jan. 31, 1703-4, at Rehoboth, Mass.; d. April 20, 1783, at Rehoboth, Mass.; m. May 11, 1727, at Rehoboth, Mass., to **Anna Sweeting** (dau. of Henry and Martha (......) Sweeting, of Rehoboth), b. May 1, 1707, at Rehoboth, Mass.; d. March 23, 1772, at Rehoboth, Mass.

Res. Rehoboth, Mass.; united with church there March 25, 1733, and was a deacon. Representative to General Court, 1750-51, from Rehoboth.
Children: Nathaniel, Enos, Susanna, Anna, Ephraim, Amos, Esther, Lewis, Benjamin.

5. **Enos Walker,*** b. Dec. 9, 1730, at Rehoboth, Mass.; d. May 3, 1782, at Rehoboth, Mass.; m. Jan. 17 1750-51, at Rehoboth, Mass., to **Patience Peck** (dau. of Nathan and Patience (Carpenter) Peck, of Rehoboth), b. Jan. 5, 1727-8, at Rehoboth, Mass.; d. ......, at ......

Res. Rehoboth, Mass. He was one of the "Minute-men" in Capt. John Perry's Company in Revolutionary War.
Children: Benjamin, Charles Phillips, Enos, Richard, Nathan, Jedidiah, Luis.

6. **Jedidiah Walker,*** b. Aug. 25, 1762, at Rehoboth, Mass.; d. Jan. 19, 1841, at Covington, N. Y.; m. (1) ...... (int. pub. Feb. 1, 1784, at Rehoboth), at ...... (Mendon, Mass., prob.), to **Polly Garnzey** (or **Goss**) (of Mendon, Mass.), b. Feb. 20, 1766, at Mendon, Mass.; d. Oct. 20, 1794, at Rutland, Vt.; m. (2) March 8, 1795, at ......, to **Olive Squire** (prob. dau. of Daniel and Sarah (Tomlin) Squire, of Woodbury, Conn.), b. Nov. 18, 1766, bap. Dec. 27, 1767, at Woodbury, Conn.; d. Oct. 8, 1855, at Covington, N. Y.

Res. Clarendon and Rutland, Vt.; removed in 1817 to Hamilton, N. Y. He enlisted in Capt. Amadowne's Company of Rehoboth, Mass., in the Revolutionary War. He was a carpenter.
Children: 1st m., Nathan, Sylvia, Polly, Henry Goss, Enos, Clarissa; 2nd m., Daniel W., Patience P., Anna N., Olive Emily Mary, Jedidiah S.

NOTE: * Descendants eligible to Revolutionary Societies.

Note:

So much has been written about Walker - Bowen - Tisdale, etc that much has been tossed out as superfluous. James Savage - "Genealogical Dictionary of New England Families" Vol 4 etc; Clarence Almon Torrey - "New England marriages before 1700."; Meredith Colket, "Founders of American Families"; Frank R Holmes, "Directory of Ancestral Heads"; and others, easy to find, only duplicated material in this binder! Also Charles Henry Pope "Pope's Pioneers"; Snow Estes Ancestry pages 400-405, which repeats Walker Memorial, etc.

(duplicate copies)

Walker Genealogy
Considering that this was written way back in 1861, this is amazingly accurate.
"Early Rehoboth" by R.L.Bowen adds fascinating detail

MEMORIAL

OF THE

WALKERS

OF THE

OLD PLYMOUTH COLONY,

EMBRACING

GENEALOGICAL AND BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

OF

JAMES, OF TAUNTON;
PHILIP, OF REHOBOTH;
WILLIAM, OF EASTHAM;
JOHN, OF MARSHFIELD;
THOMAS, OF BRISTOL;

AND OF

THEIR DESCENDANTS,

FROM 1620 TO 1860,

929.273
W151wb

BY

J. B. R. WALKER, A. M.,

MEMBER OF THE OLD COLONY HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

> "Look unto Abraham your father, and unto Sarah that bare you: for I called him alone, and blessed him, and increased him." ISAIAH 51: 2.

WALKER/BROWNE

NORTHAMPTON:
METCALF & COMPANY, PRINTERS.
1861.

GEN

and over the land, yet maintaining their purity, and bearing moral fertility wherever they have gone. The compiler has added a feature to this work which has not generally been introduced. He has endeavored to ascertain the religious sympathy and church relation of each person. It has seemed to him, that for the highest use of a Genealogy, it is important to know whether a person is "born of God" as well as "born of the will of man." The biography of multitudes may be summed up in the statement of the author of Euthanasy, "born upon such a day—died upon such another, with an utter blank between." But with a religious birth to fill this "blank" of some unhonored and lowly man or woman, with steady and attractive piety, the life becomes useful, even noble, answers "life's great end," and is worthy of a record here, as it has a record on high. Of such, it can never be said they were

> "Fixed to one peculiar spot
> To draw nutrition, propagate, and rot."

With a name on which no stain has ever rested, with an ancestry not often great, but always virtuous, filling, with fidelity and honor, the stations they were called to occupy, one may justly be proud of his lineage. It is the hope of the compiler, that all who by means of his labors, find that such are their name and ancestry, may be grateful for the "glory" they have in "their fathers," and learn from them, that "the richest bequest which any man can make, for the benefit of posterity, is that of a shining and spotless example."

HOLYOKE, MASS., Jan. 1, 1861.

INTRODUCTION.

WALKER. ORIGIN AND MEANING OF THE NAME.—Surnames have originated from various sources, such as localities, occupations, offices, social relations, and personal qualities or peculiarities, character and history. Others are Norman names, dating from the Conquest. Two other classes are derived from the Christian names of father or mother, and from the animal, mineral or vegetable kingdoms. Local English names constitute the most numerous division, and unlike those of occupation, do not indicate the condition, or social rank of those who first bore them.

The custom of assuming or applying names from the various pursuits of life obtained at a very early period. Among the Romans, many and even those of the highest rank, had such names. "These names became hereditary in England next in order, after the local names, about the 11th and 12th centuries, and form a large class. They had a prefix *le*, as Stephen le Spicer, le Bakere, &c. in records of 12th and two succeeding centuries." Walker, says Lower in his "Surnames," signifies either (Anglo Saxon *wealcere*) a fuller or an officer whose duty consisted in walking over or inspecting a certain space of forest ground. In the North of England, a fulling mill is still called a '*walk*-mill,' and at Alfrich, Co. Worcester, there are some thin strata of unctuous clay of a whitish hue, still called Walker's clay. The same custom obtains in the South of Scotland, where the Walkers are numerous. There is a string of names, Lower adds, derived from occupation, which sounds right odd, when placed in juxtaposition, and which *prima facie*, would appear to be fully as applicable to the equine as to the human species, viz., Traveller, Walker, Ryder, Ambler, Trotter, Hopper, Skipper and Hobler. Ryder means another forest officer, a superintendent of the Walkers, a ranger who derived his name from the circumstance of being mounted, and as having a larger district to supervise. From this, it is clear that Lower leans to the opinion that Walker is a name of occupation. Arthur, in his work on the Etymology of names, gives it the same signification. The Anglo Saxon Dictionary, however, has the following definition, viz., "*Wealc*, a revolving, a revolution of heavenly bodies. Wealcan p. Wealc, (hence to walk.) To roll, turn, &c.; to return often. Wealcre, es. m., a fuller; in Lancashire, a Walker, s." A writer in the Edinburgh Review, in an essay on

English surnames, says, "Many of these names of employment survive, and remind us of crafts which have long ceased to exist," and he gives among his illustrations, "Le Waliker, (Waliker that is Fuller.")*

It will be seen that authorities differ as to the signification of the name, and leave it difficult to determine which theory is the more correct. Probably, however, both meanings are true, and the name had a double origin; in some parts of England, being derived from the occupation of a forest officer, and in the North of England and Scotland, originating from the employment of a fuller. This seems the more rational conclusion. The change in the ancient surname of the Walkers of Manor House, Bushey, Co. Hertfordshire, from Forestier to Walker, (see few pp. onward) favors this supposition. And may not some branch of the Fullers have adopted the name of Walker, and as a fulling mill was also a walking mill, may not some have chosen the former, while others selected the latter as their surname?

Antiquity of the Name.—The following in respect to persons bearing the name, in England, mostly persons of distinction, is introduced as part of its history. It is with no idea that these very ancient Walkers are in any way related to the Walkers who came to New England. The English origin and pedigree of the Families included in this work are entirely unknown, and it would be sheer presumption to infer that they were descended from any whose names are given in this introduction. The name even before the year 1600, was so common and extensive, and as a name of occupation had so many independent roots, or an origin in so many different places, as to give no justification to any theory of descent and relationship. So "mighty" or numerous was the name in England 250 years ago, that the compiler came at length to entertain no hope of ascertaining the pedigree of his ancestor, or of other Walkers contemporaneous, in the Old Colony, having no other fact to guide his researches, than that James and William sailed from London in 1635. He has found no coats of arms nor tradition of any, in these Families, and if their ancestors were entitled to any, which is not probable, all memory of them is lost.

As most of the English surnames took root between the Norman Conquest of 1066 and the Revolution of 1688, the historical notices which follow, are embraced within this period. These are selected from a great number, as there is no end to the use of the name in numerous English works.

---

*This interesting essay is re-published in Littell's Living Age, No. 574.

Historical Notices of the Name.—St. Michael's Mount in Cornwall, was surrendered in 1194, to Hubert Walker, Archbishop of Canterbury.—(Lyson's Brittannia, Cornwall.)

There was Walcre or Walkern, in 1215, also Willi Waliker.—(Rotuli Litterarum, vol. I.)

Walke and Walkern, probably meant for Walker, are found in the Taxatio Ecclesiastica.

There was a William Walkere in the reign of Henry III., (1216—1272).—(Placitorum Abbreviatio.)

Nichs Walk lived in the time of Edward I., who began his reign, 1272.—(Rotuli, vol. II.)

Sir Roger Walker was parish priest of Hockwold in Suffolk, about 1349.

John Walker, L.L. B., Archdeacon of the East Riding of Yorkshire, d. about Dec. 1475.

Mr. Miles Walker was Rector of St. Lawrence Ch. in South Walsham, in 1478.

There were two chantries founded at Lewsham, about 1400, one by Richard Walker, for the priest to celebrate mass at the altar of the Trinity, for the founder's soul.

Jacobz Walker F. civis Lond. ob. 4 Nov. 1491.

John Walker was Vicar of the Ch. of Boughton Monchensie, in 1492.

Hugh Walker was Rector of Mereworth, Nov. 20, 1497.

Richard Walker, Provost and Master of Wye Coll. in 1518, d. Oct. 20, 1543.

Sir Thomas Kylson, Knt., made a lease "for terme of certeyn yers of Parcel of Premysses, in citie of London, to oon Thomas Walker." Date, 4th June, 1533.—(Rhymer's Foedera.)

William Walker of Bury fletcher, 1539, directed "all his peyntyd clothgs to be gevyn vnto fore yong copylls yt be newly maryed."—(Bury Wills and Inventories.)

Jane, dau. of Thomas Walker of London, S. P., m. as 2d wife, about 1550, the 5th son of Sir John Boys of St. Gregory's, Knt.

The following are the names of Walkers who were Vicars and Rectors in the time of Henry VIII., (1509—1547,) viz., Dr. William, John, James, George, Thomas, Hugo, David, Henry, John, Rector of Tackley, and John, Rector of Wotton.

Christopher Walker was Vicar, 1540, also Nicholaus Walker.

Edmund Walker was presented to the vicarage of Wensbury, 1550.

Peter Walker became Rector of Colcester, 1556.

Roger Walker, M. A., became Dean of Chester, 1558 or '59.

Henry Walker had a position in the Academy of Canterbury, 1564.

Queen Elizabeth granted the rectory of Collumpton to John Walker, in 1565.

There were Walkers in Exeter, Devonshire Co., from middle of 16th century. Rev. Rob't Walker, Vicar of St. Winnow in Cornwall, was the representative of the family.

William Walker, Rector of Charing, in diocese of Canterbury, resigned, 1586.

Anthony Walker of St. Andrew's Wardrobe, Lond., d. 1590.

Dr. Thomas Walker, Master of Univ. Coll., was elected 1632, dispossessed 1648, restored 1660, and d. 1665. He was related to Archbishop Laud, and was a deserving and modest man.—(Neal's Puritans.)

William Walker was one of the assistants of Burrough of St. Albans, in 1634.

Peter Walker. His father sacrificed his property in the cause of the royal house of Stuarts, and fled from Cheshire into Ireland. He m. Mary Walker, of Yorkshire Walkers.

William Walker, b. in 1650, resided in the parish of Ecclesfield, Co. York, and d. 1708. He left Joseph, who had 2 sons by 1st wife, and 3 sons by 2d wife. The last 3 were the celebrated brothers at Masborough, Samuel, Aaron, and Jonathan, called the "Great Iron Founders." Samuel was a man of remarkable ability, and excellence. For an interesting sketch, see County Hist. of York, 5th vol.

Richard Walker, was Rector of Boughton Aluph, Aug. 6. 1644.

Henry Walker was presented to be minister of Knightsbridge Chapel, 1655.

Dr. Walt. Walker, Knt. Doctor of Civil Law, formerly of Staffordshire, was one of the Judges of Court of Admiralty and Court of Prob. of Wills, 1659. He was also Advocate General to His Royal Highness, James, Duke of York.

Sir Geo. Walker, Knt. Dr. of Civil Law, d. 1679.

Henry Walker, Rector of Church of Kensington, 1677, resigned 1681.

Henry Walker, Rector of Church of Willesborough, 1681, d. 1695.

John Walker, Rector of Church of Kensington, 1681, till 1683.

John Walker, was Rector of Church of Halden, 1683.

The ancient surname of the Walkers of Manor House, Bushey, Co. Hertfordshire, was Forestier or De Forestier, derived, at a remote period from their occupations, in the royal forests, as forestiers, walkers, verderers, &c.; but subsequently, in order to distinguish a numerous progeny, certain branches, those of Sir Hovenden Walker, Knt., Sir Walter Walker of Bushey Hall, &c., assumed the name of Walker only.

EXTENT OF THE NAME.—From the preceding notices of persons of eminence, it may be inferred that Walker was also a common name, among the humbler ranks of society through all the periods of English history. It is not only English, but prevails extensively in Scotland,[*] and to some extent in Ireland. There are many of the name now in this country, who are of Scotch birth.

With "the list of the Pedigrees contained in Wm. Paver's consolidated Visitations of Yorkshire," being those taken in 1584, 1612 and 1665, there is also a list of allied families, with the number of times each name appears. There are 1352 names. Walker appears 11 times, and is exceeded by only 9 names in the list.

At one time, a list of 60 of the most common surnames, in England and Wales, was made, and a register was kept of the number of births, marriages and deaths, in one year, with this result: Of the strictly English family names, Smiths were most numerous, Jones next in order, and Taylors, third. Of the names derived from employments, whether official or manual, Wright, Walker, Turner, Cooper, Clark, Baker, occupy next to Smith & Taylor, the highest place. The names in this list are called "the mighty sixty." Walker is the 17th in rank, and of names of occupation holds the 4th place.

"The Encyclopedia of Heraldry" gives 52 different families of Walkers, with their arms. Of these, 5 were in Scotland, 1 in Ireland, and 1 in Barbadoes. The others were distributed in almost every county of England.

"Burke's Landed Gentry," published 1853, gives 11 families of Walkers, (with their arms,) to be found in different counties.

Seventeen persons named Walker, had been graduated at Oxford University, previous to 1828.

The London Directory for year 1855, gives 234 names of Walkers, business and professional.—(See Appendix, pp. 407, 8, for the commonness of the name in the cities of this country.[†])

---

[*] The original of Jeanie Deans, in the "Heart of Mid-Lothian" by Sir Walter Scott, was Helen Walker, who d. 1791. He erected a monument to her memory, in the church-yard of Irongrey, Edinburgh, inscribing it with a just and beautiful tribute to her worth. It closes thus, "Respect the Grave of Poverty, when combined with love of truth and dear affection."

[†] In the year 1858, there were 55 Postmasters in the U. S., named Walker, and only 4 of them belonging to the families included in this work—a fact that shows how widely and numerously the name has spread over this country.

NOTE.—The following items have come to the compiler's notice since the Appendix was printed.

Jo. Walker, ae. 16, imbarqued for Virginia, Aug. 1, 1635.
Walter Walker, ae. 23, " " " " 21, 1635.
Margaret Walker, ae. 20, " " " 1635, in another ship.

There are numerous Walkers in the Southern States, and several have risen to distinction.

1. "WIDOW WALKER," (2)

OF REHOBOTH, MASS.

SHE was one of the first purchasers and proprietors of the town of Rehoboth or Seacunk, now Seekonk, and one of the company who first settled there. Her name is in the list of those who in 1643 gave in the value of their estates, for a pro rata division of the lands. Hers was £50. In the division made June 31, 1644, she had a share, and lots were assigned her in several divisions afterward, as in drawing for the Great Plain, and on the 18th of 12 mo. (Feb.) 1646, for the new Meadow.

Her name then disappears. When and from whence she came to New England, and where she died, are not known. There is no record to tell us her age or her character. No trace of her biography is found, save the already noticed facts of her being associated with an adventurous company, most of whom went out from Weymouth into the wilderness,—a company marked for its religious character, (being a majority of the church at W.,) the highly educated and scholarly Rev. Samuel Newman being in some respects the Leader of the enterprise.—Her christian name and that of her husband, are never given. In the early records of the town, she has invariably the touching, sorrowful title of Widow, suggesting the history of blighted hopes, and a grief-stricken heart. Perhaps she had one to protect and cherish her when she left her native land,—and burying him in the sea came here alone,—or perhaps together, they had reached these shores, and were struggling in mutual help and loyalty to bear the toils, trials and perils incident to the settlement of a new country,—when death snatched him from her fellowship. But the more probable supposition is, that becoming a widow in England, she emigrated, perhaps with her younger son Philip, after the coming of James and Sarah. Bereft of counsellor and helper, she would naturally follow her children, and seek the sympathy and aid of her brother, or possibly only her brother-in-law, Mr. John Browne. That

she did not come with them in 1635, and did not appear till 8 years afterward, favors this theory. James and Sarah, as favorites of their uncle Mr. Browne, and bereft of a father's counsel and support, may have been induced by his encouragements, to try their fortunes in the New World, leaving the mother behind with their younger brother, till they should learn how the experiment would issue.—Old enough to be of service, perhaps they were really indentured as "servants to Jo. Browne," and not merely, as a device to escape the pursuivants of the King in their attempt to get out of England. But these are conjectures merely. The interest of Mr. Browne in his nephew and niece, the two young emigrants of 1635, and the fact of their mother the "widow" being associated with Mr. B. in the settlement of Rehoboth, favors the belief that she was his sister, though he might have manifested the same regard, had she been only the sister of his wife. We may however see among the group of pious and brave settlers, not only the godly man who is their religious teacher, but also the form of one, whose sable garments tell us, she is a "Widow." The vision passes quickly before us, and is lost to our sight, awakening sympathy and interest for the woman, who, bereft of the companion of her youth, became a pioneer in founding the church and colony at Rehoboth. She was buried no doubt, in the ancient place of graves in Seekonk, where many of the fathers repose, but no stone marks the spot.

Philip Walker, afterward Deacon, and whose name first appears in 1653, to whom lands were assigned in 1658, and of whom the record commences, soon after her's ceases, was her son. In the description of his lands in the Proprietors' Records, 48th p., he says, "100 pound commons that was Thos. Pitts', 100 that was the Governor's, half a hundred that was *my mother's*." It is evident therefore that he was the son of "Widow Walker," for had his "mother" not been a widow, the lands would have been described as those of his father, and furthermore, there was no other person of the name in the Rehoboth Company, who could sustain this relation to him.

James Walker appears in the list of those in 1643 giving in the value of their estates. His name is next to that of the "Widow," and the amount is £50, but it is subjoined that his share is "now John ffitches." He however forfeited his lots to the town in 1644, in accordance with an order enacted by the proprietors in 1643, that those who did not fence their lands, or remove there with their families, should forfeit their lots. His name however, is mentioned

in one division of lands afterward, viz., that of 1645. It is probable however, that he never removed to Rehoboth, but concluded to remain in Taunton. Mr. John Browne, whose lots were forfeited at the same date with James Walker's, lived in Taunton at the time, and was his "cousin," (uncle.) Thus connected with the "Widow" and Mr. Browne, who was also one of the original Proprietors of Rehoboth, having been the agent of the company, while in Weymouth, and appointed by the Court at Plymouth, to make the purchase of Asameeum the Indian Chief, James Walker very naturally became associated with the settlement. Accordingly neither their names nor that of Mr. Browne is found in the list of the company that went from Weymouth. The strongest reason, however, for concluding he was of "Widow Walker's" family, is found in the fact that when Deacon Philip died in 1679, James was one of the appraisers of his estate. When it is remembered that there was no James Walker in R., at that time, that Rehoboth and Taunton townships were contiguous, and moreover, that James was about 60 years of age, it is beyond a reasonable doubt that he was not only nearly related to Philip, but was his brother, and accordingly was the son of "Widow Walker."

If we may judge of her worth from the virtues of her sons, and infer that they inherited the spirit and piety of their Pilgrim mother, and that her fidelity entitled her to use the language of the Roman matron respecting the Gracchi, "These are my jewels," then was she a compeer worthy to be associated with the pious and distinguished Mr. Newman and the useful Mr. Browne, leaders in the Rehoboth settlement.

And as "the glory of the fathers is their children," her name is not unhonored, and her character and worth not without their monument.

It is upon this evidence, which, though fragmentary and circumstantial, is nevertheless conclusive, that

"WIDOW WALKER"

is placed at the head of the Taunton Family, and in respect to them, as well as the more numerous and widely scattered family of Rehoboth, must be honored as

"THE MOTHER OF US ALL."

CHILDREN OF WIDOW WALKER^1 [1] of Rehoboth.

2. JAMES WALKER,^{2} (5)

OF TAUNTON, MASS.

SON of ——— Walker and his wife, ——— afterward called "Widow Walker" of Rehoboth, was born in England in 1619 or '20. All efforts to discover his birthplace, and learn from which branch of the numerous race of Walkers he sprung, have proved fruitless. Nor can the time of his emigration to this country, be determined with *absolute* certainty. The following fact from "Gleanings for New England History by Hon. James Savage, from a Manuscript vol. at the Augmentation office," England, which are published in the Collections of the Mass. Historical Society, 8th vol., 3d series, will at least furnish ground for a conjecture, if not, in connection with contemporaneous facts, for a conclusion, which leaves no room for a reasonable doubt. The record is thus:

Imbarqud Apr. 15. In Elizabeth, de London,
Master Wm. Stagg versus New England,
Richard Walker, 24
William Walker, 15

and 3 others of different names; these persons having taken the oath of allegiance and supremacy before Sir Wm. Whitmore and Sir Nicholas Ranton.

In another paragraph on the same page, it is added:

15 Apr. In the Elizabeth, de London,
Master Wm. Stagg vs. New England,
James Walker, 15 yrs.
Sarra Walker, 17 yrs. servants[*] to
Jo. Browne, a Baker and to 1 Wm. Brasey,
linen draper in Cheapside, London, per
certificate of their conformity.

---

[*] Mr. Savage says it is probable that some of those persons who entered as servants assumed this title to escape the vigilance of the pursuivants.

On a following page is added:

17th Apr. for New England in Elizabeth,
Wm. Stagg, master, 28 more, among whom
Jo. Browne, 40 yrs.

That this was the James Walker who settled at Taunton is confirmed by the following facts:

In all the town histories of the Plymouth and Massachusetts Colonies, and the Probate Records, which have been thoroughly examined, there is no trace of any other James Walker, previous to the year 1655.[†] It is the single instance of the name. And in respect to his birth and age, there is only a variation of one year, between the statement just given, and the age and date upon the grave stone still standing in the Walker Burial Place in South Taunton. And this is a slight discrepancy, and may have arisen from a mistake in the original English record, or in Mr. Savage's transcription of it, or which is more probable still, from an error in the inscription upon the grave stone, either by the failure in memory of those who reared it, (perhaps at some considerable time after his death) or by the mistake of the stone cutter in putting 73 for his age instead of 72. Grave stones are proverbially uncertain in respect to dates. It is no infrequent thing to find such variations.

Besides this, William was in Hingham in 1636, the year after their embarkation from London, and had a lot assigned him, and his name is in the list of the inhabitants and proprietors of that year. And it is a well known fact, that many of the first settlers of Taunton were from Hingham and Scituate. And it is not improbable, that the ship Elizabeth landed her passengers at H. or somewhere on the South Shore.

Richard Walker was the son of Richard of Lynn or Saugus, who came before him. His age at his death, concurs with his age given in Mr. Savage's Gleanings, and with his birth in 1611, as given by Lewis in Hist. of Lynn, published before Mr. Savage made his researches in England. But another fact, which contributes to change what otherwise might be a conjecture, into a firm conviction, is, that James Walker was the brother-in-law[*] of John Tisdill, and as it is known that James Walker married Elizabeth Philips, this relationship could have been, only by John Tisdill's marriage with James Walker's sister. And as John Tisdill's wife was named Sarah, and James Walker, his brother-in-law, had a sister Sarah Walker, it is unquestionable, that Mrs. Tisdill was the "Sarra Walker 17 yrs. of the Elizabeth from London," and that we have in Mr. Savage's Gleanings an account of the Embarkation of the Taunton and Hingham (afterward Eastham) Walkers

---

[*] Mr. John Browne of Rehoboth Nov. 23d, 1655 gave to "his cousin (nephew?) John Tisdill, dwelling house bought of Goodman, &c., &c. and house he lived in at Taunton, to John Tisdill and his cousin (nephew) James Walker, John Tisdill's brother-in-law." Plym. Reg. Deeds, 3d vol., 181 p.

[†] A James Walker appeared in Chelmsford in 1659.

If it be said that there is nothing about Widow and Philip Walker in these Gleanings, it may be answered, that possibly she and the younger son, as Philip was, may have come afterward, for it was not unusual then, any more than now, for members of the same family to come at different times, and the fact of Richard of Lynn, though only a young man, coming several years after his father, corroborates the theory. The obvious conclusion then, in respect to the relationship existing between the four is, that James and Sarra were brother and sister, and that they were all near kindred; perhaps the two mentioned first, Richard and William, were cousins of the others, and also of each other. Emigrants at the same time and in the same ship, it is probable that they came from the same district in England. Richard went to Lynn where his father had settled, William to Eastham, and James and Sarra to Taunton, with Mr. John Browne, their guardian and uncle.

James first appears in Taunton in 1643; his name being included in the list of those in T. between the age of 16 and 60 able to bear arms.* He also gave in the value of his estate with the first settlers of Rehoboth in 1643, for a share in the division of lands. But the fact that the next year, his lands were forfeited to the town, together with Mr. John Browne's, then of Taunton, his cousin, (or if as used anciently his uncle,) either because he did not according to a previous order fence them, or did not remove there, (the latter probably,) will account for his early disappearance from the list of the inhabitants and proprietors of Rehoboth. Only one other notice of the said James of Rehoboth is found, viz: in the division of land, made in the year 1645. The absence of his name, therefore, is explained most naturally by the supposition, that he never became a settler there, and not that there was a different James from the one in Taunton, who may have died in 1645 or just after.

---

*The list commences thus, Mr. John Browne, Mr. Willm Poole, John Browne, James Browne, James Walker.

And as James Walker was one of the appraisers of the estate of Philip Walker of Rehoboth, in 1679, and there was no James at that period in R., it is reasonable to infer that James of Taunton, was the James mentioned in the first Rehoboth divisions of land, and surviving Philip, helped appraise his estate. His mother and Mr. John Browne his uncle being interested in the enterprise, he doubtless contemplated settling there, yet concluded to remain in T. where he became very useful and highly honored. (See sketch of Widow Walker.) As he was married just at this time, to Miss Philips of T., we may guess that love had stronger influence than lands, and over-ruled his purpose to settle in Rehoboth, securing his active services and wise counsels through a long life, to the town of Taunton. It deserves to be noticed in this connection, as showing the intercourse between the families of the two towns, that James Walker Jr., married Bathsheba, daughter of Gilbert Brooks of Rehoboth, a pious, worthy and somewhat prominent man.

There is also another fact to corroborate this theory. In Dec. 1644, "It was ordered (in Rehoboth) that no man's lands be recorded till he be an inhabitant among us," or receive a certificate, that lands are butted and bounded, and in the allotments ordered to be recorded in March 28, 1645, his name does not appear with Widow Walker's. Though it is true that in April following, he is mentioned as one of those who drew lots for lands on the Great Plain, there is not a single record of his lands in the Proprietors' Books, and hence it is an inevitable conclusion, that he did not become an inhabitant of Rehoboth. Had he done so, there would have been a record of the boundaries of the lands which fell to him in the division, and then the record of the transfer. There was a James Walker who drew lots in the divisions of 1643 and 5, and who yet had no lands recorded and described. There was, at that time, a James Walker in Taunton, the adjoining town, at that time, and there is no trace of another any where in New England.

It would be a remarkable coincidence, were there another James so nearly of the same age, who had a sister Sarah, a guardian or patron, John Browne, (that was his uncle also,) and until such a James has been found, with whose life these circumstances will concur, it may be claimed, that we have the record of the English origin and advent to this country, of the first male ancestor of the Taunton Walkers.*

---

* This proof has been given in detail because of an effort to make another use of this portion of Mr. Savage's Gleanings. See Gen. Reg. vol. 9, p. 219.

James Walker was propounded to take up his freedom 6th June, 1649, and admitted a freeman 4th June, 1650. He married Elizabeth Philips, daughter of William Philips and wife Elizabeth (Parker,) sister of William and John Parker, ancient and leading men of Taunton. She died Aug. 14th, 1678, aged 59, (according to grave stone,) July 8th, (Prop. Rec.) and July 30th, (Plymouth Rec.)* They had five children who survived them, viz: James, Peter, Eleazer, Hester, and Deborah. Probably there were others who died early, as, in 1659, before the birth of Deborah, he had "eight heads" in his family. He married 2d, Sarah Rew, Nov. 4th, 1678, widow of Edward Rew, one of the ancient settlers and proprietors of T., who died July 16th, 1678. She was a daughter of John Richmond of Taunton. James Walker died Feb. 15th, 1691, aged 73, which date regarded as 1691–2, makes his age in 1635, 16 instead of 15, as given in Savage's Gleanings.† He and his w. Elizabeth were buried in the Walker grave yard on the bank of the Taunton River, in the South part of the town. Her grave stone has an earlier date by 8 years than any in the town. He lived near the ancient meeting house and on the "highway that goeth from James Walker Sen., to the Great Plain on the northerly end." He was an extensive landholder and a partner in the Iron Works and the Saw Mill.‡

The following are the notices of him in the ancient records. In Oct. 4th, 1648, Jas. Walker of Taunton, informing against William Hedggis for yt the sd Hedggis, knowing of one yt that had traded shote vnto the Indians, and refusing to declare who it is, by sommons sent vnto him is required to apeer at the next General Court; acordingly hee did and was cleared. (Plym. Court Orders, 2d vol. 135th p.)

In reference vnto a controuersy betwixt Willam Hailstone and James Walker, which hath bine of long standing, relateing to an award made by Mr. John Wiswall, Mr. Richard Callicott and Capt. James Johnson, concerning and for the issueing of some difference betwixt the said pties., they, the said Willam Hailstone and James Walker, refering the case for a finall issue to the determination of the Court, having heard their please on both sydes, and pused all such writings that were produced relateing thervnto, doe determine and conclude as followeth, viz.: that forasmuch as that it appeers vpon examination that the said James Walker hath not pformed the latter pte of the said arbetration, viz.: to repaire the said Hailstone, his reputation in the church, and to make a returne therof vnto the said arbetrators, which hee neglected to doe, the Court doe therfore order that hee shall pay or cause to be payed vnto the said Hailstone, the sume of fiue pounds, in either good merchantable porke or good barr iron, betwixt this date and the fifteenth day of October next, att prise then currant; and wheras the said James Walker did openly and vnaduisedly, on a Lord's day, accuse the said Willam Hailstone of telling seueral palpable lyes, and founded vpon a lye, whereby the said Hailstone was much scandalised. This Court doth hereby aduise the said James Walker, publickly to acknowlidge the wronge hee hath done him, in the meeting, on the Lord's day, in the congregation; and this our award and joynt determination to be a full and finall issue of all such differences and controuersyes as relate vnto the pmises. July 1st, 1672.

Homer seems to have nodded here. The good man fell into sin if we may judge from the record, and like Moses, "spake unadvisedly with his lips!"*

---

* This is a striking illustration of conflict in authorities in respect to a single date.

† This, however, is a slight discrepancy and does not invalidate the conclusion that he was the same who came in the Elizabeth in 1635.

‡ There is an ancient deed by James Walker Sen., that has been thought worthy of being framed and preserved in the Bristol Reg. of Deeds, Taunton. By whom and when this distinction was given is unknown. It is dated Sept. 11th, 1688, and the following is a copy of all that is essential.

"To all Christian People, before whom these presents shall come, James Walker Senior of Taunton, sendeth Greeting. Know ye that the said James Walker for and in consideration of the loue he beareth unto his son, Petter Walker of Taunton, abouesaid, doeth by this deed of guift vnto his said son, Petter Walker, freely and fully guie, make over from me, the said James Walker, my heirs and executors and assignes, to him, my abouesaid son, Petter Walker, and to his heirs, successors and assignes for euer, these particular parcels of Land following, lying, scittuate and being within the Townshipt of Taunton aforesaid.

Imprimis, a lott of land lying on the Westerly side of Taunton, Great River, (soe called,) at a place called the pond, which was formerly Thomas Gilbert's, containing by estimation twenty acres, be it more or less, to which joins two lotts more of fourteen acres or thereabouts, all footing on the said great Riuer and headed by the highway, and bounded on the Northerly side by the land of Nathaniel French, and on the Southerly side by the land of Samuel Sheepard, alsoe more ninety and nine acres of land joyning to the Lower fales of the three mile riuer, (soe called,) and soe extending to the highway that lyeth on the heads of the Lott above mentioned, &c."

This "son Petter Walker," thus owned lands and lived in that section of the town lying in the angle formed by the Taunton Great and the Three Mile rivers. There his descendants have lived till the present time.

* Perhaps, however, judgment was rendered against him in this instance on the principle that "the greater the truth, the greater the libel." This William Hailstone was far from blameless He was fined £15 for breach of contract with Jonathan Briggs, and 20 shillings for telling 2 lyes in a petition to General Court in 1656.

Apr. 7th, 1664. Willam Witherell acknowlidyeth to owe to our sou lord the Kinge, the sume of £20; Hezekiah Hore £10; Gyles Gilbert, £20; Gorg Watson, £10.

The cause of the bonds aboue written is, that wheras James Walker, being a p'tnor in the saw mill att Taunton, complained of great hurt done to the said saw mill, by som psons that came in the night in a fellonious manor and stole away seueral things, and did great spoile, and left a libellous paper behind them; and it being suspected that the aboue bounden Willam Witherell and Gyles Gilbert, were the psons, or some of them, that haue done the said mischiffe, they, the said Willam Witherell and Gyles Gilbert, being sumoned, appeered att Plymouth, before the Gou. and Captaine Southworth, on the day and yeare first aboue written, and being examined, it appeered that they were guilty in the aforesaid pticulars, and therfore the said majestrates saw cause to take the said bonds of them for their good behauior, &c.,, Court Orders, vol. 4th, 5, 6, & 7, pp.

May 3, 1664. Josepth Gray and Samuell Linkorn were arraigned for being ptenors in doeing great hurt to the saw mill att Taunton, &c., "and being examined about the pmises, owned that they were guilty therin" and were put under bonds, together with Gorg Watson and Thomas Leanard. Then follows this order of the Court.

Wheras, att this Court, the aboue bounden Josepth Gray and Samuell Linkorne, together with Georg Watson, complained of great wrong, sustained, not onely by them, but by the whole towne of Taunton, by James Walker, his neglecting, according to engagement, to leaue a sufficient passage for the herrings or alewiues to goe up in the river on which the saw mill standeth, the Court directeth an order to the constable of Taunton, to require him to signify vnto the said James Walker, that hee speedily take course, that a free passage bee left for the goeing up of the alewiues in the said river, whiles yett some pte of the season remaines of their goeing vpp.

8th June, 1664, Court ordered.

In reference to the complaint of sundry of the inhabitants of the towne of Taunton against James Walker and others, for the restraining of the alewiues from goeing vp according to there vsual manor, by reason of a saw mill on thire herring riuer, by which obstruction of the said fish, the said towne hath, and is in danger to suffer much damage, this Court hath ordered, that betwixt this date and the next season of the fishes goeing vp, they, the said owners of the mill, shall make or cause to ʌ made, a free, full and sufficient passage for the goeing vp of the said fish, or otherwise vpon the further complaint of the towne, the Court will take an effectuall course that the same shall bee done.

Att this Court, Willam Witherell, Mr. Gyles Gilbert, Josephth Gray and Samuell Linkhorne were sentanced by the Court to pay each a fine of twenty shillings for an abuse done to a Saw Mill at Taunton, belonging to James Walker and others, by coming in the night and breaking downe some pte of the said mill, and found takeing away seuerall thinges from the same.

George Watson, Gyles Gilbert and William Witherley complained against James Walker, Robert Crossman, John Maycomber and Nicholas White, in an action of tresspass on the case, to the damage of an hundred pounds, for hindering the fish for haueing a convenient passage vp and downe the Mill River, att Taunton, by the worke about the saw mill, contrary to the inhabitants of the towne of Taunton, and contrary to the promise of the said James Walker, all of which hath bine great damage to the complainants and others.

Tried att Generall Court held att Plymouth, 31 Oct., 1666.

The jury find for the plaintiffes, that a sufficient passage be made by the defendants att the Mill River, att Taunton, for the fish where they vsually goe vp and downe, where the saw mill or dam now erected is an anoyance to the said fish, the expence of time, and the cost of the suite.*

In 1671 James Walker was fined £1 for breaking an order about a stray horse.

We pass now to more honorable notices.

In 1651, he was on the inquest respecting the death of William England, aged 10 years, seruant to Joseph Wilbor of Taunton. The next morning being the Lord's Day, hee with diuers others, sought on the river for him and found him not; but James Walker and Richard Burt passing vp the river, towards meeting, found the said William floating on the water, who made it known, and caused him to be taken vp. Col. Rec. vol. 2.

In 1663, Richard Williams, Walter Dean, James Wyatt and James Walker, made over land to Rev. Geo. Shove, minister of Taunton, house and land 10 acres, bounded &c.,——which they bought of Elizabeth Philips. This was given "for the use of the ministry."

---

* The people of Taunton have ever since been very ready to complain of any damage to "thire herring riuer," but in 200 years, manufacturing enterprise has conquered, and mill owners now, have less trouble than James Walker.

The Court alloweth vnto James Walker, towards his paines, the charge and trouble hee hath been att about Jonathan Briggs, in the controuersye betwixt Willam Hailstone and the said Briggs, the summe of twenty shillings, conceiueing that the said Briggs ought to satisfy the said James Walker further, what is meet in the above said respect, att least to make it vp forty shillings. March 2, 1657–8.

June 1, 1658. This is to certify all whom it may concerne, that all that was required vpon the arbetration betwixt James Walker and Willam Hailstone is pformed by the said James Walker.

"The countrye's stocke of powder and shott was distributed in different towns for safety and use." Taunton's portion.

"It. to James Walker, att Taunton, one barrell of powder and the other halfe of the cake of lead." 1658, 2 Oct. "James Walker and William Harvey, were appointed by the Court, to review, in the countrys behalf, the public whipping of William Paule, Katheren Aines and her husband." 1656–7.

The several towns were required to send each, one man as deputy to the Court, and to envest them with full power in their behalfe, to treat and conclude about leting of the trad, att Kennebecke; James Walker was chosen the deputy of Taunton, Oct. 1659.

March 4, 1661–2, James Walker was authorised by the Court to adminnister an oth, as occation shall require, att Taunton, as alsoe, to marry psons, as occation shall require, vntil the next June Court. This order was c x. att June 9th, 1662, soe that the said James Walker is to giue oath and marry, as above said. On the margin opposite the above order, it is stated. "The Court doeth order, James Walker, to sellebrate marriage in the towne of Taunton, vntell June, 1684."

Oct. 3, 1662. The oath of Jonathan Briggs, taken before this Court, is as followeth;—I, Jonathan Briggs, aged twenty-fiue years, or therabouts, doe testify, that about 6 yeares agone, as I was in the house of James Walker, of Taunton, I heard James Walker aske Willam Browne, what hee would doe with his land, if hee should not returne from England againe. Willam Browne answared, that if hee did not returne againe, then hee would giue all his land to his little cousen, which was Peter Walker, whoe then stood before him.

8 June, 1664. James Walker and Frances Smith were "the psons, (in Taunton,) nominated to take vp the excise—whoe are likewise to take notice of what liquors, &c., are brought into the Gou'ment."

July 2, 1667. The Court haue graunted vnto some ancient freemen liueing in Taunton, viz., James Walker, (and 7 others,) some supplyes of land, vpon the west syde of Taunton Riuer—or some other place, if it may be obtained."

1668. He was one of the six original proprietors of Assonet Neck.

1670. He and William Harvey were appointed to "look after the minister's rate," also, "to examine Jane Holloway, in regard to Samuel Holloway's appeal for a divorce, from his said wife, Jane."

1671. He was one of the Committee "to have inspection of the ordinary, or in any other places suspected; to take notice of such abuses as may arise, in reference to the pmises, or otherwise, and to make oath therof to the Court." This was an order "for prevention of great abuse by excessive drinking of liquors in ordinaries."

1671, 23 August.

1. The councell of warr, haueing seriously considered of the case, in reference to the Phillipe, the cheife sachem of Pacanacutt, hee having neglected, to answare his engagement, to bringe in his armes att the day appointed, and alsoe in his not coming in to giue the reason thereof, being required thervnto, and his vnkind carriages towards vs, as otherwise, &c., &c., &c.

2. It is unanimously agreed and concluded by the said councell, that wee are nessesarily called to cause the said sachem, to make his psonall appeerance, to make his purgation in reference to the pmises; &c., &c.

Accordingly pers were despatched and sent from the councell, one vnto the said Phillip, the said sachem to require his psonall appeerance att Plymouth, in the 13th day of September next, in reference to the pticulares aboue mencioned against him; this letter was sent by Mr. James Walker, one of the councell, and hee was ordered to request the companie of Mr. Roger Williams and Mr. James Browne, to goe with him att the deliuery of the said letter. (Plym. Col. Rec. vol. 5th.) (See 16th p.)

1671–2, 5 March.

James Walker and John Richmond are authorised by the Court to purchase the land of the Indians, in the behalfe of the towne of Taunton, lying on the west syde of Taunton Riuer, from the Three Mile Riuer, downe to a place called the Store House. (vol. 5, 88th p.)

They were the Com. of town of Taunton, to settle the disputed boundary between Swansey and T.

1675–6, March 10.

Wheras, the Court for the incurragement of the souldiers, sent forth on the first expedition against the Indians, did order and engage, according to theire desire, that they should haue theire pay in money or lands, and noe way att psent appeering to raise monyes, doe therfore, for theire satisfaction order, that certaine tracts of land be assigned, to the vallue of about one thousand pounds, to be deuided amongst them, for the payment of theire respectiue ptes due vnto them;—and for the better effecting thereof, the Treasurer, Major Cudworth, Cornett Studson and James Walker are desired and appointed to take view therof, and make reporte therof, to the Court or Councell, for the settleing of the same, at such reasonable rates, as to them shall seeme meet, to be deuided to the said souldiers, or sold for theire pay, or discharge of other nessarie dues, occationed by this warr. Col. Rec. vol. 5, 191st p.

The order and distribution of this collonies pte of the contribution, made by diuers Christians, in Ireland, for the relieffe of such as are impouerished, destressed, and in nessestie by the late Indian warr, was as it respects this collonie, proportioned as followeth:

William Harvey, } appointed to distribute
James Walker, } the portion allotted to
John Richmond. } Taunton.

March 6, 1656–7. Col. Rec. vol. 5, 222d p.

James Walker, } are appointed and established by the
James Wilbore and } Court to take notice of such liquors
Encrease Robinson, } as are brought in disorderly unto
the toune of Taunton, and to make seisure theroffe, according to order.

1678, Oct. 30. Col. Rec. vol. 5, 271st p.

James Walker was one of a Com. "to lease out some of the lands of Leiftenant Wyatt, for the relieffe of Mistris Mary Wyatt, of Taunton, his widdow, and in great necessitie." 1678, 30 Oct.

In 1683–4, James Walker and John Richmond were the Com. in behalf of inhabitants of Taunton, to purchase a tract of land of the Indians.

He served as juryman, and on the Grand Inquest repeatedly. He was constable in 1652; surveyor, 1672; one of the "Celect men," 1666, 7, 8, 9, 70, 8, 9 and 80,—8 years.

He was elected deputy to the Plymouth Court, 16 years, viz.: 1654, 7, 8, 9, 60, 1, 3, 6, 7, 8, 9, 70, 1, 6, 7, 9.

He was a member of the Com. (composed of 10 of the leading citizens in the Colony,) to take the Treasurer's account in 1664, 7, 8 and 70.

He was a Member and Chairman of the Town "Councell of Warr," 1667, 75 & 8. These Councils were elected in time of war, and the most efficient men of the towns were appointed, as in Plymouth, the Gov. Capt. Bradford, in Rehoboth, Capt. Willett. He was also one of the "Councell of Warr," for Plymouth Colony, in 1658, 61, 71, 81, and associated with its most energetic and sagacious men. In 1681, the Council consisted of Capt. Nathaniel Thomas, Capt. Josiah Standish, Capt. Jonathan Sparrow, Lieut. Joseph Laythorpe, Lieut. Eph'm Morton, Lieut. John Thacher, Ensign Mark Eames, Cornet Rob't Studson, Sec'y Nath'l Morton, Mr. James Walker.

In the division of lands in 1659, his rate is £1, 5s., 7d., and 8 heads. Ninety six acres were assigned him.

He was also one of the committee of five, to revise town records of lands.

"In 1669, 51 acres over the great river, at head of the great Meadows, also 3 acres on this side, (that is West,) of river, little beyond Edward Rew's Saw pit," were assigned him. (Prop. Rec.)

In the Proprietor's Records, there is also a record of the names of the persons who gave lands to Capt. Batholomew Tipping, as remuneration in full, for the house and land he sold to Rev. Mr. Danforth, in 1687. It is as follows:

James Walker,	10 acres.
Peter Walker, (son of James,)	10 acres.

Then follow the names of 19 others, 15 of whom gave 5 acres each, one 6 acres, one 4, and two, 10 each.

In vol. 6th, 1st series of the Collections of the Mass. Historical Society, there is allusion to a letter of James Walker, of Taunton, dated Jan. 1676, written to Gov. Winslow, (in reply to one of his,) giving an account of the suffering and the loss of life by Indian depredations, in Philip's War, and also the names of the sufferers.

This letter is lost; and it is a loss greatly to be deplored, as such a letter from an intelligent observer, would give us a vivid conception of those perilous and barbarous times, when our ancestors, few, and grouped in small and scattered settlements in the wilderness, had to struggle with the banded natives, bent on the extermination of the pale faces from the land, they thought their own heritage, guided and inspired too, by the patriotism and bravery of the able and renowned chieftain, King Philip.

Even the list of those who fell or suffered, would be invaluable now, and furnish a thrilling chapter in the domestic and social history of the early colonists—a tearful record of graves and griefs, of fortitude and faith, of terror and triumph.*

We are more fortunate however, in respect to a letter he wrote to Gov. Prince, for though the original may be lost, we have its contents published, in the 6th vol. of Mass. Hist. Col. 197th p. The letter is as follows:

Much Honored Sir:

After my humble respects presented to you, these are to acquaint you with Philip's answer to your letter. My sons being visited with the ague, forced me to procure brother Harvey† to go over to cousin James Browne with the letter, who sent for Mr. Williams to interpret. Mr. Williams, not being well, came not till afterward; yet cousin James and brother Harvey went down to Mount Hope; and the dance being broken up, Philip, and the most of his chief men, were much in drink; only Acumponin and Tom Sancsink were sober; so that Philip could not give them any answer. Only there passed some words betwixt Philip and cousin James, and Philip struck off cousin James Browne's hat. The day following, they went again to Philip, and Mr. Williams with them. The letter being read, and Philip caused fully to understand it, they could get no positive answer about Philip's coming to Plymouth, because Mr. Eliot had sent for him to Boston, and he looked for another messenger that day; which messenger they met about 2 miles from Philip's house; which messenger told them that his message was to desire Philip to be at Punkapoge, the last day of this week, and at Boston, the Tuesday following. Philip and Tom exclaimed much against Sawsiman, for reporting that any of the Narragansett sachems were there; Not further to trouble you, but rest, desiring the good Lord to be with you, and guide you, in all your weighty affairs.

Yours to serve,

JAMES WALKER.

Taunton, Sept. 1, 1671.

---

*King Philip's summer residence was in Taunton, (now Raynham,) near the Iron Works.

† Was he a "brother" by marriage, or only a "brother" in the church? Perhaps there was another and younger sister, than Sarah, who came with the "Widow" and Philip. The mention of "cousin James Browne," in connection with "brother Harvey," favors this supposition, but Mr. John Browne's remembrance of James and Sarah only, in the gift of his house in Taunton, suggests a doubt, which is strengthened by the record, "Wm. Harvey m. Joane Hucker of Taunton, April 2, 1639." May not "Hucker" be a clerical error for Walker?

"Yours to serve," the unique form with which he concludes his letter to Gov. Prince, is singularly appropriate and in keeping with his life. When a youth of 15 years, he was "servant to John Browne." In mature manhood, he was the "servant" of the Colony, employed in various civil offices and trusts, through a long series of years.

He had no military title, no hereditary arms, but the numerous services assigned him, and the positions of responsibility and confidence which he filled, justify us in awarding him the title of "servant of the church" and the State.

From the records now given, we conceive of him as a man of more than ordinary intelligence, judicious in counsel, energetic in action, steadfast in integrity, sagacious, public spirited, benevolent and alive to the secular and religious prosperity of the Colony. Surpassed by none of the town in his contributions for the ministry, and in the number and continuance of civil trusts, he needed no heraldic distinctions, and he transmitted none. Worthy of remembrance and honor by those of his name and lineage, yet he is an honor to them, only as they strive to emulate his usefulness, and reproduce his virtues and his piety.

Fac-simile of his autograph written in 1676.

James walker Sen

3. SARAH WALKER,^{2}

OF TAUNTON, MASS.

Born in England in 1618, died Dec. 1676. She married John Tisdall, of Duxbury.

It is recorded that John Tisdall entered against Stephen Hopkins, Assistant of the Gov't, an action for Battery, by which he was dangerously wounded. 1636. S. H. was fined £5 and costs. Also, "John Tisdall, upon the good report of him and of his good carryage, is allowed to keepe house and plant for himself, provided he so continue his carryage still. 1638." Is it not probable that he had been recently married?

He did not altogether "continue his carryage," for Dec. 6, 1653, he was fined 20 shil., for "unfaithfulness in prizing and exchanging a cow," of Mrs. Bryant's. (Plym. Col. Rec. vol. 3, 42d p.)

He settled first in Duxbury, about 1636, and removed to Taunton, before Dec. 6, 1653. He was constable in T. 1659, one of the proprietors of Taunton No. Purchase 1668, Selectman and Deputy to Plym. Court 1774. Besides lands in Taunton, he owned a farm near Assonet. He took an active part in the affairs of the town, and was murdered by the Indians, June 27, 1675. In'y, £150. Nothing is known of his origin, nor of the date of his arrival in the Old Colony. He has not had very numerous descendants, yet all the Tisdalls, of American birth, are of his lineage. The professional men among his descendants have been Elkanah, a lawyer, and Nathan, 1732—1787, called "Old Master Tisdale," the eminent classical teacher of the time, by whom, during about 40 years, a large number of the distinguished men of the country were instructed. (See his Epitaph, Gen. Reg. 1858, 62d p.) Both of Lebanon, Ct. Dr. Tisdall, of Norwich, Ct., and Rev. James, lately of Shutesbury, (son of James, of West Taunton.) Samuel T., Esq., an intelligent and successful merchant in N. Y. City, 7th generation from John, has a genealogy of the Tisdalls in manuscript.

JOHN TISDALL and wife SARAH WALKER had 8 chil., viz.,

(1) JOHN, b. in Duxbury, d. about last of Dec. 1677.

He m. Nov. 23, 1664, Anna dau. of John Rogers of Duxbury. He was in list of freemen 1670. His 4 chil. were—

1 *Abigail*, b. July 15, '67, m. Dec. 2, 1685, Wm. Makepeace.

2 *John*, b. Aug. 10, '69, and d. Jan. 26, 1728. He m. 1700 Deborah Dean, dau. of Thomas. She was born about 1675, and d. 1703–4. He m. 2dly, Abigail. His chil. were John, 1702. Of 2d wife, Abraham, 1704, Israel, 1706, Ephraim, 1708, Jedediah, 1710, Deborah, 1712, Abigail, 1714, Anna, 1716.

3 *Anna*, b. Jan. 27, 1672, m. July 4, 1695, Hon. George Leonard, 3d son of Thomas, b. April 18, 1671, and d. Sept. 5, 1716. He settled in Norton, where he became possessed of very large tracts of land, and was progenitor of the N. family of Leonards. His family became very wealthy, and owners of the largest landed estate probably in New England.

4 *Remember*, b. July 8, '75.

(2) JAMES, b. 1644 in Duxbury, d. Jan. 15, 1715, ae. 71.

He m. Nov. 5, 1666, Mary Avery, who d. Sept. 9, 1713, ae. 66. Res. Berkley He was freeman as early as May, 1670, and one of the original proprietors of Assonet Neck, when the purchase was made in 1680. His 6 chil. were—

1 *James*, b. about 1670, m. 1700, Abigail Coleman, dau. of John, of Nantucket. Res. Lebanon, Ct., where he d. May 3, 1727, ae. 48 yrs. She d. Nov. 18, 1726, in 45th yr. (See Gen. Reg. 1858, 58th p. for their epitaphs.) He m. 2dly Mindwell. 2 *Mary*, b. about 1672. m. Richard Haskins of Taunton. 3 *Martha*, b. 1674, m. John Hodges, of Norton. 4 *Margaret*, b. 1675, m. Josiah Winslow, of Taunton. 5 *Sarah*, b. 1677, m. John Johnson, Lebanon, Ct. 6 *Ebenezer*, b. 1682, d. Nov. 11, 1705, ae. 22.

(3) JOSHUA, b. in Duxbury, 1646, d. ae. 72 yrs. in Freetown.

He m. July 5, 1688, Abigail Andrews, dau. of Henry. She d. 1741. He was sometime of Taunton, but dwelling on Assonet River, 1682. His 3 chil. were—

1 *Joshua*, b. April 1, 1689, 2 *Samuel*, b. March 3, 1691, m. Mary Church of Little Compton, Jan. 30, 1724–5 and d. 1769, having 6 chil. viz., Samuel, June 22, 1727, Mary, Jan. 7, 1729, Deborah, Feb. 16, 1730, Sarah, Feb. 22, 1732, Abigail, Dec. 19, 1738, Rebecca, Nov. 24, 1742, 3 *Elizabeth*, June 2, 1693, 4 *Hepsibeth*, March 19, 1695, 5 *Abigail*, April 11, 1697, 6 *Henry*, May 17, 1699, m. Oct. 24, 1728, Elizabeth Billings of Little Compton, R. I., 7 *Mary*, 1701, 8 *Barnabas*, 1703, 9 *Ephraim*, 1707.

(4) **Joseph**, b. in Duxbury, 1656, d. 1721–2 in 65th yr. in Taunton. He m. Aug. 1681, Mary Leonard, dau. of Major Thomas, and b. Aug. 2, 1663. Res. Taunton. He inherited a large estate from his father. His 7 chil. were.

1 *Joseph*, b. 1682, m. March 13, 1706–7, Ruth Reed, 2 *Elkanah*, b. 1684, 3 *Mary*, b. 1686, m. Joseph Winslow, of Swansey and d. March 28, 1719, 4 *Hannah*, b. 1688, m. Feb. 8, 1710–11, Wm. Hodges, of Norton, and d. March 7, 1715, 5 *Sarah*, b. 1690, m. Thos. Reed of Dighton, 6 *Abigail*, b. 1692, m. Ephraim Hayward, of Bridgwater, 7 *Elizabeth*, b. 1694, m. Elkanah Leonard, of Middleboro'.

The 1st son, Capt. *Joseph*, b. 1682—1739, had Simeon, and he had James the merchant, and he, James, of Taunton and Barney of Elizabeth City, N. C., and this James, of T., had Samuel T., of N. Y. City. All were b. in T. He also had Job, who d. May 19, 1755, ae. 47, father of James, 1740,—1811, who m. Abigail (Freeman) of Norton, and had Rev. James, b. in West Taunton, Nov. 7, 1799, grad. B. U. 1821, studied Theology with Rev. A. Cobb, West Taunton, ord. Sept. 29, 1830, over the churches in Guildhall and Granby, Vt., dismissed May 4, 1836, preached 4 years in Dublin and 7 years in Gilsum, N. H., and after Oct. 1851, in Shutesbury, Mass. He m. Oct. 5, 1831, Margaretta C. Tubbs of W. T.

(5) **Elizabeth.**

She m. John Smith.

(6) **Sarah.**

She m. James Dean.

(7) **Mary**, b. in T., d. May 18th, 1731, in 73d yr.

She m. Jan. 9th, 1676, Nathaniel French, who d. June 14th, 1711, ae. 73. Both were buried in the Walker grave yard.

(8) **Abigail**, b. in T.

She m. Feb. 1st, 1683, Edward Bobit, (Babbitt,) who was son of Edward, and b. July 15th, 1655. They had Edward, b. Feb. 14th, 1684, and perhaps others.

4. III. PHILLIP WALKER,²

Of Rehoboth, Mass.

His biography may be found in connection with the Genealogy of his descendants, immediately following that of the Taunton Family.

THIRD GENERATION.

Children of JAMES WALKER,² [2] of Taunton.

5. I. **James**,³ (10) b. 1645–6, d. June 22, 1718, ae. 72 yrs.

He m. Dec. 23, 1673, Bathsheba Brooks, dau. of Gilbert, of Rehoboth. She was b. 1655, and d. Feb. 24, 1738, in 85th yr. (Ins.) Will was proved, April, 17, 1739. He was constable in T. in 1689, and admitted to freedom in 1689. He had 50 acres of land laid out for him, near Wm. Hacks' line. The lot began at So. Purchase line, and run north, 2 points. (Prop. Rec.)

In 1697, there was a graunt to him of "50 acres on the west syde of Three Mile river, below the brook that runs into it, below John Hodges' lot."

He lived at the Weir, in Taunton, where Col. Israel Dean, late of T., lived, and where the road from the Weir, to Dighton, leaves the river and turns west, towards the Presbrey brook.

It is conjectured, that the following graunt refers to this James, because the father would have been called Mr. James Walker.

"Libertie is graunted by the Court, vnto James Walker, of Taunton, to keep an ordinary att Taunton, and for that end, that hee be prouided of all necessaries for that purpose, and that he keep good order in his house, that, soe no damage may acrew vnto any, respecting the pmises." 1679, Plym. Col. Rec. vol. 6, 15th p.

In his will, proved Sept. 1, 1718, bequests are made to wife, 6 sons and 5 daus. These indicate the places where the sons lived, viz.: "To James, eldest son, 50 acres, where he lives. To 2d son, Nathan, land in Taunton, So. Purchase. To 3d son, David, 2 lower lotts, in Dighton, where he now dwells. To 4th son, Nehemiah, my new dwelling house, in T., and my home lott, and barn thereon, and my lott lying by Jas. Burt's, in T., and my land over the Creek,—and 50 acres lying on the three mile river, at a place called the narrow passage. To 5th son, Josiah, 3 upper lotts, in Dighton."

Fac-simile of his autograph of 1690.

James walker

6. II. **Peter**,³ (21) b. 1649, d. April 4, 1711, ae. 60. (Ins.) [62 ?]

He m. Hannah, who d. Jan. 15, 1704, ae. 44 yrs. (Ins.) Nothing more is known of her. He was an iron dealer, in company with Hon. James Philips. He was appointed with Joseph and Samuel Richmond, to lay out "the highway from Bayting Brook, to Assonet."

CHILDREN OF B. HENRY WALKER,^{8} [445] OF TAUNTON.

650. I. HENRY ARNOLD,^{9} b. Jan. 8, 1850.
651. II. SARAH FLORENCE,^{9} b. April 5, 1855.

CHILDREN OF GEORGE E. WALKER^{8} [451] OF TAUNTON.

652. I. ESTELLA CHURCH,^{9} b. Oct. 31, 1851.
653. II. RUTH ANNIE,^{9} b. Dec. 28, 1852, d. Sept. 1, 1853.
654. III. FRANCIS IRVING,^{9} b. March 23, 1856.
655. IV. LIZZIE ANN,^{9} b. Nov. 9, 1859.

CHILD OF JAMES G. WALKER,^{8} [454] OF TAUNTON.

656. I. FRED ALTON,^{9} b. Sept. 14, 1859.

TENTH GENERATION.

CHILD OF EUGENE WALKER,^{9} [478] OF SALEM, MICH.

657. I. WM. PEREZ,^{10} b. April 21, 1859.

CHILDREN OF HENRY A. WALKER,^{9} [489] OF SALEM, MICH.

658. I. MERCY ANN,^{10} b. Nov. 23, 1854.
659. II. CHARLES H.,^{10} b. June 8, 1857.

CHILDREN OF OREN E. WALKER,^{9} [543] OF NORTON.

660. I. IDA AUGUSTA,^{10} b. Feb. 8, 1857.
661. II. LYDIA A.,^{10} b. Nov. 23, 1858.

CHILD OF ABIATHAR F. WALKER,^{9} [563] OF TAUNTON.

662. I. CORA FRANCES,^{10} b. Jan. 11, 1854.

CHILD OF JOHN W. WALKER,^{9} [571] OF NEW BEDFORD.

663. I. HENRY E. P.,^{10} b. 1859, in N. B.

PHILIP WALKER,^{2}

OF REHOBOTH,

AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

I. PHILIP WALKER,^{2} (2) was the son of "Widow Walker,^{1}" of Rehoboth, and brother of James Walker, of Taunton. (See 1st p.) The earliest record of him is a deed bearing his signature dated at Rehoboth, 1653. He was one of the Grand Jury, May 17, 1655, propounded for freedom, June 8, 1655, and took the oath of fidelity, June 1, 1658. In June 22, 1658, his name appears in the first division of Rehoboth No. Purchase, (now Attleboro',) when lots were drawn for "the meadow, on the North side of the Town," and again, May 26, 1668, in the division of lands, in the North Purchase.

His birth-place, and age, and date of his arrival in this country, are not known. He married, about 1654, Jane, dau. of —— Butterworth, of Rehoboth, or Michael Metcalf, of Dedham.*

(✓ she was Metcalf

She survived him, and afterward m. June 2, 1684, John Polley, of Roxbury, and lived there till her death, in 1702. Dea. Walker was buried Aug. 21, 1679, and his dust, reposes, no doubt, in the ancient grave yard, at Seekonk. His estate was appraised, Oct., 1679, on oaths of James Walker,† and Samuel Walker. In'y £681.

His home and farm were on Watchemoket Neck, south of the Great Plain, at what is now the Kinnicut Place, on the road from

---

* The compiler had supposed, till lately, that Philip's wife was a Butterworth, as his son, Samuel, had an "Uncle Samuel Butterworth." It is, of course, possible, that a Butterworth married a sister of Philip, but it is not known that he had any sister, except Sarah, w. of John Tisdale. What is more probable is, that Butterworth was the uncle of Samuel's wife. Late investigation respecting "Joane Walker," dau. of Michael Metcalf, of Dedham, who, it is stated, in Metcalf's Genealogy, married Samuel (?) Walker, of Rehoboth, has led to the opinion that it was Philip, and not Samuel Walker, whom she married. For reasons, see Samuel Walker, immediately following the descendants of Philip.

† There is no record of any James Walker, in R., in the town register, nor in the Probate Rec. of the County, excepting as far back as 1643 and 45, which have been alluded to, in the sketch of James Walker, of Taunton. (See 6 and 7 pp.) He was about 60 yrs. of age at the time of Philip's death, and was, undoubtedly, the James, who helped appraise his estate.

Providence, R. I., to Barrington, about 1 mile from India Bridge, and in Rehoboth, now Seekonk, an attractive and fertile spot, overlooking the Providence river.*

He left a house unfinished, which the Court ordered to be completed at the expense of the estate. The estate was to be divided as follows :—

"In reference vnto the disposall of the estate of Phillip Walker, late of Reboboth, deceased, the Court ordered, that the now house in building shall be finished out of the whole intire estate, and that those that shall injoy it, shall make some proportionable abatement, of what shall be theire pticular interest, in the said estate, and that the widdow shall have a comfortable, and convenient being therein, during her widdowhood, and that the said widdow shall have her third of the said estate, and the sume of twenty pound, for and towards the bringing vp of the youngest child, and that the remainder of the said estate be deuided into seauen equall ptes, whereof the eldest, to have a double pte, and the rest to be deuided vnto the other children, in equall and alike proportions."

She gave bond of administration, Oct. 29, 1679,

"June 7, 1681, This Court graunts libertie vnto Jane Walker, widdow of Rehoboth, to make sale of a small psell of meddow ground, with the advice and approbation of Mr. Daniell Smith and Ensigne Pecke.

Philip Walker's occupation in 1659, was that of weaver. He became at length one of the wealthiest men of Rehoboth. In the allotments in 1671, his estate was estimated at £387, and was exceeded by only two in the town, the whole number being 78. In 1678, it was exceeded by only one, in a valuation of 83 estates. He held various positions of trust and honor. He was surveyor, 1657, constable, 1658, on the Grand Inquest, 1668 and '78, one of the Select men, several yrs. between 1666 and '75, and was deputy to Plymouth, 1669. May 14, 1669, he was chosen one of a Committee, to meet a Committee of the new town of Swansey, to settle a controversy, (probably about boundaries.) He also held the office of Deacon, in the Church. Nov. 2, 1663, Goodman Walker was appointed one of a Committee, to buy or build a parsonage,

---

* The first permanent settlement in Rehoboth, was around the "Great Plain," in that part of the township called Seekonk, meaning, "the abode of the wild goose." It is supposed that Rev. Mr. Newman, and his society, selected this spot because it was an extensive plain, already cleared of forest trees, and favorable for the cultivation of Indian corn. It is not far from the Pawtucket and Providence rivers, and had abundant facilities for obtaining fish and fowl.

or "house for the ministry." This "Goodman,"* was undoubtedly Philip, as there is no trace of any other Walker in R. at that time. June 20, 1678, the town having unanimously called Rev. Mr. Angier, to settle amongst them, "the townsmen and Deacon Walker, were chosen to treat with Mr. A. about it." It was also agreed upon by the town, that the sums to be raised, be freely subscribed, "if it may be," but if the subscriptions fell short, "Deacon Walker, Gilbert Brooks, and 3 others, should devise the mode to raise said sums."

In one period, the towns were obliged to sustain the war against Philip. Many who served as private soldiers, advanced money. The list of those in R. is preserved, and shows that the amount furnished by Deacon Walker, was £26, the largest sum, with two exceptions, and about double what was advanced by any of the 77 others in the catalogue.

Thus, like his elder brother, James, of Taunton, he was prominent in efforts and sacrifices for the maintenance and usefulness of the ministry, and the protection of the settlement from Indian ravages; sustaining at least, one kind of relationship and resemblance to him, and one which is certainly no dishonor. While James in Taunton, was distinguished and useful as one of the Council of War, for Plymouth Colony, Philip, in Rehoboth, was among the foremost in furnishing the "sinews of war." Rehoboth, an isolated plantation, was especially exposed to the incursions of the savages. The first and last blood of that fierce struggle, in which Metacomet or Philip, the powerful and subtle Indian chieftain, fought for the destruction of all the colonists in New England, was shed in Rehoboth. Here the conflict opened in 1675, here it closed by the fall of Philip, in 1676.

Deacon Walker, it is probable, was in that gallant fight of the people of Rehoboth, with Philip, and his best warriors. Driven to desperation, and fearing if he remained at Mt. Hope, he would be taken captive, the sachem fled into the interior, about the 1st of Aug. 1675. Encouraged by the strong appeals of Mr. Newman, their minister, and though not a part of the military force of the Colony, under his leadership, they pursued Philip, with great courage and activity. So rapid was their movement, that they overtook the rear of his forces at night, and with the aid of a party of friendly Moheagan Indians, who had joined them, attacked him and killed 30 of his men, and carried away much booty, without any loss. When the minister led the way in so noble an enterprise, it is no

groundless conjecture, that his Deacon was with him, especially one who had advanced money so generously for the defense of the settlement.

---

* It was anciently the custom, to use this prefix, "Goodman," in place of Mr.

March 28, 1776, just after "Pierce's Fight," the Indians fell upon that part of Rehoboth, called Seekonk, and burnt 40 houses and 30 barns. As Dea. Walker, at the time of his decease, 3 yrs. later, left a house unfinished, it may have been, that his was one of those burnt by the Indians. Philip designed an assault upon Taunton, but apprised of it, the town was prepared for defense, and when he approached, July 11, '76, he was met with such determined resistance, that he was compelled to fly, after burning two houses.*

Apprehensive of their destruction, the Cape towns sent a Com. to Bridgwater, Taunton, and Rehoboth, to invite the inhabitants to take up their residence with them during the war, but the invitation was declined. The answer of Rehoboth, by their Com. indicates an unflinching bravery, and a sublime, though submissive faith. The heroic independence, the undaunted fortitude of those isolated settlers, in the face of the appalling perils which threatened their extinction, prove that they were worthy to be among the founders of civilization, and the defenders of religion, in the New World, and are entitled to the grateful remembrance and honor of their descendants and beneficiaries.

"Though no tablets cast their shadows,
  Where they slumber from their toil,
Blood of theirs is on our meadows,
  Dust of theirs is in our soil."

All the notices of the position and character of Dea. Philip Walker, though few in number, are highly honorable. There is not a single spot on his escutcheon. He was prosperous, accumulating a property that was large for that period. He was entrusted with the most responsible office in the church, save that of the minister. It is indeed a grateful record, his generous contribution for his country and for Christ. His office and his services are a proof of superior excellence in character and usefulness, and leave no doubt that he was eminently a Patriot and a Christian. Cut down in the vigor of his manhood, his death must have been a sore calamity to the colony and the church, "as when an armor bearer falleth."

---

* When Philip escaped from Mt. Hope, in '75, a part of his warriors scattered in the wilderness, about Taunton, and burnt the houses of James Walker, and John Tisdill, his brother-in-law. John Tisdill, was killed, and 2 other soldiers, who were from Eastham. Though Baylies states this as in 1675, may not the "two houses" burnt July 11th, '76, have been those of J. W. and J. T. It is known that John Tisdill was killed June 27, '76.

"Buried Aug. 21, 1679," as the brief, sad record is, it is no groundless conjecture, that the members of the church, and the inhabitants of Rehoboth, gathered on this early autumnal day, to recognize the services, and honor the memory of the departed Deacon. The thought and utterance of their hearts, interpreting their great loss, may naturally have been, "How is the strong staff broken, and the beautiful rod."

His moral worth and piety have been inherited in a remarkable degree by his numerous descendants, unto the 8th and 9th generations. They furnish proof that the moral character, is an inheritance more surely entailed than any other. They illustrate the law that, "if the root be holy, so are the branches." They teach that, if it be a great privilege, it is also a great responsibility, to "partake of the root and fatness of the olive tree," in a godly ancestry.

For their virtues and piety are to be remembered, not for the fostering of family pride, but as an example and incentive to a worthy life.

It is an idle and self condemnatory boast to say, "we have Abraham to our father," unless we "do the works of Abraham." But a multitude sleep in the old grave yard, at Seekonk, who proved their legitimacy from Deacon Philip Walker, by their christian worth, and many others have gone forth into other wildernesses, to help establish, and sustain the institutions, connected with religion and the public weal, and are now laboring, or resting from their labors, in many sections of the country. Not many illustrious names are found among his numerous, and widely scattered descendants. They have swelled the ranks of the honest, and faithful yeomanry of the land. They have cherished and transmitted the doctrinal faith, and reproduced the piety and usefulness of their ancestor. Of a great number of them it is true.

" They were never squires and teachers,
  They were never wise and great,
But they listened to their preachers,
  Worshipped God, and loved the State.

"They were men of humble station,
  They were women pure and true,
And they served their generation,
  Worked, and fought, and lived for you."

THIRD GENERATION.

Children of PHILIP WALKER,^{2} [1] of Rehoboth.

2. I. Samuel,^{3} (12) b. Feb., 1655, d. Aug. 12, 1712. He m. Nov. 11, 1681, Martha Ide, dau. of Nicholas, b. Oct. 6, 1654, and d. Aug. 1700. He then m. Elizabeth. After his death she m. John Smith, of Roxbury, pub. March 17, 1714, and d. March 13, 1718, in 42d yr.

He was admitted freeman, in 1682, and was constable the same year. He served under Major Bradford in King Philip's War, and is variously styled, Cornet, Lieut., Capt. and Gent. His In'y was £1586, 18s., 3d., a large estate for the time, including about 700 acres besides personal property. In the appraisal there is mention of "his Trooping Horse and furniture belonging to him." He was Rep. to the General Court in 1705, lived on Watchemoket Neck, in R., now Seekonk, and had 8 chil.

3. II. Sarah,^{3} b. Feb. 16, 1657, buried Aug. 2, 1693. She m. Dec. 27, 1677, Abraham Perrin, son of John, b. March, 1, 1647. He was buried May 15, 1694. In'y £230. Chil. 1679—1692—

(1) *Sarah.* (2) *Rebekah.* (3) *Elizabeth.* (4) *Abraham*, d. y. (5) *Anne.* (6) *Ruth.* (7) *Isaac*, m. Susanna, and had 2 sons and 4 daus. (See No. 86.) (8) *Jacob*, d. y.

4. III. Philip,^{3} (20) b. March, 1661, (1661–2?) d. Feb. 17, 1739–40, in 78th yr. (Ins.) He m. —ember, 1689, Mary Bowen, dau. of Richard probably. She was buried May 22, 1694. He m. 2dly, Sarah, who d. Feb. 6, 1739, in 68th yr. (Ins.) He united with the Ch. April, 25, 1697. Inv'y £1750. He had 10 chil. On his grave stone in Seekonk Cemetery, is the epitaph, "Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord."

5. IV. Elizabeth,^{3} b. in 1662. Twin with Philip. According to the inquest, she "was accedentally drowned; shee, being sent to scoole, was found alsoe accedentally in the river first by two youthes; and they makeing known the same to two wemen, the wife of Nicholas Jyde and the wife of Roger Annadoune, and then to William Sabine, whoe forthwith came and drew her out of the water, as hee saith. From the testimony of the afor specified psons with other concurring cercomstances, wee, the subscribers, conceive that the child, which was two yeares and a halfe old, before specifyed, came accedentally to her end. Seauenth of Aug. 1664." Plym. Col. Rec. 4th vol. 83, 84 pp.

6. V. Mary,^{3} b. May, 1663, d. May 8, 1694. In'y £44. Her Will, proved May 28, 1694, contains bequests "To cousin (niece) Ann Perron, the book 'Cordial Comfort.' To cousin (niece) Abraham Perron, 'Secret thoughts in dying times.' To cousin (niece) Sarah Perron, my Bible."

7. VI. Experience,^{3} birth unknown, buried Nov. 10, 1674.

8. VII. Elizabeth,^{3} b. April 1, 1666, m. March 31, 1687, Henry Sweet, of Swanzey, who d. Dec. 8, 1704. In'y £100. Chil.—

(1) *John*, b. 1695, m. 1719, Hannah Peck, and 1730, Sarah Claflen. 13 chil. (2) *Philip*, d. y. (3) *Thomas*, b. 1701, m. 1728, Rebecca Peck. 11 chil. (4) *Michael*, d. y. (5) *Dorothy.*

9. VIII. Michael,^{3} b. March 1, 1667, buried Feb., 1677.

February the 16th, 1677.

"Wee, whose names are vnderwritten, being called together on a corroners inquest, vpon that sad accedent, which befell Micaell Walker, about ten yeers of age, wee doe find, that hee came accedentally to his end by his falling through the flore of the saw mill vpon the water wheel, or just by it when it was goeing, and was carried away with the streame vnder the iyce."

Steuen Paine, Sen'r and 11 others.

10. IX. Ebenezer,^{3} (30) b. "Mid Nov." 1676, d. March 13, 1717–18. He m. Nov. 19, 1700, Mehetable Willmarth, who d. Oct. 27, 1702. He m. 2dly, Oct. 11, 1703, Dorethy Abell, dau. of Lieut. Preserved, and b. Nov. 18, 1677. He and w. renewed covenant, 1709. He had 11 children. In'y £1575. Res. Rehoboth, now Seekonk. She m. 2dly, 1724, John Reed and d. Aug. 1, 1741, in 64th yr. (Ins.)

11. X. Martha.^{3} Not of age in 1680.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Children of SAMUEL WALKER,^{3} [2] of Rehoboth.

12. I. Samuel,^{4} (41) b. Nov. 11, 1682, d. Aug. 23, 1712. He m. Feb. 9, 1705–6, Bethya Read, who d. Oct. 18, 1708. He then m. Nov. 10, 1709, Ruth Bliss, dau. of Sam'l and Mary, and b. Nov. 11, 1687. In'y £129. Had 3 chil. His widow m. Jan., 1713–14, Noah Saben.

When this was written (c 1860) fewer printed sources were available). See TAG article suggesting the author relied on unchecked correspondence for supplementing details he found. He assumed Esther Walker was of the second marriage because she was baptized, in 1697. He evidently did not know nor consider the fact that the Bowens were Welsh Baptists. For us this is easy to solve - She married our Isaac Averill, age 29, in 1709. Isaac definitely was not the type to marry a 12-year old! Savage's "Dictionary" obviously copies this genealogy - Ebenezer b. 3 Sep 1688, no further record. Maybe poor writing or worn out records make Esther look like Ebenezer?? Unless they were twins??

See Family Record Sheet 3

13. II. Pati
m. June 14, 170
They were admitte
Jan. 18, 1708, to I
(1). *Noah.* (2)
Thankful. (7) *J*

14. III. Timo
in 59th yr. He m.
it not Benjamin? S
was admitted to t
m. 2dly, Jan. 15,
influence in the affa
chil. His widow m

15. IV. Peter,^{4} (51) b. Sept. 18, 1689, d. March 24, 1760. He m. June 9, 1715, Mary Child, of Roxbury, dau. of Benj'n and Grace (Morris.) She d. between 1730 and 32. They were admitted to Communion, Oct. 10, 1724. He m. 2d, Jan. 18, 1732–3, Mrs. Martha Read, who d. Jan. 16, 1747–8, in 58th yr. (Ins.) He m. 3d, Bethiah, who was a widow in 1760, and in Woodstock, Ct. His In'y was £238. Res. Rehoboth. Had 13 chil.

16. V. Ephraim,^{4} (64) b. Sept. 4, 1692, d. March 2, 1731–2, in 40th yr. (Ins.) He m. Mary, dau. of Lieut. Preserved Abell. She d. July, 1747. In her will she bequeathed £10, to the 1st Church in Rehoboth, for the purchase of a cup for the communion service,— to Jas. Clay, her negro boy Cæsar, and provided for his liberty. They had 8 chil.

17. VI. Martha,^{4} b. Sept. 8, 1696. She m. Oct. 5, 1721, Ichabod Bowen, who d. March 20, 1760. Chil.—

(1) *Eleazer*, b. 1722, m. Dorothy, d. before 1760. (2) *Samuel*, b. 1724. (3) *Alse*, d. Feb. 25, 1791. (4) *Simeon*, b. 1730. (5) *Ichabod*, b. 1735. (6) *Martha*, b. 1737.

BY 2d MARRIAGE.

18. VII. Elizabeth,^{4} b. Aug. 10, 1702, d. Dec. 28, 1702.

19. VIII. Benjamin, (72) b. Aug. 12, 1703, d. 1787. He m. —— Bicknell, then Elizabeth Childs, and 3dly, —— Cadwell, of Hartford, Ct. He was in Rehoboth 1725, but settled in Ashford, Ct. Had 8 chil. all by 1st wife. Tradition says he had 5 chil. born in 5 successive yrs. in the month of July, that the first 3 sons were Benj., Eben'r and Eph'm, and the 3d, went alone first. Benj'n 1st born, was 5 yrs. of age when he walked, yet he became robust and athletic, as have been all the W's of his branch.

CHILDREN OF PHILIP WALKER,^{3} [4] OF REHOBOTH.

20. I. Ebenezer,^{4} b. Oct. 21, 1688. He probably d. unm. or without issue, as there is no mention of him or heirs in his father's will.

21. II. James,^{4} (80) b. Sept. 3, 1690, d. Nov. 28, 1747. He m. Elizabeth, who d. Dec. 29, 1747-8. They renewed covenant Oct. 3, 1735. Res. Rehoboth. In'y £818. Had 6 chil.

22. III. Philip,^{4} (86) b. Aug. 13, 1693, d. Nov. 5, 1742. He m. Dec. 7, 1721, Mary Chard, who d. Sept. 3, 1737. He then m. March 4, 1737–8, Ann Martin, of Bristol, R. I., dau. of Melatiah, and b. Sept. 9, 1699. He was Captain. Inv'y, £1429. Res. Rehoboth. Had 8 chil. His widow m. 2dly, July 27, 1743, Jeremiah Allen, and d. July 7, 1747.

BY 2d MARRIAGE.

23. IV. Sarah,^{4} b. Jan. 8, 1695–6. It is inferred that she first m. Thomas Kilton, Feb. 3, 1724, as there was no other Sarah, born early enough for this marriage. Had—

(1) *Amey*, b. Oct. 9, 1726.

Sarah^4 was w. of —— Holdridge, in 1739. (Will of father.)

24. V. Esther,^{4} b. ——, baptized July 4, 1697. She m. —— Avery, (father's will) and had—

(1) *Esther*, living in 1749.

Esther Walker m. May 16, 1709, Isaac Averill. (Re'th Rec.) Was it Esther^4? If so, she must have been oldest child. There is no other E.

25. VI. Mary,^{4} b. March 19, 1699–1700. It is supposed she m. 1st, Josiah Ide, June 18, 1724, who d. Nov. 30, 1731. She was w. of —— Robinson, in 1739. (Father's will.) Chil.—

(1) *Elizabeth*, b. March 19, 1725. (2) *Daniel*, b. June 13, 1726. (3) *Josiah*, b. Oct. 16, 1728. (4) *Mary*, b. Jan. 1, 1730–1.

26. VII. Jane,^{4} b. March 21, 1702. She m. Dec. 23, 1724, Samuel Newman, Jr., of Rehoboth. They had chil. baptized in Seekonk. (Ch. Rec.) Chil.—

(1) *David*, b. April 20, 1727. (2) *Jesse*, b. Aug. 2, 1730. (3) *Sarah*, b. July 3, 1733. (4) *Nathan*, b. Dec. 25, 1735. (5) *Samuel*, b. March 22, 1738–9.

27. VIII. Nathaniel,^{4} (94) b. Jan. 31, 1703–4, d. April 20, 1783. He m. May 11, 1727, Anna Sweeting, dau. of Henry, b. May 1, 1707, and d. March 23, 1772. He is called "best beloved

son," in his father's will. He united with the ch. March 25, 1733, held the office of Deacon, and was also Rep. to General Court, 1750 and '51. Res. R. Had 9 chil.

28. IX. **Daniel,**^{4} (103) b. Oct. 10, 1706. He m. Jan. 1, 1729–30, Mary Perry, dau. of Jasiel and Rebecca, and bro. of Jasiel, Jr. (See No. 44.) She d. in Rutland, Vt. Both m. ch. He joined the expedition to Quebec, and was there at the taking of the city in 1759. On his return, when between Clarendon (then Socialboro',) and No. 4, New Hampshire, (now Charleston,) he froze his feet badly. Attracted by the appearance of the country on his way home, he travelled up the Otter Creek, as far as Clarendon. On the 1st of April, 1768, removed with his family to C., where he died. He early settled in Coventry, R. I., and built him a house, which was situated a little East of South, from the Summit Station, on Providence and Hartford R. R. All that now remains is the chimney, still standing, (1857,) the house having been taken down in 1853. He left also, other traces of his sojourn in C. South of his dwelling on the hill are two little graves, always said by oldest inhabitants to be graves of Walker children. They are still visible, and the present owner of the farm has lately enclosed the place for a grave yard. It is a tradition there, that Mr. W. one evening saw a strange light on the hill. Losing his 2 chil. soon after, he had them buried where he saw the singular light. These two graves on the hill, alone, and yet guarded for more than half a century, and remembered as Mr. W.'s children, confirm the record in Attleboro', which gives names and births of his chil. He was living in A. in 1750, where he owned lands inherited by will, from his father's estate. It is no wonder that in view of the lands on the Otter Creek, he should abandon the rough soil of Coventry, R. I. Had 12 chil.

29. X. **Stephen,**^{4} (115) b. Aug. 7, 1709. He m. Jan. 3, 1733-4, Rebekah Millerd, dau. of Solomon and Elizabeth, b. Sept. 2, 1706, and d. Sept. 17, 1837, ae. 31 yrs. and 15 days. They had 2 chil. He m. 2dly, July 20, 1738, Mehetable Harris of Roxbury, and had 2 chil. He was a Weaver; removed to Pomfret, Ct., and was recommended to the ch. in P., 1739. He probably left P., as search has been fruitless, to learn more of him or his chil.

CHILDREN OF EBENEZER WALKER,^{3} [10] OF REHOBOTH.

30. I. **Ebenezer,**^{4} b. June 30, 1701, d. May 26, 1702,

31. II. **Mehetable,**^{4} b. Dec. 18, 1702, d. May 5, 1705.

By 2d Marriage.

32. III. **Johanna,**^{4} b. July 18, 1704, d. Jan. 22, 1786, ae 81. She m. Nov. 12, 1724, David Carpenter, son of David, b. June 1, 1701, and d. July 11, 1787. A farmer in Rehoboth. Chil.—

(1) *Thomas*, b. July 15, 1725, m. Dorothy Bosworth. (2) *David*, b. Oct. 1, 1727, d. unm. (3) *Elizabeth*, b. March 15, 1730. (4) *John*, b. April 6, 1733, m. 3dly, Mary Ide, (See No. 35.) (5) *Nathaniel*, b. Jan. 13. 1743–44, m. Elizabeth Carpenter.

33. IV. **Mary,**^{4} d. Jan. 12, 1708–9.

34. V. **Caleb,** (119) b. Oct. 30, 1706, d. April 3, 1768, in 62d yr. He m. Abigail Dean, of Taunton, dau. of Doct. Ezra, b. Dec. 10, 1704. She united with the ch. in R. April 12, 1730, and d. Jan. 1, 1795, in 91st yr. (Ins.) They had 5 chil.

35. VI. **Dorothy,**^{4} b. Jan. 11, 1708–9, d. April 22, 1796, ae. 87. She m. as 2d wife, Dec. 2, 1743, Edward Carpenter, son of Obadiah? b. Oct. 5, 1705, and d. Feb. 24, 1771, in 66th yr. He was a Farmer and Ensign. Chil.—

(1) *Mary*, b. Nov. 13, 1744. (2) *Edward*, b. Dec. 6, 1746 (3) *Dorothy*, b. Jan. 26, (June ?) 1749. (4) *Mary*, b. Nov. 18, 1752, m. 1st, Edward Ide, then John Carpenter, (No. 32.)

36. VII. **John,** } b. Feb. 18, 1710–11, d. Feb. 27, 1710–11.
37. VIII. **Sarah,** } b. Feb. 18, 1710–11, d. March 2, 1710–11.

38. IX. **Elizabeth,**^{4} b. March 24, 1711–12, d. March 18, 1753, in 42d yr. (Ins.) She m. Oct. 28, 1731, Miles Shorey, who d. May 31, 1752, in 42d yr. Chil.—

(1) *Sarah*, b. May 1, 1732, (2) *Elizabeth*, b. Jan. 31, 1733–34. (3) *John*, b. March 30, 1736, m. Patience, and had 6 chil. (4) *Jacob*, b. July 24, 1738, m. Kezia, and had 7 chil. (5) *Sarah*, b. Aug. 1, 1740. (6) *Molle*, b. Sept. 24, 1743. (7) *Miles*, b. Jan. 22, 1745–6. (8) *David*, b. March 16, 1747–8, m. Alathea. (9) *Hannah*, b. April 1, 1750.

39. X. **Martha,**^{4} b. July 20, 1714. She m. April 4, 1733–4, David Chaffee. Res. Attleboro. Chil.—

(1) *David*, bapt. 1733. (2) *Martha*, bapt. 1735. (3) *Martha*, bapt. 1737. (4) *Dorothy*, bapt. 1739. (5) *Patience*, bapt. 1742. (6) *Abner*, bapt. 1746.

40. XI. **Ebenezer,**^{4} (124) b. Dec. 9, 1716, d. Sept., 1799. He m. Jan. 26, 1737, Bethiah Brown, dau. of Wm. and Elizabeth, of Rehoboth, and b. July 8, 1718. They united with the Ch. in R., Jan. 6, 1739, and were dismissed to the 2d Ch. in Ashford, (West-

13. II. Patience,^{4} b. March 30, 1685, d. Nov. 28, 1730. She m. June 14, 1705, Noah Perrin, of Roxbury. He was a tailor. They were admitted to the ch., April, 1724, and had 7 chil. from Jan. 18, 1708, to Dec. 22, 1729—

(1) *Noah*. (2) *Mary*. (3) *Samuel*. (4) *Elizabeth*. (5) *Patience*. (6) *Thankful*. (7) *John*.

14. III. Timothy,^{4} (44) b. Sept. 14, 1687, d. Nov. 17, 1745, in 59th yr. He m. May 14, 1713, Grace Child, dau. of Edward, [was it not Benjamin? See No. 15.] and b. about 1678, in Rehoboth. She was admitted to the ch., June 14, 1724, and d. Oct. 30, 1729. He m. 2dly, Jan. 15, 1729–30, Rachel Beverly. He exerted a great influence in the affairs of Rehoboth. In'y £2743, old tenor. Had 7 chil. His widow m. Daniel Greenwood, of Sutton, Nov. 15, 1748.

15. IV. Peter,^{4} (51) b. Sept. 18, 1689, d. March 24, 1760. He m. June 9, 1715, Mary Child, of Roxbury, dau. of Benj'n and Grace (Morris.) She d. between 1730 and 32. They were admitted to Communion, Oct. 10, 1724. He m. 2d, Jan. 18, 1732–3, Mrs. Martha Read, who d. Jan. 16, 1747–8, in 58th yr. (Ins.) He m. 3d, Bethiah, who was a widow in 1760, and in Woodstock, Ct. His In'y was £238. Res. Rehoboth. Had 13 chil.

16. V. Ephraim,^{4} (64) b. Sept. 4, 1692, d. March 2, 1731–2, in 40th yr. (Ins.) He m. Mary, dau. of Lieut. Preserved Abell. She d. July, 1747. In her will she bequeathed £10, to the 1st Church in Rehoboth, for the purchase of a cup for the communion service,—to Jas. Clay, her negro boy Cæsar, and provided for his liberty. They had 8 chil.

17. VI. Martha,^{4} b. Sept. 8, 1696. She m. Oct. 5, 1721, Ichabod Bowen, who d. March 20, 1760. Chil.—

(1) *Eleazer*, b. 1722, m. Dorothy, d. before 1760. (2) *Samuel*, b. 1724. (3) *Alse*, d. Feb. 25, 1791. (4) *Simeon*. b. 1730. (5) *Ichabod*, b. 1735. (6) *Martha*, b. 1737.

By 2d Marriage.

18. VII. Elizabeth,^{4} b. Aug. 10, 1702, d. Dec. 28, 1702.

19. VIII. Benjamin, (72) b. Aug. 12, 1703, d. 1787. He m. —— Bicknell, then Elizabeth Childs, and 3dly, —— Cadwell, of Hartford, Ct. He was in Rehoboth 1725, but settled in Ashford, Ct. Had 8 chil. all by 1st wife. Tradition says he had 5 chil. born in 5 successive yrs. in the month of July, that the first 3 sons were Benj., Eben'r and Eph'm, and the 3d, went alone first. Benj'n 1st born, was 5 yrs. of age when he walked, yet he became robust and athletic, as have been all the W's of his branch.

Children of PHILIP WALKER,^{3} [4] of Rehoboth.

20. I. Ebenezer,^{4} b. Oct. 21, 1688. He probably d. unm. or without issue, as there is no mention of him or heirs in his father's will.

21. II. James,^{4} (80) b. Sept. 3, 1690, d. Nov. 28, 1747. He m. Elizabeth, who d. Dec. 29, 1747-8. They renewed covenant Oct. 3, 1735. Res. Rehoboth. In'y £818. Had 6 chil.

22. III. Philip,^{4} (86) b. Aug. 13, 1693, d. Nov. 5, 1742. He m. Dec. 7, 1721, Mary Chard, who d. Sept. 3, 1737. He then m. March 4, 1737–8, Ann Martin, of Bristol, R. I., dau. of Melatiah, and b. Sept. 9, 1699. He was Captain. Inv'y, £1429. Res. Rehoboth. Had 8 chil. His widow m. 2dly, July 27, 1743, Jeremiah Allen, and d. July 7, 1747.

By 2d Marriage.

23. IV. Sarah,^{4} b. Jan. 8, 1695–6. It is inferred that she first m. Thomas Kilton, Feb. 3, 1724, as there was no other Sarah, born early enough for this marriage. Had—

(1) *Amey*, b. Oct. 9, 1726.

Sarah^4 was w. of —— Holdridge, in 1739. (Will of father.)

24. V. Esther,^{4} b. ——, baptized July 4, 1697. She m. —— Avery, (father's will) and had—

(1) *Esther*, living in 1749.

Esther Walker m. May 16, 1709, Isaac Averill. (Re'th Rec.) Was it Esther^4? If so, she must have been oldest child. There is no other E.

25. VI. Mary,^{4} b. March 19, 1699–1700. It is supposed she m. 1st, Josiah Ide, June 18, 1724, who d. Nov. 30, 1731. She was w. of —— Robinson, in 1739. (Father's will.) Chil.—

(1) *Elizabeth*, b. March 19, 1725. (2) *Daniel*, b. June 13, 1726. (3) *Josiah*, b. Oct. 16, 1728. (4) *Mary*, b. Jan. 1, 1730–1.

26. VII. Jane,^{4} b. March 21, 1702. She m. Dec. 23, 1724, Samuel Newman, Jr., of Rehoboth. They had chil. baptized in Seekonk. (Ch. Rec.) Chil.—

(1) *David*, b. April 20, 1727. (2) *Jesse*, b. Aug. 2, 1730, (3) *Sarah*, b. July 3, 1733. (4) *Nathan*, b. Dec. 25, 1735. (5) *Samuel*, b. March 22, 1738-9.

27. VIII. Nathaniel,^{4} (94) b. Jan. 31, 1703–4, d. April 20, 1783. He m. May 11, 1727, Anna Sweeting, dau. of Henry, b. May 1, 1707, and d. March 23, 1772. He is called "best beloved

son," in his father's will. He united with the ch. March 25, 1733, held the office of Deacon, and was also Rep. to General Court, 1750 and '51. Res. R. Had 9 chil.

28. IX. Daniel,^{4} (103) b. Oct. 10, 1706. He m. Jan. 1, 1729–30, Mary Perry, dau. of Jasiel and Rebecca, and bro. of Jasiel, Jr. (See No. 44.) She d. in Rutland, Vt. Both m. ch. He joined the expedition to Quebec, and was there at the taking of the city in 1759. On his return, when between Clarendon (then Socialboro',) and No. 4, New Hampshire, (now Charleston,) he froze his feet badly. Attracted by the appearance of the country on his way home, he travelled up the Otter Creek, as far as Clarendon. On the 1st of April, 1768, removed with his family to C., where he died. He early settled in Coventry, R. I., and built him a house, which was situated a little East of South, from the Summit Station, on Providence and Hartford R. R. All that now remains is the chimney, still standing, (1857,) the house having been taken down in 1853. He left also, other traces of his sojourn in C. South of his dwelling on the hill are two little graves, always said by oldest inhabitants to be graves of Walker children. They are still visible, and the present owner of the farm has lately enclosed the place for a grave yard. It is a tradition there, that Mr. W. one evening saw a strange light on the hill. Losing his 2 chil. soon after, he had them buried where he saw the singular light. These two graves on the hill, alone, and yet guarded for more than half a century, and remembered as Mr. W.'s children, confirm the record in Attleboro', which gives names and births of his chil. He was living in A. in 1750, where he owned lands inherited by will, from his father's estate. It is no wonder that in view of the lands on the Otter Creek, he should abandon the rough soil of Coventry, R. I. Had 12 chil.

29. X. Stephen,^{4} (115) b. Aug. 7, 1709. He m. Jan. 3, 1733-4, Rebekah Millerd, dau. of Solomon and Elizabeth, b. Sept. 2, 1706, and d. Sept. 17, 1837, ae. 31 yrs. and 15 days. They had 2 chil. He m. 2dly, July 20, 1738, Mehetable Harris of Roxbury, and had 2 chil. He was a Weaver; removed to Pomfret, Ct., and was recommended to the ch. in P., 1739. He probably left P., as search has been fruitless, to learn more of him or his chil.

CHILDREN OF EBENEZER WALKER,^{3} [10] OF REHOBOTH.

30. I. Ebenezer,^{4} b. June 30, 1701, d. May 26, 1702,

31. II. Mehetable,^{4} b. Dec. 18, 1702, d. May 5, 1705.

By 2d Marriage.

32. III. Johanna,^{4} b. July 18, 1704, d. Jan. 22, 1786, ae 81. She m. Nov. 12, 1724, David Carpenter, son of David, b. June 1, 1701, and d. July 11, 1787. A farmer in Rehoboth. Chil.—

(1) *Thomas*, b. July 15, 1725, m. Dorothy Bosworth. (2) *David*, b. Oct. 1, 1727, d. unm. (3) *Elizabeth*, b. March 15, 1730. (4) *John*, b. April 6, 1733, m. 3dly, Mary Ide, (See No. 35.) (5) *Nathaniel*, b. Jan. 13. 1743–44, m. Elizabeth Carpenter.

33. IV. Mary,^{4} d. Jan. 12, 1708–9.

34. V. Caleb, (119) b. Oct. 30, 1706, d. April 3, 1768, in 62d yr. He m. Abigail Dean, of Taunton, dau. of Doct. Ezra, b. Dec. 10, 1704. She united with the ch. in R. April 12, 1730, and d. Jan. 1, 1795, in 91st yr. (Ins.) They had 5 chil.

35. VI. Dorothy,^{4} b. Jan. 11, 1708–9, d. April 22, 1796, ae. 87. She m. as 2d wife, Dec. 2, 1743, Edward Carpenter, son of Obadiah? b. Oct. 5, 1705, and d. Feb. 24, 1771, in 66th yr. He was a Farmer and Ensign. Chil.—

(1) *Mary*, b. Nov. 13, 1744. (2) *Edward*, b. Dec. 6, 1746 (3) *Dorothy*, b. Jan. 26, (June ?) 1749. (4) *Mary*, b. Nov. 18, 1752, m. 1st, Edward Ide, then John Carpenter, (No. 32.)

36. VII. John, } b. Feb. 18, 1710–11, d. Feb. 27, 1710–11.
37. VIII. Sarah, } d. March 2, 1710–11.

38. IX. Elizabeth,^{4} b. March 24, 1711–12, d. March 18, 1753, in 42d yr. (Ins.) She m. Oct. 28, 1731, Miles Shorey, who d. May 31, 1752, in 42d yr. Chil.—

(1) *Sarah*, b. May 1, 1732, (2) *Elizabeth*, b. Jan. 31, 1733–34. (3) *John*, b. March 30, 1736, m. Patience, and had 6 chil. (4) *Jacob*, b. July 24, 1738, m. Kezia, and had 7 chil. (5) *Sarah*, b. Aug. 1, 1740. (6) *Molle*, b. Sept. 24, 1743. (7) *Miles*, b. Jan. 22, 1745–6. (8) *David*, b. March 16, 1747–8, m. Alathea. (9) *Hannah*, b. April 1, 1750.

39. X. Martha,^{4} b. July 20, 1714. She m. April 4, 1733–4, David Chaffee. Res. Attleboro. Chil.—

(1) *David*, bapt. 1733. (2) *Martha*, bapt. 1735. (3) *Martha*, bapt. 1737. (4) *Dorothy*, bapt. 1739. (5) *Patience*, bapt. 1742. (6) *Abner*, bapt. 1746.

40. XI. Ebenezer,^{4} (124) b. Dec. 9, 1716, d. Sept., 1799. He m. Jan. 26, 1737, Bethiah Brown, dau. of Wm. and Elizabeth, of Rehoboth, and b. July 8, 1718. They united with the Ch. in R., Jan. 6, 1739, and were dismissed to the 2d Ch. in Ashford, (West-

Excerpts from:

"Memorial - Plymouth
Colony Walkers
1620 - 1860"

by J. B. R. Walker

Microfilm 103 6345 # 5

(ordered 10-9-90) LDS

1. "WIDOW WALKER," (2)

OF REHOBOTH, MASS.

SHE was one of the first purchasers and proprietors of the town of Rehoboth or Seacunk, now Seekonk, and one of the company who first settled there. Her name is in the list of those who in 1643 gave in the value of their estates, for a pro rata division of the lands. Hers was £50. In the division made June 31, 1644, she had a share, and lots were assigned her in several divisions afterward, as in drawing for the Great Plain, and on the 18th of 12 mo. (Feb.) 1646, for the new Meadow.

Her name then disappears. When and from whence she came to New England, and where she died, are not known. There is no record to tell us her age or her character. No trace of her biography is found, save the already noticed facts of her being associated with an adventurous company, most of whom went out from Weymouth into the wilderness,—a company marked for its religious character, (being a majority of the church at W.,) the highly educated and scholarly Rev. Samuel Newman being in some respects the Leader of the enterprise.—Her christian name and that of her husband, are never given. In the early records of the town, she has invariably the touching, sorrowful title of Widow, suggesting the history of blighted hopes, and a grief-stricken heart. Perhaps she had one to protect and cherish her when she left her native land,—and burying him in the sea came here alone,—or perhaps together, they had reached these shores, and were struggling in mutual help and loyalty to bear the toils, trials and perils incident to the settlement of a new country,—when death snatched him from her fellowship. But the more probable supposition is, that becoming a widow in England, she emigrated, perhaps with her younger son Philip, after the coming of James and Sarah. Bereft of counsellor and helper, she would naturally follow her children, and seek the sympathy and aid of her brother, or possibly only her brother-in-law, Mr. John Browne. That

DIVISION OF SURGERY
MARQUETTE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE
8700 WEST WISCONSIN AVENUE
MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN 53226
258-4610

VICTOR M. BERNHARD, M.D.

she did not come with them in 1635, and did not appear till 8 years afterward, favors this theory. James and Sarah, as favorites of their uncle Mr. Browne, and bereft of a father's counsel and support, may have been induced by his encouragements, to try their fortunes in the New World, leaving the mother behind with their younger brother, till they should learn how the experiment would issue.—Old enough to be of service, perhaps they were really indentured as "servants to Jo. Browne," and not merely, as a device to escape the pursuivants of the King in their attempt to get out of England. But these are conjectures merely. The interest of Mr. Browne in his nephew and niece, the two young emigrants of 1635, and the fact of their mother the "widow" being associated with Mr. B. in the settlement of Rehoboth, favors the belief that she was his sister, though he might have manifested the same regard, had she been only the sister of his wife. We may however see among the group of pious and brave settlers, not only the godly man who is their religious teacher, but also the form of one, whose sable garments tell us, she is a "Widow." The vision passes quickly before us, and is lost to our sight, awakening sympathy and interest for the woman, who, bereft of the companion of her youth, became a pioneer in founding the church and colony at Rehoboth. She was buried no doubt, in the ancient place of graves in Seekonk, where many of the fathers repose, but no stone marks the spot.

Philip Walker, afterward Deacon, and whose name first appears in 1653, to whom lands were assigned in 1658, and of whom the record commences, soon after her's ceases, was her son. In the description of his lands in the Proprietors' Records, 48th p., he says, "100 pound commons that was Thos. Pitts', 100 that was the Governor's, half a hundred that was *my mother's*." It is evident therefore that he was the son of "Widow Walker," for had his "mother" not been a widow, the lands would have been described as those of his father, and furthermore, there was no other person of the name in the Rehoboth Company, who could sustain this relation to him.

James Walker appears in the list of those in 1643 giving in the value of their estates. His name is next to that of the "Widow," and the amount is £50, but it is subjoined that his share is "now John ffitches." He however forfeited his lots to the town in 1644, in accordance with an order enacted by the proprietors in 1643, that those who did not fence their lands, or remove there with their families, should forfeit their lots. His name however, is mentioned

in one division of lands afterward, viz., that of 1645. It is probable however, that he never removed to Rehoboth, but concluded to remain in Taunton. Mr. John Browne, whose lots were forfeited at the same date with James Walker's, lived in Taunton at the time, and was his "cousin," (uncle.) Thus connected with the "Widow" and Mr. Browne, who was also one of the original Proprietors of Rehoboth, having been the agent of the company, while in Weymouth, and appointed by the Court at Plymouth, to make the purchase of Asameeum the Indian Chief, James Walker very naturally became associated with the settlement. Accordingly neither their names nor that of Mr. Browne is found in the list of the company that went from Weymouth. The strongest reason, however, for concluding he was of "Widow Walker's" family, is found in the fact that when Deacon Philip died in 1679, James was one of the appraisers of his estate. When it is remembered that there was no James Walker in R., at that time, that Rehoboth and Taunton townships were contiguous, and moreover, that James was about 60 years of age, it is beyond a reasonable doubt that he was not only nearly related to Philip, but was his brother, and accordingly was the son of "Widow Walker."

If we may judge of her worth from the virtues of her sons, and infer that they inherited the spirit and piety of their Pilgrim mother, and that her fidelity entitled her to use the language of the Roman matron respecting the Gracchi, "These are my jewels," then was she a compeer worthy to be associated with the pious and distinguished Mr. Newman and the useful Mr. Browne, leaders in the Rehoboth settlement.

And as "the glory of the fathers is their children," her name is not unhonored, and her character and worth not without their monument.

It is upon this evidence, which, though fragmentary and circumstantial, is nevertheless conclusive, that

"WIDOW WALKER"

is placed at the head of the Taunton Family, and in respect to them, as well as the more numerous and widely scattered family of Rehoboth, must be honored as

"THE MOTHER OF US ALL."

DIVISION OF SURGERY
MARQUETTE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE
8700 WEST WISCONSIN AVENUE
MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN 53226
258-4610

VICTOR M. BERNHARD, M.D.

(4) **Joseph**, b. in Duxbury, 1656, d. 1721–2 in 65th yr. in Taunton. He m. Aug. 1681, Mary Leonard, dau. of Major Thomas, and b. Aug. 2, 1663. Res. Taunton. He inherited a large estate from his father. His 7 chil. were.

1 *Joseph*, b. 1682, m. March 13, 1706–7, Ruth Reed, 2 *Elkanah*, b. 1684, 3 *Mary*, b. 1686, m. Joseph Winslow, of Swansey and d. March 28, 1719, 4 *Hannah*, b. 1688, m. Feb. 8, 1710–11, Wm. Hodges, of Norton, and d. March 7, 1715, 5 *Sarah*, b. 1690, m. Thos. Reed of Dighton, 6 *Abigail*, b. 1692, m. Ephraim Hayward, of Bridgwater, 7 *Elizabeth*, b. 1694, m. Elkanah Leonard, of Middleboro'.

The 1st son, Capt. *Joseph*, b. 1682—1739, had Simeon, and he had James the merchant, and he, James, of Taunton and Barney of Elizabeth City, N. C., and this James, of T., had Samuel T., of N. Y. City. All were b. in T. He also had Job, who d. May 19, 1755, ae. 47, father of James, 1740,—1811, who m. Abigail (Freeman) of Norton, and had Rev. James, b. in West Taunton, Nov. 7, 1799, grad. B. U. 1821, studied Theology with Rev. A. Cobb, West Taunton, ord. Sept. 29, 1830, over the churches in Guildhall and Granby, Vt., dismissed May 4, 1836, preached 4 years in Dublin and 7 years in Gilsum, N. H., and after Oct. 1851, in Shutesbury, Mass. He m. Oct. 5, 1831, Margaretta C. Tubbs of W. T.

(5) **Elizabeth.**

She m. John Smith.

(6) **Sarah.**

She m. James Dean.

(7) **Mary**, b. in T., d. May 18th, 1731, in 73d yr.

She m. Jan. 9th, 1676, Nathaniel French, who d. June 14th, 1711, ae. 73. Both were buried in the Walker grave yard.

(8) **Abigail**, b. in T.

She m. Feb. 1st, 1683, Edward Bobit, (Babbitt,) who was son of Edward, and b. July 15th, 1655. They had Edward, b. Feb. 14th, 1684, and perhaps others.

4. III. PHILLIP WALKER,^{2}

Of Rehoboth, Mass.

His biography may be found in connection with the Genealogy of his descendants, immediately following that of the Taunton Family.

THIRD GENERATION.

Children of JAMES WALKER,^{2} [2] of Taunton.

5. I. **James**,^{3} (10) b. 1645–6, d. June 22, 1718, ae. 72 yrs.

He m. Dec. 23, 1673, Bathsheba Brooks, dau. of Gilbert, of Rehoboth. She was b. 1655, and d. Feb. 24, 1738, in 85th yr. (Ins.) Will was proved, April, 17, 1739. He was constable in T. in 1689, and admitted to freedom in 1689. He had 50 acres of land laid out for him, near Wm. Hacks' line. The lot began at So. Purchase line, and run north, 2 points. (Prop. Rec.)

In 1697, there was a graunt to him of "50 acres on the west syde of Three Mile river, below the brook that runs into it, below John Hodges' lot."

He lived at the Weir, in Taunton, where Col. Israel Dean, late of T., lived, and where the road from the Weir, to Dighton, leaves the river and turns west, towards the Presbrey brook.

It is conjectured, that the following graunt refers to this James, because the father would have been called Mr. James Walker.

"Libertie is graunted by the Court, vnto James Walker, of Taunton, to keep an ordinary att Taunton, and for that end, that hee be prouided of all necessaries for that purpose, and that he keep good order in his house, that, soe no damage may acrew vnto any, respecting the pmises." 1679, Plym. Col. Rec. vol. 6, 15th p.

In his will, proved Sept. 1, 1718, bequests are made to wife, 6 sons and 5 daus. These indicate the places where the sons lived, viz.: "To James, eldest son, 50 acres, where he lives. To 2d son, Nathan, land in Taunton, So. Purchase. To 3d son, David, 2 lower lotts, in Dighton, where he now dwells. To 4th son, Nehemiah, my new dwelling house, in T., and my home lott, and barn thereon, and my lott lying by Jas. Burt's, in T., and my land over the Creek,—and 50 acres lying on the three mile river, at a place called the narrow passage. To 5th son, Josiah, 3 upper lotts, in Dighton."

Fac-simile of his autograph of 1690.

James walker

6. II. **Peter**,^{3} (21) b. 1649, d. April 4, 1711, ae. 60. (Ins.) [62?]

He m. Hannah, who d. Jan. 15, 1704, ae. 44 yrs. (Ins.) Nothing more is known of her. He was an iron dealer, in company with Hon. James Philips. He was appointed with Joseph and Samuel Richmond, to lay out "the highway from Bayting Brook, to Assonet."

DIVISION OF SURGERY
MARQUETTE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE
8700 WEST WISCONSIN AVENUE
MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN 53226
258-4610

VICTOR M. BERNHARD, M.D.

His will proved July 2, 1711, gives names of 3 sons and 3 daus. He made a bequest, also, "to Thomas Elyot, who did live with me 6 yrs.," viz.: "6 acres joining the land of my brother James, where said Elyot now dwelleth," (See No. 16.) His Inventory £751, includes "homestead, with housing, orchard, with little island joining, to Nicholas Stephen's, his mill, with all the land belonging to the farm; being 400 acres." This "little island" is in the centre of No. Dighton village, and is now the site of an old foundry. There were his Iron Works, which in later years went by the name of Baylies' Forge, and were on the site of the present Paper mill. By a "deed of guift," in 1688, from James Walker, Sen., "to his son Petter Walker," and other grants, he became an extensive land holder, in the Southern part of Taunton, between and on the Taunton Great and Three Mile rivers, and especially on the latter, at what is now the North Dighton village. In the Proprietors' Rec. we find that Peter Walker had "84 acres laid out near James Walker and Wm. Hack, near the lower powers on the country road to Three Mile river." There was also a grant in 1697, to Peter, of "40 acres, in the low country, between his lands and Jas. Walker's." He also owned land near the meeting house, and on the Mill river, near where his father lived. But his homestead was in the South part of the town, and his dwelling, remodelled 60 yrs. ago, is the 1st house north of Three Mile River, on the road from Taunton to Dighton Four Corners. A portion of his estate, half a mile north has been held by him, and his descendants 175 yrs., and is now owned and occupied by Edward Walker, [See No. 233,] and there is scarcely room for a doubt, that this is a part of the grants, to James, Sen., which, in this section of the town, became almost wholly, the portion of his "son Petter." We are sure, that it was Peter's, either by grant to him, or by inheritance, and as it included when it was bequeathed to his sons, in 1711, the ancient cemetery of the Walker Family and kindred, where his mother and father were buried, in 1678 & 91, we feel confident, it was a part of the lands of James Walker, Sen., and by transmission in the name over 200 years, is the ancestral Farm of the family.

Fac simile of his signature, 1676.

peter walker

7. III. **Hester,**³ b. 1650, d. April, ye 8th, 1696, ae. 46. (Ins.) ancestor of the Atwoods, of T. and Dighton, who d. Feb. 12, 1696–7,

She m. Jan. 1, 1679, Joseph Woode,* (Atwood now,) of Taunton, ae. 47. (Ins.) Will made, Feb. 12, 1696–7, proved, May 19, 1698. He m. 2d, Abigail Paul, Oct. 18, 1697. [1696 ?] Chil. were—

(1) *Joseph*, b. Aug. 4, 1681; d, Sept. 26, 1724, in 43d yr. He m. Mary Reed, Jan. 11, 1702–3, who d. April 23, 1748, ae. 66 yrs. 7 mos. and 8 days. He represented Dighton in the General Court, in 1729. They had, 1 Joseph, b. Aug. 1, 1704, d. June 1, 1780. His dau. Hannah, m. Thomas Rose, of Dighton, 2 Benj., b. March 17, 1707, d. Feb. 3, 1713–14, 3 Esther, b. Feb. 19, 1710–11, m. Jotham Burt, 4 John, b. Feb. 7, 1712–13, d. May, 1749, In'y £458, 5 Benj., b. July 3, 1715, d. July 28, 1753, 6 Mary, b. March 16, 1718–19, m. Eben'r Winslow, of Berkley.

(2) *John*, b. Feb. 28, 1683, d. 1764, (See No. 26.)

(3) *Ephraim*, b. about 1639, d. Aug. 14, 1776, in 87th yr. (Ins.) He m. Aug. 27, 1724, Ruth Richmond, dau. of Sylvester. She d. Nov. 13, 1776. Rep. from Dighton to General Court, 1718. Chil. 1 Sylvester, b. Sept. 4, 1725, (See No. 56,) 2 Ruth, b. May 4, 1727, 3 Ephraim, b. June 16, 1737, 4 Son, b. Aug. 23——d. Oct. 31.

(4) *Joanna*, b. after death of father. She m. Wm. Nichols, about 1726, and had 10 chil.

8. IV. **Eleazer,**³ b. 1662, d. Dec. 15, 1724, ae. 62. (Ins.)

His will indicates that he never married, or if so, left no children. Inventory, £1100. He owned a large tract of land in Dighton, but lived in Taunton.

9. V. **Deborah,**³ d. about May 1726.

She m. Feb. 9, 1685–6, in Dighton, George Goodwin, of Somersetshire, England. He settled in Taunton, South Purchase, afterward, D. in 1677–8, and is the father of the Gooding Family. The record of his birth has been found in the Parish of North Petherton, Somersetshire, by Alanson Gooding, Esq., of New Bedford. He was 3d son of Matthew, who was yeoman, and who had 4 sons and 1 dau. viz.: Thomas, Matthew, George, Richard, and Johannah. He d. in D. 1712, ae. 79 yrs. Tradition says she was about 18 yrs. of age at her marriage, and he was over 50 yrs. Her name is not mentioned in her father's will, but the following leaves no doubt that there was such a dau. It is a copy of a note, at the foot of a very old deed in parchment, in possession of A. Gooding, Esq., of New Bedford. "This is to declare, that my father-in-law, James Walker, gave me the money, that bought the land mentioned in the deed, for which I humbly thank him," Geo. Gooding.

---

* The compiler has a genealogy in manuscript of a large number of his descendants.

DIVISION OF SURGERY
MARQUETTE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE
8700 WEST WISCONSIN AVENUE
MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN 53226
258-4610

VICTOR M. BERNHARD, M.D.

CHILDREN OF B. HENRY WALKER,[8] [445] OF TAUNTON.

650. I. HENRY ARNOLD,[9] b. Jan. 8, 1850.
651. II. SARAH FLORENCE,[9] b. April 5, 1855.

CHILDREN OF GEORGE E. WALKER[8] [451] OF TAUNTON.

652. I. ESTELLA CHURCH,[9] b. Oct. 31, 1851.
653. II. RUTH ANNIE,[9] b. Dec. 28, 1852, d. Sept. 1, 1853.
654. III. FRANCIS IRVING,[9] b. March 23, 1856.
655. IV. LIZZIE ANN,[9] b. Nov. 9, 1859.

CHILD OF JAMES G. WALKER,[8] [454] OF TAUNTON.

656. I. FRED ALTON,[9] b. Sept. 14, 1859.

TENTH GENERATION.

CHILD OF EUGENE WALKER,[9] [478] OF SALEM, MICH.

657. I. WM. PERRZ,[10] b. April 21, 1859.

CHILDREN OF HENRY A. WALKER,[9] [489] OF SALEM, MICH.

658. I. MERCY ANN,[10] b. Nov. 23, 1854.
659. II. CHARLES H.,[10] b. June 8, 1857.

CHILDREN OF OREN E. WALKER,[9] [543] OF NORTON.

660. I. IDA AUGUSTA,[10] b. Feb. 8, 1857.
661. II. LYDIA A.,[10] b. Nov. 23, 1858.

CHILD OF ABIATHAR F. WALKER,[9] [563] OF TAUNTON.

662. I. CORA FRANCES,[10] b. Jan. 11, 1854.

CHILD OF JOHN W. WALKER,[9] [571] OF NEW BEDFORD.

663. I. HENRY E. P.,[10] b. 1859, in N. B.

PHILIP WALKER,[2]

OF REHOBOTH,

AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

I. PHILIP WALKER,[2] (2) was the son of "Widow Walker,[1]" of Rehoboth, and brother of James Walker, of Taunton. (See 1st p.) The earliest record of him is a deed bearing his signature dated at Rehoboth, 1653. He was one of the Grand Jury, May 17, 1655, propounded for freedom, June 8, 1655, and took the oath of fidelity, June 1, 1658. In June 22, 1658, his name appears in the first division of Rehoboth No. Purchase, (now Attleboro',) when lots were drawn for "the meadow, on the North side of the Town," and again, May 26, 1668, in the division of lands, in the North Purchase.

His birth-place, and age, and date of his arrival in this country, are not known. He married, about 1654, Jane, dau. of —— Butterworth, of Rehoboth, or Michael Metcalf, of Dedham.* ✱

She survived him, and afterward m. June 2, 1684, John Polley, of Roxbury, and lived there till her death, in 1702. Dea. Walker was buried Aug. 21, 1679, and his dust, reposes, no doubt, in the ancient grave yard, at Seekonk. His estate was appraised, Oct., 1679, on oaths of James Walker,† and Samuel Walker. In'y £681.

His home and farm were on Watchemoket Neck, south of the Great Plain, at what is now the Kinnicut Place, on the road from

---

* The compiler had supposed, till lately, that Philip's wife was a Butterworth, as his son, Samuel, had an "Uncle Samuel Butterworth." It is, of course, possible, that a Butterworth married a sister of Philip, but it is not known that he had any sister, except Sarah, w. of John Tisdale. What is more probable is, that Butterworth was the uncle of Samuel's wife. Late investigation respecting "Joane Walker," dau. of Michael Metcalf, of Dedham, who, it is stated, in Metcalf's Genealogy, married Samuel (?) Walker, of Rehoboth, has led to the opinion that it was Philip, and not Samuel Walker, whom she married. For reasons, see Samuel Walker, immediately following the descendants of Philip.

† There is no record of any James Walker, in R., in the town register, nor in the Probate Rec. of the County, excepting as far back as 1643 and 45, which have been alluded to, in the sketch of James Walker, of Taunton. (See 6 and 7 pp.) He was about 60 yrs. of age at the time of Philip's death, and was, undoubtedly, the James, who helped appraise his estate.

✱ Torrey's book showed Butterworth first, but this + Phillips Genealogy have now convinced me Philip Walker married Joane (Jane) Metcalf instead. 11-10-90 N.J.Z.

DIVISION OF SURGERY
MARQUETTE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE
8700 WEST WISCONSIN AVENUE
MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN 53226
258-4610

VICTOR M. BERNHARD, M.D.

Providence, R. I., to Barrington, about 1 mile from India Bridge, and in Rehoboth, now Seekonk, an attractive and fertile spot, overlooking the Providence river.[*]

He left a house unfinished, which the Court ordered to be completed at the expense of the estate. The estate was to be divided as follows :—

"In reference vnto the disposall of the estate of Phillip Walker, late of Rebohoth, deceased, the Court ordered, that the now house in building shall be finished out of the whole intire estate, and that those that shall injoy it, shall make some proportionable abatement, of what shall be theire pticular interest, in the said estate, and that the widdow shall have a comfortable, and convenient being ~~therein~~ during her widdowhood, and that the said widdow shall have her third of the said estate, and the sume of twenty pound, for and towards the bringing vp of the youngest child, and that the remainder of the said estate be deuided into seauen equall ptes, whereof the eldest, to have a double pte, and the rest to be deuided vnto the other children, in equall and alike proportions."

She gave bond of administration, Oct. 29, 1679,

"June 7, 1681, This Court graunts libertie vnto Jane Walker, widdow of Rehoboth, to make sale of a small psell of meddow ground, with the advice and approbation of Mr. Daniell Smith and Ensigne Pecke.

Philip Walker's occupation in 1659, was that of weaver. He became at length one of the wealthiest men of Rehoboth. In the allotments in 1671, his estate was estimated at £387, and was exceeded by only two in the town, the whole number being 78. In 1678, it was exceeded by only one, in a valuation of 83 estates. He held various positions of trust and honor. He was surveyor, 1657, constable, 1658, on the Grand Inquest, 1668 and '78, one of the Select men, several yrs. between 1666 and '75, and was deputy to Plymouth, 1669. May 14, 1669, he was chosen one of a Committee, to meet a Committee of the new town of Swansey, to settle a controversy, (probably about boundaries.) He also held the office of Deacon, in the Church. Nov. 2, 1663, Goodman Walker was appointed one of a Committee, to buy or build a parsonage,

---

[*] The first permanent settlement in Rehoboth, was around the "Great Plain," in that part of the township called Seekonk, meaning, "the abode of the wild goose." It is supposed that Rev. Mr. Newman, and his society, selected this spot because it was an extensive plain, already cleared of forest trees, and favorable for the cultivation of Indian corn. It is not far from the Pawtucket and Providence rivers, and had abundant facilities for obtaining fish and fowl

or "house for the ministry." This "Goodman,"[*] was undoubtedly Philip, as there is no trace of any other Walker in R. at that time. June 20, 1678, the town having unanimously called Rev. Mr. Angier, to settle amongst them, "the townsmen and Deacon Walker, were chosen to treat with Mr. A. about it." It was also agreed upon by the town, that the sums to be raised, be freely subscribed, "if it may be," but if the subscriptions fell short, "Deacon Walker, Gilbert Brooks, and 3 others, should devise the mode to raise said sums."

In one period, the towns were obliged to sustain the war against Philip. Many who served as private soldiers, advanced money. The list of those in R. is preserved, and shows that the amount furnished by Deacon Walker, was £26, the largest sum, with two exceptions, and about double what was advanced by any of the 77 others in the catalogue.

Thus, like his elder brother, James, of Taunton, he was prominent in efforts and sacrifices for the maintenance and usefulness of the ministry, and the protection of the settlement from Indian ravages; sustaining at least, one kind of relationship and resemblance to him, and one which is certainly no dishonor; While James in Taunton, was distinguished and useful as one of the Council of War, for Plymouth Colony, Philip, in Rehoboth, was among the foremost in furnishing the "sinews of war." Rehoboth, an isolated plantation, was especially exposed to the incursions of the savages. The first and last blood of that fierce struggle, in which Metacomet or Philip, the powerful and subtle Indian chieftain, fought for the destruction of all the colonists in New England, was shed in Rehoboth. Here the conflict opened in 1675, here it closed by the fall of Philip, in 1676.

Deacon Walker, it is probable, was in that gallant fight of the people of Rehoboth, with Philip and his best warriors. Driven to desperation, and fearing if he remained at Mt. Hope, he would be taken captive, the sachem fled into the interior, about the 1st of Aug. 1675. Encouraged by the strong appeals of Mr. Newman, their minister, and though not a part of the military force of the Colony, under his leadership, they pursued Philip, with great courage and activity. So rapid was their movement, that they overtook the rear of his forces at night, and with the aid of a party of friendly Moheagan Indians, who had joined them, attacked him and killed 30 of his men, and carried away much booty, without any loss. When the minister led the way in so noble an enterprise, it is no

---

[*] It was anciently the custom, to use this prefix, "Goodman," in place of Mr.

DIVISION OF SURGERY
MARQUETTE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE
8700 WEST WISCONSIN AVENUE
MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN 53226
258-4610

VICTOR M. BERNHARD, M.D.

groundless conjecture, that his Deacon was with him, especially one who had advanced money so generously for the defense of the settlement.

March 28, 1776, just after "Pierce's Fight," the Indians fell upon that part of Rehoboth, called Seekonk, and burnt 40 houses and 30 barns. As Dea. Walker, at the time of his decease, 3 yrs. later, left a house unfinished, it may have been, that his was one of those burnt by the Indians. Philip designed an assault upon Taunton, but apprised of it, the town was prepared for defense, and when he approached, July 11, '76, he was met with such determined resistance, that he was compelled to fly, after burning two houses.*

Apprehensive of their destruction, the Cape towns sent a Com. to Bridgwater, Taunton, and Rehoboth, to invite the inhabitants to take up their residence with them during the war, but the invitation was declined. The answer of Rehoboth, by their Com. indicates an unflinching bravery, and a sublime, though submissive faith. The heroic independence, the undaunted fortitude of those isolated settlers, in the face of the appalling perils which threatened their extinction, prove that they were worthy to be among the founders of civilization, and the defenders of religion, in the New World, and are entitled to the grateful remembrance and honor of their descendants and beneficiaries.

"Though no tablets cast their shadows,
Where they slumber from their toil,
Blood of theirs is on our meadows,
Dust of theirs is in our soil."

All the notices of the position and character of Dea. Philip Walker, though few in number, are highly honorable. There is not a single spot on his escutcheon. He was prosperous, accumulating a property that was large for that period. He was entrusted with the most responsible office in the church, save that of the minister. It is indeed a grateful record, his generous contribution for his country and for Christ. His office and his services are a proof of superior excellence in character and usefulness, and leave no doubt that he was eminently a Patriot and a Christian. Cut down in the vigor of his manhood, his death must have been a sore calamity to the colony and the church, "as when an armor bearer falleth."

---

* When Philip escaped from Mt. Hope, in '75, a part of his warriors schttered in the wilderness about Taunton, and burnt the houses of James Walker, and John Tisdill, his brother-in-law John Tisdill, was killed, and 2 other soldiers, who were from Eastham. Though Baylies states this as in 1675, may not the "two houses" burnt July 11th, '76, have been those of J. W. and J. T. It is known that John Tisdill was killed June 27, '76.

"Buried Aug. 21, 1679," as the brief, sad record is, it is no groundless conjecture, that the members of the church, and the inhabitants of Rehoboth, gathered on this early autumnal day, to recognize the services and honor the memory of the departed Deacon. The thought and utterance of their hearts, interpreting their great loss, may naturally have been, "How is the strong staff broken, and the beautiful rod."

His moral worth and piety have been inherited in a remarkable degree by his numerous descendants, unto the 8th and 9th generations. They furnish proof that the moral character, is an inheritance more surely entailed than any other. They illustrate the law that, "if the root be holy, so are the branches." They teach that, if it be a great privilege, it is also a great responsibility, to "partake of the root and fatness of the olive tree," in a godly ancestry.

For their virtues and piety are to be remembered, not for the fostering of family pride, but as an example and incentive to a worthy life.

It is an idle and self condemnatory boast to say, "we have Abraham to our father," unless we "do the works of Abraham." But a multitude sleep in the old grave yard, at Seekonk, who proved their legitimacy from Deacon Philip Walker, by their christian worth, and many others have gone forth into other wildernesses, to help establish, and sustain the institutions, connected with religion and the public weal, and are now laboring, or resting from their labors, in many sections of the country. Not many illustrious names are found among his numerous, and widely scattered descendants. They have swelled the ranks of the honest, and faithful yeomanry of the land. They have cherished and transmitted the doctrinal faith, and reproduced the piety and usefulness of their ancestor. Of a great number of them it is true.

"They were never squires and teachers,
They were never wise and great,
But they listened to their preachers,
Worshipped God, and loved the State.

"They were men of humble station,
They were women pure and true,
And they served their generation,
Worked, and fought, and lived for you."

DIVISION OF SURGERY
MARQUETTE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE
8700 WEST WISCONSIN AVENUE
MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN 53226
258-4610

VICTOR M. BERNHARD, M.D.

THIRD GENERATION.

CHILDREN OF PHILIP WALKER,² [1] OF REHOBOTH.

2. I. SAMUEL,³ (12) b. Feb., 1655, d. Aug. 12, 1712. He m. Nov. 11, 1681, Martha Ide, dau. of Nicholas, b. Oct. 6, 1654, and d. Aug. 1700. He then m. Elizabeth. After his death she m. John Smith, of Roxbury, pub. March 17, 1714, and d. March 13, 1718, in 42d yr.

He was admitted freeman, in 1682, and was constable the same year. He served under Major Bradford in King Philip's War, and is variously styled, Cornet, Lieut., Capt. and Gent. His In'y was £1586, 18s., 3d., a large estate for the time, including about 700 acres besides personal property. In the appraisal there is mention of "his Trooping Horse and furniture belonging to him." He was Rep. to the General Court in 1705, lived on Watchemoket Neck, in R., now Seekonk, and had 8 chil.

3. II. SARAH,³ b. Feb. 16, 1657, buried Aug. 2, 1693. She m. Dec. 27, 1677, Abraham Perrin, son of John, b. March, 1, 1647. He was buried May 15, 1694. In'y £230. Chil. 1679—1692—

(1) *Sarah.* (2) *Rebekah.* (3) *Elizabeth.* (4) *Abraham*, d. y. (5) *Anne.* (6) *Ruth.* (7) *Isaac*, m. Susanna, and had 2 sons and 4 daus. (See No. 86.) (8) *Jacob*, d. y.

4. III. PHILIP,³ (20) b. March, 1661, (1661–2?) d. Feb. 17, 1739–40, in 78th yr. (Ins.) He m. —ember, 1689,★ Mary Bowen, dau. of Richard probably. She was buried May 22, 1694. He m. 2dly, Sarah, who d. Feb. 6, 1739, in 68th yr. (Ins.) He united with the Ch. April, 25, 1697. Inv'y £1750. He had 10 chil. On his grave stone in Seekonk Cemetery, is the epitaph, "Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord."

5. IV. ELIZABETH,³ b. in 1662. Twin with Philip. According to the inquest, she "was accedentally drowned; shee, being sent to scoole, was found alsoe accedentally in the river first by two youthes; and they makeing known the same to two women, the wife of Nicholas Jyde and the wife of Roger Annadoune, and then to William Sabine, whoe forthwith came and drew her out of the water, as hee saith. From the testimony of the afor specified psons with other concurring cercomstances, wee, the subscribers, conceive that the child, which was two yeares and a halfe old, before specifyed, came accedentally to her end. Seauenth of Aug. 1664." Plym. Col. Rec. 4th vol. 83, 84 pp.

★ Torrey states m. 31 Dec 1687

6. V. MARY,³ b. May, 1663, d. May 8, 1694. In'y £44. Her Will, proved May 28, 1694, contains bequests "To cousin (niece) Ann Perron, the book 'Cordial Comfort.' To cousin (niece) Abraham Perron, 'Secret thoughts in dying times.' To cousin (niece) Sarah Perron, my Bible."

7. VI. EXPERIENCE,³ birth unknown, buried Nov. 10, 1674.

8. VII. ELIZABETH,³ b. April 1, 1666, m. March 31, 1687, Henry Sweet, of Swanzey, who d. Dec. 8, 1704. In'y £100. Chil.—

(1) John, b. 1695, m. 1719, Hannah Peck, and 1730, Sarah Claflen. 13 chil. (2) Philip, d. y. (3) *Thomas*, b. 1701, m. 1728, Rebecca Peck. 11 chil. (4) Michael, d. y. (5) *Dorothy.*

9. VIII. MICHAEL,³ b. March 1, 1667, buried Feb., 1677.

.February the 16th, 1677.

"Wee, whose names are vnderwritten, being called together on a corroners inquest, vpon that sad accedent, which befell Micaell Walker, about ten yeers of age, wee doe find, that hee came accedentally to his end by his falling through the flore of the saw mill vpon the water wheel, or just by it when it was goeing, and was carried away wth the streame vnder the iyce."

STEUEN PAINE, Sen'r and 11 others.

10. IX. EBENEZER,³ (30) b. "Mid Nov." 1676, d. March 13, 1717–18. He m. Nov. 19, 1700, Mehetable Willmarth, who d. Oct. 27, 1702. He m. 2dly, Oct. 11, 1703, Dorethy Abell, dau. of Lieut. Preserved, and b. Nov. 18, 1677. He and w. renewed covenant, 1709. He had 11 children. In'y £1575. Res. Rehoboth, now Seekonk. She m. 2dly, 1724, John Reed and d. Aug. 1, 1741, in 64th yr. (Ins.)

11. X. MARTHA.³ Not of age in 1680.

FOURTH GENERATION.

CHILDREN OF SAMUEL WALKER,³ [2] OF REHOBOTH.

12. I. SAMUEL,⁴ (41) b. Nov. 11, 1682, d. Aug. 23, 1712. He m. Feb. 9, 1705–6, Bethya Read, who d. Oct. 18, 1708. He then m. Nov. 10, 1709, Ruth Bliss, dau. of Sam'l and Mary, and b. Nov. 11, 1687. In'y £129. Had 3 chil. His widow m. Jan., 1713–14, Jonah Saben.

DIVISION OF SURGERY
MARQUETTE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE
8700 WEST WISCONSIN AVENUE
MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN 53226
258-4610

VICTOR M. BERNHARD, M.D.

13. II. Patience,^{4} b. March 30, 1685, d. Nov. 28, 1730. She m. June 14, 1705, Noah Perrin, of Roxbury. He was a tailor. They were admitted to the ch., April, 1724, and had 7 chil. from Jan. 18, 1708, to Dec. 22, 1729—

(1) *Noah.* (2) *Mary.* (3) *Samuel.* (4) *Elizabeth.* (5) *Patience.* (6) *Thankful.* (7) *John.*

14. III. Timothy,^{4} (44) b. Sept. 14, 1687, d. Nov. 17, 1745, in 59th yr. He m. May 14, 1713, Grace Child, dau. of Edward, [was it not Benjamin? See No. 15.] and b. about 1678, in Rehoboth. She was admitted to the ch., June 14, 1724, and d. Oct. 30, 1729. He m. 2dly, Jan. 15, 1729–30, Rachel Beverly. He exerted a great influence in the affairs of Rehoboth. In'y £2743, old tenor. Had 7 chil. His widow m. Daniel Greenwood, of Sutton, Nov. 15, 1748.

15. IV. Peter,^{4} (51) b. Sept. 18, 1689, d. March 24, 1760. He m. June 9, 1715, Mary Child, of Roxbury, dau. of Benj'n and Grace (Morris.) She d. between 1730 and 32. They were admitted to Communion, Oct. 10, 1724. He m. 2d, Jan. 18, 1732–3, Mrs. Martha Read, who d. Jan. 16, 1747–8, in 58th yr. (Ins.) He m. 3d, Bethiah, who was a widow in 1760, and in Woodstock, Ct. His In'y was £238. Res. Rehoboth. Had 13 chil.

16. V. Ephraim,^{4} (64) b. Sept. 4, 1692, d. March 2, 1731–2, in 40th yr. (Ins.) He m. Mary, dau. of Lieut. Preserved Abell. She d. July, 1747. In her will she bequeathed £10, to the 1st Church in Rehoboth, for the purchase of a cup for the communion service,—to Jas. Clay, her negro boy Cæsar, and provided for his liberty They had 8 chil.

17. VI. Martha,^{4} b. Sept. 8, 1696. She m, Oct. 5, 1721, Ichabod Bowen, who d. March 20, 1760. Chil.—

(1) *Eleazer*, b. 1722, m. Dorothy, d. before 1760. (2) *Samuel*, b. 1724 (3) *Alse*, d. Feb. 25, 1791. (4) *Simeon*. b. 1730. (5) *Ichal*[illegible], b. 1735. (6) *Martha*, b. 1737.

By 2d Marriage.

18. VII. Elizabeth,^{4} b. Aug. 10, 1702, d. Dec. 28, 1702.

19. VIII. Benjamin, (72) b. Aug. 12, 1703, d. 1787. He m. —— Bicknell, then Elizabeth Childs, and 3dly, —— Cadwell, of Hartford, Ct. He was in Rehoboth 1725, but settled in Ashford, Ct. Had 8 chil. all by 1st wife. Tradition says he had 5 chil. born in successive yrs. in the month of July, that the first 3 sons were Benj, Eben'r and Eph'm, and the 3d, went alone first. Benj'n 1st born, wa 5 yrs. of age when he walked, yet he became robust and athletic, a have been all the W's of his branch.

Children of PHILIP WALKER,^{3} [4] of Rehoboth.

20. I. Ebenezer,^{4} b. Oct. 21, 1688. He probably d. unm. or without issue, as there is no mention of him or heirs, in his father's will.

21. II. James,^{4} (80) b. Sept. 3, 1690, d. Nov. 28, 1747. He m. Elizabeth, who d. Dec. 29, 1747-8. They renewed covenant Oct. 3, 1735. Res. Rehoboth. In'y £818. Had 6 chil.

22. III. Philip,^{4} (86) b. Aug. 13, 1693, d. Nov. 5, 1742. He m. Dec. 7, 1721, Mary Chard, who d. Sept. 3, 1737. He then m. March 4, 1737–8, Ann Martin, of Bristol, R. I., dau. of Melatiah, and b. Sept. 9, 1699. He was Captain. Inv'y, £1429. Res. Rehoboth. Had 8 chil. His widow m. 2dly, July 27, 1743, Jeremiah Allen, and d. July 7, 1747.

By 2d Marriage.

23. IV. Sarah,^{4} b. Jan. 8, 1695–6. It is inferred that she first m. Thomas Kilton, Feb. 3, 1724, as there was no other Sarah, born early enough for this marriage. Had—

(1) *Amey*, b. Oct. 9, 1726. See LDS - I.G.I.

Sarah^4 was w. of —— Holdridge, in 1739. (Will of father.)

24. V. Esther,^{4} b. ——, baptized July 4, 1697. She m. —— Avery, (father's will) and had—

(1) *Esther*, living in 1749. (next page ★)

Esther Walker m. May 16, 1709, Isaac Averill. (Re'th Rec.) Was it Esther^4? If so, she must have been oldest child. There is no other E.

25. VI. Mary,^{4} b. March 19, 1699–1700. It is supposed she m. 1st, Josiah Ide, June 18, 1724, who d. Nov. 30, 1731. She was w. of —— Robinson, in 1739. (Father's will.) Chil.—

(1) *Elizabeth*, b. March 19. 1725. (2) *Daniel*, b. June 13, 1726. (3) *Josiah*. b. Oct. 16, 1728. (4) *Mary*, b. Jan. 1, 1730–1.

26. VII. Jane,^{4} b. March 21, 1702. She m. Dec. 23, 1724, Samuel Newman, Jr., of Rehoboth. They had chil. baptized in Seekonk. (Ch. Rec.) Chil.—

(1) *David*, b. April 20, 1727. (2) *Jesse*, b. Aug. 2, 1730, (3) *Sarah*, b. July 3, 1733. (4) *Nathan*, b. Dec. 25, 1735. (5) *Samuel*, b. March 22, 1738–9.

27. VIII. Nathaniel,^{4} (94) b. Jan. 31, 1703–4, d. April 20, 1783. He m. May 11, 1727, Anna Sweeting, dau. of Henry, b. May 1, 1707, and d. March 23, 1772. He is called "best beloved

DIVISION OF SURGERY
MARQUETTE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE
8700 WEST WISCONSIN AVENUE
MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN 53226
258-4610

VICTOR M. BERNHARD, M.D.

son," in his father's will. He united with the ch. March 25, 1733, held the office of Deacon, and was also Rep. to General Court, 1750 and '51. Res. R. Had 9 chil.

28. IX. DANIEL,[4] (103) b. Oct. 10, 1706. He m. Jan. 1, 1729-30, Mary Perry, dau. of Jasiel and Rebecca, and bro. of Jasiel, Jr. (See No. 44.) She d. in Rutland, Vt. Both m. ch. He joined the expedition to Québec, and was there at the taking of the city in 1759. On his return, when between Clarendon (then Socialboro',) and No. 4, New Hampshire, (now Charleston,) he froze his feet badly. Attracted by the appearance of the country on his way home, he travelled up the Otter Creek, as far as Clarendon. On the 1st of April, 1768, removed with his family to C., where he died. He early settled in Coventry, R. I., and built him a house, which was situated a little East of South, from the Summit Station, on Providence and Hartford R. R. All that now remains is the chimney, still standing, (1857,) the house having been taken down in 1853. He left also, other traces of his sojourn in C. South of his dwelling on the hill are two little graves, always said by oldest inhabitants to be graves of Walker children. They are still visible, and the present owner of the farm has lately enclosed the place for a grave yard. It is a tradition there, that Mr. W. one evening saw a strange light on the hill. Losing his 2 chil. soon after, he had them buried where he saw the singular light. These two graves on the hill, alone, and yet guarded for more than half a century, and remembered as Mr. W.'s children, confirm the record in Attleboro', which gives names and births of his chil. He was living in A. in 1750, where he owned lands inherited by will, from his father's estate. It is no wonder that in view of the lands on the Otter Creek, he should abandon the rough soil of Coventry, R. I. Had 12 chil.

29. X. STEPHEN,[4] (115) b. Aug. 7, 1709. He m. Jan. 3, 1733-4, Rebekah Millerd, dau. of Solomon and Elizabeth, b. Sept. 2, 1706, and d. Sept. 17, 1837, ae. 31 yrs. and 15 days. They had 2 chil. He m. 2dly, July 20, 1738, Mehetable Harris of Roxbury, and had 2 chil. He was a Weaver; removed to Pomfret, Ct., and was recommended to the ch. in P., 1739. He probably left P., as search has been fruitless, to learn more of him or his chil.

*(from previous sheet)
later information (LDS IGI)
indicates Esther was born
21 Dec 1688 to Philip's first
wife Mary Bowen, but bapt.
after he married Sarah -
Perhaps a more pious lady or
one of different views?
Otherwise Esther would
have been only 12½ when
she married Isaac Averill!
(This means the book by Clara
Avery contains an error)

DIVISION OF SURGERY
MARQUETTE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE
8700 WEST WISCONSIN AVENUE
MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN 53226
258-4610

CHILDREN OF EBENEZER WALKER,³ [10] OF REHOBOTH.

30. I. EBENEZER,⁴ b. June 30, 1701, d. May 26, 1702,

31. II. MEHETABLE,⁴ b. Dec. 18, 1702, d. May 5, 1705.

BY 2d MARRIAGE.

32. III. JOHANNA,⁴ b. July 18, 1704, d. Jan. 22, 1786, ae 81. She m. Nov. 12, 1724, David Carpenter, son of David, b. June 1, 1701, and d. July 11, 1787. A farmer in Rehoboth. Chil.—

(1) *Thomas*, b. July 15, 1725, m. Dorothy Bosworth. (2) *David*, b. Oct. 1, 1727, d. unm. (3) *Elizabeth*, b. March ~~15,~~ 1730. (4) *John*, b. April 6, 1733, m. 3dly, Mary Ide, (See No. 35.) (5) *Nathaniel*, b. Jan. 13, 1743–44, m. Elizabeth Carpenter.

33. IV. MARY,⁴ d. Jan. 12, 1708–9.

34. V. CALEB, (119) b. Oct. 30, 1706, d. April 3, 1768, in 62d yr. He m. Abigail Dean, of Taunton, dau. of Doct. Ezra, b. Dec. 10, 1704. She united with the ch. in R. April 12, 1730, and d. Jan. 1, 1795, in 91st yr. (Ins.) They had 5 chil.

35. VI. DOROTHY,⁴ b. Jan. 11, 1708–9, d. April 22, 1796, ae. 87. She m. as 2d wife, Dec. 2, 1743, Edward Carpenter, son of Obadiah ? b. Oct. 5, 1705, and d. Feb. 24, 1771, in 66th yr. He was a Farmer and Ensign. Chil.—

(1) *Mary*, b. Nov. 13, 1744. (2) *Edward*, b. Dec. 6, 1746 (3) *Dorothy*, b. Jan. 26, (June ?) 1749. (4) *Mary*, b. Nov. 18, 1752, m. 1st, Edward Ide, then John Carpenter, (No. 32.)

36. VII. JOHN, } b. Feb. 18, 1710–11, d. Feb. 27, 1710–11.
37. VIII. SARAH, } b. Feb. 18, 1710–11, d. March 2, 1710–11.

38. IX. ELIZABETH,⁴ b. March 24, 1711–12, d. March 18, 1753, in 42d yr. (Ins.) She m. Oct. 28, 1731, Miles Shorey, who d. May 31, 1752, in 42d yr. Chil.—

(1) *Sarah*, b. May 1, 1732, (2) *Elizabeth*, b. Jan. 31, 1733–34. (3) *John*, b. March 30, 1736, m. Patience, and had 6 chil. (4) *Jacob*, b. July 24, 1738, m. Kezia, and had 7 chil. (5) *Sarah*, b. Aug. 1, 1740. (6) *Molle*, b. Sept. 24, 1743. (7) *Miles*, b. Jan. 22, 1745–6. (8) *David*, b. March 16, 1747–8, m. Alathea. (9) *Hannah*, b. April 1, 1750.

39. X. MARTHA,⁴ b. July 20, 1714. She m. April 4, 1733–4, David Chaffee. Res. Attleboro. Chil.—

(1) *David*, bapt. 1733. (2) *Martha*, bapt. 1735. (3) *Martha*, bapt. 1737. (4) *Dorothy*, bapt. 1739. (5) *Patience*, bapt. 1742. (6) *Abner*, bapt. 1746.

40. XI. EBENEZER,⁴ (124) b. Dec. 9, 1716, d. Sept., 1799. He m. Jan. 26, 1737, Bethiah Brown, dau. of Wm. and Elizabeth, of Rehoboth, and b. July 8, 1718. They united with the Ch. in R., Jan. 6, 1739, and were dismissed to the 2d Ch. in Ashford, (West-

VICTOR M. BE

Excerpts from:

"Memorial - Plymouth
Colony Walkers
1620 - 1860"

by J. B. R. Walker

Microfilm 103 63 45 #5

(ordered 10-9-90) LDS

1. "WIDOW WALKER," (2)

OF REHOBOTH, MASS.

SHE was one of the first purchasers and proprietors of the town of Rehoboth or Seacunk, now Seekonk, and one of the company who first settled there. Her name is in the list of those who in 1643 gave in the value of their estates, for a pro rata division of the lands. Hers was £50. In the division made June 31, 1644, she had a share, and lots were assigned her in several divisions afterward, as in drawing for the Great Plain, and on the 18th of 12 mo. (Feb.) 1646, for the new Meadow.

Her name then disappears. When and from whence she came to New England, and where she died, are not known. There is no record to tell us her age or her character. No trace of her biography is found, save the already noticed facts of her being associated with an adventurous company, most of whom went out from Weymouth into the wilderness,—a company marked for its religious character, (being a majority of the church at W.,) the highly educated and scholarly Rev. Samuel Newman being in some respects the Leader of the enterprise.—Her christian name and that of her husband, are never given. In the early records of the town, she has invariably the touching, sorrowful title of Widow, suggesting the history of blighted hopes, and a grief-stricken heart. Perhaps she had one to protect and cherish her when she left her native land,—and burying him in the sea came here alone,—or perhaps together, they had reached these shores, and were struggling in mutual help and loyalty to bear the toils, trials and perils incident to the settlement of a new country,—when death snatched him from her fellowship. But the more probable supposition is, that becoming a widow in England, she emigrated, perhaps with her younger son Philip, after the coming of James and Sarah. Bereft of counsellor and helper, she would naturally follow her children, and seek the sympathy and aid of her brother, or possibly only her brother-in-law, Mr. John Browne. That

1. "WIDOW WALKER," (2)

Of Rehoboth, Mass.

She was one of the first purchasers and proprietors of the town of Rehoboth or Seacunk, New England, and one of the company who first settled there. Her name is in the list of those who in 1643 gave in the value of their estates, for a pro rata division of the lands. Hers was £50. In the division made June 31, 1644, she had a share; and lots were assigned her in several divisions afterward, as in drawing for the Great Plain, and on the 10th of 12 mo. (Feb.) 1645, for the new Meadow.

Her name then disappears. When and from whence she came to New England, and where she died, are not known. There is no record to tell us her age or her character. No trace of her biography is found, save the already recited facts of her being associated with an adventurous company, most of whom went out from Weymouth into the wilderness,—a company marked for its religious character, (being a majority of the church at W.,) the highly educated and scholarly Rev. Samuel Newman being in some respects the Leader of the enterprise.—Her christian name and that of her husband are never given. In the early records of the town, she has invariably the touching, sorrowful title of Widow, suggesting the history of blighted hopes, and a grief-stricken heart. Perhaps she had one to protect and cherish her when she left her native land,—and burying him in the sea came here alone,—or perhaps together, they had reached these shores, and were struggling in mutual help and loyalty to bear the toils, trials and perils incident to the settlement of a new country,—when death snatched him from her fellowship. But the more probable supposition is, that—becoming a widow in England, she sailed, perhaps with her younger son Philip, after the coming of John and Sarah. Weary of oppression and danger, she would naturally follow her children, and seek the sympathy and aid of her brother, or possibly only her brother-in-law, Mr. John Browne. That

she did not come with them in 1635, and did not appear till 8 years afterward, favors this theory. James and Sarah, as favorites of their uncle Mr. Browne, and bereft of a father's counsel and support, may have been induced by his encouragements, to try their fortunes in the New World, leaving the mother behind with their younger brother, till they should learn how the experiment would issue.—Old enough to be of service, perhaps they were really indentured as "servants to Jo. Browne," and not merely, as a device to escape the pursuivants of the King in their attempt to get out of England. But these are conjectures merely. The interest of Mr. Browne in his nephew and niece, the two young emigrants of 1635, and the fact of their mother the "widow" being associated with Mr. B. in the settlement of Rehoboth, favors the belief that she was his sister, though he might have manifested the same regard, had she been only the sister of his wife. We may however see among the group of pious and brave settlers, not only the godly man who is their religious teacher, but also the form of one, whose sable garments tell us, she is a "Widow." The vision passes quickly before us, and is lost to our sight, awakening sympathy and interest for the woman, who, bereft of the companion of her youth, became a pioneer in founding the church and colony at Rehoboth. She was buried no doubt, in the ancient place of graves in Seekonk, where many of the fathers repose, but no stone marks the spot.

Philip Walker, afterward Deacon, and whose name first appears in 1653, to whom lands were assigned in 1658, and of whom the record commences, soon after her's ceases, was her son. In the description of his lands in the Proprietors' Records, 48th p., he says, "100 pound commons that was Thos. Pitts', 100 that was the Governor's, half a hundred that was *my mother's*." It is evident therefore that he was the son of "Widow Walker," for had his "mother" not been a widow, the lands would have been described as those of his father, and furthermore, there was no other person of the name in the Rehoboth Company, who could sustain this relation to him.

James Walker appears in the list of those in 1643 giving in the value of their estates. His name is next to that of the "Widow," and the amount is £50, but it is subjoined that his share is "now John ffitches." He however forfeited his lots to the town in 1644, in accordance with an order enacted by the proprietors in 1643, that those who did not fence their lands, or remove there with their families, should forfeit their lots. His name however, is mentioned in one division of lands afterward, viz., that of 1645. It is probable however, that he never removed to Rehoboth, but concluded to remain in Taunton. Mr. John Browne, whose lots were forfeited at the same date with James Walker's, lived in Taunton at the time, and was his "cousin," (uncle.) Thus connected with the "Widow" and Mr. Browne, who was also one of the original Proprietors of Rehoboth, having been the agent of the company, while in Weymouth, and appointed by the Court at Plymouth, to make the purchase of Asameeum the Indian Chief, James Walker very naturally became associated with the settlement. Accordingly neither their names nor that of Mr. Browne is found in the list of the company that went from Weymouth. The strongest reason, however, for concluding he was of "Widow Walker's" family, is found in the fact that when Deacon Philip died in 1679, James was one of the appraisers of his estate. When it is remembered that there was no James Walker in R., at that time, that Rehoboth and Taunton townships were contiguous, and moreover, that James was about 60 years of age, it is beyond a reasonable doubt that he was not only nearly related to Philip, but was his brother, and accordingly was the son of "Widow Walker."

If we may judge of her worth from the virtues of her sons, and infer that they inherited the spirit and piety of their Pilgrim mother, and that her fidelity entitled her to use the language of the Roman matron respecting the Gracchi, "These are my jewels," then was she a compeer worthy to be associated with the pious and distinguished Mr. Newman and the useful Mr. Browne, leaders in the Rehoboth settlement.

And as "the glory of the fathers is their children," her name is not unhonored, and her character and worth not without their monument.

It is upon this evidence, which, though fragmentary and circumstantial, is nevertheless conclusive, that

"WIDOW WALKER"

is placed at the head of the Taunton Family, and in respect to them, as well as the more numerous and widely scattered family of Rehoboth, must be honored as

"THE MOTHER OF US ALL."

(4) **JOSEPH**, b. in Duxbury, 1656, d. 1721–2 in 65th yr. in Taunton. He m. Aug. 1681, Mary Leonard, dau. of Major Thomas, and b. Aug. 2, 1663. Res. Taunton. He inherited a large estate from his father. His 7 chil. were.

1 *Joseph*, b. 1682, m. March 13, 1706–7, Ruth Reed, 2 *Elkanah*, b. 1684, 3 *Mary*, b. 1686, m. Joseph Winslow, of Swansey and d. March 28, 1719, 4 *Hannah*, b. 1688, m. Feb. 8, 1710–11, Wm. Hodges, of Norton, and d. March 7, 1715, 5 *Sarah*, b. 1690, m. Thos. Reed of Dighton, 6 *Abigail*, b. 1692, m. Ephraim Hayward, of Bridgwater, 7 *Elizabeth*, b. 1694, m. Elkanah Leonard, of Middleboro'.

The 1st son, Capt. *Joseph*, b. 1682—1739, had Simeon, and he had James the merchant, and he, James, of Taunton and Barney of Elizabeth City, N. C., and this James, of T., had Samuel T., of N. Y. City. All were b. in T. He also had Job, who d. May 19, 1755, ae. 47, father of James, 1740,—1811, who m. Abigail (Freeman) of Norton, and had Rev. James, b. in West Taunton, Nov. 7, 1799, grad. B. U. 1821, studied Theology with Rev. A. Cobb, West Taunton, ord. Sept. 29, 1830, over the churches in Guildhall and Granby, Vt., dismissed May 4, 1836, preached 4 years in Dublin and 7 years in Gilsum, N. H., and after Oct. 1851, in Shutesbury, Mass. He m. Oct. 5, 1831, Margaretta C. Tubbs of W. T.

(5) **ELIZABETH.**

She m. John Smith.

(6) **SARAH.**

She m. James Dean.

(7) **MARY**, b. in T., d. May 16th, 1731, in 73d yr.

She m. Jan. 9th, 1676, Nathaniel French, who d. June 14th, 1711, ae. 73. Both were buried in the Walker grave yard.

(8) **ABIGAIL**, b. in T.

She m. Feb. 1st, 1683, Edward Bobit, (Babbitt,) who was son of Edward, and b. July 15th, 1655. They had Edward, b. Feb. 14th, 1684, and perhaps others.

4. III. PHILLIP WALKER,²

OF REHOBOTH, MASS.

His biography may be found in connection with the Genealogy of his descendants, immediately following that of the Taunton Family.

THIRD GENERATION.

CHILDREN OF JAMES WALKER,² [2] OF TAUNTON.

5. I. **JAMES**,³ (10) b. 1645–6, d. June 22, 1718, ae. 72 yrs.

He m. Dec. 23, 1673, Bathsheba Brooks, dau. of Gilbert, of Rehoboth. She was b. 1655, and d. Feb. 24, 1738, in 85th yr. (Ins.) Will was proved, April, 17, 1739. He was constable in T. in 1689, and admitted to freedom in 1689. He had 50 acres of land laid out for him, near Wm. Hacks' line. The lot began at So. Purchase line, and run north, 2 points. (Prop. Rec.)

In 1697, there was a graunt to him of "50 acres on the west syde of Three Mile river, below the brook that runs into it, below John Hodges' lot."

He lived at the Weir, in Taunton, where Col. Israel Dean, late of T., lived, and where the road from the Weir, to Dighton, leaves the river and turns west, towards the Presbrey brook.

It is conjectured, that the following graunt refers to this James, because the father would have been called Mr. James Walker.

"Libertie is graunted by the Court, vnto James Walker, of Taunton, to keep an ordinary att Taunton, and for that end, that hee be prouided of all necessaries for that purpose, and that he keep good order in his house, that, soe no damage may acrew vnto any, respecting the pmises." 1679, Plym. Col. Rec. vol. 6, 15th p.

In his will, proved Sept. 1, 1718, bequests are made to wife, 6 sons and 5 daus. These indicate the places where the sons lived, viz.: "To James, eldest son, 50 acres, where he lives. To 2d son, Nathan, land in Taunton, So. Purchase. To 3d son, David, 2 lower lotts, in Dighton, where he now dwells. To 4th son, Nehemiah, my now dwelling house, in T., and my home lott, and barn thereon, and my lott lying by Jas. Burt's, in T., and my land over the Creek,—and 50 acres lying on the three mile river, at a place called the narrow passage. To 5th son, Josiah, 3 upper lotts, in Dighton."

Fac-simile of his autograph of 1690.

James walker

6. II. **PETER**,³ (21) b. 1649, d. April 4, 1711, ae. 60. (Ins.) [62?]

He m. Hannah, who d. Jan. 15, 1704, ae. 44 yrs. (Ins.) Nothing more is known of her. He was an iron dealer, in company with Hon. James Philips. He was appointed with Joseph and Samuel Richmond, to lay out "the highway from Bayting Brook, to Assonet."

His will proved July 2, 1711, gives names of 3 sons and 3 daus. He made a bequest, also, "to Thomas Elyot, who did live with me 6 yrs.," viz.: "6 acres joining the land of my brother James, where said Elyot now dwelleth," (See No. 16.) His Inventory £751, includes "homestead, with housing, orchard, with little island joining, to Nicholas Stephen's, his mill, with all the land belonging to the farm, being 400 acres." This "little island" is in the centre of No. Dighton village, and is now the site of an old foundry. There were his Iron Works, which in later years went by the name of Baylies' Forge, and were on the site of the present Paper mill. By a "deed of guift," in 1688, from James Walker, Sen., "to his son Petter Walker," and other grants, he became an extensive land holder, in the Southern part of Taunton, between and on the Taunton Great and Three Mile rivers, and especially on the latter, at what is now the North Dighton village. In the Proprietors' Rec. we find that Peter Walker had "84 acres laid out near James Walker and Wm. Hack, near the lower powers on the country road to Three Mile river." There was also a grant in 1697, to Peter, of "40 acres, in the low country, between his lands and Jas. Walker's." He also owned land near the meeting house, and on the Mill river, near where his father lived. But his homestead was in the South part of the town, and his dwelling, remodelled 60 yrs. ago, is the 1st house north of Three Mile River, on the road from Taunton to Dighton Four Corners. A portion of his estate, half a mile north has been held by him, and his descendants 175 yrs., and is now owned and occupied by Edward Walker, [See No. 233,] and there is scarcely room for a doubt, that this is a part of the grants, to James, Sen., which, in this section of the town, became almost wholly, the portion of his "son Petter." We are sure, that it was Peter's, either by grant to him, or by inheritance, and as it included when it was bequeathed to his sons, in 1711, the ancient cemetery of the Walker Family and kindred, where his mother and father were buried, in 1678 & 91, we feel confident, it was a part of the lands of James Walker, Sen., and by transmission in the name over 200 years, is the ancestral Farm of the family.

Fac simile of his signature, 1676.

peter walker

7. III. **Hester,**^{3} b. 1650, d. April, ye 8th, 1696, ae. 46. (Ins.) ancestor of the Atwoods, of T. and Dighton, who d. Feb. 12, 1696–7, She m. Jan. 1, 1679, Joseph Woode,* (Atwood now,) of Taunton, ae. 47. (Ins.) Will made, Feb. 12, 1696–7, proved, May 19, 1698. He m. 2d, Abigail Paul, Oct. 18, 1697. [1696 ?] Chil. were—

(1) *Joseph*, b. Aug. 4, 1681; d, Sept. 26, 1724, in 43d yr. He m. Mary Reed, Jan. 11, 1702–3, who d. April 23, 1748, ae. 66 yrs. 7 mos. and 8 days. He represented Dighton in the General Court, in 1729. They had, 1 Joseph, b. Aug. 1, 1704, d. June 1, 1780. His dau. Hannah, m. Thomas Rose, of Dighton, 2 Benj., b. March 17, 1707, d. Feb. 3, 1713–14, 3 Esther, b. Feb. 19, 1710–11, m. Jotham Burt, 4 John, b. Feb. 7, 1712–13, d. May, 1749, In'y £458, 5 Benj., b. July 3, 1715, d. July 28, 1753, 6 Mary, b. March 16, 1718–19, m. Eben'r Winslow, of Berkley.

(2) *John*, b. Feb. 28, 1683, d. 1764, (See No. 26.)

(3) *Ephraim*, b. about 1639, d. Aug. 14, 1776, in 87th yr. (Ins.) He m. Aug. 27, 1724, Ruth Richmond, dau. of Sylvester. She d. Nov. 13, 1776. Rep. from Dighton to General Court, 1718. Chil. 1 Sylvester, b. Sept. 4, 1725, (See No. 56,) 2 Ruth, b. May 4, 1727, 3 Ephraim, b. June 16, 1737, 4 Son, b. Aug. 23——d. Oct. 31.

(4) *Joanna*, b. after death of father. She m. Wm. Nichols, about 1726, and had 10 chil.

8. IV. **Eleazer,**^{3} b. 1662, d. Dec. 15, 1724, ae. 62. (Ins.) His will indicates that he never married, or if so, left no children. Inventory, £1100. He owned a large tract of land in Dighton, but lived in Taunton.

9. V. **Deborah,**^{3} d. about May 1726.

She m. Feb. 9, 1685–6, in Dighton, George Goodwin, of Somersetshire, England. He settled in Taunton, South Purchase, afterward, D. in 1677–8, and is the father of the Gooding Family. The record of his birth has been found in the Parish of North Petherton, Somersetshire, by Alanson Gooding, Esq., of New Bedford. He was 3d son of Matthew, who was yeoman, and who had 4 sons and 1 dau. viz.: Thomas, Matthew, George, Richard, and Johannah. He d. in D. 1712, ae. 79 yrs. Tradition says she was about 18 yrs. of age at her marriage, and he was over 50 yrs. Her name is not mentioned in her father's will, but the following leaves no doubt that there was such a dau. It is a copy of a note, at the foot of a very old deed in parchment, in possession of A. Gooding, Esq., of New Bedford. "This is to declare, that my father-in-law, James Walker, gave me the money, that bought the land mentioned in the deed, for which I humbly thank him," Geo. Gooding.

---

* The compiler has a genealogy in manuscript of a large number of his descendants.

CHILDREN OF B. HENRY WALKER,^{8} [445] OF TAUNTON.

650. I. HENRY ARNOLD,^{9} b. Jan. 8, 1850.
651. II. SARAH FLORENCE,^{9} b. April 5, 1855.

CHILDREN OF GEORGE E. WALKER^{8} [451] OF TAUNTON.

652. I. ESTELLA CHURCH,^{9} b. Oct. 31, 1851.
653. II. RUTH ANNIE,^{9} b. Dec. 28, 1852, d. Sept. 1, 1853.
654. III. FRANCIS IRVING,^{9} b. March 23, 1856.
655. IV. LIZZIE ANN,^{9} b. Nov. 9, 1859.

CHILD OF JAMES G. WALKER,^{8} [454] OF TAUNTON.

656. I. FRED ALTON,^{9} b. Sept. 14, 1859.

TENTH GENERATION.

CHILD OF EUGENE WALKER,^{9} [478] OF SALEM, MICH.

657. I. WM. PERRZ,^{10} b. April 21, 1859.

CHILDREN OF HENRY A. WALKER,^{9} [489] OF SALEM, MICH.

658. I. MERCY ANN,^{10} b. Nov. 23, 1854.
659. II. CHARLES H.,^{10} b. June 8, 1857.

CHILDREN OF OREN E. WALKER,^{9} [543] OF NORTON.

660. I. IDA AUGUSTA,^{10} b. Feb. 8, 1857.
661. II. LYDIA A.,^{10} b. Nov. 23, 1858.

CHILD OF ABIATHAR F. WALKER,^{9} [563] OF TAUNTON.

662. I. CORA FRANCES,^{10} b. Jan. 11, 1854.

CHILD OF JOHN W. WALKER,^{9} [571] OF NEW BEDFORD.

663. I. HENRY E. P.,^{10} b. 1859, in N. B.

PHILIP WALKER,^{2}

OF REHOBOTH,

AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

I. PHILIP WALKER,^{2} (2) was the son of "Widow Walker,^{1}" of Rehoboth, and brother of James Walker, of Taunton. (See 1st p.) The earliest record of him is a deed bearing his signature dated at Rehoboth, 1653. He was one of the Grand Jury, May 17, 1655, propounded for freedom, June 8, 1655, and took the oath of fidelity, June 1, 1658. In June 22, 1658, his name appears in the first division of Rehoboth No. Purchase, (now Attleboro',) when lots were drawn for "the meadow, on the North side of the Town," and again, May 26, 1668, in the division of lands, in the North Purchase.

His birth-place, and age, and date of his arrival in this country, are not known. He married, about 1654, Jane, dau. of —— Butterworth, of Rehoboth, or Michael Metcalf, of Dedham.* ★ She survived him, and afterward m. June 2, 1684, John Polley, of Roxbury, and lived there till her death, in 1702. Dea. Walker was buried Aug. 21, 1679, and his dust, reposes, no doubt, in the ancient grave yard, at Seekonk. His estate was appraised, Oct., 1679, on oaths of James Walker,† and Samuel Walker. In'y £681.

His home and farm were on Watchemoket Neck, south of the Great Plain, at what is now the Kinnicut Place, on the road from

---

* The compiler had supposed, till lately, that Philip's wife was a Butterworth, as his son, Samuel, had an "Uncle Samuel Butterworth." It is, of course, possible, that a Butterworth married a sister of Philip, but it is not known that he had any sister, except Sarah, w. of John Tisdale. What is more probable is, that Butterworth was the uncle of Samuel's wife. Late investigation respecting "Joane Walker," dau. of Michael Metcalf, of Dedham, who, it is stated, in Metcalf's Genealogy, married Samuel (?) Walker, of Rehoboth, has led to the opinion that it was Philip, and not Samuel Walker, whom she married. For reasons, see Samuel Walker, immediately following the descendants of Philip.

† There is no record of any James Walker, in R., in the town register, nor in the Probate Rec. of the County, excepting as far back as 1643 and 45, which have been alluded to, in the sketch of James Walker, of Taunton. (See 6 and 7 pp.) He was about 60 yrs. of age at the time of Philip's death, and was, undoubtedly, the James, who helped appraise his estate.

★ Torrey's book showed Butterworth first, but this + Phillips Genealogy have now convinced me Philip Walker married Joane (Jane) Metcalf insteed. 11-10-90 N.J.Z.

Providence, R. I., to Barrington, about 1 mile from India Bridge, and in Rehoboth, now Seekonk, an attractive and fertile spot, overlooking the Providence river.*

He left a house unfinished, which the Court ordered to be completed at the expense of the estate. The estate was to be divided as follows:—

"In reference vnto the disposall of the estate of Phillip Walker, late of Rehoboth, deceased, the Court ordered, that the now house in building shall be finished out of the whole intire estate, and that those that shall injoy it, shall make some proportionable abatement, of what shall be theire pticular interest, in the said estate, and that the widdow shall have a comfortable, and convenient being ~~therein~~ during her widdowhood, and that the said widdow shall have her third of the said estate, and the sume of twenty pound, for and towards the bringing vp of the youngest child, and that the remainder of the said estate be deuided into seauen equall ptes, whereof the eldest, to have a double pte, and the rest to be deuided vnto the other children, in equall and alike proportions."

She gave bond of administration, Oct. 29, 1679.

"June 7, 1681, This Court graunts libertie vnto Jane Walker, widdow of Rehoboth, to make sale of a small psell of meddow ground, with the advice and approbation of Mr. Daniell Smith and Ensigne Pecke.

Philip Walker's occupation in 1659, was that of weaver. He became at length one of the wealthiest men of Rehoboth. In the allotments in 1671, his estate was estimated at £387, and was exceeded by only two in the town, the whole number being 78. In 1678, it was exceeded by only one, in a valuation of 83 estates. He held various positions of trust and honor. He was surveyor, 1657, constable, 1658, on the Grand Inquest, 1668 and '78, one of the Select men, several yrs. between 1666 and '75, and was deputy to Plymouth, 1669. May 14, 1669, he was chosen one of a Committee, to meet a Committee of the new town of Swansey, to settle a controversy, (probably about boundaries.) He also held the office of Deacon, in the Church. Nov. 2, 1663, Goodman Walker was appointed one of a Committee, to buy or build a parsonage,

or "house for the ministry." This "Goodman,"* was undoubtedly Philip, as there is no trace of any other Walker in R. at that time. June 20, 1678, the town having unanimously called Rev. Mr. Angier, to settle amongst them, "the townsmen and Deacon Walker, were chosen to treat with Mr. A. about it." It was also agreed upon by the town, that the sums to be raised, be freely subscribed, "if it may be," but if the subscriptions fell short, "Deacon Walker, Gilbert Brooks, and 3 others, should devise the mode to raise said sums."

In one period, the towns were obliged to sustain the war against Philip. Many who served as private soldiers, advanced money. The list of those in R. is preserved, and shows that the amount furnished by Deacon Walker, was £26, the largest sum, with two exceptions, and about double what was advanced by any of the 77 others in the catalogue.

Thus, like his elder brother, James, of Taunton, he was prominent in efforts and sacrifices for the maintenance and usefulness of the ministry, and the protection of the settlement from Indian ravages; sustaining at least, one kind of relationship and resemblance to him, and one which is certainly no dishonor; . While James in Taunton, was distinguished and useful as one of the Councill of War, for Plymouth Colony, Philip, in Rehoboth, was among the foremost in furnishing the "sinews of war." Rehoboth, an isolated plantation, was especially exposed to the incursions of the savages. The first and last blood of that fierce struggle, in which Metacomet or Philip, the powerful and subtle Indian chieftain, fought for the destruction of all the colonists in New England, was shed in Rehoboth. Here the conflict opened in 1675, here it closed by the fall of Philip, in 1676.

Deacon Walker, it is probable, was in that gallant fight of the people of Rehoboth, with Philip and his best warriors. Driven to desperation, and fearing if he remained at Mt. Hope, he would be taken captive, the sachem fled into the interior, about the 1st of Aug. 1675. Encouraged by the strong appeals of Mr. Newman, their minister, and though not a part of the military force of the Colony, under his leadership, they pursued Philip, with great courage and activity. So rapid was their movement, that they overtook the rear of his forces at night, and with the aid of a party of friendly Moheagan Indians, who had joined them, attacked him and killed 30 of his men, and carried away much booty, without any loss. When the minister led the way in so noble an enterprise, it is no

---

* The first permanent settlement in Rehoboth, was around the "Great Plain," in that part of the township called Seekonk, meaning, "the abode of the wild goose." It is supposed that Rev. Mr. Newman, and his society, selected this spot because it was an extensive plain, already cleared of forest trees, and favorable for the cultivation of Indian corn. It is not far from the Pawtucket and Providence rivers, and had abundant facilities for obtaining fish and fowl

* It was anciently the custom, to use this prefix, "Goodman," in place of Mr.

Providence, R. I., to Barrington, about 1 mile from India Bridge, is in Rehoboth, now Seekonk, an attractive and fertile spot overlooking the Providence river.*

He left a house unfinished, which the Court ordered to be completed at the expense of the estate. The estate was to be divided as follows:—

"In reference unto the disposall of the estate of Phillip Walker, late of Rehoboth, deceased, the Court ordered, that the new house in building shall be finished out of the whole estate, and that those that shall inhabit it, shall make some proportionable allowance, of what shall be theire porcion thereof, in the said estate, and that the widdow shall have a comfortable and convenient liveing therein, during her widdowhood, and that the said widdow shall have the third of the said estate, and the sume of twenty pound, for and towards the bringing up of the youngest child, and that the remainder of the said estate be devided into seaven equall parts, whereof the eldest, to have a double part, and the rest to be devided unto the other children, in equall and alike proportions."

She gave bond of administration, Oct. 31, 1679.

"June 7, 1681. The Court grants liberty unto Jane Walker widdow of Rehoboth, to make sale of a small peell of meddow ground, with the advice and approbation of Mr. Daniell Smith and Ensign Peck."

Philip Walker's occupation in 1663, was that of weaver. He became at length one of the wealthier men of Rehoboth. In the allotments in [illegible], his estate was estimated at £[illegible], and was exceeded by only two in the town, the whole number being [illegible]. In 1678, it was exceeded by only one, in a valuation of [illegible] estates. He held various positions of trust and honor. He was surveyor, 1657, constable, 1658, on the Grand Inquest, 1669 and '78, one of the Select men, several yrs. between 1666 and '76, and was deputy to Plymouth, 1669. May 12, 1669, he was chosen one of a Committee, to meet a Committee of the nine towns of Swansey, to settle a controversy (probably about boundaries). He also held the office of Deacon, in the Church. Nov. 2, 1674, Goodman Walker was appointed one of a Committee, to buy or build a parsonage-

---

* The first permanent settlement in Rehoboth, [illegible] named the "Great Plain," [illegible] the township called Seekonk, [illegible] "the shade of the wild goose." It is supposed [illegible]

a "house for the ministry." This "Goodman,"* was undoubtedly Philip, as there is no trace of any other Walker in R. at that time. June 26, 1676, the town having unanimously called Rev. Mr. Angier, to settle amongst them, "the townsmen and Deacon Walker, were chosen to treat with Mr. A. about it." It was also agreed upon by the town, that the sums to be raised, be freely subscribed, "if it may be," but if the subscriptions fell short, "Deacon Walker, Gilbert Brooks, and 3 others, should devise the meads to raise said sum."

In one period, the towns were obliged to sustain the war against Philip. Many who served as private soldiers, advanced money. The list of these in R. is preserved, and shows that the amount furnished by Deacon Walker, was £20, the largest sum, with two exceptions, and also larger than was advanced by any of the 77 others in the catalogue.

Thus, did his elder brother, James of Taunton, he was prominent in efforts and sacrifices for the maintenance and usefulness of the ministry, and the protection of the settlement from Indian savages; exhibiting at least, one kind of relationship and resemblance in life, and one which is certainly no dishonor. While James in Taunton, was distinguished and useful as one of the Council of War, for Plymouth Colony, Philip, in Rehoboth, was among the foremost in furnishing the "sinews of war." Rehoboth, an isolated plantation, was especially exposed to the incursions of the savages. The first and last blood of that fierce struggle, in which Metacomet or Philip, the powerful and subtle Indian chieftain, fought for the destruction of all the colonists in New England, was shed in Rehoboth. Here the conflict opened in 1675, here it closed by the fall of Philip, in 1676.

Deacon Walker, it is probable, was in that opening fight of the people of Rehoboth with Philip and his lost warriors. Driven to desperation, and fearing if he remained at Mt. Hope, he would be taken captive, the sachem fled into the interior, about the 1st of Aug. 1675. Encouraged by the strong appeals of Mr. Newman, their minister, and thinking that a part of the military force of the Colony, under its leadership, they pursued Philip, with great courage and activity. So rapid was their movement, that they overtook the rear of his forces at night, and with the aid of a party of friendly Mohegan Indians, who had joined them, attacked him and killed 30 of his men, and carried away much booty, without any loss. [illegible] it is no

groundless conjecture, that his Deacon was with him, especially one who had advanced money so generously for the defense of the settlement.

---

* It was [illegible] to use this period, "Goodman," in place of Mr.

1676

March 28, 1776, just after "Pierce's Fight," the Indians fell upon that part of Rehoboth, called Seekonk, and burnt 40 houses and 30 barns. As Dea: Walker, at the time of his decease, 3 yrs. later, left a house unfinished, it may have been, that his was one of those burnt by the Indians. Philip designed an assault upon Taunton, but apprised of it, the town was prepared for defense, and when he approached, July 11, '76, he was met with such determined resistance, that he was compelled to fly, after burning two houses.*

Apprehensive of their destruction, the Cape towns sent a Com. to Bridgwater, Taunton, and Rehoboth, to invite the inhabitants to take up their residence with them during the war, but the invitation was declined. The answer of Rehoboth, by their Com. indicates an unflinching bravery, and a sublime, though submissive faith. The heroic independence, the undaunted fortitude of those isolated settlers, in the face of the appalling perils which threatened their extinction, prove that they were worthy to be among the founders of civilization, and the defenders of religion, in the New World, and are entitled to the grateful remembrance and honor of their descendants and beneficiaries.

"Though no tablets cast their shadows,
Where they slumber from their toil,
Blood of theirs is on our meadows,
Dust of theirs is in our soil."

All the notices of the position and character of Dea. Philip Walker, though few in number, are highly honorable. There is not a single spot on his escutcheon. He was prosperous, accumulating a property that was large for that period. He was entrusted with the most responsible office in the church, save that of the minister. It is indeed a grateful record, his generous contribution for his country and for Christ. His office and his services are a proof of superior excellence in character and usefulness, and leave no doubt that he was eminently a Patriot and a Christian. Cut down in the vigor of his manhood, his death must have been a sore calamity to the colony and the church, "as when an armor bearer falleth." "Buried Aug. 21, 1679," as the brief, sad record is, it is no groundless conjecture, that the members of the church, and the inhabitants of Rehoboth, gathered on this early autumnal day, to recognize the services and honor the memory of the departed Deacon. The thought and utterance of their hearts, interpreting their great loss, may naturally have been, "How is the strong staff broken, and the beautiful rod."

His moral worth and piety have been inherited in a remarkable degree by his numerous descendants, unto the 8th and 9th generations. They furnish proof that the moral character, is an inheritance more surely entailed than any other. They illustrate the law that, "if the root be holy, so are the branches." They teach that, if it be a great privilege, it is also a great responsibility, to "partake of the root and fatness of the olive tree," in a godly ancestry.

For their virtues and piety are to be remembered, not for the fostering of family pride, but as an example and incentive to a worthy life.

It is an idle and self condemnatory boast to say, "we have Abraham to our father," unless we "do the works of Abraham." But a multitude sleep in the old grave yard, at Seekonk, who proved their legitimacy from Deacon Philip Walker, by their christian worth, and many others have gone forth into other wildernesses, to help establish, and sustain the institutions, connected with religion and the public weal, and are now laboring, or resting from their labors, in many sections of the country. Not many illustrious names are found among his numerous, and widely scattered descendants. They have swelled the ranks of the honest, and faithful yeomanry of the land. They have cherished and transmitted the doctrinal faith, and reproduced the piety and usefulness of their ancestor. Of a great number of them it is true.

"They were never squires and teachers,
They were never wise and great,
But they listened to their preachers,
Worshipped God, and loved the State.

"They were men of humble station,
They were women pure and true,
And they served their generation,
Worked, and fought, and lived for you."

---

* When Philip escaped from Mt. Hope, in '75, a part of his warriors scattered in the wilderness, about Taunton, and burnt the houses of James Walker, and John Tisdill, his brother-in-law John Tisdill, was killed, and 2 other soldiers, who were from Eastham. Though Baylies states this as in 1675, may not the "two houses" burnt July 11th, '76, have been those of J. W. and J. T. It is known that John Tisdill was killed June 27, '76.

THIRD GENERATION.

CHILDREN OF PHILIP WALKER,^{2} [1] OF REHOBOTH.

2. I. Samuel,^{3} (12) b. Feb., 1655, d. Aug. 12, 1712. He m. Nov. 11, 1681, Martha Ide, dau. of Nicholas, b. Oct. 8, 1654, and d. Aug. 1700. He then m. Elizabeth. After his death she m. John Smith, of Roxbury, pub. March 17, 1714, and d. March 13, 1718, in 42d yr.

He was admitted freeman, in 1682, and was constable the same year. He served under Major Bradford in King Philip's War, and is variously styled, Cornet, Lieut., Capt. and Gent. [illegible] In'y was £1686, 18s., 3d., a large estate for the time, including about 700 acres besides personal property. In the appraisal there is mention of "his Trooping Horse and furniture belonging to him." He was Rep. to the General Court in 1705, lived on Watchemoket Neck, in R., now Seekonk, and had 8 chil.

3. II. Sarah,^{3} b. Feb. 16, 1657, buried Aug. 2, 1693. She m. Dec. 27, 1677, Abraham Perrin, son of John, b. March. 1, 1647. He was buried May 15, 1694. In'y £230. Chil. 1679—1692—

(1) *Sarah.* (2) *Rebekah.* (3) *Elizabeth.* (4) *Abraham*, d. y. (5) *Anne.* (6) *Ruth.* (7) *Isaac*, m. Susanna, and had 2 sons and 4 daus. (See No. 86.) (8) *Jacob*, d. y.

4. III. Philip,^{3} (20) b. March, 1661, (1661–2?) d. Feb. 17, 1739–40, in 78th yr. (Ins.) He m. —ember, 1689,* Mary Bowen, dau. of Richard probably. She was buried May 22, 1694. He m. 2dly, Sarah, who d. Feb. 6, 1739, in 68th yr. (Ins.) He united with the Ch. April, 25, 1697. Inv'y £1750. He had 10 chil. On his grave stone in Seekonk Cemetery, is the epitaph, "Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord."

5. IV. Elizabeth,^{3} b. in 1662. Twin with Philip. According to the inquest, she "was accedentally drowned; shee, being sent to scoole, was found alsoe accedentally in the river first by two youthes; and they makeing known the same to two women, the wife of Nicholas Jyde and the wife of Roger Annadoune, and then to William Sabine, whoe forthwith came and drew her out of the water, as hee saith. From the testimony of the afor specified psons with other concurring circomstances, wee, the subscribers, conceive that the child, which was two yeares and a halfe old, before specifyed, came accedentally to her end. Seauenth of Aug. 1664." Plym. Col. Rec. 4th vol. 83, 84 pp.

* Torrey states m. 31 Dec 1687

6. V. Mary,^{3} b. May, 1663, d. May 8, 1694. In'y £44. Her Will, proved May 28, 1694, contains bequests "To cousin (niece) Ann Perron, the book 'Cordial Comfort.' To cousin (niece) Abraham Perron, 'Secret thoughts in dying times.' To cousin (niece) Sarah Perron, my Bible."

7. VI. Experience,^{3} birth unknown, buried Nov. 10, 1674.

8. VII. Elizabeth,^{3} b. April 1, 1666, m. March 31, 1687, Henry Sweet, of Swanzey, who d. Dec. 8, 1704. In'y £100. Chil.—

(1) *John*, b. 1695, m. 1719, Hannah Peck, and 1730, Sarah Claflen. 13 chil. (2) *Philip*, d. y. (3) *Thomas*, b. 1701, m. 1728, Rebecca Peck. 11 chil. (4) *Michael*, d. y. (5) *Dorothy.*

9. VIII. Michael,^{3} b. March 1, 1667, buried Feb., 1677.

February the 16th, 1677.

"Wee, whose names are vnderwritten, being called together on a corroners inquest, vpon that sad accedent, which befell Micaell Walker, about ten yeers of age, wee doe find, that hee came accedentally to his end by his falling through the flore of the saw mill vpon the water wheel, or just by it when it was goeing, and was carried away with the streame vnder the iyce."

Steuen Paine, Sen'r and 11 others.

10. IX. Ebenezer,^{3} (30) b. "Mid Nov." 1676, d. March 13, 1717–8. He m. Nov. 19, 1700, Mehetable Willmarth, who d. Oct. 27, 1702. He m. 2dly, Oct. 11, 1703, Dorethy Abell, dau. of Lieut. Preserved, and b. Nov. 18, 1677. He and w. renewed covenant, 1709. He had 11 children. In'y £1575. Res. Rehoboth, now Seekonk. She m. 2dly, 1724, John Reed and d. Aug. 1, 1741, in 64th yr. (Ins.)

11. X. Martha.^{3} Not of age in 1680.

FOURTH GENERATION.

CHILDREN OF SAMUEL WALKER,^{3} [2] OF REHOBOTH.

12. I. Samuel,^{4} (41) b. Nov. 11, 1682, d. Aug. 23, 1712. He m. Feb. 9, 1705–6, Bethya Read, who d. Oct. 18, 1708. He then m. Nov. 10, 1709, Ruth Bliss, dau. of Sam'l and Mary, and b. Nov. 11, 1687. In'y £129. Had 3 chil. His widow m. Jan., 1713–14, Noah Saben.

13. II. **Patience**,^{4} b. March 30, 1685, d. Nov. 28, 1730. She m. June 14, 1705, Noah Perrin, of Roxbury. He was a tailor. They were admitted to the ch., April, 1724, and had 7 chil. from Jan. 18, 1708, to Dec. 22, 1729—

(1) *Noah.* (2) *Mary.* (3) *Samuel.* (4) *Elizabeth.* (5) *Patience.* (6) *Thankful.* (7) *John.*

14. III. **Timothy**,^{4} (44) b. Sept. 14, 1687, d. Nov. 17, 1745, in 59th yr. He m. May 14, 1713, Grace Child, dau. of Edward, [was it not Benjamin? See No. 15.] and b. about 1678, in Rehoboth. She was admitted to the ch., June 14, 1724, and d. Oct. 30, 1729. He m. 2dly, Jan. 15, 1729–30, Rachel Beverly. He exerted a great influence in the affairs of Rehoboth. In'y £2743, old tenor. Had 7 chil. His widow m. Daniel Greenwood, of Sutton, Nov. 15, 1748.

15. IV. **Peter**,^{4} (51) b. Sept. 18, 1689, d. March 24, 1760. He m. June 9, 1715, Mary Child, of Roxbury, dau. of Benj'n and Grace (Morris.) She d. between 1730 and 32. They were admitted to Communion, Oct. 10, 1724. He m. 2d, Jan. 18, 1732–3, Mrs. Martha Read, who d. Jan. 16, 1747–8, in 58th yr. (Ins.) He m. 3d, Bethiah, who was a widow in 1760, and in Woodstock, Ct. His In'y was £238. Res. Rehoboth. Had 13 chil.

16. V. **Ephraim**,^{4} (64) b. Sept. 4, 1692, d. March 2, 1731–2, in 40th yr. (Ins.) He m. Mary, dau. of Lieut. Preserved Abell. She d. July, 1747. In her will she bequeathed £10, to the 1st Church in Rehoboth, for the purchase of a cup for the communion service,—to Jas. Clay, her negro boy Cæsar, and provided for his liberty They had 8 chil.

17. VI. **Martha**,^{4} b. Sept. 8, 1696. She m, Oct. 5, 1721, Ichabod Bowen, who d. March 20, 1760. Chil.—

(1) *Eleazer*, b. 1722, m. Dorothy, d. before 1760. (2) *Samuel*, b. 1724 (3) *Alse*, d. Feb. 25, 1791. (4) *Simeon*. b. 1730. (5) *Ichabod*, b. 1735. (6) *Martha*, b. 1737.

By 2d Marriage.

18. VII. **Elizabeth**,^{4} b. Aug. 10, 1702, d. Dec. 28, 1702.

19. VIII. **Benjamin**, (72) b. Aug. 12, 1703, d. 1787. He m. —— Bicknell, then Elizabeth Childs, and 3dly, —— Cadwell, of Hartford, Ct. He was in Rehoboth 1725, but settled in Ashford, Ct. Had 8 chil. all by 1st wife. Tradition says he had 5 chil. born in successive yrs. in the month of July, that the first 3 sons were Benj. Eben'r and Eph'm, and the 3d, went alone first. Benj'n 1st born, wa 5 yrs. of age when he walked, yet he became robust and athletic, a have been all the W's of his branch.

Children of PHILIP WALKER,^{3} [4] of Rehoboth.

20. I. **Ebenezer**,^{4} b. Oct. 21, 1688. He probably d. unm. or without issue, as there is no mention of him or heirs, in his father's will.

21. II. **James**,^{4} (80) b. Sept. 3, 1690, d. Nov. 28, 1747. He m. Elizabeth, who d. Dec. 29, 1747–8. They renewed covenant Oct. 3, 1735. Res. Rehoboth. In'y £818. Had 6 chil.

22. III. **Philip**,^{4} (86) b. Aug. 13, 1693, d. Nov. 5, 1742. He m. Dec. 7, 1721, Mary Chard, who d. Sept. 3, 1737. He then m. March 4, 1737–8, Ann Martin, of Bristol, R. I., dau. of Melatiah, and b. Sept. 9, 1699. He was Captain. Inv'y, £1429. Res. Rehoboth. Had 8 chil. His widow m. 2dly, July 27, 1743, Jeremiah Allen, and d. July 7, 1747.

By 2d Marriage.

23. IV. **Sarah**,^{4} b. Jan. 8, 1695–6. It is inferred that she first m. Thomas Kilton, Feb. 3, 1724, as there was no other Sarah, born early enough for this marriage. Had—

See LDS - I.G.I.

(1) *Amey*, b. Oct. 9, 1726.

Sarah^4 was w. of —— Holdridge, in 1739. (Will of father.)

24. V. **Esther**,^{4} b. ——, baptized July 4, 1697. She m. —— Avery, (father's will) and had—

(next page *)

(1) *Esther*, living in 1749.

Esther Walker m. May 16, 1709, Isaac Averill. (Re'th Rec.) Was it Esther^4? If so, she must have been oldest child. There is no other E.

25. VI. **Mary**,^{4} b. March 19, 1699–1700. It is supposed she m. 1st, Josiah Ide, June 18, 1724, who d. Nov. 30, 1731. She was w. of —— Robinson, in 1739. (Father's will.) Chil.—

(1) *Elizabeth*, b. March 19. 1725. (2) *Daniel*, b. June 13, 1726. (3) *Josiah*, b. Oct. 16, 1728. (4) *Mary*, b. Jan. 1, 1730–1.

26. VII. **Jane**,^{4} b. March 21, 1702. She m. Dec. 23, 1724, Samuel Newman, Jr., of Rehoboth. They had chil. baptized in Seekonk. (Ch. Rec.) Chil.—

(1) *David*, b. April 20, 1727. (2) *Jesse*, b. Aug. 2, 1730, (3) *Sarah*, b. July 3, 1733. (4) *Nathan*, b. Dec. 25, 1735. (5) *Samuel*, b. March 22, 1738–9.

27. VIII. **Nathaniel**,^{4} (94) b. Jan. 31, 1703–4, d. April 20, 1783. He m. May 11, 1727, Anna Sweeting, dau. of Henry, b. May 1, 1707, ~~and~~ d. March 23, 1772. He is called "best beloved

son," in his father's will. He united with the ch. March 25, 1733, held the office of Deacon, and was also Rep. to General Court, 1750 and '51. Res. R. Had 9 chil.

28. IX. DANIEL,⁴ (103) b. Oct. 10, 1706. He m. Jan. 1, 1729-30, Mary Perry, dau. of Jasiel and Rebecca, and bro. of Jasiel, Jr. (See No. 44.) She d. in Rutland, Vt. Both m. ch. He joined the expedition to Quebec, and was there at the taking of the city in 1759. On his return, when between Clarendon (then Socialboro',) and No. 4, New Hampshire, (now Charleston,) he froze his feet badly. Attracted by the appearance of the country on his way home, he travelled up the Otter Creek, as far as Clarendon. On the 1st of April, 1768, removed with his family to C., where he died. He early settled in Coventry, R. I., and built him a house, which was situated a little East of South, from the Summit Station, on Providence and Hartford R. R. All that now remains is the chimney, still standing, (1857,) the house having been taken down in 1853. He left also, other traces of his sojourn in C. South of his dwelling on the hill are two little graves, always said by oldest inhabitants to be graves of Walker children. They are still visible, and the present owner of the farm has lately enclosed the place for a grave yard. It is a tradition there, that Mr. W. one evening saw a strange light on the hill. Losing his 2 chil. soon after, he had them buried where he saw the singular light. These two graves on the hill, alone, and yet guarded for more than half a century, and remembered as Mr. W.'s children, confirm the record in Attleboro', which gives names and births of his chil. He was living in A. in 1750, where he owned lands inherited by will, from his father's estate. It is no wonder that in view of the lands on the Otter Creek, he should abandon the rough soil of Coventry, R. I. Had 12 chil.

29. X. STEPHEN,⁴ (115) b. Aug. 7, 1709. He m. Jan. 3, 1733-4, Rebekah Millerd, dau. of Solomon and Elizabeth, b. Sept. 2, 1706, and d. Sept. 17, 1837, ae. 31 yrs. and 15 days. They had 2 chil. He m. 2dly, July 20, 1738, Mehetable Harris of Roxbury, and had 2 chil. He was a Weaver; removed to Pomfret, Ct., and was recommended to the ch. in P., 1739. He probably left P., as search has been fruitless, to learn more of him or his chil.

---

*(from previous sheet)
later information (LDS IGI)
indicates Esther was born
21 Dec 1688 to Philip's first
wife Mary Bowen, but bapt.
after he married Sarah —
Perhaps a more pious lady or
one of different views?

Otherwise Esther would
have been only 12½ when
she married Isaac Averill!
(This means the book by Clara
Avery contains an error)

BROWN OF PLYMOUTH AND WANNAMOISETT

As might be imagined, the genealogy of the Brown families of Bristol Counties, Massachusetts and Rhode Island, present some complex problems. While the second Brown line, below, is supposed to be linked to the first, according to the genealogy of the Bosworth family and to *The Carpenter Memorial*, the precise relationship has not been proven.

Mr. John^1 Browne, Gentleman, and his descendants have been the subject of research published by the compiler in 1973 under the title, *Bristol Browns*, and in a new edition, in 1980, as part of volume one of *New England Colonial Families*. The section below is an abridgement of that text, in which will be found all references.

1. Mr. JOHN^1 BROWNE, Gentleman, was born in England, perhaps about 1580. He died in Swanzey, then a part of Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, 10 April 1662. His will, dated 7 April 1662, was proved twelve days later.

His wife Dorothy, alleged without proof to be a Beauchamp, died in Swansea 29 Jan. 1673/4, aged 90 years.

According to Nathaniel Morton's *New England Memoriall*, published in 1669, he traveled in the Low Countries and became friendly with John Robinson, pastor of the Pilgrim church at Leyden, Holland. Apparently he made his first trip to America aboard the *Lyon*, William Pierce, Master, in 1631, leaving from London on the 22nd of June and arriving in Boston twelve weeks later, with wife Dorothy and Mary, John, James and William Browne. John Browne, "aged 40," sailed from England on board the *Elizabeth* with William Stagg as the Master, under a certificate of conformity dated 17 April 1635 with James Walker, 15, and Sarah Walker, 17. There is strong probability that the Walkers were relatives to Mr. John^1 Browne, but the John Browne on board the *Elizabeth* may have been another person altogether, having been board about 1595 and having been listed as a baker. Mr. John^1 Browne was a shipbuilder in Plymouth Colony at least as early as 1647.

He was chosen one of the Assistants to the Governor of Plymouth Colony in Jan. 1635/6 and was elected again each year for nineteen years with the exception of 1646. By 1639 he had moved to Cohannet, with Capt. Miles Standish and others, and he was a proprietor there when it was incorporated as the town of Taunton.

He was a friend of Massasoit, the chief of the Wampanoag Indians, and as a result his son James had his life spared during King Philip's War in the 1670s by Massasoit's heir. As John Browne was the representative of Plymouth in frequent dealings with the Indians, he served with Edward Winslow to negotiate the purchase of the lands comprising the present towns of Seekonk, Rehoboth, East Providence and Pawtucket.

As well as serving with the colonial leaders as an Assistant, he was a member of the Council of War in 1642, 1646 and 1653, and Commissioner of the United Colonies of New England from 1644 to 1656, serving longer than any other. In 1643 he was an incorporator of the town of Rehoboth, and he served there as Townsman in 1645-1646 and 1650-1651. He was one of the wealthier men in town, and had extensive interests in the New Netherlands as well. In 1645 he helped preserve Plymouth Colony's jurisdiction in his area from an encroachment attempted by the Massachusetts Bay Colony with the sup-

(duplicate)

by Carl Boyer

port of one Richard Wright of the town.

On 29 Oct. 1645 the town meeting voted that he should undertake to buy Wannamoisett (now East Providence and Barrington, R. I.) from the Indians for £15. worth in commodities with the provision that the Indians would move from the land and John Browne would retain title to it. He settled there permanently.

He represented Plymouth Colony's opposition to placing Roger Williams' charter in effect in Rhode Island while on a trip to Providence, and then went to Shawomet to support the followers of Samuel Gorton against interference from twenty Massachusetts Bay families. He was a liberal concerning religion, to the extent that his was the first magistrate's voice to offer the opinion that support of the church should not come from taxes. In 1665 he pledged his own property as a bond that the church could be supported from voluntary contributions. Yet he "persecuted" his son James for becoming a Baptist, and sued the Reverend Mr. Samuel Newman of the Church of Christ as a result of slander, for which he was awarded the handsome sum of £100., which he then refused to take.

Various records mention his shipyard, which was probably in Bullock's Cove, and numerous dealings in land. He was a member of the highest class, and his son-in-law, Mr. Thomas Willett, who had come to New England also on the *Lyon* in 1631, became in 1664 the first English mayor of the City of New York.

The Clarendon Papers at the Bodleian Library, Oxford University, reveal that the reason he left public service in Plymouth Colony in 1656 was that he returned to England in the service of the Vane family as steward of their properties while Sir Henry Vane was imprisoned by Cromwell, the dictator of England. Upon the Restoration in 1660, when Charles II returned to the throne, Mr. Browne sailed to his home in Wannamoisett. Apparently he had spent some of the time in England at Raby Castle in Durham.

When he died of fever he was buried in Little Neck Cemetery at the head of Bullock's Cove in Wannamoisett. In his will he left 1700 acres of Narragansett lands to the children of his son John, who had died ten days before he did, and he was able to leave a large estate valued at £665.1s.2d., but including only 6/- in cash!

Children, probably born in England:

i. John², d. 31 March 1662; m. (1) unknown, m. (2) *circa* 1660 Lydia² Buckland.
2. ii. James, d. Swansea, Mass., 29 Sept. 1710; m. 1654 Lydia² Howland.
iii. Mary, d. 6 Jan. 16--, bur. Little Neck; m. 6 July 1656 Capt. Thomas¹ Willett.
iv. William, possible son, passenger on the *Lyon*, 1631.

2. Mr. JAMES² BROWNE, born probably in England about 1623, died in Swansea, Massachusetts, 29 Sept. 1710, aged 87, and was buried in Little Neck Cemetery in what is now Riverside, Rhode Island.

He married about 1654 Lydia² Howland*, who was buried with him.

He was in England in 1659 when James Cudworth wrote to him there. Possibly he went to visit his father, although the circumstances are not known. In 1665 he succeeded his brother-in-law, Thomas Willett, who was then Mayor of New York City, as Assistant in Plymouth Colony, which post he held also in 1666 and 1673-1683. He was chosen Deputy from Rehoboth in 1666, and from Swansea in 1669, 1671, and 1683.

For some time he was in the center of controversy over control of the church in Rehoboth, which ranged between Congregationalists and Baptists. On 2 July 1667 he and Mr. Myles, the Baptist minister, were each fined £5. for setting up a public meeting without permission of the General Court, while a Mr. Tanner was fined 20/-. On the 30th of October following the Baptists were given permission to organize the town of Swansea, with a Baptist church under Mr. Myles, the church being the first of that denomination in Massachusetts. Thus while James Browne served, with John Allen and Stephen Payne, Sr., as a Selectman for Rehoboth in 1666-1667, he was next to serve Swansea as grand enquest in 1668. The records of the two towns were mixed for years afterwards.

As Plymouth Colony Assistant and Lieutenant of the Swansea Military Company, James Browne played an important role in King Philip's War. On 14 June 1675 he went to King Philip, then chief of the Wampanoags, with a friendly letter from Governor Winslow, and, finding the Indians hostile, warned the colony of impending war. A member of the tribe, Petonowowett, later said Mr. Browne would have been killed that day had not Philip intervened personally. When the war actually began on Sunday, 20 June 1675, it was son James³ Brown who took the word to Plymouth. On "Fasting Day," the following Thursday, nine settlers were killed while on their way home from church, and on 18 July fifteen were killed in an ambush. That month Mr. Browne, who was one of the five (of seven) Assistants taking the field during the war, led twelve men from Swansea in pursuit of the Indians across the Seekonk plain, with help from the Mohegans and eleven men from the Mt. Hope garrison under Lt. Nathaniel Thomas. During the war he went to Philip twice but found him "very high and not p'swadable to peace."

His will, dated 25 Oct. 1694, was proved 11 Jan. 1711.

Children, born in Plymouth Colony:

i. James³, b. Rehoboth 4 or 21 May 1655; d. Barrington, Mass., 15 May 1718; m. 5 June 1676 Margaret² Denison.
* ii. Dorothy, b. Swansea 29 August 1666; d. Rehoboth 2 June 1727; m. Swansea 12 Nov. 1690 Joseph² Kent, Jr.
iii. Jabez, b. Swansea 9 July 1668; d. Barrington, R. I., July 1747; m. (1) Jane, m. (2) 14 Feb. 1740/1 Abijah Wheaton.

§ § §

BROWN OF REHOBOTH

The compiler's search for the parentage of Deacon John Brown, Jr. or 2d, Gentleman, has extended over a period of twelve years and has not been successful; however, appropriate deeds bear further study. A complete search of grantor and grantee indices relating to John Browns, with appropriate follow-up, may reveal mention of John Brown's place of birth or previous residence. The research into the deeds done by Charles Delmar Townsend in 1979 is outlined in the text below.

Brown data gleaned from research in other records, during the course of the search for the ancestry of Deacon John Brown, has been published in the compiler's *New England Colonial Families, Volume 1*.

Insurance Company of Philadelphia, he is the third generation of the family to work for the firm. He has also done work on a degree in mathematics at Drexel University.

Children:

i. Richard Livingston, III⁵, b. Lancaster, Pa., 11 Dec. 1967.

ii. Michael Geoffrey, b. 29 August 1970.

Desc. of Sarah (Walker) Tisdale sister of Phillip Walker (See over)

Tisdale (derivative of Teesdale) just n/w of Yorkshire?) Ripon is SSE of those § § § River area. on main highways (west of york) it is logical they were together.

TISDALE

Many early residents of Taunton, Massachusetts, came there from Taunton, England, or the vicinity in Somerset or Devonshire. However, John¹ Tisdale was a late arrival in 1651, and a manuscript Tisdale genealogy by Samuel Tisdale, written in 1851 and on file in the Old Colony Historical Society, Taunton, stated he was baptized in Ripon, Yorkshire, 7 Nov. 1614, son of Thomas and Ruth Tisdale. ✓ This allegation has not been checked, but could be at the Society of Genealogists Library in London, or at the Yorkshire Parish Register Society.

1. JOHN¹ TISDALE, born apparently in England about 1614, was "killed by the Indians, the 27th June 1675" [Bowen, 3:65n; see Plymouth Colony Records, 8:69], according to Shadrach Wilbore, Taunton Town Clerk. His gun was recovered from the Indians at Rehoboth on 1 August 1675 [Bowen, 1:85]. This was early in King Philip's War. ✓

He married Sarah² Walker*, who died in Dec. 1676 [E. H. Reed, *NEHGR*, 17:236].

He was first of record in Plymouth Colony on 7 June 1636, when he bought suit against Stephen Hopkins, *Mayflower* passenger and Assistant, for battery, by which he was "dangerously wounded" [Walker]. Hopkins was fined £5. and ordered to pay the plaintiff 40/- [M. T. Savage]. On 2 Oct. 1637 he was granted ten acres in Duxbury, where he was freeman on 7 March 1642/3, and constable from 4 June 1645, for one year. He owned land (lot 23) now described as east of Assonet Station in Assonet Village, where his son Joshua settled. The high profile rock there is called the "old man of Joshua's Mountain" [Bowen; M. T. Savage].

He bought the land in Taunton on 26 Dec. 1651, in a part of the town which is now Berkley, Mass. In 1653 he was fined 20/- for "appraising a substitute cow" [Waterman, 331]. He was chosen constable on 8 June 1655 and 7 June 1659 for one year terms, and served as Selectman from 1672 to 1675. On 28 Dec. 1659 he was assessed taxes of £1.10s.10d. for nine people on eighty-two acres, the fifth highest assessment of forty-seven [Bowen, 1:19]. On 1 Nov. 1667 he and other owners of "a Certaine Necke of land knowne by the name of Mattapoisett" sold it to William Brenton for £35. He was Deputy to the Plymouth General Court for the term which began 3 June 1674.

A letter of administration was granted 1 Nov. 1675. On 9 July 1689 John² Tisdale, Sr., John, Jr., and James were listed in Major William Bradford's quitclaim deed to Taunton.

Children, first four born in Duxbury, and the remainder born in Taunton, order uncertain:

i. John², d. Dec. 1677; m. Taunton 23 Nov. 1664 Hannah³ Rogers, daughter of John Rogers of Duxbury.

2. ii. James, b. 1643; d. 15 Jan. 1715, aged 71; m. 5 Nov. 1666 Mary² Avery.

iii. Joshua, b. 1646; d. Freetown, Mass., 1718, aged 72; m. Taunton 5 July 1688 Abigail² Andrews.

iv. Elizabeth, m. John Smith.

v. Sarah, m. James Dean.

3. vi. Joseph, b. 1656; d. 1722; m. August 1681 Mary³ Leonard.

vii. Mary, d. 1711; m. Taunton 9 Jan. 1676/7 Nathaniel French [E. H. Reed, 17:34].

viii. Abigail, b. 1659, ward of James² Browne in 1677; d. perhaps 1749; m. Taunton 1 Feb. 1683/4 Edward Bobit (or Babbitt) [Reed, 17:37].

2. JAMES² TISDALE, born in Duxbury, Plymouth Colony, probably in 1643, died in Taunton, Massachusetts, 15 Jan. 1715, aged 71.

He married in Dedham, Mass., 5 Nov. 1666, Mary² Avery*, who died in Middleborough, in that part which is now Lakeville, Mass., 9 Sept. 1713, aged 66, according to Benton [*Reed-Edgerton*, 38]. Middleboro, as it is spelled today, was not, however, incorporated as a town before 1800, nor was Berkley incorporated until 1735, although it is referred to in some sources as existing earlier. Most likely the entire region was within the early boundaries of Taunton.

He was freeman in Taunton 29 May 1670 and in 1675 was listed among the heads of families. Lands at Assonet were conveyed to James Tisdale, James Walker and others by Constant Southworth, treasurer of Plymouth Colony, on 12 Nov. 1677. James Tisdale was a petitioner for the Town of Dighton incorporation, 11 Oct. 1708 [Lane], an owner of the iron works at Freetown, and served as constable, surveyor of highways and militiaman [Benton, 38].

Children, listed by Benton:

i. James³, went to New Lebanon, Connecticut.

* ii. Mary, m. *ca.* 1690 Richard² Haskins.

iii. Martha, m. John Hodges, Sr.

iv. Margaret, m. Josiah Winslow.

v. Sarah, m. John Johnson of Lebanon, Conn.

vi. Ebenezer, d. young.

3. JOSEPH² TISDALE, born in Taunton, Plymouth Colony, about 1656, died there in 1721/2, in his sixty-fifth year.

He married in August 1681 Mary³ Leonard*.

He inherited a large estate from his father [Walker].

Children, probably all born in Taunton:

i. Joseph³, b. 1682; m. Taunton, by Major Thomas Leonard, 13 March 1706/7, Ruth³ Reed ["Marriages," *NEHGR*, 13:254].

ii. Elkanah, b. 1684.

iii. Mary, b. 1686; d. 28 March 1719; m. Taunton 11 Feb. 1707/8 Joseph Winslow of Swansea.

iv. Hannah, b. 1688; d. 7 March 1715, aged 26; m. Taunton 8 Feb. 1710/1 William³ Hodges of Norton [*Ibid.*; Bowen's *Woodstock*, 7:70; see Gardner, 15].

Pages 477-8

§ § §

pp 477-8

WALKER OF REHOBOTH

The family name has been thought to have come from a person whose occupation involved walking, perhaps a fuller or an inspector of forests.

1. (unknown)^1 WALKER, who died no doubt in England, was the progenitor of the Rehoboth family of the name.

He married a lady known only as the "Widow Walker," who was apparently the sister of John^1 Browne, Plymouth Colony Assistant (q.v.), who mentioned in his will "cousin John Tisdill" (Tisdale, q.v.) in his will. She lived in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony.

She came apparently to Plymouth Colony after her children, who embarked from London on the *Elizabeth* [*Eliza* in the records] of London, William Stagg, Master, according to a record under date of 15 April 1635 but separate from that of Richard^2 Walker of Lynn [Hotten, 61]: "James Walker 15 yers & Sarra Walker 17 yers: Serv$^{t's}$ to Jo^n Browne a Baker & to on[e] W^m Brasey linen drap[er] in Cheapside Lond p Cert. of their Conformity." John Browne, aged 40, was on the same ship, which perhaps docked at Hingham, Massachusetts.

The Widow Walker is listed among those who in 1643 gave the value of their estates for a pro rata distribution of lands in Rehoboth; her estate being valued at £50. Her name appeared on the records as late as 18 Feb. 1646/7. She had been among the first to settle in Rehoboth, with land in Seekonk.

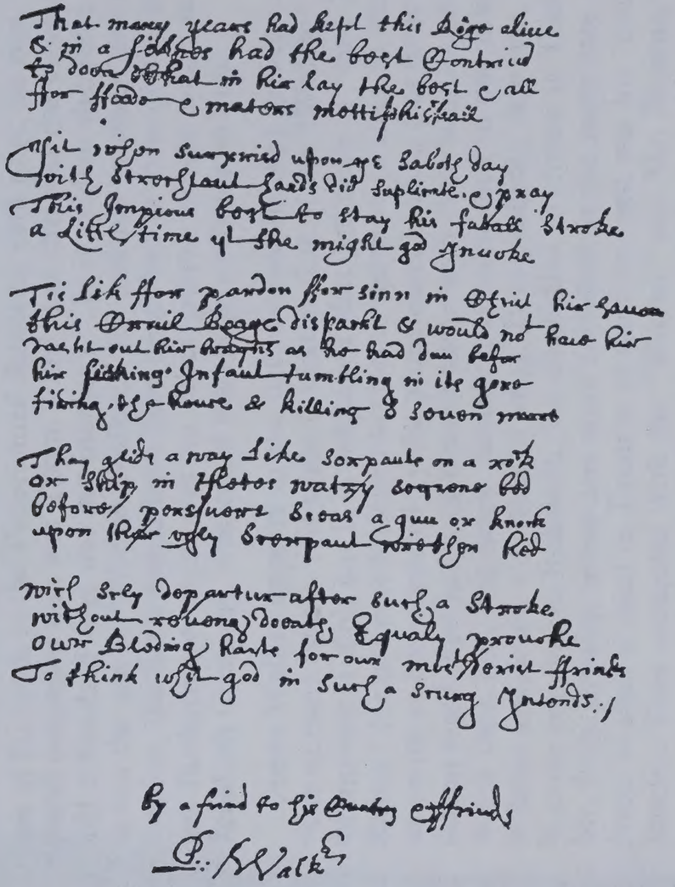
Children, born in England:

* i. Sarah^2, m. John^1 Tisdale.

ii. James, d. Taunton, Mass., 18 Feb. 1691/2, aged 73; m. (1) Elizabeth^2 Phillips, dau. of William, m. (2) Sarah (Richmond) Rew, widow of Edward Rew and dau. of John Richmond [Walker].

iii. Philip, bur. Rehoboth 21 August 1679; m. prob. at Dedham, Mass., *ca.* 1654 Jane^2 Metcalf [Bowen, 3:27].

§ § §



That many years had kept this ligo alive
& in a febbes had the bost Contriud
to doom what in his lay the bost & all
ffor ffodo & matons [illegible]

[illegible] wohen surpxisd upon ye Sabath day
with stxetchaut hads did suplicate & pxay
This Impious bost to stay his fatall stroke
a Littel time yt she might god Invoke

Tis lik ffor pardon ffor sinn in Chrit his sauou
this Cruil Beast dispatcht & would not haue hir
racht out hir brayns as he had don befor
hir sucking Infant tumbling in its gore
firing the house & killing & souen more

They glide away like serpants on a rock
or ship in fflotos watry sogrone bed
befoxe porsuers scoas a gun ox knock
upon ther ugly serpant within hed

with sely departur after such a stroke
without revenge doeth Equaly prouoke
our Bleding harts for our murthexed ffrinds
To think wt god in such a strang Intends.:/

By a friend to his Country & ffriends
P: Walker

An exact size photostatic reproduction of five stanzas of Philip Walker's poetry commencing on page 15 of his poem entitled "The ffirst smile of god in this land" (see *post*, page 46), together with his signature at the end of his eighteen-page manuscript. This is the only known extant handwriting and signature of Philip Walker, and is here published for the first time.

These stanzas record the murder of Rachel, the wife of Thomas Mann, and of her infant daughter, a heretofore unknown Indian atrocity committed at Swansea on 24 June 1675, the date of the outbreak of King Philip's War.

In addition to the historical importance of his poetry, his orthography is of particular interest in that it shows rather an unusual combination of sixteenth and seventeenth-century handwriting styles. For instance: his capital "C" is decidedly sixteenth-century, as is his small "h" with the top loop below the line; double "f" for capital "F"; "x" for "r"; and the lowered capital "C" for the "&" sign. Mixed in with these characters are also found the seventeenth-century capitals "B, I, L, R, S, T, and Y"; the small "h" with loop above the line; "e", and the "&" sign. The recorded handwriting of no other Rehoboth man seems to have had the styles of two centuries jumbled to the extent found in Philip Walker's writing, of which the foregoing five stanzas are only a small sample.

WIDOW WALKER FAMILY

I WIDOW WALKER, of Rehoboth, Mass.

Widow Walker was one of the first purchasers and proprietors of the town of Rehoboth or Seacunk, now Seekonk, and one of the company who first settled there. Her name is in the list of those who in 1643 gave in the value of their estates, for a pro rata division of the lands. Hers was £50. In the division made June 31, 1644, she had a share, and lots were assigned her in several divisions afterward, as in drawing for the Great Plain, and on the 18th of 12 mo. (Feb.) 1646 for the new meadow.

Her name then disappears. When and whence she came to New England, and where she died, are not known. There is no record to tell us her age or her character. No trace of her biography is found, save the already noted facts of her being associated with an adventurous company, most of whom went out from Weymouth into the wilderness,—a company marked for its religious character (being a majority of the church of Weymouth), the highly educated and scholarly Rev. Samuel Newman being in some respects the Leader of the enterprise.—Her Christian name and that of her husband, are never given. In the early records of the town, she has invariably the touching, sorrowful title of Widow, suggesting the history of blighted hopes, and a grief-stricken heart. Perhaps she had one to protect and cherish her when she left her native land,—and burying him in the sea came here alone,—or perhaps together, they had reached these shores, and were struggling in mutual help and loyalty to bear the toils, trials and perils incident to the settlement of a new country,—when death snatched him from her fellowship. But the more probable supposition is, that becoming a widow in England, she emigrated, perhaps with her younger son Philip, after the coming of James and Sarah. Bereft of counsellor and helper, she would naturally follow her children, and seek the sympathy and aid of her brother, or possibly only her brother-in-law, Mr. John Browne. That she did not come with them in 1635, and did not appear until eight years afterward, favors this theory. James and Sarah, as favorites of their mother's brother-in-law or brother, their uncle, Mr. Browne, and bereft of a father's counsel and support, may have been induced by his encouragements, to try their fortunes in the New World, leaving the mother behind with their younger brother, till they should learn how the experiment would issue.—Old enough to be of service, perhaps they were really indentured as "servants to Jo. Browne," and not merely as a device to escape the pursuivants of the King in their attempt to get out of England. But these are conjectures merely. The interest of Mr. Browne in his nephew and niece, the two young emigrants of 1635, and the fact of their mother the "widow" being associated with Mr. Browne in the settlement of Rehoboth, favors the belief that she was his sister, though he might have manifested the same regard, had she been only the sister of his wife. We may however see among the group of pious and brave settlers, not only the godly man who is their religious teacher, but also the form of one whose sable garments tell us she is a "Widow." The vision passes quickly before us, and is lost to our sight, awakening sympathy and interest for the woman, who, bereft of the companion of her youth, became a pioneer in founding the church and colony at Rehoboth. She was buried no doubt in the ancient place of graves in Seekonk, where many of the fathers repose, but no stone marks the spot.

Philip Walker, afterwards Deacon, and whose name first appears in 1653, to whom lands were assigned in 1658, and of whom the record commences soon after hers ceases, was her son. In the description of his lands in the Proprietors' Records, 48th page, he says, "100 pound commons that was Thom. Pitts', 100 that was the Governor's half a hundred that was my mother's." It is evident therefore that he was the son of "Widow Walker," for had his "mother" not been a widow, the lands would have been described as those of his father, and furthermore, there was no other person of the name in the Rehoboth Company, who could sustain this relation to him.

James Walker appears in the list of those in 1643 giving in the value of their estates. His name is next to that of the "Widow," and the amount is £50, but it is subjoined that his share is "now John ffitches." He however forfeited his lots to the town in 1644, in accordance with an order enacted by the proprietors in 1643, that those who did not fence their lands, or remove there with their families, should forfeit their lots. His name, however, is mentioned in one division of lands afterward, viz., that of 1645. It is probable, however, that he never removed to Rehoboth, but concluded to remain in Taunton. Mr. John Browne, whose lots were forfeited at the same date with James Walker's, lived in Taunton at the time, and was his "cousin," (uncle). Thus connected with the "Widow" and Mr. Browne, who was also one of the original Proprietors of Rehoboth, having been the agent of the company, while in Weymouth, and appointed by

duplicate "Widow Walker" info.

the Court at Plymouth, to make the purchase of Asameeum the Indian Chief, James Walker very naturally became associated with the settlement. Accordingly, neither their names nor that of Mr. Browne is found in the list of the company that went from Weymouth. The strongest reason, however, for concluding he was of "Widow Walker's" family, is found in the fact that when Deacon Philip died in 1679 James was one of the appraisers of his estate. When it is remembered that there was no James Walker in Rehoboth at that time, that Rehoboth and Taunton townships were contiguous, and moreover, that James was about sixty years of age, it is beyond a reasonable doubt that he was not only nearly related to Philip, but was his brother, and accordingly was the son of "Widow Walker."

If we may judge of her worth from the virtues of her sons, and infer that they inherited the spirit and piety of their Pilgrim mother, and that her fidelity entitled her to use the language of the Roman matron respecting the Gracchi, "these are my jewels," then she was a compeer worthy to be associated with the pious and distinguished Mr. Newman and the useful Mr. Browne, leaders in the Rehoboth settlement.

And as "the glory of the fathers is their children," her name is not unhonored, and her character and worth not without their monument.

It is upon this evidence, which, though fragmentary and circumstantial, is nevertheless conclusive, that

"WIDOW WALKER"

is placed at the head of the Taunton Family, and in respect to them, as well as the more numerous and widely scattered family of Rehoboth, must be honored as

"THE MOTHER OF US ALL"

Issue, WALKER, b. England:

1. James, b. 1619/20, d. Feb. 15, 1691, ae. 73; m. (1) Elizabeth, dau. William and Elizabeth (Parker) Phillips, who d. July or Aug., 1678, ae. 59; (2) Nov. 4, 1678, Sarah, dau. John Richmond, wid. Edward Rew; came to New England on the "Elizabeth," which embarked from London, Apr. 15, 1635.

2. Philip, b. 1616, bur. Rehoboth, Aug. 21, 1679; m. ab. 1654, Jane, dau. Michael and Sarah (Elwyn) Metcalf[228a], b. Dedham, Mar. 24, 1632, d. Roxbury, 1702, who m. (2) June 2, 1684, John Polly, of Roxbury.
3. SARAH, b. 1618; m. CAPTAIN JOHN TISDALE.

[228a] It has been erroneously stated that he married Jane Butterworth, because Samuel Walker, his son, called Samuel Butterworth "Uncle," whom it is now believed was uncle to Samuel Walker's wife.

References: Walker's Walker Memorial, 1861, pp. 1-20.

CAPTAIN JOHN TISDALE FAMILY

I CAPTAIN JOHN TISDALE, b. England, d. Taunton, Mass., June 27, 1675, murdered by the Indians; m. SARAH, dau. WIDOW WALKER, b. England, 1618, d. Taunton, Mass., Dec., 1676.

Capt. John Tisdale settled first in Duxbury, Mass., about 16[illegible] where he bought land of William Brett, but he removed to Taunton before Dec. 6, 1653, where he was constable in 1659; one of the proprietors of Taunton North Purchase, 1668; selectman and deputy to General Court. Besides lands in Taunton, he owned a farm near Assonet, and took an active part in the affairs of the town. It is recorded that he entered against Stephen Hopkins, Assistant of the Government, an action for Battery, by which he was dangerously wounded, June 7, 1636, whereby Stephen Hopkins was fined £5 and costs. Also, "John Tisdall, upon the good report of him and his good carryage, is allowed to keepe house and plant for himself, provided he so continue his carryage still, 1638." Is it not probable that he had been recently married? But he did not altogether "continue his carryage," for Dec. 6, 1653, he was fined 20 shillings for "unfaithfulness in prizing and exchanging a cow," of Mrs. Bryant's. Although he has not had a very numerous progeny, all the Tisdalls, of American birth, are of his lineage, among whom were several business and professional men[228].

His will, probated Nov. 2, 1676, bequeaths to sons John, James, Joshua and Joseph; gave to daughters Elizabeth, Sarah, Mary and Abigail. The Court made note that the two younger had endangered their lives in protecting the property. June 4, 1677, an agreement was made between these four sons and the three sons-in-law, John Smith, James Dean and Nathaniel French.

Issue, TISDALE, b. probably Taunton, Mass.:

1. John, Jr., m. Taunton, Nov. 23, 1664, Hannah Rogers, of Duxbury.

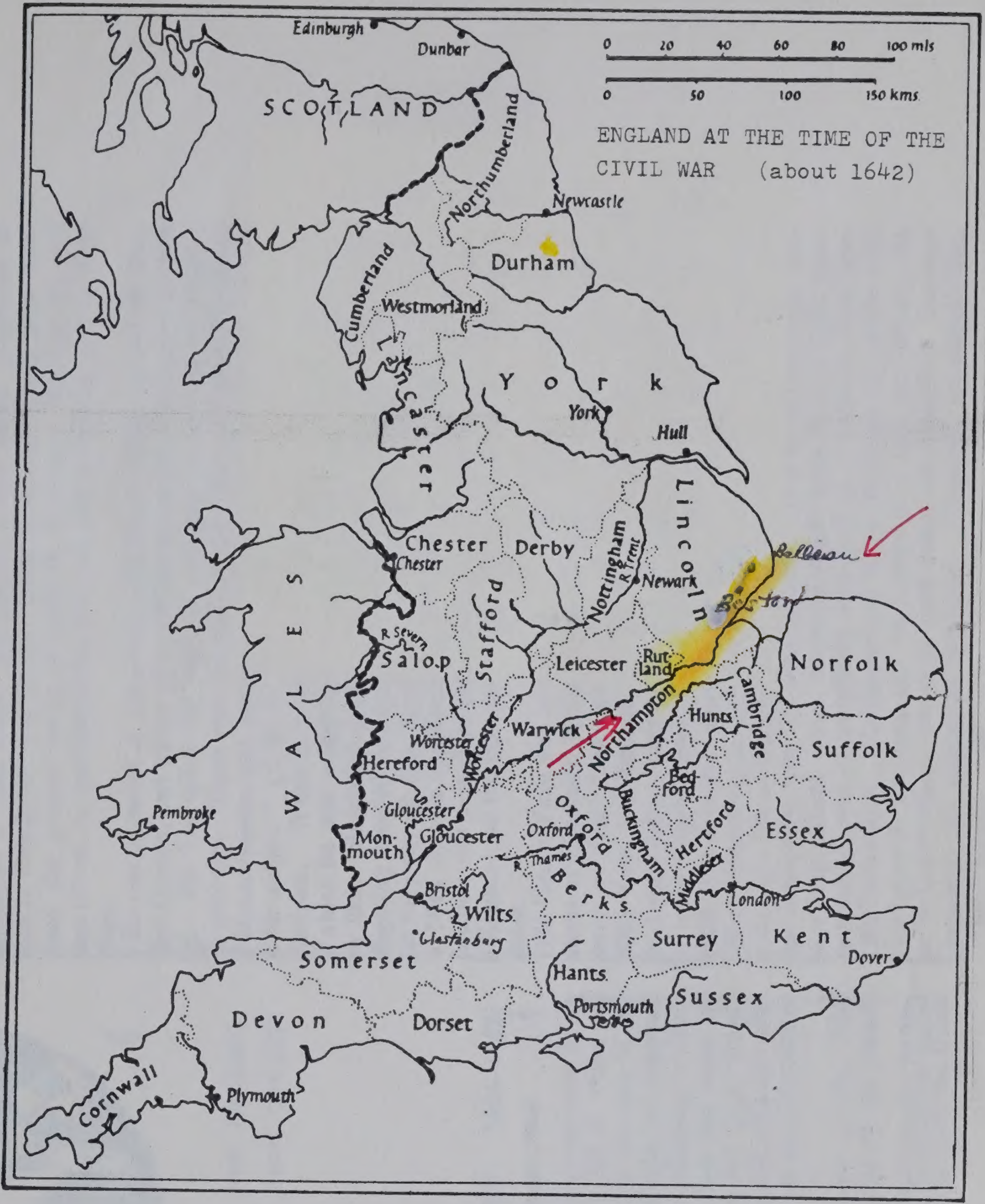
---

[228] Among his descendants were Elkanah, a lawyer, and Nathaniel, 1732-1787, called "Old Master Tisdale," the eminent classical teacher of the time, by whom, during about forty years, a large number of the distinguished men of the county were instructed. (See his Epitaph in the Register, v. 13:62), both of Lebanon, Conn.; Dr. Tisdall, of Norwich, Conn., and Rev. James, Jr., of West Taunton and Shutesbury. Samuel Tisdale, Esq., an intelligent and successful merchant in New York City, 7th generation from John, compiled a manuscript genealogy of the family.

2. James, d. Middleboro, Jan. 15, 1715; m. Taunton, Nov. 5, 1666, Mary, dau. William and Margaret Avery, of Dedham and Boston, who d. Middleboro, Sept. 9, 1713, ae. 66.
3. Joshua, m. Taunton, July 5-15, 1688, Abigail, dau. Henry, Jr. and Mary (Wadsworth) Andrews, b. Taunton, ab. 1668/9, d. Freetown, 1741.
4. Joseph.
5. Elizabeth, m. John Smith, who removed to Newtown, L. I.
6. SARAH, b. 1648; m. JAMES DEAN.
7. Mary, d. Taunton, May 18, 1731; m. Taunton, Jan. 9, 1677, Nathaniel French, who d. Taunton, June 14, 1711.
8. Abigail.

References: Walker's Walker Memorial, 1861, pp. 18-20. Register, v. 52:17. Savage, v. 4:307. Pope, p. 456.

Walker / Browne


ENGLAND AT THE TIME OF THE CIVIL WAR (about 1642)
0 20 40 60 80 100 mls
0 50 100 150 kms
Edinburgh
Dunbar
SCOTLAND
Northumberland
Newcastle
Durham
Cumberland
Westmorland
Lancaster
York
York
Hull
Lincoln
Chester
Chester
Derby
Nottingham
R. Trent
Newark
Belleau
Boston
WALES
R. Severn
Salop
Stafford
Leicester
Rutland
Norfolk
Warwick
Northampton
Hunts
Cambridge
Suffolk
Worcester
Worcester
Hereford
Bedford
Pembroke
Gloucester
Gloucester
Oxford
Oxford
Buckingham
Hertford
Essex
Monmouth
R. Thames
Berks
Middlesex
London
Bristol
Wilts
Glastonbury
Surrey
Kent
Dover
Somerset
Hants
Sussex
Portsmouth
Devon
Dorset
Cornwall
Plymouth

The attached Mayflower Quarterly article shows that Phillip Walker's mother was indeed a Browne, + sister of John Brown, the Plymouth Colony Assistant. This traces much of his very involved career and places the Browne family's origins in the highlighted area (N. Hants., Rutland + Lincs) Missing links involve William Cecil (Lord Burghley) / Albinia Cecil, mother of Frances Wray with whom John Browne stayed (at Belleau, Lincolnshire)

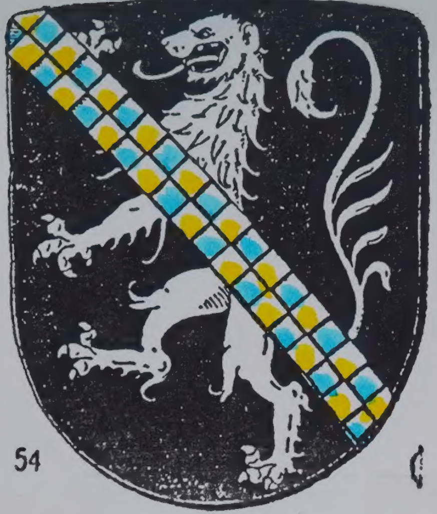
Before returning to Plymouth Colony when the King returned to power, he was also at Durham Castle.

(Not shown in this article, Philip Walker's brother-in-law John Tisdale, was of North Yorkshire. Author R. L. Bowen thought Philip Walker might have come from Scotland or North England because he used Scottish words. This could mean his parents came from (or were born in) widely separated parts of the country.

This data also contains a small amount of data regarding our Pearce ancestors Kent (m. his grdaughter) and also suggesting Tilley family might have been very connected to Myles Standish (through his wife?).

"A Roll of Arms"
(Taken from NEHGR -
April 1928 -
pages 155 + 165)

Browne


54

54. BROWNE, John. Plymouth Colony, New England.

Arms : Sable a lion silver a bend checky gold and azure.
Crest: A demi-lion silver.

NEHGR Vol 36 pages 368-71

JOHN BROWNE OF THE OLD COLONY. 1634-1662

Communicated by George M. Browne, A.B., of Boston, Mass.

JOHN BROWNE was a man of considerable prominence in his day and generation in the Plymouth colony; but of whose ca- reer only a few scattered traces remain. Though not one of the original "Pilgrims," he early joined them and became and remained one of their trusted counsellors. Judge Davis, referring to Morton's statement (Memorial, p. 297), says, "we find the same remark respecting Mr. Browne as of Mr. Winslow and Capt. Standish, that while on their travels they became acquainted with the refugees at Leyden, and were so attached to them on acquaintance as to unite themselves to their society."*

Sixteen or seventeen years after his continental travels, John Browne, having now a wife and three children, sold off his posses-

---

* A generation earlier, to wit, about 1580, his reputed kinsman, Robert Browne, the fanatic, had made and abandoned his eccentric attempt to establish an Independent or Separatist church at Middleburgh in Holland—which attempt however may have been, in some sense, a harbinger of the Pilgrim movement to Leyden.

ions, whatever they were, and they appear to have been not inconiderable, and emigrated to America—joining his Leyden acquaintnces, who had preceded him, at Plymouth. He was admitted a freeman in 1633-4. The solid oak chest, of elaborate workmanhip, with its duplicate bottom, in which he brought over his valuables, is still preserved by his descendants, or was a few years ago.

In 1635, less than two years after his arrival, he was elected one of the Governor's Assistants, and continued an active and influenial member of that board for many years.

He became a large proprietor of lands in Taunton, and, with Miles Standish, under appointment of the General Court, fixed the boundaries of that town. He became a still larger proprietor of lands in Rehoboth; and in this latter township, which then comprised the present towns of Seekonk, Swansey, Barrington, and some others, he established his seat and took a leading part in town affairs.

He was on terms of friendship with Roger Williams and the banished Gorton, and others who suffered persecution in that intolerant age. He "scrupled the right of coercing any person to support the ministry. There was scarcely any other man either in Plymouth or Massachusetts who could with impunity have expressed a doubt on the subject" (2 R. I. Hist. Coll. 168, n.). He acted on his principles. When a petition came before the Court of Assistants, of which he was a member, to compel certain of his townsmen to pay their ministerial assessments, he caused it to be rejected, by obligating himself for seven years to pay from his own property all that they should fail to make up by their voluntary contributions. In 1644 he was appointed one of the Commissioners of the United Colonies, and served in that capacity until 1655-6, when he went to England, at the instance of Sir Henry Vane, to take care of his estates.

Sir Henry Vane was at that time enduring the relentless persecutions of Cromwell for having opposed his assumption of imperial powers as Lord Protector. By the recent death of his father (in 1655) Vane had become the heir to large estates, heavily encumbered with debts—among them Raby Castle, of which Leland says "is the largest castel of loggings in all the north country," and it is said "the demesnes annexed to it exceed 30 miles in length."

Notwithstanding his early rebuffs in Boston, Sir Henry Vane kept up through life a friendly interest in New England's affairs, and some intercourse with its leading men. It is to be regretted that his correspondence, which doubtless would have thrown light upon many things, was so completely destroyed as it seems to have been at the Restoration. He entertained Roger Williams repeatedly both at his house in London, and for months at a time at Belleau, his seat in Lincolnshire—where he used sometimes himself on Sundays to preach to his assembled neighbors. Cromwell imprisoned him,

Re: John Browne of Plymouth Colony
(Being a Browne, Philip Walker's mother was also entitled to use these arms!)

for a while, in Carysbrook Castle; and threatened, and indeed attempted, to confiscate his estates. During these turmoils Mr. Browne seems to have acted as steward of his property, and remained in England until near the time of the King's return, when he thought it prudent to withdraw. It was to Mr. Browne, during this sojourn in England, that the upright and estimable Cudworth, of Scituate, wrote the noble letter (given in Bishop's New England Judged, p. 168) in relation to the persecutions and sufferings of the Quakers; the writing of which brought down upon him political and social ostracism.

Mr. Browne returned to Rehoboth, where his family had continued to reside during his absence, and he died there in 1662. A singular controversy arose and got into the courts twenty years ago in relation to the cemetery in which he was buried two centuries before. It is on a point of land projecting into Bullock's Cove, on Narragansett Bay, and was a portion of the Browne farm which had never been conveyed away, and had been chiefly used as a burial-place for that family. But as others, from the town and vicinity, had been permitted to be buried there, the question was raised whether, under the statutes, it had not thereby become "a public burying ground." The court, in a somewhat flowery decision, held that it had (2 Allen's Mass. Reports, 512).*

A year or two before his death Mr. Browne completed a purchase which he had made before going to England, of a tract of territory within what was called the Narragansett or Pequot country; the jurisdiction over which was long a subject of dispute between Massachusetts, Connecticut and Rhode Island.

In regard to this purchase, Cartwright, one of the King's commissioners, in his illnatured reply to the Massachusetts statement to Lord Clarendon, gives the following account. This reply is printed in the New York Historical Society's Collections for 1869, p. 102, from manuscripts of the Clarendon Papers in the Bodleian Library. Cartwright says:

> "It appears that Tecomano (a petty sachem) gave John Browne land in 1652, not in writing—that Mr. Browne went to England and was Sir Henry Vane's steward at Raby. In 1660, when he saw the King was to return to Old England, he returned to New England. Then in 1661 Mr. Browne makes a writing and gets it signed, which says that 'Whereas Tocamano 9 years since gave such a tract of land to Mr. Browne to make an English town on, but then he could not because he was to go to Old England, But now being returned and having in mind to make an English town, and having taken for his associates Mr. Winthrop of Connecticut, Major Atherton of Boston, Major Winslow and Mr. Willet of New Plymouth, all of whom I approve well of; I do confirm unto said Browne the said tract of land—presently after this Mr. Browne dies, and Mr. Willet his son-in-law acts in the matter,'" &c.

But notwithstanding the disapproval of the King's commissioners, the purchase was sustained; and on a portion of that territory, which, in the final settlement of boundaries, fell to Connecticut, and is within the limits of what, under Massachusetts rule, was called Southertown, and under Connecticut jurisdiction became Stonington, one branch of Mr. Browne's family seated themselves, at a place near an eminence still called Browne's Mountain.

There also in a cemetery are buried several generations of his race; and among them several of the name of Christopher, which, next to John, seems to have been a favorite name in the family, both in Old and New England. The descendants of Mr. Browne are numerous and widely dispersed.

---

* There was another lawsuit in which Mr. Browne himself was a party, which it would be interesting to know more about. The Rev. Samuel Newman, a learned divine, an Oxford scholar, lived and ministered in the solitudes of Rehoboth. There he completed his great work, the Concordance of the Bible. In 1652 Mr. Browne sued the Rev. Mr. Newman for "defamation," and obtained a verdict for £100. The record states that "the damage is freely remitted by Mr. Browne, only Mr. Newman is to pay the costs of Court" (Plym. Col. Rec., vol. 7, p. 58). But what the "defamation" consisted in does not appear

[illegible]HL SLC film US/CAN 0,005,474 Redding CT Land Records 8:538-539 (Hannah (Taylor) Selleck)

[20] FHL SLC film US/.CAN 0,005,474 Redding CT Land Records 8:536-537(Ruth Taylor heirs quitclaim)

[21] Barbour, Redding

[22] Barbour, Ridgefield

[23] Barbour, Ridgefield

[24] Jackson, Ronald Vern. *Connecticut 1820 Census Index.* Provo, UT: Accelerated Indexing Systems, 1977.

[25] Jackson, Ronald Vern. *New York 1820 Census Index.* Provo, UT: Accelerated Indexing Systems, 1977

A Challenge - Royal Ancestry Anyone?

John Brown ______ 1662

by Robert L. French, CSG #5296

John Brown, the older son of John Browne, the Assistant, of Plymouth was born in England and came to America with his father in 1632 on the ship *Lyon* (although Robert C. Anderson of the GMP doesn't think so). In part III of my original 1983 & 1984 Mayflower Quarterly articles about John Browne, the Assistant to Governor Bradford of Plymouth, I wrote in Feb. 1984, p.8 that his elder son, John, "seems not to have made much of a mark, possible because he died before his father... The name of his first wife is not known. I suspect she may have been Martha Thompson, baptized 17 Dec 1626 in Preston, Northamptonshire [who came, with her mother and sisters in 17639 to Roxbury, MA (The Genealogist, IV:2:178)]. Martha was a sister of the first wife of George Denison of Roxbury, MA." Margaret Denison, daughter of George Denison by his second wife, married James Brown, Jr. nephew of John^2 and (?Martha Thompson?) Brown.

The Denisons ended up in Stonington which had been purchased in 1653 by John Brown, the Assistant (MQ:Nov 1983: 166) and divided among his heirs. When Bridget (Thompson) Denison died and George Denison went to England to fight in the Civil War, Alice (Freeman) (Thompson) Parke took charge of her granddaughters, Susan and Hannah, daughters of George and Bridget (Thompson) Denison. Martha (Thompson?) Brown died in Plymouth 14 Feb 1660. Her husband remarried later than year to Lydia Buckland. They had one son, Nathaniel, b 1661. John^2 Brown and his father both died in 1662. Alice (Freeman) (Thomp[illegible] (Parke) died in New London in 1664/5.

The readers of the Mayflower Quarterly were most apt to be interested in James Brown(e) whose descendants were all eligible for the Soc. of Mayflower Desc. None of the numerous correspondents who commented on my articles (then or since) ever mentioned my suggestion about the identity of Martha (Thompson) Brown 1626-1660. Readers of the Nutmegger may be better prepared and more interested in establishing her identity. It would be relatively simple to disprove:

1. A record of the death of an unmarried Martha Thompson before 1649.
2. A record of her marriage to someone else.
3. A record of an unmarried Martha Brown in Plymouth before 1660.

On the other hand, corroboration would more likely be found in Connecticut records by readers of the Nutmegger because that is where her Denison, Parke, Wise relatives and their children were located, (Except for the descendants of her brother-in-law, James Brown and of Nathaniel Brown, son of Lydia (Buckland) Brown who do not share the royal ancestry). What form it might take is very uncertain. The date of the marriage was almost certainly 1649 in Roxbury or Plymouth. No birth or baptismal records have been found. Martha was never a widow so would not appear in land records. Every mention of her is as "first wife of John Brown" and never by name. Mary (Brown) Willet, sister of John, had a daughter, Sarah, who marrried John Eliot, son of the "Apostle to the Indians" who had come to Roxbury with the Denisons. If there is proof, it will almost certainly be found by accident by someone who is alert enough to spot it. Those most apt to be alert are Nutmegger readers seeking Royal Ancestry.

To our grandchildren,
what we tell them about their parent's childhood
and our own young years
is living history.

-- Ruth Goode

Walker (Brown)

(Salem)

(1634) that *Roger Williams*, the minister of Salem, having occasioned disturbances by tenets considered not only heretical, but seditious, and being found irreclaimable, was ordered to leave the colony. He retired to Rehoboth, which was then within the jurisdiction of Plymouth. In 1635, there came to Massachusetts a large number of inhabitants from England, among whom were *Hugh Peters*, who was afterwards chaplain to Cromwell, and Mr. *Vane*, afterwards Sir Henry Vane, who acted a conspicuous part during the Commonwealth of England. Mr. Vane was made governor of the colony the year after his arrival. His popularity, however, was transient. During his administration, in 1636, Mrs. Hutchinson, a woman distinguished for her eloquence, held weekly meetings for persons of her own sex, in which she commented on the sermons of the preceding Sunday, and advanced mystical and extravagant doctrines. These spread rapidly among the people, and many became converts, among whom were Governor Vane, Mr. Cotton and Mr. Wheelwright, two distinguished ministers. Great excitement was produced among the people, the final result of which was, a synod was appointed to be held at Cambridge in August, 1637, where were assembled both ministers and messengers of churches, and magistrates, who, after three weeks' disputation, condemned as erroneous upwards of eighty opinions, said to have been maintained by persons in the country. In consequence of this, Mrs. Hutchinson and some of her principal followers were sentenced to banishment. She, with her husband and family, removed to Rhode Island, where, in 1642, Mr. Hutchinson died. She, being dissatisfied with the people or place, removed to the Dutch country beyond New Haven, where she was killed, with all her family, being sixteen in number, except one daughter, who was carried into captivity.

Later Mr.
John Browne
took over
in the manage-
ment of Sir
Henry Vane's
estate

The year 1637 was distinguished by the Pequot war in Connecticut, in which were killed five or six hundred Indians, and the warlike Pequots were mostly destroyed. This first war with the Indians struck such a terror into the surrounding tribes, that for forty years afterwards they never openly commenced hostilities with the English. In 1640, the tide of emigration from England ceased. Persecution having ceased in England, the motives for coming to New England were removed. They who then professed to give the best account, say that in two hundred and ninety-eight ships, which were the whole number from the beginning of the colony, there arrived *twenty-one thousand two hundred* passengers, men, women, and children, perhaps about four thousand families. After this period it is supposed that for a long time afterwards more persons returned to England, than came from England to the colonies. "Such, however, were the character and virtues of the emigrants, such the power over difficulties, which their resolute minds, and bodies hardened by labor, had imparted to them, that they continued to increase with astonishing rapidity in wealth and numbers."

In 1643, four of the New England colonies, Massachusetts, Con-

JOHN BROWNE OF PLYMOUTH COLONY, OBSTRUCTIONIST AND LIBERTARIAN

by Robert L. French

During his lifetime, John Browne of New Plymouth could not be ignored to the extent that he has been since. He was a man who may have kept Rhode Island from being partitioned among its neighbors like Poland, a man whose toothache nearly broke up the United Colonies of New England, the colonial New Englander who successfully sued his pastor for slander, and the own father who put up his own estate as security so his neighbors would not have to pay taxes to support the established church. He was a landed proprietor in Maine, Massachusetts, Rhode Island and Connecticut. When he was over seventy years ld he spent four years in Old England as executor of the estate f Sir Henry Vane, Controller of the King's Household for James I, serving in place of the son and heir, Sir Harry Vane, one of he most powerful men in the Commonwealth.

Many members of the Society of Mayflower Descendants are escendants of John Browne through his younger son, James, who married Lydia Howland, daughter of *Mayflower* passengers, ohn and Elizabeth (Tilley) Howland. Many of the descendants f his daughter, Mary (Browne) Willett, and of the older son, ohn Browne, are also members because of later marriages into ayflower families. By this time I suspect that most of John rowne's descendants are eligible to join the Society.

Despite his prominence and his close ties to the Pilgrims, no ne has yet established his place of birth in England, the names f his parents, the maiden name of his wife, nor the source of is influence over such prominent colonists as Governor William radford, William Coddington, Samuel Gorton, Roger Williams, dward Winslow or John Winthrop. All of them were either orrespondents, partners or proteges of this man who was at imes intransigent and at times more literal than any of them.

It is not easy to track down someone with such an ordinary ame but it has been done for several other colonists named ohn Browne who were much less conspicuous and influential. y looking at his activities, his associations with other colonists d some traces in England, perhaps this John Browne can be nclusively identified.

John Browne of Rehoboth is not the John Browne who was rn in Roxwell, Kent in 1584. That man came to Massachusetts

with his brother, Samuel. Both were shipped back to England on the *Talbot*, arriving there before Sept. 16, 1629. They were neighbors of John White, the founder of Dorchester, Massachusetts, and are identified in his biography by Frances Rose-Troup [*John White, the Patriarch of Dorchester (Dorset) and the Founder of Massachusetts, 1575-1648*, pp. 145, 151, 153]. John Browne of Rehoboth was not the John Browne who lived in Watertown, Massachusetts, although the wives of both men were named Dorothy. Henry Bond, in his *Genealogies and History of Watertown, Massachusetts*, states that John Browne of Watertown was a nephew of Abram Browne and was related to a Richard Browne. He was baptized in Hawkedon, Suffolk, in 1601 and died at Watertown in 1636.

John Browne of Rehoboth was not the one who came in the ship *Elizabeth* in April of 1635. That immigrant was forty years of age, having been born in 1595. There were four Walkers on that ship, also, and two of them, James and Sarah, were children of a sister of John Browne of Rehoboth, and were sent to *the care of John Browne*, not *in the care of*, as some have quoted it. Later records establish their kinship, and are now firmly accepted, but the John Browne who came on the same ship with the Walkers was another man.

After reading all of the accounts, it seems clear that John Browne of Rehoboth sailed from London, June 22, 1632, on the ship *Lyon*, William Pierce, Master, with his wife, Dorothy, and children, William, Mary, John and James [*New England Historic and Genealogical Register* (Jan. 1949) 80:42]. The ages of the children are not firmly established, but they seem to be named in their order of birth. John Browne was "about fifty" and Dorothy was forty-nine, so there may have been older childr in the family who did not come over to the New World, but nothing I have seen mentions that possibility. The ship *Lyon*, with a valuable cargo of beaver pelts belonging to Plymouth Colony, was lost on the return voyage to England. William Bradford quotes a letter from William Pierce, dated Dec. 25, 1632, reporting the mishap [*Classics Club Edition*, pp. 302-4].

John Browne's destination was Plymouth, where he became freeman, Sept. 3, 1634, less than two years after his arrival and a member of the Board of Assistants barely four months later. His position seems never to have been challenged and passed it on to his son, James, and son-in-law, Thomas Willet Not only did he have ability, but he seems to have had excelle connections. In 1640 he wrote to John Winthrop, Governor Massachusetts Bay Colony, as a "loving friend," and later was partner of John Winthrop, Jr., in Stonington, Connectic

Since "Widow Walker" was John Browne's sister, his ancestors are ours. He was (& we are) related to Queen Elizabeth I's Prime Minister William Cecil, Lord Burghley.

Among all of the Assistants in Plymouth, he seems to have been the most influential.

In 1637, Captain Myles Standish and John Browne laid out Taunton, in which John Browne had a large interest and in 1641 he and Edward Winslow purchased Rehoboth, extending the bounds of Plymouth Colony into the territory of Chief Massasoit, Winslow's friend. It also made Browne a neighbor of Roger Williams, Samuel Gorton and William Coddington. Both Williams and Gorton had been in Plymouth during Browne's first years in America and there is a hint that John Browne may have known Coddington in England.

When Roger Williams got his charter in 1644, he boldly returned to Rhode Island by way of Massachusetts, carrying a letter from highly-placed friends in England, headed by the Earl of Northumberland. By this time, John Browne had moved to Rehoboth from Taunton. Within a year, and in the face of the Charter and the letter, the General Court of Plymouth Colony "sent Mr. John Browne, one of the magistrates, to Aquiday to forbid Mr. Williams from exercising any authority there, and laying claim to the island" [*New Plymouth Records*, 2:9].

That same year, the Massachusetts Bay Colony "authorized twenty families of Braintree to go down and take possession of the Gorton plantations; but Browne warned off their prospectors and claimed the territory as Plymouth's. This counter-claim was in the interest of the persecuted Gortonians, with whom Browne was 'very familiar'" [Goodwin, *The Pilgrim Republic*, p. 518]. Goodwin apparently overlooked the possibility that Browne was really seeking to annex his neighbors. In any event, credit is clearly due to Browne for preventing the breakup of Rhode Island, even if his purpose was less altruistic. No one else in New Plymouth was as much involved.

In 1648, William Arnold of Pautuxit, wrote to John Winthrop with a long complaint about Browne's partiality to Gorton [*Winthrop Papers*, pp. 246-248]. At the same time, Roger Williams wrote to John Winthrop, Jr., stating that John Coddington had gone to Plymouth "with a proposition for Rode Iland to subject to Plymouth to which himself and Portsmouth incline" [*Winthrop Papers*, p. 258]. Goodwin goes on to say that, in 1651, Massachusetts Colony renewed her claim and prepared fresh warrants for seizing Gorton and his men. John Browne, supported by his colleague, Hatherly, boldly resisted the claim before the Commissioners [of the United Colonies] and condemned the officers of Massachusetts Bay. The latter pleaded a waiver in their behalf, by the Plymouth Colony government. Browne stoutly reaffirmed Plymouth's right to Shawomet, and declared any waiver of that right wholly valueless, though made by the governor and magistrates of Plymouth, "for not an inch of her soil could be alienated except by the whole body of freemen in General Court assembled." That was democratic doctrine in the extreme, but apparently John Browne avoided adverse repercussions from the governor and magistrates of New Plymouth for denigrating their powers.

The following year the Commissioners met at Plymouth, but John Browne was late. "He gravely announced that he had been plagued with a toothache, and might not have come sooner if he could have had all Plymouth" [Goodwin, *ibid.*, p. 518]. This, or something else, gave great offense to the Boston members. Goodwin does not say, but Browne was then more than seventy years old and might well have been in difficulty if asked to display the aching tooth. There was a great commotion and, if tempers had not cooled before the next meeting, there might not have been one. The General Court of Massachusetts, on behalf of Hathorn and Bradstreet, demanded an apology from Browne, but the Plymouth Court reelected him, without requiring him to apologize, along with William Bradford, and voted that Bradford could not act if John Browne was absent. At that point, by tacit agreement, the matter was dropped by both sides.

John Browne could apparently be stung by criticism and, in at least three instances, he retaliated by haling his detractors before the Court. On March 2, 1640, a presentment was returned against George Bowers "for a defamation against Mr. John Browne, Assistant" [*Plymouth Colony Records* 2:11]. At the General Court, on June 5, 1651, the following entry was made on the record, "Whereas a petition was formerly preferred unto this Court by Mr. Hanbury against Mr. Browne, wherein the said Mr. Browne was much wronged, it is ordered that if the said petition can be found on any of the files, it shall be delivered to him." The following entry appears immediately after: "It was afterwards found, delivered to him and burned...." [*New Plymouth Records* 2:204]. The Reverend Samuel Newman, pastor at Rehoboth, Oxford graduate and the true author of *Cruden's Concordance*, unwisely ignored the two examples just cited. On June 4, 1652, Mr. Browne complained against Mr. Newman in an action of defamation. The General Court gave him a verdict for £100 damages and 23s costs. Browne at once arose and remitted the £100; vindication was all he wanted [Goodwin, *Pilgrim Republic*, p. 519].

In none of these records does the substance of the defamation appear. Not only were the accusations successfully denied, they have been effectively obliterated. Surely, this is testimony that Mr. Browne enjoyed exceptional status in the colony.

He did not win all of the skirmishes, however. In 1645, a petition was presented to the General Court of Plymouth. Its author was William Vassall of Scituate, at the other end of the colony. The motion was to grant "full and free tolerance of religion to all men that will preserve the civil peace and submit unto the government." It provided "no limitation or exception against Turk, Jew, Papist, Arian, Socinian, Nicolaitan, Familist, or any other." Of the General Court, those in favor of the motion were Standish, Browne, Hatherly and Freeman. Those against were Bradford, Prence, Collier and Winslow. A vote by the deputies of the various towns would have been favorable. Mr. Prence prevented a vote by parliamentary maneuvers and Winslow asked for more time for study. He had been a friend of Roger Williams, a partner of John Browne, and he might have been expected to favor the petition. Also, William Vassall's daughter was married to Edward Winslow's stepson, Resolved White, who sided with his father-in-law. Winslow left for England the following year and the motion was never reintroduced.

The records show that this setback did not prevent John Browne from acting on his own when the occasion arose, some ten years later as shown in *Plymouth Colony Records*, [3:84]:

> Whereas a petition was presented unto the General Court, at Plymouth, the first of June, 1655, by several of the inhabitants of the town of Rehoboth, whose hands were thereunto subscribed, desiring the Court to assist them in a way according to the orders of other Colonies about them, for the raising maintenance for their minister; the sum of the petition seemeth to hold forth that those whose hands were not subscribed contributed nothing, or so little as was not esteemed of, which petition occasioned some discourse about a forcible way to compel all the inhabitants of that town to pay a certain sum every year towards the maintenance of the minister. Whereupon Mr. John Browne, one of the magistrates then sitting in Court, and being one of the inhabitants of that town, and not being made acquainted with the said petition until the names of the inhabitants were subscribed; to issue the said troublesome controversy and take off the odium from others, did propound that forasmuch as those whose hands were to the petition desired to submit themselves to a rate, that if the Court would send two of the magistrates unto Rehoboth to take notice of the estates of the petitioners, he would engage himself in the behalf of those who were the inhabitants of the said town, whose hands were not subscribed to the petition, that they

> should voluntarily contribute according to their estates; and if any of them fell short in this business, he would supply that want of his own estate; and this he would make good by engaging his lands for seven years in their behalf, while they staid, though he himself should remove from the place, which was approved of, and Captain Standish and Mr. Hatherly were then made choice of by the Court to see it ordered accordingly.

The two men chosen to see it "ordered accordingly" were two of those who voted with John Browne in favor of toleration ten years earlier. There was plenty of property available in Taunton and Rehoboth, but John Browne also owned land at Kennebec, in Maine and at Stonington, Connecticut [*Mayflower Quarterly* 47:65; *NEHGR* 36:370-371].

It was at this point that John Browne left the colony for four years to administer Sir Henry Vane's estate in England. For part of that time, he resided at Belleau, in Lincolnshire, the home of young Sir Harry, where Roger Williams had also been staying until the spring of the previous year. In the circumstances surrounding that visit may lie some clues to the origin of this unusual man with the ordinary name.

(To be continued)

Robert L. French, a descendant of John Howland, is a Past Lt. Governor of the Albany Colony of the New York Society. His address is R.D. Box 139, Chatham, NY 12037.

JOHN BROWNE OF PLYMOUTH COLONY: HIS COLONIAL ASSOCIATES

by Robert L. French

Part II

When we write about the colonists, we tend to stress their commitment to the New World, and we are likely to overlook their continuing interest in the Old. A number of colonists returned to England, some more than once and some permanently. John Browne was one who went back and was closely associated with several others. The most prominent was Sir Harry Vane, once Governor of Massachusetts. In Plymouth there were Miles Standish and Timothy Hatherly who made one or more trips, and Edward Winslow who never returned; in Rhode Island, Roger Williams and Samuel Gorton and, in Connecticut, John Winthrop, Jr. These men were not "provincials"; they thought and acted in "imperial" terms, although neither word was yet used by Englishmen.

The connection with the Vane family, which took John Browne to England in 1655, was apparently not forged in America. Young Harry Vane came to America in the *Abigail*, leaving England in September and landing October 6, 1635. He was Governor of Massachusetts during the Pequot troubles in 1636 and 1637. John Browne was then active in military preparations but nothing indicates a tie between the two men that would explain why John Browne substituted for Sir Harry as executor of his father's estate. Young Harry went back to England 3 Aug. 1637 [J. H. Adamson and H. F. Folland, *Sir Harry Vane* (Boston 1973), p. 107] and the two men did not meet again for eighteen years.

In the case of his Plymouth associates "we find the same remark respecting Mr. Browne as of Mr. Winslow and Cap't Standish, that while on their travels they became acquainted with the refugees at Leyden, and they were so attached to them on acquaintance as to unite themselves to their society" [George M. Browne, "John Browne of the Old Colony, 1634-1662," *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 36:368]. This same source says that John Browne came to Plymouth sixteen or seventeen years after his continental travels, which would put him in Holland about 1616.

At Plymouth, Browne is mentioned first in connection with Miles Standish. They were very close in age and their ties to the Pilgrims were similar. Both were given authority but, despite the quotations, they were not part of Pilgrim society since neither adopted the Pilgrim religious beliefs. Standish never joined the church; Browne was a member but was at odds with his pastor and friendly with the unorthodox. Browne and Standish voted together for religious toleration in 1645. This tolerance did not extend to Thomas Morton. Browne referred to him as "that vyle person Morton" in a letter to Winthrop, dated 26-4-1644, asking that he be punished, and Standish threatened to shoot him [George F. Willison, *Saints and Strangers*, p. 331]. The two of them laid out Taunton in 1637, also Barnstable and Yarmouth in 1641 [Elizabeth White, *Mary Browne*, (Providence 1935). If Browne was a captain and ship owner, as well as a ship builder, it would explain why he was chosen, because the science of surveying was closer to navigation and to Standish's military schooling than to the skills of the other colonists.

Another link between Standish and Browne may have developed in this country. In his initial explorations before the Pilgrims settled at Plymouth, Standish was accompanied by John and Edward Tilley. John Tilley's granddaughter, Lydia Howland, married John Browne's son, James. Aside from Elizabeth Tilley, who married John Howland, John Tilley had another daughter named Rose, a sister named Rose, and a mother-in-law named Rose [Robert Leigh Ward, "English Ancestry of Seven Mayflower Passengers," *The American Genealogist* 52:203-4]. If Rose Standish came from this garden of Roses, it would explain a lot of associations that are still obscure by connecting Standish to Tilley, Howland and Browne.

John Browne is next mentioned at Plymouth in partnership with Edward Winslow. They purchased Seekonk together in 1641. It had been purchased earlier by Roger Williams but he surrendered his rights to them [Russell and Russell, Eds, *Complete Writings of Roger Williams*, Vol. VI: Letters (New York 1963), p. 316]. Browne and Winslow apparently had been associated as early as 1626. John Browne had received the first deed of land in America from the Indians to an Englishman on 15/25 Jan. 1625, from Samoset and Unnongoit, in the vicinity of Bristol, Maine. John Browne was with Christopher Levett, "Govr of New Plym for the time being" under Sir Ferdinando Gorges [William Bradford, *The History of Plymouth Colony*, (Classics Club, New York 1948), p. 164]. Gov. Bradford and Edward Winslow, in 1626, hearing that "Monhegan belong[ing] to some merchants at Plymouth was to break up," went there, I don't think

taking with them David Thompson of Piscataqua. They bought goods amounting to £400, on condition that the "merchant who was selling them, and who was a Bristol man, would take their bill" [Bradford, *ibid.*, p. 218].

Banks says that a John Browne of Bristol, England was at Permaquid very early [*Topographical Dictionary of 2885 Immigrants, 1620-1650* (Philadelphia 1937)]. It seems very possible ?? that the Bristol merchant was John Browne who used the proceeds to establish himself at Plymouth. In 1627 Kennebec came under eight Plymouth undertakers who were joined in 1628 by four London undertakers [*Saints and Strangers*, pp. 263, 266]. Two of those from Plymouth were Edward Winslow and John Howland. One of those from England was Timothy Hatherly, who visited at Kennebec and Penobscot in 1631 and later became a close associate of John Browne at Plymouth.

On the 4th day of the 4th month in 1646, Edward Winslow wrote to John Winthrop, Governor of Massachusetts. He sent the letter by James Walker and solicited Winthrop's aid in helping Walker secure letters of administration for the estate of Samuel Crum. Walker's wife was his nearest survivor. Winslow was presumably assisting his partner also, because James Walker was John Browne's nephew. This appears to be about the last association between Browne and Winslow. They had voted on opposing sides of the toleration issue in 1645. Winslow's letter to John Winthrop stated, "You would have admired to have seen how sweet this carrion relished to the palate of most of the deputies" [*Saints and Strangers*, p. 362]. Winslow left the colony permanently in 1646. In 1647 Winslow, then in Old England, published a book, *New England's Salamander*, which was directed against Browne's friend, Samuel Gorton. Presumably it was this book that Gorton referred to in 1669 when he stated that "my ancient acquaintance and friend Mr. John Browne ... told me he had read such a book printed or put forth by Mr. Winslow ... he affirmed unto me that he would maintain that there were 40 lies printed in that book" [George Tilden Browne, *John Browne, Gentleman of Plymouth*, p. 20].

Although it apparently ended on a note of disagreement, the association with Edward Winslow did prepare John Browne to assume responsibility as representative between Plymouth and the Indians. Otis O. Wright, in his *History of Swansea*, [p. 198], states that John Browne "was also often employed in settling questions between whites and the Indians - the latter having great confidence in him." Significantly, the other colonists about whom this might be said were Browne's associates, Winslow, Roger Williams and Samuel Gorton.

The Kennebec tie with Winslow leads also to Timothy Hatherly, whose name is associated with John Browne over a much longer period. Before finally settling at Scituate, he had been a regular traveler of the Atlantic, crossing several times. Hatherly visited Kennebec while Howland was there, along with Thomas Willett, who soon afterwards became a son-in-law of John Browne. After they eventually settled in Plymouth Colony, Browne and Hatherly worked together. Hatherly was one of the London undertakers, yet he was dropped from the Board of Assistants for his opposition to intolerance. Browne, on the other hand, was not put out of office, although the rebels looked to him for help and sympathy, and the record shows no tendency on his part to curry favor with the orthodox, either in Plymouth or at Massachusetts Bay.

Hatherly's niece married Isaac Robinson, son of the Leyden pastor of the Pilgrims. After Robinson died, his family was to have come in 1629 with Thomas Willett, but for some reason they did not. Isaac was the only one of the Robinson family who came to America. He came in 1632 on the same ship with John Browne and his family, and with Thomas Willett, who was making a second trip. It is interesting that, when Standish died in 1656, Hatherly and James Cudworth were the executors of his estate. John Browne could not serve, of course, being then in England.

It is unfortunate that more has not been found about the connections between John Browne and Roger Williams. Living so close to each other, they must have spoken together more than they corresponded. Both were at Plymouth from 1632 until 1634, when Williams went to Salem. When Williams went to Providence in 1637, he was assisted by Edward Winslow. Browne was then at Taunton and, after 1644, he was Williams's neighbor at Swansea. Apparently both were active traders with the Indians and shared a belief that land should be purchased from them, not just appropriated. As has been noted, the Indians reciprocated their fairness by having more than ordinary trust in their willingness to be equitable in other matters.

Williams and Browne did not agree in all respects, however, as Roger Williams, in a letter written from Narragansett, Feb. 24, 1649, to John Winthrop, Jr., says of him (John Browne) "Mr. Browne hath often professed liberty of conscience, but now the way of new baptism spreads at Seekonk as well as at Providence and the Island. I have been so bold as to tell him that he persecutes his son and the people, and on the other side, Mr. Newman also" [*Complete Writings of Roger Williams*, 6:92].

There is a deference in the tone of this comment which is probably somewhat more than would be due to Mr. Browne merely because he was of an earlier generation. Roger Williams's biographer notes that Williams always was respectful of position and offered Bradford, the Winthrops, and Winslow, "with others like them ... the deference due their eminent station" [John Garrett, *Roger Williams, Witness Beyond Christendom* (London 1970) p. 117]. The final link between them was an endorsement to John Browne's will, which was witnessed by Roger Williams [*Mayflower Descendant* 18:18-22].

Besides living as a neighbor of Roger Williams, it seems particularly significant that, during his visit to England, John Browne, in 1655, went to stay at Belleau, the home of Sir Harry Vane in Lincolnshire, where Williams had also stayed from 1651 until he returned to Rhode Island in 1654. Belleau was an estate of the family of Sir Harry's wife, rather than one of the older Sir Henry Vane. It was not far from Boston where the Rev. John Cotton had been pastor for twenty years. While John Browne was at Belleau, George Fox also came for a visit in 1657 [*Journal of George Fox* (Cambridge Edition 1911) I:150, 261]. John Browne's opinion of Quakers is not recorded, but his old friend, Timothy Hatherly, wrote a letter of safe conduct on behalf of two Quakers at Scituate, and Hatherly's colleague, James Cudworth, wrote to John Browne about the persecution of Quakers at Plymouth. [This was quoted at length in George Bishop, *New England Judged by the Spirit of the Lord* (London 1661) pp. 128-132; and cited in *NEHGR* (1882) 36:368-371]. The letter assumes that Browne would share his disapproval of such persecution. Although he did not mention John Browne by name, Fox mentions, in his diary, that he met a "New England magistrate" and Browne is the only such magistrate living at Belleau at the time. Significantly, one of those who became a Quaker was Isaac Robinson, son of the Pastor.

John Browne's support of Samuel Gorton is even more intriguing and its cause more obscure. Gorton was at least as controversial as Williams. He was a Familist. The Familists "conformed to the established religion wherever they were. [Their] aim was not a new sect but a new spirit within all sects" [H.M. and M. Dexter, *England and Holland of the Pilgrims* (repr. Baltimore 1978), p. 177]. At the same time, Gorton professed to be a loyal episcopalian and a foe of separatism. Any one of these three labels would have been enough to seal his fate in either colony, but he was adamant on all three points. He was heavily fined and exiled from Plymouth. Winslow stated that part of Gorton's fine was remitted "lest it might lie too heavy upon his wife and children," but he was not very sympathetic to Gorton's beliefs. Although Gorton lived in Rhode Island and founded Warwick, he insisted for a long time on going his own way, supported by his "ancient friend, John Browne." At one point he made a trip to England, seeking to make Warwick a personal fief of Charles I [*Roger Williams, Witness Beyond Christendom*, p. 26]. In 1646, Roger Williams wrote a diatribe against Gorton to John Winthrop, Jr. [*Complete Writings of Roger Williams*, VI:141]. The authenticity of this has been questioned by Andrews [Charles M. Andrews, *The Colonial Period in American History* (Yale Univ. Press 1964) II:13]. However, by 1651 the inhabitants of Warwick were providing financial support to Williams for his trip to England on behalf of Providence and Warwick, in opposition to Coddington and Arnold [*Complete Writings of Roger Williams*, VI:229].

As early as 1644 John Winthrop, Jr., was conducting business in England for John Browne, as shown by a letter from the latter to the senior Winthrop [Robert C. Winthrop, *Life and Letters of John Winthrop*, 2nd ed. (Boston 1869), pp. 464, 465]. In writing to John Winthrop, Jr., about John Browne in 1649, Roger Williams was undoubtedly aware of their ties. It was only three years later that John Browne arranged to purchase Stonington, Connecticut from the Indian, Tecomano. In making the purchase, Browne was inviting trouble, because there is no record that he had permission from anyone in the Colonies or in England to do so, and when he later sought confirmation of his purchase, he stated that the original agreement was an oral one. In 1655, on the other hand, he carefully asked permission from the Plymouth General Court to buy 200 acres for his sons on the Pawtuxet River, north of Mr. Blackstone's (who lived at Cumberland, six miles north of Providence) [*Records of Plymouth Court* 3:84].

When John Browne was on the point of returning to America in 1660 and wished to confirm his Stonington purchase, he named as his associates John Winthrop, Jr., of Connecticut, Edward Winslow's son, Josiah, Major Atherton of Boston, and his own son-in-law, Thomas Willett. The purchase was confirmed in 1661 by the King's commissioners, albeit reluctantly, but John Brown was not an active partner at Stonington [*NEHGR* 36:370-371]. Within a year, he and his son, John, Jr., died in the short space of ten days.

Because of the propensity of the Pilgrims and Puritans to do business with relatives, it was necessary to look at Browne's partners in his colonial enterprises in searching for his ancestry. So far, none of the group just examined can be identified as his relatives.

The next step is to look at John Browne's known relatives for clues to his origin.

(*To be continued*)

JOHN BROWNE OF NEW PLYMOUTH, HIS FAMILY AND RELATIVES

Part III

by Robert L. French

John Browne's origin does not appear from an examination of
s colonial associates. I have found no evidence that he was a
lative of Samuel Gorton, Timothy Hatherly, Roger Williams or
dward Winslow. John Winthrop's mother was Anne Browne, and
e had a cousin named John Browne, but there is no hint of a
mily tie to John Browne of Plymouth. There is a statement
at the Rev. Robert Browne, 1550-1633, from whom the "Brown-
ts" take their name, was a "reputed Kinsman" [George M.
rowne, "John Browne of the Old Colony, 1634-1662," *New
ngland Historical and Genealogical Register* (1882) 36:368n], but
found no documentary references and nothing specific about
e degree of relationship. The Rev. Robert Browne, Anne
Browne) Winthrop and her cousin, John Browne, were of the
eneration preceding John Browne of New Plymouth.

The earliest relative who can be clearly tied to John Browne
an unnamed sister known as the "Widow Walker." She came to
aunton, was a purchaser of Rehoboth, but her name last ap-
ears 18 Feb. 1646/7. She left three children, Sarah, born
18, James, born 1620 and Philip, whose age I have not found.
hen John Browne was leaving for England in 1655, he deeded,
n November 23rd, "the house he lived in at Taunton" to John
isdale and refers to him, and to James Walker, as "cozens."
ohn Tisdale had married Sarah Walker. When Tisdale was killed
y the Indians at Taunton, 27 June 1675, his youngest daughter
ecame a ward of James Browne, John Browne's surviving son.

The next oldest relative of John Browne was William Browne
ho came to America with John in 1632. Although William is
requently left out of the list of John's children, there is one bit
f direct evidence in the Plymouth Court record linking him to
ohn Browne. Other entries are consistent but more indirect.
n 3 Oct. 1662 the record shows:

> I Jonathan Briggs ... do testify that about six years agone, as I was in the house of James Walker of Taunton, I heard James Walker ask William Browne what he would do with his land if he should not returne from England againe. William Browne answered, that if hee did not return againe, then he would give all his land to his little cousen, which was Peter Walker, who then stood before him" [*Plymouth Colony Records* 4:28].

It is noteworthy that the incident presumably occurred ab
the time John Browne left for England, and the Court Record
dated after John Browne's death. William was apparently leavi
at the same time as his father and was not back when the rec
was made.

William Browne bought three acres of land and a house
Duxborrow on 23 Dec. 1642, and was to take possession one y
later [Plymouth Deeds 12:86]. He bought more land in 1644 a
sold it immediately, but there were probably other unrecord
transactions. It is not clear whether Peter Walker got his lan
because William Browne apparently returned to Plymouth later
1662, or in 1663. He was sued for two barrels of tar in 1
and sued Henry Saunders for 40 shillings in 1664 [*Plym. C
Rec.* 4:36, 57]. He was still living at Sandwich in 1667 when
was given permission to sell a small parcel of land at N
quitnomake [*Plym. Col. Rec.* 4:161].

William Browne was a sea captain and hired Joseph Billingt
son of Francis, to sail with him for a month [Edward Arber,
Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, 1606-1623 (London 1897) p. 11
All of these references, but particularly the one concerning
intentions of disposing of his property, seem to indicate that
had no wife or children. His brothers were made freemen o
June 1658, when he was either off at sea, or in England with
father. There is no indication that he ever was made a freem

A contemporary William Browne was executor of the will
Humphrey Howland in St. Swithin's parish, London, in 16
Humphrey was the younger brother of John Howland, fath
in-law of Williams's brother, James Browne, but nothing indica
that the two William Brownes were the same person. Anot
contemporary, but different, William Browne came to Long Isl
with a grown daughter and son-in-law, Thomas Lee. He bec
town clerk of Southampton and died there in July 1650.

William Browne was not mentioned in the will of John Brow
in 1662 [*Mayflower Descendant* 18:14-18]. Anyone who wished
rule out William Browne as being the son of John Browne co
agree that the records would admit of his being a nephew.

Next to be discussed is John Browne's daughter, Mary, w
of Thomas Willett. She is the subject of a full length biograp
[Elizabeth Nicholson White, *Mary Browne*, (Roger Williams Pre
E. A. Johnson, Providence 1935)], as is her husband [Thom
C. Cornell, *Captain Thomas Willett* (Poughkeepsie 1890);
seen by author]. Early writers assumed Thomas Willett was

n of Dr. Andrew Willett, but Thomas Willett came from Leyden here the children of Thomas and Alice Willett of Norwich, orfolk, were living. Willison calls him the son of that Thomas George F. Willison, *Saints and Strangers* (New York 1945)]. harles Banks says that proof is found in one of the letters to e Rev. Goodyear in which Willett states that his sister, Hes-r, married Peter Wood [*New York Genealogical and Biographical* *ecord* 60:7, 8; D. Plooij and J. P. Jarris, *Leyden Documents* *elating to the Pilgrims* (Leyden 1920) p. 142]. To add to the nfusion there was a Thomas Willett from Bristol, England who arried Sarah Cornell at Nieue Amsterdam, 1 Sept. 1643, and ent from there to Albany.

Mary Browne's future husband came to Plymouth from Leyden 1629. He was at Kennebec, and then went back to Europe. e came again with John Browne and his family in 1632. He ecame Captain and military leader of Plymouth in 1648, succeed-g Miles Standish [Goodwin, *The Pilgrim Republic*, p. 521]. He as closely associated with Peter Stuyvesant who appointed him e of the two *Dutch* commissioners to settle the boundaries etween Connecticut and Nieue Nederland after the Treaty of artford, 19 Sept. 1650 [John Fiske, *Dutch and Quaker Colonies* *America* (Houghton Mifflin, Boston 1899) 1:257-8]. With ornelis Tienhoven, he was appointed by Stuyvesant to settle e boundary of Gravesend in 1656 [Hazel Van Dyke Roberts, Anthony Jansen van Salee, 1607-1676," *NYGBR* (Jan. 1972) 3:21].

Although Willett was a member of the Board of Assistants at ymouth after 1651, the records indicate that he spent consider-le time in Nieue Nederland. He attended the March meetings the Plymouth Court but was frequently absent for the summer d fall meetings. In handling an estate at Leyden for Richard asterson's children who were then at Plymouth, Willett wrote at ast two letters from Nieue Amsterdam in 1659 and 1660 [D. looij, *The Pilgrim Fathers from the Dutch Point of View* (New ork 1932)]. He and John Winthrop, Jr., Governor of Con-ecticut, and Willett's partner in the Stonington, Connecticut urchase, were with Governor Nicolls and are credited with lking Stuyvesant into surrendering peacefully in 1664. Gover-or Nicolls is quoted as saying that Willett was "more acquainted ith customs and manners of the Dutch than any man in this untry" [Otis O. Wright, *History of Swansea*, p. 195]. Appar-tly Willett was also in charge when the Dutch briefly retook ew York in 1673. The Dutch colonists are said to have re-ested Willett's appointment as the first English mayor of New ork City.

The activities of Thomas Willett may explain the lessening ties between John Browne and Edward Winslow. Winslow wri disapprovingly of Edmund Freeman's "professed anabaptistr and of the "stinking carrion" of Vassal's toleration proposa He complained in 1640 of William Paddy, "and some who inor nately cling to him," for trying to set up an academy. Pad was related to Edmund Freeman, and both were close busin associates of Willett.

Although dropped as an Assistant, Edmund Freeman had power of attorney, as early as 1639, from John Beauchamp, act for him at Plymouth. Hatherly had purchased his land Scituate from Freeman in 1642 [Plym. Deeds 12:90]. Freem bought Sandwich from William Bradford, 24 Jan. 1647, w William Paddy and Thomas Willett as witnesses [Plym. Dee 12:210]. William Paddy and Thomas Willett acknowledged a jo debt of £75 to Edmund Freeman on 3 Feb. 1648 [Plym. Dee 12:132]. Paddy was Edmund Freeman's son-in-law. The relatio ship of Willett to the two others is not clear, but it was certai ly close enough to disturb Edward Winslow.

The second son and namesake of John Browne seems not have made much of a mark, possibly because he died before father. He did not hold any important offices, as did his brot er, James Browne, and brother-in-law, Thomas Willett. T name of his first wife is not known. I suspect she may ha been Martha Thompson, baptized 17 Dec. 1626, in Presto Northamptonshire. She was a sister of the first wife of Geo Denison of Roxbury, Massachusetts, whose daughter, Margar married James Browne, Jr. Martha's mother died at New L don, Connecticut, in 1664/5, as Alice Parke, wife of Rob Parke.

Whoever she was, John Browne, Jr., married his first w about 1648 or 1649, and they had four children. The death Martha Browne was recorded at Plymouth, 14 Feb. 1660. S was probably the wife of John Browne, Jr., because Joseph, youngest of John's children by his first wife, was born 9 A 1659. Later, in 1660, John married, secondly, Lydia Bucklan daughter of William and Mary (Bosworth) Buckland. They h one son, Nathaniel, born 9 June 1661, who later took over grandfather's shipyard. John Browne, Jr., died 31 Mar. 16 ten days before his father. His widow, Lydia, married, for h second husband, William Lord.

The youngest son, James, is well known and well document in the *Mayflower Descendant* and the *Mayflower Quarterly*, si he married Lydia Howland, making all of his descendants eligi for membership in the Society. Nevertheless, no one has discovered his paternal grandparents. To do that one must look in England.

(To be concluded)

JOHN BROWNE OF NEW PLYMOUTH: TRACES IN OLD ENGLAND

Part IV

by Robert L. French

The most intriguing task in the effort to identify John Browne of New Plymouth is to select the references in England that may apply to him. Any mention of such an ordinary name needs some additional clue to acquire any validity at all.

Because of his association with Edmund Freeman of Sandwich and John Beauchamp, Freeman's brother-in-law in England, and because his wife's name was Dorothy, it becomes possible to believe that John Browne's marriage record may have been found. John Browne and Dorothy Beauchamp were licensed to marry at St. James's, Clerkenwell in London, 28 Dec. 1611. Two children of John and Dorothy Browne were baptized at St. James's, Edward on 19 July 1620, and Rebecca on 30 May 1622. Earlier baptismal records of that church do not give the mother's name and there are no baptismal records for William, Mary or James Browne. There is a John, son of John, baptized on 27 Mar. 1614, but he would have been older than the age that the John Browne, Jr., of New Plymouth is generally considered to have been. John Browne, Jr., had no children until 1650, but then he had four in ten years, and a fifth in 1661 by his second wife.

At this point, the records of St. James's must be deemed inconclusive, though they do contain other names with New England ties. William Dyer, later of Rhode Island, and his wife, Mary, had a son Isaak, baptized 30 Nov. 1623, at St. James's. William Coddington, also later of Rhode Island, had a daughter, Agnes, baptized there in March 1614/15. Before leaving St. James's records, notice should be taken of a statement by George M. Browne, in his article in the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* [(1892) 36:371], that Christopher was a favored name in the Browne family, "both in Old and New England." He gave no names or locations in Old England, but two infants named Christopher Browne, were baptized at St. James's, — a twin, with his brother William, on 20 Apr. 1620, son of Robert and Cecilye Browne, and another 3 Sept. 1620, son of Thomas and Anne Browne.

John Browne was supposed to have been in Holland about 1616 when he became acquainted with the Pilgrims. I found no

record of him in Leyden documents relating to the Pilgrims, no in the biography of John Robinson. Since Sir Harry Vane wa on a diplomatic mission about that time, I checked the *Calenda of State Papers* to see if Browne was mentioned in any references to the Vanes. I also checked Charles Dalton's *History o the Wrays of Glentworth* (London 1880-81, 2 vols.), to see i there was any hint of a relationship to John Browne.

The Wrays were a Lincolnshire family and John Browne staye with them at Belleau when he returned to England in 1655 Young Sir Harry Vane's wife was Frances, daughter of Si Christopher Wray. Almost thirty years earlier, in 1627, h uncle, Sir John Wray, was in Gatehouse prison for failing t collect the ship loan of Charles I. One of those failing to pa was John Browne of Sutterton, a little village in Lincolnshire just south of Boston. A third resister was William Coddingto [*NEHGR* 36:138-143]. Coddington later came to America with th Rev. John Cotton, the minister of St. Botolph's church in Boston. This was the Coddington of St. James's, Clerkenwell, th relative of Edmund Freeman of Plymouth, and the partisan o Plymouth in all of the internal disputes of Rhode Island. Another record is quoted in *The New England Register* (28:13-16) showing that Coddington became a freeman of Boston, England in 1627. It also states that, on "17 May 1627 John Browne, Gentn, is admitted freeman of this Burrough for the fyne of V to be paid when he is sworn a freeman."

My search in the *Calendar of State Papers* turned up only on reference, which stated that:

> John Browne, owner and master of the ship, *Speedwell*, arrived at Bristol, England from Sallee on Sept. 20, 1629 [*Domestic Series, Charles I, 1628-30*].

When I copied it, it did not seem that it could pertain to Joh Browne of New Plymouth. There were at least two ships nam *Mayflower*, and there could easily have been two named *Spee well*. Since then, however, there have been so many coinc dental bits of information that can be related to that quotatio that it must be included in any account of John Browne.

He was a shipbuilder, owning a shipyard at Bullock's Cove Narragansett Bay, his eldest son was a ship's captain, and Jo Browne may well have been one before he came to New Plymout He was associated with Bristol, England, when he was in Mai Governor William Bradford, when describing the *Speedwell*, wh turned back to England when the *Mayflower* came to Ameri said that:

It was afterwards found that the leakiness of the ship was partly caused by being overmasted, and too much pressed with sail: for after she was sold, she made many voyages, to the profit of her owners. But it was partly due to the cunning and deceit of the captain and his crew.... [William Bradford, *The History of Plymouth Colony* (Classics Club (N.Y. 1948) p. 77)].

The best explanation of how Bradford knew so much about the later experience with the *Speedwell* is that he talked with John Browne, one of the later owners, who lived at Plymouth after 1632. Since I had no idea how long a contemporary merchant ship might last, I was interested to find that the ship *Half Moon*, which Henry Hudson used in 1609, was still in use seven years later at Sumatra, in 1616 [J. Franklin Jameson, ed., *Narratives of New Netherland* (Scribners NY 1909) p. 28n]. For a more extreme example, Sir John Hawkins, in 1567, used the ship *Jesus of Lubeck*, which Henry VIII had bought second hand in 1544 [Richard Hackluyt, *Tudor Venturers*, Folio (London 1970) p. 72n].

The name of the ship, its English owner and its English destination seem almost enough to establish the identity of John Browne, but he can also be linked to "Salee." Salé, near Fez, in Morocco, was the home port of the Moorish pirates who were so troublesome to the colonists. In 1625, they captured the *Little James* with a cargo of beaver pelts from New Plymouth, when the ship was almost in sight of the English coast [Willison, *Saints and Strangers* (NY 1945) pp. 256-7; Bradford, *History of Plymouth Plantation*, p. 212]. The admiral of the pirate fleet at that time, and for approximately fifteen years afterward, was Morat Rais, a renegade Dutchman otherwise known as Jan Janszen van Haarlem, or, by the English as "Captain John" [Van Dyke, "Jan Jansen van Haarlem," *New York Genealogical and Biographical Record* (Oct. 1969) 100:194-202, (Jan. 1970) 101:7-16].

John Browne's future son-in-law, Thomas Willett, and Capt. John's son, Anthony Jansen van Salee, both left Holland and came to America in 1629, Willett to New Plymouth and Anthony to Nieue Amsterdam. The Admiral had just sent his family to Europe because of famine and pestilence in Morocco, and had contemplated leaving Morocco himself. It is almost certain that John Browne, master of the *Speedwell*, paid at least a courtesy call on the Admiral before leaving Salé, and it is conceivable that he carried the Admiral's family with him.

Anthony van Salé brought sufficient funds to New Amsterdam to become a very prominent citizen and landholder, first at Manhattan and then at Coney Island. Gov. Kieft granted hi his land at Coney Island and it is interesting to note that one o the charges that led to Gov. Kieft's recall to Holland in 1642 wa that he had embezzled funds entrusted to him to redeem Dutc captives from the Turks (at Salé?) [John Fiske, *Dutch an* *Quaker Colonies in America* (Boston 1899) 1:166]. Anthony va Salé's daughter married Thomas Southard (Southworth) probabl a grandson of Edward Southworth's older brother, Thomas, wh was at Leyden in 1613.

I have not been able to determine when Anthony Jansen an Thomas Willett first met. Willett was so closely associated wit New Netherland that Peter Stuyvesant appointed him as one o the two Commissioners to represent the Dutch in settling th boundary with Connecticut after the Treaty of Hartford in 165 He also appointed him, with Cornelis van Tienhoven, to sett the boundary between Anthony van Salé and his neighbors Gravesend in 1656, so they had certainly met by then [Ha Van Dyke Roberts, "Anthony Jansen van Salee, 1607-1676, *NYGBR* (Jan. 1972) 103:21]. When John Winthrop, Jr., an Thomas Willett accompanied the English fleet to take New Am sterdam in 1664, they anchored in Anthony van Salé's harbo [*Ibid*., p. 18].

At this point the references that may apply to John Brow of New Plymouth place him possibly at Bristol, England in 162 at Boston, England in 1627, in London in 1620-23, in Holla about 1617, and in London from 1611 to 1614. John Beaucha of London, one of the "adventurers" or financial backers of th Pilgrims was a native of Northampshire. If Dorothy Beaucham was the wife of John Browne of New Plymouth, she may al have been from Northamptonshire. The Rev. Robert Browne said to have been a relative of our John, died in Northamp tonshire and was born just a few miles away, in Tolethorp Rutlandshire. Tolethorpe is but two miles from Stamford, Lincolnshire, where Robert Browne's relative and protecto William Cecil, Lord Burghley, was so prominent. He was Lo Treasurer to Queen Elizabeth and it was his great-great-gran daughter, Frances (Wray) Vane whom John Browne went England to visit. It was her uncle, Sir John Wray, whose na was in the records when John Browne and William Coddingt resisted the "ship loan" of Charles I in 1627. Everything poi to the conclusion that the Rev. Robert Browne and John Brow were related to Albinia Cecil, the mother of Frances Wray. checking the genealogy of Robert Browne it turns out that he descended from Christopher Browne (? - 1518) who was She of Rutlandshire in 1492, 1500 and 1509. Christopher Brown son, Edmund Browne, married Joan Cecil, daughter of Lord Burghley's grandfather by his second wife.

We have found a Browne-Cecil connection and have apparently found the Christopher Browne from whom numerous descendants took the name down to my own ancestor, Christopher French, 1724-1755. The earliest of the family was John Browne, merchant of the staple at Calais and Alderman of Stamford, Lincolnshire in 1376 and 1377. Because of the prominence of these families, everything should fall into place. Unfortunately, it does not.

The records are confusing and conflicting on the exact relationship of Robert Browne to William Cecil, Lord Burghley. Lord Burghley wrote a letter in 1585 to Anthony Browne incorporating a statement that Robert Browne "was of my blood" and signed it "Your loving friend and cousin." Lord Burghley's mother called Anthony Browne "friend" in her will dated in 1582 [Henry Martyn Dexter, *Congregationalism of the Last 300 Years* (N.Y. 1880), pp. 70-71]. The Browne genealogy chart shown in Thomas Blore's *History and Antiquities of the County of Rutland, 1813-1911* [p, 93], on the other hand, indicates that Robert Browne's father, Anthony, was not related to Joan Cecil. Anthony Browne's father was Francis Browne, older half-brother of Joan's husband, Edmund Browne. The chart is not sufficiently detailed to show whether John Browne of New Plymouth will fit into it. It gives plenty of younger sons whose lines are not followed. Philip Browne, next older brother of the Rev. Robert Browne, was surveyor of Queen Elizabeth's manors in Lincolnshire and is of an age to be the father of John Browne of Boston, Lincolnshire, and later of New Plymouth. The Cecil and Wray genealogies show no Browne connections except for Edmund Browne and Joan Cecil but there are other possibilities closer to Albinia Cecil and John Browne of New Plymouth.

Albinia Cecil is descended from at least three sheriffs of Rutlandshire, Richard Cecil, Sir James Harington, and Sir Andrew Noel. Rutland is one of the smallest counties in England so Christopher Browne's descendants may well share some of that ancestry and John Browne may be more closely related to her than I have been able to establish. Although I regret very much that I have not discovered John Browne's roots, I am convinced that we are now in the branches of the right family tree.

Robert L. French, a descendant of John Howland, is a dual member of the New York and Vermont Societies. He is Past Governor of the Albany Colony of the New York Society. His address is R.D. Box 139, Chatham, NY 12037.

NEHGR Vol 36: 368-71

duplicate

NEHGR Vol 36 pages 368-71 (1882)

JOHN BROWNE OF THE OLD COLONY. 1634–1662.

Communicated by George M. Browne, A.B., of Boston, Mass.

JOHN BROWNE was a man of considerable prominence in his day and generation in the Plymouth colony; but of whose career only a few scattered traces remain. Though not one of the original "Pilgrims," he early joined them and became and remained one of their trusted counsellors. Judge Davis, referring to Morton's statement (Memorial, p. 297), says, "we find the same remark respecting Mr. Browne as of Mr. Winslow and Capt. Standish, that while on their travels they became acquainted with the refugees at Leyden, and were so attached to them on acquaintance as to unite themselves to their society."*

Sixteen or seventeen years after his continental travels, John Browne, having now a wife and three children, sold off his posses-

---

* A generation earlier, to wit, about 1580, his reputed kinsman, Robert Browne, the fanatic, had made and abandoned his eccentric attempt to establish an Independent or Separatist church at Middleburgh in Holland—which attempt however may have been, in some sense, a harbinger of the Pilgrim movement to Leyden.

---

ions, whatever they were, and they appear to have been not inconiderable, and emigrated to America—joining his Leyden acquaintances, who had preceded him, at Plymouth. He was admitted a freeman in 1633–4. The solid oak chest, of elaborate workmanship, with its duplicate bottom, in which he brought over his valuables, is still preserved by his descendants, or was a few years ago.

In 1635, less than two years after his arrival, he was elected one of the Governor's Assistants, and continued an active and influential member of that board for many years.

He became a large proprietor of lands in Taunton, and, with Miles Standish, under appointment of the General Court, fixed the boundaries of that town. He became a still larger proprietor of lands in Rehoboth; and in this latter township, which then comprised the present towns of Seekonk, Swansey, Barrington, and some others, he established his seat and took a leading part in town affairs.

He was on terms of friendship with Roger Williams and the banished Gorton, and others who suffered persecution in that intolerant age. He "scrupled the right of coercing any person to support the ministry. There was scarcely any other man either in Plymouth or Massachusetts who could with impunity have expressed a doubt on the subject" (2 R. I. Hist. Coll. 168, n.). He acted on his principles. When a petition came before the Court of Assistants, of which he was a member, to compel certain of his townsmen to pay their ministerial assessments, he caused it to be rejected, by obligating himself for seven years to pay from his own property all that they should fail to make up by their voluntary contributions. In 1644 he was appointed one of the Commissioners of the United Colonies, and served in that capacity until 1655–6, when he went to England, at the instance of Sir Henry Vane, to take care of his estates.

Sir Henry Vane was at that time enduring the relentless persecutions of Cromwell for having opposed his assumption of imperial powers as Lord Protector. By the recent death of his father (in 1655) Vane had become the heir to large estates, heavily encumbered with debts—among them Raby Castle, of which Leland says it "is the largest castel of loggings in all the north country," and it is said "the demesnes annexed to it exceed 30 miles in length."

Notwithstanding his early rebuffs in Boston, Sir Henry Vane kept up through life a friendly interest in New England's affairs, and some intercourse with its leading men. It is to be regretted that his correspondence, which doubtless would have thrown light upon many things, was so completoly destroyed as it seems to have been at the Restoration. He entertained Roger Williams repeatedly both at his house in London, and for months at a time at Belleau, his seat in Lincolnshire—where he used sometimes himself on Sundays to preach to his assembled neighbors. Cromwell imprisoned him, for a while, in Carysbrook Castle; and threatened, and indeed attempted, to confiscate his estates. During these turmoils Mr. Browne seems to have acted as steward of his property, and remained in England until near the time of the King's return, when he thought it prudent to withdraw. It was to Mr. Browne, during this sojourn in England, that the upright and estimable Cudworth, of Scituate, wrote the noble letter (given in Bishop's New England Judged, p. 168) in relation to the persecutions and sufferings of the Quakers; the writing of which brought down upon him political and social ostracism.

Mr. Browne returned to Rehoboth, where his family had continued to reside during his absence, and he died there in 1662. A singular controversy arose and got into the courts twenty years ago in relation to the cemetery in which he was buried two centuries before. It is on a point of land projecting into Bullock's Cove, on Narragansett Bay, and was a portion of the Browne farm which had never been conveyed away, and had been chiefly used as a burial-place for that family. But as others, from the town and vicinity, had been permitted to be buried there, the question was raised whether, under the statutes, it had not thereby become "a public burying ground." The court, in a somewhat flowery decision, held that it had (2 Allen's Mass. Reports, 512).*

A year or two before his death Mr. Browne completed a purchase which he had made before going to England, of a tract of territory within what was called the Narragansett or Pequot country; the jurisdiction over which was long a subject of dispute between Massachusetts, Connecticut and Rhode Island.

In regard to this purchase, Cartwright, one of the King's commissioners, in his illnatured reply to the Massachusetts statement to Lord Clarendon, gives the following account. This reply is printed in the New York Historical Society's Collections for 1869, p. 102, from manuscripts of the Clarendon Papers in the Bodleian Library. Cartwright says:

> "It appears that Tecomano (a petty sachem) gave John Browne land in 1652, not in writing—that Mr. Browne went to England and was Sir Henry Vane's steward at Raby. In 1660, when he saw the King was to return to Old England, he returned to New England. Then in 1661 Mr. Browne makes a writing and gets it signed, which says that 'Whereas Tocamano 9 years since gave such a tract of land to Mr. Browne to make an English town on, but then he could not because he was to go to Old England, But now being returned and having in mind to make an English town, and having taken for his associates Mr. Winthrop of Connecticut, Major Atherton of Boston, Major Winslow and Mr. Willet of New Plymouth, all of whom I approve well of; I do confirm unto said Browne the said tract of land—presently after this Mr. Browne dies, and Mr. Willet his son-in-law acts in the matter,'" &c.

But notwithstanding the disapproval of the King's commissioners, the purchase was sustained; and on a portion of that territory, which, in the final settlement of boundaries, fell to Connecticut, and is within the limits of what, under Massachusetts rule, was called Southertown, and under Connecticut jurisdiction became Stonington, one branch of Mr. Browne's family seated themselves, at a place near an eminence still called Browne's Mountain.

There also in a cemetery are buried several generations of his race; and among them several of the name of Christopher, which, next to John, seems to have been a favorite name in the family, both in Old and New England. The descendants of Mr. Browne are numerous and widely dispersed.

---

* There was another lawsuit in which Mr. Browne himself was a party, which it would be interesting to know more about. The Rev. Samuel Newman, a learned divine, an Oxford scholar, lived and ministered in the solitudes of Rehoboth. There he completed his great work, the Concordance of the Bible. In 1652 Mr. Browne sued the Rev. Mr. Newman for "defamation," and obtained a verdict for £100. The record states that "the damage is freely remitted by Mr. Browne, only Mr. Newman is to pay the costs of Court" (Plym. Col. Rec., vol. 7, p. 58). But what the "defamation" consisted in does not appear.

Excerpts from "Plymouth Colony - Its History + People 1620-1691" by Eugene A. Stratton (1986- Ancestry Publ)

These clippings may give indirect evidence about our Walker family - especially if it should turn out that Phillip Walker's mother was a sister of John Browne. Also, though it appears no love was lost between Browne and Rev Samuel Newman, it does seem that Phillip Walker, who had beautiful penmanship, helped Rev. Newman with copywork in his concordance to the Bible.

page 333

NEWMAN, SAMUEL—Born at Banbury, County Oxford, 10 May 1602, the son of Richard Newman, Samuel graduated from Trinity College, Oxford, 17 October 1620. In 1625 he became rector of the church at Ecclesfield, West Riding, Yorkshire. He came to Dorchester in the Bay colony about 1636, and he was the first minister of the church at Weymouth from 30 January 1638/39 until 1643. He moved with many Weymouth families to Rehoboth and was ordained minister there in 1644. He compiled * a concordance to the Bible. Newman married at Banbury, 25 December, 1623, Sybil ________, who was born there 21 November 1604 and died at Rehoboth 2 November 1672. He died at Rehoboth 5 July 1663. His children, all born in England except for the last, who was born at Weymouth, were Samuel, born 6 July 1625; Antipas, born 15 October 1627; Noah, born 10 January 1631; and Hopestill, born 29 May 1641 (married Rev. George Shove of Dorchester and Taunton). The above is from Chamberlain, *History of Weymouth*, 4:444, which is not documented, and could contain errors, but is probably generally correct, and is given here for background purposes. It is a letter of Samuel's son the Reverend Noah Newman, that furnishes the names of those killed at the Pawtucket massacre on 26 March 1676 (see *TAG* 60:236).

(* Not only did Deacon Philip Walker assist him with copy-work, but his grand-daughter Jane married Samuel Newman, Jr, the Rev's son)

pages 253-4

BROWNE, JOHN—A good idea of John Browne's impressive career can be had from Robert L. French, "John Browne of Plymouth Colony, Obstructionist and Libertarian," *MQ* 49 (1983):109, 161, 50:5, 57, which contains some interesting possibilities for the origin of his family in England. He arrived at Plymouth possibly on the *Lyon* in 1632 with his wife Dorothy and their children, though Savage writes that this was a different John Browne. Nathaniel Morton in *New Englands Memoriall*, pp. 163-64, wrote that Browne in his younger years traveled in the Low Countries and made friends with the minister John Robinson and others of the Separatist church; on arriving in New England, because of his former friendships, he decided to settle in Plymouth. He was then about fifty years old and his wife forty-nine. He was on the 1633 tax list, and he became a freeman not long after (*PCR* 1:4). In 1635/36 he became an Assistant (*PCR* 1:36), a position to which he was elected many times. He could write to Governor Winthrop as "Loving Friend," and was on good terms with many of the leading men of Plymouth, Massachusetts, and Rhode Island, and also of England. He was a Commissioner of the United Colonies and was used by Plymouth in many inter-colony negotiations. In 1645 he joined Freeman, Hatherly, and Standish in their unsuccessful support of Vassall's petition (see chapter 4). In 1652 Browne sued Rev. Samuel Newman, minister of the Rehoboth Church, for defamation, and was awarded £100 plus costs which Browne later remitted. Browne was the resident of Rehoboth who in 1655 offered to make up the deficiency for seven years of residents who did not want to pay for maintenance of the church. In 1655 he left for England, staying there four years, during which he served as executor for the estate of the senior Sir Henry Vane, father of the former governor of the same name of the Bay Colony, later one of the leading men in Commonwealth England. He returned to Plymouth in 1660.

He dated his will 7 April 1662, and his inventory was taken 19 April 1662 (*MD* 18:18, gives the will and a very substantial inventory). He left his wife Dorothy, and named his son James, his daughter Mary, wife of Thomas Willett, and his grandchildren John Browne, Joseph Browne, Nathaniel, Lydia Browne, and Hannah, and also his granddaughter Martha Saffin, wife of John Saffin. To daughter Mary Willett he left but twelve pence "to bee payed att the end of every yeare During her life for a memoriall unto her; and it shalbee in full of all filiall portion which shee or any in her behalfe shall Claime," which would seem to be such a pointed slight that the court felt compelled to write on the back of the will, "Least any thinge mencioned in this will in reference to mistris Mary Willett the wife of Capt: Thomas Willett might bee by any mis Construed to the prejudice of of [*sic*] the said mistris Willett; wee thinke it meet to Declare that out of the longe experience of her Dutifull and tender respect to her said father from time to time expresed there hath never appeered to us the least ground of any such thinge to this prsent." That Browne died a rich man can be seen in the fact that to one grandson alone he left over seven hundred acres of land.

His widow Dorothy Browne dated her will 17 December 1668, sworn 29 March 1674, and she mentioned her daughter Mary Willett; Mary Willett's children; Sarah Elliott, daughter of Sarah Elliott, deceased; son James Browne; grandson John Browne; the latter's two brothers Joseph and Nathaniel; granddaughter Dorothy Browne; daughter-in-law Lydia Browne; daughter-in-law Dorothy Browne; and granddaughters Lydia Browne and Anna Browne (*MD* 18:94). John and Dorothy Browne had a son who predeceased them, John Browne, Jr., and his will was dated 31 March 1662, inventory 19 April 1662. He mentioned his father-in-law William Buckland, his wife (not named), his oldest son John Browne, and "all my Five children," with his father John Browne to be executor (*MD* 18:14). The author of the *MQ* articles above also believes that a William Browne was either the son or nephew of John Browne, Sr.

BROWNE, JAMES—The son of Mr. John Browne of Rehoboth, James Browne is mentioned in the series of articles on his father by French given below. He probably arrived at Plymouth with his parents in 1632, later becoming prominent among the second generation leaders of the colony. He was made a freeman on 1 June 1658 along with his brother John Browne, Jr., both being called "Mr." (*PCR* 3:136). On 10 June 1661 he was on a coroner's jury investigating the death of Robert Allen in Rehoboth

- Cont'd over -

(*PCR* 3:222). He became a selectman for Swansea on 7 June 1670, and on 29 October 1670 he was one of a committee appointed to dispose of lands and grant admission to new inhabitants of Swansea (*PCR* 5:35, 49). He was a selectman for Swansea on 5 June 1671 (*PCR* 5:57). On 23 August 1671 he was appointed to accompany Mr. James Walker and Mr. Roger Williams on a mission to King Philip (*PCR* 5:76). He became an Assistant for the first time on 3 June 1673 (*PCR* 5:112), a position to which he was reelected many times. He married Lydia Howland, daughter of 1620 *Mayflower* passengers John and Elizabeth (Tilley) Howland, and they had James, Jabez, Dorothy, and Joseph; Joseph probably died young, and the first three were named in the will of their grandmother, Elizabeth Howland (*MD*, 3:54), dated 17 December 1686. James Browne, Sr. died at Swansea 29 October 1710, and his will, dated 25 October 1694, proved 11 January 1710/11, named his wife Lydia and children James Browne, Jabez Browne, and Dorothy Kent (wife of Joseph Kent, Jr.) (*MD* 7:163-66).

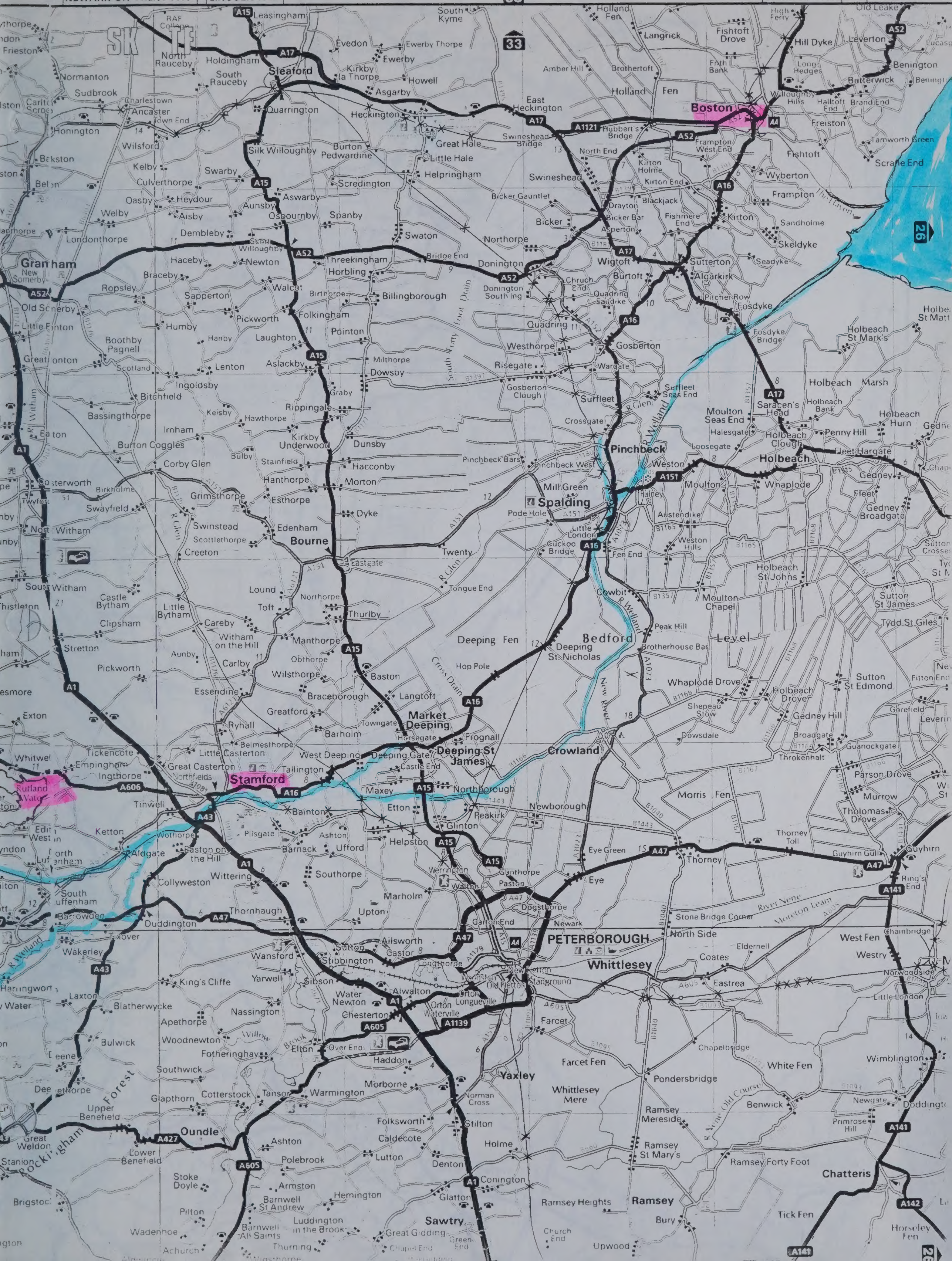
(note: Were those Kents our relatives in the Pearce line?)

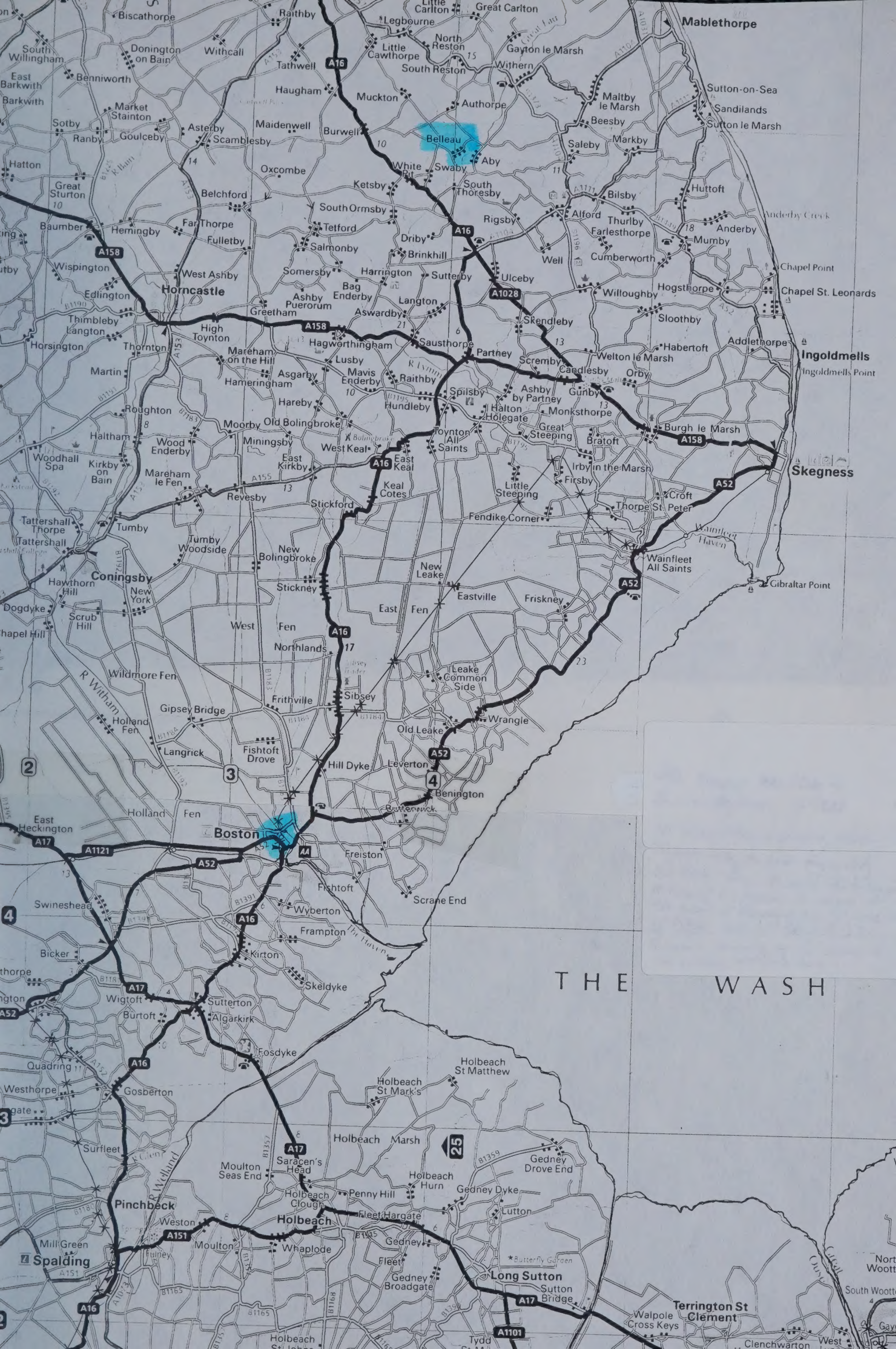
page 211

The inventories left by the colonists give a reasonable approximation of their wealth, though they must be used cautiously, for frequently real estate was not included in inventories, and sometimes testators gave much of their property to their heirs during their lifetimes. Though such inventories illustrate considerably the general poverty of the colony, compared to other places or other times, they also reveal a surprising difference in possessions between the richest and poorest residents. Webb Adey, for example, left a small house and garden valued at £1/10, a twelve-acre lot of land, a small birding gun, a small cracked iron pot, a stock lock, and other small items valued at two shillings. His total estate was valued at £3/7, and he had £4/0/10 due him in debts, while he owed £2/6, including funeral expenses. The 1661 inventory of Thomas Hatch of Barnstable was valued at £14/18. On the other hand, Thomas Lucas, who appears numerous times in court records as the Plymouth town drunk, left a more middling estate of £141/10, of which £39 consisted of real estate, and £30/10/9 consisted of the shovels, hoes, pothangers, etc., in his blacksmith shop. Christopher Winter, who from his frequent problems with church and state might have seemed to have been poor, left a respectable estate of over £237, exclusive of housing and land. At the upper end of the economic ladder, John Browne, Sr. of Rehoboth had an inventory of £655/1/2, and in addition bequeathed well over 2,700 acres of land to his heirs. [9]

The inventories reveal much of everyday life in the colony. Feather beds were a prized possession, passed down from one generation to another. John Browne, Sr. had a bed in the parlor which must have been a featherbed, for it was valued at £24/10, more than some people might pay for a house, and was described as having red curtains and valence with a red worsted rug and coverlid and blanket with pillows. He had three other featherbeds, not so expensive, but one valued at £13 had a bolster with four down pillows, a red stag rug, an old coverlid and blanket, with curtains and valence with a flockbed under it. He left two suits valued at £10 and £9, both with cloak and trooper's coat, and one had a waistcoat and the other a hat. He left other clothes, considerable household equipment, including much pewterware, some weapons, tools, farm equipment, and much livestock, as well as some expensive horses, one mare alone being valued at £17. There is no carriage or indication of any horse-drawn conveyance, but there are a side saddle and a hackney saddle. Valued at £1/4 were three East India tablecloths. Browne also had a looking glass, six red leather chairs plus other chairs, and a case of liquors. Surprisingly, he does not seem to have left any books.

NEWARK-ON-TRENT A17 | LINCOLN A15 | 33 | GRIMSBY A16 | SKEGNESS A52

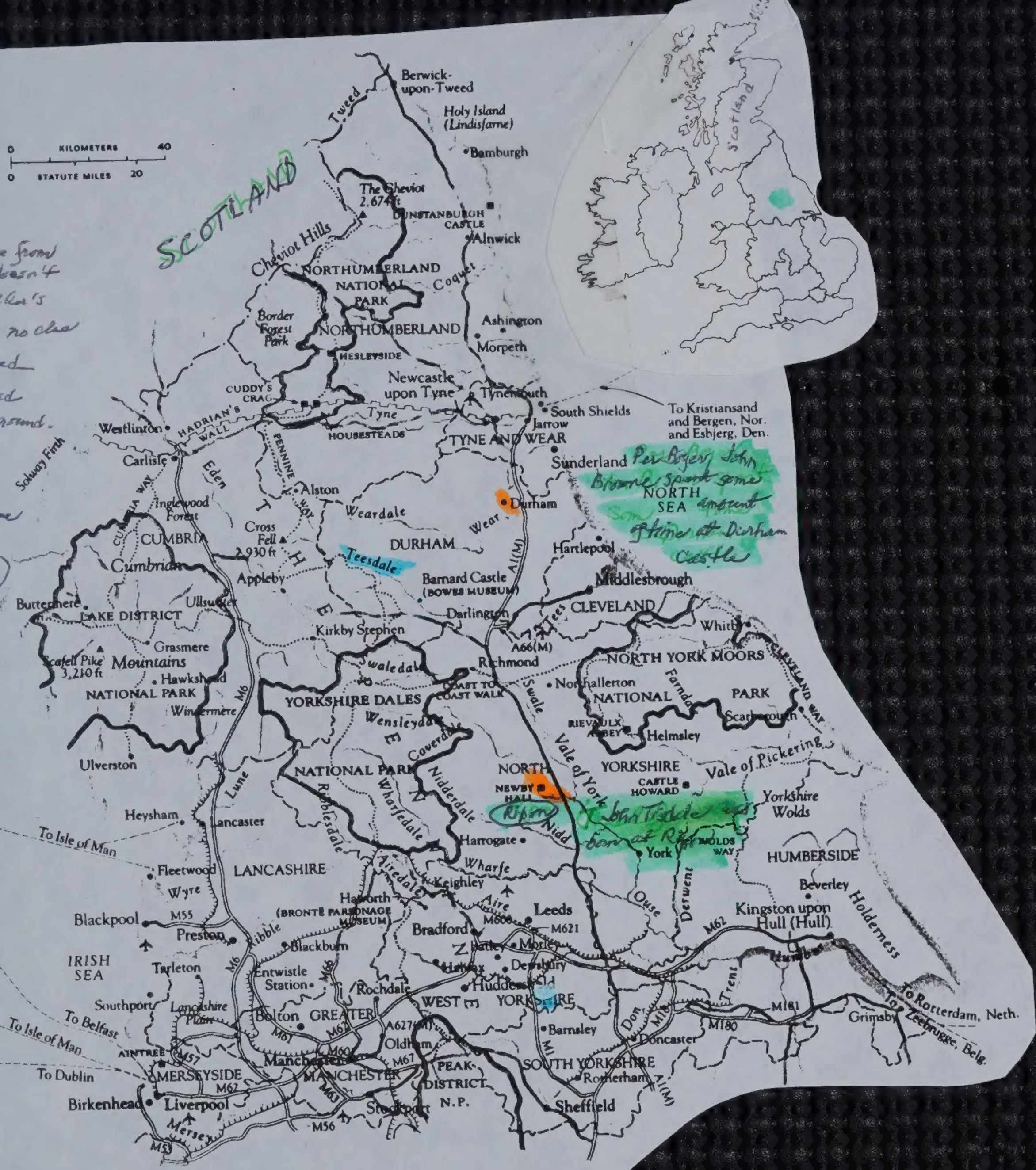

SK
TF
33
26
RAF College
Leasingham
North Rauceby
Holdingham
South Rauceby
Sleaford
A17
A15
South Kyme
Evedon
Ewerby Thorpe
Ewerby
Kirkby la Thorpe
Howell
Asgarby
Heckington
East Heckington
Amber Hill
Brothertoft
Holland Fen
Langrick
Fishtoft Drove
Frith Bank
High Ferry
Hill Dyke
Leverton
Old Leake
Long Hedges
Benington
Butterwick
Willoughby Hills
Halltoft End
Brand End
Freiston
Tamworth Green
Scrane End
Fishtoft
Boston
A52
A1121
Rubbert's Bridge
Swineshead Bridge
Frampton West End
North End
Kirton Holme
Kirton End
Wyberton
Frampton
The Haven
Swineshead
Bicker Gauntlet
Drayton
Blackjack
Bicker Bar
Bicker
Fishmere End
Kirton
Sandholme
Asperton
Skeldyke
Northorpe
Wigtoft
Sutterton
Seadyke
Algarkirk
Burtoft
Donington
Donington South Ing
Chruch End
Quadring Eaudike
Pitcher Row
Fosdyke
Fosdyke Bridge
Holbeach St Mark's
Holbeach St Matt
A16
Quadring
Gosberton
Westhorpe
Wargate
Risegate
Gosberton Clough
Surfleet
Surfleet Seas End
Holbeach Marsh
Moulton Seas End
Saracen's Head
Holbeach Bank
Holbeach Hurn
Halesgate
Holbeach Clough
Penny Hill
Gedney
Crossgate
R Glen
R Welland
Pinchbeck
Loosegate
Fleet Hargate
Holbeach
Pinchbeck Bars
Pinchbeck West
Weston
A151
Moulton
Whaplode
Gedney
Fleet
Gedney Broadgate
Mill Green
Spalding
Pode Hole
Little London
Austendike
Cuckoo Bridge
Weston Hills
Fen End
Holbeach St Johns
Sutton Crosses
Cowbit
Moulton Chapel
Sutton St James
Tydd St Giles
Peak Hill
Bedford Level
Deeping Fen
Deeping St Nicholas
Brotherhouse Bar
Hop Pole
Cross Drain
Whaplode Drove
Sutton St Edmond
Fitton End
Holbeach Drove
New River
Shepeau Stow
Gedney Hill
Gorefield
Leverington
Dowsdale
Broadgate
Guanockgate
Throkenholt
Parson Drove
Murrow
Thorney Toll
Tholomas Drove
Morris Fen
Crowland
Guyhirn Gull
Guyhirn
Ring's End
Thorney
Eye Green
Eye
A47
Newborough
Peakirk
Northborough
Glinton
Deeping St James
Frognall
Deeping Gate
Market Deeping
Towngate
West Deeping
Tallington
Maxey
Etton
Helpston
Werrington
Walton
Gunthorpe
Paston
Dogsthorpe
Garton End
Newark
PETERBOROUGH
North Side
Stone Bridge Corner
River Nene
Moreton Leam
Eldernell
West Fen
Westry
Chainbridge
Whittlesey
Coates
Eastrea
Norwoodside
Little London
New Fletton
Old Fletton
Stanground
Woodston
Orton Longueville
Orton Waterville
A1139
Farcet
Farcet Fen
Chapelbridge
White Fen
Wimblington
Pondersbridge
Yaxley
Whittlesey Mere
Benwick
Newgate
Doddington
Primrose Hill
Ramsey Mereside
Norman Cross
Stilton
Holme
Ramsey St Mary's
Ramsey Forty Foot
Chatteris
A141
A142
Conington
Glatton
Ramsey Heights
Ramsey
Bury
Tick Fen
Horseley Fen
Sawtry
Great Gidding
Church End
Upwood
Sutton
Ailsworth
Castor
Longthorpe
Stibbington
Wansford
Sibson
Water Newton
Alwalton
Chesterton
A605
Over End
Elton
Haddon
Morborne
Warmington
Tansor
Cotterstock
Folksworth
Caldecote
Denton
Lutton
Ashton
Polebrook
Oundle
A427
Armston
Barnwell St Andrew
Hemington
Luddington in the Brook
Barnwell All Saints
Thurning
Pilton
Wadenhoe
Achurch
Stoke Doyle
Brigstock
Lower Benefield
Upper Benefield
Glapthorn
Southwick
Fotheringhay
Woodnewton
Apethorpe
Nassington
Yarwell
King's Cliffe
Willow Brook
Bulwick
Blatherwycke
Laxton
Harringworth
Wakerley
A43
Duddington
Barrowden
South Luffenham
Collyweston
Easton on the Hill
Wittering
Thornhaugh
Upton
Marholm
Southorpe
Ufford
Ashton
Barnack
Pilsgate
Bainton
Wothorpe
Aldgate
Ketton
Tinwell
Stamford
A606
A16
A43
Great Casterton
Northfields
Little Casterton
Belmesthorpe
Ryhall
Tickencote
Empingham
Ingthorpe
Whitwell
Rutland Water
Exton
Essendine
Greatford
Barholm
Braceborough
Wilsthorpe
Langtoft
Baston
Obthorpe
Manthorpe
Carlby
Aunby
Witham on the Hill
Careby
Little Bytham
Castle Bytham
Clipsham
Stretton
Pickworth
A1
Thurlby
Toft
Lound
Northorpe
Bourne
Eastgate
Twenty
Tongue End
R Glen
Edenham
Creeton
Swinstead
Scottlethorpe
Grimsthorpe
Esthorpe
Dyke
Hanthorpe
Morton
Hacconby
Stainfield
Dunsby
Kirkby Underwood
Rippingale
Hawthorpe
Irnham
Bulby
Corby Glen
Keisby
Swayfield
Birkholme
Burton Coggles
Bassingthorpe
Bitchfield
Ingoldsby
Lenton
Aslackby
Graby
Dowsby
Milthorpe
Laughton
Pointon
Hanby
Scotland
Humby
Pickworth
Sapperton
Folkingham
Billingborough
Birthorpe
Walcot
Ropsley
Braceby
Boothby Pagnell
Great Ponton
Little Ponton
Old Somerby
Grantham
New Somerby
Haceby
Newton
Threekingham
Horbling
Bridge End
South Forty Foot Drain
Spanby
Swaton
Osbournby
Aunsby
Aswarby
Scredington
Londonthorpe
Dembleby
Scott Willoughby
Aisby
Welby
Oasby
Heydour
Culverthorpe
Kelby
Swarby
Wilsford
Barkston
Belton
Honington
Ancaster
Town End
Charlestown
Sudbrook
Normanton
Carlton Scroop
Frieston
Quarrington
Silk Willoughby
Burton Pedwardine
Great Hale
Little Hale
Helpringham
Syston
Colsterworth
North Witham
South Witham
Twyford
Thistleton
Edith Weston
North Luffenham
Stretton
Great Weldon
Stanion
Rockingham Forest
Deene
Deenethorpe
R Welland
Knipton


Biscathorpe
Raithby
Little Carlton
Great Carlton
Mablethorpe
Legbourne
North Reston
South Willingham
Donington on Bain
Withcall
Tathwell
Little Cawthorpe
Gayton le Marsh
A16
South Reston
Withern
East Barkwith
Benniworth
Haugham
Muckton
Authorpe
Maltby le Marsh
Sutton-on-Sea
Barkwith
Market Stainton
Sandilands
Sotby
Maidenwell
Burwell
Beesby
Sutton le Marsh
Ranby
Goulceby
Asterby
Scamblesby
Belleau
Aby
Markby
Saleby
Hatton
Oxcombe
White Pit
Swaby
Great Sturton
Belchford
Ketsby
South Thoresby
Huttoft
Bilsby
South Ormsby
Rigsby
Alford
Thurlby
Anderby Creek
Baumber
Far Thorpe
Hemingby
Tetford
A16
Farlesthorpe
Anderby
Fulletby
Driby
Mumby
A158
Salmonby
Brinkhill
Well
Cumberworth
Wispington
Somersby
Harrington
Sutterby
Ulceby
Chapel Point
West Ashby
Bag Enderby
Hogsthorpe
Chapel St. Leonards
Edlington
Horncastle
Ashby Puerorum
Langton
A1028
Willoughby
Thimbleby
Greetham
Aswardby
Skendleby
Sloothby
Langton
A158
High Toynton
Hagworthingham
Sausthorpe
Habertoft
Addlethorpe
Horsington
Thornton
Mareham on the Hill
Lusby
Partney
Scremby
Welton le Marsh
Ingoldmells
Ingoldmells Point
Martin
Asgarby
Mavis Enderby
Raithby
Candlesby
Orby
Hameringham
Spilsby
Ashby by Partney
Gunby
Hareby
Hundleby
Halton Holegate
Monksthorpe
Roughton
Moorby
Old Bolingbroke
Toynton All Saints
Great Steeping
Burgh le Marsh
Haltham
Wood Enderby
Miningsby
West Keal
Bratoft
A158
Skegness
Woodhall Spa
Kirkby on Bain
Mareham le Fen
East Kirkby
A16
East Keal
Irby in the Marsh
Firsby
A155
Revesby
Keal Cotes
Little Steeping
A52
Croft
Stickford
Thorpe St. Peter
Tattershall Thorpe
Tumby
Fendike Corner
Wainfleet Haven
Tattershall
Tumby Woodside
New Bolingbroke
Wainfleet All Saints
Coningsby
New Leake
Hawthorn Hill
New York
Stickney
Eastville
A52
Gibraltar Point
Friskney
Dogdyke
Scrub Hill
East Fen
West Fen
Chapel Hill
A16
Northlands
R Witham
Wildmore Fen
Leake Common Side
Frithville
Sibsey
Gipsey Bridge
Wrangle
Holland Fen
Old Leake
Langrick
Fishtoft Drove
A52
Hill Dyke
Leverton
2
3
4
Benington
Butterwick
East Heckington
Holland Fen
Boston
A17
A1121
A52
Freiston
Fishtoft
Swineshead
4
Scrane End
Wyberton
A16
Frampton
The Haven
Bicker
Kirton
Skeldyke
THE WASH
A17
Wigtoft
Sutterton
A52
Burtoft
Algarkirk
Fosdyke
A16
Quadring
Holbeach St Matthew
Westhorpe
Gosberton
Holbeach St Mark's
3
Surfleet
Holbeach Marsh
A17
25
Gedney Drove End
Saracen's Head
Moulton Seas End
R Welland
Holbeach Hurn
Penny Hill
Gedney Dyke
Holbeach Clough
Pinchbeck
Lutton
Fleet Hargate
Weston
Holbeach
Mill Green
A151
Moulton
Whaplode
Gedney
Spalding
Fleet
Butterfly Garden
Long Sutton
Gedney Broadgate
Sutton Bridge
A17
A16
Terrington St Clement
Walpole Cross Keys
A1101
Holbeach St Johns
Tydd St Mary
Clenchwarton
West
South Wootton
North Wootton
Great Ouse

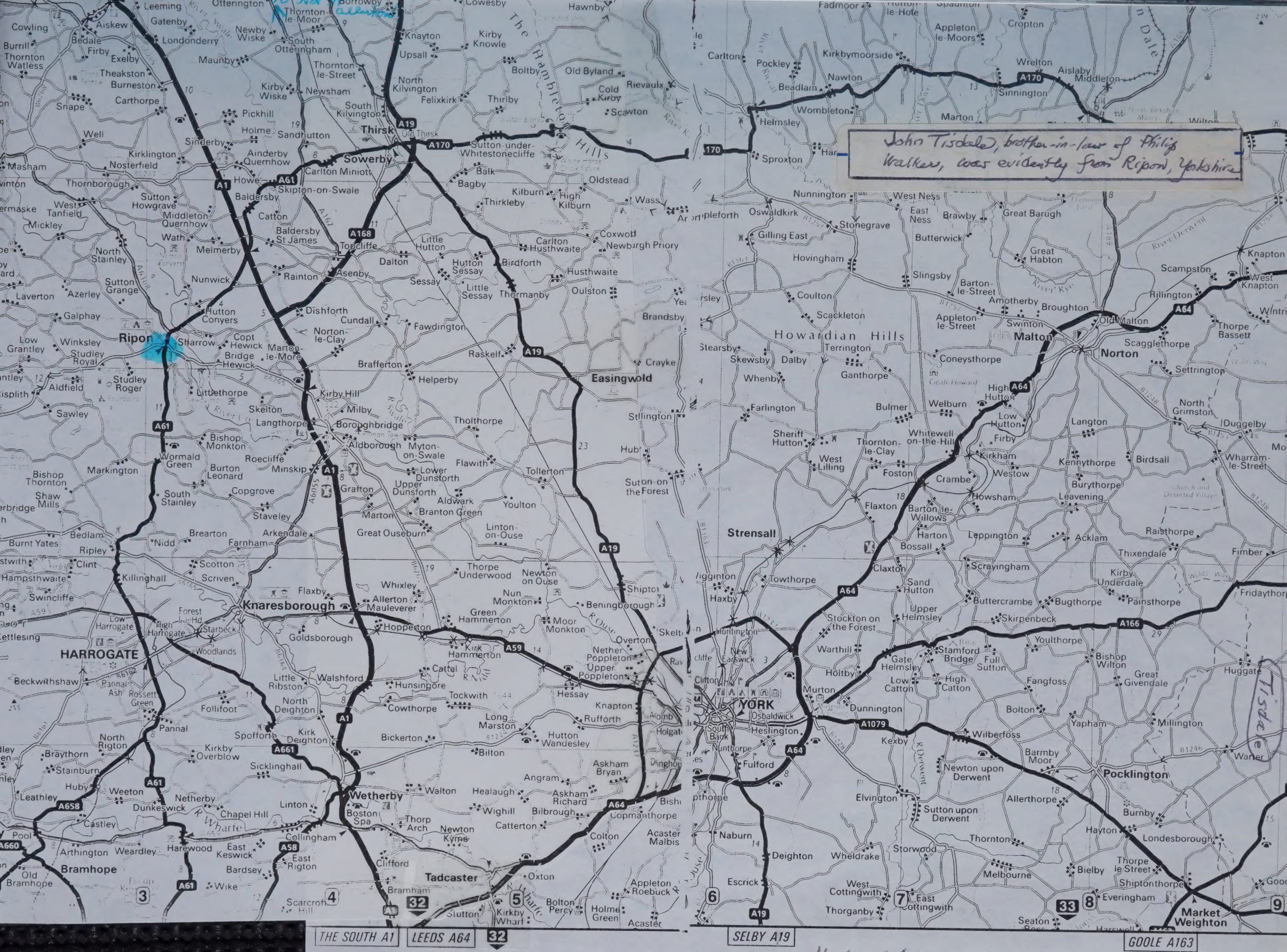
These maps show some of the places Mr John Browne stayed in England while settling the Vane estates. He was obviously of high birth — perhaps even of royal descent — which probably explains why his influence — both in New England and old England was so noticeable)

Just because
John Tisdale came from
North Yorkshire doesn't
mean Philip Walker's
father did — but no clue
should be overlooked
Apparently John had
a good family background.

(Probably the surname
"Tisdale" is from
Teesdale in Durham)



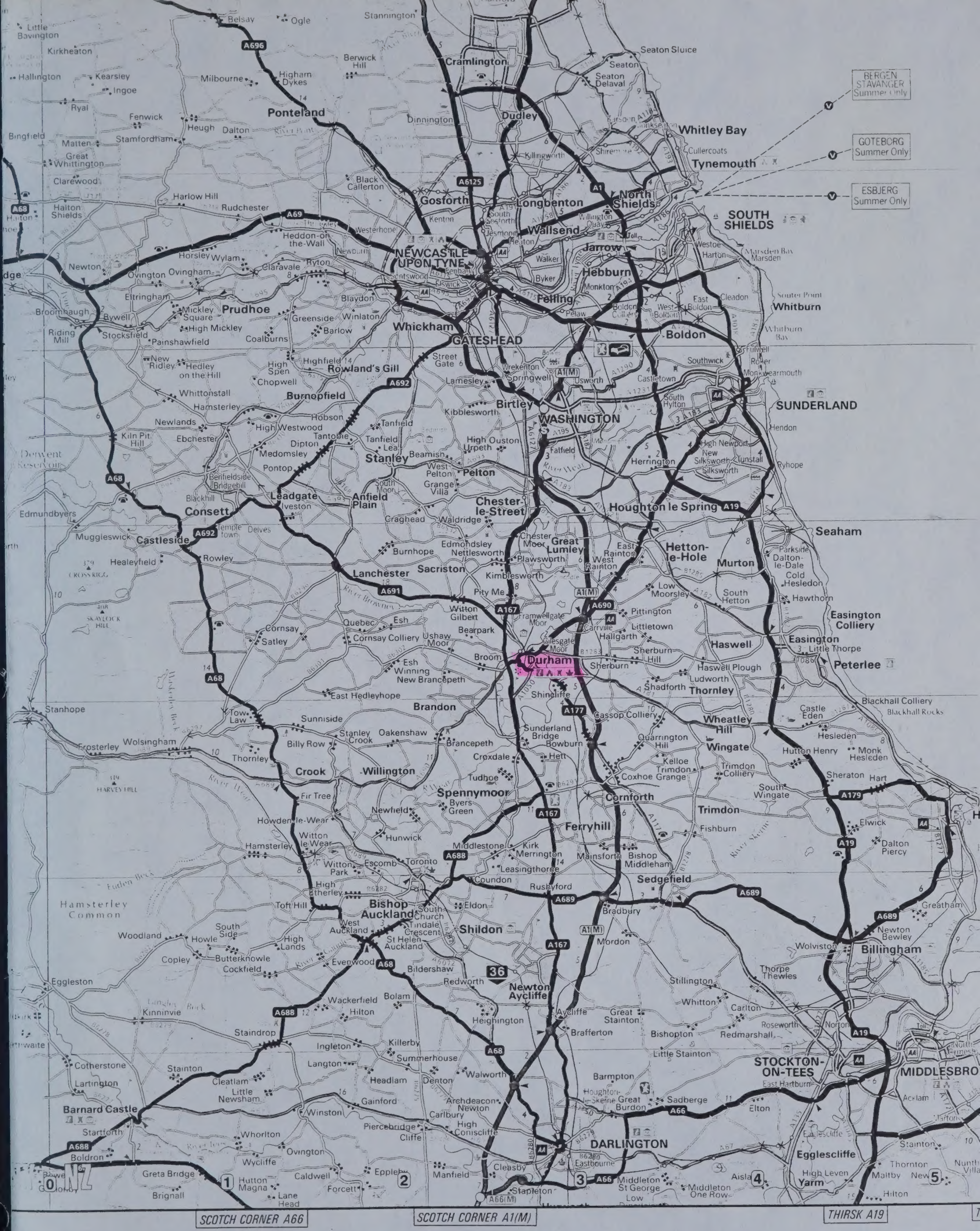
0 KILOMETERS 40
0 STATUTE MILES 20
SCOTLAND
Scotland
Berwick-upon-Tweed
Tweed
Holy Island (Lindisfarne)
Bamburgh
The Cheviot 2,674 ft
DUNSTANBURGH CASTLE
Alnwick
Cheviot Hills
NORTHUMBERLAND NATIONAL PARK
Coquet
Border Forest Park
NORTHUMBERLAND
Ashington
Morpeth
HESLEYSIDE
Newcastle upon Tyne
Tynemouth
South Shields
Jarrow
To Kristiansand and Bergen, Nor. and Esbjerg, Den.
CUDDY'S CRAG
HADRIAN'S WALL
Tyne
HOUSESTEADS
TYNE AND WEAR
Westlinton
Solway Firth
Carlisle
Eden
PENNINE WAY
Alston
Sunderland
Per Roger, John Browne spent some amount of time at Durham Castle
NORTH SEA
Durham
Wear
Weardale
Inglewood Forest
CUMBRIA WAY
CUMBRIA
Cumbrian
Cross Fell 2,930 ft
DURHAM
Teesdale
A1(M)
Hartlepool
Appleby
Barnard Castle (BOWES MUSEUM)
Middlesbrough
Buttermere
LAKE DISTRICT
Ullswater
Darlington
Tees
CLEVELAND
Whitby
Grasmere
Kirkby Stephen
A66(M)
NORTH YORK MOORS
Scafell Pike 3,210 ft
Mountains
Hawkshead
Waledale
Richmond
COAST TO COAST WALK
Swale
Northallerton
NATIONAL PARK
Farndale
PARK
CLEVELAND WAY
NATIONAL PARK
Windermere
M6
YORKSHIRE DALES
Wensleydale
RIEVAULX ABBEY
Helmsley
Scarborough
THE PENNINES
Coverdale
Vale of York
Ulverston
NATIONAL PARK
Nidderdale
NORTH YORKSHIRE
CASTLE HOWARD
Vale of Pickering
NEWBY HALL
Ripon
John Tisdale was born at Rip
Yorkshire Wolds
Heysham
Lune
Lancaster
Ribblesdale
Wharfedale
Harrogate
Nidd
York
WOLDS WAY
To Isle of Man
Fleetwood
LANCASHIRE
Airedale
Wharfe
Keighley
HUMBERSIDE
Wyre
Haworth (BRONTË PARSONAGE MUSEUM)
Aire
Beverley
Blackpool
M55
Leeds
Ouse
Derwent
Holderness
Preston
Ribble
Blackburn
Bradford
M606
M621
Kingston upon Hull (Hull)
M62
IRISH SEA
Tarleton
Batley
Morley
Humber
Entwistle Station
Rochdale
Halifax
Dewsbury
Huddersfield
Trent
Southport
Lancashire Plain
Bolton
GREATER
WEST
YORKSHIRE
M181
To Belfast
A627(M)
Barnsley
Don
M18
Grimsby
To Rotterdam, Neth.
To Isle of Man
M61
M62
Oldham
M180
To Zeebrugge, Belg.
AINTREE
M57
Manchester
M60
M67
Doncaster
To Dublin
MERSEYSIDE
MANCHESTER
PEAK DISTRICT N.P.
SOUTH YORKSHIRE
Rotherham
M1
A1(M)
Birkenhead
Liverpool
M62
M63
Stockport
Sheffield
Mersey
M56
M53


Leeming
Otterington
Thornton-le-Moor
Cowesby
Hawnby
Aiskew
Gatenby
Bedale
Newby Wiske
South Otterington
Knayton
Kirby Knowle
Londonderry
Maunby
Upsall
Boltby
Old Byland
Rievaulx
Thornton-le-Street
North Kilvington
Cold Kirby
Scawton
Newsham
Felixkirk
Thirlby
Kirby Wiske
South Kilvington
Thirsk
Old Thirsk
A19
A170
Sutton-under-Whitestonecliffe
The Hambleton Hills
Pickhill
Holme
Sandhutton
Sinderby
Ainderby Quernhow
Sowerby
Carlton Miniott
Balk
Oldstead
Kirklington
Nosterfield
Masham
Howe
A61
Skipton-on-Swale
Bagby
Kilburn
High Kilburn
Wass
Thornborough
Sutton Howgrave
Baldersby
Thirkleby
West Tanfield
Middleton Quernhow
Catton
Baldersby St James
A168
Carlton Husthwaite
Coxwold
Newburgh Priory
Wath
Melmerby
Topcliffe
Little Hutton
Dalton
Hutton Sessay
Birdforth
Husthwaite
North Stainley
Rainton
Asenby
Sessay
Little Sessay
Thormanby
Oulston
Sutton Grange
Nunwick
Azerley
Laverton
Hutton Conyers
Dishforth
Cundall
Brandsby
Galphay
Ripon
Sharrow
Copt Hewick
Marton-le-Moor
Norton-le-Clay
Fawdington
Winksley
Studley Royal
Bridge Hewick
Brafferton
Raskelf
Crayke
Studley Roger
Aldfield
Helperby
Easingwold
Littlethorpe
Kirby Hill
Milby
Sawley
Skelton
Langthorpe
Boroughbridge
Tholthorpe
Stillington
Bishop Monkton
Aldborough
Myton-on-Swale
Wormald Green
Roecliffe
Minskip
A1
Markington
Burton Leonard
Lower Dunsforth
Flawith
Tollerton
Sutton-on-the-Forest
Bishop Thornton
Copgrove
Grafton
Upper Dunsforth
Aldwark
Youlton
Shaw Mills
South Stainley
Staveley
Marton
Branton Green
Bedlam
Brearton
Arkendale
Great Ouseburn
Linton-on-Ouse
Ripley
Nidd
Farnham
A19
Burnt Yates
Clint
Scotton
Thorpe Underwood
Newton on Ouse
Hampsthwaite
Killinghall
Scriven
Flaxby
Whixley
Nun Monkton
Shipton
Knaresborough
Allerton Mauleverer
Beningbrough
Forest Lane Head
Low Harrogate
High Harrogate
Starbeck
Green Hammerton
Moor Monkton
HARROGATE
Goldsborough
Hopperton
Kirk Hammerton
A59
Overton
Woodlands
Nether Poppleton
Upper Poppleton
Beckwithshaw
Pannal Ash
Rossett Green
Little Ribston
Walshford
Cattal
Hunsingore
Hessay
North Deighton
Tockwith
Cowthorpe
Knapton
Follifoot
Rufforth
Long Marston
Pannal
Spofforth
Kirk Deighton
Bickerton
Hutton Wandesley
North Rigton
Kirkby Overblow
Bilton
Braythorn
A661
Askham Bryan
Stainburn
Sicklinghall
Huby
A61
Weeton
Wetherby
Walton
Angram
Healaugh
Askham Richard
Leathley
Netherby
Linton
A658
Dunkeswick
Chapel Hill
Boston Spa
Wighill
Bilbrough
A64
Copmanthorpe
Castley
River Wharfe
Thorp Arch
Catterton
Pool
A660
Harewood
Collingham
Newton Kyme
Colton
Acaster Malbis
Arthington
Weardley
East Keswick
A58
East Rigton
Clifford
Bramhope
Bardsey
Tadcaster
Oxton
Appleton Roebuck
Old Bramhope
A61
Wike
Bramham
Scarcroft Hill
Stutton
Kirkby Wharfe
Bolton Percy
Holme Green
Acaster Selby
3
4
5
32
THE SOUTH A1
LEEDS A64
Fadmoor
Hutton-le-Hole
Spaunton
Appleton-le-Moors
Cropton
Carlton
Pockley
Kirkbymoorside
Wrelton
Aislaby
Middleton
Beadlam
Nawton
A170
Sinnington
Wombleton
Marton
Helmsley
Sproxton
Harome
Nunnington
West Ness
East Ness
Brawby
Great Barugh
Ampleforth
Oswaldkirk
Stonegrave
Gilling East
Butterwick
River Derwent
Knapton
Hovingham
Great Habton
Scampston
West Knapton
Slingsby
Barton-le-Street
River Rye
Rillington
Coulton
Amotherby
Broughton
A64
Wintringham
Scackleton
Appleton-le-Street
Swinton
Old Malton
Thorpe Bassett
Howardian Hills
Malton
Norton
Scagglethorpe
Stearsby
Terrington
Coneysthorpe
Settrington
Skewsby
Dalby
Whenby
Ganthorpe
Castle Howard
High Hutton
North Grimston
Farlington
Bulmer
Welburn
Low Hutton
Langton
Duggleby
Sheriff Hutton
Whitewell-on-the-Hill
Firby
Thornton-le-Clay
Kirkham
West Lilling
Kennythorpe
Birdsall
Wharram-le-Street
Westow
Foston
Crambe
Burythorpe
Howsham
Flaxton
Leavening
Barton-le-Willows
Strensall
Harton
Leppington
Acklam
Raisthorpe
Bossall
Thixendale
Fimber
Claxton
Scrayingham
Wigginton
Towthorpe
Sand Hutton
Kirby Underdale
Haxby
A64
Buttercrambe
Bugthorpe
Painsthorpe
Fridaythorpe
Upper Helmsley
Stockton on the Forest
Skirpenbeck
Huntington
A166
Youlthorpe
Warthill
Stamford Bridge
Gate Helmsley
Full Sutton
Bishop Wilton
New Earswick
Holtby
Low Catton
High Catton
Great Givendale
Huggate
Clifton
Fangfoss
Murton
YORK
Dunnington
Bolton
Osbaldwick
Yapham
Millington
A1079
Heslington
South Bank
Kexby
Wilberfoss
Nunthorpe
A64
Barmby Moor
Warter
Fulford
Newton upon Derwent
Pocklington
Elvington
Allerthorpe
Sutton upon Derwent
Burnby
Hayton
Naburn
Thornton
Londesborough
Deighton
Storwood
Wheldrake
Thorpe le Street
Melbourne
Bielby
Escrick
Shiptonthorpe
West Cottingwith
East Cottingwith
Everingham
Thorganby
Seaton Ross
A19
Market Weighton
6
7
8
9
33
SELBY A19
GOOLE A163

John Tisdale, brother-in-law of Philip Walker, was evidently from Ripon, Yorkshire

Tisdale

Modern highway map of England


Belsay
Ogle
Stannington
Little Bavington
Kirkheaton
A696
Cramlington
Seaton Sluice
Hallington
Kearsley
Ingoe
Milbourne
Berwick Hill
Higham Dykes
Seaton
Seaton Delaval
BERGEN STAVANGER Summer Only
Ryal
Fenwick
Ponteland
Dudley
Whitley Bay
Bingfield
Matten
Great Whittington
Heugh
Dalton
Stamfordham
Dinnington
Killingworth
Shiremoor
Cullercoats
Tynemouth
GOTEBORG Summer Only
Clarewood
Black Callerton
A6125
Halton Shields
Harlow Hill
Rudchester
Gosforth
Longbenton
North Shields
ESBJERG Summer Only
A69
Kenton
South Gosforth
Jesmond
Wallsend
SOUTH SHIELDS
Heddon-on-the-Wall
Westerhope
Heaton
Jarrow
Westoe
Harton
Marsden Bay
Marsden
Horsley
Wylam
NEWCASTLE UPON TYNE
Walker
Hebburn
Newton
Ovington
Ovingham
Ryton
Claravale
Byker
Monkton
Eltringham
Blaydon
Felling
East Boldon
Cleadon
Souter Point
Whitburn
Broomhaugh
Bywell
Mickley Square
Prudhoe
Greenside
Winlaton
Pelaw
Boldon Colliery
West Boldon
Riding Mill
Stocksfield
High Mickley
Barlow
Coalburns
Whickham
Boldon
Whitburn Bay
Painshawfield
GATESHEAD
Fulwell
New Ridley
Hedley on the Hill
High Spen
Highfield
Rowland's Gill
Street Gate
Wrekenton
Springwell
A1(M)
Usworth
Southwick
Roker
Monkwearmouth
Chopwell
A692
Lamesley
Castletown
Whittonstall
Burnopfield
Birtley
South Hylton
SUNDERLAND
Hamsterley
Hobson
Kibblesworth
WASHINGTON
Newlands
High Westwood
Tanfield
Hendon
Kiln Pit Hill
Ebchester
Dipton
Tantobie
Tanfield Lea
Beamish
High Urpeth
Ouston
Fatfield
High Newport
New Silksworth
Tunstall
Derwent Reservoir
Medomsley
Stanley
Herrington
Silksworth
Ryhope
Pontop
West Pelton
Pelton
A68
Benfieldside
Bridgehill
South Moor
Grange Villa
Blackhill
Leadgate
Anfield Plain
Chester-le-Street
Houghton le Spring
A19
Edmundbyers
Consett
Iveston
Craghead
Waldridge
Seaham
Muggleswick
Castleside
A692
Delves
Chester Moor
Great Lumley
East Rainton
Hetton-le-Hole
Edmondsley
Nettlesworth
Parkside
Dalton-le-Dale
Healeyfield
Rowley
Burnhope
Plawsworth
West Rainton
Murton
Cold Hesledon
Lanchester
Sacriston
Kimblesworth
Low Moorsley
South Hetton
A691
Pity Me
A1(M)
Hawthorn
A690
Witton Gilbert
A167
Framwellgate Moor
Pittington
Easington Colliery
Quebec
Esh
Littletown
Cornsay
Satley
Cornsay Colliery
Ushaw Moor
Bearpark
Carrville
Hallgarth
Gilesgate Moor
Haswell
Easington
Little Thorpe
Broom
Durham
Sherburn
Sherburn Hill
Peterlee
Esh Winning
New Brancepeth
Haswell Plough
A68
Shadforth
Ludworth
Thornley
East Hedleyhope
Shincliffe
Stanhope
Brandon
Blackhall Colliery
Blackhall Rocks
A177
Cassop Colliery
Castle Eden
Tow Law
Sunniside
Wheatley Hill
Hesleden
Frosterley
Wolsingham
Billy Row
Stanley Crook
Oakenshaw
Sunderland Bridge
Bowburn
Quarrington Hill
Wingate
Brancepeth
Hett
Kelloe
Trimdon Colliery
Hutton Henry
Monk Hesleden
Thornley
Crook
Willington
Croxdale
Trimdon Grange
Tudhoe
Coxhoe
Sheraton
Hart
Fir Tree
Spennymoor
Byers Green
Cornforth
South Wingate
A179
Howden-le-Wear
Newfield
A167
Trimdon
Ferryhill
Fishburn
Elwick
Witton-le-Wear
Hunwick
Dalton Piercy
Hamsterley
Middlestone
Kirk Merrington
A19
A688
Witton Park
Escomb
Toronto
Leasingthorne
Mainsforth
Bishop Middleham
Sedgefield
Hamsterley Common
High Etherley
Coundon
Rushyford
A689
Greatham
Toft Hill
Bishop Auckland
South Church
Eldon
A689
Bradbury
A689
West Auckland
Tindale Crescent
Shildon
A1(M)
Newton Bewley
Woodland
South Side
Howle
High Lands
St Helen Auckland
Mordon
Wolviston
Billingham
Copley
Butterknowle
Evenwood
A167
Thorpe Thewles
Cockfield
A68
Bildershaw
Eggleston
36
Redworth
Newton Aycliffe
Stillington
Bolam
Wackerfield
Whitton
Kinninvie
A688
Hilton
Aycliffe
Great Stainton
Carlton
Heighington
Roseworth
Norton
Staindrop
Brafferton
Bishopton
Redmarshall
A19
Ingleton
Killerby
Little Stainton
Cotherstone
Summerhouse
Langton
STOCKTON-ON-TEES
MIDDLESBROUGH
Stainton
A68
Headlam
Denton
Walworth
Barmpton
East Hartburn
Lartington
Cleatlam
Little Newsham
Houghton-le-Skerne
Great Burdon
Sadberge
Acklam
Barnard Castle
Gainford
Archdeacon Newton
A66
Elton
Winston
Carlbury
Startforth
Whorlton
Piercebridge
High Coniscliffe
Cliffe
Egglescliffe
Stainton
A688
Ovington
DARLINGTON
Boldron
Wycliffe
Eastbourne
Thornton
Nunthorpe Village
Bowes
Greta Bridge
Hutton Magna
Caldwell
Eppleby
Cleasby
Manfield
A66
Middleton St George
Middleton One Row
Aislaby
High Leven
Maltby
Newby
Brignall
Forcett
Lane Head
Stapleton
Low Dinsdale
Yarm
Hilton
A66(M)
NZ
0
1
2
3
4
5
SCOTCH CORNER A66
SCOTCH CORNER A1(M)
THIRSK A19

(Averill Ancestors)

Family No.

Family Record

Metcalf (in England) Surname

Father – (Rev.) Leonard Metcalf

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1541	Appersides, Wensleydale,	North Riding,	Yorkshire,	England	
Death	22	Sep	1616	Tatterford,	Norfolk	England		
Buried				(Rector there for 42 years) (from 1574) - Estate of West Barsham,			where he was also vicar.	
Married		ca	1580?					

Occupation Cleric Military ?? see footnote Church Puritan (~~born~~ Catholic ???)

Places Lived

Other Wives ? Since Amy was of childbearing age at death - unless he married late due to education, etc, there could have been unknown earlier wife?

His Father's Name ?? Michael Metcalf taxed 1542 & 1544 at Appersides - see note at bottom of page

His Mother's Maiden Name

Mother – Amy

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1560?		Yorkshire?	Yorkshire?	Youngest child bp 1601	
Death	buried 2	Dec	1602	Tatterford,	Norfolk	England	May have been about 45 at death? (child-bearing age)	
Buried								

Occupation Military Church Puritan

Places Lived

Other Husbands

Her Father's Name

Her Mother's Maiden Name

Children Records missing for several years - there could have been others.

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. John Metcalf - d age 21½	Birth b/p	15	Aug	1583	Tatterford	Norfolk	England	
		Death	17	Mar	1604/5	"	"	"	
	Spouse -	Married							
	2. Leonard Metcalf	Birth b/p	2	Sep	1586	"			
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	3. Nicholas Metcalf	Birth b/p	8	July	1587	"			
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
+	4. Michael Metcalf (birth records missing)	Birth		ca	1590	"			
		Death	24	Dec	1664	Dedham	Mass. Bay Colony		
	Spouse ① Sara Ellwyn ② Aug 1644. Mary (Sothy) Paige	Married	① 13	Oct	1616	Heigham St Bartholomew	Norfolk	England	
	5. Richard Metcalf (birth records missing)	Birth		ca	1592	"			
		Death	11	Mar	1656/7	Tatterford			
	Spouse -	Married							
	6. Matthew Metcalf	Birth b/p	18	Dec	1594	"			
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	7. Marie Metcalf	Birth b/p	28	Aug	1601	"			
		Death buried	7	Dec	1601	"			
	Spouse - d. age 3 mos.	Married		—					
	8.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							

Many Tatterford records were destroyed in floods, etc. In Yorkshire the name Metcalf was (and is) very common, making exact line nearly impossible to prove, (VERS: 252) many Leonards & Michaels.) The 1898 Metcalf Genealogy claims an ancient lineage (probably partly true) and that American Metcalfs descend from (Brian Metcalf Beare Park) son of James Metcalf of Nappay - living 1415 AD. A Leonard Metcalf joined the "Rising in the North" for Mary Queen of Scots in 1569 AD, & changed from Catholic to Puritan for political reasons (ie confiscation of land by Q Elizabeth). It seems there were Metcalf/Ellwyn marriages among the "Nappa Hall" residents, lending credence to the genealogy of 1898.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

Family Record

(Averill Ancestors)

Family No.

Metcalf
Surname

Father — Michael METCALF

Ship "John & Dorothy" 6 Apr 1637 from Ipswich - Capt John Andrews

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes
Birth		ca	1590	Tatterford (weaving [illegible])	NFK	England	Employed 100 families (put out of work when
Death	24	Dec	1664	Dedham		Mass Bay Colony	he left) in "dornix" weaving mills.
Buried							See text for details.
Married	13	Oct	1616	Waynham (Heigham)	Norfolk	England	

Occupation
Military
Church Puritan

Places Lived

Other Wives ② 13 Aug 1645 Mary (Sothy) widow of Thomas/Pidge (Paige?) at Roxbury

His Father's Name (Rev) Leonard Metcalf

His Mother's Maiden Name Amy

Mother — Sarah ELLWYN

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes
Birth bp	17	June	1598	Heigham St Edmund's Psh	Norfolk	Eng	She hid Michael "in the roof, covering
Death	30	Nov.	1644	Dedham		Mass. Bay Colony	him with straw" to escape execution by
Buried				"(age 51y 5mo 13 days)"			Bishop Wren's agents, for his religion

Occupation
Military
Church Puritan

Places Lived

Other Husbands

Children of Deacon Phillip & Jane (Metcalf) Walker,
ee Walker Family.

Her Father's Name Thomas Ellwyn

Her Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth Bensley

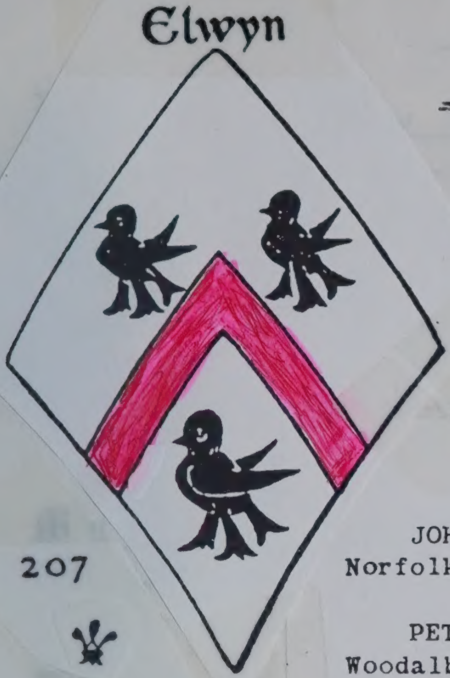
Children

(Perhaps also son Nicholas - said by Bishop Wren to have come to America with his parents.)
Besides the following, Michael b. 11-13-1617 & Ann b 3-1-1631 died young in England ⊛

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State
	1. Mary Metcalf	Birth bp	14	Feb	1618/9	St Benedicts (Norwich)	Norfolk	England
		Death		after	1686			
	Spouse - Henry Wilson (-1686)	Married	24	Nov	1642	Dedham		Mass. Bay Colony
	2. Michael Metcalfe, Jr. (5 ch incl Michael 3)	Birth	29	Aug	1620	St Benedicts - Norwich		
		Death	before	Aug	1654	Dedham		
	[illegible] Spouse - Mary Fairbanks (1622-1684)	Married	2	Apr.	1644	"		
	3. John Metcalf	Birth	5	Sep	1622	St. B.		
		Death	8	Oct	1690	Medfield		
	Spouse - Mary Chickering	Married	23	Mar	1646/7	Dedham		
	4. Sarah Metcalf as ③ wife	Birth	10	Sep	1624	St B		
		Death	22	May	1676	Dedham		
	Spouse - Robert Onion (1610-1673)	Married		ca	1647	"		
	5. Elizabeth Metcalf as ② wife	Birth	4	Oct	1626	St. B		
		Death	(20	Sep)	1711	Reading / Lynn		
	Spouse - Thomas Bancroft (1622-1691)	Married	15	Sep	1648	Dedham		
	6. Martha Metcalf	Birth	27	Mar	1628	St. B		
		Death			1717			
	Spouse ① William Brignall ② Nathaniel Stow (1621-1684)	Married	① ② 20	ca Aug	166 1662			
	7. Thomas Metcalf	Birth	27	Dec	1629	St. Edmondsbury		
		Death	16	Nov	1702	Rehoboth?		
	Spouse ① Sarah Pidge/Paige ② Ann (Chickering) Paine - widow Stephen Jr.	Married	① 12 ② 2	Sep Dec	1656 1679	Rehoboth?		
+	8. Jane (Joane) Metcalf	Birth	24	Mar	1637/8	St Edmondsbury		
		Death			1707			
	Spouse ① Phillip Walker (-1679) ② John Polley (1618-1689) as ④ wife	Married	① ② 2	ca June	1655 1684	Rehoboth? Roxbury		
	9. Rebeka Metcalf	Birth	5	Apr	1635	St Edmondsbury		
		Death			1667	Dedham		
	Spouse - John Mackintosh	Married	5	Apr	1659	"		
	10. ⊛ also see notation above	Birth						
		Death						
	Spouse -	Married						

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.



Silver, a bend gules between three martlets sable.

(Arms #207 registered NEHGR Roll of Arms to Elwyn, Sarah, wife of Michael Metcalf of Dedham MA 1637 - verified as the arms of her family in Norfolk, England)

ELLWYN

JOHN^{I} ELLWYN was born about 1450, and lived in Woodalbing, Norfolk England. His wife's name was Catherine. His son:

PETER^{II} ELLWYN was born about 1480, and died in 1557, in Woodalbing. His wife Lucy died before he made his will dated 1556, in which he named many relatives.

Children of Peter, order not known:

1 John^{iii}. D. 1569. B.A. 1522; M.A. 1524. Rector of St. Michaels, Coslany, Norwich. Will 1568. No chil.
2 Joan. M. Simon Bulwer; 6 chil. M.2, Mr Leman; 6 chil.
3 William. Inherited land in Thirning from father. Died about 1557-68. 4 chil.
4 Daughter, who m. a Mr Barker; 6 chil.
+ 5 SON. Children named in father's will. See below.

_______ ELLWYN. He died before his father, the name of his wife unknown. His children were named in the will of Peter^{ii} Ellwyn, 1556, as follows.

+ 1 WILLIAM^{IV}. See below.
2 Richard, "of North Walsham." Will, 1583. D.1584. Wife Agnes; 2 chil. in 1556.
3 Alice. M. a Mr Goodwin; 2 chil. in 1556.
4 John, "of Heigham." Will 1598. D.1600. Wife Margery d. 1605. Will 1604. 4 chil. She m.2, a Mr Ray; 2 chil.
5 Lucy? D. Heigham, 1572.
6 Sarah? M.1583, John Buttris; dau. Elizabeth, and others.

WILLIAM^{IV} ELLWYN, called "William the younger" in grandfather's will of 1556. His wife Alice died, Feb. 13 1602/3. He died on Feb. 3, 1610/11.

Children of William and Alice, bp. in Heigham:

1 Elizabeth^{V} bp. 5-9-1563.
+ 2 THOMAS bp. 5-1-1566. See below.

THOMAS^{V} ELLWYN was baptized in Heigham, May 1, 1566. He married there on Sept. 24, 1591, Elizabeth Bensley. She was buried on Jan. 12, 1605/6. Thomas married second about 1610, Dorothy _______. He was buried in a tomb in Heigham Church.

Family Record

(Averill Ancestors)

Family No.

Surname: Ellwyn (In England)

Father – Thomas ELLWYN

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth b/p	1	May	1566	Heigham				
Death				Heigham	Norfolk			
Buried			16	in a tomb in Heigham church (near Norwich)				
Married	24	Sep	1591	Heigham (St Bartholomew's Church)				

Occupation Military Church

Places Lived

Other Wives ② ca 1610 – Dorothy ______.

His Father's Name William Ellwyn "the younger"

His Mother's Maiden Name Alice

Mother – Elizabeth BENSLEY

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			15					
Death				Heigham (near Norwich)	Norfolk	England		
Buried	12	Jan	1605/6					

Occupation Military Church

Places Lived

Other Husbands

Her Father's Name Bensley

Her Mother's Maiden Name

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
+	1. Sarah Ellwyn	Birth b/p	17	June	1593	St Bartholomews Heigham (Norwich) NFK, Eng.			
	Spouse - Michael Metcalf	Death	30	Nov	1644	Heigham (Dedham) Mass. Bay Colony			
		Married	13	Oct	1616	St Bartholomews			
	2. William Ellwyn (6 children)	Birth b/p	16	Feb	1594/5				
	Spouse - Elizabeth (1600-1660)	Death			1655				
		Married							
	3. Thomas Ellwyn	Birth b/p	16	Jan	1596/7				
	Spouse - died age 6	Death			1603				
		Married							
	4. Drue Ellwyn	Birth b/p	5	ca	1599?				
	Spouse - died age about 4	Death			1603				
		Married							
	5. Elizabeth Ellwyn	Birth b/p	5	July	1601				
	Spouse -	Death			16				
		Married							
	6. Margery Ellwyn	Birth b/p	12	May	1603				
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
	7. Drue Ellwyn	Birth b/p	22	Sep	1605				
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							

Children of Thomas and second wife, Dorothy Ellwyn:

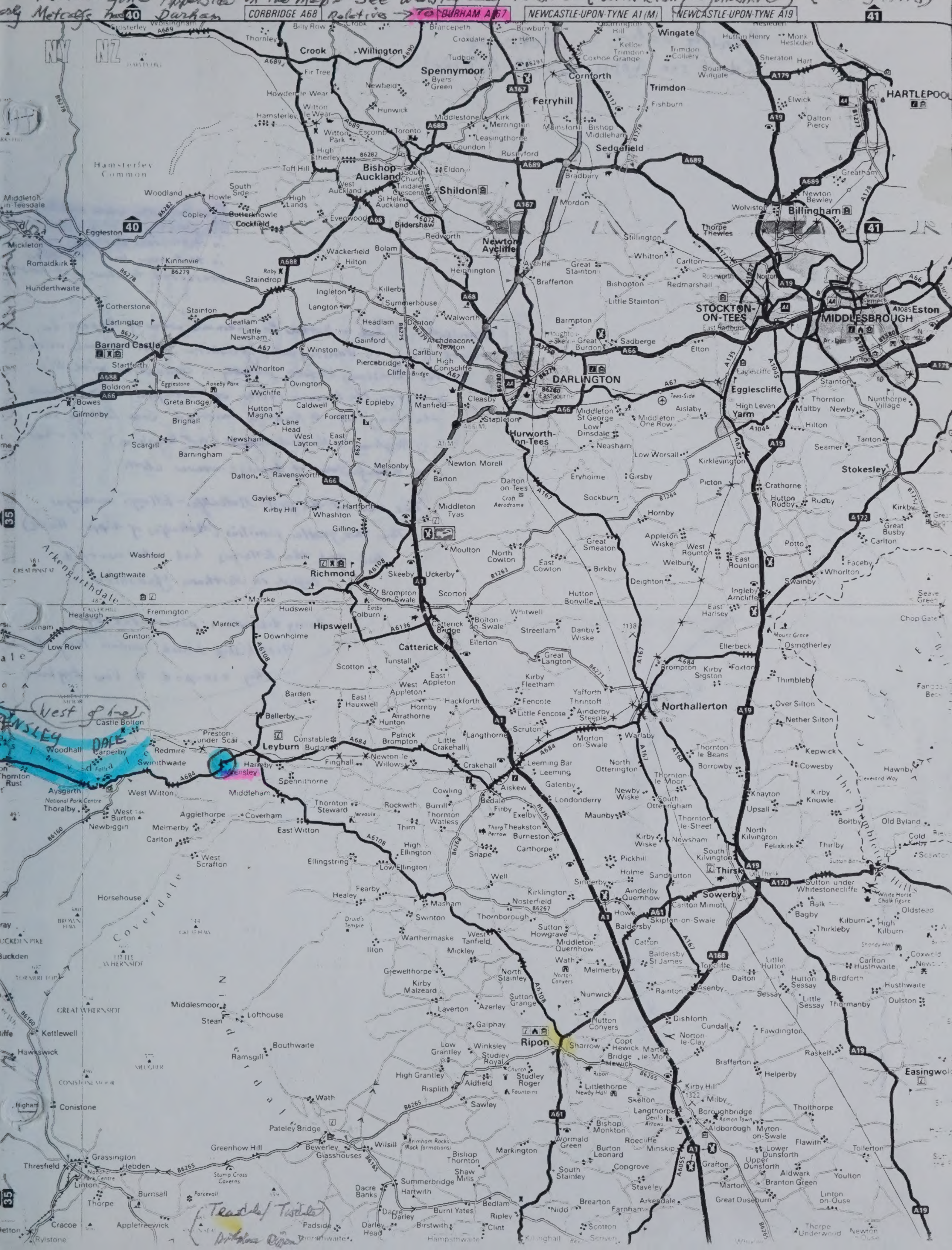
Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	Mary Ellwyn	Birth b/p	20	Nov	1611				
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
	John Ellwyn	Birth b/p	29	Nov	1612				
	Spouse - died age 6?	Death	?		1618				
		Married	?						

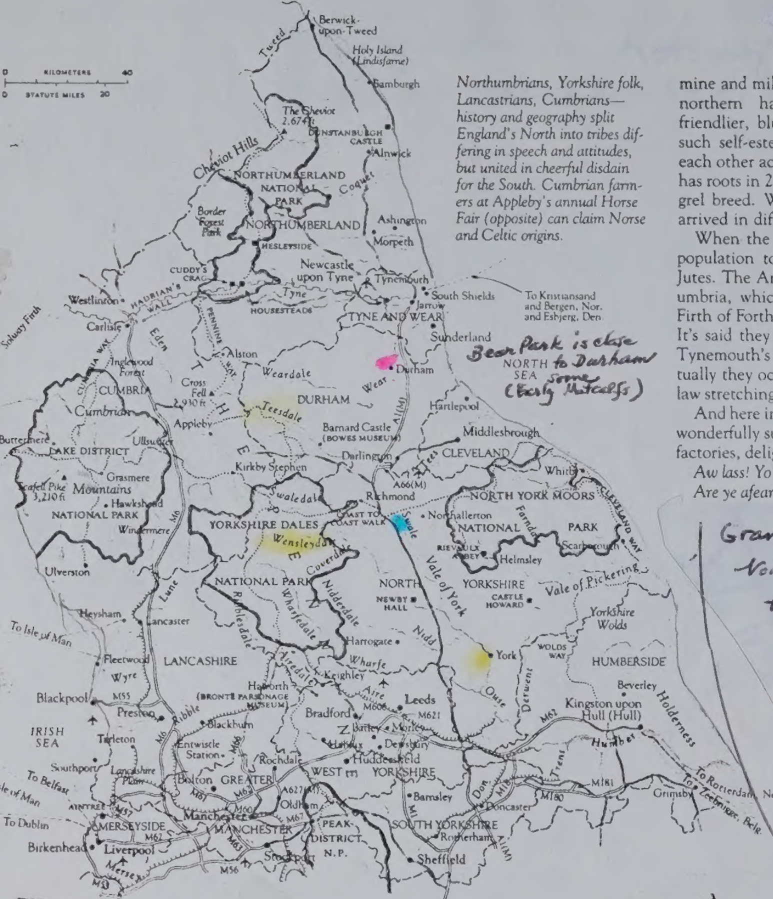
☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

I cannot find Appersida on the map - see Wensleydale in blue (North Riding - Yorkshire) (P36 of Atlas)

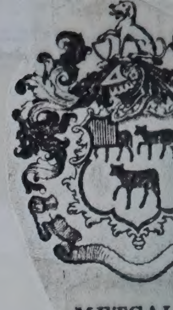
esly Metcalfs had Durham Relatives → To


CORBRIDGE A68
DURHAM A167
NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE A1(M)
NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE A19
40
41
35
NY
NZ
Crook
Willington
Spennymoor
Ferryhill
Sedgefield
Wingate
Trimdon
HARTLEPOOL
Bishop Auckland
Shildon
Newton Aycliffe
Billingham
STOCKTON-ON-TEES
MIDDLESBROUGH
Eston
Barnard Castle
DARLINGTON
Eggleston
Middleton-in-Teesdale
Staindrop
Egglescliffe
Yarm
Stokesley
Richmond
Hipswell
Catterick
Northallerton
Leyburn
Wensley
Castle Bolton
Redmire
Carperby
Swinithwaite
Aysgarth
Middleham
Bedale
Masham
Thirsk
Sowerby
Ripon
Pateley Bridge
Grassington
Kettlewell
Arkengarthdale
Coverdale
Nidderdale
West of here
...NSLEY DALE
Teasdale / Tisdale
Ripon


KILOMETERS
STATUTE MILES
Berwick-upon-Tweed
Holy Island (Lindisfarne)
Tweed
Bamburgh
The Cheviot 2,674 ft
DUNSTANBURGH CASTLE
Alnwick
Cheviot Hills
NORTHUMBERLAND NATIONAL PARK
Coquet
Border Forest Park
NORTHUMBERLAND
Ashington
Morpeth
CUDDY'S CRAG
HESLEYSIDE
Newcastle upon Tyne
Tynemouth
South Shields
Jarrow
TYNE AND WEAR
To Kristiansand and Bergen, Nor. and Esbjerg, Den.
Westlinton
HADRIAN'S WALL
HOUSESTEADS
Solway Firth
Carlisle
Eden
Sunderland
Alston
Weardale
Wear
Durham
NORTH SEA
Inglewood Forest
CUMBRIA
Cross Fell 2,930 ft
DURHAM
Hartlepool
Cumbrian
Teesdale
Tees
Middlesbrough
Appleby
Barnard Castle (BOWES MUSEUM)
Buttermere
LAKE DISTRICT
Ullswater
Darlington
CLEVELAND
Whitby
Kirkby Stephen
Grasmere
Hawkshead
Scafell Pike 3,210 ft
Mountains
NATIONAL PARK
Windermere
Swaledale
Richmond
A66(M)
NORTH YORK MOORS
Northallerton
NATIONAL PARK
YORKSHIRE DALES
Wensleydale
Swale
RIEVAULX ABBEY
Helmsley
Scarborough
CLEVELAND WAY
Ulverston
Coverdale
Vale of York
Vale of Pickering
NATIONAL PARK
NORTH
YORKSHIRE
CASTLE HOWARD
NEWBY HALL
Nidderdale
Heysham
Lancaster
Lune
Yorkshire Wolds
To Isle of Man
Ribblesdale
Wharfedale
Harrogate
Nidd
York
Fleetwood
Wyre
LANCASHIRE
Wharfe
WOLDS WAY
HUMBERSIDE
Keighley
Aire
Haworth
(BRONTË PARSONAGE MUSEUM)
Derwent
Ouse
Beverley
Blackpool
Preston
Bradford
Leeds
Kingston upon Hull (Hull)
Holderness
IRISH SEA
Ribble
Blackburn
Batley
Morley
Dewsbury
Tarleton
Entwistle Station
Rochdale
Huddersfield
WEST YORKSHIRE
Humber
Southport
Bolton
GREATER
Oldham
Barnsley
Trent
To Belfast
To Isle of Man
To Rotterdam, Neth.
To Zeebrugge, Belg.
Grimsby
Manchester
MANCHESTER
Doncaster
SOUTH YORKSHIRE
To Dublin
MERSEYSIDE
PEAK DISTRICT N.P.
Rotherham
Birkenhead
Liverpool
Mersey
Stockport
Sheffield

Northumbrians, Yorkshire folk, Lancastrians, Cumbrians—history and geography split England's North into tribes differing in speech and attitudes, but united in cheerful disdain for the South. Cumbrian farmers at Appleby's annual Horse Fair (opposite) can claim Norse and Celtic origins.

Bear Park is close to Durham some (Early Metcalfs)



METCALF

Our Metcalfes were related to the gentle family at Nappa Hall in Apperside but early records in that area have not been preserved to show just how.

mine and mill and—when markets slumped—disregarded northern hardship . . . believing themselves tougher, friendlier, blunter, but more honest? And why, sharing such self-esteem, do Northerners feel so different from each other according to county, dale, or city? The answer has roots in 2,000 years of history. It is that we are a mongrel breed. We are made of many tribes—invaders who arrived in different centuries, speaking different tongues.

When the Romans retired they left a Celtic-speaking population to face new invaders: Angles, Saxons, and Jutes. The Angles created the English kingdom of Northumbria, which then stretched from the Humber to the Firth of Forth. Then came the Vikings, at first as pirates. It's said they murdered 50 nuns in the priory just down Tynemouth's high street where I now live and write. Eventually they occupied a diagonal tract known as the Danelaw stretching from the Thames to the Mersey estuary.

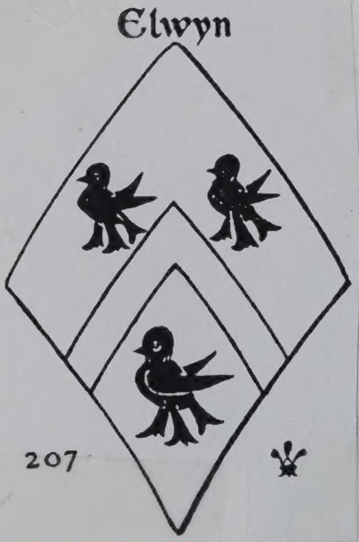
And here in the North, fragments of the warrior tongues wonderfully survive, baffling southern visitors to Tyneside factories, delighting natives with an old eloquence:

Aw lass! Yo're keel and shy as owt could be.
Are ye afeard? Luv, rest yorsel' in me. . . .

Grandfather Michael + Father Rev. Leonard were of Apperside, North Riding in Wensleydale, Yorkshire. Rev. Leonard moved to West Barsham, Norfolk, probably in connection with his ministry. He became rector at Tatterford. Son Michael, the immigrant to America, married Sara Ellwyn of Heigham, a Norwich suburb (not Waynham). He was a manufacturer of damask-weave cloth.

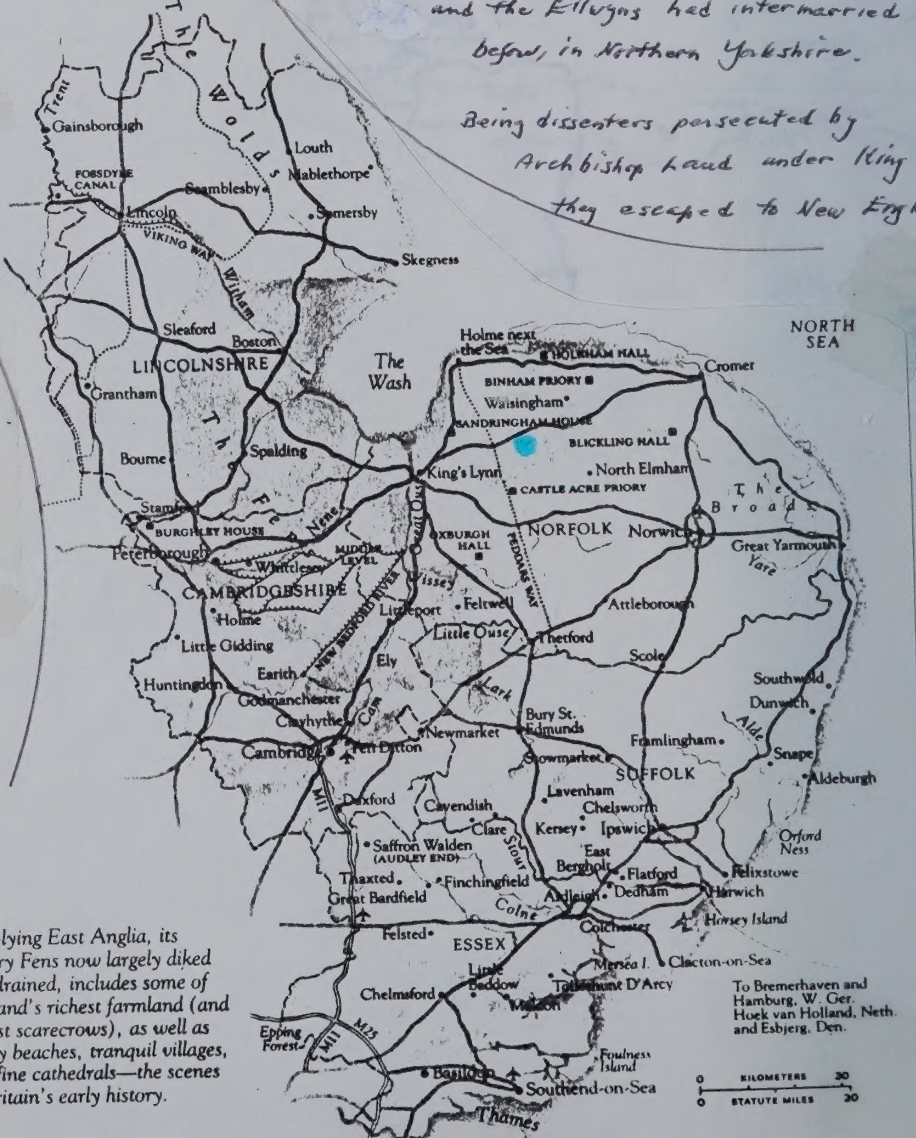
The two gentle families (Metcalfes of Nappa Hall) and the Ellwyns had intermarried before, in Northern Yorkshire.

Being dissenters persecuted by Archbishop Laud under King James, they escaped to New England.



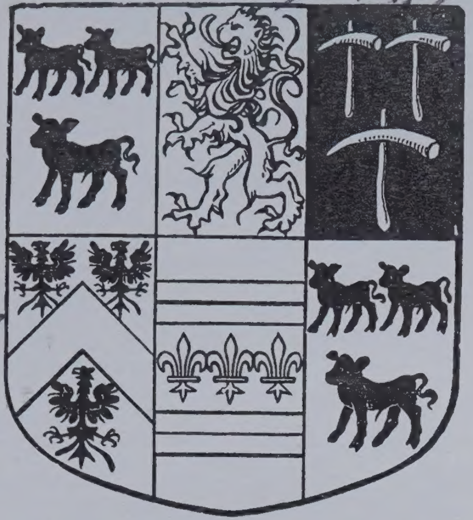
Elwyn

207


Trent
The Wolds
Gainsborough
Louth
FOSSDYKE CANAL
Mablethorpe
Scamblesby
Lincoln
VIKING WAY
Somersby
Witham
Skegness
Sleaford
Boston
LINCOLNSHIRE
The Wash
Holme next the Sea
HOLKHAM HALL
Cromer
NORTH SEA
BINHAM PRIORY
Walsingham
SANDRINGHAM HOUSE
BLICKLING HALL
Grantham
Bourne
Spalding
The Fens
King's Lynn
North Elmham
CASTLE ACRE PRIORY
The Broads
Stamford
BURGHLEY HOUSE
Nene
OXBURGH HALL
PEDDARS WAY
NORFOLK
Norwich
Great Yarmouth
Yare
Peterborough
Whittlesey
MIDDLE LEVEL
Great Ouse
CAMBRIDGESHIRE
Wissey
Feltwell
NEW BEDFORD RIVER
Holme
Littleport
Little Ouse
Thetford
Attleborough
Little Gidding
Ely
Scole
Huntingdon
Earith
Lark
Southwold
Godmanchester
Dunwich
Clayhythe
Bury St. Edmunds
Framlingham
Alde
Snape
Cambridge
Fen Ditton
Newmarket
Stowmarket
SUFFOLK
Aldeburgh
Cam
Duxford
Cavendish
Lavenham
Chelsworth
Clare
Kersey
Ipswich
Orford Ness
Stour
Saffron Walden (AUDLEY END)
East Bergholt
Flatford
Felixstowe
Thaxted
Finchingfield
Dedham
Harwich
Great Bardfield
Colne
Ardleigh
Colchester
Horsey Island
Felsted
ESSEX
Mersea I.
Clacton-on-Sea
Little Baddow
Tolleshunt D'Arcy
To Bremerhaven and Hamburg, W. Ger. Hoek van Holland, Neth. and Esbjerg, Den.
Chelmsford
Maldon
Epping Forest
M25
M11
Foulness Island
Basildon
Southend-on-Sea
Thames
KILOMETERS
STATUTE MILES

Low-lying East Anglia, its watery Fens now largely diked and drained, includes some of England's richest farmland (and jolliest scarecrows), as well as sandy beaches, tranquil villages, and fine cathedrals—the scenes of Britain's early history.

HANGWEST WAPENTAKE. Clifford Piggot Richmund, 21 Aug. 1665.



Savile

Metcalfe
of
Nappa.

ARMS :—Quarterly of six :—
1. Argent, three calves passant Sable.
2. Argent, a lion rampant Gules
3. Sable, three pickaxes Argent.
4. Argent, a chevron Gules between three eagles displayed Sable.
5. Argent, on a fess cotised Gules three fleurs-de-lis of the field.
6. As the first.

I. JOHN METCALFE, of Nappa or the neighbourhood, mar. Alice . . . and had issue—

II. *JAMES METCALFE, of Nappa, in com. Ebor., Esq^{r}., was a Cap^{t}. in the Battell of Agincourt, temp. H. 5,* bought Nappa of Sir Richard Scrope, b. 1389, d. circ. 1472, probably buried with his wife at Askrigg, *mar. . . . daughter of . . . Gibson, of Ireby Hall.* (This marriage considered doubtful.) They had issue—

1. *Thomas* (III).
✓ *2.* *Brian Metcalfe, of Beare Parke, in co. Ebor.*
3. *Miles Metcalfe, Recorder of Yorke,* Justice of Assize at Lancaster, M.P. York 1477, d. 12 Feb. 1485-6, bur. at York Minster. Will 12 Feb. 1485-6, pr. at York 21 Nov. 1486 (Test. Eb., iv, 9), mar. Matilda . . . Will 22 Jan., pr. at York 22 Mar. 1491-2, to be bur. in York Minster. They had issue—
James, mar. Anne, dau. of Thos. Mountford, of Hackforth.
Richard, named in his father's will.
Katherine, named in her father's and mother's wills.
Edmund, (?) eldest son, b. circ. 1420, d v.p., mar. Katherine . . . .
Joan, (?) mar. . . .

III. *THOMAS METCALFE, Chancellour of y^{e} Dutchy of Lancaster, temp. R. 3,* of Nappa, J.P., b. circ. 1424, d. 1503-4,

✓ Brian supposed to be father of our Revd Leonard

mar. Elizabeth, daughter and coheire of William *Hartlington.* They had issue—
1. *S^{r} James* (IV).
2. *Francis Metcalfe*, became a lunatic 1507, *marr. Joane, daugh. and coheire of Everard Seyton, of Maidwell, in co. North^{ton}.* They had issue—
Margaret.
Cecilie.
Anne.
Ottiwell, of Swinethwaite, in Wensleydale (a quo Metcalfe, of Firby, etc.).
Ciceley, mar. William Burgh (Glover, 3).
Joan, mar. Christopher Conyers, of Marske (Glover, 71).

IV. *S^{r} JAMES METCALFE, of Nappa, Kn^{t}.*, High Sheriff of Yorks. 1525, knighted 1528, J.P., b. circ. 1460, d. 20 Sept. 1539, Inq. p.m. 10 Nov. 1539, *mar. Margaret, daughter & coheire of Thomas Piyot, of Clotherham, in com. Ebor., 22 H. 7,* on or before May 1512, d. 3 Feb. 153$\frac{0}{1}$, Inq. p.m. 17 Mar. 153$\frac{0}{1}$. They had issue—

Piggot

1. *S^{r} Christopher* (V).
2. *Humphry.*
3. *Edmund*, of Worton.
4. *Oswald*, of Hornby, bur. there 4 June 1604, (?) mar. first . . . dau. of Wm. Parkinson, secondly Mary, dau. of Roger Meynell, of North Kilvington.
5. *Robert.*
Ann, mar. Richard Hebborne, of Hardwyke (Glover, 621).
Alice, mar. Leonard Frank, of Knighton (Glover, 619).
Elizabeth, mar. Thomas Layton, of Sexhow (Glover, 540).
Margaret, mar. William Hilton, of co. Durham. Will 4 June 1566.

V. *S^{r} CHRISTOPHER METCALFE, of Nappa, Kn^{t}.*, High Sheriff of Yorks. 1555, sold Hartlington, Knighted 1545, b. 1 Aug. 1513, d. 9 May 1574, Inq. p.m. 26 Oct. 1574, *mar. Elizabeth, daughter of Henry* Clifford, *Earle of Cumberland*, circ. 1550 They had issue—

Clifford

1. *James* (VI).
2. *John*, of Nappa, b. circ. 1555, *died wthout issue* Oct. 1623. Will 14, pr. at York 19 Oct. 1623.
3. *Ingram, died wthout issue.*
4. *Charles, died wthout issue.*
Margaret, wife of George Middleton, of Leighton, in com. Lanc., Esq^{r}
Alice, had an annuity 9 Jan. 157$\frac{3}{4}$.

VI. *JAMES METCALFE, of Nappa, Esqr., died ao 22o Eliz.,* b. circ. 1551, d 8 May 1580, Inq. p m. 22 Eliz., *mar. Joane, daughter of John Savile, of Stanley, in co. Ebor., Esqr.* (remar. Sir Mauger Vavasour, of Weston) Will 19 May, pr. 17 June 1617, "to be bur. at Askrigg, nere my husband Metcalfe." They had issue—

Seville

VII. *SIR THOMAS METCALFE, Kt., died in July ao 1655,* æt. 6 ao 1585, J.P., b. 4 Dec. 1579, bur. at Aysgarth, *mar. Elizabeth, daughter of Sr Henry Slingsby, of Scriven, in co. Ebor., Kt.*, 28 Jan. 1594-5, at Knaresborough, bur. at Askrigg. They had issue—

1 *James Metcalfe, of Nappa, Esqr., now Recorder of ye Borough of Richmond, æt. 61 ann. 21 Aug. ao 1665*, b. 1604, Barr.-at-Law, at Lincs. Inn, adm. 28 Mar. 1626, J.P., d. intest. 1671, probably bur. at Askrigg, *mar.* firstly *Margt, daugh. of William Hicks, Citizen of London.* They had issue—

Elizabeth, sole daughter and heire apparent, æt. 18 ann. 21 Aug. ao 1665, mar. at Spennithorne 19 Oct. 1665, Edward, son of Rev. George Scott, Rector of Wensley

mar secondly Anne, eld. dau. of John Coleby, Esq., of Bowbridge Hall. They had issue—

Joan.

2. *Scroope Metcalfe, a Major in ye Army of King Charles ye 1st, died at Oxford* 13 Sept. *ao* 1645 *of his wounds received at Henley-upon-Thames* (Thame), b. circ. 1608.

3. *Thomas Metcalfe*, Esq., of Nappa, succeeded his brother James, b. circ. 1614, d. 1684, *mar. Frances, da. of Francis Burdet, of Burthwayt* (Birthwaite), *in co. Ebor., 1st wife.* They had issue—

Elizabeth, probably d. young.

mar. Grace, da. of Robert Rokeley (Rockley), *of Rokeley, in co. Ebor, 2d wife*, 5 Aug. 1654.

4. *Henry* (VIII).
1. *Eliz., died young*
2. *Mary, died unmarried.*
3. *Frances, ye wife of Sr Will. Robinson, of Newby, in com. Ebor., Knt.*
4. *Kath., died young.*
5. *Joane*, b. circ. 1618 Will 24 Nov. 1692, pr. at Richmond 3 Nov. 1696.

VIII. *HENRY* METCALFE, ESQ., of Nappa, J.P., succeeded his brother Thomas, b. circ. 1620, bur. 12 Nov. 1705 at Askrigg. Will 19 Sept. 1697, pr. at York 27 Feb. 1705-6, mar. Mary, dau. of St. John Guilliams, of Doncaster, about 1685, bur. at Askrigg 7 Oct. 1735. They had issue—

— Next page not copied —

I can see no reason for any doubt that our Michael Metcalfe was somehow descended from the family at Askrigg in Wensleydale though different "authorities" disagree about how. Through Brian of Beare Bark^3, son of James^2 son of John^1 ?? That would be late 1400's.

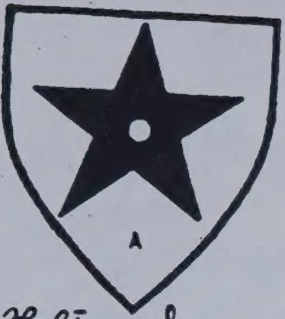
But researchers disagree on the exact connections.

Nappa Hall is no longer on the map. Oxford Dictionary of English Place Names says Nappa is near Hellifield. That is quite some distance to the south a little WNW of Skipton. (pg 35 on my Atlas).

All these Yorkshire dales are from rivers cascading down from the Pennine Hills, just barely east of the Ribble River separating them from Lancashire. To me they seem so isolated one wonders why they chose to settle there. My feeling is that they were originally Norman knights during a time when such places were of strategic importance in holding the borders inearly years after the Conquest. Priorities were different in turbulent times.

Our Michael Metcalfe was so different--gentle, extremely well educated. He ran a huge industry of damask weavers, probably of Flemish descent, in Norfolk, hid in the thatch of a roof for his life because of his religion when Archbishop Laud's men ment to burn him at the stake as an example to others.

As a very old man in his declining years in Massachusetts, he ran a little schoolroom to help local youngsters because good teachers were scarce and he wanted to help the community.



Robt de Asseton

He
Persecuted
Metcalfe
through Bishop Wren of
Norfolk

LAUD, WILLIAM, 1573–1645, archbishop of Canterbury and defender of church authority in England and Scotland. He was born in Reading, Berkshire, and was educated at Saint John's College, Oxford, receiving the degree of M.A. in 1598. In 1601 he was ordained a priest and very soon drew considerable attention to himself by his great opposition to Puritanism. Although he made enemies by his antagonistic attitude, his learning and his loyalty to the church also brought him enthusiastic supporters. He obtained the vicarage of Stanford, Northamptonshire, in 1607, and the advowson of North Kilworth, Leicestershire, in 1608. Despite strong opposition to the appointment, he was made president of Saint John's College, Oxford, in 1611, and, in 1614, he became prebendary of Lincoln. His appointment as archdeacon of Huntingdon in 1615 was followed by the recognition of King JAMES I (1566–1625), who made Laud dean of Gloucester in 1616. In 1617, he accompanied the king on a mission to Scotland which failed in its objective of converting the church in that country to Episcopalianism.

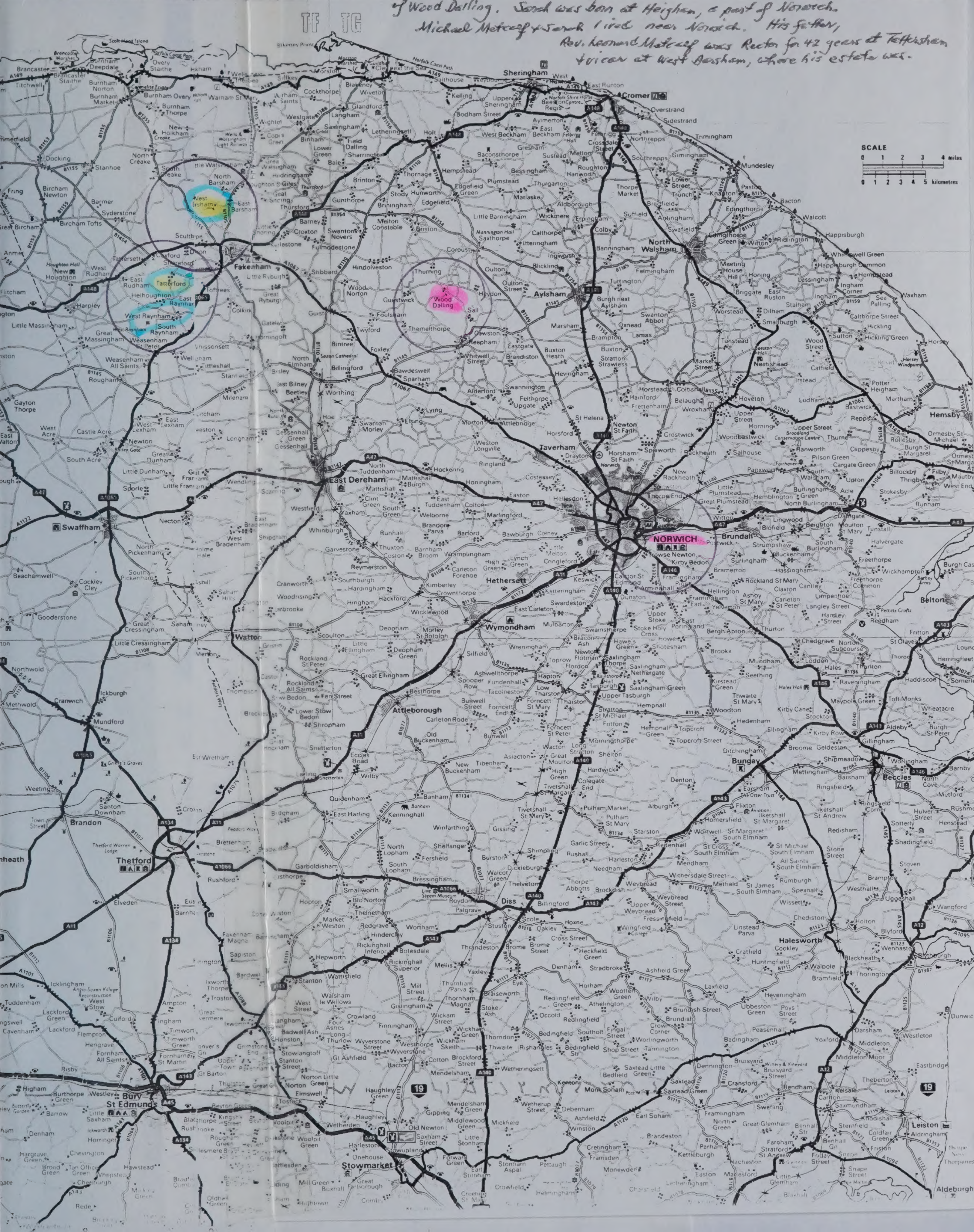
After CHARLES I (1600–1649) came to the throne in 1625, Laud was appointed bishop of London and, in 1630, he became chancellor of the University of Oxford. His influence in the Star Chamber courts and in the High Commission was very great, and Laud tried, though unsuccessfully, to suppress Puritanism. His insistence upon absolute conformity to the English liturgy and the minute regulations of the church not only aroused the enmity of the Puritans, but also the dislike of Parliament and the people in general. Nevertheless, with the support of the king, he became both archbishop of Canterbury and chancellor of the University of Dublin in 1633. A second attempt to introduce Episcopacy in Scotland (1635–37) also failed, and finally, in 1641, the House of Commons ordered his arrest. He was brought to trial in 1643, charged with treason, but was acquitted by the House of Lords. The House of Commons, however, sentenced him to death and the House of Lords finally gave its consent to the decree. Although he was pardoned by the king, Laud was beheaded Jan. 10, 1645. ✓

Through the efforts of Laud, who was a man of considerable learning, the University of Oxford added about 1,300 manuscripts written in many languages. Laud himself wrote few works, among them the most significant were his *Diary*, published in 1694, and his *Apologia* for the church

(Modern Highway Map)

The Ellegyns descended from John [illegible] b 1450 & Catherine Ellegyn

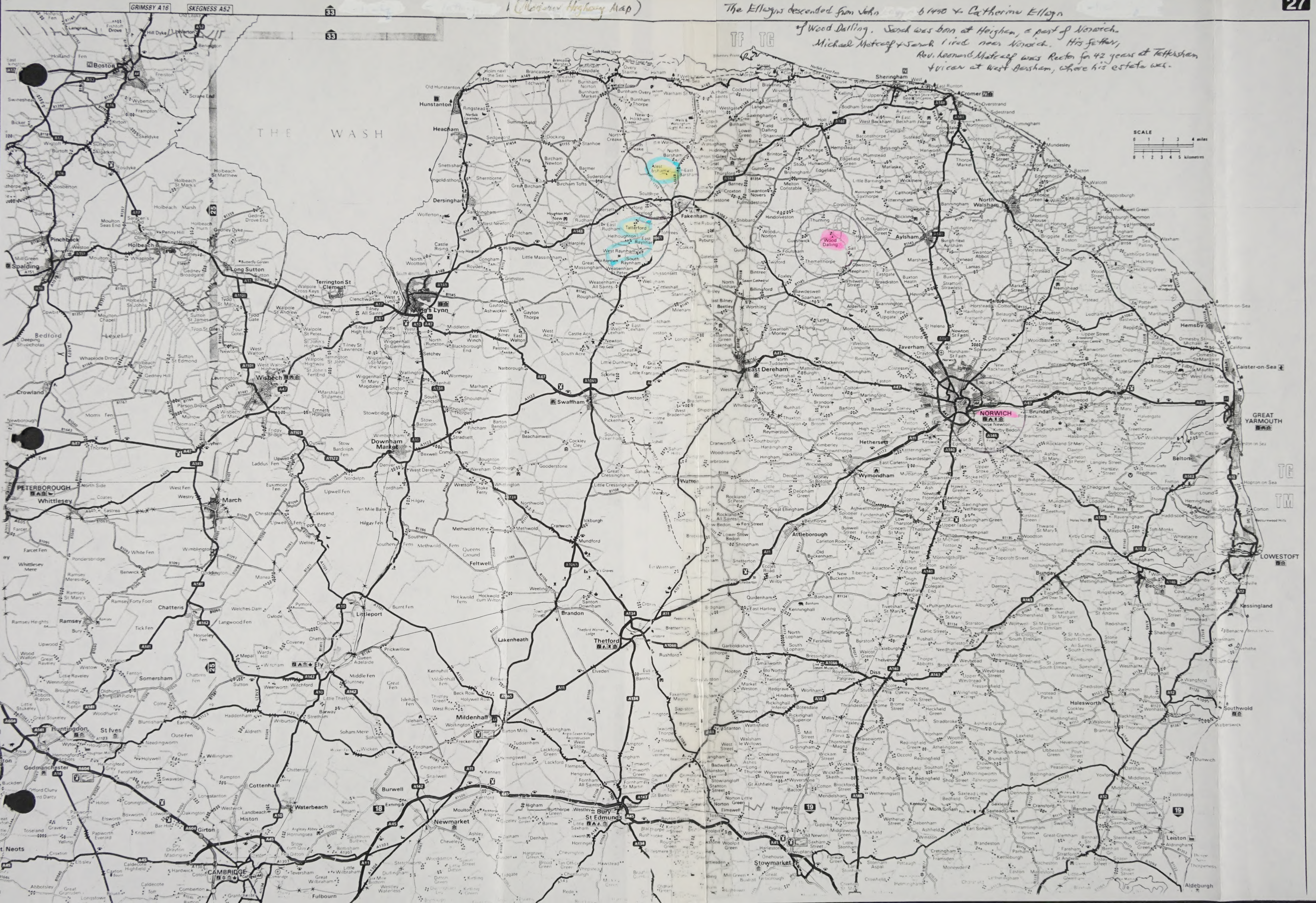
of Wood Dalling. Sarah was born at Heigham, a part of Norwich.
Michael Metcalf & Sarah lived near Norwich. His father,
Rev. Leonard Metcalf was Rector for 42 years at Tattersham
& vicar at West Barsham, where his estate was.

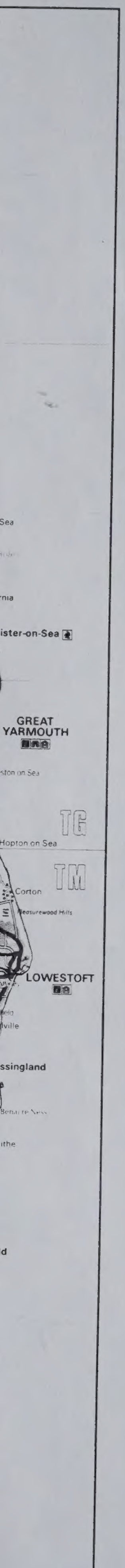


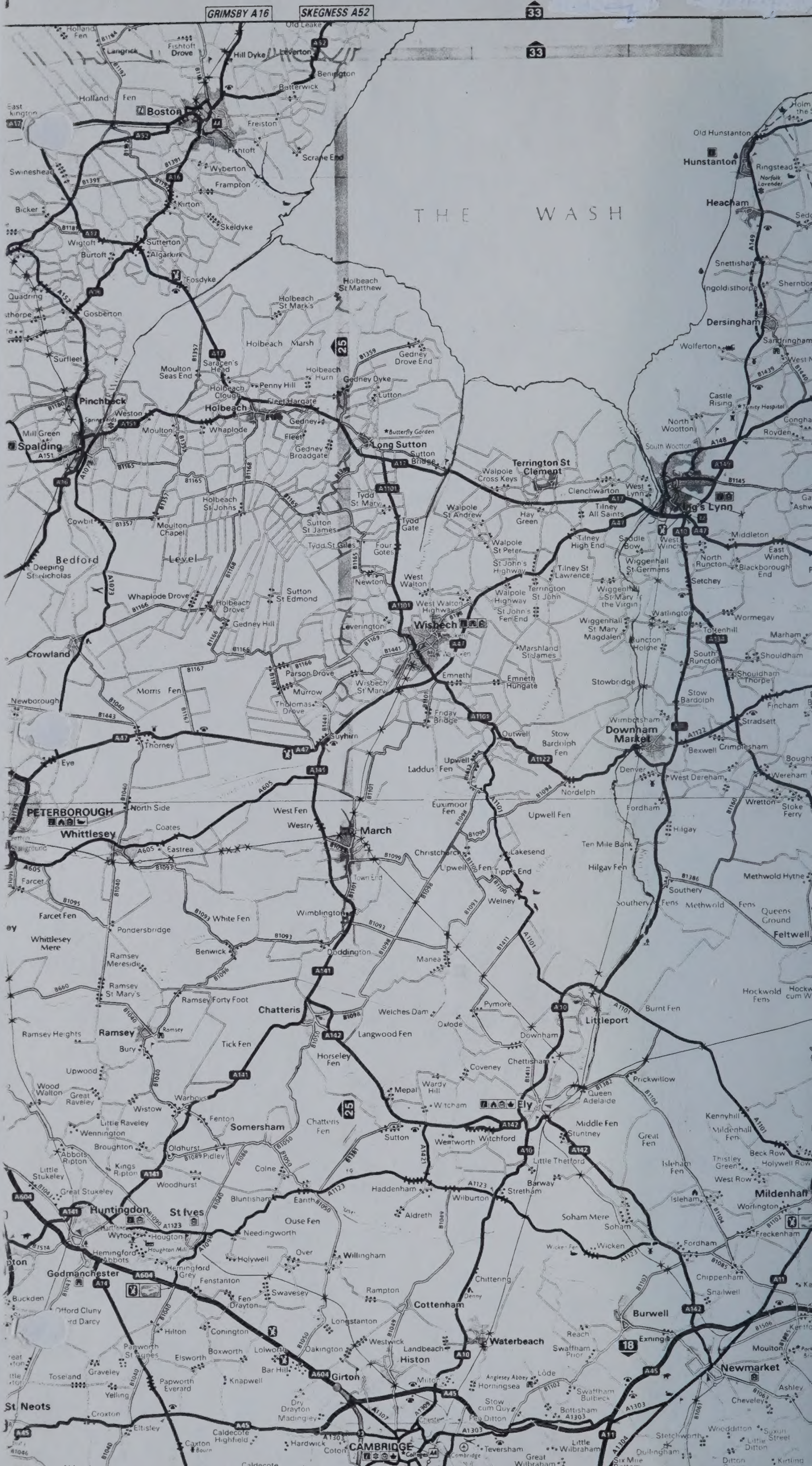
TF
TG
SCALE
0 1 2 3 4 miles
0 1 2 3 4 5 kilometres
Sheringham
Cromer
Holt
Fakenham
West Barsham
North Barsham
East Barsham
Tatterford
East Rudham
West Raynham
East Raynham
South Raynham
Wood Dalling
Thurning
Salle
Heydon
Aylsham
North Walsham
NORWICH
Taverham
East Dereham
Swaffham
Wymondham
Attleborough
Watton
Thetford
Brandon
Diss
Bungay
Beccles
Halesworth
Stowmarket
Bury St Edmunds
Leiston
Aldeburgh
Brundall
Mundesley
Hemsby

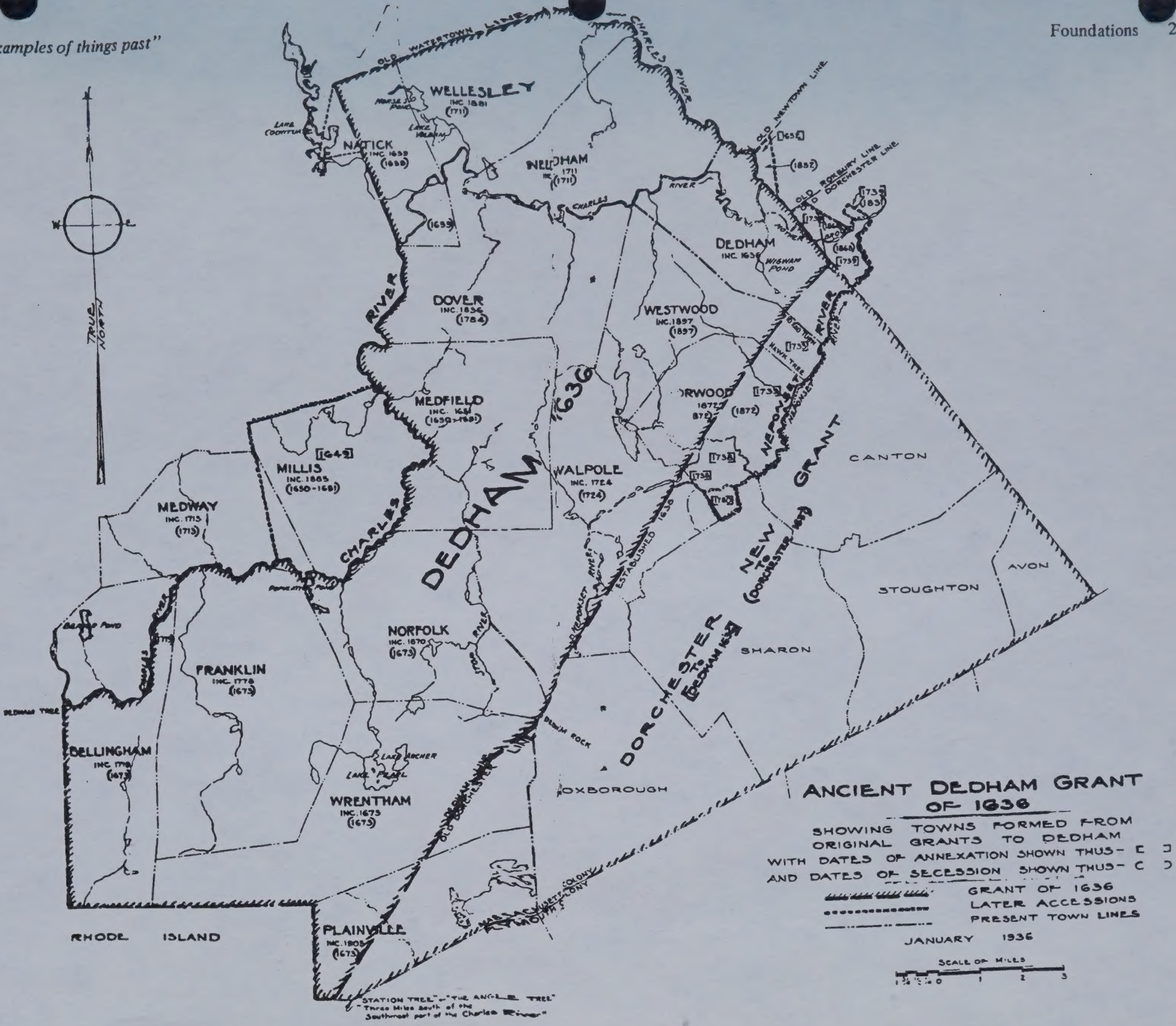
(Modern Highway Map)

The Ellwyns descended from John b 1450 + Catherine Ellwyn of Wood Dalling. Sarah was born at Heigham, a part of Norwich. Michael Metcalf + Sarah lived near Norwich. His father, Rev. Leonard Metcalf was Rector for 42 years at Tatterisham + vicar at West Barsham, where his estate was.


GRIMSBY A16
SKEGNESS A52
33
THE WASH
TF
TG
TM
SCALE
miles
kilometres
West Barsham
East Barsham
North Barsham
Tatterford
West Raynham
East Raynham
South Raynham
Wood Dalling
NORWICH
King's Lynn
Fakenham
Sheringham
Cromer
East Dereham
Swaffham
Thetford
Wymondham
GREAT YARMOUTH
LOWESTOFT
Boston
Spalding
Wisbech
PETERBOROUGH
March
Ely
Huntingdon
CAMBRIDGE
Newmarket
Bury St Edmunds
Stowmarket
Diss
Aldeburgh
18
19
25


Sea
rnia
ister-on-Sea
GREAT YARMOUTH
ston on Sea
TG
Hopton on Sea
TM
Corton
Pleasurewood Hills
LOWESTOFT
ssingland
Benacre Ness
ithe


GRIMSBY A16
SKEGNESS A52
33
33
Holland Fen
Langrick
Fishtoft Drove
Old Leake
Hill Dyke
Leverton
Benington
Butterwick
Holland Fen
Boston
Freiston
Fishtoft
Scrane End
Swineshead
Wyberton
Frampton
Bicker
Kirton
Skeldyke
Wigtoft
Sutterton
Burtoft
Algarkirk
Fosdyke
Quadring
Gosberton
Surfleet
THE WASH
Old Hunstanton
Hunstanton
Ringstead
Norfolk Lavender
Heacham
Snettisham
Ingoldisthorpe
Dersingham
Wolferton
Sandringham
Castle Rising
Trinity Hospital
North Wootton
South Wootton
Holbeach St Matthew
Holbeach St Marks
Holbeach Marsh
25
Gedney Drove End
Moulton Seas End
Saracen's Head
Holbeach Hurn
Gedney Dyke
Lutton
Pinchbeck
Holbeach Clough
Penny Hill
Holbeach
Fleet Hargate
Weston
Spalding
Moulton
Whaplode
Gedney
Fleet
Gedney Broadgate
Butterfly Garden
Long Sutton
Sutton Bridge
Terrington St Clement
Walpole Cross Keys
Clenchwarton
West Lynn
King's Lynn
Tilney All Saints
Middleton
Holbeach St Johns
Tydd St Mary
Walpole St Andrew
Hay Green
Cowbit
Moulton Chapel
Sutton St James
Tydd Gate
Tilney High End
Saddle Bow
West Winch
East Winch
North Runcton
Blackborough End
Bedford Level
Deeping St Nicholas
Tydd St Giles
Four Gotes
Walpole St Peter
St John's Highway
Tilney St Lawrence
Wiggenhall St Germans
Setchey
Newton
West Walton
Walpole Highway
Terrington St John
Wiggenhall St Mary the Virgin
Whaplode Drove
Sutton St Edmond
Holbeach Drove
West Walton Highway
St John's Fen End
Watlington
Wormegay
Gedney Hill
Leverington
Wisbech
Wiggenhall St Mary Magdalen
Tottenhill
Marham
Crowland
Runcton Holme
South Runcton
Shouldham
Marshland St James
Parson Drove
Wisbech St Mary
Emneth
Emneth Hungate
Shouldham Thorpe
Morris Fen
Murrow
Stowbridge
Stow Bardolph
Fincham
Newborough
Thomas Drove
Friday Bridge
Guyhirn
Outwell
Stow Bardolph Fen
Downham Market
Stradsett
Thorney
Upwell
Bexwell
Crimplesham
Eye
Laddus Fen
Denver
West Dereham
Wereham
Nordelph
PETERBOROUGH
North Side
West Fen
Euximoor Fen
Upwell Fen
Fordham
Wretton
Stoke Ferry
Whittlesey
Coates
Westry
March
Ten Mile Bank
Hilgay
Eastrea
Christchurch
Lakesend
Farcet
Upwell Fen
Tipps End
Hilgay Fen
Methwold Hythe
Town End
Welney
Southery
Farcet Fen
Southery Fens
Methwold
Fens
Queens Ground
Feltwell
White Fen
Wimblington
Pondersbridge
Whittlesey Mere
Ramsey Mereside
Benwick
Doddington
Manea
Ramsey St Mary's
Ramsey Forty Foot
Chatteris
Welches Dam
Pymore
Littleport
Burnt Fen
Hockwold Fens
Ramsey Heights
Ramsey
Oxlode
Bury
Tick Fen
Langwood Fen
Downham
Horseley Fen
Chettisham
Upwood
Coveney
Prickwillow
Wood Walton
Great Raveley
Wardy Hill
Mepal
Witcham
Ely
Queen Adelaide
Kennyhill
Mildenhall Fen
Wistow
Warboys
Little Raveley
Fenton
Somersham
Chatteris Fen
Sutton
Wentworth
Witchford
Middle Fen
Stuntney
Great Fen
Beck Row
Wennington
Broughton
Oldhurst
Pidley
Little Thetford
Isleham Fen
Thistley Green
Holywell Row
West Row
Abbots Ripton
Kings Ripton
Colne
Little Stukeley
Woodhurst
Haddenham
Wilburton
Barway
Stretham
Isleham
Mildenhall
Great Stukeley
Bluntisham
Earith
Aldreth
Worlington
Huntingdon
St Ives
Ouse Fen
Soham Mere
Soham
Freckenham
Hartford
Wyton
Houghton
Needingworth
Wicken Fen
Wicken
Fordham
Houghton Mill
Hemingford Abbots
Holywell
Over
Willingham
Chippenham
Godmanchester
Hemingford Grey
Fenstanton
Chittering
Snailwell
Buckden
Swavesey
Rampton
Denny
Offord Cluny
Offord Darcy
Fen Drayton
Cottenham
Burwell
Hilton
Conington
Longstanton
Reach
18
Waterbeach
Exning
Papworth St Agnes
Boxworth
Lolworth
Oakington
Westwick
Landbeach
Swaffham Prior
Moulton
Elsworth
Histon
Newmarket
Toseland
Graveley
Bar Hill
Girton
Milton
Anglesey Abbey
Horningsea
Lode
Swaffham Bulbeck
Ashley
Knapwell
Papworth Everard
Cheveley
St Neots
Yelling
Dry Drayton
Madingley
Stow cum Quy
Bottisham
Croxton
Fen Ditton
Eltisley
Caldecote
Highfields
Hardwick
Coton
CAMBRIDGE
Teversham
Great Wilbraham
Little Wilbraham
Six Mile Bottom
Dullingham
Stetchworth
Woodditton
Saxon Street
Little Ditton
Ditton
Kirtling
Caxton
Bourn
A16
A52
A17
A1121
A151
A1073
A1101
A47
A141
A605
A1122
A10
A142
A1123
A604
A14
A45
A11
A1303
A1309
A149
A148
A134
B1357
B1165
B1168
B1166
B1167
B1169
B1040
B1093
B1098
B1099
B1050
B1086
B1089
B1096
B1381
B1085
B1102
B1104
B1382
B1411
B1386
B1160
B1094
B1145
B1443
B1091
B1095
B1043
B1514


ANCIENT DEDHAM GRANT OF 1636
SHOWING TOWNS FORMED FROM ORIGINAL GRANTS TO DEDHAM
WITH DATES OF ANNEXATION SHOWN THUS – [ ]
AND DATES OF SECESSION SHOWN THUS – ( )
GRANT OF 1636
LATER ACCESSIONS
PRESENT TOWN LINES
JANUARY 1936
SCALE OF MILES
TRUE NORTH
OLD WATERTOWN LINE
CHARLES RIVER
OLD NEWTOWN LINE
OLD ROXBURY LINE
OLD DORCHESTER LINE
WELLESLEY INC. 1881 (1711)
NATICK INC. 1659 (1659)
NEEDHAM 1711 (1711)
DEDHAM INC. 1636
WIGWAM POND
DOVER INC. 1836 (1784)
WESTWOOD INC. 1897 (1897)
MEDFIELD INC. 1651 (1650-1651)
NORWOOD 1872 (1872)
MILLIS INC. 1885 (1650-1651) [1649]
WALPOLE INC. 1724 (1724)
MEDWAY INC. 1713 (1713)
DEDHAM 1636
NEPONSET RIVER
NEW GRANT TO DORCHESTER 1637
CANTON
STOUGHTON
AVON
SHARON
DORCHESTER TO DEDHAM 1637
ESTABLISHED 1636
NORFOLK INC. 1870 (1673)
STOP RIVER
FRANKLIN INC. 1778 (1673)
BELLINGHAM INC. 1719 (1673)
WRENTHAM INC. 1673 (1673)
LAKE ARCHER
LAKE PEARL
FOXBOROUGH
DEDHAM ROCK
OLD DEDHAM LINE
MASSACHUSETTS COLONY
PLYMOUTH COLONY
PLAINVILLE INC. 1905 (1673)
RHODE ISLAND
DEDHAM TREE
STATION TREE – "THE ANGLE TREE"
"Three Miles South of the Southwest part of the Charles River"

1

FIRST GENERATION

1540/1

1. [1] Rev. Leonard Metcalf. Born in 1540/1 in Apperside, Wensleydale, Yorkshire, England. Died in September 1616 in West Barsham, Norfolk, England, 75 years old. Buried on 22 September 1616 in Tatterford Parish, Norfolk, England.

Exposition on Rev. Leonard Metcalf: The Reverend Leonard Metcalf of Tatterford is the earliest Metcalf(e) in this lineage who is considered proven by the best genealogical standards. The eminent genealogist George Andrews Moriarty concluded that "Considerable research shows the impossibility of establishing [beyond doubt] the ancestry of Michael Metcalf [the immigrant] beyond his father, Rev. Leonard Metcalf, rector of Tatterford in Norfolk . . . ."[1]

Dr. George Redmonds[2] regards Metcalf(e) as a distinctive surname (of a single family origin as opposed to multiple family origin) which "originated in the mountainous country where Yorkshire meets Westmorland." So the juncture of many, if not most or all, of the various Metcalf family branches at some point in their history is a virtual certainty.

Leonard, born in the hamlet of Apperside in Wensleydale, in the North Riding of Yorkshire, *may* be the son of a Richard Metcalfe of Apperside. Moriarty continues: " . . . Examination of the records of this region [Apperside] shows that a large number of the inhabitants bore the name of Metcalf. . . . The names *Michael* and *Leonard* were very common in the Metcalf family of this region, where the Metcalfs formed almost a clan. There can be no doubt that the gentle family of the neighboring Nappa Hall were related more or less remotely to the innumberable Metcalfs of the vicinage, but just how it is impossible to say, owing to the lack of wills."

Since Leonard's eldest son was named Richard, it is not unlikely that Leonard's father would be named Richard. The *Lay Subsidies* for Apperside in 1542–1544 lists Henry, Michael, Denis, Symon, Jone, Edward, Reginald, John and, most interestingly, Richard Metcalf. Leonard would have been too young to be included, but his father would not, and so the Richard named in the Apperside list could well have been Leonard's father. Indeed, another noted genealogist, Milton Rubincam, wrote in a review[3] that Moriarty's works "show that Michael's father Leonard was succeeded in the rectorship of Tatterford, Norfolk, by the Rev. Richard Metcalfe, the eldest son. For that reason, we may with justice theorize that the father of the Rev. Leonard was Richard, who appears at Apperset [*sic*] in Wensleydale, North Yorkshire, in 1542-4."

On the other hand, Leonard *may* be the son (or nephew) of Leonard Metcalfe of Beare Park in Marrick, Wensleydale, Yorkshire (born by about 1520, died by 1570), but no convincing evidence to that effect is extant.[4]

1425
1389

Leonard of Tatterford is not mentioned in the various English pedigrees. But Leonard of Beare Park appears is a couple of old pedigrees[5] which, if believed, show him to be a descendant of Bryan Metcalfe of Beare Park (born about 1425), son of the famous James Metcalfe of Nappa (born in 1389, died in 1471/72). As an aside, Leonard of Beare Park may be the Leonard who joined in the Rebellion of the Earls of Northumberland and Westmorland, called "The Rising of the North," in 1569. That Leonard's troubles with Queen Elizabeth I after its failure are described below,[6] where he is noted as "late" in 13 Elizabeth (1570). As a consequence, he lost his large estates in Yorkshire and resettled in Norfolk.[7]

> Leonard Metcalfe was condemned and narrowly escapted the scaffold, being "stayed for the second execution." He was attainted. He is described in the State Papers and the Bowes manuscripts relating to the rebellion in one list as Leonard Metcalfe, of Bere Park, Exq., and in another as Leonard Metcalfe of Bere Parke, gentleman. His name is first on the list of gentlemen prisoners at Carlisle, 30 December 1569. Among his 35 fellow prisoners occur the well-known names of Christopher and Marmaduke Norton, Symon Dygby, George Nevill, John and Henry Grene of Newby, Gerard Salvyn, Will Slingsby, Nicholas Fairfax and Thomas Plomtree, a priest and their preacher. On 1 January his name is in the list of prisoners in Durham Castle, and among the prisoners was Robert Lambert of Owton, Esq., afterwards father-in-law to his kinsman Anthony Metcalfe.
>
> A commission was appointed to try the principal rebels at York. Eleven were indicted for the conspiracy of treason and also for the rebellion, and all condemned to die. Four were executed at York on the 24 March 1570, namely Symon Dygby of Bedale, Esq., John Fulthorp of Islebeck, Esq., Robert Pennyman of Stokesley, gentleman, and Thomas Bishop, Junior, of Pocklington, gentleman. Seven were stayed for the second execution or until the Queen's pleasure should be known, six being John Markenfeld, Astolphe Cleasby, Leonard Metcalfe, Robert Lambert, Robert Claxton and Rauf Conyers.
>
> It was represented to the Queen that Leonard Metcalf was a servant or retainer of the Earl of Northumberland, whom he followed on that account, that he had made a state of his lands to his wife, so that by his life the Queen should have his lands and by his death the wife should presently have them, so that the Queen would win by his life and lose by his death. It was represented further that he had many children and that before the rebellion he was taken for a very honest, quiet man, and that he was generally lamented. In reply the Queen expressed her willingness to spare the lives of three, but with respect to the others said, "And for the four, Metcalfe, Lambert, Claxton, and Conyers, although we thynk it good that som furder example be showed we refer the same to your own judgement."
>
> The Commissioners did not accept the fearful discretion imposed upon them and, on 5 April, the Earl of Sussex wrote to the Secretary, Cecil, that as the Queen wanted some "further example of ye better sorte," they thought that Metcalfe, Lambert, Claxton and Conyer might be executed. None of the four were executed, but they were attainted. In the Bill of Attainder in 1570 Leonard is named as "Leonard Metcalfe, late of Beereparke, county of York, Esq."
>
> Nevertheless, the Metcalfes of Beare Park appear to have remained true to the Roman Catholic faith of their forefathers. This faith numbered many partisans in the North Country. Sadler states in 1569, "There be not in all this countrey ten gentlemen that do favour and allowe of her Majesties proceedings in ye cause of religion."

But in spite of (1) the similarity of the names of the two Leonards, (2) Leonard of Beare Park being in the right place at the right time for the birth of Leonard of Tatterford, and (3) the probabilty that Leonard of Beare Park resettled in Norfolk while (as mentioned below) Leonard of Tatterford later became Rector of the Parish of Tatterford and Vicar of West Barsham, both in Norfolk, the evidence of a possible father-son relationship cannot be considered sufficiently compelling to accept unconditionally.[8]

We do know that Leonard of Tatterford was born in 1540 or 1541 in Apperside.[9] He was early educated at Sedburgh School, matriculated in the College of St. John's, Cambridge University, in 1563/4 and received his Bachelor of Arts degree in 1568/9.[10] He gave up Catholicism and took holy orders under the state church.[11] Leonard became Rector of the Parish of Tatterford in Norfolk in 1574 and Vicar of West Barsham in Norfolk in 1603 where he remained until his death.[12]

Leonard married Amy — about 1579, in all likelihood in Tatterford. She was born about 1558, probably in Tatterford.[13] Amy was buried on 22 December 1602 in Tatterford.[14]

Leonard was buried on 22 September 1616 in Tatterford[15] and was later succeeded as Rector by his son Richard Metcalf.

Leonard and Amy had at least eight children.[16]

---

[1] Moriarty, "Metcalf: Additional Records," *NEHGR, LXXXVI*, 252.

[2] Redmonds, *English Surnames, Series I. Yorkshire West Riding.*

[3] Milton Rubincam, "Book Reviews," *The National Genealogical Society Quarterly*, Volume 69, 225-6.

[4] As noted in Metcalfe, *Metcalf Genealogy*, 8, it is "probable that this first Rector Metcalf of Tatterford was the son of Leonard Metcalf [of Beare Park], the quondam traitor." This conjecture is supported only by generational consistency.

[5] Foster, *The Visitation of Yorkshire*, 249, 354 and 409.

Whitaker, *The History and Antiquities of the Deanery of Craven*, chart entitled "De Hertlyngton and Metcalfe."

[6] Foster, *Pedigrees of the County Families of Yorkshire*, chart entitled "Pedigree of Metcalfe, of Nappa Hall, Beare Park, North Allerton, and Thornborough Hall, and Metcalfe, now Marwood, of Little Busby Hall and North Allerton," which refers to *Memorials of the Rebellion of 1569* (London: John Bowyer Nichols, 1840).

[7] Metcalfe, *Metcalf Genealogy*, 8.

[8] Metcalfe, *Metcalfe Lineages, Legend and History*, Chapter III (from which this discussion of the two Leonards is derived), while noting the ancestry of Leonard of Beare Park is unproven, provides a full, conjectural genealogy from King Edmund Magnificus (921–946) through James Metcalfe of Nappa to Leonard of Beare Park. The book is available in single copies from the Higginson Book Company of Salem, Massachusetts. Chapter II carries the royal genealogies back to Cerdic (467–534), King of Wessex, while Chapter I carries describes Cerdic's mythic genealogy back to Harderich (75 BC–?), King of the Saxons. Chapter V contains the Scottish royal ancestry linking into Chapter III.

[9] Moriarty, "Metcalf: Additional Records," *NEHGR, LXXXVI*, 253, From Depositions in the Diocesan Registry, Norwich: "1614 Leonard Metcalf, clerk, rector of the parish of Tatterford, where he has been incumbent for forty years, born at Apperside, co. York [deposed] aged 73 years. (Deposition Book, 1614)." This would make him born in 1540 or 1541.

[10] Venn, *Alumni Cantabrigienses, Volume III, Kaile—Ryves*, 179: "Metcalfe, Leonard. Matric. pens. from St John's, Lent, 1563–4; B. A. 1568–9; M. A. 1640. R. of Tatterford and West Barsham, Norfolk, 1603. Father of Nicholas (1607)."

The Metcalfe Society of England reports from their records (consistent with the above record): "1587 Rector of Tatterford/Tattesford, Norfolk. educated Sedburgh School, Yks matric 1563/4 St. John's Coll, Cambridge; BA 1568/9; gave up Catholicism; took holy orders, became Rector Tatterford 1574; 1603 Vicar West Barsham, Norfolk."

[11] Perhaps as a condition of a pardon from the attainder of his possible father or uncle, Leonard of Beare Park

[12] Banks, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXX*, 313.

[13] Her approximate birth year is inferred from the birth dates of her first child (Richard, born probably in 1580 when Amy was about age 22) and her last child (Marie, born certainly in 1601 when Amy was about age 43).

The LDS Ancestral File (entry number 2BZK-FB), shows her date of birth as 1547—not likely since she would have been 53 or 54 years old at the birth of her last child. Her place of birth is given as Tallesford, Norfolk, England—probably a misreading of Tatterford.

[14] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 64, Burials, "1602 Amy Metcalf 22 December."

[15] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 64, Burials, "1616 Leona Metcalf, clerk, 22 September."

[16] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 64, includes all the list children except Michael and Richard. Entries for the years 1570, 15 1580, 1585, 1590 and 1592 are missing.

Moriarty, "Metcalf: Additional Records," *NEHGR, LXXXVI*, 253, sho James, born on 14 March 1579/80 who married Joan Cooke on 30 Jan ary 1602/3 at St. Micheal on the Hill, Lincoln. No further evidence James as a son of Leonard has been found and the name James do not otherwise appear in Leonard's descendants, so he is not included one of Leonard's children.

Wife of Rev. Leonard Metcalf: **Amy —**. Born about 1558, possib in Tatterford Parish. Died in December 1602, about 44 years ol Buried on 22 December 1602 in Tatterford Parish. Married L onard about 1579 in Tatterford Parish when about 21 years old

Exposition on Amy —: Her approximate birth year is inferre from the birth dates of her first child (Richard, born probably i 1580 when Amy was about age 22) and her last child (Mari born certainly in 1601 when Amy was about age 43).

"1602 Amy Metcalf 22 December."[1]

---

[1] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 64, Burials from the Paris Registers of Tatterford.

Issue of Rev. Leonard Metcalf and Amy —:

+ 2 i. [2] son **Rev. Richard Metcalf**. Born in 1580 in Tatterfor Parish. Died in March 1656/7, about 77 years old. Buried o 11 March 1656/7.

3 ii. son **John Metcalf**. Baptized on 15 August 1583 in Tatte ford Parish. Died in March 1604/5 in Tatterford Parish. Bu ied on 17 March 1604/5 in Tatterford Parish.

4 iii. son **Leonard Metcalf**. Baptized on 3 September 1586 i Tatterford Parish. Died in August 1590. Buried on 10 Au gust 1590.

5 iv. son **Nicholas Metcalf**. Born on 3 February 1586/7 in Tat terford Parish. Baptized on 8 July 1587 in Tatterford Paris when five months old. Died about 14 September 1661 i Blakeney, Norfolk, England, about 74 years old. Buried i September 1661.

+ 6 v. son **Michael Metcalf**. Born in 1590 in Tatterford Parish Died on 24 December 1664 in Dedham, Norfolk County Massachusetts, about 74 years old. Buried on 27 Decembe 1664 in Dedham.

7 vi. son **Matthew Metcalf**. Baptized on 18 December 1594 in Tatterford Parish.

8 vii. son **Nynian Metcalf**. Baptized on 10 June 1596 in Tatterford Parish.

9 viii. dau. **Mary Metcalf**. Baptized on 28 August 1601 in Tatterford Parish. Died in December 1601 in Tatterford Parish. Buried on 7 December 1601 in Tatterford Parish.

SECOND GENERATION

Issue of **Rev. Leonard Metcalf** and **Amy —** (^{1} Rev. Leonard Metcalf [no. 1]):

2. i. ^{2} **Rev. Richard Metcalf**, son of Rev. Leonard Metcalf and Amy —. Born in 1580 in Tatterford Parish, Norfolk, England. Died in March 1656/7, about 77 years old. Buried on 11 March 1656/7.

Exposition on Rev. Richard Metcalf: The parish register entries for 1579 and 1580 are missing, but present for 1581 to 1584 wherein Richard does not appear. His next younger sibling, John, is known to have been baptized in 1583, and the next in 1586—so the year 1580 is preferred over 1579.

"1656 Richard Metcalf, clerk, 11 March [1656/7]."[1]

Richard received his Bachelor of Arts degree from Christ's College, Cambridge University, in 1604/5. He was ordained a deacon in Norwich on 26 May 1605 and a priest on 25 January 1606/7. He was Rector of Tatterford in 1615, probably following his father's retirement.[2]

---

[1] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 63, Burials from the Parish Registers of Tatterford.

[2] Venn, *Alumni Cantabrigienses, Volume III, Kaile—Ryves*, 179: "Metcalfe, or Medcalfe, Richard. B. A. from Christ's, 1604–5; M. A. 1608. Ord. deacon (Norwich) May 26, 1605; priest, Jan. 25, 1606–7, age 24 [*sic*]. One of these names R. of Tatterford, Norfolk, 1615. (*Peile*, I. 237.)"

Wife of Rev. Richard Metcalf: **Mary —**. Died in March 1643/4. Buried on 24 March 1643/4. Married Richard about 1612 (Richard was about 32 years old).

Exposition on Mary —: "1643 Mary Metcalf wife of Richard (clerk) 24 March [1643/4]."[1]

---

[1] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 63, Burials.

Issue of Rev. Richard Metcalf and Mary —:

+ 10 i. ^{3} son **Rev. Leonard Metcalf**. Baptized on 15 August 1613 in Tatterford Parish. Died in November 1695 in Tatterford Parish. Buried on 23 November 1695 in Tatterford Parish.

+ 11 ii. son **Richard Metcalf**. Baptized on 15 January 1614/5 in Tatterford Parish.

12 iii. son **John Metcalf**. Baptized on 15 November 1618 in Tatterford Parish. Died in January 1619 in Tatterford Parish. Buried on 31 January 1619 in Tatterford Parish.

6. v. ^{2} **Michael Metcalf**, son of Rev. Leonard Metcalf and Amy —. Born in 1590 in Tatterford Parish, Norfolk, England. Died on 24 December 1664 in Dedham, Norfolk County, Massachusetts, about 74 years old. Buried on 27 December 1664 in Dedham. Married twice.

Exposition on Michael Metcalf: Michael[1] was born in 1590[2] in the Parish of Tatterford in Norfolk, England. While the earlier Yorkshire Metcalfes were, as far as is known, zealous Catholics, the Norfolk family was forced into becoming zealous Protestants, and Michael, at least, became a staunch Puritan.

Michael married Sarah Ellwyn on 13 October 1616 in Hingham (Heigham), near Norwich, in Norfolk. She was born and baptized on 17 June 1593 in Hingham,[3] the daughter of Thomas Elwyn and Elizabeth Benslye of Hingham, the Elwyns being a distinguished family in Norfolk.[4]

In 1619–1634 Michael was Warden of St. Benedict's in Norwich.[5] He also owned a cloth factory in Norwich and there he employed more than a hundred men making material known as Damask, or Dornix—material used for making curtains, carpets and other hangings. Hence he has been referred to by his descendants as "The Dornix Weaver."

However, like most Puritans, Michael and his family felt persecuted for their religious beliefs. So, with his family and probably other local Metcalfs, Michael emigrated through Great Yarmouth in Norfolk to Dedham, Massachusetts, in 1637.

They left Ipswich in Suffolk, their last port in England, aboard the *Rose* on 15 April and arrived in Boston, Massachusetts, on 8 June 1637.[6] There they founded the very extensive branch of the family in New England and other Northern States which commonly does not use the terminal *e*.

"Many of these Metcalfs, along with others in England, were severely harassed by Bishop Wren, a vigorous opponent of Puritanism, who was eventually tried by Parliament during the reign of Oliver Cromwell" for acts committed by him during his term of two years and four months as the Holy See of Norwich.[7] Howell's State Trials, Volume IV, page 33, cites Article XVI of the impeachment:

> That by suppressing means of knowledge and salvation, and introducing ignorance, superstition and profaneness, many [some 3,000] of his majesty's subjects which used trades, spinning, weaving, and making of cloth, stuffs, and other manufactures of wool—and making of cloth . . . that is to say Daniel Sonning, Michael Metcalf, John Besant, Nicholas Metcalf, and many others, some of whom setting a hundred poor people to work, have removed themselves into Holland and other parts beyond the seas, and there set up and taught the natives the said manufactures, to the great hindrance of trade in this kingdom, and to the impoverished, and bringing to extreme want of very many who were by these parties set to work, to the great prejudice of his Majesty and his people.

The defense of Bishop Wren alleged that Michael and Nicholas Metcalf (possibly Michael's brother) were "call'd in question for some Words against the King, and so slipt away" to New England.[8] Michael tells us of his journey to America below:[9]

> To all the true professors of Christ's Gospel within the city of Norwich:
>
> . . . I was persecuted in the land of my father's sepulchres, for not bowing at the name of Jesus, and observing other ceremonies in religion, forced upon me, at the instance of Bishop Wren, of Norwich, and his chancellor Dr. Corbet, whose violent measures troubled me in the Bishop's Court, and returned me into the High Commissioner's Court. Suffering many times for the cause of religion, I was forced, for the sake of the liberty of my conscience, to flee from my wife and children, to go into New-England; taking ship for the voyage at London, the 17th of Sepr 1636; being by tempests tossed up and down the seas till the Christmas following, then veering about to Plymouth in Old England, in which time I met with many sore afflictions.
>
> Leaving the ship, I went down to Yarmouth, in Norfolk county, whence I shipped myself and family, to come to New-England; sailed 15th April, 1637, and arrived three days before midsummer, with my wife, nine children and a servant.
>
> [In a postscript Michael wrote] . . . my enemies conspired against me to take my life, and, sometimes, to avoid their hands, my wife did hide me in the roof of the house, covering me over with straw.

In the new world, Michael was admitted as a Townsman at Dedham on 14 July 1637[10] and joined the local church on 16 January 1639. He was made a freeman of the town on 13 May 1640, was chosen a Selectman of Dedham in 1641 and headed a committee to design a new meeting house. By 1641 Michael owned one of the principal clay pits on Dedham Island, the clay being used for the new industry of brickmaking.

Sarah died on 30 November 1644 at Dedham,[11] and Michael married second Mrs. Mary (Sothy) Pidge, a widow of Roxbury, Massachusetts, on 13 August 1645 in Dedham.[12] Michael and Mary had no children, although Mary had children from her previous marriage.

In 1657 Michael was the schoolmaster of Dedham.[13] Michael died on 24 December 1664[14] and was buried three days later. Mary survived him. His will dated 15 September 1664, three months before his death, follows:[15]

LAST WILL AND TESTMENT OF MICHAEL METCALF

> Michael Metcalfe, Senior, of Dedham, being aged, Doe make this my Last Will. Whereas, there is a Covenant Between my selfe and Mary my wife, made before our marriage, bearing Date the 13 of August 1645, wherein it may appear that she reserved to herselfe, and to her dispose, her Lands, and Estate, so that I received no Estate with her: Yet, neverthelesse, I give unto her ffor the terme of her widowhood, in household stuffe, and other goods, as shee thinkes meete to Chuse, for her use, not exceeding the value of sixteene pounds, and not being such as I shall particuarly Dispose of, in this my Last will, which household stuffe, so chosen by her, shall Bee to ffurnishe the Roome, which my Executor shall prepare for her, at his house, to Receive her into, after my Decease. All which household stuffe and goods, I give to my Executor, to have, after the Decease of my wife. Unto my wife, six punds, to be paid to her within one month after my Decease in Current pay. Unto Sonne John Metcalfe of Medfield, one ffeather and Bolster, my second book of Martyrs, Mr. Perkin's second book, Luther on the gala, one silver spoon, one pair of sheets, on Long Chest, in the Upper Chamber, one Diaper Boardcloth. Unto my Executor & his Heires, all that my Land in Neponset plaine, and three Acres Laying in ye Lowplaine next to Peter Woodward's, Also halfe my Divident in ye Cedar swampe, neer the Saw Mill, & 3 Commons & ye odde. Unto my Grandchild Michael Metcalfe, the Elder, all that my Land and Improvments within the Lotte I dwell in, my three acres in ye wigwaom plaine, my swompe next to my house, provided he give my Executor that Little parcel of his swampe west end of his house, otherwise my gift to be void. Also I give him my Natick Dividend of twenty-three acres, more or lesse; four Cow Commons; halfe my Cedar swampe, at the Saw Mill; my wood Land, at the West of Toune; all the particulars I have belonging to husbandry, in one kind or another; all the Remainer of my Household stuffe not Disposed of in this my Will. Also my first Book of Martyrs, Mr. Perkin's first Booke, one silver spoon. To my Daughter Wilson, ffortye shillings. To my Daughter Elisabeth Bancrafte, ffive pounds. To my Daughter Martha Stowe, twenty shillings. To my Daughter, Jane Walker, forty shillings. To my Daughter Rebecca Mackintosh—ffive punds. To my wife's Daughter, Martha Bullard, twenty shillings. To my Daughter, Sarah Onion, three pounds. All which six Legacyes, Last named, shall be paid at, in, or Before, the second March next after my Decease, in Current Payment.
>
> To my Daughter Stowe's eldest sonne, which she had by her first husband, Wm. Brignall, ffour pounds, to be paid him when he shall attayne to Lawful age. To my Grandchild, Jno. Mackintosh, and Robert Onion, all my wearing apparel to be equally divided by my Executor in order as their names been here set down; my Grandchild to choose first: To my Grandchild, above said, all the Lumber in my house. Moreover, if any of ye persons that are Legattes in my present will, shall by themselves, or by any others, make or cause to make any Disturbances, or Contortion, in word or Deed in Reference to any thing given in this my Will; then all that Legacye to that person, shall be utterly voide. Thomas Metcalfe of Dedham, my sonne, to be my executor, to whom I give all the Rest of my Lands and Goods, not formerly Disposed of.
>
> Michael Metcalfe
>
> Before the witnessing hereof, I give to my Grandchild, abovesaid, my single acre of Meddow; also my Largest gray Horsemans Coate, also two oxen, one Cow, to be delivered to him at Lawful age. All the Books, aforesaid, given to my soone John, after his death I give them his sonne Michael my Grandchilde.
>
> Signed and sealed in the presence of us
> Peter Woodard, his mark X, Jonathan ffairbanke
> Edward Ranson, Recorder
> Jonathan Fairebanke

Michael and Sarah had eleven children, the first seven baptized at St. Benedict in Norwich and the last four at St. Edmondsbury.[16]

---

[1] Harris, "Metcalf Family," *NEHGR, VI*, 171–173.

Goodwin, *Genealogical Notes*, 157, under "Michael Metcalf."

Savage, *A Genealogical Dictionary . . . of New England, Vol. III*, 203–204.

Metcalf, *A Study of Metcalfs*, 299–303. This is Section IV, "Michael Metcalfe, The Dornix Weaver."

Also Isaac Stevens Metcalf, *Metcalf Genealogy* (Cleveland: The Imperial Press, 1898), 8–17, although his baptismal date is in error.

The spelling "Metcalf" was commonly used by the family in New E gland and that spelling is followed herein and in the index until the r gration to Mississippi.

[2] Moriarty, "Metcalf: Additional Records," *NEHGR, LXXXVI*, 253, fr Depositions in the Diocesan Registry, Norwich: "1635 Michael Metc of Norwich, dornick weaver, aged 45 years, born at Tatterford, co. N folk, testifies regarding the practices of the clergyman of St. Edmon Norwich. (Deposition Book, 1635.)" This makes Michael born in 1589 1590. Moriarty also notes that the entries for the year 1590 are missi from the the copies of Parish Registers of Tatterford; but that those 1586 to 1589, 1591 and all but four later years are extant and do *n* mention Michael. Moriarty said that therefore Michael must have be born in 1590.

[3] Harris, "Metcalf Family," *NEHGR, VI*, 171.

[4] Banks, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXX*, 313.

[5] Banks, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXX*, 313.

[6] Wilson, *The Complete Book of Emigrants, 1607–1660*, 183, "8– April. Examination of those intending to embark in the *John and D othy* of Ipswich, Mr. William Andrewes, and the *Rose* of Yarmouth, M William Andrewes [Jr.], for New England . . . Michill Metcalfe of N wich, dornix weaver, age 45 [*sic*] and his wife Sarra [Ellwyn] aged [*sic*], and 8 children Michill, Thomas, Marey, Sarrah, Elizabeth, Ma tha, Joane [Jane] and Rebeca; and his servant Thomas Comberba aged 16, to Boston to inhabit . . . " (Note the usage of the terminal *e*.)

However, Banks, *The Planters of the Commonwealth*, 184–185, lists t above eight children plus son John, i. e., all nine children known to alive at the time. This is confirmed by Michael's own words stating th he sailed "with my wife, nine children and a servant." So John mu have shown up for a later exam, or simply missed it.

Banks further states that the *John and Dorothy* and the *Rose* left t gether from Ipswich, that their passengers cannot be allocated betwee the two ships and that the ships arrived in Boston on 8 June 1637. Th arrival date is confirmed when Michael states they arrived "three da before midsummer" which would make their arrival 8 June 1637, give that midsummer (the summer solstice) fell on 11 June *old style* (June *new style*). Michael's statement that "I went down to Yarmouth, Norfolk county, whence I shipped myself and family, to come to Ne England; [then] sailed 15th April, 1637 . . . " together with Wilson record that the *Rose* was of Yarmouth while the *John and Dorothy* w of Ipswich indicates Michael and his family were aboard the *Rose*. Wi son's dates of examination in Ipswich (8–13 April) and Michael's stat ment show that they embarked from Ipswich on the 15th.

[7] Metcalf, *A Study of Metcalfs*, 299.

Goodwin, *Genealogical Notes*, 157.

[8] Moriarty, "Metcalf: Additional Records," *NEHGR, LXXXVI*, 256.

[9] Goodwin, *Genealogical Notes*, 157. The quotation from a letter writte by Michael is attributed by Goodwin to the manuscript of the Ho James Savage.

In Metcalf, "Michael Metcalf," *NEHGR, XVI*, 279–284, an earlier lette by Michael appears, dated 13 January 1636, written when Michael wa "in exile" after his first attempt to go to America. The Hon. John Georg Metcalf was in error when he stated the letter was written befor Michael's first attempt, the date of the letter being in old style and th letter having been written in January 1637 new style—*after* Septembe 1636 and before April 1637.

[10] Charles William Metcalf writes: "For those arriving [in Boston] i 1637, most of the original land had already been distributed to settler They moved to Dedham. The Indians had given away title to Dedha by treaty. By 1640 the population of outlying areas such as Dedham Watertown, Concord and Sudbury totalled 1,000 people between them.'

[11] Hanson, ed., *Vital Records of Dedham*, 435, quotes the record: "wif of our brother Michael Metcalf Senr died comfortably Novr 30 164 aged 51 yrs 5 mo 13 days."

Harris, "Metcalf Family," *NEHGR, VI*, 171.

[12] Hanson, ed., *Vital Records of Dedham*, 295.

[13] Charles William Metcalf refers to Kenneth A. Lockridge, *A New England Town, The First Hundred Years*, 57.

[14] Hill, *The Record of Births . . . in the Town of Dedham. Vols. 1 & 2.*, 9 "Michaell Metcalfe, deceased 24th Decembr., 1664."

Hanson, ed., *Vital Records of Dedham*, 435.

Harris, "Metcalf Family," *NEHGR, VI*, 172, "Michael Metcalf died Dec. 27 [*sic*], 1664."

[15] Metcalf, *A Study of Metcalfs*, 301–303.

The Journal of the Metcalfe Society (England), No. 27, April 1989, 13–15, where the will is erroneously identified as that of Michael's son, Michael.

Harris, "Metcalf Family," *NEHGR, VI*, 172–173. "Will proved, and an Inventory of his Estate taken, Feb. 1, 1664–5. £ 364. 18. 05."

[16] Harris, "Metcalf Family," *NEHGR, VI*, 173.

Metcalf, *A Study of Metcalfs*, 299–349.

Isaac Stevens Metcalf, *Metcalf Genealogy* (Cleveland: The Imperial Press, 1898), 17.

Goodwin, *Genealogical Notes*, 157–158.

1st Wife of Michael Metcalf: **Sarah Elwyn**, dau. of **Thomas Elwyn** (son of **William Elwyn** and **Alice —**) and **Elizabeth Benslye**. Born and baptized on 17 June 1593 in Heigham, Norfolk, England. Died on 30 November 1644 in Dedham, 51 years old. Buried in December 1644 in Dedham. Married Michael on 13 October 1616 in St. Bartholomew, Heigham when 23 years old (Michael was about 26 years old).

Exposition on Sarah Elwyn: Sarah Metcalf "wife of our brother Michael Metcalf Senr died comfortably Novr 30, 1644, aged 51 yrs 5 mo. 13 days. She was born at Wagnham near Norwich June 17, 1593—married October 13, 1616" The quotation is from the records of the First Parish Church of Dedham.[1]

"His [Michael's] wife, Sarah, was born in the adoining [to Norwich] town of Waynham, (?) June 17, 1593, where they were married Oct. 13, 1616. . . . His wife, Sarah, died Nov. 30, 1644 . . ."[2]

The above quote is later corrected:[3]

> The statement in the Metcalf genealogy published in the Register (vol. 6, p. 171), that his [Michael's] wife Sarah was born at "Waynham," should be corrected, for an entry in the records of the First Church of Dedham, Mass., states that she was born at Heigham, near Norwich [co. Norfolk], 17 June 1593. She was a daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth (Benslye) Elwyn of that parish (see Mr. Moriarty's article on "The Elwyns of Norfolk," in *Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica* for March 1926), the Elwyns being a distinguished family in that county.

Sarah also appears in the LDS Ancestral File, version 4.19, AFN 2BZK-HN.

Issue of Michael Metcalf and Sarah Elwyn:

13 i. [3] son **Michael Metcalf**. Born on 13 November 1617 in Norwich, Norfolk, England. Baptized on 30 November 1617 in St. Benedict Parish, Norwich when two weeks old. Died on 19 January 1617/8 in Norwich, nine weeks old. Buried on 20 January 1617/8 in St. Benedict Church, Norwich.

+ 14 ii. dau. **Mary Metcalf**. Born on 14 February 1618/9 in Norwich. Baptized on 17 February 1618/9 in St. Benedict Parish when three days old. Died on 5 May 1676 in Dedham, 57 years old. Buried in Dedham.

+ 15 iii. son **Michael Metcalf**. Born on 29 August 1620 in Norwich. Baptized in St. Benedict Parish. Died on 25 March 1654 in Dedham, 33 years old.

+ 16 iv. son **John Metcalf**. Born on 5 September 1622 in Norwich. Baptized in St. Benedict Parish. Died on 27 November 1675 in Medfield, Norfolk County, Massachusetts, 53 years old.

+ 17 v. dau. **Sarah Metcalf**. Born on 10 September 1624 in Norwich. Baptized on 10 March 1624/5 in St. Benedict Parish when six months old. Died on 25 February 1671/2 in Dedham, 47 years old.

+ 18 vi. dau. **Elizabeth Metcalf**. Born on 20 September 1626 in Norwich. Baptized on 4 October 1626 in St. Benedict Parish when two weeks old. Died on 11 May 1711 in Reading, Middlesex County, Massachusetts, 84 years old.

+ 19 vii. dau. **Martha Metcalf**. Born in 1627/8 in St. Benedict Parish. Baptized on 27 March 1628 in St. Benedict Parish when an infant. Died on 26 December 1717 in Concord, Middlesex County, Massachusetts, 89 years old.

+ 20 viii. son **Dea. Thomas Metcalf**. Born on 27 December 1629 in Norwich. Baptized on 11 January 1629/30 in St. Edmund Parish, Norwich when two weeks old. Died on 16 November 1702 in Dedham, 72 years old.

21 ix. dau. **Anne Metcalf**. Born on 1 March 1631/2 in Norwich. Baptized on 4 March 1631/2 in St. Edmund Parish when three days old. Died in May 1632 in St. Edmund Parish, about two months old. Buried on 13 May 1632 in St. Edmund Parish.

+ 22 x. dau. **Jane Metcalf**. Born on 24 March 1632/3 in Norwich. Baptized on 29 March 1633 in St. Edmund Parish when five days old. Died on 24 October 1701 in Roxbury, Suffolk County, Massachusetts, 68 years old. m. Philip Walker

error

+ 23 xi. dau. **Rebecca Metcalf**. Born on 5 April 1635 in Norwich. Baptized on 12 April 1635 in St. Edmund Parish when seven days old. Died on 8 December 1667 in Dedham, 32 years old.

2nd Wife of Michael Metcalf: **Mary Sothy**, dau. of **Richard Sothy** and **Mary Bentley**. Born about 1599 in Saffron Walden, Essex, England. Died on 12 February 1672/3 in Roxbury, about 74 years old. Married Michael on 13 August 1645 in Dedham when about 46 years old (Michael was about 55 years old).

Married first **Thomas Pidge** (b. on 8 May 1575, of Newport, Essex, England; d. on 30 December 1643 in Roxbury), on 1 November 1619 in Saffron Walden when about 20 years old (Thomas was 44 years old). Issue: (i) dau. **Mary Pidge** (b. abt. 1622), (ii) dau. **Ann Pidge** (b. abt. 1624; bur. 1626), (iii) dau. **Sarah Pidge** (b. 1626), (iv) dau. **Hannah Pidge** (b. 1629), (v) son **Thomas Pidge** (b. 1631; bur. 1632), (vi) son **Thomas Pidge** (b. abt. 1635; d. 1660), (vii) son **John Pidge** (b. abt. 1640; d. 1691) and (viii) dau. **Martha Pidge** (b. 1642/3).

Exposition on Mary Sothy: Michael Metcalf married Mary Pigge on 13 August 1645 in Dedham.[1]

"[Michael] m. 2d widow Mary Pidge, of Roxbury, Aug. 12, 1645."[2]

"Pigg, Pidge, or Pigge, . . . Thomas of Roxbury, freem. 14 May 1634, wh. brot. [possibly Robert] from Eng. w. Mary, and sev. ch. had here Martha, bapt. 12 Mar. 1643, and he d. 30 Dec. foll. His will, pro. 12 Sept. 1644, gives Thomas, John, Hannah, Sarah, and Martha, propty. in R. and to d. Martha, w. I think of Nicholas Wood, his allotm. in Dedham. His wid. m. 13 Aug. 1645, Michael Metcalf."[3]

The will referred to above (from NEHGR, Vol. III, 78–79) follows:

> Thomas Pig.
>
> 14 (7) 1644 [in margin.]
>
> Be it knowne to all men that this is the will of *Thomas Pig*,[4] that he doth give to his sonne *Thomas* the house wth the home lott, 2 acres of fresh marsh, also my lott by the dead swamp, & all the land in the neck both upland & Marsh, & the 5 acres at the great lots end. He to pay his brother *John* ten pounds, 5 at 21 years of age, & and the other 5 a year after. To sonne *Thomas Pig* also the land in the Calues Pasture, paying his sister *Hany* [5] *Pigg* 5 pounds, 3 pounds a yeare after his mothers death and the other three pound the year after that, and for defect not paying this sixe pounds at these tymes appointed, the land to returne to her. To dau. *Saray*, dau. *Matheu* my Eight Acre Lott lyeing vppon *Pigs hill*, & I give To them also my last Division of ground. To dau. *Mary* my allotment in the thousand Acres lyeing at Dedham. Wife to haue all I haue so long as she liues to bring vp my children. After her death my children to have their portions as aforesaid.
>
> *Giles Payson. Robert Williams.*
>
> Testifyed before mr *Winthrop* Dep: Gov: & *Mr. Nowell* the (7) 12-1644.

"Pigg, Thomas [Pig. Church Record.], householder [dropsy and a fall which injured his kidneys. Church Record.], bur. Dec. 30, 1643."[6]

His surname appears to have been pronounced "Pidge."

"Pigg, Pidge, or Pigge, . . . Thomas, Dedham, s. of the preced. [Thomas], d. early in Sept. 1660, prob. never m. at least his br. John and sis. had his prop. Geneal. Reg. X. 180."[7] This is Thomas and Mary's elder son.

The will referred to above follows:

---

[1] Hanson, ed., *Vital Records of Dedham*, 435, 436.

[2] Harris, "Metcalf Family," *NEHGR, VI*, 171.

[3] Banks, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXX*, 313.

THIRD GENERATION

Issue of **Rev. Richard Metcalf** and **Mary —** (^{2} Rev. Richard Metcalf [no. 2], ^{1} **Rev. Leonard Metcalf** [no. 1]):

10. i. ^{3} **Rev. Leonard Metcalf**, son of Rev. Richard Metcalf and Mary —. Baptized on 15 August 1613 in Tatterford Parish, Norfolk, England. Died in November 1695 in Tatterford Parish. Buried on 23 November 1695 in Tatterford Parish.

Exposition on Rev. Leonard Metcalf: "1613 Leonard Metcalf son of Richard and Mary 15 August."[1]

"Metcalfe, Leonard. Matric. pens. from Corpus Christi, Easter, 1633; B. A. 1636–7; M. A. 1640. Ord. deacon (Norwich) Sept. 22, 1639; priest, Sept. 20, 1640."[2]

"1695 Leonard Metcalf, rector of Sherford, 23 November."[3]

---

[1] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 64, Baptisms from the Parish Registers of Tatterford.

[2] Venn, *Alumni Cantabrigienses, Volume III, Kaile—Ryves*, 179.

[3] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 64, Burials from the Parish Registers of Tatterford. A footnote says the Sherford is probably Shereford, Norfolk, not Sherford, Devon.

Wife of Rev. Leonard Metcalf: **Margaret —**.

Issue of Rev. Leonard Metcalf and Margaret —:

24 i. ^{4} son **Richard Metcalf**. Baptized on 9 November 1652 in Tatterford Parish.

11. ii. ^{3} **Richard Metcalf**, son of Rev. Richard Metcalf and Mary —. Baptized on 15 January 1614/5 in Tatterford Parish, Norfolk, England.

Exposition on Richard Metcalf: "1614 Richard Metcalf son of Richard and Mary 15 January [1614/5]."[1]

---

[1] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 64, Baptisms from the Parish Registers of Tatterford.

Wife of Richard Metcalf: **Alice —**.

Issue of Richard Metcalf and Alice —:

25 i. ^{4} dau. **Mary Metcalf**. Baptized on 23 August 1639 in Tatterford Parish.

Issue of **Michael Metcalf** and **Sarah Elwyn** (^{2} Michael Metcalf [no. 6], ^{1} **Rev. Leonard Metcalf** [no. 1]):

14. ii. ^{3} **Mary Metcalf**, dau. of Michael Metcalf and Sarah Elwyn. Born on 14 February 1618/9 in Norwich, Norfolk, England. Baptized on 17 February 1618/9 in St. Benedict Parish, Norwich when three days old. Died on 5 May 1676 in Dedham, Norfolk County, Massachusetts, 57 years old. Buried in Dedham.

Exposition on Mary Metcalf: Henry Wilson married Mary Metcalf on 24 November 1642 in Dedham. Mary died there on 5 May 1676, and Henry died there on 8 February 1688/9.[1]

"Metcalf, Mary of Norwich, Eng. [w. Henry Wilson], —, private record, from the Wilson Diary, now in the possession of Mrs. Lillian (Wilson) Bond."[2]

"Metcalf, Mary of Norwich, Eng., and Henry Wilson of Kent, Eng., —. Private record, from the Wilson Diary, now in the possession of Mrs. Lillian (Wilson) Bond."[3]

"Mary [daughter of Michael and Sarah], b. Feb. 14, 1618, m. Henry Wilson, Nov. 24th, 1642."[4]

"Mary, daughter of Michael Metcalf, baptized 17 February [1618/19]."[5]

"Mary, or Marcy, Metcalf was born Feb. 14, 1619 in Norfolk County, England—died May 5, 1676—mar. Henry Wilson on Nov. 24, 1642. Henry Wilson died Feb. 8, 1678 [*sic*]—both buried at Dedham, Mass."[6]

---

[1] Hanson, ed., *Vital Records of Dedham*, 336, 484.

[2] Foster, *Vital Records of Dover*, Births, 31.

[3] Foster, *Vital Records of Dover*, Marriages, 68.

[4] Harris, "Metcalf Family," *NEHGR, VI*, 173.

[5] Moriarty, "Metcalf: Additional Records," *NEHGR, LXXXVI*, 253.

[6] Metcalf, *A Study of Metcalfs*, 303.

Husband of Mary Metcalf: **Henry Wilson**. Born in Kent, England. Died on 8 February 1688/9 in Dedham. Buried in Dedham. Married Mary on 24 November 1642 in Dedham (Mary was 23 years old).

Exposition on Henry Wilson: "Wilson, Henry of Kent, Eng. [h. Mary (Metcalf)], —. Private record."[1]

"Wilson, Henry of Kent, Eng., and Mary Metcalf of Norwich, Eng., —. Private record."[2]

"Wilson, Henry, —. 1689, in Dedham. Private reocrd."[3]

---

[1] Foster, *Vital Records of Dover*, Births, 42.

[2] Foster, *Vital Records of Dover*, Marriages, 80.

[3] Foster, *Vital Records of Dover*, Deaths, 106.

Issue of Henry Wilson and Mary Metcalf:

+ 26 i. ^{4} son **Michael Wilson**. Born on 7 August 1644 in Dedham. Died on 31 May 1731 in Wrentham, Norfolk County, Massachusetts, 86 years old.

+ 27 ii. dau. **Sarah Wilson**. Born on 24 June 1650 in Dedham. Baptized on 22 January 1653/4 in Dedham when three years old. Died on 17 November 1700 in Wrentham, 50 years old.

28 iii. dau. **Mary Wilson**. Born on 7 November 1652 in Dedham. Baptized on 21 November 1652 in Dedham when two weeks old. Married **D. Hoit**, in Dedham.

+ 29 iv. dau. **Elizabeth Wilson**. Born on 4 January 1653/4 in Dedham. Died on 8 October 1710 in Dedham, 56 years old.

+ 30 v. son **Ephraim Wilson**. Born on 2 June 1656 in Dedham. Baptized in June 1656 in Dedham when an infant. Died on 20 February 1732/3 in Dedham, 76 years old.

15. iii. ^{3} **Michael Metcalf**, son of Michael Metcalf and Sarah Elwyn. Born on 29 August 1620 in Norwich, Norfolk, England. Baptized in St. Benedict Parish, Norwich. Died on 25 March 1654 in Dedham, Norfolk County, Massachusetts, 33 years old.

Exposition on Michael Metcalf: Michael Metcalf married Mary Fairbanks on 2 April 1644 in Dedham. He died there on 25 March 1654.[1]

"Michael [son of Michael and Sarah], b. Aug. 29, 1620, m. Mary, dau. of John Fairbanks. senr. April 2, 1644, d. in Dedham, Dec. 24 [*sic*], 1654."[2]

"Michael Metcalf, son of Michael Metcalf and Sarah Elwyn, was born Aug. 29, 1620 in Norwich, Norfolk, England—died Dec. 24 [*sic*], 1654 at Dedham. Mass.—mar. Mary Fairbanks, daughter of Jonathan Fairbanks, Sr. and Grace Smith, on Apr. 2, 1644. Mary Fairbanks was born Feb. 3, 1622—at Sowerby, Halifax Parish, Yorkshire, Eng.—she died Mar. 26, 1654 [*sic*] (there is a possible error in this date [true] since I show her as having a second husband, Christopher Smith [true]. One of these facts is in error [true].)"[3]

See also Savage.[4]

He had five children, all born in Dedham.[5]

+ 74 vi. son **Thomas Metcalf**. Born on 7 May 1671 in Dedham. Baptized on 21 May 1671 in Dedham when two weeks old. Died on 22 September 1704 in Dedham, 33 years old. Buried in Old Village Cemetery, Dedham.

75 vii. son **John Metcalf**. Born on 20 September 1675 in Dedham.

76 viii. dau. **Judith Metcalf**. Born on 25 November 1677 in Dedham. Died on 24 October 1682 in Dedham, four years old.

2nd Wife of Dea. Thomas Metcalf: **Ann Paine**. Married Thomas on 2 December 1679 in Rehoboth, Bristol County, Massachusetts (Thomas was 49 years old).

22. x. [3] **Jane Metcalf**, dau. of Michael Metcalf and Sarah Elwyn. Born on 24 March 1632/3 in Norwich, Norfolk, England. Baptized on 29 March 1633 in St. Edmund Parish, Norwich when five days old. Died on 24 October 1701 in Roxbury, Suffolk County, Massachusetts, 68 years old. Married twice.

Exposition on Jane Metcalf: "1633 Jane Metcalfe daughter of Michael and Sara 29 [*sic*] March."[1]

"1632 Jane Metcalfe daughter of Michaell and Susanna 29 March. [*All this entry is crossed out with a pen in a contemporary handwriting.*]."[2]

Jane Metcalf married Philip Walker in 1654 in Rehoboth, Massachusetts.[3] Jane's first two children were recorded (transcribed) as born in the middle of February 1655 and 1657. At the time the years would have been recorded Old Style, so now would be written February 1655/6 and 1657/8. Those births would indicate that Jane was married to Philip in late 1654 or, more likely, early 1655 (up to May) when she was 21 or 22 years old.

"Jane [daughter of Michael and Sarah], b. March 24, 1632, m. Samuel Walker, of Rehoboth."[4]

With respect to the statement above that Jane Metcalf married "Samuel" Walker, the Walker Memorial says:[5]

> In the Metcalf Genealogy, contributed by Dr. Luther M. Harris, of Jamaica Plain, to the Genealogical Register, 1852, 172 pp., there is an abstract of the will of Michael Metcalf, of Dedham, dated 15: 9, 1664. In it, he made this bequest: "To my daughter, Joane Walker, 40s." There were other chil., sons and daus. Joane was the 10th child, b. March 24, 1632, and m., the Genealogy states, Samuel (?) Walker, of Rehoboth. The will, however, does not give Mr. W.'s christian name. There is no Samuel, of so early a date, in any Old Colony Record, either town or county, and every Walker (except one since 1800,) who is mentioned in the Records of Rehoboth, Seekonk and Attleboro' (parts of the old township of Rehoboth,) and also in Bristol Co. Rec., has a place in the Genealogy of Philip Walker and his descendants. There is strong circumstantial proof, that there was no Samuel Walker in R. so early.
>
> May not the compiler of the Metcalf Genealogy have mistaken Samuel for Philip? Philip's wife's name was Jane. The dates also justify this theory. Besides, Philip had a son Michael. May not his name have been derived from the grandfather Michael? This is the only instance in which the name occurs among nearly 1900 Walkers, descendants from Philip, and as he had a son Samuel, it is probable, that tradition has confounded the names, and led the compiler of the Metcalf Genealogy into error.
>
> With no other proof of the existence of a Samuel Walker in Rehoboth, at this period, exept the Metcalf Genealogy, it is very much less probable, that "he died and left no sign," and no descendant, that that there was no such Samuel Walker.

Was Jane's first child Samuel named after Philip's father who no doubt died in England? The second child Sarah was likely named after Jane's mother, Sarah Elwyn.

"Walker, Jane, and John Polley, June 2, 1684."[6]

"Polley, Jane, wid. John, Oct. 24, 1701."[7]

"Joanne (Jane) Metcalf, dau. of Michael Metcalf and Sarah Elwyn, was born Mar. 24, 1632/3 in England—died 1703 [*sic*]—mar. Philip Walker—born Eng.—died Aug. 21, 1679—bur. at Seekonk [*sic*, part of Rehoboth], Mass. They were married ca 1654 in Mass. and their ten children were . . . "[8]

---

[1] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 64, Baptism of St. Edmund, Norwich, Norfolk. A footnote says 163 at the side of the record.

[2] Moriarty, "Metcalf," *NEHGR, LXXVIII*, 65, Burials f St. Edmund, Norwich, Norfolk. A footnote adds that ror for Sarah. So, obviously, Jane lived.

[3] William Montgomery Clemens, *American Marri* (Pompton Lakes, New Jersey: Biblio Co., 1926).

[4] Harris, "Metcalf Family," *NEHGR, VI*, 173.

[5] Walker, *Memorial of the Walkers*, 330.

[6] Essex Institute, *Vital Records of Roxbury . . . Vol II*,

[7] Essex Institute, *Vital Records of Roxbury . . . Vol II*,

[8] Metcalf, *A Study of Metcalfs*, 349.

1st Husband of Jane Metcalf: **Dea. Philip Walk** gland. Died in August 1679 in Rehoboth, Bristol chusetts. Buried on 21 August 1679 in Rehoboth in 1654/5 in Rehoboth.

Exposition on Dea. Philip Walker: Philip's life, known, is described in the Walker Memorial.[1]

"Walker, Dea. Philip, buried Aug. 21, 1679."[2]

"Walker, Deacon Philip, [buried] the 21st of Augu

Philip was in the list of freeman in Rehoboth a 1658 town record.[4]

"June 22, 1658 lots were drawn for the meadows north side of the town, in order as followeth, acco and estate: . . . 32. Philip Walker . . . "[5]

---

[1] Walker, *Memorial of the Walkers*, 117–121.

[2] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Deaths, 883.

[3] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Supplement, 904.

[4] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Supplement, 917.

[5] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Supplement, 914.

Issue of Dea. Philip Walker and Jane Metcalf:

+ 77 i. [4] son **Capt. Samuel Walker**. Born in Fe Rehoboth. Died on 12 August 1712 in Re old.

+ 78 ii. dau. **Sarah Walker**. Born on 16 February both. Died in July 1693 in Rehoboth, 35 ye 2 August 1693 in Rehoboth.

+ 79 iii. son **Philip Walker**. Born in March 166 Died on 17 February 1739/40 in Rehobo Buried in Seekonk Cemetery, Seekonk, Bri sachusetts.

80 iv. dau. **Elizabeth Walker**. Born in March 16 Died on 7 August 1664 in Rehoboth, two ye

81 v. dau. **Mary Walker**. Born in May 1663 in R 1 May 1694 in Rehoboth, about 31 years May 1694 in Rehoboth.

82 vi. dau. **Martha Walker**. Born about 1664/5 i

+ 83 vii. dau. **Elizabeth Walker**. Born on 1 April 1 Died on 28 June 1731 in Rehoboth, 65 year

84 viii. son **Michael Walker**. Born on 1 March 166 Died in February 1677/8 in Rehoboth, nine on 16 February 1677/8 in Rehoboth.

85 ix. dau. **Experience Walker**. Born in Octob both. Died on 10 November 1674 in Rehobo Buried on 10 November 1674 in Rehoboth.

+ 86 x. son **Ebenezer Walker**. Born on 15 Novem both. Died on 13 March 1717/8 in Rehoboth

2nd Husband of Jane Metcalf: **John Polley**. Bor England. Died on 2 April 1689 in Roxbury, 71 yea Jane on 2 June 1684 in Roxbury when 66 years ol years old).

Married first **Hannah Cowdrey**.

Married second **Susanna** — (d. in April 1664 in R

Married third **Mary** — (d. on 30 August 1666 in R

+ 158 iii. son **Samuel Metcalf**. Born on 20 January 1684/5 in Medfield. Died on 4 March 1740 in Medway, Norfolk County, Massachusetts, 55 years old.

159 iv. son **Elizabeth Metcalf**. Born on 31 July 1686 in Medfield.

160 v. son **Sgt. Jonathan Metcalf**. Born on 13 August 1690 in Medfield.

39. iv. ^{4} **Elizabeth Metcalf**, dau. of John Metcalf and Mary Chickering. Born about 1654 in Medfield, Norfolk County, Massachusetts. Died on 27 November 1735 in Medfield, about 81 years old.

Exposition on Elizabeth Metcalf: "Ellis, Elizebeth, wid. Joseph, Nov. 27, 1735."[1]

Jeanne (Whitney) Muse provides a birth date of about 1654 in Massachusetts and refers to William S. Tilden, *History of Town of Medfield, Mass, 1650-1886* (Boston: 1887).

"Elizabeth, born at Dedham [*sic*]—married 1695 or 1696 Joseph Ellice, died at Medfield Nov. 27, 1735."[2] She appears to have been born in Medfield since her father moved there from Dedham by 1652.

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Deaths, 209.

[2] Wheeler, *The Wheeler Family of Rutland, Mass.*, 21.

Husband of Elizabeth Metcalf: **Joseph Ellis**, son of **John Ellis** and **Joan —**. Born on 24 October 1662 in Medfield. Died on 31 August 1726 in Medfield, 63 years old. Married Elizabeth in 1695/6.

Married first **Lydia Lovell** (b. on 15 June 1665 in Medfield; d. on 11 June 1694 in Medfield), dau. of **Alexander Lovell** and **Lydia Alby**, on 23 November 1688 in Medfield when 26 years old (Lydia was 23 years old). Issue: (i) dau. **Lydia Ellis** (b. 1689), (ii) son **Joseph Ellis** (b. 1691) and (iii) son **John Ellis** (b. 1694).

Exposition on Joseph Ellis: "Ellise, Joseph, s. John and Joane, Oct. 24, 1662."[1]

"Ellice, Joseph and Lidia Lovell, Nov. 23, 1688."[2]

"Ellice, Joseph, h. Elizabeth, Aug. 31, 1726."[3]

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Births, 49.

[2] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Marriages, 136.

[3] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Deaths, 208.

Issue of Joseph Ellis and Elizabeth Metcalf:

161 i. ^{5} son **James Ellis**. Born on 3 May 1697 in Medfield.

162 ii. dau. **Hannah Ellis**. Born on 24 April 1699 in Medfield.

40. v. ^{4} **Joseph Metcalf**, son of John Metcalf and Mary Chickering. Born on 22 November 1658 in Medfield, Norfolk County, Massachusetts. Died on 18 December 1741 in Medfield, 83 years old. Married twice.

Exposition on Joseph Metcalf: "Medcalf, Joseph, s. John and Mary, Nov. 22, 1658."[1]

"Metcalf, Joseph and Sarah Bowers, Jan. 21, 1685/6."[2]

"Medcalf, Joseph and Hannah Fisher, Mar. 12, 1729–30."[3]

"Metcalfe, Joseph, h. Hannah, Dec. 18, 1741."[4]

"Joseph [son of John and Mary], b. in 1658, at Medfield. John [his father, had] removed to Medfield, where he had other children."[5]

Savage[6] gives his birth as 22 November 1658.

"Joseph, born at Medfield Nov. 22, 1658, married Jan. 21, 1685–6 Sarah Bowers."[7]

"Joseph Metcalf—born Nov. 22, 1658—no further data."[8]

E-mail from Stu Bloom, *sbloom@learningassociates.com*, on 13 February, 2000:

Howard,

In re your Joseph Metcalf.

Andrew N. Adams, "A Genealogical History of Henry Adams of Braintree, Mass., and His Descendants, also John Adams of Cambridge, Mass., 1632-1897" (Rutland, Vt., 1898), p. 312, says that this Joseph Metcalf married, as his second wife, Hannah (Adams) Fisher, daughter of Peter and Rachel (___) Adams and widow of John Fisher. Hannah was born in Medfield on 16 Jan 1655/56 [Medfield VR, 10] and married Fisher there on 6 Mar 1673/74 [Medfield VR, 111]; Fisher died there on 15 Oct 1627 [Medfield VR, 211]. Medfield VR, 223, shows a Joseph Metcalf dying in Medfield on 18 Dec 1741 and a Hannah Metcalf dying there on 1 Nov 1746. Adams also says that Joseph's first wife, Sarah Bowers, died in 1727.

Adams is a somewhat problematic source and cannot be relied on without supporting evidence.

Good luck on your ambitious project!

Stu Bloom

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Births, 71.

[2] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Marriages, 157.

[3] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Marriages, 157.

[4] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Deaths, 223.

[5] Harris, "Metcalf Family," *NEHGR*, *VI*, 173.

[6] Savage, *A Genealogical Dictionary . . . of New England, Vol. III*, 202.

[7] Wheeler, *The Wheeler Family of Rutland, Mass.*, 21.

[8] Metcalf, *A Study of Metcalfs*, 348.

1st Wife of Joseph Metcalf: **Sarah Bowers**, dau. of **John Bowers** and **Mary —**. Born on 29 September 1663 in Medfield. Died on 21 August 1727 in Medfield, 63 years old. Married Joseph on 21 January 1685/6 in Medfield when 22 years old (Joseph was 27 years old).

Exposition on Sarah Bowers: "Bowers, Sarah, d. John and Mary, Sept. 29, 1663."[1]

"Metcalf, Sarah, w. Joseph, Aug. 21, 1727."[2]

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Births, 21.

[2] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Deaths, 223.

Issue of Joseph Metcalf and Sarah Bowers:

+ 163 i. ^{5} dau. **Sarah Metcalf**. Born on 3 December 1686 in Medfield. Died in 1762, about 76 years old.

164 ii. dau. **Abigail Metcalf**. Born on 27 July 1694 in Medfield.

2nd Wife of Joseph Metcalf: **Hannah Adams**, dau. of **Peter Adams** and **Rachel —**. Born on 16 January 1655/6 in Medfield. Died on 1 November 1746 in Medfield, 90 years old. Married Joseph on 12 March 1729/30 in Medfield when 74 years old (Joseph was 71 years old).

Married first **John Fisher** (d. on 15 October 1727 in Medfield), on 6 March 1673/4 in Medfield when 18 years old. Issue: (i) son **Josiah Fisher** (b. 1692; d. 1781).

Exposition on Hannah Adams: "Metcalf, Hannah, wid., Nov. 1, 1746."[1]

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Deaths, 223.

41. vi. ^{4} **Experience Metcalf**, dau. of John Metcalf and Mary Chickering. Born on 16 October 1661 in Medfield, Norfolk County, Massachusetts. Died on 18 February 1730/1 in Medfield, 69 years old.

Exposition on Experience Metcalf: "Medcalf, Experience, d. John and Mary, Oct. 16, 1661."[1]

"Wheelor, Experience, wid. Isaac, Feb. 18, 1730–1."[2]

"Experience, born at Medfield, Oct. 16, 1661, married, probably in 1683, Isaac Wheeler, died [illegible] –1."[3]

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Recor*

[2] Woods, *Vital Re*

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Deaths, 241.

[2] Wheeler, *The Wheeler Family of Rutland, Mass.*, 1.

[3] Wheeler, *The Wheeler Family of Rutland, Mass.*, 12–17.

[4] Wheeler, *The Wheeler Family in America*, 499.

[5] Wheeler, *The Wheeler Family in America*, 499–500.

Issue of Isaac Wheeler and Experience Metcalf:

165 i. [5] son **Isaac Wheeler**. Born on 22 November 1684 in Lancaster, Worcester County, Massachusetts. Died on 26 November 1684 in Lancaster, four days old.

166 ii. dau. **Experience Wheeler**. Born and died on 22 November 1684 in Lancaster.

167 iii. son **John Wheeler**. Born on 24 July 1686 in Lancaster. Died young.

+ 168 iv. dau. **Mary Wheeler**. Born about 1692, possibly in Lancaster. Died on 25 April 1765 in Medfield, about 73 years old.

+ 169 v. son **Richard Wheeler**. Born about 1695, possibly in Lancaster. Died in 1749 in Worcester, Worcester County, Massachusetts, about 54 years old.

+ 170 vi. dau. **Experience Wheeler**. Born about 1697, possibly in Medfield. Died in 1774 in Medfield, about 77 years old.

+ 171 vii. son **Isaac Wheeler**. Born on 14 May 1698 in Medfield. Died on 22 September 1769 in Rutland, Worcester County, Massachusetts, 71 years old. Buried in Old Cemetery, Rutland.

+ 172 viii. son **Abraham Wheeler**. Born on 26 November 1700 in Medfield. Died on 20 October 1780 in Worcester, 79 years old. Buried in Worcester.

42. vii. [4] **Hannah Metcalf**, dau. of John Metcalf and Mary Chickering. Born on 13 October 1664 in Medfield, Norfolk County, Massachusetts. Died on 20 December 1719 in Medfield, 55 years old.

Exposition on Hannah Metcalf: "Medcalfe, Hanna, d. John and Mary, Oct. 13, 1664."[1]

"Medcalfe, Hanna and Elisha Bulline, May 31, 1683."[2]

"Bullen, Hannah, w. Elisha, Dec. 20, 1719."[3]

Savage[4] also gives her date of birth as 13 October 1664.

"Hannah, born at Medfield Oct. 13, 1664, married May 3 [*sic*], 1683 Elisha Bullen, died at Medfield Dec. 20, 1719."[5]

Jeanne (Whitney) Muse refers to William S. Tilden, *History of Town of Medfield, Mass. 1650-1886* (Boston: 1887), for Hannah's birth, marriage (to Elisha Bullin) and death.

"Hannah Metcalf—born Oct. 13, 1664—died Nov. 11, 1734 [*sic*]—mar. Elisha Bullin. This data is inaccurate or Elisha Bullin married two of these sisters???"[6] She did marry Elisha Bullin (and he did not marry anyone else) and the death date of 1734 is inaccurate.

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Births, 71.

[2] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Marriages, 157.

[3] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, 197.

[4] Savage, *A Genealogical Dictionary . . . of New England, Vol. III*, 202.

[5] Wheeler, *The Wheeler Family of Rutland, Mass.*, 21.

[6] Metcalf, *A Study of Metcalfs*, 348.

Husband of Hannah Metcalf: **Elisha Bullen**. Born about 1662. Died on 19 February 1735 in Medfield, about 73 years old. Married Hannah on 31 May 1683 in Medfield when about 21 years old (Hannah was 18 years old).

Exposition on Elisha Bullen: "Bullin, Elisha Sr., widr., Feb. 19, 1726–6."[1] This may not be the correct Elisha Bullen.

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Deaths, 198.

Issue of Elisha Bullen and Hannah Metcalf:

173 i. [5] son **Jonathan Bullen**. Born on 13 January 1694/5 in Medfield.

+ 174 ii. dau. **Hannah Bullen**. Born on 28 June 1697 in Medfield. Died on 16 November 1765 in Medfield, 68 years old.

+ 175 iii. dau. **Miriam Bullen**. Born on 23 August 1702 in Medfield. Died on 24 April 1727 in Medfield, 24 years old.

43. viii. [4] **Mary Metcalf**, dau. of John Metcalf and Mary Chickering. Born on 2 June 1668 in Medfield, Norfolk County, Massachusetts. Died on 17 February 1726/7 in Medfield, 58 years old.

Exposition on Mary Metcalf: "Medcalfe, Mary, d. John and Mary, June 2, 1668."[1]

"Medcalfe, Marie and Eleazer Ellice, Oct. 26, 1687."[2]

"Mary, born at Medfield June 2, 1668, married Oct. 26, 1687 Eleazor Ellice, died at Medfield Feb. 17 or 18, 1726–7."[3]

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Births, 71.

[2] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Marriages, 157.

[3] Wheeler, *The Wheeler Family of Rutland, Mass.*, 21.

Husband of Mary Metcalf: **Eleazar Ellis**, son of **John Ellis** and **Joan —**. Born on 24 April 1664 in Medfield. Died on 21 January 1731/2 in Medfield, 67 years old. Married Mary on 26 October 1687 in Medfield when 23 years old (Mary was 19 years old).

Exposition on Eleazar Ellis: "Eliazar, s. John and Joane, Apr. 24, 1664."[1]

"Ellice, Eliazar, widr., Jan. 21, 1731."[2]

---

[1] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Births, 46.

[2] Woods, *Vital Records of Medfield*, Deaths, 208.

Issue of Eleazar Ellis and Mary Metcalf:

176 i. [5] dau. **Mary Ellis**. Born on 29 November 1691 in Medfield.

177 ii. son **Eleazer Ellis**. Born on 9 May 1694 in Medfield.

178 iii. son **Samuel Ellis**. Born on 29 May 1697 in Medfield. Died on 7 September 1778 in Medfield, 81 years old. Married **Miriam Partridge** (b. on 9 March 1699/1700 in Medfield; d. on 27 March 1768 in Medfield), dau. of **Nathaniel Partridge** (son of **William Partridge** and **Sarah Price**) and **Lydia Wight** (dau. of **Ephraim Wight** and **Lydia Morse**), on 20 January 1734/5 in Medfield when 37 years old (Miriam was 34 years old).

+ 179 iv. son **David Ellis**. Born on 24 June 1702 in Medfield.

Issue of **Robert Onion** and **Sarah Metcalf** ([3] Sarah Metcalf [no. 17], [2] Michael Metcalf [no. 6], [1] Rev. Leonard Metcalf [no. 1]):

47. iv. [4] **Benjamin Onion**, son of Robert Onion and Sarah Metcalf. Born on 24 December 1659 in Dedham, Norfolk County, Massachusetts. Died on 24 March 1717/8 in Dedham, 58 years old.

Exposition on Benjamin Onion: Benjamin Onion, son of Robert and Sarah Onion, was born on 24 December 1659 in Dedham. He married Deborah Woodcock there on 24 May 1683. He died there on 24 March 1717/8.[1]

"Benjamin, ye Son of Robert & Sarah Onion, was borne the 24:10 mo., 1659."[2]

---

[1] Hanson, ed., *Vital Records of Dedham*, 157, 301, 441.

[2] Hill, *The Record of Births . . . in the Town of Dedham. Vols. 1 & 2.*, 7.

Wife of Benjamin Onion: **Deborah Woodcock**. Married Benjamin on 24 May 1683 in Dedham (Benjamin was 23 years old).

Issue of Benjamin Onion and Deborah Woodcock:

180 i. [5] dau. **Sarah Onion**. Born on 23 April 1684 in Dedham.

+ 181 ii. son **Dea. Jonathan Onion**. Born on 7 March 1686/7 in Dedham. Died on 3 August 1758 in Dedham, 71 years old. Buried on 5 August 1758 in Dedham.

182 iii. dau. **Mary Onion**. Born on 29 December 1690 in Dedham.

261 viii. son **Jacob Perrin**. Born on 24 August 1692 in Rehoboth. Died young.

✓ **79.** iii. [4] **Philip Walker**, son of Dea. Philip Walker and Jane Metcalf. Born in March 1661/2 in Rehoboth, Bristol County, Massachusetts. Died on 17 February 1739/40 in Rehoboth, 77 years old. Buried in Seekonk Cemetery, Seekonk, Bristol County, Massachusetts. Married twice.

Exposition on Philip Walker: "Walker, Philip, of Philip, middle of March, 1661–2."[1]

"Walker, Philip and Mary Bowen, Dec. 31, 1687."[2]

"Walker, Philip, Feb. 17, 1739–40."[3]

"Philip, b. March, 1661, (1661–2?) d. Feb. 17, 1739–40, in 78th yr. (Inscription on tombstone.) He m. —ember, 1689 [*sic*], Mary Bowen, dau. of Richard probably. She was buried May 22, 1694. He m. 2dly, Sarah, who d. Feb. 6, 1739, in 68th yr. (Inscription on tombstone.) He united with the Ch. April 25, 1697. Inventory £1750. He had 10 chil. On his grave stone in Seekonk Cemetery, is the epitaph, 'Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord.'"[4]

"Philip Walker—born Mar. 1661—died Feb. 17, 1739—mar. (1st) Mary Bowers [*sic*]—next to a Sarah."[5]

A baptism of a daughter named Elizabeth is recorded, but the daughter cannot be placed within Philip's family: "Walker, Elizabeth, of Philip, Aug. 16, 1702."[6]

---

[1] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Births, 761.

[2] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Marriages, 372.

[3] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Deaths, 883.

[4] Walker, *Memorial of the Walkers*, 122.

[5] Metcalf, *A Study of Metcalfs*, 349.

[6] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island . . . Vol.IX. Seekonk*, Newman Congregational Church—Baptisms, 524.

✓ *1st Wife of Philip Walker:* **Mary Bowen**, dau. of **Richard Bowen** and **Esther Sutton**. Born on 5 October 1666 in Rehoboth. Died on 8 May 1694 in Rehoboth, 27 years old. Buried on 11 May 1694 in Rehoboth. Married Philip on 31 December 1687 in Rehoboth when 21 years old (Philip was 25 years old).

Exposition on Mary Bowen: "Bowen, Mary, of Richard, Jr., Oct. 5, 1666."[1]

"Walker, Mary, wife of Philip, buried May 8, 1694."[2]

---

[1] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Births, 545.

[2] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Deaths, 883.

Issue of Philip Walker and Mary Bowen:

✓ 262 i. [5] dau. **Esther Walker**. Born on 21 October 1688 in Rehoboth. Baptized on 4 July 1697 in Newman Church, Rehoboth when eight years old. (m. Grace Irvill)

+ 263 ii. son **James Walker**. Born on 13 September 1690 in Rehoboth. Baptized on 4 July 1697 in Newman Church when six years old. Died on 28 November 1747 in Rehoboth, 57 years old.

+ 264 iii. son **Capt. Philip Walker**. Born on 13 August 1693 in Rehoboth. Baptized on 4 July 1697 in Newman Church when three years old. Died on 5 November 1742, 49 years old.

2nd Wife of Philip Walker: **Sarah —**. Born in 1671/2. Died on 6 February 1738/9 in Rehoboth, 67 years old. Married Philip about 1695, possibly in Rehoboth (Philip was about 33 years old).

Exposition on Sarah —: "Walker, Sarah, wife of Philip, Feb. 6, 1738–9."[1]

---

[1] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Deaths, 883.

Issue of Philip Walker and Sarah —:

+ 265 i. [5] dau. **Sarah Walker**. Born on 8 January 1695/6 in Rehoboth.

+ 266 ii. dau. **Mary Walker**. Born on 19 March 1
both. Baptized on 31 March 1700 in Newı
twelve days old.

+ 267 iii. dau. **Jane Walker**. Born on 21 March 17
Baptized on 29 March 1702 in Newman C
days old.

+ 268 iv. son **Dea. Nathaniel Walker**. Born on 31
Rehoboth. Baptized on 5 February 17
Church when five days old. Died on 20 A
both, 79 years old.

+ 269 v. son **Daniel Walker**. Born on 10 October
Baptized on 13 October 1706 in Newm
three days old. Died in Clarendon, Rut
mont.

+ 270 vi. son **Stephen Walker**. Born on 7 August 1

83. vii. [4] **Elizabeth Walker**, dau. of Dea. Phi
Jane Metcalf. Born on 1 April 1666 in Rehoboth,
Massachusetts. Died on 28 June 1731 in Rehobot

Exposition on Elizabeth Walker: "Walker, Elizabe
ginning of April, 1666."[1]

"Walker, Elizabeth and Henry Sweet, March 29,

"Sweet, Elizabeth, wid., June 28, 1731."[3]

"Elizabeth, b. April 1, 1666, m. March 31 [*sic*, 2
Sweet, of Swanzey [*sic*, Swansea, Bristol Cou
setts], who d. Dec. 8, 1704. Inventory £100."[4]

"Elizabeth Walker—born Apr. 1, 1666—mar. H
Mar. 31 [*sic*], 1687."[5]

---

[1] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Births, 761.

[2] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, Marriages, 372.

[3] Essex Institute, *Vital Records of Attleborough*, Deat

[4] Walker, *Memorial of the Walkers*, 123.

[5] Metcalf, *A Study of Metcalfs*, 349.

Husband of Elizabeth Walker: **Henry Sweet**. Di
ber 1704 in Attleboro, Bristol County, Massach
Elizabeth on 29 March 1687 in Rehoboth (El
years old).

Exposition on Henry Sweet: "Sweet, Henry, h. El
1704."[1]

---

[1] Essex Institute, *Vital Records of Attleborough*, Deat

Issue of Henry Sweet and Elizabeth Walker:

271 i. [5] son **John Sweet**. Born on 3 October
Died in infancy.

+ 272 ii. son **John Sweet**. Born on 23 October
Died on 27 September 1754 in Attleboro,

273 iii. son **Philip Sweet**. Born on 28 January 1
Died on 14 February 1697/8 in Attleboro,

274 iv. son **Michael Sweet**. Born on 14 January
tleboro. Died on 5 May 1700 in Attleboro,

+ 275 v. son **Thomas Sweet**. Born on 14 March 1
Died on 1 December 1766 in Attleboro, 64
in Old Kirk Yard Cemetery, Attleboro.

276 vi. dau. **Dorothy Sweet**. Born on 22 Januar
boro. Married **Joseph Smith** (of Easto
Massachusetts), on 4 March 1734/5 in A
years old.

86. x. [4] **Ebenezer Walker**, son of Dea. Philip W
Metcalf. Born on 15 November 1676 in Rehoboth,
Massachusetts. Died on 13 March 1717/8 in Reh
old. Married twice.

Exposition on Ebenezer Walker: "Walker, Ebene
middle of Nov., 1676."[1]

"Waler, Ebinezer, the son of Phillip Walker, [born]
vember, 1676."[2]

(Copier deleted part of page)

Clayton Metcalf attempted to trace all the Metcalf(e)s in the US. His book undoubtedly must be excellent for some lines & at least 80% accurate, especially US lines, some of them poor whites in Alabama. It seems that he bit off more than he could chew but it is just possible our remote ancestors are mentioned here. Mr Metcalf seems to have copied much of this from the Metcalf Genealogy, in other pages in this section.

Others, writing for NEHGR, say the Tatterford area where our Rev. Leonard M. came from is so thickly populated with Metcalfs, they are like an interwoven clan, with many Michaels & Leonards among them. One clue is that a family had to be fairly wealthy to pay for the education of a minister!

These men said to be progenitors of "our" Rev. Leonard Metcalf b 1541 and his son Michael b 1590. →

Leonard Metcalf of Bear Park? m. ( ) Thursby	Brian Metcalf 3rd son of Beare Park Wensleydale (Merrick) m. Johanna ( ) of Boughton	Capt James M. b 1389 of Nappa, Wensleydale fought 1415 for K. Henry V. m. ( ) Gelsome of Irby	John Metcalf m. Alicia Gibson

(Bear Park was confiscated by K Henry VIII in 1543 during taking over of monasteries)

As far as I can tell, careful genealogists recognize that Michael Metcalf must descend from the Nappa, Wensleydale family but can find no proof of the exact succession. Gospatrick & Dolfin were real people, but proving this descent from them is probably impossible

Crests

Coats Of Arms

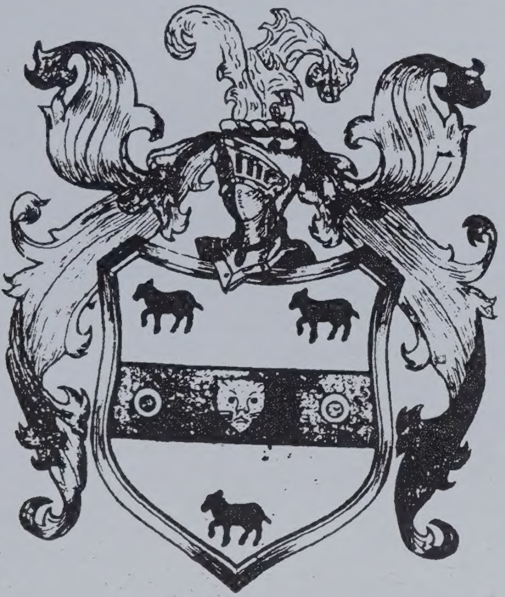
One's study of heraldry will show that a specific crest or a coat-of-arms was given to a person . . for his own family's use. The eldest male heir was entitled to use this, whereas the other sons used similar crests which had to be "differentiated" from that of the "heir." Even illegitimate sons were permitted to wear the colors of their fathers, but they were so marked as to show their illegitimacy.

I have seen several different crests, or coats of arms, that were worn or claimed by different Metcalf families. All of those that I have seen were similar in nature, with some slightly different variations.

Even if these are different, it does not mean that all of these were not correct for that particular Metcalf line. On the next few pages you will find two different coats of arms, plus some heraldic explanations.

The first coat of arms shown is described as follows: "Argent on a fesse vert between three calves, passant sable; a leopard's face between two annulets."

To better understand what all of this means you should look through the heraldic terms which is in this section. This coat of arms shown first is one I received from a company who makes a living selling these things. Undoubtedly it did belong to "some" Metcalf family . . . but whose? Any of us could "make-up" one which perhaps is as authentic as this one.



Metcalf

A Story of The Metcalfs CS 71 M588 (1972)
Andrews & Smiths by Clayton G. Metcalf

This next crest was that of a Richard Metcalf family, among the earlier settlers of Virginia. He came to America from Bristol, England and made his home near Richmond, Va.

This one shows three black calves on a silver shield, and does not show the leopard's head or annulets. Note the border about this is quite different from the first crest, but the three black calves are still "walking." This would indicate that the basic Metcalfe crest, or coat-of-arms, had the three black calves walking . . . to the left.

From all material found it would appear that "METCALFE" is the pre-dominant spelling of the name . . . and that Metcalf, Medcalf, and Madcalf . . . . are merely continuances of the earlier deviations of the name. The motto for the family seems to have been . . . ." CONQUIESCO."

The following terms are extracted from materials sent to me in the process of accumulating Metcalf data. For this reason I am not sure of the source and am not attempting to take credit away from anyone.

1. *MEDCALF*—Coat of Arm (York)
   Gules a cross patence vair between four martlets argent.
2. *METCALF*—Coat of Arms (Visitation-London-1568-Thomas Metcalf-Citizens and Goldsmith of London).
   Argent on a fess vert between three calves passant sable; a leopard's face between two annulets . . or . . CREST—a demi-sea calf purfled . .
3. *METCALFE*—(Murton & Seatonville, County Northumberland)
   Per fesse or/and sable in chief two calves and in base a dove volant counterchanged.
4. *METCALF*—(Fern Hill, County Berks Bart)
   Argent on a fesse wavy gules between three calves passant sable; a sword fesseways, point to the sinister proper pommel and hilt or; CREST—a talbot sejant sable; the dexter paw supporting an escutcheon or, charged with a

are from the same family group.

One contention as to the origin of the Metcalf name is based on the theory that it evolved from two old Middle English words—"Mete-corn, and mete-cu." Mete-corn was the corn used for food, differing from that which was used for planting and brewing. Mete-cu was a cow that was to be butchered for the table. Thus Metecalf may have been a person known for fattening young calves for the table.

There is a small mountain with three peaks, in a section of Craven, about 12 mi south east of Dent. In early English days it was called the "Three Calves," but it is now known as the Pennegent Hills. Craven is a part of Yorkshire County which was heavily populated by the Metcalf family during the 11th, 12th, and 13th centuries.

This land was a portion of the estates given to the man alleged to be the progenitor of the Metcalfs, by King Canute after the Danish invasion about 1016 A.D. This man was known as Arkefrith (Arkelfrith) (Askfrith) (Arkyll). As the time progressed his descendants became known as the people of Calf Mountain. When the family enlarged, the heirs then inherited portions of Calf Mountain and one of these descendants . . . . became known as Adam de Medecalfe (which was to say . . Adam of half of Calf Mountain). Some say that this meant Adam, of the middle calf, of or the middle hill of Calf Mountain. In time this name was softened and shortened to Metcalf(e) This Adam was the 12th in descent from the Dane, Arkefrith and historically was said to have been mortally wounded in hand-to-hand combat by Richard Steynebrigge in 1278.

Is it more than co-incidental that the first man to bear the Metcalf name was an . . . . ADAM . . . . like first man? It is no wonder that it is most difficult to trace the Metcalf family in this country. In early times there were several Adams, Thomases, Richards, Johns, and Jameses.

Still another historian seems to think the name came from "meadowcalf." Those holding to this theory say that the name was given to the people who lived near, or at a place where cattle were kept. There are also some who think that Madcalfe was associated in some way with a mad calf or crazy cow.

Perhaps the most logical and easiest one to accept is the descendancy from the Danish Warrior, who came to England with King Canute in 1016. His name was Arkefrith. When King Canute and his forces conquered England, he rewarded many of his battle leaders by giving them lands and estates to compensate them for their worth to him by their military accomplishments.

It was by this means that Arkefrith gained possession of lands in Dent, Sedburg, and Askrigg. These places can still be found on the maps of Yorkshire. Some of the Metcalfe families claim to be able to show their direct descent from Arkefrith, but at this time there a few "missing links" to preclude my doing so.

Arkefrith was succeeded by his son: Arkell, Lord of Dent who succeeded by his son, Gospatrick—who was succeeded by his son, Dolphin; next Richard; then Adam (1252); next came Adam (1278)—called Medecalfe. The next Adam was Medecalfe of Baynbrigge; next was Adam, Medecalfe of Thornton Rust; then followed by Richard Metcalf of Baynbrigge, then Thomas Metcalf, followed by John Metcalf and Captain James Metcalf of Nappa.

During my research I have been able to get some limited data on some of the older English lines, which I will attempt to pass on. I somewhat doubt the accuracy of all of this since it was passed from one person to another, and I have found some serious discrepancies in ages, which would preclude some as being children of their purported parents.

I shall also attempt to cover every known Metcalf(e) family as a group — to the extent of my knowledge — covering the larger families as completely as I can (dependant upon data that I have been able to obtain). You will find some of the members, "untraced" because of the inability to uncover the desired and needed data.

hand issuing from clouds on the sinister, holding a pennon all proper.
MOTTO ... CONQUIESTO .... I Conquer.

5. METCALFE–(Nappa Hall, County York–descended from Thos. Metcalfe of Nappa, Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster–1483)
Angent .. three calves passant sable.

6. METCALFE–(Northallerton, County York, branch of Metcalfe family of Nappa)
Argent three calves, passant sable, a canton gules for difference. CREST—A satyr affronte proper with a girdle of oak leaves around his loins vert, holding in the dexter hand over the right shoulder, a spiked club or morning star ..

7. METCALFE–(Epping, Essex–descended from Metcalfe of Nappa)
Argent three calves passant sable in chief of martlet gules for difference.

8. METCALFE–(1632–James Metcalfe, Doctor of Physics, whose wife was Elizabeth Metcalfe of County York.
Argent three calves passant sable in chief of martlet gules for difference.

8. METCALFE–(1632–James Metcalf, Doctor of Physics, whose wife was Elizabeth Metcalfe of County York.
Argent three calves passant sable each holding in the mouth a trefoil slipped vert.

From the aforementioned Coats-of-arms, it can be seen that most of the family coats included the ...... Three calves passant sable .. with variations.

So as to better understand what some of the terms mean that are used to describe these, several of these will be explained.

****

GULES .. one of the tinctures representing red.
CROSS PATENCE .. having narrow limbs, with expanding extremities terminating in fleur-de-lis.
VAIR ... one of the furs included under tinctures. There are eight furs of which vair is one. Tinctures include metals, furs and colors. The bells placed .. point to point and base to base are of dis-similar tinctures and are always shown argent (white) and azure (unless otherwise specified).
MARTLET ... a fabulous bird resembling a martin without legs, but with two tufts of feathers. This charge denotes the fourth son.
ARGENT ... represents the color white or silver.
FESS ... an honorable ordinary representing a broad band crossing the shield horizontally one third the width of the shield.
VERT .. represents the color green.
PASSANT .. descriptive of beast walking with head to the left and paw raised.
SABLE .. represents the color black.
ANNULET .. represents a ring; a cadency denoting the fifth son–Or denotes the color gold or yellow. It is one of the two metals included in the tinctures.
PURFLED .. means trimmed or garnished, applied to rims or armour when of gold.
CHIEF .. an ordinary occupying the upper third of the shield.

VOLANT .. means flying
COUNTERCHANGED .. represents an alternate changing of metals and colors.
WAVY ... formed like waves, applied to a partition line.
FESSEWAYS .. placed side by side lengthwise (charge normally would be upright).
SINISTER ... left hand side of the shield (right of spectator).
PROPER .. refers to the natural color of any charge.
POMMEL .. the rounded knob of a sword.
TALBOT .. a hunting dog, resembling a lion as regards the head.
SEJANT .. applies to an animal in sitting position with head in profile.
DEXTER .. the right hand side (left of spectator).
ESCUTCHEON .. a heraldic shield used in war and on which arms were borne. The marks of honour were shown on the surface of shield.
CHARGED ... bearing the emblems of heraldry.
PENNON ... an oblong flag carried on a spear.
CANTON .. a square placed on the dexter side of the shield, occupying one-ninth part of the entire field.
DIFFERENCES ... additions to the Coat of Arms to distinguish different branches of the family.
SATYR .. a fabulous animal, half-man and half goat.
AFFRONTE .. full-faced as when two greyhounds are thus placed.
STAR .. an ensign of knightly rank.
TREFOIL .. a three lobed leaf, usually borne with the stalk slipped.
SLIPPED .. stems or slips of plants when irregularly torn off, are termed "slipped."

These are not all of the terms used in the study of heraldry, but will explain some of the terminology used in the descriptions of the various crests and coats of arms of the forementioned Metcalf lines.

mitted to the Bar on Mar. 28, 1626; was J.P.; died intestate 1671; mar. (1st) to Margaret Hicks, dau. of William Hicks, a citizen of London. They had one daughter: (i) name not known. James Metcalf next married (2nd) Anne Coleby, a dau. of John Coleby of Bowbridge Hall. They had a dau.: (ii) Joan. (B) Scroops Metcalf—was a Major in the Army of King Charles I and died on Sept. 13, 1645 at Oxford as a result of injuries received at Henley upon the Thames. (C) Thomas Metcalf—born about 1614—died ca 1684—mar. (1st) Frances Burdette of Burthwayt, County Ebor. They had one dau.: (i) name not known—died young. He next mar. (2nd) to Grace, dau. of Robert Rockley of Rockley/Rokely on Aug. 5, 1654. (D) Henry Metcalf—born ca 1620—buried Nov. 12, 1705 at Askrigg. His Will, dated Sept. 19, 1697 was probated in York on Feb. 27, 1705/6. He mar. Mary Guilliams, dau. of Sir Guilliams of Donacaster about 1685. She was buried at Askrigg on Oct. 7, 1785. Their children were: (i) Thomas Metcalf—born ca 1687—admitted to the Inner Temple on Oct. 10, 1704; buried at Askrigg on Apr. 25, 1756; was a member of Parliament. His Will was dated Oct. 19, 1754, and after his death Nappa Hall went to the Weddell family—the connection is not known, if any. (ii) Henry Metcalf—born ca 1688—buried at Nappa on Feb. 11, 1742/3. (E), (F), (G), (H), (J)—five daus. of Sir Thomas Metcalf and Elizabeth Slingsby—names not known.

(ii) Humphrey Metcalf, son of Sir James Metcalf and Margaret Metcalf.

(iii) Edward Metcalf, son of Sir James Metcalf and Margaret Bigot Metcalf—mar. Ann Clifton, and made their home at Morton.

(iv) Oswald Metcalf, son of Sir James Metcalf and Margaret Bigot Metcalf—lived at Hornby; mar. (1st) a dau. of William Parkinson; next (2nd) Mary Meynell, dau. of Roger Meynell of North Kilvington.

(v) Robert Metcalf, son of Sir James Metcalf and Margaret Bigot Metcalf.

This Metcalf family has been called the Metcalfs of Nappa and are connected directly with the Metcalf family of Northallerton ... next included in this section.

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

THE METCALFS OF NORTHALLERTON

This branch of the Metcalf family is descended from Thomas Metcalf, Chancellor of Lancaster, the fourth son of Captain James Metcalf of Nappa, through Ottiwell Metcalf, son of Francis Metcalf. This Ottiwell Metcalf is number (6)-(A)-(i) in previous section ......

James Metcalf, son of the above mentioned Ottiwell Metcalf had two sons:

1. Ottiwell Metcalf, son of James Metcalf of Swinethwaite was probably born about 1514 ... no further data on his line.

2. George Metcalf, son of James Metcalf of Swinethwaite, of Hood Grange, was born about 1516. His Will, dated Mar. 27, was probated in York on June 13, 1571. He married Elizabeth Bankes, whose Will of Nov. 13, 1580 was probated in York on Jun. 10, 1581. It is the opinion of the writer that most of the Metcalfs in the Southern part of the United States are descended from this branch of the Metcalf family. Note the preponderance of the names in this line that recur in the families in southern U.S.A. The children of George Metcalf and wife ... were:

A. Gilbert Metcalf ... of Hood Grange ... no further data.

B. John Metcalf ... untraced ....

C. Richard Metcalf of Northallerton, son of George Metcalf and Elizabeth Bankes, died about 1816. He married Margaret, or Ann, Wilson, dau. of Roger Wilson of Danby-Wiske of County Ebor. Their children were: (i) George Metcalf—died ca 1642. His Will of May 28, 1642 was probated in York on May 14, 1647, specifying that he should be buried in Northallerton. He was married to Elizabeth Talbot of Knaton, County Ebor. Their children were: (a) William Metcalf—born ca 1635—mar. Anne Marwood, dau. of Sir George Marwood of Little Busby, in County Ebor on May 21, 1657. On Sept. 13, 1665 his age was given as being 30 yrs. old. William Metcalf died Jan. 28, 1698 and was buried at Northallerton. His children by Anne Marwood were: (1) Thomas Metcalf—born ca 1661—was four years old on Sept. 13, 1665. He first married Lady Faith Milbanke, widow of Sir Mark Milbanke, and the dau. of Thomas Acelome of Bonwick, County York. She died in 1689 at the age of 33 ... without issue. Thomas Metcalf was next married to Anne Greene of Liveredge Hall, in the Parish of Birstall, County York. She was the dau. of John Greene, the eldest son of John Greene, Lord of the Moeity of the Manor of Liveredge. They were married on April 18, 1699. Anne Greene had first married a cousin, William Greene who died in 1687. Thomas Metcalf died about April 7, 1716 and was buried at St. Olave's, York. There were seven known children born to Thomas Metcalf and Anne Greene: (A) William Metcalf of Northallerton and Sand Hutton, mar. Katherine Darley, of Bishop's. Wilton, County York. (B) George Metcalf—died as an infant. (C) John Metcalf of Scarborough—died about 1760—was married and left an only son: (i) John Metcalf—died unmarried in Jamaica in the lifetime of his mother; (D) Anne Metcalf—mar. Waring Ashby of Quenby Hall, near Tilton, County Leicester; (E) Henrietta Maria Anna Metcalf—died unmarried; (F) Frances Metcalf—died as an infant; (G) Thomas Metcalf—son of Thomas Metcalf and Anne Greene, was born at Sand Hutton in 1706. He was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he received his M.A. Degree. He served as Vicar of St. Margaret's, at Leicester; Rector of Marborough; Vicar of Kirkby, Overblow, County York. This Thomas Metcalf—mar. Anne Smelt, dau. of William Smelt of Kirkby, Fleetham and Leases, by Bedale. He served as a Member of Parliament for Northallerton from 1740-1745; and as Receiver General of Revenues in the Island of Barbados. This Reverend Thomas Metcalf and wife, Anne Smelt, were the parents of ten children. He died in 1774 at the age of 68 yrs. and was buried at Stokesley. Their children were: (i) William Metcalf of Northallerton and Little Busby. He inherited Little Busby from a cousin, Jane Marwood Turner. In order for him to comply with the terms of her Will in 1765, he had to assume the name of Marwood and accept the arms thereof. Thus he had to surrender his claim to the Metcalf Estates in Northallerton. William Metcalf married Mary Coulton, dau. of Christopher Coulton of Walcot, County Lincoln, and Beverly, in County York. He died without issue on Feb. 3, 1809. (ii) Thomas Metcalf, born at Skeffington Hall on Feb. 5,

Some Metcalfs In Early British History

Perhaps a good starting place to endeavor to trace the Metcalf family in England would be with Captain James Metcalf, who participated in the famous Battle at Agincourt, under King Henry V in 1415. Actually I have received bits of information on this from several sources in the course of the past decade or so . . . but there are a few slight discrepancies insofar as dates, etc. But I have endeavored to try to correct any obvious ones in order that the final results be as accurate as possible.

James Metcalf of Nappa, in Wensleydale, was the son of John Metcalf and Alice Gibson, daughter of Lord Gibson of Ireby Hall in Lancaster. He was born in 1389 and married a Gelsone of Ireby. In 1422 he is said to have acquired Nappa Hall from Sir Richard Scrofe/Scrope, Lord of Nappa Hall. Later one, Lady Margaret, widow of Lord Richard Scrofe made a claim against the Manor, but in 1472 she released her claim to the property.

Captain James Metcalf founded and endowed the Chantry of St. Anne in the Church of St. Oswald at Askrigg. Here it was required that daily Mass was said, and prayers offered for the good of the King and Queen, and the Metcalf family . . . both in this life and in that to come.

The children of James Metcalf, and wife, were:

1. Brian (Bryan) Metcalf, third son of Captain James Metcalf, married Johanna of Boughton. Their sons were: (A) Richard Metcalf; (B) Leonard Metcalf; (C) Nicholas Metcalf; (D) Roger Metcalf. Leonard married a Thursby and left children: (i) Leonard Metcalf; (ii) Vincent Metcalf; (iii) Godfrey Metcalf; (iv) Ambrose Metcalf.

The above Bryan Metcalf of Beare Park, Wensleydale, was attributed to be the Bryan of Beare, Champion in the story of "Felon Sow of Rokeby", according to *Whittaker's History* and *Sir Walter Scott's Rokeby*. Beare Park, Marrich, in Wensleydale was a residence of some of the Metcalfs until it was confiscated in 1543 under Henry VIII's suppression of Monasteries. Many of the Metcalfs in the United States are directly descended from this Bryan, or Brian Metcalf . . . through his son, Leonard Metcalf. The family of Michael Metcalf, the Dornix Weaver, are thus descended. Data on this family will be covered in a section of this history.

2. Reginald Metcalf, son of Captain James Metcalf, was reported as having married a Thornton, of Thornton Rust. No more is known about them.

3. Joan Metcalf, daughter of Captain James Metcalf, married Marmaduke, Constable of Cliff.

4. Cicely Metcalf, daughter of Captain James Metcalf, died in 1502. She was Prioress of Marrich Abbey, in Iradale, Priory of St. Andrew, in Marrich.

5. Myles (Miles) Metcalf, son of Captain James Metcalf, was a member of Parliament from York in 1478. Because of his adherence to the House of York, and King Richard III, Myles Metcalf was expressly excepted from the pardons which were granted in 1485 by King Henry VII. Ultimately he did receive a pardon and was restored to office. Myles Metcalf died on February 25, 149 and was buried in the Minster of York. A brass tablet has this inscribed:

"+ Hic jacet Mils Metcalf, quondum recordator istius civitatis, ac etiam sinus justiciarius dom, regis apud Lancaster, qui obiit XXV die mensis Feb ruarii, ann Dom. 1494. Cujus anime propitietus Deus. Amen."

Those members of the Metcalf family were zealous holders of the Catholic faith, which was the predominant religion in England in those days.

One account gives the name of the wife of Myles Metcalf as being . . . . Matilda. Their children were: (A) James Metcalf—mar. Anne Mountford, dau. of Thomas Mountford of Hackforth; (B) Richard Metcalf—named in his father's Will; (C) Katherine Metcalf—named in both parent's Wills: (D) Joan Metcalf; (E) Edmund Metcalf—eldest son of Myles Metcalf. He was born about 1420. His wife's name was Katherine.

6. Thomas Metcalf, fourth son of Captain James Metcalf was the Chancellor of the Kingdom under King Edward IV and Richard III. Thomas, like his brother Myles, was excluded from the pardon list of King Henry VII, but later on was restored to office.

Leland's Chronicles described this Thomas Metcalf as a "Great officer, a steward, survier, or recyver of landes whereby he waxed riche, and did builde and purchace. He made additions to Nappay Hall, in which two toures be very fair, besides other logginges; and that Knappey and other places thereabout be able to make a three hundred men in very knowen consanquinities of the Metecalfes."

This Thomas Metcalf was born about 1424—died about 1503—married Eliz. de Hertlington, dau. and co-heir of William de Hertlington, Craven. They had two known children: (A) Francis Metcalf— mar. Joane Seyton, dau. and co-heir of Everard Seyton, of Maidwell, County Northampton. He became a lunatic in 1507. Their children were: (i) Ottiwell Metcalf of Swinethwaite, Wensleydale; (ii) Cicely Metcalf—mar. William Burgh; (iii) Joane Metcalf—mar. Christopher Conyers of Marske. (B) Sir James Metcalf—born about 1460—died Sept. 20, 1539—mar. Margaret Bigot, co-heir of Thomas Bigot of Clotherham. She died Feb. 3, 1530. James Metcalf was knighted by the King of England in 1528. It was said that Sir James Metcalf had nine children, but the names of four daughters are not known. Most probably they died in infancy, or very young.

The children of Sir James Metcalf and Margaret Bigot were:

(i) Sir Christopher Metcalf—born Aug. 1, 1513—died May 9, 1574—mar. to Elizabeth Clifford, dau. of Henry Clifford, Earl of Cumberland about 1550. Sir Christopher Metcalf of Nappa, was High Sherriff 1555. Their children were: (a) James Metcalf of Nappa—born ca 1551—died May 8, 1580—mar. Jeane Saville, dau. of John Saville of Weston or Stanley, County Ebor. The only known child of this union was: (1) Sir Thomas Metcalf—born Dec. 4, 1579—died Jul. 1655; mar. Elizabeth Slingsby, dau. of Sir Henry Slingsby of Scriven in County Ebor. He was knighted Jan. 28, 1594/5 at Knaresboro—buried in the family plot at Askrigg. Their children were: (A) James Metcalf of Nappa—born ca 1604; Recorder of ye borough Richmond; Barrister at law at the Lincoln Inn; was ad-

SECTION IV

Michael Metcalf

"The Dornix Weaver"

Perhaps the most accurate of the Metcalf families that have come to my attention are those pertaining to Michael Metcalf, of the Yorkshire line, who settled in New England in the early 1600s.

These Yorkshire Metcalfs were always very zealous members of the Catholic Church. Wensleydale was the home of many of the Metcalfs until its confiscation by King Henry Viii in the year 1543.

✓ The family of Michael Metcalf is descended from Brian Metcalf, of Beare ① ✓ Park, Wensleydale—the champion in the story of the Felon Sow of Rokeby, according to Whittaker's History and Sir Walter Scott's Rokeby." Brian was supposedly the third son of James Metcalf of Nappay who married Johanna of Boughton. Their sons were:

(1) Richard Metcalf (2) Leonard Metcalf; ✓ (3) Nicholas Metcalf; and (4) Roger Metcalf.

✓② Leonard Metcalf married a Thursby and left children: (1) Leonard ③; (2) Vincent; (3) Godfrey; and (4) Ambrose. This younger Leonard Metcalf was the father of Michael Metcalf who came to the United States. ④

Many of these Metcalfs, along with others in England, were severely harassed by Bishop Wren, who was eventually tried by Parliament during the reign of Oliver Cromwell.

"Howells's State Trails, Vol. IV, p. 33, cites Article XVI of the Articles of Impeachment:

That by suppressing means of knowledge and salvation, and introducing ignorance, superstition and profanenss, many of his majesty's subjects which used trades, spinning, weaving, and making of cloth, stuffs, and other manufactures of wool—and making of cloth . . . that is to say Daniel Sonning, Michael Metcalf, John Besant, Nicholas Metcalf, and many others, some of whom setting a hundred poor people to work, have removed themselves into Holland and other parts beyond the seas, and there set up and taught the natives the said manufactures, to the great hindrance of trade in this kingdom, and to the impoverished, and bringing to extreme want of very many who were by these parties set to work, to the great prejudice of his Majesty and his people.

The defense of Bishop Wren alleged that Michael Nicholas Metcalf had uttered dangerous words against the King, and the said Michael had slipped away to New England.

Michael Metcalf's own statement as recorded in the "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vo. VI, page 171, is as follows:

"I was persecuted in the land of my fathers sepulchres for not bowing at the name of Jesus and observing the ceremonies inforced upon me at the instance of Bishop Wren of Norwich, and his Chancellor, Dr. Corbet, whose violent measure troubled me in the Bishop's court and returned me into the High Commissioner's court.

Suffering many times for the cause of religion I was forced for the sake of liberty of my conscience to flee from my wife and children to go into New England, taking ship for the voyage at London, 17th September 1636, and being beset by tempests tossed up and down the seas till the Christmas following; and then veering about to Plymouth in old England. Leaving the ship I went down to Yarmouth in County Norfolk, whence I finally shipped myself and family to come to New England; sailed April 15, 1637, and arrived three days before midsummer with my wife, nine children and a servant, Thomas Comberbach."

"Leonardus Metcalf, filius Leonardi Metcalf et bapt fuit 3d die Septembris 1585." Again on the records of the Parish of Tatterford is found: "Michael Metcalf, filius Leonardi et bapt fuit 17th die June 1587." The Rector of the Parish of Tatterford in 1580 was Rev. Leonard Metcalf. Thus we have the birth record of Michael Metcalf . . . the Dornix Weaver . . . or to say . . . the baptism of Michael Metcalf. He died on December 27, 1664 and was buried at Dedham, Mass.

According to some of the records pertaining to this Michael Metcalf family, Michael Metcalf married Sarah Ellwyn, daughter of Thomas and Elisabeth Ellwyn, in Heigham/Waynham, Raynham. She was born there on June 17, 1593. Their marriage took place on Oct. 13, 1616. Their seven older children were born and baptised in St. Benedicts, Norwich, Norfolk County, England and the four younger children at St. Edmondsbury. Sarah Ellwyn, wife of Michael Metcalf died Nov. 30, 1644. Then on Aug. 13, 1645 Michael Metcalf married Mary Pidge, a widow of Roxbury, Mass.

There were eleven children from the marriage of Michael Metcalf and Sarah Ellwyn. Nine of these came over to this country with their parents. These children were:

I. Michael Metcalf—born Nov. 13, 1617—died young in England.
II. Mary Metcalf—born Feb. 14, 1619—died Feb. 12, 1672—mar. Henry Wilson on Nov. 24, 1642.
III. Michael Metcalf—born Aug. 29, 1620—died Dec. 24, 1654—mar. Mary Fairbanks on Mar. 2, 1644.
IV. John Metcalf—born Sept. 15, 1622—died Nov. 27, 1675—mar. Mary Chickering, daughter of Francis Chickering, Sr. on Mar. 22, 1647.
V. Sarah Metcalf—born Sept. 10, 1624—died Feb. 20, 1689—mar. Robert Onion.
VI. Elisabeth Metcalf—born Oct. 4, 1626—died —mar. Thomas Bancroft of Reading, Mass. on Sept. 15, 1648.
VII. Martha Metcalf—born Mar. 27, 1628—mar. (1st) William Brignall; (2nd) Christopher Smith; (3rd) to a Stough.
VIII. Thomas Metcalf—born Dec. 27, 1629—died Nov. 16, 1702—mar. (1st) to Sarah Paige on Sept. 12, 1655; (2nd) to Ann Paige on Dec. 2, 1679.

IX. Ann (Joanne) Metcalf—born Mar. 1, 1631—died young in England.
X. Jane Metcalf—born Mar. 24, 1632/33—died ca 1702—mar. Samuel Walker of Rehoboth in 1654.
XI. Rebeka Metcalf—born Apr. 5, 1635—died 1667—mar. Apr. 6, 1659 to John Mackintosh of Dedham, Mass.

Before descending the children of Michael Metcalf and Sarah Ellwyn I shall include some other bits-and-pieces relating to this family which will be of interest to their descendants. The author is extremely sorry that he was not able to get more detailed data on some of this family. Undoubtedly this would have revealed many (now missing) "keys" so some of the scattered Metcalf families throughout this country. It is known that some members of this family were in the South, West, Midwest, Central, and Western parts of these United States . . . not to mention the heavy populated Eastern part of the country . . . surrounding the Mass. Colony where Michael Metcalf settled with his family in the early 1600s.

Having set-sail on the ship "John and Dorothy" under Master William Andrews of Ipswich on April 15, 1637 . . . this family made strong roots in the Massachusetts Colony after their arrival on June 14, 1637. On Jul. 14, 1637 he was admitted as a Townsman at Dedham, Mass. and joined the church on Jan. 16, 1639; was chosen Selectman in 1641; headed a committee to contrive the fabricke of a new meeting house. In 1661 when brickmaking was developed in the Colony, the record shows that Michael Metcalf had one of the principal clay pits on Dedham Island.

It was said that Michael Metcalf, while in England, employed more than 100 men in his shop, or cloth factory, making material known as Damask, or Dornix. This was the material used for making curtains, carpets, and other hangings. Most likely he continued some of this work after arriving in the New World.

The following is a copy of the Will of Michael Metcalf, which was dated on September 15, 1664. He died December 17, 1664 at Dedham, Mass.

LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF MICHAEL METCALF

"Michael Metcalfe, Senior, of Dedham, being aged, Doe make this my Last Will. Whereas, there is a Couenant Between my selfe and Mary my Wife, made before our marriage, bearing Date the 13 of August 1645, wherein it may appear that she reserved to herselfe, and to her dispoe, her Lands, and Estate, so that I received no Estate with her; Yet, neuerthelesse, I giue unto her ffor the terme of her widowhood, in household stuffe, and other goods, as shee thinkes meete to Chuse, for her use, not exceeding the value of sixteene pounds, and not being such as I shall particuarly Dispose of, in this my Last will, which household stuffe, so chosen by her, shall Bee to ffurnishe the Roome, which my Executor shall prepare for her, at his house, to Receiue her into, after my Decease. All which household stuffe and goods, I giue to my Executor, to haue, after the Decease of my wife. Unto my wife, six punds, to be paid to her within one month after my Decease in Current pay. Unto Sonne John Metcalfe of Medfield, on ffeather and Bolster, my second book of Martyrs, Mr. Perkin's second book, Luther on the gala, one siluer spoon, one pair of sheets, one Long Chest, in the Upper Chamber, one Diaper Boardcloth. Unto my Executor & his Heires, all that my Land in Neponset plaine, and three Acres Laying in ye Lowplaine next to Peter Woodward's, Also halfe my Diuident in ye Cedar swampe, neer the Saw Mill, & 3 Commons & ye odde. Unto my Grandchild Michael Metcalfe, the Elder, all that my Land and Improuments within the Lotte I dwell in, my three acres in ye wigwaom plaine, my swompe next my house, provuided he giue my Executor that Little parcel of his swampe west end of his house, otherwise my gift to be uoid. Also I giue him my Naticke Diuidend of twenty-three acres, more or lesse; four Cow Commons; halfe my Cedar swampe, at the Saw Mill; my wood Land, at the West of the Toune; all the particulars I haue belonging to husbandry, in one kind or another; all the Remainer of my Household stuffe not Disposed of in this my Will. Also my first Book of Martyrs, Mr. Perkin's first Booke, one siluer spoone. to my Daughter Wilson, ffortye shillings. To my Daughter Elisabeth Bancrafte, ffiue pounds. To my Daughter Martha Stowe, twenty shillings. To my Daugher, Jane Walker, forty shillings. To my Daughter Rebecca Mackintosh—ffiue punds. To my wife's Daughter, Martha Bullard, twenty shillings. To my Daughter, Sarah Onion, three pounds. All which six Legacyes, Last named, shall be paid at, in, or Before, the second March next after my Decease, in Current Payment. To my Daughter Stowe's Eldest sonne, which she had by her first husband, Wm. Brignall, fffour pounds, to be paid him when he shall attayne to Lawful age. To my Grandchild, Jno. Mackintosh, and Robert Onion, all my wearing apparel to be equally diuided by my Executor in order as their names been here set down; my Grandchild to choose ffirst: To my Grandchild, aboue said, all the Lumber in my house. Moreouer, if any of ye persons that are Legattes in my present will, shall by themselves, or by any others, make or cause to make and Disturbances, or Contortion, in word of Deed in Reference to any thing giuen in this my Will; then all that Legacye to that person, shall be utterly uoyde. Thomas Metcalf of Dedham, my sonne, to be my executor, to whom I giue all the Rest of my Lands and Goods, not formerly Disposed of.

Michael Metcalfe

Before the witnessing hereof, I giue to my Grandchild, abouesaid, my single acre of Meddow; also my Largest gray Horsemans Coate, also two oxen, one Cow, to deliuered to him at Lawful age. All the Books, aforesaid, giuen to my soone John, after his death I giue them his sonne Michael my Grandchilde.

Signed and sealed in the presence of us

his
Peter X Woodard
mark

Edward Ranson
Recorder

Jonathan Fairebanke

I. Michael Metcalf, son of Michael Metcalf and Sarah Ellwyn, was born in England on Nov. 13, 1617 . . . he died Jan. 19, 1618—buried in England.

II. Mary, or Marcy Metcalf was born Feb. 14, 1619 in Norfolk County, England—died May 5, 1676—mar. Henry Wilson on Nov. 24, 1642. Henry Wilson died Feb. 8, 1678—both buried at Dedham, Mass. Their children were:

A. Michael Wilson—born Aug. 7, 1644—mar. Mary Hamant on Nov. 4, 1674 at Medfield, Mass.—settled at Wrentham.

B. Sarah Wilson—born June 24, 1650—mar. Anthony Hancock on Apr. 17, 1678—she died Nov. 17, 1716. Their children: (1) Henry Hancock—born May 6, 1682; (2) William Hancock—born Apr. 3, 1680—died Nov. 12, 1681; (3) Anthony Hancock, Jr.—born Dec. 26, 1684—died Dec. 3, 1748—mar. Elizabeth Goddard.

C. Mary Wilson—born Nov. 7, 1654—mar. D. Hoyt.

D. Elizabeth Wilson—born Jan. 4, 1654—mar. John Rice.

E. Ephraim Wilson—born Jun. 2, 1656—mar. Rebecca Sumner on May 10, 1681. Their only known child was: Rev. Ephraim Wilson, Jr.

III. Michael Metcalf, son of Michael Metcalf and Sarah Elwyn, was born Aug. 29, 1620 in Norwich, Norfolk, England—died Dec. 24, 1654 at Dedham, Mass.—mar. Mary Fairbanks, daughter of Jonathan Fairbanks, Sr. and Grace Smith, on Apr. 2, 1644. Mary Fairbanks was born Feb. 3, 1622—at Sowerby, Halifax, Parish, Yorkshire, Eng.—she died Mar. 26, 1654 (there is a possible error in this date since I show her as having a second husband, Christopher Smith. One of these facts is in error). The five children of Michael Metcalf and Mary Fairbanks were:

A. Michael Metcalf—Born Jan. 21, 1645—died Sept. 1, 1693—mar. Elizabeth Fuller, daughter of Thomas Fuller and Hannah Flowers, on Sept. 17, 1672. She was first married to John Kingsbury. Elizabeth Fuller Kingsbury Metcalf died Oct. 24, 1732.

Information on this family is not as complete as on some of the other members of the Michael Metcalf-Sarah Elywn family, but there were ostensibly seven children born to Michael and Elizabeth Fuller Metcalf:

1. Michael Metcalf—born May 9, 1674—mar. Lydia (White?) about 1704/5. Their only known son: (a) Michael Metcalf—born ca 1707—mar. Meletiah Hamant in 1728. They lived in Keene, N.H. Their two sons were: (i) Oliver Metcalf—died 1791; (ii) Michael Metcalf—KIA Rev. War in 1777—mar. Sarah Allen. This

[illegible] not known, had a dau.: (A) Ruth Metcalf—born ca [illegible] Plank. There was one son born to this younger [illegible] wife Sarah Allen. It is likely that there were other [illegible] Michael and Sarah Allen Metcalf was: (A) Capt. [illegible] died 1823—mar. Hepzibah Baker in 1782. Their [illegible] Nancy Metcalf—born 1793—died 1889—mar. Ashley [illegible]

[illegible] Mary Metcalf—born Oct. 30, 1676—mar. Jeremiah Woodcock on Jan. 5, [illegible] were born seven children: (a) Jeremiah Woodcock; (b) Margaret Woodcock; (c) Mary Woodcock; (d) Miriam Woodcock; (e) Cornelia Woodcock; (f) Michael Woodcock; (g) Sarah Woodcock.

3. Thomas Metcalf—born Jan. 3, 1679—mar. Lydia Chickering—born Dec. 1, [illegible]. They had four children: (a) Lydia Metcalf—died 1792—married a man by the name of Fuller—no children; (b) Thomas Metcalf—born Jan. 19, 1713—died single on Oct. 8, 1760; (c) Michael Metcalf—born Oct. 20, 1715—died unmarried; (d) Esther Metcalf—born 1717—died Nov. 15, 1801—mar. John Harris of Brookline, Mass.—died 1795 at age of 87 yrs. They had two children: (i) Michael Harris—born June 12, 1748—died Jan. 28, 1816—mar. Mary Dana; (ii) John Harris—born Oct. 1, 1750—died Dec. 5, 1831—mar. Mary Niles.

4. Sarah Metcalf—born Apr. 26, 1682—mar. John Gay, by whom she had three daughters: (a) Sarah Gay; (b) Elizabeth Gay; (c) Abigail Gay.

5. Eleazar Metcalf—born Feb. 12, 1685—mar. Mrs. Judith Rockett George, widow of John George, ca 1709, by whom he had four or more children: (a) Eleazar Metcalf—born Nov. 21, 1710—no further data; (b) Abigail Metcalf—born Jan. 18, 1713—mar. Simon Slocomb, by whom she had children including: (i) Ensign Metcalf Slocomb—born Nov. 15, 1751; (ii) Ens. Jeremiah Slocomb—born Jan. 10, 1754; (iii) Lt. Achilles Slocomb—born Jun. 10, 1756. (c) Benjamin Metcalf—born May 3, 1715 at Wrentham, Mass.—mar. Mary Slocomb on Aug. 7, 1738. Their children: (i) Elizabeth Metcalf—born Nov. 25, 1739—mar. Stephen Cook on Mar. 16, 1758. (ii) Abijah Metcalf—born Oct. 23, 1741. At this point I would like to include an : Abijah Metcalf—born Jul. 2, 1735—died Sept. 2, 1815 at Keene, N.H. The Michael Metcalf—Meletiah Hamant family lived at Keene, N.H., so this Abijah Metcalf fits into this family somewhere. He had one known son: (i) Frederick Metcalf—born Jun. 11, 1768—died Sept. 16, 1849—mar. Esther Dwinell on May 12, 1791. She was also born at Keene and died there Feb. 27, 1847. They had one son: (A) Benjamin D. Metcalf—born Dec. 1, 1791—died Jan. 27, 1873—mar. Frances F. Carpenter in 1816. Benjamin D. Metcalf died at North Hudson, N.Y. and Frances F. Carpenter Metcalf on Jun. 12, 1874 at Jay, N.Y. They had one daughter: (1) Maria Elizabeth Metcalf—born Feb. 24, 1827—mar. Jason McComber on Sept. 18, 1944. Jason K. McComber was born Oct. 22, 1823 at Bristol, Vt.—died Jan. 25, 1898 at Hopewell, Mo. They had one son: (a) Edwin Levi McComber—born Nov. 17, 1850—died Nov. 20, 1926—mar. Eva Catherine Thompson on Dec. 20, 1871. She was born Apr. 20, 1851 in Washington Co., Mo.—died Mar. 12, 1923. Both are buried at Hopewell, Washington Co., Mo. Their dau.: (i) Reta T. McComber—born Jul. 14, 1885—died Feb. 6, 1928—

mar. Richard Adams on May 22, 1907 in Williamsville, Mo.-Richard Adams was born Sept. 13, 1883 in St. Francis Co., Mo.—died Apr. 30, 1953 at Farmington, Mo. Reta was bur. at Horatio, Ark. Their daughter: (A) Catherine M. Adams—mar. to Coburn T. Scholl and reside at 2121 Wood St., Apt. C-110, Sarasota, Fla.—33577. (d) Jeremy Metcalf—born Mar. 13, 1718—died Sept. 19, 1729—Wrentham.

6. Hannah Metcalf—born April 17, 1687—mar. (1st) Thomas Stedman on Nov. 18, 1729—next married Timothy Kingsbury. No record of any descendants.

7. Daniel Metcalf—born June 25, 1691—died Jan. 29, 1719.

B. Mary Metcalf, dau. of Michael Metcalf and Mary Fairbanks, was born August 15, 1646-John Ware was born 1646—died 1718. They were married on Dec. 10, 1668 and had nine sons and two daughters—names not known.

C. Sarah Metcalf, dau. of Michael Metcalf and Mary Fairbanks, was born Dec. 7, 1648 at Dedham—mar. Robert Ware on June 14, 1674. No further data.

D. Jonathan Metcalf, son of Michael Metcalf and Mary Fairbanks, was born Sept. 10, 1650 at Dedham, Mass.—died May 27, 1727. On Apri. 10, 1674 he married Hannah Kenric, dau. of John Kenric. Hannah died Dec. 23, 1731 and was probably buried also at Dedham, Mass.

Deacon Jonathan Metcalf and his brother, Deacon Eleazar Metcalf . . . have perhaps the most known descendants to be included in this history. Both of these had large, prolific families, and possibly are the ancestors of many of our Metcalf whose parentage has not been established.

Deacon Jonathan Metcalf and Hannah Kenric had ten children. There were seven sons and three daughters:

1. Jonathan Metcalf, son of Jonathan Metcalf and Hannah Kenric, was born Mar. 16, 1975 at Dedham—died Mar. 5, 1739 at Lebanon, Conn. where he was a prominent merchant. On Jan. 15, 1701 he married Hannah Avery, by whom he had eight children:

a. Hannah Metcalf—born Jan. 15, 1703—died 1791 mar. Deacon Samuel Huntington in 1722. They had issue, names not known.

b. Jonathan Metcalf—born Aug. 10, 1704—died Oct. 7, 1743—mar. Lydia Hyde on Nov. 2, 1727. They had ten children: (i) Sybil Metcalf; (ii) Jonathan Metcalf; (ii) Samuel Elijah Metcalf—born May 13, 1732—mar. Mehitable Hammond, dau. of Caleb Hammond and Mary Brewster (from the line of William Brewster of the "Mayflower."). They had seven children: (A) Daniel Metcalf—born May 14, 1759 at Lebanon, Conn.—mar. Jedida Lacey of Washington, Conn. on Sept. 9, 1784 in Washington Township, Litchfield, Conn. Daniel Metcalf died in 1806 and Jedida Lacey Metcalf on May 2, 1844. She is bur. in Tioga Co., Pa. Their two known children were: (1) Isaac H. Metcalf—born Apr. 13, 1785. By two wives: Joanna—born Jul. 25, 1785 and Mary—born Apr. 25, 1798, he had ten children: (a) Ruby Metcalf; (b) Mendel Metcalf; (c) Charles Metcalf; (d) Moses Metcalf; (e) Morris Metcalf; (f) Marvin Metcalf; (g) Minerva Metcalf—mar. a Martin; (h) Amanda Metcalf; (j) Maria Metcalf; (k) Miles Metcalf—born Oct. 21, 1832—mar. Melissa Dunbar—born 1835. Their children: (i) Emory Metcalf; (ii) Harriet Metcalf; (iii) Mendel L. Metcalf—born Mar. 17, 1858 in Pa.—mar. Mar-

At State Historical Society, Madison WI this has #
CS71 M588 (1898)

by Isaac Stevens Metcalf

1898
(Imperial Press

Michael Metcalf was an Industrialist - not merely a yeoman. He gave up riches to flee to New England because of Persecution by the Archbishop Laud. He could have backed down + stayed wealthy in Norwich.

The text of his long speech (p 12-15) reprinted in NEHGR, omitted here.

METCALF GENEALOGY.

There has been much speculation about the origin of the name Metcalf. The original seat of the family was in the North and Northwest part of Yorkshire, in England. The name is found in the old records spelled variously: Metkalff, Medcalffe, Mydcalfe, Medcalf, Medecalfe, Meitcalve, Medecafe, Metecalfe, and many others.

The name is still a very common one in Yorkshire, where it was, and is yet sometimes pronounced "Mecca." The traditions are that the early Metcalfs were as a race unusually large, strong men. There is a familiar story of the strong-armed hero who twisted the neck of a ferocious bull, and reported that he

"Met a calf over there,"

and so was called the Man who Met a Calf, or the Metcalf. In later times, Rev. B. E. Metcalf, Rector of Ferrybridge, Yorkshire, writes that he knew in Mukar, Craven, Yorkshire, eight families of Metcalfs, one a father and seven sons, and all very large men, over six feet tall.

Craven is an old Metcalf district in Yorkshire. Whittaker's "History of Craven" derives the name Metcalf from the old Saxon "Mechalgh," halgh meaning a tract of land and Mechalgh, the Men of Mec's land.

Another derivation is perhaps more probable. There are in Craven, twelve miles southeast of Dent, three hills, or a small mountain with three peaks, now called the Pennegent hills, but long known as the *Three Calves*.

A. D. 1278 (Edward I.) it is recorded that Adam de Medekalf, that is Adam of the Middle Calf, was killed by one Steynebrigge in single combat. The prefix Mede is derived from the German Mitte, Saxon Midd, English Middle. This Adam of Metcalf in 1278, was the eighth in descent from the original Dane Arkefrith, who came to England in 1016 with King Canute, who gave him lands in Northwest Yorkshire, and made him "Lord of Dent, Sedburg and Askrigg," names still to be found on the maps of Yorkshire.

It is said that this Danish succession can be traced in an unbroken line from Arkefrith to the present time. William Mainrod Metcalf, Esq., of York, England, born in 1839, claims to be the 39th in regular descent from Arkefrith, as follows:

1. Arkefrith.
2. Arkell, Lord of Dent, etc. (Doomsday Book of Edward the Confessor).
3. Gospatrick.
4. Dolfin.
5. William.
6. Richard.
7. Adam, 1252.
8. Adam, 1278. Called Medecalfe.
9. Adam. Medecalfe of Baynbridge.
10. Adam. Medecalfe of Thornton.
11. Richard. Metcalf of Baynbridge.
12. Thomas. Metcalf of Baynbridge.
13. John Metcalf, married Alice of Ireby.

①? ✓14. James Metcalf, of Nappa, in Wensleydale, married Gelsone of Ireby, was Captain at the battle of Agincourt, under Henry V., in 1415, and was Lord of the Manor of Nappa when Margaret, widow of Richard, Lord Scrofe, claimed dower in said Manor. But in 1472, the widow of Lord Scrofe released to James Metcalf and heirs all claims. In 1439 he is described as of Nappay under the Skar, in Ayegarth. In 1459 as of Wensleydale, York. This James Metcalf founded and endowed the Chantry of St. Anne at Askrigg; requiring daily Mass said and prayers offered for the good estate of the King and Queen, of himself and his sons, and for their souls when from this life they pass away, and for the souls of all his benefactors, and all the faithful departed. In this chapel of St. Anne is still (1880) to be seen a marble slab, which has evidently been defaced, and the inscriptions, carvings, sculptures, and ornaments of brass torn off. This, it is said, was done by the "Roundheads" in the time of Cromwell.

This James Metcalf's children were Reginald, who married a Thornton of Thornton; ✓Brian; Myles, who was in Parliament from York, in 1478; Thomas, who was Chancellor of the Kingdom under Edward IV. and Richard III.; Joan, who married Marmaduke, Constable of Cliff; and Cicely, who died in 1502, Prioress of Marrich Abbey, in Iraledale, Priory of St. Andrew, Marrich. ✓②?, Brian

On account of their adherence to the house of York, and Richard III., Myles Metcalf, the Recorder, and his brother, the Chancellor, were expressly excepted from the pardon granted in 1485, by Henry VII. But they were afterwards pardoned and restored to office. Myles Metcalf died Feb. 25, 1494, and was buried in the Minster of York. There was a brass tablet in the Minster of York with the inscription:

"+ Hic jacet Mils Metcalf, quondam recordator istius civitatis, ac etiam sinus justiciarius dom. regis apud Lancaster, qui obiit XXV die mensis Februarii, ann. Dom. 1494. Cujus anime propitietus Deus. Amen."

These Yorkshire Metcalfs were always very zealous Catholics. Bryan Metcalf of Beare Park, Wensleydale, was the Bryan of Beare, champion, in the story of the Felon Sow of Rokeby, according to Whittaker's History and Sir Walter Scott's "Rokeby." Beare Park, Marrich, Wensleydale, was long a residence of the Metcalfs till it was confiscated in 1543, under Henry VIII's suppression of Monasteries. ✓ 4 again

Thomas Metcalf, the other brother, was Privy Councillor in 1460, under Henry VI., and Chancellor of Lancaster, under Richard III.

This Thomas Metcalf was described in Leland's Chronicles "a great officer as steward, survier, or receyver of landes whereby he waxed riche, and did builde and purchace. He made additions to Nappay Hall, in which two toures be very fair, besides other logginges." He adds that "Knappey and other places thereabout be able make a three hundred men in very knowen consanquinitie of the Metecalfes."

15. This Thomas Metcalf with his brothers Myles, Reginald and Bryan, with Joan, wife of Marmaduke, and Cicely the Prioress, are called the fifteenth (15th) generation from the old Dane Arkefrith.

33. William Metcalf, who married Anne Mainwood, May 21, 1657, is called the thirty-third from Arkefrith.

39. William Mainwood Metcalf, of York, England, born in 1839, claims to be the 39th from Arkefrith.

✓ But our American Metcalfs are descended from Brian, of Beare Park, the third son of James Metcalf of Nappay, who married Johanna, of Boughton. Their sons were Richard,✓Leonard, Nicholas and Roger. Leonard married a Thursby, and left children Leonard, Vincent, Godfrey, and Ambrose. 2 again ③

Leonard Metcalf, of Beare Park, in 1569 joined the 3? Rising in the North, in the interest of Mary, Queen of Scots. He was condemned and attainted and narrowly escaped the scaffold. His name is first in the list of "Gentlemen prisoners at Carlisle, Dec., 1569." His name is in the list of prisoners taken to Durham Castle, January, 1570. Eleven of them were indicted for "Conspiracy of Treason and Rebellion," and all were condemned to die. Four were executed at once at York. The other seven were "Stayed for the second execution," or until the Queen's pleasure; and it was represented to the Queen that Leonard Metcalf rose because the Earl of Northumberland did, and also that he had made state of his lands to his wife, so that by his life the Queen should have his lands, while by his death his wife should have them, so that the Queen should win by his life and lose by his death; and further that he had been taken for a very quiet, honest gentleman, and that he was generally lamented. The Queen's reply expressed her willingness to spare the lives of three, but "for the four, Metcalf, Lambert, Claxton and Conyers, we thynk it good that some furder example be showed and we refer the same to your own judgment." But the Commissioners did not accept the discretion thus given them; and April 5, the Earl of Sussex wrote to Secretary Cecil, that the Queen "wanted some furder example of ye better sorte," and that "Metcalf, Lambert, Claxton and Conyers ought to be executed." But finally none of them were executed, probably for the sake of "ye landes." The Bill of Attainder names ③ "Leonard Metcalfe, late of Beare Park, Co. York, Esquire."

The "coat of armes" of these old Yorkshire Metcalfs was everywhere, "Argent, three calves, passant sable," with different quarterings in different branches of the family.

⑤ Our emigrant ancestor, Michael Metcalf, the Dornix or

Embroidery Weaver, of Norwich, and the Metcalfs of Norwich, Tatterford and vicinity, in Norfolk county, were immediately descended from the Metcalfs of Beare Park and Nappa Hall in Northern Yorkshire. The Yorkshire Metcalfs. as far as known, were zealous Catholics; the Norfolk family were zealous Protestants, and Michael, at least, a staunch Puritan. When Leonard Metcalf was attainted for high treason, and lost his large estates in Yorkshire (which it is hinted may have been one reason for his condemnation, his lands being wanted for some new court favorite), his family left Yorkshire and settled in * Norfolk. Religion was then largely a matter of politics. It is supposed that Leonard Metcalf himself, perhaps as a condition of his pardon, gave up his Catholicism, and after the loss of his property, eventually took holy orders under the state church, and twenty years after was the first Leonard Metcalf, Rector of the parish of Tatterford near Norwich. But it is perhaps more probable that this first Rector Metcalf of Tatterford was the son of Leonard Metcalf, the quondam traitor.

The earliest records extant of the parish of Tatterford, are copies in the registry of the Archdeaconry of Norfolk, and commence about 1560. In 1580, *et sequens*, Leonard Metcalf was Rector of the Parish of Tatterford. Leonard Metcalf was succeeded by Richard Metcalf. In these records the name is spelled Metcalf, Metcalfe, Mettcalf and Mettcalfe. In 1585 is the entry of baptism of "Leonardus Metcalf, filius Leonardi Metcalf et Bapt fuit 3d die Septembris." Again, "Michael Metcalf filius Leonardi Metcalf et bapt fuit 17th die June 1587." Which confirms our records that Michael Metcalf, the Dornix Weaver, was born at Tatterford, Norfolk Co., June 17, 1587. There is no clue to the name of Leonard Metcalf's wife, the mother of Michael.

* Later "authorities" evidently do not buy this. See NEHGR articles, assuming "our" Leonard probably was son of a Michael (Lay Subsidies 1542)
Appendix Our Leonard b. 1541.

Michael Metcalf's wife, Sarah Ellwyn, was born, our old records in this country say, "June 17, 1593, in the adjoining town of Waynham." The adjoining town is Raynham, with parishes East, West, and South Raynham. And there has been quite a controversy over the name. The registers of all have been searched for the record of Sarah Ellwyn's birth and marriage. But further investigation has shown that Sarah Ellwyn was born in "Heigham," the daughter of Thomas and Elisabeth Ellwyn. Thomas Ellwyn was born in 1564 and died in 1648. Sarah Ellwyn was born in Heigham, June 17, 1593, and was married to Michael Metcalf Oct. 13, 1616. Their seven oldest children were born and baptised in St. Benedicts, Norwich, Norfolk Co., and four younger children at St. Edmondsbury.

Michael Metcalf was made a Freeman of the city of Norwich, June 21, 1618. His occupation is stated as "Dornix Weaver." This Dornic or Dornix was a kind of Damask or tapestry used for hangings or heavy curtains. And Michael Metcalf is supposed to have employed some hundred or more men in his shop or factory.

But he was a very zealous non-conformist, and became involved in a controversy with his Bishop. Matthew Wren, previously Bishop of Hereford, afterwards of Ely, was then Bishop of Norwich, and was very bitter, notorious, some writers say, in his persecutions of the Puritans, or of any who refused to conform. But in about twenty years all this was changed in England. Cromwell and the Independents or Puritans were in the ascendency; and Wren, then Bishop of Ely, was tried before a committee of Parliament for his abuse of the Puritans. In "Howell's State Trials," Vol. 4, page 33, of the 21 volume edition of 1816, one of the twenty-five Articles of Impeachment presented July 5, 1641, by Sir Thomas Wad-

dington, member for Berwick, to the House of Commons, against Matthew Wren, late Bishop of Norwich and then Bishop of Ely, is the following:

"Art. XVI. That by means of the vigorous prosecutions and dealings in the precedent articles mentioned, and by reason of the superstitious bowing to, and afore the Table set Altarwise, the suspending, silencing, driving away of the faithful preaching Ministers, the suppressing and forbidding of sermons and prayers, the putting down of lectures, the suppressing means of knowledge and salvation, and introducing ignorance, superstition and prophaneness, many of his majesty's subjects, to the number of three thousand, many of which used trades, spinning, weaving, knitting, and making of cloth, stuffs, stockings and other manufactures of wool,—that is to say Daniel Sonning, Michael Metcalf, John Besant, Nicholas Metcalf, —— Busby, John Derant, Widow Maxes, Richard Cook, John Dickes, Francis Laws, John Sentry, and many others, some of them setting a hundred poor people to work, have removed themselves, their families and estates, into Holland and other partes beyond the seas, and there set up and taught the natives the said manufactures, to the great hinderance of trade in this kingdom, and to the impoverishing and bringing to extreme want of very many who were by these parties set on work, to the great prejudice of his Majesty, and of his people."

The defence of Bishop Wren introduced the recorded testimony of a Mr. Disployn, and of Messrs. With—father and son—of Cossay, who testified that "Michael and Nicholas Metcalf had uttered dangerous words against the King which could not longer be endured, and also that the said Michael slippit away and went to New England."

Michael Metcalf's own account was as follows, as taken from the N. E. Genealogical Register, Vol. 6, page 171:

"I was persecuted in the land of my fathers' sepulchres for not bowing at the name of Jesus and observing the ceremonies inforced upon me at the instance of Bishop Wren of Norwich, and his Chancellor Dr. Corbet, whose violent measures troubled me in the Bishop's court, and returned me into the High Commissioner's Court.

"Suffering many times for the cause of religion, I was forced for the sake of the liberty of my conscience to flee from my wife and children to go into New England; taking ship for the voyage at London, 17th Sept., 1636, and being by tempests tossed up and down the seas till the Christmas following; and then veering about to Plymouth in Old England. Leaving the ship I went down to Yarmouth, in Co. Norfolk, whence I finally shipped myself and family to come to New England; sailed April 15, 1637, and arrived three days before Midsummer with my wife, nine children, and a servant, Thomas Comberbach, aged 16."

The passenger list of emigrants with the "John and Dorothy," Master Wm. Andrews of Ipswich, as examined April 8, 1637, includes Michael Metcalf and Sarah Metcalf, his wife, and *eight* children. It is probable that his second son, Joseph Metcalf, came to this country two years before his father, and was admitted a freeman at Dedham, March 4, 1635. Michael himself was admitted a freeman at Dedham, July 14, 1637.

The following letter was written before he made his first attempt to come to America. At the time of his writing he speaks of himself as an exile from his wife and children, "with whom he would have gladly continued if with liberty:"

"To all the true professors of Christ's Gospel within the City of Norwich:

"Oh Norwich! the beauty of my native country! what shall I say unto thee? Thou art little inferior to any of thy sister cities within this kingdom. Famous hast thou been for religion throughout this island. The Gospel of Christ Jesus hath been purely and powerfully taught, to thy great honor, and ye joy and rejoicing of thy religious inhabitants. Thy God hath adorned thee with such a succession of godly and able preachers, within some of thy churches, that few congregations, I suppose, have had the like; who so faithfully have taught their people, both by life and doctrine, to your everlasting fame; carefully preaching and defending the doctrine of justification by faith in Christ, with other truths of the true Protestant faith, against the defenders of the stinking tenets of Arminius, that enemy of God, so called by King James, i. e., ye 1st.

"Also my friends, what comfort is it now to you to learn what your city hath formerly been for Christ's true religion taught in her? The question, what is she now? Surely much relapsed and fallen from her love and purity of life and doctrine. Would to God thy spiritual fathers had not tasted the sour grapes whereby most of the children's teeth are set on edge. For many strange things are now preached in thine ears by thy new preachers which your old preachers would never have endured. But the religion of these novelists consisteth in formalities, they striving to use the *desk* above the *pulpit*, teaching the people less preaching may now serve, were it not to preach down schism and faction, as at Winsor Visitation. Another he makes it arbitrary whether or not the Pope be Antichrist, as Burgess in my hearing at the Cathedral in Norwich.

"My friends, beware of them that preach to you with the enticing words of Man's wisdom, and do chalk out a nearer way to heaven than they shall find, I fear, that wal in it."

MICHAEL METCALF GENEALOGY.

Michael Metcalf, son of Rev. Leonard Metcalf, Rector of Tatterford, was born at Tatterford, Norfolk Co., England, June 17, 1587. (1590)

Sarah Elwyn, daughter of Thomas and Elisabeth Elwyn, was born at Hingham, Norfolk Co., England, June 17, 1593.

They were married in Hingham, Oct. 13, 1616. They sailed for New England, April 15, 1637. Their children:

1. Michael, born Nov. 13, 1617, died young.
2. Mary (or Marcy), born Feb. 14, 1619, married Henry Wilson, Nov. 24, 1642.
3. MICHAEL, born Aug. 29, 1620.
4. John, born Sept. 5, 1622, married Mary, daughter of Francis Chickering, March 22, 1647; died in Dedham, Mass., Nov. 27, 1675; left children:
    - John, March 21, 1648.
    - Michael, Aug. 20, 1650.
    - Mary, Oct. 2, 1652.
    - Joseph, 1658, in Medfield.

   John removed to Medfield, where he had other children.
5. Sarah, born Sept. 10, 1624. Married Robert Onion, of Dedham.
6. Elisabeth, born Oct. 4, 1626. Married Sept. 15, 1648, Thomas Bancroft, of Reading.
7. Martha, born March 27, 1628. Married 1st, Wm. Brignall; 2nd, Aug. 2, 1654, Christopher Smith; 3d, —— Stow.
8. Thomas, born Dec. 27, 1629 (one old record makes Thomas 4th child, born Jan. 7, 1622). He married 1st, Sept. 12, 1655, Sarah Paige; 2nd, Dec. 2, 1679. Thomas was Deacon at Dedham, and died Nov. 16, 1702.
9. Ann, (called also Joanne) born March 1, 1631. Died young.
10. + Jane, born March 24, 1632. Married ~~Samuel~~ Philip Walker, of Rehoboth.
11. Rebeka, born April 5, 1635. Married April 5, 1659, John Mackintosh, of Dedham.

Note:
Our ancestor. She married Philip Walker. (mg)

This applies to both Dodge & Averill lines — filed here because Michael Metcalf taught school in old age.

THE SCHOOLS AND TEACHERS OF DEDHAM.

By Carlos Slafter.

The founders of Dedham evinced in many ways their capacity for wise forethought. They evidently regarded themselves as the builders of a town, for whose future character they would be held responsible. While they made many good regulations for securing private and individual rights, they never forgot to plan for the benefit of coming generations. Accordingly, as soon as they had established homes of a very primitive style, with few comforts and no luxuries, they turned their thoughts to the subject of education; and there is no doubt that the presence in the little settlement of several men who had been trained in the universities of the mother country had a most favorable influence in shaping the measures which they adopted.

On the second day of January, 1642-3, fifty-one persons were present at a general meeting of the Town, in which the allotment of land was considered; and in the record of its proceedings is the following statement:

> It was with an unanimous consent concluded that some portion of land in this entended division should be set apart for publique use: viz for the Towne, the Church and a fre Schoole; viz. 40 acres at the leaste or 60 acres at the most.

This "unanimous consent" indicates a truly commendable liberality and public spirit, and that there were in the town wise counsellors to control its plans for public improvements. It also leads us to expect further steps in the same direction; and we are not surprised at the memorable action of a town meeting two years later. This is so fitly described in the Records that we give it here without abridgement, and also include the names of those who were present and participated in the good work.

> 1644. At a meeting the first day of the Eleventh Month, Assembled those whose names are under written with other the Inhabitants of this Town: M^{r} Jn^{o} Allen past^{r} John Hunting Eld^{r}, Hen. Chickering * Tho. Wight, Jn^{o}. Thu[rston], Anthony Fisher, Jos. Fisher, Dan Fisher, Jno Luson, Mr. Ralph Wheelocke, Jno Gaye, William Bullard, Jno Bullard, Robt. Crossman, Hen Wilson, Jno N[ewton], Edw. Colver, Hen. Smith, Nath Colborne, Nath. Aldus, Hen Phillips, Sam^{l} Morse, Dan Morse Jno. Morse, Jos. Kingsbury, Jno. Dwite, Lamb. G[enery], Edw Kemp. Edw. Richards, Tho. Leader, Geo. Bearstowe, Jonath. Fairbanks, ✓ Mich Powell, Mich Metcalfe juno^{r}, Jno Metcalfe, Jno Frarey, Eli. Lusher, R[obt] Hinsdell, Pet. Woodward, Jno Guyle, Rich. Evered, Robt. * Gowinge, &ce.
>
> The said Inhabitants, taking into Consideration the great necesitie of providing some means for the Education of the youth in o^{r} s'd Towne, did with an unanimous consent declare by voate their willingness to promote that worke, promising to put too their hands, to provide maintenance for a Free Schoole in our said Towne. And farther did resolve and consent, testifying it by voate, to rayse the summe of Twenty pounds p annu. towards the maintaining of a Schoole M^{r} to keep a free schoole in our s'd Town.
>
> And also did resolve and consent to betrust the s'd 20 £ p annu & certain lands in o^{r} Towne, formerly set apart for publique use, into the hand of Feofees[1] to be presently chosen by themselves, to imploy the sd 20£. and the land afors'd, to be improved for the use of the said Schoole: that as the profits shall arise from the said land, every man may be proportionably abated of his some of the s'd 20£ aforesaid, freely to be given to the use aforesaid. And y^{t} y^{e} said Feofees shall have power to make a Rate for the necesary charg of improving the s'd land: they giving account thereof to the Towne, or to those whom they should depute. John Hunting, E$^{ld r}$, Eliazer Lusher, Francis Chickeringe, John Dwight & Michael Powell, are chosen Feofees and betrusted in the behalfe of the school as afore said.

The school thus established, to be managed by Feoffees, seems to have been designed to continue seven years, as will appear in the following record relating to the training ground:

---

[1] Feoffees is the old word for trustees.

* Fishers are our Dodge ancestors as was Richard Everett (Evered)

The selectmen now being authorized to find a schoolmaster, seem to have acted promptly, and from the records which their clerk made we are able to give the name of the first teacher which they employed.

> 18 of y^e 1 mo. Assemb. Joh. Kingsbery, Fra. Chickering, Lieft. Fisher, Joh. Dwight, Sergt Fisher & Elea. Lusher, Pet. Woodward Agreed w^{th} Jacob Farrow to keep the Schoole to begin 28 of 1 mo 1653 to have 20£ pr an. to be payed in town paye being merchantible at the end of each halfe yeare the one halfe of the saide sume. he undertakes to teach to read English and the Accidence & to write & the knowledg & art of Arithmetick & the rules & practice therof: this to be p'posed to the towne.

The record is completed the same day as follows:

> The above written $agreem^t$ w^{th} a schoole M^r was this day p'posed to the towne after Lecture & consented unto

Jacob ffarrow seems to have entered upon his duties according to the contract. Six months later this contract is modified as shown by the record, as follows:

> Upon the Request and motion of Jacob Farrow its consented unto that himselfe or his Brother shall attend the keeping the Schoole according to the $Coven^t$ formerly made w^{th} the said Jacob & the $Coven^t$ to remaine in force as it is.

How long these brothers, John and Jacob Farrer, had charge of the school it is not possible to determine. They were emigrants from Lancashire, Eng., John being the older, and both went to Lancaster in 1653 or 4. Two of Jacob's sons were killed by the Indians about 1675. He died in Woburn August 14, 1677, whither he had fled, and where John had lived since 1656. The latter died the 11th of July, 1690, "very aged." Jacob Farrer was a surveyor and was much occupied in laying out the allotments of land in the town of Lancaster. The descendents of John and Jacob Farrer are numerous, and several of the name have been eminent as scholars.

The next schoolmaster was Lieut. Joshua ffisher who appears to have consented to keep the school a short time when it was difficult to obtain a teacher. His appointment is thus recorded:

> 11 of y^e 10 mo '54. Agreed with Lieut. Fisher to keepe schoole in our Towne for the same alloweance that the former schoole M^r had proportionable to the time he shall attend the same, which at present is but for this winter time; who afterwards shall be discharged therof at any time after he have given one weeks notice.

The Lieutenant did not on account of his school duties cease to be a selectman or to receive pay for "dyeting" the selectmen. A curious entry in the records about the close of his term, reads thus:

> Lieut Fisher is requested and undertakes to repayer the broken panes of glasse in the meeting house so farre as he may finde glass spare for that use.

Was his school too near the meeting house?

The following record was made:

> 3 of 10 mo. 1655. The Rate made for the payment of Lieft, Fisher for the time he kept the school being 4 months, and one week. and for wood he expended upon that occasion the sum being 7£ 13^s 4^d

It seems to have been the custom to make a rate for the teacher's pay once in six months. In the last instance sixty-six persons were taxed to pay the Schoolmaster.

The scarcity of teachers at this time became troublesome.

> 28 of y^e 1 mo 1656 Lieft Fisher and Ensign Chickering are deputied to treat with Willy Woodward[1] about the keeping schoole & and to receive & return to the select men his direct answer.

There is no record of his "direct answer" and probably there was a long vacation in 1656. But in December of that year the Selectmen bethought themselves of their venerable neighbor Michaell Metcalfe as is shown by the following passage in their records

> to be proposed at the generall meetinge that a School M^r being not yet attayned, nor like conveniently to be speedily Supplyed & the late select men conceaveing that Brother Metcalf might be usefull that waye, & being treated withall seemes not wholly averse, it is desired the towne would consider it at present and declare them selves.

---

[1] William Woodward, son of Peter Woodward of Dedham, was for a time a member of Harvard College, and "was probably one of the seventeen who left college about 1655 without a degree." John Hull in his diary calls him "a young and powerful preacher."

See Sibley's Harvard Graduates, vol. 1, p. 559.

On the "5th of the 11 mo 1656" the Town did "declare themselves" as follows:

> The Towne did by voate give a call to Bro. Metcalfe to keep schoole in our Towne & leave it to the Select men to agree with him therein.

The former schoolmaster, Joshua Fisher, now becomes Town Clerk, and in his handwriting we find the contract made with Mr. Metcalf.

> 9 of 11 mo 1656. Agreed with Michaell Metcalfe for to keep the schoole for the year insuinge, the said Michael doe undertake to teach the children that shall be sent to him to reade English and to write: all which he do undertake faithfully to do: in consideration whereof we doe engage he shall receive from the town the summe of twenty pounds two therd partes in wheate att the price of the towne or Countrie Rate and the other parte of the paye in other corne at price above mentioned, and the schoole to be kept at the school house except the weather be extreame to hinder, and then he is to atend it at his owne dwellinge house: and the towne is to take care to have the harth layde in the schoole house forth with, and to have the windows made fitt: & wood for the fire to be layd in att the schoole house: we ingage to call upon the parents of the children that thay carefully provide it in due time.
>
> And it is agreed that the therd part above expressed to be payed in other corne shall not bee above one therd part in Indian corne: and in the heat of the weather if the said Michael desire to use the metinge house he may so doe provided the house be left clene against any publiq use of the house, and also that the windows be made good if any be broken, and any other damage made good that is done by the use of the metinge house in that kind: and the school to begin the 19 day of this present mo: and the pay is to be quarterly as is above expressed, that is 5£ a quarter.

It is hardly to be supposed that Mr. Metcalf taught only reading and writing, but rather that he agreed to teach these at least to all the pupils. There is now in existence the identical arithmetic which he used as as a teacher of the school. This book, an enlarged edition of Robert Record's arithmetic, was published in 1630, and is now in the archives of the Dedham Historical Society. He is said to have been born in 1586, consequently he was seventy years old when he became a schoolmaster. He was evidently much respected for intelligence, which caused his townsmen to turn to him for assistance in the business of education.

That any dissatisfaction should appear to annoy Mr. Metcalf seems very strange; but here is proof that some were ready to find fault. Clerk Fisher made this record:

> 16th of the 12 mo 1656. Upon the complaint of some of the Inhabitance that the school Master refuse to teach such chlidring as are above fourteen yeares of age the men hereunder named are deputed to goe and treate with the school master about the covenant wherin it is expressed he should teach all that are sent to him to wright and read.[4]

The trouble did not become serious, for in a few days, at a general meeting,

> The Town doe give Micell Metcalfe a call to keep school the year insuinge and leave it to the next select men to agree with him for 20£ a yeare.

Near the end of his second year, on the fourth of the twelfth month, he was requested to keep another year, when his reply was "that at present he was not ripe to give an answer," so it was agreed that he should continue a month on the same terms as before, and then they might come to an agreement. At the end of the month they made a similar contract with Mr. Metcalf for a year, "or so long therein as God shall enable him." It was specified "that if any inhabitant shall take any child or children to that end to send them to schoole" the schoolmaster might refuse to teach them until they gave him satisfaction. It was also provided

> that he shall be required no more highe waye work, but only one daye work of one man & a teame, and one day more of a man. And no advantage shall be taken to discount for not attending the Schoole except it be discontinued a full weeke together.

But it is evident that this year was not completed according to the contract. On the 6th of the 10th month "the want of a school Mr" was a subject of debate in the board of Selectmen.

---

[4] No early schoolmaster was required to teach spelling, as the subject was not considered important. In the arithmetic used by Master Metcalf the same word is sometimes spelled in three different ways in the same paragraph.

(To be continued.) p. 121

1644. 4ᵈ 12ᵐᵒ. Granted to the Feofees for the free schoole in Dedham for the use of the s'd schoole a parcel of the Training ground[1] so much as shall be set out to them by the Towne, which said p'cel is granted from this present day unto the last day of the eight month which shall be in the year 1650. Hen. Chickering, Eli. Lusher & Hen. Phillips deputed to set out the s'd parcell of Land above said.

The records of the Feoffees have not been preserved, so that we are not able to give the names of the teachers under their administration. There is a tradition that Ralph Wheelock, the ancestor of the first and second presidents of Dartmouth College, taught during that time; this is rendered the more probable from the fact that after removing to Medfield he was a teacher there for several years. John Brock, son of Henry Brock of Dedham, a graduate of Harvard College in 1646, is supposed to have taught in Dedham for a year or two after his graduation.

But there is no doubt that the school went into operation and received the regular support of the town, and soon required a building for its accommodation. The following record shows the action of the town:

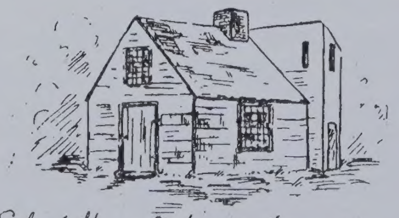
Jan. 1648–9 At a General meeting of the Town. . . A schoole house & a Watch house is resolved to be built this next yeare the care whereof is left to the select men.

Fortunately we have the specifications for this first school-house and the watch-house combined with it. In the records of the selectmen the neat handwriting of Capt. Lusher has preserved for us the following account of this early temple of learning:

11mo 15. 1648. Assemb: Hen Chickering, Joh Kingsbury, Joh. Dwight, Tho. Wight, Fra Chickering, Joshu. Fisher, & Elea: Lusher A school house to be built as followeth. together wᵗʰ a watch house.

the length 18 foote, being 14 foote beside the chimney, the wideness 15 foote, the studd 9 foote betwixt joynts, one floore of joyce: 2 convenient windowes in the lower roome & one in the chamber, the plancher layed, the floor planked, the stayers made, the sides boarded, feather-edged & rabbited, the doors made & hanged.

the watch house to be a leanto set at the back of the chimney sixe foote wide, the length therof 2 foote & one half mor than the house is wide, so placed that the end therof may extend past the corner of the house, so that the watch may have an aspect 4 severall wayes. & open windowes therein suitable to a watch house: & covered wᵗʰ board up to those windowes & upon the roofe, & a mandle tree hewen & fitted for the Chimney."



School House & Watch House 1648,

It is supposed that this building stood very near, if not on, the spot where the Unitarian Vestry now stands; V. 14 and we have only to imagine II. 1 the busy hum of school work filling the east room by day, and the faithful watching of the sentinel from the windows of the west-end leanto during the long and lonely nights, to understand how child and man in those old days performed their several parts in laying the foundation of a free school and a free state.

The preceding account covers the first seven years of the school; and for continuing the history we find but meagre assistance in the town records. Still there is enough to show that the spirit of the people had not changed, and that their purpose was still to be carried out. Thus the record runs:

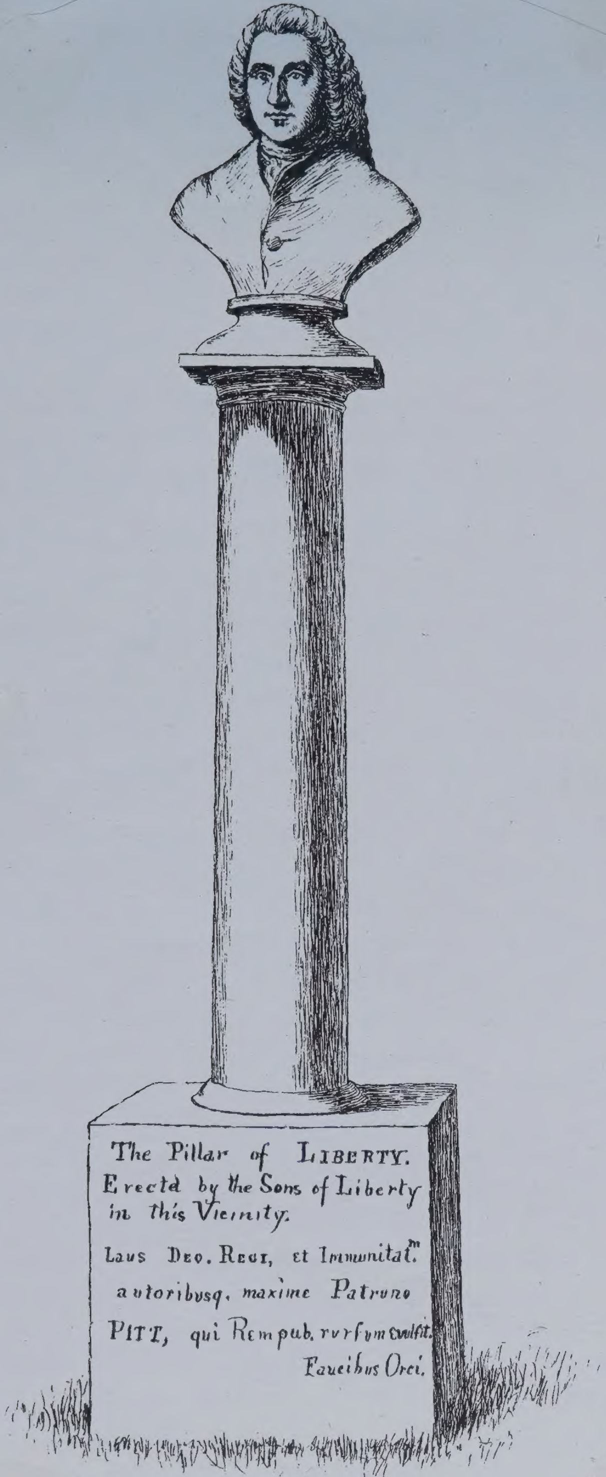
At a general town meeting 1651. . . It is resolved that a school for the education of youth in our town shall be continued and maintayned the whole term of seven yeares next, and that the settled mayntenance or wages of the Schoole Mʳ shall be 20£ p ann at yᵉ leaste: A Towne Stocke shall be raysed to the summe of 20£ at yᵉ least.

This shows that the first seven years had been so satisfactory that no change was desired in the management. No new election of feoffees was recorded; and we may presume that the same men continued to hold the office. But the next year a change was made in the care of the school whereby it passed into the hands of the selectmen. The following record of a general meeting indicates this:

3ᵈ of 11mo 1652. The question concerning the Schoole being kept only in winter being proposed for Resolution, the answer is: That the selectmen that shall be this daye chosen shall attend to procure a fit schoole Mʳ at the beginning of the summer; and if it p've difficult, or not to be attayned, they may p'pose the case to the Towne for further resolution.

---

[1] The Common near the Dexter School is a part of the old Training Ground.


The Pillar of LIBERTY.
Erectd by the Sons of Liberty
in this Vicinity.
Laus Deo. Regi, et Immunitat.^m
autoribusq. maxime Patrono
PITT, qui Rempub. rurſum evulſit.
Faucibus Orci.

THE DEDHAM HISTORICAL REGISTER.

VOL. I. OCTOBER, 1890. No. 4.

THE SCHOOLS AND TEACHERS OF DEDHAM.

BY CARLOS SLAFTER.

(*Continued from page 93.*)

THE following record of the Selectmen introduces the next Schoolmaster.

6. of 10 [mo] 59 . . being met to finishe the Countrey Rate. the consideration of the want of a schoolm^r being p[ro]posed it is vpon debating the case resolued to give a calle to Thomas Marret jun^r of Cambridg to keep the schoole for a quarter of a yeare vpon the alloweance p[ro]portionable to the sallary formerly agreed vpon in that case that is 5^l for that quarter & to be pd halfe in wheat & halfe in other corne.

Thomas Marret was the son of Deacon Thomas Marret of Cambridge, and was probably known in Dedham because his sister Abigail married Daniel Fisher of this town. In 1664 he was in New London, Connecticut, employed as a scrivener for that town. He was appointed custom-master for the port of New London in 1668, and on December 15th of the same year was chosen Marshal of New London County, which latter office he resigned in 1674. Miss Caulkins in her "History of New London" (page 314) states that he "was, for several years, the most conspicuous attorney in the place," and that his name disappears "from the rolls of living men, about 1685." He taught the Dedham school a year on the same conditions as Mr. Metcalf; and on the 11th of the 12mo 1660 [February, 1661] was covenanted with to keep school again "to be payd the one halfe in wheat at 4 shilinges 10 penc per bushell and the other halfe in Endine corne at 3 shillings per bushell to be payd quarterly." But he evidently did not finish his second year; and the towne showed its confidence in the venerable master Metcalf[1] by making with him another covenant on the 24th of the 5mo 1661. As a specimen of exact bargaining, characteristic of old times, we will venture to give it entire.

> Agreed with Michall Metcalfe to keepe the schoole so longe time as god shall inable him for seaven shilinges eight penc a weke the schoole to be keept in the parlor of the dweling house some time Frances Chickringes deceased: to teach the malle children that shall be sent to him by the inhabitance the sayd Michall do ingage to teach them to reade and to wright English as thay shall be capable: in considration where of we the select men do ingage and promise to pay vnto the say[d] Michall his ex[e]cetors or asignes at the ende of the quarter for so longe a time as he keepe schoole: seaven shilinges eight penc a weeke: viz. halfe in wheat at the price the biscat bakers take when it is dew and the other halfe in rye or Endine corne at the price it pas curant from man to man: and all good and merchantable corne to be delivered at his dweling house: more over that woode for the fire be layd in at the schoole house: a hachet and belows to be prouided all so it is at our liberty when we please to put in hoome we think goode to keepe the schoole and we grant the like librty to the sayd Michall to leaue of the schoole at any time when he shall se cause: not with standing: any thing expresed in eyther of thes covenants above sayd: shall not hinder the sayd Michall in his just librty or absence from schoole vpon any speciall ochasions or providences that may be fall and that no advantage shall be taken so as to detayne any parte of his wages for some times: being nessesarly taken of from the schoole prouided: if it shall be aboue a weekes time: it shall then be discounted: other wise not: the schoole to begine the first of the 6mo 1661 provided that the in habitanc take no children from other Townes to put them to schoole if any do so thay shall agree with the schooll master.

Under this agreement master Metcalf continued his labors probably till the spring of 1663. He died December 24, 1664. He was a beloved teacher, and his name should be honored.

The next Schoolmaster was John Swinerton. He was covenanted with as his predecessor had been, but in terms somewhat different. A part of the record is as follows:

---

[1] A large chest brought by him from England is now in the possession of the Historical Society. It is beautifully ornamented with inlaid wood.

> Nouember 22 1663 . . . the said m^{r} Swinareton is to teach such male childeringe as are sent to him to wright & read & the use of retmitick as thay are capable and the Latten tounge so fare as he can & to trie for one quarter of a yeare houe he may sute with the Towne & the Towne take content with him & so to continue for a year if there be a concurance betwen the Towne & him.

His term of service seems to have been half a year. Afterwards he settled as a physician in Salem, where he was respected for his skill and esteemed for his benevolence. A Latin book for elementary instruction, Brinsley's Accidence, containing John Swinerton's name, written in 1652, was formerly in the possession of William B. Fowle, of Boston. This book, consisting of questions and answers, was published in 1612, and was generally used in the schools of England. The Accidence of Ezekiel Cheever was published about 1650, and took the place of Brinsley's book in America. Dr. Swinerton died in Salem, January 6, 1691, aged 57.

The Town seems to have been compelled to come back to its home supply of instruction. One who is unable to endure the hard labor of subduing the forest and raising "wheat & other corne" is supposed to be worth trying in the not less useful work of teaching.

> 6. of 2. 64. Assemb. after Lecture. . . . In consideration of the p^{r}sent want of a school master and of the weakly estate of o^{r} Br Joseph Ellice he being willing and we being hopefull he may doe Some good in teaching Some childeren to read English. for p^{r}sent and vntill one more able may be attayned, doe agree and order. that forthwith notice be given that he shall begin to teach at the schoolhouse the next two daye and that he shall have 6^{s} p week so long as he shall so teach and that this shall be prpounded to the Town the next lectur daye that the mind of the Towne may be known then.

There is no doubt that the Town assented to the choice of "Br. Joseph Ellice" and that his teaching was satisfactory. When he had labored in his new vocation a half year or more, the following entry was made:

> 22: of 9: 64: Assemb: afternoon . . . being mett to make the Rate to paye the Schoolemaster at 3^{s} 6^{d} each Scholler the number of Schollers being 45. and estates rated at ½^{d} p[er] £

This was to pay Mr. Ellice for a half year's work, 85 estates were rated, the largest tax being that of Rev. John Allin, 15^{s} 7^{d}; the smallest, of "Elnath: Dunckly," 5^{d}.

A second year's service is implied in this record:

10: of 11 mo. 1665 . . . A bill is given to Joseph Ellice to reseave of the Constable 15^{l}—12^{s} in full for his sallary for keepeing the Schoole this p^{r}sen yeare

He continued in the work the next year, and another record shows his last engagement in the service of the Town.

19: of 9: 1666 . . . It is ordered that Joseph Ellice shall keepe the schoole one halfe yeare more and is to haue the same payem^{t} that he haue formrly had for the like time to begin againe the next 2 daye being the 26. of 9. 66:

The last record relative to him is this: *

28: 10: 66 . . . A bill is giuen to Joseph Ellice to receaue 7^{l} 16^{s} of the Constable in pt of payem^{t} for keepeing Schoole

So this man of "weakly estate" taught the school three years, and no fault was found in his record. He became a townsman January 11, 1651. He does not appear on the records as a church member; but he is there called "brother Ellice." His name is on the rate bills till 1671, but in 1672 "Vid: Ellice" takes its place; this seems to show approximately the date of his death.

c163 Samuel Man, a youth of twenty years and a graduate of Harvard College in the class of 1665, appears as a teacher in Dedham in the summer of 1667. The covenant with him was brief but definite.

13: 3: 67 Assemb. after Trayneing . . . Agreed with m^{r} Samuel Man. to teach the male Children of this Towne that shall be sent to him in English writeing. Grammar. and Arithmeticke for the space of one whole yeare from 27th of this Instant moneth. for which he is to receaue 20^{l} in Such paym^{t} and at Such prizes as the Countrey Rate shall accept for thet yeare. one halfe to be payed at the end of each halfe yeare. at his assignm^{t} in Dedham

Subscribed SAMUELL MAN:

This teacher seems to have been much esteemed, being doubtless more scholarly than his predecessors. Probably about this time the number of families in Dedham made it necessary to maintain a grammar school in which boys could be fitted for college. Before Mr. Man's first year was completed the selectmen recorded their action as follows:

27: 2. 68 Assemb: afternoone. . . . It is agreed and ordered that if m^{r} Samuell Man will accept of the same covenant made with him the last year: both for what he shall doe and w^{t} paye he shall receaue for salleray for that yeare he shall be schoole master for the yeare next ensueing the end of the yeare he covenanted for.

The young man continued his duties and, as the end of the year approached, we find still further proof of his popularity in the following record:

26: 2: 69. Assemb. to consider the Schoolem^{rs} continuance Our Reverd Pasto^{r} being p^{r}sent

Lieft Fisher Ensig: Fisher Pet: Woodward
Serg^{t} Averey Serg^{t} Fuller. Tymo: Dwight
Elea: Lusher

It is by vnanimous voate resolued to desire M^{r} Man to continue to keepe schoole in Towne one year more. after the present year is expired

M^{r} Man being p^{r}sent upon call, it being p[ro]pounded to him whether he would attend the same worke of keepeing schoole according to his former couen^{t} for one yeare more and accept of 20^{l} pounds for his sallary in Corn at price Currant. who accept of and engage to p[ro]ceed accordingly.

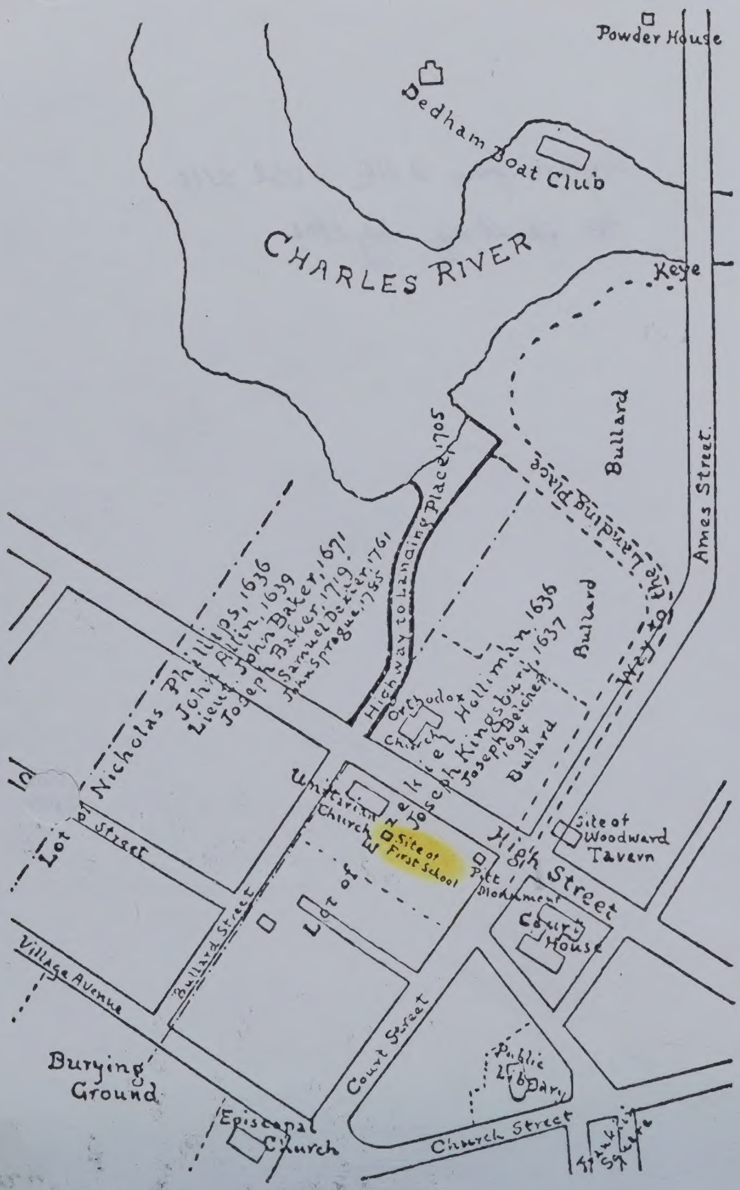
The next year the same covenant is renewed except "he recaue no Indian corne vpon this account for more than 3^{s} p bushell."

In 1671 Mr Man was re-elected, and also in 1672, when the record indicates that other plans are in his mind.

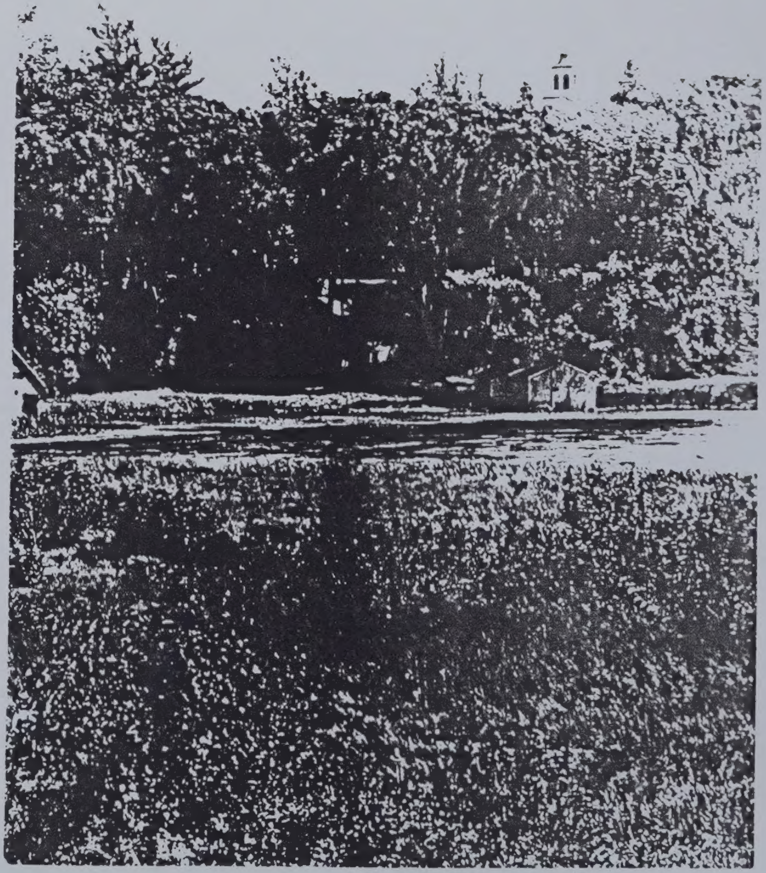
26: 2: 72—Assemb. towards night. . . vpon treatie wth M^{r} Sam^{ll} Man. he accept of agreem^{t} tendered to him to keepe the Schoole in this Towne for the space of one yeare more after his p^{r}sent yeare is expired upon the same tearmes that he agreed vpon 13: 3: 67. allwayes excepting his engagem^{t} to Wollomonuppoage [Wrentham]. and vpon that occasion. he to giue the Selectmen two monthes notice. that they may supply themselues.

The fact that the selectmen were within a few months trying to "supply themselves" proves that Mr. Man soon left the school to enter upon his other engagement. He will disappear from Dedham for a season, to return a little later. But a curious entry in the Records attests his honesty and fidelity in little things.

13: 10: 72 . . This day m^{r} Man sent 6^{d} in money in satisfaction for

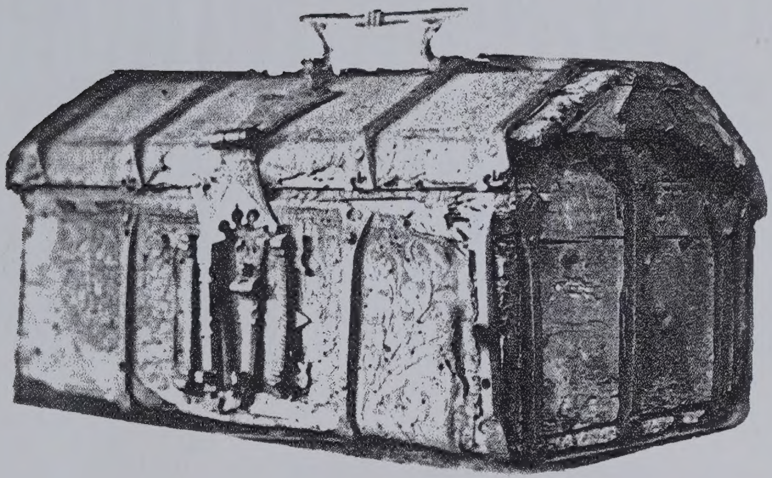

Powder House
Dedham Boat Club
CHARLES RIVER
Keye
Ames Street.
Bullard
Way to the Landing Place
Highway to Landing Place, 1705
Nicholas Phillips, 1636
John Allin, 1639
Lieut. John Baker, 1671
Joseph Baker, 1719
Samuel Dexter, 1761
John Sprague, 1755
Hallimain 1636
Joseph Kingsbury, 1637
Joseph Belcher 1694
Bullard
Bullard
Orthodox Church
Unitarian Church
Site of First School
Lot of
Lot of
Street
Pitt Monument
Site of Woodward Tavern
High Street
Court House
Bullard Street
Village Avenue
Court Street
Public Library
Burying Ground
Episcopal Church
Church Street

Map of old Dedham



LANDING PLACE ON CHARLES RIVER.
DEDHAM VILLAGE

FOUNDATIONS
1600 – 1649



A small chest brought from England by Michael Metcalf ✓

. . . I did endeavor to take a survey of the Country. The more I looked, the more I liked it. . . I did not think that in all the known world it could be paralleled for so many goodly groves of trees, dainty fine round rising hillocks, delicate fair large plains, sweet crystal fountains, and clear running streams that twine in fine meanders through the meads . . . Continued within the volume of the lands, birds in abundance, fish in multitudes; and discovered, besides, millions of turtledoves on green boughs, which sat pecking of the full, ripe pleasant grapes . . . If this land be not rich, then is the whole world poor.

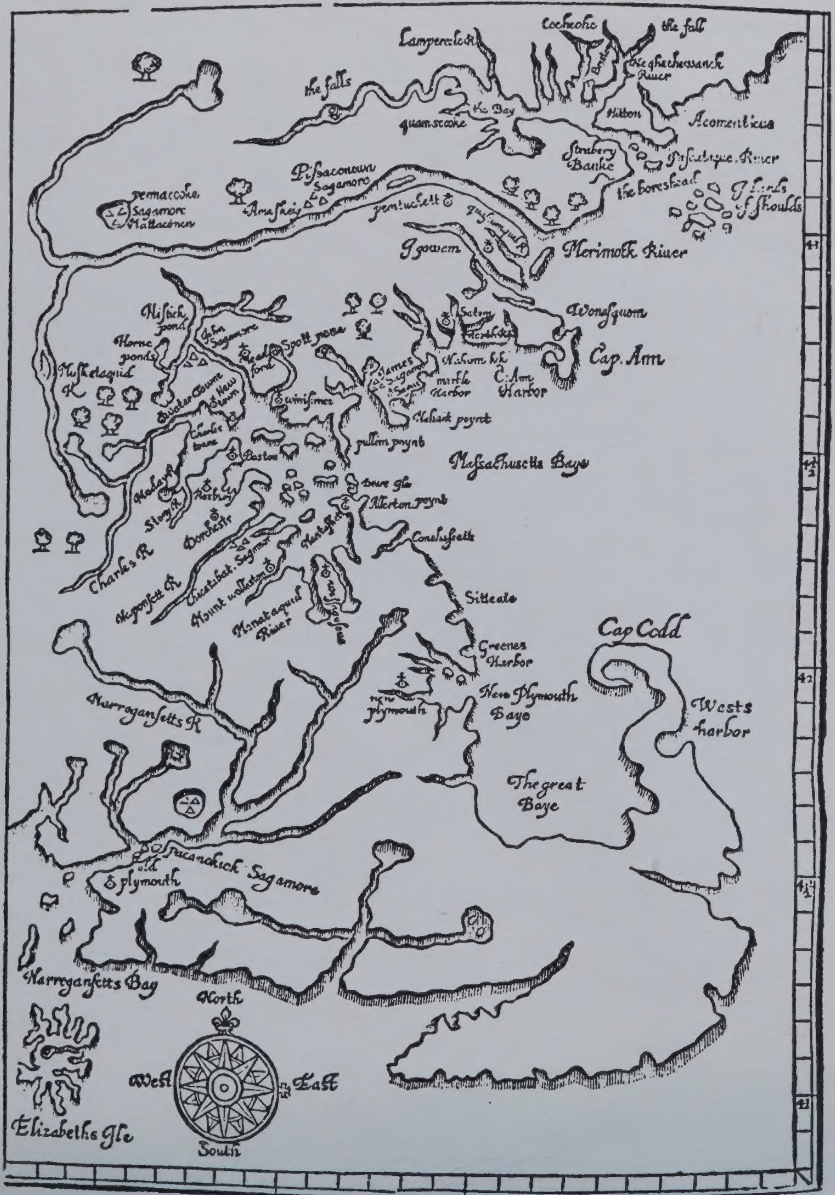
–Thomas Morton
New English Canaan *(1637)*

Dedham Massachusetts 1635-1870
Robert Brand Hanson (F74 D3 H27) W15H5

Dedham, Massachusetts 1635-1890

by Robert Brand Hanson

F 74 D37
W1 S45


Lamperelock
Cochecho
the fall
the falls
Neghechewanck River
quamscoke
Bay
Hilton
Acomenticus
Strabery Banke
Piscataqua River
the foreshead
Isles of Shoulds
Pissacoonowm Sagamore
pennacooke Sagamore Nattacmen
Amaskeg
pentucksett
Merimock River
Agawam
Wonesquam
Misticke pond
Horne ponds
Musketaquid R
John Sagamore
Salem
Cap. Ann
Nahum ke
marble Harbor
C. Ann Harbor
Winisimet
Charles towne
Boston
Watertowne
New towne
pullin poynt
Massachusetts Bayes
Roxbury
Deere Isle
Allerton poynt
Charles R
Dorchester
Conehassett
Naponsett R
Chickatabot Sagamore
Mount wollestone
Monatoquid River
Sitteate
Greenes Harbor
Cap Codd
New Plymouth Bayes
new plymouth
Wests harbor
Narragansetts R
The great Baye
Pacanokick Sagamore
old plymouth
Narragansetts Bay
North
West
East
South
Elizabeths Isle

William Wood's 1634 view of New England

> ... To enjoy all that land on the easterly and southerly side of the Charles River not formerly granted unto any town or particular person. And also to have 5 miles square on the other side of the river.

The Dedham men had planned well – and even craftily – before submitting their petition for enlargement. By the time of the second proprietors' meeting on August 29th, they had recruited Robert Feke to become one of their number. As it worked out, he attended only three of the proprietors' meetings – all of them in Watertown – and apparently never even ventured inland to view the lands he had been granted. He was, however, the husband of John Winthrop's son's widow, and influence with Winthrop and the General Court was what the group really wanted from him; the only cost to the town for the use of his prestige was a promise for a farm grant to be added to his usual houselot grant. Certainly almost any land award he might have asked for was no problem to the proprietors – to almost everyone's surprise, Dedham would find herself the possessor of over 200 square miles of territory, and all of it hers to give away!

Curiously, neither the petitioners nor the General Court had the foggiest notion of the true dimensions of the land area they were dealing with. The Massachusetts Bay Colony Patent of 1629 set the southern bound of the colony on a line drawn three miles south of the Charles River, "or on any or every part thereof." The notion was that the Charles River (which nobody had ever explored to any depth of the interior, and which – since it had no noteworthy beaver population – probably did not run back to that mythical northern lake) ran more or less west-northwest from Boston Harbor. Two maps still extant from the 1630 - 1635 period show the Charles petering out somewhere in the vicinity of modern Dedham; presumably, all of the parties involved in the deliberations of 1636 would have been of the opinion that the new town's southern boundary fell somewhere within the present town of Medfield.

In 1638 the Bay Colony became embroiled in an agrument with the Plymouth folk over the boundary between Hingham and Cohasset; any kind of rational settlement required a certain knowledge of just how far south the river did run. Accordingly, Dedham appointed John Rogers and Jonathan Fairbanks to join two commissioners appointed by the Colony, and "go upon a discovery of the Charles River." Somewhat startled by the river's sudden turn southward at what is now Needham, this party pushed on, and eventually reached a point where they took a reading of 41°41′

north latitude (a wrong figure, as it developed), and noted that the river was still flowing southward, "but we, for want of necessities, could not at that time try the utmost end of the river." Since the actual southernmost point of the Charles River lies some fifteen miles farther north than the reading taken by those adventurous men (albeit poor surveyors), it is not improbable that they had already reached the southernmost point. Various succeeding commissions attempted to correct the errors of their predecessors – a 1642 survey set the boundary at 41°55′, which figure was deemed wrong by a 1718 survey by a joint Massachusetts-Rhode Island commission, which said the proper location was 42°3′. That, in turn, was challenged by a Rhode Island survey of 1750, which claimed that the surveyors had erred too far south by some fifteen miles, because they had mistaken a tributary for the main stream of the river. Ultimately, the whole issue ended up in the United States Supreme Court, which, in 1846, found in favor of Massachusetts and settled (210 years after the fact) the location of Dedham's boundary in 1636.

If there had been little apparent hurry in getting the new plantation started after the initial 1635 order for settlement, there seemed to be even less haste evident in any inland movement by the new grantees. They busied themselves in creating by-laws and policies for the "well-ordering" of the new community, and in sending Thomas Bartlett (the town's official surveyor) up to the site, to lay out lots as they were awarded. By the 25th of November, however, even though no one was yet in residence at Dedham, the proprietors began to show evidence of uneasiness:

> Whereas our town of Dedham being far remote from other towns so that it is requisite we should enjoy what number of people we may for our better safety from danger, as also for other comforts depending thereupon; Wherefore we do now by general consent order that all those which have or shall hereafter receive lot in our said town shall before the first day of November next become inhabitant within our said town, to improve their said lots, & so shall there constantly remain dwelling . . .
>
> And if any person or persons having lot shall not perform herein according to the true meaning hereof – then all such grant or grants made unto any such party or parties shall become void as if the same had never been. And the same lot or lots, with all the appurtenances, shall return unto the said town to be disposed of otherwise at our pleasure unto such as will & shall become inhabitants with us.

That December it was noted that "certain of our company are gone up to inhabit this winter at our town of Dedham." This advance party seems to have consisted, for the most part, of the younger men and those without families or pressing affairs at Watertown or any of the other towns along the Bay. Certainly Nicholas Phillips and Ezekiel Holliman were there (they were caught illegally felling trees), and probably Ralph Shepard, John Rogers, Lambert Genere, Joseph Shaw, and the younger Morses as well. The majority of the proprietors were present at the "first assembly in Dedham" on March 23, 1637, and it seems likely that most of them must have been resident at Dedham at that time, or very soon thereafter.[2]

By the time actual settlement began in earnest, it must have been abundantly apparent to the Dedham company that they were serving an unforeseen – and probably unwanted – use for the Bay settlements. Dedham had become a buffer zone between Massachusetts Bay Colony and her enemies, real and imagined, foreign and domestic. The Reverend Roger Williams had been banished from Massachusetts in 1635, and, by the time settlement began at Dedham, had established himself with a growing colony of fellow freethinkers at Providence. His heresies – religious and political – had badly annoyed (and frightened) the General Court; they were plainly glad to have his new settlement (which was itself beyond their jurisdiction) at least partially insulated from immediate contact with the population center at Boston.

The Dedham folk probably were not much concerned about Roger Williams – there was another danger, far too real and pressing, lurking at the door. In July of 1636 Pequot Indians had murdered John Oldham, a churlish soul ("a mad jack in his mood," said William Bradford) whom many of the Dedham people had known at Watertown. The following month, barely six days after the Dedham proprietors' first planning session, a punitive force under John Endicott set out to punish the savages, but succeeded only in marching about a great deal and keeping the Indians stirred up. Raiding and pillaging became common along the lower Connecticut, and it was anybody's guess as to when some marauding band might turn up to attack Boston. Matters continued to deteriorate, and, in April of 1637 – one month after the first assembly on Dedham soil – the town ordered that the "watches and wards shall be carefully set & kept. . . in the best manner we are able." By May the citizens were lamenting that "the evil disposition of the natives has caused us of late to undergo much watching & wardings, etc., whereby much expense of munitions, etc., has been amongst us to our great charge and detriment, & the same like to continue." A delegation was appointed to deal with Thomas Cakebread of Watertown, to offer him ("upon good consideration of his knowledge of martial affairs") the opportunity to become a Dedham proprietor.[3] In June a Connecticut force destroyed a Pequot fortification near what is now New Haven, but this served only to disperse the remaining bands into the woods – destination unknown. John Winthrop was getting reports that month that the "Pequods [sic] were coming this way," and the whole Bay Colony remained on edge until, finally, on July 28th, a joint Massachusetts-Connecticut force surprised and virtually annihilated the remnants of the tribe.

---

[2] It was apparently possible to get to Dedham from Watertown and back in one day foot. Whether or not the journey would have been undertaken by anyone withou treme necessity for going with such haste is problematical. The woods were fille hostile animals and rattlesnakes, and the trail was not reliable. As late as 1658, Bearstowe, a brother to William and George of Dedham, drowned on the way: "co from Dedham in the night, he fell through the ice near Mr. Parker's farm."

Potential Indian assault and incipient social heresy notwithstanding, the Dedham proprietors (with the addition of such military and social safeguards as they were able to muster) doggedly pursued their primary task of turning a diverse collection of people and a huge chunk of virgin wilderness into a viable town.

At their very first meeting, they ordered Thomas Bartlett to begin surveying and laying out lots for the first of the proprietors.[4] A twelve-acre standard was established for married men (each twelve-acre lot also came with four acres of swamp which the grantee was obliged to clear), and bachelors were accorded less:

> Ordered that single men shall henceforth have eight acres for a houselot and no more for their first sitting down, & so much meadow ground thereunto. Resolution that as their families increase they shall have such enlargement as shall be thought fitting & so near unto their former lot as may conveniently be performed. And also it is ordered that they shall have each of them an acre and a half of swamp to be cleared . . .

Swamp clearing was not a whimsically applied rule. The first houselots were set out on the upland running along East Street (itself part of an ancient Indian trail) and High Street (a new road running from the "Little River"at the intersection of current High, Williams, and East Streets to present Dedham Common and beyond). Backing these roads was swamp – the immensity of Wigwam swamp is still obvious, yet the lowland surrounding Lowder Brook and any one of a half dozen other small streams and ponds was as densely overgrown and virtually impenetrable. From the depths of these thickets and bogs, the wildcat and wolf presented major threats to the well-being of Dedham's people and animals.[5] A ten-shilling bounty was offered very early for positive proof (usually the heads) of wolves killed on Dedham soil. In time, the town even employed full-time hunters and maintained a town-owned pack of dogs trained for the hunt.[6]

Clearing swamps also helped to forestall the development of a wood shortage. The use of wood for cooking and heating fires as well as for building materials tended to consume available supplies at a prodigious rate; by one estimate, an average family would, in the course of one year, for burning purposes alone, require the wood from four acres of forest totally leveled, or from twenty acres selectively cut. Multiply that estimate by the thirty or more families in Dedham before 1640, add in the amount of lumber required for building purposes, and the answer indicates an amount of wood being cut which staggers the imagination. Restrictions on wood-cutting on public or unalloted lands were strictly enforced – too many of the Dedham people remembered the difficulties (social and political) which had been engendered in Boston by the almost total denudation of the landscape within three years of the foundation of that town. With a whole continent at their back door, the Dedham settlers established one of the first conservation projects in New England.

---

[3] Tit-for-tat, Cakebread was pirated away from Dedham in the following year. A delegation from Sudbury promised him a monopoly in the miller's business in that new town, which proved a stronger attraction than his holdings and position in either Dedham or Watertown.

[4] It was noted on November 28th 1639, "For as much as Thomas Bartlett hath not attended unto the measuring out of our lots . . . we wholly discharge him of that employment until he shall come & inhabit with us." Within a year he had entirely sold out his rights in the town (for 22 shillings); and there is no evidence that he ever even attempted a residence at Dedham. Presumably the difficulties of trying to survey large stretches of woodland with no more equipment than a compass and a long piece of string – and no thanks or compensation for his efforts – proved too much for his patience.

[5] John Dwight, seven-year-old son and namesake of one of the foremost of the first settlers, wandered off into the woods and was presumed to have been eaten by wolves in 1638.

[6] The practice of having town dogs died fairly quickly. It is unclear whether they were so successful in hunting that they outlived their usefulness, or whether the necessity of having to pay a townsman to "whip the dogs out of the meetinghouse" overwhelmed the frugality of the town fathers.

For those of the proprietors who had a forward look, it was also apparent that a swamp (once cleared) will become a bog, and a bog (once drained) will become a meadow. Meadow-hunger was one of the first and prime motivating issues in the town; the rich, grassy swards bordering the river had been the major attraction to the Dedham site in the first place. The grass, to be sure, was not English grass, nor was it entirely satisfactory in nutrition for the cattle, but it was as good as might be had until a better seed was imported from England.

The accessible meadow area in close proximity to the village itself (even including the semi-boggy grassland along Dwight's Brook) was not, however, sufficient to supply the needs of the community. In time, swamp clearance would provide more meadow, but other solutions were needed immediately. Despite their vast land holdings, the proprietors sought to solve their problem by buying more.

The General Court had, from the beginning, been in the habit of granting large tracts of land to individuals as marks of esteem, or as recompense for particular public services. One such grant had been made to Samuel Dudley, and bordered the northeast edge of the Dedham grant, between the river and East Street. Immediately recognizing its value as grassland, four of the Dedham proprietors (Samuel Morse, Philemon Dalton, Lambert Genere, and John Dwight) made a private purchase of 300 acres, for which they paid £20. It was apparent to the rest of the town that this land was too valuable to be allowed to exist as a private fiefdom, and the proprietors contracted to purchase it from the private owners, giving them a £20 profit over and above their initial investment. "Purchase Meadows" (as they came to be called) were subsequently divided into sections, each allotted to a particular district of the town as a "herdwalk" for the cattle of that district.

If meadows were important to the needs of Dedham's cattle, a mill was a necessity to the needs of her settlers. As early as March of 1637, it was noted:

> Whereas there hath been some propositions by Abraham Shaw for the erecting of a corn mill in our town. We do now grant unto the said Abraham Shaw sixty acres of land to belong unto the said mill so erected provided always that the same be a water mill, else not. We order also that every man that hath lot with us shall assist to bring the millstones from Watertown mill by land unto the boating place near Mr.

> Haynes' farm. It is also further granted unto the said Abraham that the said ground & mill so to be built shall be at his own disposing in case of sale . . . saving that our town shall have the first refusal of it, at such a price as another man would really give . . . accordingly.

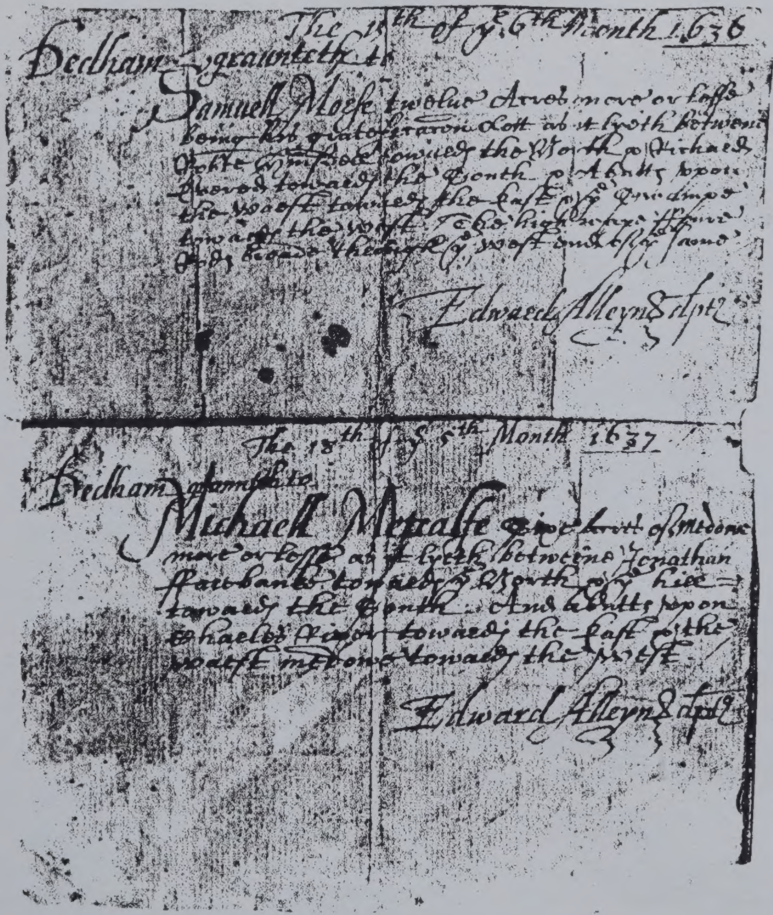
Shaw selected his millsite on the Charles River, somewhere in the vicinity of the present Needham Street Bridge. He had gotten little farther than the erection of a sluiceway when he died, late in 1638. His son Joseph, who stood to inherit the grant and the mill, chose not to pursue the issue, and shortly moved to Weymouth. The project was, for the moment, abandoned, and the people were forced to rely on inadequate handmills for the grinding of all "corn" – an inclusive term encompassing wheat, rye, and barley, as well as Indian corn.

In 1639, as the need for a mill became increasingly acute (and as it had become a popular notion that the old Shaw site was too far from the village, anyway), someone with a keen eye took notice of East Brook, a small stream which sprang up about 100 rods east of modern Washington Street, in the rear of Brookdale Cemetery. Although its fall was adequate along its course to an eventual terminus at the Neponset River, East Brook did not have enough actual water content to warrant trying to harness the stream for water to warrant trying to harness the stream for water power. The river provided a close and obvious source for an augmenting water supply, and, on March 25, 1639, the town ordered

> that a ditch shall be made at common charge [from the Charles River] through Purchase Meadow unto the East Brook, that it may be both a partition fence in the same, and may also serve as a course unto a water mill; that it may be found fitting to set a mill upon the said brook by the judgment of a workman for that purpose.

It was also provided that anyone who should undertake the actual construction of a mill on East Brook should have the same 60 acre award as had been granted Abraham Shaw, "with such other benefits & privileges as he should have had in all respects accordingly, provided that the said mill doth grind corn before the first of the tenth month [i.e. December] as it is intended."

"Mother Brook" was duly dug – the first English-built canal in North America – but it was quite awhile before anyone turned up as a prospective mill-builder. The 60-acre grant had been forfeited by the time John Elderkin arrived from Lynn in 1641, and undertook the project. A contractor or master-builder by trade, he had



The 1[illegible]th of ye 6th Month 1636
Dedham graunteth to
Samuell Morse twelue Acres more or lesse
being his great [illegible] lott as it lyeth betweene
[illegible] towards the North & Richard
[illegible] towards the South & Abutts upon
[illegible] towards the East & [illegible]
the [illegible] towards the West [illegible]
[illegible]
Edward Alleyn

The 18th of ye 5th Month 1637
Dedham graunteth to
Michaell Metcalfe [illegible] of Medowe
more or lesse as it lyeth betweene Jonathan
ffairbanke towards the North & [illegible] his
towards the South. And abutts upon
[illegible] towards the East & the
[illegible] towards the West.
Edward Alleyn

Land grant certificates issued by the Dedham proprietors

built (and run) a mill in Lynn previous to his Dedham venture. He stayed only a short time (barely long enough to get the mill built and operating), and moved on in November of 1642.[7]

Nathaniel Whiting had served in a quasi-partnership with Elderkin. When Elderkin moved out, Whiting was able to come up with only half of the capital required to buy the business outright. Three of the most prominent citizens of the town (John Allin, Nathan Aldus, and John Dwight) purchased the remaining half, and they, with Whiting, ran the mill as a rather stormy partnership until 1649, when Nathaniel finally accrued enough money to buy them out.

In terms of the number of people to be accommodated within the new town, the Dedham proprietors considered their community to be complete as early as August of 1637:

> For as much as our proportion of allotments that we have formerly resolved upon are now fully complete according to our intendments we do now therefore fully agree by a general consent that no more lots shall be granted out until a further view may be made what accommodation may be found, for comfortable entertainment of others. In the mean time, those who have given their names desiring to have lots with us shall have a negative answer given them, for that we have as many as we conceive can yet be entertained.

Such an exclusionary vote would be an odd development in any society, but in Dedham – which was, by definition, exclusionary from the very beginning – it borders on the startling. Obviously, there was more represented by that vote than the achievement of some arbitrarily selected "ideal" number of settlers.

By the time the Dedham proprietors held their meeting of July 14, 1637, thirty-one men had been accepted as official settlers, and had signed the Covenant. Four of that number (John Coolidge, Thomas Hastings, Thomas Bartlett, and Robert Feke) had never made so much as a pretense of moving from Watertown to Dedham, and, by their absence from meetings at the new town, had functionally terminated their franchise. All of them disposed of their Dedham lands within a fairly short time.

---

[7] John Elderkin was a transient soul; he was at Lynn in 1637, Dedham in 1641, Reading in 1646, Providence in 1648, New London in 1651, and Norwich in 1664. He was variously employed as a carpenter, miller, millwright, shipwright, builder, and tavern-keeper. He built the first and second churches in both New London and Norwich, as well as the first mill in both places. He constructed the first merchant vessel ever owned or built at New London (the *New London Tryall* – 1661), and he kept the ordinary at the same town.

John Ellis and Richard Everett, although they ultimately did come to settle, likewise lost their voice in the development of town affairs – Everett was only periodically present in Dedham because of his involvements at Springfield, and Ellis (after his initial appearance at the first proprietors' meeting at Watertown) did not attend another meeting for almost two years!

Ezekiel Holliman, one of the remaining twenty-five, had come to Dedham in the wake of some conflicts he had generated at Boston relative to his religious opinions; the word "heresy" had been used, but his departure preceded the brouhaha's achieving legal proportions. Apparently figuring that a frontier context would be more amenable to divergent philosophies, he was one of the first to actually head upriver – in the dead of winter – to settle the place. He then became one of the town's first victims of social justice, when he was heavily fined for illegally felling trees and for covering his house with clapboard contrary to a town vote. Although apparently still in residence at Dedham, he then began to boycott the proprietors' meetings, in silent protest to the injustice he felt had been done. His voice in town affairs also was stilled.

The twenty-four "functioning" townsmen of Dedham were increased in number by a vote of that July 14th meeting: Ralph Wheelock, Thomas Cakebread, and Henry Phillips were accepted as fellow proprietors. Phillips came to join his brother Nicholas, who had been among the first proprietors in the Watertown group; Cakebread was a cipher – like the other Watertown folk who never made the move to Dedham, he chose not to exercise his franchise by settlement in the town.

Ralph Wheelock came, apparently in hopes of being admitted as the minister of the church that inevitably would be formed in Dedham. A graduate of Clare College, Cambridge[8] (where he was in studies 1623-1627), he found himself in the company of another, earlier proprietor with similar aspirations – Thomas Carter (Saint John's College, Cambridge 1629-1633).

It is the following meeting of July 18th (the mere four-day hiatus between meetings being a totally unprecedented instance of frequency in proprietors' meetings) which holds the key to both the exclusionary vote of August 11th and subsequent events:

> Assembled whose names are underwritten:
> Thomas Carter, Edw: Alleyn, Abra: Shaw, Sam: Morse, Phil: Dalton, John Dwight, Lambert Genere, Nicho: Phillips, John Gay, Ralph Shepard, Joseph Shaw, Jonath: Fairbank, Francis Austin, Daniel Morse, John Rogers, William Bearstowe.
>
> Ezekiel Holliman requiring consent of our society to turn over [i.e. sell] his lot . . . it is condescended so to do. . .
>
> Upon some agitation concerning Mr. Dalton's joining with us it is consented unto, upon the manifestation of his resolution to sit down with us in a civil condition without any further expectations . . .
>
> Mr. John Allin with diverse others being propounded to sit down with us . . . they are accepted so to do . . .
>
> Admitted: Ferdinando Adams, Michael Metcalf, Mr. John Allin, Anthony Fisher, Tho: Wight, Eleazer Lusher, Robert Hinsdale, John Luson, John Fisher, Thomas Fisher, Mr. Timothy Dalton, & John Morse producing certificates from the magistrates subscribed unto our Covenant accordingly.

The twelve[9] people thus accepted as Dedham proprietors were men of background and experience almost certain to radically affect their functions as Dedham townsmen – and, thereby, the development of Dedham itself.

Michael Metcalf, himself a son of a Puritan minister, was an East Anglian weaver and a victim of the oppressions of Bishop Wren of Norwich. He wrote an eloquent treatise on his persecutions addressed "To all the true professors of Christ's Gospel within the City of Norwich:"

> . . . You are not ignorant . . . of the great trouble I sustained in the Archdeacon's and Bishop's Court, at the hands of my enemies, concerning the matter of bowing, as well as other matters of like consequence. . .
>
> When my enemies conspired together to take away my life, being driven from my family, and sometimes to avoid the hands of my enemies, my wife did hide me in the roof of my house, covering me over with straw. . .
>
> I was persecuted in the land of my fathers' sepulchres for not bowing

---

[8] Cambridge University was the standard-bearer of Calvinistic Puritanism in England.

[9] John Morse's "arrival" is merely that of a member of a family coming of age and joining his father and brothers as a proprietor.

> at the name of Jesus and observing the ceremonies forced upon me at the instance of Bishop Wren of Norwich . . .
>
> Suffering many times for the cause of religion, I was forced for the sake of the liberty of my conscience, to flee from my wife and children to go into New England; taking ship for the voyage at London, 17th September 1636, and being by tempests tossed up and down upon the seas till the Christmas following . . .

Thomas Wight was a native of Alford, Lincolnshire. Like his townswoman Ann Hutchinson (who, at the time Thomas was arriving in Dedham, was fomenting great religious and civil strife at Boston), he had been a parishioner of John Cotton at Boston, England. It is not improbable that he chose Dedham over Boston as his new home in America, at least partially out of a desire to avoid the rising controversy that his former fellow-parishioner was creating.

Robert Hinsdale would become a primary figure of civil authority in Dedham. His philosophy was strongly influenced by the preachings of the Reverend John Rogers, pastor to the flock in Hinsdale's home town of Dedham, England. "Come, let us go to Dedham, and get a little fire," said one of Rogers' English admirers; Hinsdale reflected the blaze very well.

Eleazer Lusher sprang (like many of his fellow parishioners who would come to America and to Dedham) from the liberal Puritan teachings of the Reverend John Phillips at Fressingfield/Wrentham, Suffolk. He eventually would rise to be a member of the Court of Assistants and the Captain of the Boston Artillery Company, as well as a figure so authoritative in Dedham that, after his death, the town would lament:

> When Lusher was in office, all things went well,
> But how they go since, it shames us to tell.

Timothy Dalton (St. John's College, Cambridge 1610-1614) had been the rector of a church at Woolverstone/Ipswich, Suffolk. His appearance in Dedham was apparently due largely to the influence of his brother Philemon, an early Dedham proprietor, who lobbied for his admittance. Although not technically a member of the Allin party, the timing and form of his admittance are important, as will be seen.

John Allin (Caius College, Cambridge 1612-1616) was possibly the rector at Saint Mary's-on-the-Quay Church in Ipswich, Suffolk. Deprived of his living by Archbishop Laud, he joined the flight of

Puritan clergy to New England, being himself of sufficient note to require a disguise for his escape.[10]

Thomas Fisher was John Allin's brother-in-law, and **John Fisher** was a probable relative of Thomas'. There does not appear to be any family connection with the **Anthony Fisher** who was a member of the Allin party, but he seems to have been philosophically compatible with the rest of the group.

The arrival of a group so solidly religious and so internally unified boded ill for those of the earlier arrivals whose views were neither so lofty nor so spiritual. Ezekiel Holliman immediately saw the handwriting on the wall – he could live in quiet non-communication with the earlier arrivals, but, being nobody's fool, he recognized that there was nothing that could make good neighbors out of a religious liberal and a crew of dogmatically hard-headed Puritans. He sold out his Dedham holdings without delay and wandered on to a place where he thought he might be better appreciated; Roger Williams' growing collection of free thinkers at Providence welcomed him heartily, and, ultimately, he and Williams ended up re-baptizing each other, as a sign of a new beginning in a new church context more compatible with their particular notions of Christianity.

This company set the town of Dedham on its proverbial ear. Allin came, as its leader, preceded by enough propaganda to establish him as a strong force even before his arrival in the town. Timothy Dalton, who was in no way his inferior in education (and who even had an edge on him in maturity), was informed in no uncertain terms that he was welcome to settle, but only in a "civil condition" – he was not going to be encouraged in any notions of becoming a candidate for the Dedham pulpit! Not surprisingly, Timothy Dalton – and Thomas Carter, too – acknowledged the inevitability of Allin's supremacy, and sought greener pastures. Dalton was the teaching officer of the church at Hampton by 1639, and Carter became the first minister at Woburn.

---

[10] Allin boarded a ship with several other ministers, likewise disguised to avoid prosecution. Once safely out to sea, the assorted clergy on board threw off their disguises and launched into seemingly endless and repetetive daily prayer meetings. One of the passengers, being discovered on his way to the rail with a hook and line, was questioned as to his participation in such an activity on the Sabbath. He could only protest that he did not know when the Sabbath was; he thought every day was the Sabbath, for "they did nothing but preach and pray from one end of the week unto the other."

to embrace [him] with such a brotherly love as ought to be amongst [those] in so near a covenant."

In fairly short order, John Luson, John Frary, Robert Hinsdale, and Eleazer Lusher were accepted and approved for inclusion in the church.[12] Anthony Fisher[13] took awhile to "see and be humbled" for the "pride and height of his spirit" and "his failings of carriage," but he eventually came around and achieved acceptance. John Hunting[14], a late arrival who had been a wandering evangelist in England, was approved before the end of the summer, but "stiff and unhumbled" Joseph Kingsbury, upon close questioning, went into "such a distempered, passionate flying out upon one of the company" that it was decided to let him ruminate upon his sins and leave the question of his membership to the whole church, after it might be gathered.

Edward Alleyn[15] was subjected to criticism by Timothy Dalton (who objected to his actions as a member of Watertown Church) and Francis Austin (who raised a personal gripe of "offenses and distaste" between them), but survived those complaints, as well as further objections raised by other people at an open meeting of the town. Anthony Fisher, despite his previous acceptance, was so beset by comments on "further offences . . . which could not be cleared to the satisfaction of the parties offended nor to the company," that his previous acceptance was rescinded and he was "left out of the work for the present."

In the course of this selection process, it was becoming clear to Allin that the "great weight of the work" and the "great weakness and insufficiency" of those seeking to follow the Lord's will were focusing an ever-increasing importance to the step of selecting a pastor:

> . . . we did expect & much endeavored the guidance & help of Mr. John Phillips who came over that summer with some Godly company & had been invited to this plantation by letters formerly having therefore hopes from him of obtaining he was much desired in the first beginning. Whereupon he delaying his resolution, we were so delayed in our conclusion of this work as that the summer [of 1638] passed away in expectation of his help.[16]

Although unquestionably the popular candidate for the Dedham pulpit (at least as far as the Allin party was concerned), John Phillips made another choice:

> Whereunto we had the longer time by the delays of Mr. Phillips who being called divers ways could not speedily resolve, but at length upon weighty reasons concerning the public service of the church and foundation of the college [i.e. Harvard], he was so far persuaded to attend to the call of Cambridge that we saw no present hopes of him & so about the beginning of October came to resolutions to cast ourselves upon the Lord. . .

Deprived of the chosen leader, the Dedham Church fell back upon its own number of leadership. The Church having been "gathered" on November 8, 1638, the group[17] selected John Allin as Pastor and John Hunting as Ruling Elder (the latter selection falling much to the chagrin of Ralph Wheelock, who really wanted the job); ordination was set for April 24th, 1639.

Ironically, John Phillips left his chosen post at the Cambridge Church toward the end of 1639. Working on a never-say-die philosophy, the Dedham folk promptly renewed their old invitation:

> Mention was made of the earnest desire of the Church to enjoy the help of Mr. Phillips . . . the Lord ordering things so by a special providence that he nowhere settled but was freed from all engagements . . . we found the hearts of all the church desirous to renew the former invitation . . . he saw the Lord's hand clearly in it, & so cheerfully accepted the same . . . & [was] admitted with much rejoicing of the Church . . .

Despite all the "rejoicing," the new hope was short-lived. Mr. Phillips ("though divers were unsatisfied in his reasons yet yielded consent to his departure") took his leave of the Dedham church and New England, sailing back to England – and to his old Wrentham parish – in October of 1641.

---

[12] Luson, Hinsdale, and Lusher were of the Allin party; Frary, who arrived a bit later, was an arrival from Norwich, Norfolk – the same hometown as Michael Metcalf of the Allin group.

[13] Also of the Allin company.

[14] "having good testimony of him & some of us knowing him before . . . " said Allin.

[15] possible relative to J. Allin, who spelled their names alike.

[16] John Phillips had been the rector of a church at Wrentham, Suffolk. Eleazer Lusher had been his parishioner, as had Edward Alleyn. John Allin had been a clerical associate of Phillips', and Phillips was the minister who married John Allin and his wife, Margaret.

[17] The "Pillars" were Allin, Alleyn, Lusher, Frary, Hinsdale, Luson, Hunting, Wheelock – a group obviously dominated by John Allin.

NEHGR

MICHAEL METCALFE.

[Communicated by Hon. John George Metcalf of Mendon, Mass.]

Michael Metcalfe was, undoubtedly, the progenitor of the Metcalfe families, in New England. He was born in Tatterford, county of Norfolk, England, 1586, but, for some years, before his voluntary expatriation, he resided in the city of Norwich, Eng. Being a zealous non-conformist, and to escape the persecutions of the notorious Matthew Wren, then Bishop of Norwich, he made up his mind to emigrate to America. In his first attempt he did not take his family; and, after being "tossed up and down" from the 17th of September, 1636, till the Christmas following, came to Plymouth in old England. In this attempt he sailed from London. In the second trial he took ship at Yarmouth, in the county of Norfolk, April 15, 1637, and arrived "in Boston, in New-England, *three* days before mid-summer, of the same year, with my wife nine children and a servant."

By the date of the following letter it will be seen that it was written before he made his first attempt to come to America. At the time of his writing he speaks of himself as an *exile* from his wife and children, "with whom he would gladly have continued, *if with liberty*." It seems a reasonable presumption from this, that he was staying at Plymouth, to escape the persecution of the Bishop of Norwich; and that he could no longer occupy his own house with safety. I am indebted to Dr. Luther Metcalf Harris, of Jamaica Plain, West Roxbury, for the ancient manuscript from which the letter is transcribed.

The Letter.

"To all the true professors of Christs gospel within the city of Norwich:

"The peace of God in Jesus Christ; the help, comfort and assistance of his eternal spirit be with you, my dear and loving wife, and all the rest of our loving friends, professors of Christ's Gospel and pure religion, most purely taught and powerfully preached amongst you not long since, who now mourn for the miseries of God's people, and loss of your faithful ministers, to your everlasting consolation in him.—Amen.

"Our adversary the devil as a mighty Nimrod and cunning hunter doth continually compass the earth to and fro like a roaring lion seeking whom he may devour, ruling in the hearts of children of disobedience, stirring them up against the people of God: you know there ever hath been enmity between the seed of the woman and the seed of the serpent; for as he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the spirit (Gal. 4, 29,) even so it is now; for are there not beasts among you, after the manner of men, such as Paul fought with at Ephesus? yes, surely, I would they were cut off which trouble you. Persecutors they are of you, my friends, in the apostles phrase alluding to Gen. 21, 9 there you shall find Ishmael mocking and tempting of Isaac for his religion called persecution by the apostle Paul, and are there not such a scoffing generation of Ishmaelites among you, who hate you because you love the thing that is good and will not run with them into all excess and riot with their tongues do shoot at them that are true of heart (as the prophet saith) he saith further, in the person of the church that they that sit in the gates spake against me, and I was a song of the drunkard, for the just man is laughed to scorn, Job 12, 4. The wicked watcheth the righteous and seeketh to slay him Ps. 37. I could wish this viperous generation did not so multiply in your city as they do; among them are some scoffing ishmaelites, prophane Esaus, flattering Doegs, subtle Ahitophels, children of this world wiser in their generation than the children of light; but in the end will prove to be Solomon's fools.

"When I was among them I tasted of their burning charity when some of them conspired against my life, as you know, accusing me with treason most unjustly; some of my adversaries were at difference, one with another, yet like Pilate and Herod, they became friends and joined malice and madness against me, but God, who hated their conspiracy, so mollified the heart of one of the witnesses that, with tears, she confessed I never spake any such words. Their malice being manifest to the world, their project was laid in the dust; yet herewith not satisfied, they sent out their blood hounds abroad to smell out some new matter against me; but my God, bounded their madness and by death took away one of my chiefest enemies: Who ever perished being innocent? or when were the righteous cut off? I have seen them that plough iniquity and sow wickedness, reap the same (Job 4, 7). My cause may well allude to the prophet David's complaint against his enemies; (saith he) my enemies spake against me and they that lay wait for my life take councel together, but the Lord hath delivered me out of the wicked, out of the unrighteous and evil man: To God I have referred my cause to whom I leave it and them.

"You are not ignorant (I suppose) of the great trouble I sustained, in the Arch-Deacon's and Bishop's court at the hands of my enemies concerning the matter of *Bowing* as well as for other matters of like consequence. I alledged against them the scripture, the canons and the book of common prayers; but the chancellor replied he cared for none of them I further alledged against them the authority of Arch-Bishops and Bishops, as also their great patrons of ceremonies the learned Hooker (so called by them) together with a book called the Regiment of the church allowed by authority, which hath these words; that the decrees and constitutions of the Church of England must not be made a part of God's worship, neither holden necessary to our salvation, as some have vainly in some of your hearings; for our Saviour saith, "in vain do they worship me who teach for doctrines the precepts of man." The apostle condemneth all voluntary worship devised by man, Hooker after saith, "our church doth not enforce bowing at the name of Jesus upon any man against his conscience." Notwithstanding these and more than these reasons alledged against them, their learned and invincible arguments to refute my assertions were these, "Blockhead—Old heretick,—the Devil made you—I will send you to the Devil," with such other trim stuff, unfitting terms, to be used by a judge in a court of judicature: but of these no more, for these words were not spoken in a corner but in a Consistory.

"My loving friends be not discouraged too much at innovations now forced upon you, but never heretofore urged upon any man's conscience, by any Bishop of the see of Norwich since the Reformation; but as the proverb says, "new Lords—new laws." Such doings make sad the hearts of God's people: let your faith and patience have their perfect work in these perilous times, now come upon you, by the sufferance of God. Be you chearly, God is on your side and his truth is your cause, and against you be none but the enemies of the cross of Christ. The serpent and his seed the Ishmaelites and prophane Esaus of this wicked world children of the malignant church, such as the Lord hath always abhorred and in all ages, resisted and overthrown; God (from whom nothing is hid) knoweth what they are; he hath found out your enemies to be profane, malicious, proud disdainful filthy shameless persecutors of and despiteful against his people and truth: The spirit of God doth describe them in the Scripture by the names of serpents, lions, bulls, bears, wolves, dogs, swine, beasts &c. teaching us to understand that their natural inclination is, as much as in them lyeth, to bring into trouble and bonds, all those that live godly in Christ: but the Lord with his right arm, will defend his little distressed flock against his and your enemies which do conspire against your precious faith and liberty. In the meantime, my friends, have patience while they rage, let them curse, ban, rage and become mad against you, casting the dirt of aspersion at your faces, not hating you for your vices but for your virtues. Cain like, and had they power with their will, surely they would cast fire and faggots at your faces; These Jehus, I do hope, march too furious to hold out long. They may haply prove but summer birds. The Lord hath bounded their madness that they shall not do more to you than he will suffer them to do.

"God is about to try his people in the furnace of affliction, and he that suffereth patiently, for his christian profession, is hereby known to be of Christ; even so are the persecutors and opposers of God's people known to be enemies of the cross of Christ. Besides, their injustice may be a means the sooner to provoke the Lord to take pity on you and to punish them that so despitefully use you; for though God suffer them for a time, in their pride, yet shall they, not always escape his avenging hand. They are his rods and, when he hath worn them to the stumps, then will he cast them into the fire:—This shall be their final reward. Your duty is, in the meanwhile, patiently to abide the will of God, who worketh all things for the best for you. O Norwich! the beauty of my native county—what shall I say unto thee. Thou art little inferior to any of thy sister cities, within this Kingdom. Famous hast thou been for religion throughout this island, the Gospel of Christ Jesus hath been purely and powerfully taught to thy great honor, y^{e} joy and rejoicing of thy religious inhabitants:—thy God hath adorned thee with such a succession of Godly and able preachers, within some of thy churches, that few congregations (I suppose) have had the like, who so faithfully have taught their people, both by life and doctrine, to your everlasting fame; carefully preaching and defending the doctrine of the free justification by faith in Christ, with other truths of the true Protestant faith, against the defenders of the stinking tenets of Arminius, that enemy of God, so called by King James, i. e. y^{e} 1st. Alas my friends, what comfort is it now to you to hear what your city hath formerly been, for Christ's true religion taught in her? The question is what is she now? Surely much relapsed and fallen from her first love and purity of life and doctrine. Would to God thy spiritual fathers had not tasted the sour grapes whereby most of thy children's teeth are set on edge. For many strange things are now preached in thine ears, by your new teachers, which your old preachers would never have endured. But the religion of these *novelists* consisteth in formalities, they striving to use the *desk* above the *pulpit*, teaching the people less preaching may now serve were it not but to preach down schism and faction as at Winsor visitation. Another, he makes it arbitrary whether or not the Pope be antichrist, as Burgess, in my hearing, at the Cathedral, in Norwich. My friends beware of them that preach to you with the enticing words of man's wisdom, and do chalk out a nearer way to Heaven, than they shall find (I fear) that walk in it.

"Follow the apostles counsel and take heed how you hear; be not led away with the error of the wicked, beware of them which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves, for the apostle saith y^{e} wolves will enter into the fold of Christ, not sparing the flock. My friends, imitate the wise Bereans, and search the scripture whether you become such proficients as to try the doctrines of your preachers, whether they be consonant to the scripture or not, beware you keep your judgments sound in the truth, rectifying your zeal and affections by the spirit of truth, making God the object of your faith and love:—If your judgments be lost then will follow that you will soon make shipwreck of faith and a good conscience. Remember therefore what you have received and heard and hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take away thy crown, Rev. 3, 3—11. And if you do persevere and keep the word of his patience, He hath promised he will also keep you from the hour of temptation which shall come upon all the world to try them that dwell upon the earth.

"My loving christians, in taking this my last farewell of you, I do earnestly exhort you in the bowels of the Lord Jesus and as you tender the eternal welfare of your poor souls, purchased by the blood of Christ that you carefully beware of Arminianism; do not nibble too long at the bait until you are catched with the hook; rather banish from your ears and hearts those stinking fogs and infectious vapours, into the Netherlands, from whence they were spawned, as a bastard brood of Popery; for these tenets were arraigned and condemned at the council of Dort, by a synod of learned Prelates. I do marvel how your novelists dare be so audacious as to meddle with, and teach those dangerous and pernicious errors, prohibited by proclamation. Would to God this spirit which is seen frequently to walk among you, in the likeness of men, were conjured out of your nation *by authority:*

"My brethren I cannot but much bemoan your great loss of late:

I mean those godly and learned divines, your most loving, faithful and powerful preachers now forced from amongst you, to your no little sorrow thus to be deprived of them that so faithfully have taught you and so fatherly cared for you and so godlily have governed you by the scriptures of truth:—They were given to you and sent of God as a great blessing to your city; by the power of whose ministry many have been converted and won to the truth of the Gospel, who have begotten them to a godly life and conversation. Surely for your sins the Lord hath deprived you of them as not worthy of so great a mercy as the enjoying them, since whose departure a famine of the word is come upon you, most of your lights being put out. Therefore, seeing what the Lord hath done unto thee O! Norwich! prepare to meet thy God: O Norwich! by repentance and deep humiliation, lest the Lord come against thee to avenge the quarrel of his covenant which thou hast broken:—Humiliation is a sanctified means whereby the Lord will be intreated of you:—If you do humble yourselves by fasting and prayer in your several families, then it may be, the Lord will work for you:—Therefore cry mightily to God and turn, every one from his evil ways, who can tell if God will turn and repent and turn away from his fierce anger to you (John 3, 8) and send you such preachers again as may divide the word of God aright among you;—you did not duly prize them when you enjoyed them, therefore the Lord hath deprived you of them as not worthy of them:—I may warn you of your danger as the Lord did Jerusalem by the Prophet, "Be thou instructed O! Jerusalem lest my soul depart from thee;" so may I say to sinful Norwich, which hath polluted the Lord's sabbaths and profaned his holy things by superstitions and foolish ceremonies which the Lord commanded not, together with the corruption of doctrine and manners too much connived at among you, by siding with the times, and yielding too much through slavish fear, to the wasting of your graces and quenching that spiritual vigour, zeal and affection that formerly you had in shew before these times of tryal came on to try you, for the Lord is about to purge his floor and to thrash his church with the flail of affliction:—you may easily see that wrath is gone out from the Lord, and judgment is begun at the house of God; and his hand is stretched out still, but who taketh it to heart,—custom hath taken away the sense of misery, and security is the sin of Churches in all places—the consideration whereof might cause you to fear and tremble by the example of Germany, Bohemia and the Palatinate and many other reformed churches over whom the wrath of God hath been to the uttermost, to the great depopulating and wasting of cities and countries:—When your neighbours houses are on fire, it is time to look to your own, let others examples teach you to beware,—"A wise man foreseeth the storm and shunneth it," saith Solomon Look about you,—quit yourselves like men, for the hour of temptation is at hand, which shall come upon the world to try them that dwell upon the earth; These are like to be trying times indeed, therefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. God is able to separate the wheat from the chaff, and to put a difference between them that fear him and those that fear him not; but he that is found to be faithful unto death Christ hath promised unto him a crown of

life. Be not secure, but fear for such times may soon come upon you as may shake your faith, if it be not founded on the rock Christ. Draw nigh unto God and he will draw nigh to you (James 4, 8) and he will comfort you after the time he hath aflicted you:—The Lord shorten these sorrowful and sinful days for his great name's sake, and give you of his saving grace, that, as you have a little strength so you may keep his word and not deny his name, Rev. 3, 8.

"Now farewell my beloved christians and dear friends, the Lord defend, keep and preserve you and me from the malice and power of the serpent and his seed; and send us a joyful meeting here or elsewhere as it shall please our Good God to appoint:—In the meanwhile I most earnestly desire you to pray for me, for I never had more need in my life, in regard of my excited condition from my wife and children, with whom I would gladly have continued, if with liberty—but all things came to pass with the good will of God. Doubtless you shall never want my poor prayers, if it shall please God to accept the prayers of so sinful a wretch as I am.

"The Lord impute not my sin unto me for Jesus Christ's sake, unto whose merciful defence I do most heartily commit you. The blessing of God be with you, my dear wife and children and all you my christian friends; and fill you all with his holy and blessed spirit, that you may always rejoice in the comforts of the same now and evermore, Amen.

"Your loving brother in exile persecuted for Christ's verity,

MICHAEL METCALFE.

"Plymouth (Eng.) the 13th of January 1636."

NEHGR 78:63-5 Jan 1924

METCALF

FOR many years the statement has repeatedly appeared in print that Michael Metcalf, the dornick* weaver, of Norwich, co. Norfolk, England, and later of Dedham, Mass., was the son of Rev. Leonard Metcalf, parson of Tatterford, co. Norfolk, and that he was baptized at Tatterford 3 Sept. 1586. An examination of the parish registers of Tatterford proves this statement to be an error, for on 3 Sept. 1586 Leonard Metcalf, son of Leonard, was baptized there. This error was probably made by some zealous American who could not read the sixteenth-century writing but was determined to find the parentage of the redoubtable Michael. All that can be said at present is that the parentage of Michael Metcalf is unknown. He was, however, probably born about 1592, since in his examination on embarking for New England, in Apr. 1637, his age was given as 45. (Cf. Pope, "Pioneers of Massachusetts," page 312, and Savage, "Genealogical Dictionary," vol. 3, page 203.)

**Dornick* or *dornock*, a coarse sort of damask, originally made at Tournai (in Flemish, *Doornick*), Belgium.

Below are given the Metcalf entries in the early parish registers o Tatterford and the entries relating to the children of Michael Metcal found in the registers of the parishes of St. Benedict and St. Edmund Norwich.

FROM THE PARISH REGISTERS OF TATTERFORD, CO. NORFOLK

Baptisms

1583 John Metcalf son of Leonard and his wife 15 August.
1586 Leonard Metcalf son of Leonard and his wife 3 September.
1587 Nicholas Metcalf son of Leonard and his wife 8 July.
1594 Matthew Metcalf son of Leonard and his wife 18 December.
1596 Nynian Metcalf 10 June.
1601 Marie Metcalf daughter of Leonard Metcalf and his wife 28 August
1613 Leonard Metcalf son of Richard and Mary 15 August.
1614 Richard Metcalf son of Richard and Mary 15 January [1614/15].
1618 John Metcalf son of Richard 15 November.
1639 Mary Metcalf daughter of Richard and Alice 23 August.
1652 Richard Metcalf son of Leonard and Margaret 9 November.

Burials

1601 Maria Metcalf 7 December.
1602 Amy Metcalf 22 December.
1604 John Metcalf 17 March [1604/5].
1616 Leonard Metcalf, clerk, 22 September.
1618 John Metcalf son of Richard (clerk) 31 January [1618/19].
1643 Mary Metcalf wife of Richard (clerk) 24 March [1643/4].
1656 Richard Metcalf, clerk, 11 March [1656/7].
1694 Elizabeth Metcalf 3 March [1694/5].
1695 Leonard Metcalf, rector of Sherford,* 23 November.

FROM THE REGISTERS OF THE PARISH OF ST. BENEDICT, NORWICH, CO. NORFOLK

Baptisms

1617 Michael Medcalfe son of Michael 30 November.
1624† Saray [Saray *written over* Mary *and also in the margin*] Medcalfe 10 March [1624/5].
1626 Elizabeth Medcalfe daughter of Michael 20 September.
1628 Martha Medcalfe daughter of Michael 27 March.

Burial

1617 Michael Medcalfe son of Michaell 20 January [1617/18].

FROM THE REGISTERS OF THE PARISH OF ST. EDMUND, NORWICH, CO. NORFOLK‡

Baptisms

1629 Thomas Medcalf son of Michael and Sara 11 January [1629/30].
1631 Anne Metcalfe daughter of Michael and Sara 4 March [1631/2].
1633§ Jane Metcalfe daughter of Michael and Sara 29 March.
1635 Rebecky [Katherine *erased*] Metcalfe daughter of Michael 12 April.

Burials

1632‡ Jane Metcalfe daughter of Michaell and Susanna* 29 March. [*All this entry is crossed out with a pen in a contemporary handwriting.*]
1632 Mary† Metcalf daughter of Michael and Suzanna* 13 May.

---

*Probably Shereford, co. Norfolk, and not Sherford, co. Devon.

†The pages containing the entries for 1619 and 1620 are missing.

‡The register of the parish of St. Edmund, Norwich, contains many corrections and additions. It suffered severely in the great flood at Norwich some years ago, but the copy of the entries here given was made before that disaster occurred.

§1632 has been added at the side.

GENEALOGICAL RESEARCH IN ENGLAND

Communicated by the Committee on English Research

METCALF

Contributed by CHARLES EDWARD BANKS, M.D., Colonel, U. S. A., Retired, of Chicago, Ill.

THE presumed English ancestry of Michael Metcalf of Dedham, Mass., which represents him as a son of the Rev. Leonard Metcalf of Tatterford, co. Norfolk, while reasonably entertained as possible, has been held in abeyance through a misapprehension of the evidence relating to it. An examination of the parish registers of Tatterford disclosed a Nicholas [*sic*], baptized in 1586, son of the Rev. Leonard Metcalf, who was rector of Tatterford, and Amy, his wife. This had been assumed as an error for Michael; but this assumption, of course, was rejected as an unsound inference and the relationship of the Rev. Leonard Metcalf to Michael, the emigrant, rejected as a consequence. The error in this conclusion lies in the fact that the registers of Tatterford are a piece of patchwork, constructed prior to 1616 by the wardens of the parish from the then existing Bishops' transcripts. On the first written page of the registers is found this statement:

> "True Coppies of certeyne Bills Indented of the Marriages Christninges and Burialls . . . extracted owte of the office of Registershipp of the Archdeconry of Norff: as followeth."

The actual registered entries begin in 1616, but the continuity from 1569 is broken. Bills for the years 1570, 1579, 1580, 1585, and 1590 are marked as "not to be found." Four later years are also recorded as "not found," but 1590 is the significant loss in connection with Michael Metcalf, as will be explained. This fact has not been taken into account by previous investigators.

The Rev. Leonard Metcalf became rector of this parish in 1574, and was the only head of a family of his name there; but, while it is known that he had a large family, only the baptisms of five sons are of record, namely, John, in 1583, Leonard and Nicholas, in 1586, Mathew, in 1592, and Nynian, in 1596. The writer, however, has found in the Diocesan Registry at Norwich (in the Consistorial Deposition Books) a deposition of Michael Metcalf, in which he describes himself as of Norwich, dornick weaver, aged 45 years, and born in Tatterford.* This carries his birth year back to 1590, and, as the records for that year are missing in the synthetically prepared registers, it explains why it is impossible to produce positive evidence of his parentage; but the negative evidence is quite as strong, for, in addition to his own statement of age and birthplace, there is nothing to show that any other Metcalf family lived there, and the Rev. Leonard Metcalf was by all reasonable circumstantial

Metcalf

evidence his father. His place in the family is in the gap between Nicholas and Mathew shown above.

Confirmatory collateral evidence is found in the fact that Michael Metcalf was warden of St. Benedict's, Norwich, 1619–1634, a natural position for the son of a clergyman to occupy, and his fine signatures on the deposition and the Wardens' Account Book, written with a sure hand ending in a graceful flourish, further indicate his early training and association in an educated family.

The statement in the Metcalf genealogy published in the REGISTER (vol. 6, p. 171), that his wife Sarah was born at "Waynham," should be corrected, for an entry in the records of the First Church of Dedham, Mass., states that she was born at Heigham, near Norwich [co. Norfolk], 17 June 1593. She was a daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth (Benslye) Elwyn of that parish (see Mr. Moriarty's article on "The Elwyns of Norfolk," in *Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica* for March 1926), the Elwyns being a distinguished family in that county.

In another deposition in the same court made in 1614, the Rev. Leonard Metcalf, clerk, rector of the parish of Tatterford, states that he was 73 years of age, that he had been the incumbent there for forty years, and that he was born at Apperside in the North Riding of Yorkshire.

These facts lay the foundation for further research into the earlier generations of the Metcalf family, which seems to be peculiar to Yorkshire. Amy, wife of the Rev. Leonard Metcalf, died in 1602, and his estate was administered in 1616 as of West Barsham, Norfolk, of which he was vicar, holding this living as well as the rectory of Tatterford.

[Colonel Banks is to be congratulated on having discovered at last something definite regarding the ancestry of Michael Metcalf. With regard to my article in the REGISTER of January 1924, referred to by him, I should like to point out that at the time that was written there was no definite proof that Michael was born at Tatterford, such as is furnished in the deposition discovered by Colonel Banks. Moreover, the record of his age then known was that of the shipping list, which made him born in 1586, the year in which Leonard, son of Rev. Leonard Metcalf, was baptized, a baptism which has been called a baptism of Michael, which was clearly wrong. I agree with Colonel Banks that Michael must be a son of Rev. Leonard Metcalf, born in a year of which no baptismal records remain, about 1590, because there was no other Metcalf in the parish at this time. Colonel Banks has made a slight error when he says that Rev. Leonard Metcalf had sons Nicholas and Leonard baptized in 1586. Leonard was baptized 3 Sept. 1586, but Nicholas was baptized 8 July 1587. Matthew was baptized on 18 Dec. 1594, and not in 1592, as stated above. There are no records in the registers for 1592. In addition to the above children, Rev. Leonard Metcalf had a daughter Marie, baptized 28 Aug. 1601. Rev. Leonard Metcalf was undoubtedly the father of Richard Metcalf of Tatterford and of Michael Metcalf. Thanks to Colonel Banks's discovery, we now have a good starting point for further investigation regarding Michael Metcalf's ancestry. Apperside is a hamlet in the vale of Wensleydale, North Riding of Yorkshire. — G. ANDREWS MORIARTY, JR.]

MOODY

Contributed by Miss LILIAN J. REDSTONE of London, England

ACCORDING to Rev. John Eliot's record of the members of the church at Roxbury, Mass., John Moody "came to the Land in the

---

*Although Colonel Banks does not give the date of this deposition, it was evidently made in 1635. — EDITOR.

Nettol 86

later than 15 Aug. 1639, when the inventory of her goods, valued at £162. 18s. 10d., was taken; and administration was granted 20 Sept. 1639 to her son Richard, who, as "Richd. Martyn of Totnes, merchant," gave a bond for £300, signing it as "Richd. Martin thelder." (*Vide supra*, p. 82.) He was called "my cousin" in the will of Gregory Bickford, dated 3 July 1630, of which he was an overseer, and, as "Richd. Martyn, merchant," with three associates, took the inventory of Gregory Bickford's estate, 22 Sept. 1630.

METCALF: ADDITIONAL RECORDS

Contributed by G. Andrews Moriarty, A.M., LL.B., F.S.A.,
of Bristol, R. I.

The following records throw additional light on the English connections and activities of Michael Metcalf, the dornick weaver, of Norwich, co. Norfolk, England, and later of Dedham, Mass., concerning whom the Committee on English Research (now the Committee on English and Foreign Research) communicated to the Register (vol. 78, pp. 63-65) an article by the present writer and also (vol. 80, pp. 312-313) an article by the late Charles Edward Banks, M.D., Colonel, U.S.A., Retired.

Considerable research shows the impossibility of establishing the ancestry of Michael Metcalf beyond his father, Rev. Leonard Metcalf, rector of Tatterford in Norfolk, who, according to his deposition (*infra*), was born in the hamlet of Apperside, in Wensleydale, Yorkshire. Examination of the records of this region shows that a large proportion of the inhabitants bore the name of Metcalf. In the extracts from the subsidy of 1542–1544 for Apperside (*infra*) a large number of Metcalfs appear; and, when one remembers that this subsidy represents but a portion of the inhabitants, it is easy to see that a large proportion of the inhabitants were named Metcalf. The names *Michael* and *Leonard* were very common in the Metcalf family of this region, where the Metcalfs formed almost a clan. There can be no doubt that the gentle family of the neighboring Nappa Hall were related more or less remotely to the innumerable Metcalfs of the vicinage, but just how it is impossible to say, owing to the lack of wills. It may be suggested, however, that perhaps Rev. Leonard Metcalf was the son of the Michael Metcalf who is found at Apperside in the subsidy of 1542–1544.

From Lay Subsidies for co. York,
34–35 Henry VIII [1542–1544]

Apperside

Henry Metcalf in goods 10d.
Michael Metcalf in goods 3s. 4d.
Denis Metcalf in goods 1d.
Symon Metcalf in goods 18d.
Jone Metcalf in goods 1d.
Edward Metcalf in goods 10d.
Reginald Metcalf in goods 2s.
John Metcalf, Sen., in goods 2s.
Richard Metcalf in goods 1s.

(Lay Subsidies, 22/166.)

From the Records of the Court of Requests

[Medcalf *v.* Browne, 1595]

Bill of Leonard Medcalf of Tatterfore, co. Norfolk, clerk, against Nicholas Browne of Walsingham, gentleman [*endorsed* 30 October, 37 Elizabeth, by warrant]:

Whereas complainant became bound with John Day of Walsingham, gentleman, about midsummer "last past was a Twelvemoneth," to Nicholas Browne, for the delivery, at the Feasts of the Nativity and the Purification of Our Lady next following,* of one hundred "combes" of barley sold by John Day to Nicholas Browne, so it is that John Daye has caused sixty "combes" of barley to be delivered, and has compounded with the said Browne for the residue; yet Nicholas Browne has given out that he will sue complainant upon the obligation of £40 or thereabouts, by reason that the form thereof was not kept, unless complainant will deliver to him, before the Purification of Our Lady next coming, eighty "combes" of barley, which at this time of dearth nearly amounts to the whole value of the said penalty. [Therefore your complainant] prays for a writ of privy seal against Nicholas Browne. (Court of Requests, Proceedings, 105/17.)

From Parish Registers

1579 James, son of Leonard Metcalf, baptized 14 March [1579/80].*†

1588 A daughter of Edmond Metcalf baptized.*

1590 Leonard Metcalf buried 10 August.*

1602 James Metcalf and Joan Cooke married 30 January [1602/3].* (St. Michael on the Hill, Lincoln.)

1603 Leonard Metcalfe and Margaret Smith married 17 July. (Kildwick, co. York.)

1607 Michael, son of Richard Metcalf, baptized 1 November.* (Tattershall, co. Lincoln.)

1607 John Mydcallf and Ellyn Benson married 19 July. (St. Andrew, Norwich, transcript.)

1613–1617 Children of Adam Metcalf baptized.* (St. Saviour, Norwich.)

1618 Mary, daughter of Michael Metcalfe, baptized 17 February [1618/19].* (St. Benedict, Norwich).

1627 Leonard, son of Edmund Metcalf, baptized.* (St. Augustine, Norwich.)

1630 Robt., son of Augustine Medcalfe, baptized 21 November. (St. Clement, Norwich, transcript.)

From Depositions in the Diocesan Registry, Norwich

1614 Leonard Metcalf, clerk, rector of the parish of Tatterford, where he has been incumbent for forty years, born at Apperside, co. York, [deposed] aged 73 years. (Deposition Book, 1614.)*

1614
73
1541

1635 Michael Metcalfe of Norwich, dornick weaver, aged 45 years, born at Tatterford, co. Norfolk, testifies regarding the practices of the clergyman of St. Edmund's, Norwich. (*Ib.*, 1635.)*

*That is, on 25 December and 2 February.

†For entries marked with an asterisk (*) the contributor is indebted to the late Col. Charles Edward Banks, M.D.

NEHGR Vol 84

FROM RECORDS OF THE CITY OF NORWICH

FROM DEEDS ENROLLED

1617, 9 May. Wm. Doddesworth and wife to Adam Medcalfe of a tenement, etc., in St. Lawrence. (Roll 9.)

1617, 9 May. Adam Medcalfe and wife to Hen. Fawcett of a tenement in St. Lawrence. (Roll 10.)

1628, 23 June. Jno. Scottowe and others to Jeffry Medcalfe two messuages in St. James. (Roll 14.)

1630, 7 September. Francis Langley and wife to Jeffry Medcalfe and wife a messuage in St. Peter's, Mancroft. (Roll 31.)

1636 [? 1636/7], 18 February. Jno. Fayry and wife to Jeffry Medcalfe and wife of a tenement in St. Saviour's. (Roll 45.)

1638, 18 December. Pleasance Medcalfe and others to Thos. Watts three messuages in St. James. (Roll 67[?].)

1639, 29 April. Jeffry Medcalfe and wife to Jno. Askins of a tenement in St. James. (Roll 49.)

FROM THE BOOKS OF THE MAYOR'S COURT

1624 Michael Metcalf and Xopher Church searchers of the dornix weavers.

1627 }
1628 } Michael Metcalf and Thos. Tilney wardens of the dornix weavers for one year.

1628/9, 3 January, 4 Charles I. Matthew Metcalf punished for disorder at the post.

1629 Michael Metcalf and Xopher Church sworn as wardens of the dornix weavers.

1632, 18 July, 8 Charles I. Dionis, wife of Silvester Medcalfe *alias* Parker, in a previous charge for disordered life, for entertaining of Edmond Allen, worsted weaver, dwelling in St. Peters Parmontergate, and one Farding of St. Michael of Coslany, weaver, and one Burton of St. Michael aforesaid, in her house between 12 and 1 o'clock last night, and for other misdemeanors, is committed to Bridewell. (Fo. 398.)

1632, Saturday, 21 July, 8 Charles I. Next Court. She [the said Dionis] is discharged out of Bridewell, upon her promise that she before this day sevenight will go over into Holland to her husband, or otherwise she consenteth to be whipped at the post.

1635, 25 November, 11 Charles I. Stephen Tye is put to St. Bennett's gates, and Susan Medcalfe agreeth to keep him till he be cured, and to receive 6s. 8d. when he is perfectly cured, whereof she hath received 3s. 4d. this Wednesday afternoon, 25 November 1635. (Fo. 84 b.)

1636, Saturday, 14 May. "Inquisicio artis de Dornix weavers." Michael Metcalfe, Simon Bowman, and others sworn. (Fo. 104 b.)

FROM SESSIONS BOOKS AND SEARCH BOOKS

[Undated, probably about 1630.] Jeffery Medcalfe to pay 4d. to St. John Sepulchre [in list of persons paying to parishes other than those in which they are rated].

1630, 20 September, 6 Charles I. General Session of Peace at Guildhall. Geoffrey Medcalfe is fined 6s. 8d. and acknowledges the indictment.

1631. Order for payment to overseers of other parishes from 8 August 1631. Jeffery Medcalfe paid overseers of St. Michael at Thorn 3d.

1631, 12 December, 7 Charles I. Thomas Medcalf "ad respondendum" [probably for payment to other parishes].

1631, 12 December. In a list of those ordered to pay to overseers of other parishes appears the name of Jeffery Medcalfe, ordered to pay 1d. to St. Michael at Thorne, and Michael Medcalfe, ordered to pay ½d. to St. Paul's.

1633–34 (Easter to Easter). In Walter Rye's "The Norwich Rate Book" (p. 75), in St. Edmond's Parish, is listed Michael Medcalfe.

1634, 12 August. Presentments. Wards beyond the Water. Fibridge Ward. Augustin Metcalfe for not coming to church. (Norwich Sessions Rolls.)

1634, 16 December. Presentments for St. Peter's Mancroft Ward. The mark of Geoffrey Medcalfe. (Norwich Sessions Rolls.)

1634/5, Monday, 23 March, 10 Charles I. General Session of the Peace at the Guildhall, Norwich. In a list of recusants indicted and proclaimed according to the statute appears the name of Augustine Metcalfe of St. Clement's Parish, sadler, for absenting himself from his parish church for three months.

1634/5, 24 March. Presentments at Sessions. The Ward beyond the Water. "Wee present Augustine Medcalfe Sadler of St. Clement's parish for not coming to Church for the space of 3 months contrary to the statute." (Norwich Sessions Rolls.)

1635, 11 July. In the Court of the Mayor. Michaell Medcalfe, Simon Bowman, and diverse other dornix-weavers came into this Court and Informed that Augustine Thurton, who worketh with Thomas Mollett, and Tho: Evered, who worketh with John Brady, have an Intencion to gather a multitude of people together at the Unicorne this night, to doe (as they feare) some unlawfull Act, And have desired this Court to prevent the same. The said Augustine Thurton saith that hee and the said Tho: Evered did upon Tuesday last goe abroad to diverse dornix-weavers shopps in this City and did invite the severall Jorneymen to mete this afternoone at the Unicorne to elect 4 feast makers to make a feast for the Jorneymen dornix weavers.

Thomas Evered saith that the Jornymen dornix wevers have used to have yearely a feast amongest themselves, And upon Tuesday last hee and the said Augustine did speake to most of the Jornymen in the City to mete at the Unicorne this afternoone to consent howe they might drawe their severall masters to give greater wages, And he saith that the intent of this metinge was onely to knowe how the Journymen would holde all together concerning the mending of their wages and that they might have promised one annother that they would have no lesse then vj d. a weeke more then nowe they have, yf they could gett ytt.

Thurton and Evered bound in £40 each to answer at the Sessions. (Norwich Sessions, Minute Book 8.)

1640/1, 12 January. In "Alphabetical Lists of persons indicted at Sessions, both City and County," from 1624 onwards, is the entry: "Metcalfe Ric'us de Skyton pro non escur'. foveam ex' May 1641." (City of Norwich, Corporation Records, Search Books.)

EXTRACT FROM WREN'S "PARENTALIA"*

[Matthew Wren, D.D., 1585–1667, a prominent clergyman of the Church of England, elected Bishop of Hereford 5 Dec. 1634 and consecrated by

---

*"Parentalia, or Memoirs of the Family of the Wrens," was compiled by Christopher Wren, son of the famous architect, Sir Christopher Wren (who was a nephew of Bishop

Archbishop Laud 2 Mar. 1634/5, was elected Bishop of Norwich 10 Nov. 1635, and was translated to the See of Ely in April 1638. A follower of Archbishop Laud and a vigorous opponent of Puritanism, he was impeached by the Commons in 1641 and was imprisoned from time to time until the Restoration, when he recovered his episcopal rights and dignities. The following extract is from his answer to the Sixteenth Article of Impeachment against him.]

✓ "He [Bishop Wren] further denieth, that *Daniel Sunning, Michael Metcalf,* and the rest in this Article named, or any other of his Majesty's Subjects, to the Number of 3000, did remove into the Parts beyond the Seas by reason of any thing done by this Defendant. And he humbly prayeth, that it may be consider'd, that the humour of separating themselves from the Church of *England* into foreign Parts is of a much higher Growth than since *Anno* 1636. And that out of these Dioceses where they could have no Pretence of vigorous Persecutions, they went so plentifully, as that the two chief Colonies in *New England,* long since took the Titles of *Plymouth* and *Boston.* And thither, into *New England,* of those which are named in this Article, went *Francis Lawes* a poor and mean Weaver, *John Dicks* a poor Joiner, *Nicholas Busby* a poor Weaver, *Michael Metcalf,* and *Nicholas* his Son, a Dornix Weaver (of some Estate, he only) but he was call'd in question for some Words against the King, and so slipt away. *John Durant* is supposed to be the same with *John Berant,* he a poor Weaver that went into the *Low-Countries,* and thither went *Richard Cook* a Draper newly set up, that kept but one Apprentice." (Wren's Parentalia, edition of 1750, p. 101.)

FROM PROBATE RECORDS

✓ The Will of NICHOLAS METCALFE of Blakeney [co. Norfolk], clerk, weak of body but of perfect memory, etc., dated 13 September 1661. I give my precious soul to God, [my] maker, hoping to be saved by the merits of Christ. My body I commit to the earth, not doubting but that it shall rise again a glorious body. As for my goods, I dispose of them as followeth:

To Leonard Metcalfe, the son of Leonard Metcalfe, my kinsman (dwelling in Norwich), when he shall attain fourteen years, the house wherein I now dwell, with yard and ground thereto, for him and his heirs for ever. My executors are to receive the rents of the same house and ground and to keep it in repair, until said Leonard Metcalfe is fourteen, and the surplus then in their hands is to be used to bind him out to some trade. To the said executors I give all household stuff and implements of household, to be sold by them to satisfy my debts, vizt., to Mary Cherch, my servant, 32s., and I give to Edmund Day, rector of this parish, 6s. 8d., to buy a pair of gloves. To each executor, for his pains, 10s. The rest of the money from the sale of my goods is to be used to discharge my funeral charges and for proving my will; and the remainder is to be divided equally between John Metcalfe and Elizabeth Metcalfe, the children of Leonard Metcalfe, now deceased. I appoint Thomas Youngman and Henry Basset executors. [Signed] Nicholas Metcalfe. Witnesses: Sam: Bacon, John Cressey[?], Tho: Abraham. Proved at Walsingham Parva [co. Norfolk], 16 September 1664, by the executors. (Archdeaconry of Norwich, 1664–65, fo. 113.)

Matthew Wren), and was published in London in 1750 by Stephen Wren, son of the compiler. A new edition was published in 1903. A life of Bishop Wren, from which the extract here given has been taken, is included in "Parentalia."

NEHGR 10: 282

EXTRACT FROM DEDHAM RECORDS, 1656.

S. G. DRAKE, ESQ.

Sir,—Please insert in the Register the following extract from the Dedham Records, bearing date, 1656. It is a contract between the Selectmen of the town and a schoolmaster,—describing the branches of learning in which he is to give instruction,—the salary of the teacher and the accommodation of the schoolhouse. Recently, when present at the annual examination of our High School, as I surveyed the spacious and beautiful room in which we were assembled, and as I listened to the recitations of the scholars—in the ancient and modern languages—in mathematics, geometry, philosophy, chemistry and in other studies—my thoughts reverted back to this document, and I contrasted the educational advantages of the youth here at this day with those enjoyed on the same spot, two hundred years ago. Your servt. D. P. W.

Dedham, April 3d, 1856.

"Agreed with Michaell Metcalfe for to keep the Schoole for the yeare insuinge the said Michaell doe undertake to teach the childrin that shall be sent to him to read English and to write; all which he doe undertake faithfully to doe; In Consideration whearof wee doe ingage he shall receive from the towne the sume of twentie pounds, two third partes in wheat att the price of the towne or Countree Rate & the other part of the page in other Corne att price above mentioned and the schoole to be kept att the schoolehouse exsept the wether bee exstrem to hinder and then he is to atend it at his owne dwellinge house: and the towne is to take care to have the harth layd in the school house forth with and to have the windowes made fitt; & wood for the fiare to be layd in att the schoolehouse: we ingage to cale upon the parents of the children that they carefully provid it in due time; and it is agreed that the third part above exspresed to be payd in other corne shall not bee above one third part in Indin Corne; and in the heat of the weather if the said Michaell desire to make use of the mettenge house he maye so doe provided the house be left clene against any publiq use of the house and also that the windows be made good if any be brokin and any other damage made good that is done by their use of the mettinge house in that kind and the schoole to begine the 19 day of this present m°: & the pay is to be quarterly as is above expresed that is 5^{lb} a quarter."

Descendants of Thomas Farr by Edith B Sumner (1959)

ELLWYN

JOHN^{I} ELLWYN was born about 1450, and lived in Woodalbing, Norfolk England. His wife's name was Catherine. His son:

PETER^{II} ELLWYN was born about 1480, and died in 1557, in Woodalbing. His wife Lucy died before he made his will dated 1556, in which he named many relatives.

Children of Peter, order not known:

1 John^{iii}. D. 1569. B.A. 1522; M.A. 1524. Rector of St. Michaels, Coslany, Norwich. Will 1568. No chil.
2 Joan. M. Simon Bulwer; 6 chil. M.2, Mr Leman; 6 chil.
3 William. Inherited land in Thirning from father. Died about 1557-68. 4 chil.
4 Daughter, who m. a Mr Barker; 6 chil.
+ 5 SON. Children named in father's will. See below.

_______ ELLWYN. He died before his father, the name of his wife unknown. His children were named in the will of Peter^{ii} Ellwyn, 1556, as follows.

+ 1 WILLIAM^{IV}. See below.
2 Richard, "of North Walsham." Will, 1583. D.1584. Wife Agnes; 2 chil. in 1556.
3 Alice. M. a Mr Goodwin; 2 chil. in 1556.
4 John, "of Heigham." Will 1598. D.1600. Wife Margery d. 1605. Will 1604. 4 chil. She m.2, a Mr Ray; 2 chil.
5 Lucy? D. Heigham, 1572.
6 Sarah? M.1583, John Buttris; dau. Elizabeth, and others.

WILLIAM^{IV} ELLWYN, called "William the younger" in grandfather's will of 1556. His wife Alice died, Feb. 13 1602/3. He died on Feb. 3, 1610/11.

Children of William and Alice, bp. in Heigham:

1 Elizabeth^{V} bp. 5-9-1563.
+ 2 THOMAS bp. 5-1-1566. See below.

THOMAS^{V} ELLWYN was baptized in Heigham, May 1, 1566. He married there on Sept. 24, 1591, Elizabeth Bensley. She was buried on Jan. 12, 1605/6. Thomas married second about 1610, Dorothy ______. He was buried in a tomb in Heigham Church.

Children of Thomas and Elizabeth, first wife, bp. in St. Bartholomew's, recorded in parish register, Heigham:

+ 1 SARAH^{VI}, bp. 6-17-1593. See following.
2 William, bp. 2-16-1594/5. D. 1655, "a. 60." Wife Elizabeth (c1600-1666); 6 chil.
3 Thomas, bp. 1-16-1596/7. D. 1603.
4 Elizabeth, bp. 7-5-1601.
5 Drue. Buried 1603.
6 Margery, bp. 5-12-1603.
7 Drue, bp. 9-22-1605.

Children of Thomas and Dorothy, second wife:

8 Mary^{vi}, bp. 11-20-1611.
9 John, bp. 11-29-1612. (D. 1618?)

SARAH^{VI} ELLWYN was baptized at St. Bartholomew's church, in the parish of Heigham, Norwich, England, and married there on Oct. 13, 1616, Michael, son of Rev. Leonard Metcalf. Michael was born in Tatterford, Norfolk, about 1590. Sarah accompanied her husband to New England in 1637, with their children, and died in Hingham, Mass., on Nov. 30, 1644, "age 51 years, 5 months and 13 days." Michael married second in Roxbury, Mass., Aug. 13, 1645, Mary, the widow of Thomas Pidge. Michael died in Dedham on Dec. 24, 1664. See METCALF.

New England Register, 80:312-313.
Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica, March 1926, chart on pp. 16-19; and page 27 of article by Moriarty.

METCALF

MICHAEL METCALF was taxed at Apperside, a hamlet of Wensleydale Yorkshire, England in 1542 and 1544. A large proportion of the inhabitants of Apperside bore the name of Metcalf, many of them having the Christian names of Leonard and Michael, so it is quite possible the following was the son of this Michael Metcalf.

REVEREND LEONARD METCALF, Rector of Tatterford, Norfolk, Wensleydale, England, according to a deposition made by him in 1614, was born in Apperside, North Riding of Yorkshire. In this deposition, in which he is called "cleric," he testified that he was seventy-three years of age, and had been the incumbent forty years. His wife Amy died in 1602. His estate was administered in 1616, as of West Barsham, Norfolk, where he was also vicar. Known children:

1 John, 1583.
2 Leonard, bp. 9-3-1586.
3 Nicholas, bp. 7-8-1587.
+ 4 MICHAEL, 1590. (Records missing for 1590) See below.
5 Richard, 1592? (Records missing for 1592)
6 Matthew, bp. Dec. 1594.
7 Marie, bp. 8-28-1601.

MICHAEL^1 METCALF was born in Tatterford, Norfolk, England, about 1590. (He testified in 1636, giving his age as 45.) He married on Oct. 13, 1616, in the adjoining town of Wearham, Sarah, daughter of Thomas Ellwyn. She was baptized in Heigham, Norfolk, June 17, 1593. "Sarah, the Wyfe of our Brother Mich^1 Metcalfe Sen^r, died co'fortably Nov^r the 30th 1644, aged fiftie one years, five months and thirteen days. She was born at Heigham near Norwich...." (Dedham, Mass., church record.) Michael married second, in Roxbury, Mass., on Aug. 13, 1645, Mary, the widow of Thomas Pidge. Michael died in Dedham on Dec. 24, 1664. See ELLWYN.

"Michill Metcalfe, of Norwich, Dornix Weauer, aged 45," was examined, April 8, 1637, with Sarah, his wife, 39, and eight children: Michill, Thomas, Mary, Sarah, Elizabeth, Martha, Rebeca and Joane; also servant Thomas Comberbach, 16, all being "desirous to passe to boston in New England to inhabitt."

In 1635, in England, "Michael Metcalf of Norwich, Dornick weaver, age 45, born at Tatterford, county Norfolk," testified

as to practices of Clergymen of St. Edmund's, Norwich. He was warden of Dornick weavers, Norwich, 1619-1634. The following is taken from a copy of a letter written by him in Plymouth, England, on Jan. 13, 1636/7, directed to "all true professors of Christ's Gospel within the city of Norwich."

"I was persecuted in the land of my father's sepulchres, for not bowing at the name of Jesus, and observing other ceremonies in religion, forced upon me, at the instance of Bishop Wrenn of Norwich, and his chancellor, Dr Corbet, whose violent measures troubled me in the Bishop's Court, and returned me into the High Commissioner's Court. Suffering many times for the cause of religion, I was forced for the sake of the liberty of my conscience to flee from my wife and children, to go into New England; taking ship for the voyage at London the 17th of September 1636, being by tempests tossed up and down the seas till the Christmas following, then veering about to Plymouth in Old England, in which time I met with many sore afflictions. Leaving the ship, I went down to Yarmouth to come to New England; sailed 15th April 1637, and arrived three days before midsummer, with my wife, nine children and a servant." [Thomas Comberbach, age 16.] In a postscript Michael added: "My enemies conspired against me to take my life, and sometimes, to avoid their hands, my wife did hide me in the roof of the house, covering me over with straw."

The charges brought against the notorious Bishop Wrenn by a Committee of Parliament, was that during the terms of two years and four months while he held the See of Norwich, "3000 of His Majesty's subjects, many of whome use the trades, spinning, weaving, knitting, makeing cloth, stuff, stockings, and other manufactures of wool, many of them setting some hundred poor people at work...transported themselves into Holland and other parts beyond the seas," in consequence of his "superstition and tyranny." England could ill afford to lose these useful men. Although Bishop Wrenn's denial of these charges was published in "Parentalia," by a descendant of his, it is well known that many of our most important New England settlers left England on account of Bishop Wrenn's persecutions.

The Dedham Historical Register, 3:143, gives a fac simile in Latin, beautifully written, and signed by Michael Metcalf, of the "Coppy of my fredome of the City of Norwich, in county Norfolke in Ould England, Made freman in the month of September, 1618." There is also a lengthy English translation.

He was admitted townsman at Dedham, July 14, 1637, joined the church in 1639, and was selectman in 1641 and subsequently. He was on the committee chosen to "contrive the fabricke of a meeting house," and took an active part in the civil affairs of the town. In 1656, at the age of seventy, the town persuaded him to serve as schoolmaster, which he did until the year before his death in 1664, his pay £20 per year in grain.

His will of Nov. 15, 1664, probated Feb. 1, 1664/5, refers to the covenant made with his wife Mary "before their marriage namely, Aug. 13, 1645." He bequeathed to sons John and Thomas Metcalf; Michael, son of his deceased son MICHAEL; daughters, Mary Wilson, Elizabeth Bancroft, Martha Stow, Rebecca Mackentosh, Joane Walker, and SARAH ONION; his wife's daughter Martha Bullard; his daughter Stowe's eldest son which she had by her first husband, William Brignall; and grandchildren, John MacKintosh and ROBERT ONION. His son Thomas was to be executor and residuary legatee. Legacies were money, lands, silver spoons, and many books. The inventory of his estate was in the amount of £364.18.5.

Children of Michael and Sarah, first 7 born in St. Benedicts, Norwich, Eng.; next four born at St. Edmondsbury, Eng.:

1 Michael^2, 11-13-1617. D. yg. in Eng.
2 Mary, 2-14-1618/19. Liv. 1686. M.1642, Henry Wilson (d. 1686); 5 chil.
+ 3 MICHAEL, 8-29-1620. See below.
4 John, 9-5-1622. D.1690. M.1647, Mary^2 (Francis^1) Chickering (d.1698); 7 chil. Res: Medfield, Mass.
+ 5 SARAH^2 METCALF, born, St.Benedicts, Norwich, Eng., Sept. 10, 1624; died, Dedham, Mass., May 22, 1676. She married about 1646-8, ROBERT^1 ONION, born about 1610, in England; died, Dedham, Nov. 21, 1673. See ONION.
6 Elizabeth, 10-4-1626. D. 1711. M. 1648, as 2d wife, Lt. Thomas^1 Bancroft of Reading, Mass. (c1622-91); 9 chil.
7 Martha, 3-27-1628. D.1717. M.1, William Brignall; 1 son. M.2,c1662, as 2d wife, Nathaniel^2 (John^1) Stow (1621-1684); 1 son, 1663.
8 Thomas, 12-27-1629. D.1702. M.,1,1656, Sarah Page; had chil. M.2,1679, Anne Paine.
9 Ann, 3-1-1631. D. yg. in Eng.
✓ 10 Joan, 3-24-1632. M., Samuel Walker, Jr., of Rehoboth. error — (Phillip Walker)
11 Rebecca, 4-5-1635. M. 1659, John Mackintosh of Dedham.
12 Nicholas? Said by Bishop Wrenn to have gone to America with his father. No further record.

MICHAEL^2 METCALF was born at St.Benedicts, Norwich, Eng., on Aug. 29, 1620. He married at Dedham, Mass., on April 2, 1644, Mary, daughter of Jonathan Fairbanks. Mary was born in England on April 18, 1622. Michael died in Dedham before Aug. 2, 1654, when Mary married second, Christopher Smith, who died there on Nov. 7, 1676. Mary died in Dedham on June 4, 1684. See FAIRBANKS.

Michael died before his father, who left a legacy for Michael the third. His inventory was taken March 31, 1654, and amounted to £164.09.10. Administration was granted April 26, 1654, to Mary his wife, in her behalf and her five children.

Town records show Michael was granted two acres of woodland in 1644, and six acres in 1653; his house was assessed at £8 in 1648; he was taxed yearly until his death; taxed for the school rate in 1653. He joined the church, March 6, 1640/41. He signed the petition of 1645 for a free school; was admitted townsman in 1651, and chosen woodreeve in 1651 and 1654.

Mary was bequeathed £16 by her father in 1668, as wife of Christopher Smith; also £3 for a "suite of Aparrell." She was appointed administratrix of Smith's estate in Dedham, Dec. 13, 1676. Her will of May 30, 1684, probated July 3, 1684, calling herself relict of Christopher Smith, deceased, named sons John Smith, Jonathan and Eleazer Metcalf; daughters, SARAH, wife of ROBERT WARE, Hannah Metcalf, Melatiah Metcalf, daughter Mary Ware's two sons, John and Eleazer Ware; my brother John Fairbanks; mentioned money left by her father, etc. The inventory of her estate was taken on July 11, 1684.

Children of Michael and Mary, born in Dedham:

1 Michael^3, 1-21; bp.1-26-1644/5. D.1693. Not in mother's will, 1684. M.1672, Elizabeth^2 (Thomas^1) Fuller (1648-1732); 7 chil. She was the widow of John Kingsbury.
2 Mary, 8-15; bp. 8-16-1646. D. 1677. M.1668, John^2 (ROBERT^1) WARE (1646-1718); 5 chil. He m. 2, 1679, Joanna^2 (John^1) Gay (1645-1708); 6 chil. M.3, 1709, Widow Dorothy Wood (d.1728).
+ 3 SARAH, 12-7-1648. See below.
4 Jonathan, 9-21-1650. D. 1727. M. 1674, Hannah^2 (John^1) Kenric (d.1731); 10 chil.
5 Eleazur, 3-2-1653/4. D. Wrentham, Mass., 1704. M. 1684, Meletiah, dau. of Samuel Fisher (1667-1719).

Child of Mary and Second Husband, Christopher Smith:

1 John Smith, 11-19-1655.

SARAH^3 METCALF was born in Dedham, Mass., on Dec. 7, 1648. She married there on June 4, 1677, Robert Ware, Junior, born in Dedham on Aug. 1 or 6, 1653. Sarah died on April 13, 1718, in Wrentham, Mass., and Robert married second, Mendon, Mass., Feb. 26, 1719/20, Elizabeth Holbrook, who died in Wrentham on July 28, 1723. Robert died there, Sept. 16, 1724. See WARE.

Ware Genealogy. Fairbanks Genealogy.
Bancroft Genealogy. Goodwin's Notes, 157-8.
Robert Harris and Descendants, 51 (autograph)
Americana, 32:349. **Misc. Gen. et Heraldica, 1926, 16-19; 29**
Dedham Historical Register, 3:142,225,271; 1:91; 5:95(Elwyns)
Dedham Records, 3:104, 110, etc., etc.; 2;39.
New England Register, 6:171;8:128^w; 80:312; 86:252; 16:279-84

Dedham Hist Soc. Reg., April 1894 pp 94 + 5

SARA (ELLWYN) METCALF.

By Martin Metcalf,
of Battle Creek, Michigan.

As is well known to genealogists of New England, persistent efforts have been made without avail these many years to find the family record and birth place of "Sara," first wife of Michael Metcalf, 1636-7, and mother of all his children. During the past few years the writer has been on a "still hunt" for the hiding place of the obstinate *Sara*, resulting in success, as the following extracts from old Parish Register books will show. The reason why record searchers have hitherto failed appears from the mis-reading of Michael's old letters and records, wherein *Heigham*, a suburb of Norwich, has been confounded with Raynham or Waynham. The records as now found on the Parish Record of Heigham, St. Bartholomew, are as follows:—

> Michaell Medcalfe, & Sara Ellwyn married y^t 13 day of October 1616.
>
> ✓ 1593. Sara Ellwin, ye Daughter of Thomas Ellwin and Elizabeth, his wife, was Baptized y^t xvii day of June.

Other records still extant in Norfolk County, of the Ellwyns and Ellwins, as well as Michael's, "license to go beyond the sea to inhabitt," seem to prove that the figure 3 of transcript of birth, or *baptism* rather, should be 8; and that Sara was baptized 17 June 1598, instead of 1593. The Ellwyns are still living in that vicinity, and are earlier close connections of the line of Nappa Metcalfe's, in at least two family intermarriages. Calling one William Ellwyn, of Heigham, first, we find as follows:—

William Ellwyn[1]; wife not given; had son Thomas.
Thomas[2], b. 1566; m. Elizabeth [ ]; d. 1648.
Children:—
Martha[3], b. June, 1593; m. Lawrence Marsh; d. 1667.
William[3], b. 1595; m. Elizabeth [ ] (b. 1600, d. 1666, aged 66); d. 1755, aged 60. Children:—
Augustine[4], b. 1631; d. 1666, aged 35.
Alice[4], b. [ ]; m. Edward Carver; d. 1679.
Mary[4], b. [ ]; m. Daniel Reeve; d. 1668.
William[4], b. 1640; m. Elizabeth [ ]; d. 1686.
Children:— Thomas[5], b. 1674, d. 1676; Elizabeth, b. 1678, d. 1679.
Sara[3], b. 17 June, 1598; m. Oct. 13, 1616, Michaell Metcalfe.

Clippings

Metcalfe

Founders of American Families - Meredith Colket - p 209

METCALF, METCALFE

MICHAEL Born ca 1598. Of Norwich, co. Norfolk, Eng. Came on "John and Dorothy" with family 1637, Boston (Mass.), Dedham. d. Dedham 24 Dec 1664. Weaver on list. Freeman. *Register* 6:171 (desc), 16:279 (biog), 78:63 (caveat), 80:312 (caveat, clue), 138:80 (clue).

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1700
by Frank R Holmes pg cliii

METCALF, MEDCALF

In the Welsh, *medd* signifies a vale, a meadow, and *caf*, a cell, a chancel, a church, *ie* the church in the vale; English ancestor, Adam de Medikalf 1278. BRIAN METCALF is mentioned in Middleham Rolls 1465-66.

JOSEPH, freeman, Ipswich, Mass., 1635.
MICHAEL, weaver and tapestry maker, son of Rev. Leonard M., and sixth generation from Brian M., b. Tatterford, County Norfolk, Eng., 1586, came to N. E., 1637, settled at Dedham, Mass.
STEPHEN, brickmaker, at New Haven, Conn., 1639.

Pope's Pioneers - pp 312-3

METCALF, etc., cont.

had borne in Eng., [Reg. XVI, 279.] Town officer, school-master. Wife adm. chh. 11 (8) 1639. She d. Nov. 30, 1644, ae. 51 years, 5 months, 13 days; was b. at Wagnham, near Norwich, June 17, 1593, married Oct. 13, 1616. [Ded. chh. rec.] He m. 2, Mary, widow of Thomas Pidge.

He d. Dec. 27, 1664. Will dated 15 (9) 1664; refers to the covenant made with his wife Mary before their marriage, namely 13 Aug. 1645; sons John and Thomas M.; Michael, son of his dec. son Michael; daus. Mary, (wife of Henry Wilson,) Elizabeth, (wife of Thomas Bancroft,) Martha, (wife of Nathaniel Stow,) Joane, (wife of — Walker,) Rebecca, (wife of John Mackintosh,) Sarah, (wife of Robert Onion;) his wife's dau. Martha, (wife of Benjamin Bullard;) his dau. Stowes eldest son which she had by her first husband Wm. Brignall, to have four pounds when he shall attayne to lawful age; gr. ch. John Mackintosh and Robert Onion. [Reg. VI, 172.] Prob. Feb. 1, 1664-5.

Theophilus, Salem, 1636.

I threw out a big pile of articles (probably correctly) showing descent from our Metcalfs, because they all repeat the same data we already have, & that would only take up space repeating stuff we already know!

Vol II by William Cutter
Genealogy of New England Families

(The Metcalf Line).

(I) Michael Metcalf, the immigrant ancestor, was born in 1586, at Latterford, county Norfolk, England, where he was a weaver. He and his wife came to New England, in 1637, on account of religious persecutions, as he states, and they settled at Dedham, Massachusetts, where he was admitted a freeman, July 14, 1637. He joined the church in 1639, being selectman in 1641. He married (first) October 13, 1616, in Waynham, England, Sarah Elwyn, born June 17, 1593, died February 14, 1645, daughter of Thomas Elwyn. He married (second) August 13, 1645, May Pidge, a widow of Roxbury, Massachusetts. He died December 27, 1664, leaving eleven children, all born in Norwich, England.

(II) Michael (2), son of Michael (1) Metcalf, was born in Norwich, England, August 29, 1620, died at Dedham, Massachusetts, December 24, 1654. He married, April 2, 1644, Mary, daughter of John Fairbanks Sr. He had five children.

(III) Jonathan, son of Michael (2) Metcalf, was born at Dedham, Massachusetts, September 21, 1650, died May 27, 1727. He married, April 10, 1674, Hannah, daughter of John Kenric, and they had eight children. She died December 23, 1731.

(IV) Nathaniel, son of Jonathan Metcalf, was born at Dedham, Massachusetts, April 17, 1691, died March 15, 1752. He married, February 17, 1713, Mary Gay, born May 30, 1693, died May 18, 1748, daughter of John Gay and Mary Fisher. Children: Mary; Nathaniel, mentioned below; Hannah; Sarah; Margaret; Mercy; Ebenezer; Lydia.

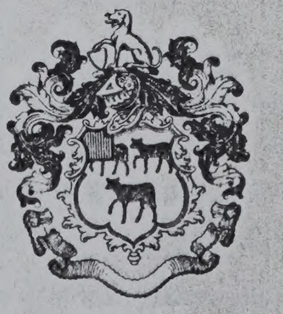
R929.3 C991 (ca 1880? - obsolete?)

Colonial Dames Publication - A distant relative?

ANCESTRAL RECORDS AND PORTRAITS 747

METCALF

A merchant of London, Gilbert Metcalf, the son of Richard of North Allerton, York County, Eng., came before 1708, to Richmond County, Va., with his wife Jane, who died 1725. A deed is recorded in that county[53] from "Jane Metcalf wife, and executrix of Gilbert Metcalf, late of London, deceased." (Gilbert Metcalf was an uncle to Sir Gilbert, Knight, Lord Mayor of York, 1695). Issue: Richard, married Ann —— (she married second, Ed-



METCALF

[52] Accord'ng to the records of Northumberland County Court House, 1667, "a probate of will was granted on petition of Mistress Helen Lindsay, daughter to Mr. David Lindsay, in April, 1667."

[53] *Deed Book*, No. 5, p. 12.

Virkus Compendium of American Genealogy Vol 1 - Immigrant Ancestors section page 985

METCALF (Metcalfe), Michael (1586/87-1664; son of Rev. Leonard), from Eng. to Boston, 1637; settled at Dedham; freeman 1640 or 1642; *m* 1616, Sarah Ellwyn (or Elwyn); *m* 2d, 1645, Martha –, widow of Thomas Piggs (or Pidge).

American Ancestry (Virkus) Vol 6 : 103

METCALF, JOHN TRUMBULL of Brooklyn, N. Y., b. at New York city Oct. 17, 1818 (m. Nov. 11, 1844, Mary M. Myrick, gr.-dau. of Aaron Mitchell of Nantucket, Mass., and had one son, William Henry Metcalf of New Haven, Ct., b. Oct. 4, 1846); son of **Eliab** of New York city, b. at Franklin, Mass., Feb. 5, 1785, d. at Havana, Cuba, Jan. 15, 1834, artist (m. Sep. 15, 1814, Nancy Benton); son of **James** of Franklin, Mass., b. there Aug. 31, 1757, d. there July 18, 1843 (m. Apr. 21, 1778, Abigail Harding); son of **James** of Franklin, Mass., b. at Wrentham, Mass., Aug. 1, 1729, d. at Franklin Aug. 16, 1803 (m. Jan. 3, 1754, Abiel Haven); son of **Michael** of Wrentham, Mass., b. there May 21, 1687, d. there Jan. 9, 1754 (m. Dec. 22, 1712, Abiel Colborn); son of **Eleazer** of Wrentham, Mass., b. at Dedham, Mass., Mar. 2, 1653, d. at Wrentham May 10, 1704 (m. Apr. 9, 1684, Meletiah Fisher); son of **Michael** of Dedham, Mass., b. at Norwich, Eng., Aug. 29, 1620, d. at Dedham Mar. 27, 1654 (m. Apr. 2, 1644, Mary Fairbanks); son of **Michael** of Dedham, Mass., b. at Tatterford, Eng., July, 1587, d. Dec. 24, 1664 (m. Oct. 13, 1616, Sarah); son of **Leonard** of Tatterford, Eng., b. there 1545, d. there Sep. 22, 1616, rector of the Parish of Tatterford, Norfolk co., Eng., 1611.

American Ancestry (Virkus) Vol 7: 136-7

METCALF, ISAAC STEVENS of Elyria, O., b. in Royalston, Mass., Jan. 29, 1822, early years were spent in Royalston until 1828, Boston 1832, Bangor and Milo, Me., 1842, grad. Bangor High Sch. 1842, teacher in Milo, Bradford, Brownville, Turner, Gardner, Topsham, Orono and Foxcroft Acad., grad. Bowdoin Coll. 1847, surveyor and engineer of Vt. and Mass., N. H. Central and Ill. Central Railroads 1847–56, has since that time resided in Elyria, O. (m. 1st, July 5, 1852, Antoinette Brigham Putnam, d. Aug. 14, 1875, dau. of John M. Putnam of Dunbarton, N. H., son of Reuben Putnam of Sutton, Mass., son of Nehemiah, son of Elisha, son of Edward, son of Thomas, son of Thomas Putnam of Buckinghamshire, Eng., who settled in Salem, Mass., 1634, and had nine children: Wilder Stevens, b. 1855, grad. Oberlin Coll. 1878, now of Lawrence, Kan., Charles Rich, b. 1857, grad. Elyria, O., Business Coll., Marion, b. 1859, grad. Wellesley 1880, teacher there 10 yrs., Anna Mayo, b. 1862, grad. Oberlin Coll. 1884 [m. Prof. A. S. Root], John M. P., b. 1864, grad. Oberlin Coll. 1885, Theol. Sem. 1888, now prof. in Oberlin Theol. Sem., Paul Harlan, b. 1867, grad. Oberlin Coll. 1889, Grace Ethel, b. 1870, grad. Oberlin Coll. 1890, Henry Martyn, b. 1871, grad. Oberlin Coll. 1891, Antoinette P., b. 1873, Oberlin Coll., class of 1893, m. 2d, Mar. 25, 1878, Harriet, dau. of William and Elizabeth [West] Howes of Gartonwood House, Northampton, Eng., where the family had lived for 300 years, and had six children: Ralph Howes, b. Jan. 9, 1879, Joseph Mayo, b. Dec. 30, 1880, Eliab Wright, b. Dec. 26, 1881, Isaac Stevens, b. Sep. 14, 1883, Keyes Dewitt, b. Apr. 13, 1889, and Thomas Nelson, b. Sep. 21, 1890, has fifteen children living, all strong and healthy, sound in mind and body, eight of whom are college educated, the rest going the same road); son of **Isaac** of Royalston and Boston, Mass., b. in Royalston, Mass., Feb. 3, 1783, d. in Boston, Mass., Apr. 17, 1833, teacher in Worcester and Franklin counties many years, later kept a private school in Boston (m. Mar. 1, 1822, Anna Mayo, dau. of Wilder Stevens of Warwick, and widow of Charles Rich of Warwick, and had four children: Isaac Stevens Metcalf, b. Jan. 29, 1822, Joseph Mayo Metcalf, b. July 25, 1823, d. Dec. 31, 1850, Lucy Heywood Metcalf, b. May 20, 1825 [m. May, 1848, S. W. Furber, died], Eliab Wight Metcalf, b. Apr. 18, 1887 [m. Apr. 6, 1853, Eliza M. Ely], Bangor, Me., and Elyria, O., he, Wilder, d. Aug. 2, 1826, m. Elizabeth Mayo, dau. of Joseph and Esther [Kendrick] Mayo of Roxbury, Mass., said to be desc. of Earls of Mayo, Ireland, and was the son of Nathaniel, b. in Lancaster, Mass., 1712, and Molly [Martin] Stevens, d. 1796, son of Simon Stevens, b. 16—, came from London, Eng., and settled in Lancaster, Mass., 1700, blacksmith of immense strength, served in the French and Indian war, was a desc. of one of the old Devonshire families); son of **Peletiah** of Royalston, Mass., b. there June 29, 1744, d. there Oct. 19, 1807 (m. Lydia Estey, b. May 12, 1749, d. 1829, and had eleven children: Peletiah, b. Aug. 30, 1771, d. Aug. 20, 1777, Lydia, b. Sep. 28, 1773, d. Aug. 28, 1777, Isaac, b. Dec. 19, 1775, d. Aug. 21, 1777, Sally, b. Feb. 3, 1778, d. Mar. 13, 1795, Peletiah, b. July 29, 1780, d. Oct. 26, 1866, physician in Woonsocket, R. I., Isaac, b. Feb. 3, 1783, d. Apr. 17, 1830, teacher in Boston, Mass., Jacob, b. June 7, 1785, d. Apr. 21, 1859, lumber dealer in Royalston [m. and has four sons], Joel, b. July 9, 1787, d. Aug. 5, 1789, Elias, b. July 31, 1789, d. Aug. 21, 1789, Timothy, b. Nov. 22, 1790, d. Dec. 31, 1790, and Enoch, b. Feb. 27, 1792, resides in Lowell, Mass., and has a son, Caleb B. Metcalf of Worcester); son of **Peletiah** of Wrentham, Mass., b. there (?) Mar. 22, 1714, d. in Royalston Apr. 1, 1770 (m. Jan. 8, 1742, Hepsibah, d. Oct. 4, 1773, dau. of Samuel Mann, first minister of Wrentham, and member of Wrentham Constitutional Convention 1788, and sister of Thomas Mann, d. 1756); son of **Michael** of Wrentham, Mass., b. Jan. 26 or May 21, 1687, d. in Wrentham Jan. 9, 1754 (m. Dec. 2, 1712, Abiel or Abigail Colburn of Dedham, and had thirteen children: Peletiah, b. Mar. 22, 1714, Mehitable, b. Apr. 27, 1717, Michael, b. Jan. 24, 1718, Barnabas, b. July 11, 1719, Meletiah, b. Feb. 25, 1721, Joseph, b. Feb. 20, 1723, John, b. Oct. 25, 1725, Ebenezer, b. June 1, 1727, James, b. July 19, 1729, Mercy, b. Aug. 10, 1731, Abiel, b. Feb. 28, 1733, Esther, b. Sep. 3, 1735, and Samuel, b. Aug. 14, 1739); son of **Eleasar** of Wrentham, Mass., b. in Dedham, Mass., Mar. 20, 1653, d. in Wrentham May 14, 1704, deacon (m. Apr. 9, 1684, Melatia Fisher, and had ten children: Eleasar, b. May 30, 1685, Michael, b. Jan. 25, 1687, Samuel, b. Jan. 15, 1689, Ebenezer, b. Jan. 8, 1691, Jonathan, b. Apr. 9, 1693, Meletiah, b. Apr. 29, 1695, Timothy, b. July 2, 1697, Martha and Mary, b. Aug. 27, 1699, and Eleazer, b. Nov. 21, 1700–1); son of **Michael**, b. in Norwich, Eng., Aug. 29, 1620, d. Dec. 27, 1664, admitted a freeman by Mass. Gen. Court May 13, 1642 (m. Apr. 21, 1644, Mary, dau. of John Fairbanks, and had 7 children: Michael, b. Jan. 21, 1645, Jonathan, b. Sep. 10, 1650, Eleasar, b. Mar. 20, 1653, Sarah, b. Jan. 7, 1656, Mary, b. Aug. 15, 1659); son of **Michael**, b. in Tatterford, Eng., June 17, 1586, "Dornix Weaver" in Norwich, Eng., came to America to escape religious persecution, after losing his property by a Star Chamber fine, on the ship "John and Dorothy," Capt. Wm. Andrews, from Ipswich, Apr. 6, 1637, with eight children, and a servant named Thomas Comberbach (m. Oct. 13, 1616, Sarah, b. in Waynham, Eng., June 17, 1593).

four years. The Rev. Jacob Flint, the next minister, was settled here in 1798. A Trinitarian church was built here in 1826, and Rev. Aaron Picket was installed the first pastor.

This town is noted for its rocky coasts, and for the numerous shipwrecks which have taken place on its borders. Cohasset rock, which consists of several small islands and sunken rocks, lies about three miles north-east of the harbor; they have proved fatal to many vessels. This town has become quite a place of resort for citizens and strangers, in summer months, to enjoy the marine scenery and sea air. In 1837, there were 36 vessels employed in the cod and mackerel fishery, the tonnage of which was 2,284; codfish caught, 750 quintals, valued at $2,250; mackerel caught, 11,700 barrels, value, $73,286; hands employed, 324. In five years preceding 1837, there were 17 vessels built, the tonnage of which was 2,765, valued at $110,600. Population, 1,331. Distance, 6 miles from Hingham, and about 16 miles to Boston by water.

Metcalf

DEDHAM.

The settlement of this town was commenced in 1635. In that year, the general court, then sitting at Newtown, (now Cambridge,) granted a tract of land south of Charles river to 12 men. The next year 19 persons, including the first 12, petitioned the general court for an additional grant, lying on both sides of Charles river, which was made, agreeably to this petition. The last-mentioned grant included the territory of the present town of Dedham, and of a number of other towns in the vicinity. The first recorded public meeting was on the 15th of August, 1636, at which were present 18 persons. These adopted a covenant, by which each individual bound himself "to give information concerning any person who applied for admission, to submit to such fines as might be imposed for violation of rules, and to obey all such bye-laws and regulations as the inhabitants shall judge necessary for the management of their temporal affairs, for religion, and for loving society."

The government of the town was delegated by the freemen to 7 men, who were to be chosen annually. These 7 men met monthly, for many years, made many necessary bye-laws, which were recorded in the records of the town. Concerning the appropriation of the land, each man was provided with a lot of 12 acres if married, and 8 acres if unmarried; this to begin with. The after grants seem to have been made according to the necessities of members, or as a reward for services performed. The number of persons in a family was also made a rule by which to divide the lands; quality, rank or desert and usefulness in the church or commonwealth was also a rule considerable in the apportionment.

In a petition to the general court the inhabitants requested that the town might be called *Contentment;* which name is written over the record of the first several meetings. It would seem that the word well expresses the leading motives of the first 24 settlers in coming into this town. They were soon, however, associated with men of somewhat a different and higher character. The celebrated John Rogers, of Dedham, in England, had been forbidden to preach before the first settlers came to this country. Many of his people emigrated, and numbers settled in this place. From that circumstance, it may reasonably be inferred that the general court gave to the town the name of Dedham. The first settlers were more immediately from Watertown. They were as follows, viz. :

Edward Allyne,
Abraham Shaw,
Samuel Morse,
Evared
Phileman Dalton,
Ezekiel Holliman,
John Kingsbury,
John Dwite,
John Cooledge,
Richard Ewed,
John Howard,
Lambert Genere,
Nicholas Phillips,
Ralph Shepard,
John Gay,
Thomas Bartleet,
Francis Austin,
John Rogers,
Joseph Shaw,
William Bearstowe

In July, 1637, John Allin and Eleazer Lusher, and ten other persons, came to Dedham, bringing recommendations, and were at the same time admitted freemen. These 12 persons gave a more decided character to the whole company. The following is the list of freemen who had been admitted into Dedham previous to 1647.

Mr. John Allin,
Mr. Timothy Dalton,
Mr. Thomas Carter,
Mr. Ralph Wheelock,
Mr. John Hunting,
Mr. —— Pruden,
Mr. Henry Phillips,
F. Chickering, deac.,
Abraham Shaw,
Edward Allyne,
John Frayre,
Eleazer Lusher,
Robert Hinsdale,
Edward Kempe,
John Leuson,
John Dwight,
Henry Smith,
John Rogers,
John Shawe,
Nathan Aldis, deac.,
Daniel Fisher,
Michael Metcalf,
John Bullard,
Joshua Fisher,
Ferdinando Adams,
Thomas Wight,
Samuel Morse,
Nicholas Phillips,
John Morse,
John Page,
Michael Powell,
Joseph Kingsbury,
Nathaniel Colborne,
Timothy Dwight,
Peter Woodward,
John Baker,
Nathaniel Whiting,
Anthony Fisher,
Andrew Dewing,
George Barber,
Robert Onion,
Robert Feashe,
John Gay,
Lambert Genery,
Samuel Guile,
John Ellis,
Daniel Morse,
Thomas Alcoke,
John Batchellor,
Joseph Morse.

The first settlers located themselves on the margin of the meadows, near the modern center. Each house-lot consisted of a part upland and a part meadow. These lots were laid out in narrow parallel slips. It is stated in Worthington's History of Dedham,* that in 1664, ninety-five small houses, near each other, were situated within a short distance of the place where the court-house stands; the greater part of them east of that place and around Dwight's brook. A row of houses stood on the north side of High street, as that road was then called which extends from the bridge over Dwight's brook westwardly by the court-house. The greater number of these houses were built soon after the first settlement commenced. Four only of these were valued at £20; the greater number were worth from 3 to 10 pounds. At the time these houses were built, there were but very few carpenters, joiners, or masons in the colony. There was no saw-mill in the settlement for many years. The only boards which could be procured at first were those which were sawed by hand. The saw-pits yet to be seen denote that boards were sawed in the woods. The necessary materials of glass and nails were scarcely to be obtained. These houses, therefore, must have been principally constructed by farmers, not by mechanics, and have been very rude and inconvenient. Most of them were probably covered with thatch roofs. By an ordinance of the town, a ladder was ordered to extend from the ground to the chimney, as a substitute for a more perfect fire engine. Around these houses nothing was seen but stumps, clumsy fences of poles, and an uneven and unsubdued soil.

Where the meeting-house of the first parish now stands, there stood for more than 30 years a low building, 36 feet long and 20 wide, 12 feet high, with a thatched roof, and a large ladder resting upon it. This was the first meeting-house. Near by was the school-house, standing on an area of 18 feet by 14, and rising to 3 stories; the third story, however, was a watch-house, of small dimensions, and which stood beside the ample stone chimney. The spectator there elevated might view the plain, the site of the present village, then a common plough-field, containing about 200 acres of cleared land, partially subdued, yet full of stumps and roots. Around him at a further distance were the *herd*-walks, as the common feeding lands were called, in the language of that time. One of these herd-walks was on Dedham Island, north of Charles river, and one was on East street, and more fully in view. The other herd-walk was on South Plain. The meadows were not yet cleared to any great extent. Beyond these herd-walks was a continued wilderness, which was becoming more disagreeable to the inhabitants, for the cattle, goats and sheep seem to have allured the wolves to their neighborhood. The dense swamps about Wigwam were not yet cleared. The numerous dogs in the plantation, which were so troublesome to the worshipping assembly, were not a sufficient guard against the wolves; and the killing of these animals was encouraged by a considerable bounty. A law of the colony, as well as the dangers of the people from Indian assaults, compelled the first settlers to build their houses near each other. The necessity of adhering to this law continued more than 50 years. But as soon as the inhabitants could live with safety on their farms, houses were built in all parts of the present town. In about 70 years' time, the humble village of the first settlers had disappeared, and the place was occupied by a few farmers for about 100 years. When Dedham became the county town, in 1793, the second village was begun on the place of the former.* The first school-house in Dedham was built in 1648. The master's salary until 1695 was £20; it was then raised to £25. The early settlers at various times made grants of land for the support of schools, and in 1680, Dr. William Avery gave £60 for a Latin school, but from mismanagement these funds were many years ago lost.

The first settlers early procured a minister, built a meeting-house, and performed every other act necessary for the immediate establishment of public worship among them. They erected the first meeting-house in 1637. The pitts (as the pews are called in the records) were 5 feet deep and 4½ wide. The elders' seat and the deacons' seat were before the pulpit; the communion-table stood before these seats, and was so placed that the people could approach it on three sides. This house was pulled down in 1672, and one much larger erected on the site of the old one. This house had 3 pair of stairs in 3 corners of the interior. Men were seated in the galleries on one side, and women on the other; the boys in front. The duty of a tythingman in those days was arduous, and he received as much pay for his services, many years, as the deputy to the general court. He was obliged to go on errands for the elders, whip the dogs out of the meeting-house, and prevent disorder among the boys. The business of seating persons in these two houses came under the jurisdiction of the

---

* "The History of Dedham from the beginning of its Settlement, in September, 1635, to May, 1827, by Erastus Worthington." It is to this work the author is principally indebted for the facts in the history of this town. The "Historical Address" of Samuel F. Haven, Esq., on the second centennial anniversary, in 1836, with notes, is also another valuable publication respecting the history of this town

---

* The first settlers brought with them a number of small hand-mills, with which to grind their grain; the stones of which were about 2 feet in diameter. The stones of 2 of these hand-mills are stated to be yet remaining in the town. The first water-mill in Dedham was built in 1640. In 1664, a saw-mill was built on Neponset river, by Joshua Fisher. In 1681, a fulling-mill was built on Mother brook, by Draper and Fairbanks.

Family Record

(Averill Ancestors)

Family No.

Surname

Father – Richard BOWEN, Jr.

Event	Day	Month	Year	○	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1630?	○			Wales		○
Death	? 4	Feb	1707	○	Rehoboth	Bristol	Mass.	(now East Providence RI)	○
Buried				○				R L Bowen (Early Rehoboth Vol II; 13 says he died ca 1722/3	○
Married	4	Mar	1655/6	○	Rehoboth	Plymouth Colony			○

Occupation Military Church Baptist ○

Places Lived ○

Other Wives ② 26 Jan 1690 at Rehoboth – Martha (Allen) Sabin, widow of William – who had 12 children by a first wife + 8 by her – 20 little Sabins! (10 Jan 1645 – 11 Jan 1735) ○

His Father's Name Richard Bowen, Sr. ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Ann (? Born) ○

Mother – Esther SUTTON

Event	Day	Month	Year	○	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1626	○	Attleborough	Norfolk	England		○
Death				○					○
Buried			1675	○	Rehoboth,	Bristol	MA		○

Occupation Military Church Baptist ○

Places Lived ○

Other Husbands ○

Her Father's Name John Sutton (1595–1672) ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name Julian (– 1678) ○

Children

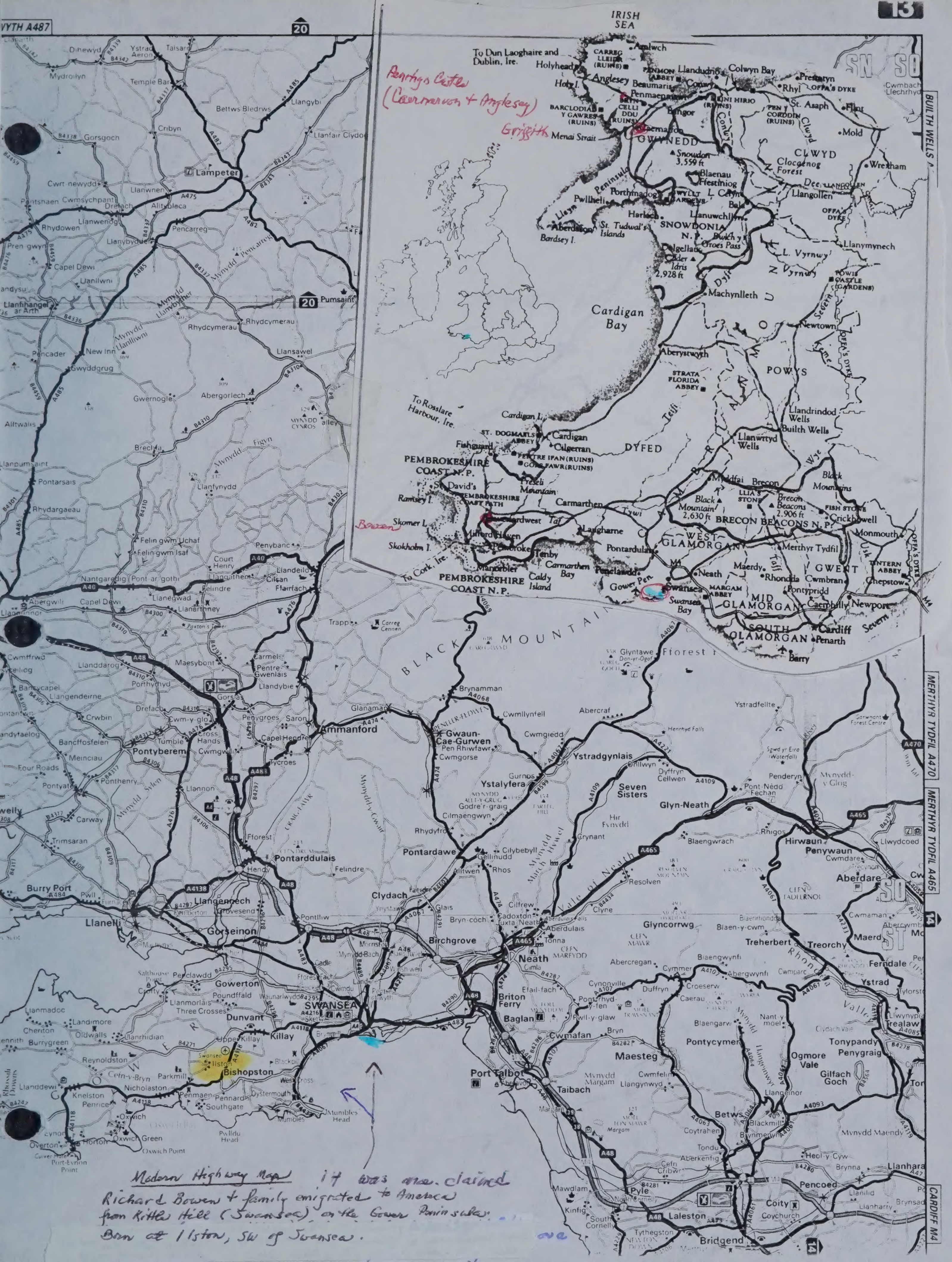
Sex	Full Given Name	○	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Sarah Bowen	○	Birth			1656/7	Rehoboth			○
			Death			1703				○
	Spouse Preserved Abell his ② (1644–1724)	○	Married	27	Dec	1686	Rehoboth			○
	2. Hester Bowen	○	Birth	20	Apr	1660	"			○
			Death			1699	"			○
	Spouse – Samuel² Millard (1658–1726) he m/2 6/1/1700 Esther Jenks	○	Married	20	July	1682	"			○
	3. Richard Bowen III	○	Birth	17	Jan	1662	"			○
			Death			17	"			○
	Spouse – ? Patience Peck (1669–)	○	Married	28	Feb	1690/1	"	(or Mercy Titus 9 Jan 1683?)		○
+	4. Mary Bowen	○	Birth	3	Oct	1666				○
			Death	8	May	1694	" (epidemic)			○
	Spouse – Philip Walker, Jr. (he m/2 Sarah ca 1695 d. 1739)	○	Married	31	Dec	1687	"			○
	5. John Bowen	○	Birth	15	Mar	1670	"			○
			Death		Apr	1748	"			○
	Spouse – Elizabeth Brockett	○	Married	12	Sep	1700	"			○
	6.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse –	○	Married							○
	7.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse –	○	Married							○
	8.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse –	○	Married							○

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side. ○

It is hard to find details about this family group. The genealogies follow Richard, Jr's brothers Obadiah and Thomas. (Dr. Thomas Bowen's son Wm. b 1660 married Lydia Pearce (dau. Giles) our early relatives)

For information about Mary (Bowen) and Philip² Walker, see Walker file.

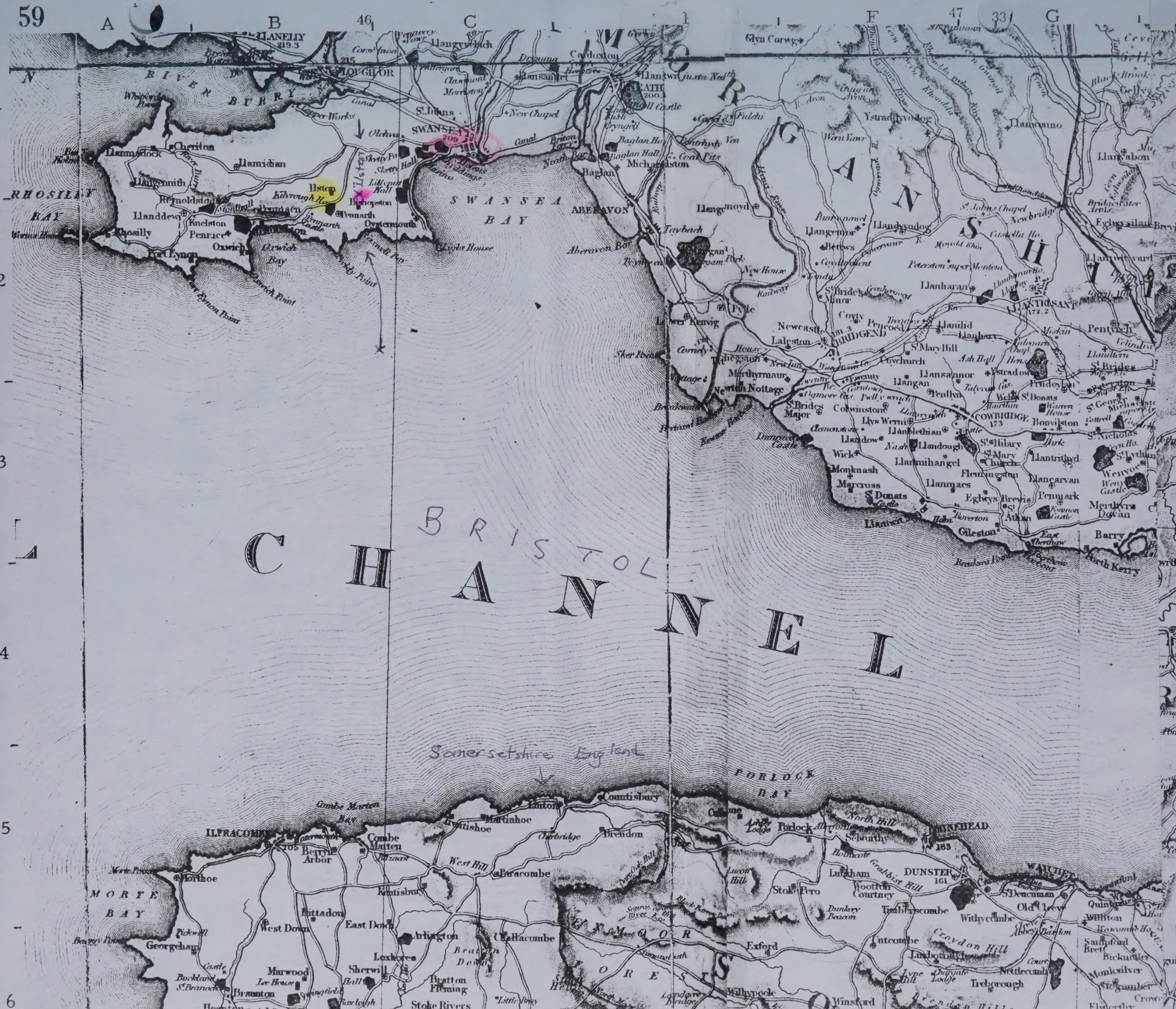
☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

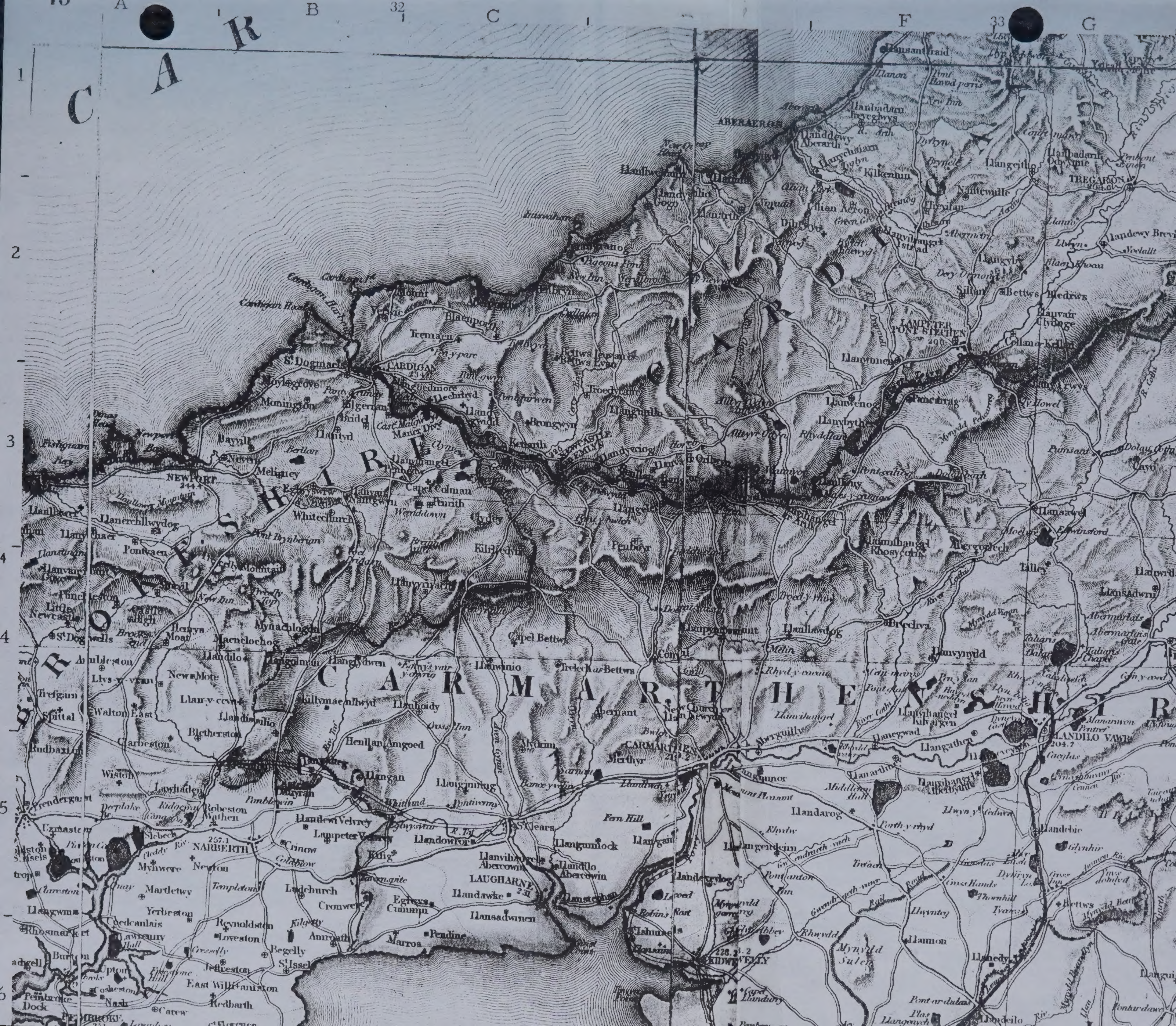

IRISH SEA
Penrhyn Castle
(Caernarvon + Anglesey)
Griffith
Menai Strait
Anglesey
Holyhead
Bangor
Caernarfon
GWYNEDD
Snowdon 3,559 ft
Cardigan Bay
Aberystwyth
POWYS
DYFED
PEMBROKESHIRE COAST N.P.
Bowen
Skomer I.
Haverfordwest
Milford Haven
Carmarthen
BRECON BEACONS N.P.
WEST GLAMORGAN
Gower Pen.
Swansea
Swansea Bay
MID GLAMORGAN
SOUTH GLAMORGAN
Cardiff
BLACK MOUNTAIN
Lampeter
Llandeilo
Ammanford
Pontarddulais
Llanelli
Gorseinon
Gowerton
SWANSEA
Killay
Ilston
Bishopston
Mumbles Head
Neath
Port Talbot
Maesteg
Bridgend
MERTHYR TYDFIL A470
MERTHYR TYDFIL A465
BUILTH WELLS
CARDIFF M4

Modern Highway Map It was once claimed Richard Bowen + family emigrated to America from Kittle Hill (Swansea) on the Gower Peninsula. Born at Ilston, SW of Swansea.

Modern Map . not as it appeared in 1600.

ieval, map appears
Princes of Wales
Section.


A
B
46
C
D
E
F
47
33
G
1
2
3
4
5
6
LLANELLY 219.3
LOUGHOR
RIVER BURRY
Llangyvelach
Swansea
SWANSEA 209
St. Johns
Oldrea
New Chapel
Canal
Briton Ferry
Neath Bar
NEATH 200.3
Llantwit juxta Neath
Glyn Corwg
Ystradyvodog
Llanwonno
Cheriton
Llanmadock
Llanridian
Llangennith
Reynoldstone
Penmaen
Llanddewi
Knelston
Penrice
Oxwich
Port Eynon
Rhosilly
RHOSILLY BAY
Ilston
Kilvrough Ho.
Bishopston
Pennarth
Oystermouth
Oxwich Bay
Oxwich Point
Port Eynon Point
Pwll du Point
Ilston
SWANSEA BAY
Mumbles
ABERAVON
Aberavon Bar
Baglan
Baglan Hall
Michaelston
Tayback
Margam Park
New House
Kenvig
Pyle
Newcastle
Laleston
BRIDGEND
Coity
Pencoed
Llanharan
LLANTRISANT 172.2
St. Brides Minor
Llangonoyd
Bettws
Llangeinor
Llandyvodog
Newbridge
Eglwysilan
Llanvabon
Pentyrch
Sker Point
Porthcawl
Nottage
Newton Nottage
Merthyrmawr
Ewenny
Coychurch
St. Mary Hill
Llangan
Llansannor
Penllyn
Cowbridge 173
St. Brides Major
Colwinstone
Llandow
Wick
Monknash
Marcross
St. Donats
Llanmaes
Llanmihangel
Flemingston
Eglwys Brewis
St. Athan
Gileston
Llantwit Major
Dunraven Castle
Llancarvan
Penmark
Fonmon Castle
Llantrithyd
Bonvilston
St. Nicholas
Wenvoe Castle
Merthyr Dyvan
Barry
North Kerry
St. Georges
St. Lythan
CHANNEL
BRISTOL
Somersetshire England
PORLOCK BAY
Countisbury
Lynton
Martinhoe
Trentishoe
Combe Martin Bay
Combe Martin
ILFRACOMBE 205
Berry Arbor
Mortehoe
MORTE BAY
Georgeham
West Down
Bittadon
East Down
Kentisbury
Parracombe
West Hill
Arlington
Challacombe
Loxhore
Sherwill
Marwood
Bratton Fleming
Braunton
Stoke Rivers
Brendon
Oare
Porlock
Selworthy
Luccombe
Luxborough
Stoke Pero
Wootton Courtney
Exford
Cutcombe
Timberscombe
DUNSTER 161
MINEHEAD 163
Withycombe
Old Cleeve
St. Decumans
WATCHET
Croydon Hill
Nettlecomb
Treborough
Dunkery Beacon
EXMOOR FOREST
Williton
Monksilver
Sampford Brett
Bicknoller
Winsford
Withypoole



A
B
32
C
F
33
G
1
2
3
4
5
6
C A R D I G A N
P E M B R O K E S H I R E
C A R M A R T H E N S H I R E
ABERAERON
Llansantfraid
Llanon
Llanbadarn Treveglwys
Llanddewy Aberarth
Llanychaiarn
Kilkennin
Nantcwnlle
Llangeitho
Llanbadarn Odwyne
TREGARON
Llandewy Brevi
New Quay Head
Llanllwchaiarn
Llandysilio Gogo
Llanarth
Cilian Aeron
Dihewyd
Llanvihangel Ystrad
Llangybi
Silian
Bettws Bledrws
Llanvair Clydoge
LAMPETER PONT STEPHEN
Cellan
Llanwnnen
Llanwenog
Llanybyther
Pencarreg
Pumsant
Dolau Cothi
Caio
Cardigan Head
Cardigan Island
Mount
Verwick
Aberporth
Penbryn
Blaenporth
Tremain
St. Dogmaels
CARDIGAN
Moylegrove
Monington
Bayvil
Nevern
Dinas Head
Newport Bay
Fishguard Bay
NEWPORT
Meline
Eglwyswrw
Kilgerran
Manordivy
Llanfyrnach
Capel Colman
Penrith
Whitechurch
Clydey
Kilrhedyn
Llanllawer
Llanerchllwydog
Pontvaen
Precelly Mountain
Little Newcastle
Puncheston
Castlebigh
St. Dogwells
Henrys Moat
Maenclochog
Llandilo
Mynachlogddu
Llanglydwen
Llanwinio
Trelech ar Bettws
Conwil
Capel Bettws
Kilymaenllwyd
Llanboidy
Cross Inn
Henllan Amgoed
Abernant
Newchurch
Llan Newydd
Merthyr
CARMARTHEN
Abergwilly
Llanegwad
Llangathen
LLANDILO VAWR
Llanvihangel Kilvargen
Talley
Llansawel
Llanwrda
Llansadwrn
Abermarlais
Newcastle Emlyn
Llandyvriog
Llangeler
Penboyr
Llanpumsaint
Llanllawddog
Llanfynydd
Llangadock
Ambleston
Llys y vran
New Moat
Llan y cefn
Llandissilio
Bletherston
Clarbeston
Walton East
Spittal
Rudbaxton
Treffgarne
Wiston
Llawhaden
Robeston Wathen
Prendergast
Uzmaston
Slebech
NARBERTH
Crinow
Mynwere
Newton
Martletwy
Templeton
Yerbeston
Reynoldston
Loveston
Begelly
St. Issels
Jeffreston
East Williamston
Carew
Redbarth
Nash
Cosheston
Upton
Pembroke Dock
PEMBROKE
Burton
Rhosmarket
Llangwm
Lawrenny
Coedcanlais
Whitland
Llangan
Llanglydwen
Llandewi Velvrey
Lampeter Velvrey
Kilig
Lludchurch
Cronwern
Eglwys Cummin
Amroth
Marros
Pendine
Llandawke
LAUGHARNE
Llansadwrnen
Llanvihangel Abercowin
Llandilo Abercowin
St. Clears
Llandowror
Llanginning
Mydrim
Llangunnock
Llangain
Llanstephan
Fern Hill
Llandeveilog
St. Ishmaels
KIDWELLY
Llandarog
Llanarthney
Llanddarog
Llandebie
Llanedy
Llangennech
Pont ar dulais
Bettws
Mynydd Sulen
Llangendeirn
Pontantwn
Carmarthen Bay

Ancestral Lines — Third Edition - Carl Boyer

This goes into great detail in search for Richard^1 Bowen's Welsh Ancestry - Some previous claims are disproved. Some old records no longer exist. This recommends in-depth study of the Bowens of Slade.

It is regretted that we haven't found Richard's parents for sure. He was a man of consequence in Rehoboth - one of the wealthiest and prominent citizens.

§ § §

KENDRICK

According to Eva L. Moffatt of Boston, who researched this line in the 1930s, George^1 Kendrick, below, may have been a cousin of another man of the same name who came to Plymouth on the *James* from Yorkshire and went to Scituate about 1634 with his wife, Jane, and children Deborah, Joseph and Priscilla.

1. GEORGE^1 KENDRICK, born no doubt in England about 1625, died possibly in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, after 1691.

He married first, in Rehoboth, 23 April 1647 [1:44], RUTH^2 BOWEN*, who was buried there 31 Oct. 1688. He married second, in Rehoboth, 1 April 1691, Mrs. Jane Ide, widow of Nicholas Ide; she was buried there 12 May 1694. It has been suggested that she was a Bliss, but this is not likely [see Thomas^1 Bliss, above].

He was listed in the division of lands of Rehoboth dated at Weymouth on 24 Oct. 1643 as the owner of a £50 estate, typically consisting of a six acre home lot, seven acres of wood lot and salt meadow, and one-half acre of fresh meadow. He was nineteenth in the list for the division of fifty-eight lots [Bowen, 4:4; Dryer, 159]. On 28 June 1653 he was one of forty-one who signed a document empowering Richard Bowen, Stephen Paine, Thomas Cooper and William Sabin to resolve all differences arising out of meadow land. About 1676 he advanced £11.13s.1d towards the expenses of King Philip's War, and he was one of twenty-nine mentioned in a list of "Debts due to Several persons for their work about the Meeting house in the yeare 1678," in the amount of £1.14s.8d.

Children, recorded in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony:

i. Thomas^2, b. 23 Jan. 1647/8; m. 1681 Mary Perry.
* ii. Ruth, b. 16 Feb. 1649/50; d. 19 Feb. 1706/7; m. 6 Feb. 1671/2 John^2 Wilmarth.
iii. Sarah, b. 12 April 1652; no data.
iv. Isaac, b. 12 Feb. 1654; bur. 13 June 1675.
v. Mary, b. 16 June 1659; m. 15 April 1685 Samuel^3 Bliss.
vi. Elizabeth, b. 12 Sept. 1661; m. 1689 Jonah Palmer.
vii. Abraham, b. 2 May 1663; d. infant.
viii. Abraham, b. 19 May 1665; bur. 9 March 1682.

§ § §

§ § §

BOWEN

The following presentation is an effort to convince descendants that published theories, as well as those in the files of Richard LeBaron^9 Bowen, have been rejected for cause. The complete Bowen files of Richard LeBaron^9 Bowen were copied and forwarded to the compiler by his son, Richard LeBaron^{10} Bowen, Jr., who was born in 1919 and lives at 35 Fessenden Road, Barrington, RI 02806 (1995).

The 1815 armorial tombstone of Jabez^6 Bowen (Ephraim^5, Thomas^4, Richard^3, Thomas^2, Richard^1) at Swan Point in Providence, Rhode Island, states that Jabez was "the fifth in descent from Richard Bowen / who emigrated from Glamorganshire in South Wales / A.D. 1640." A Yale graduate, Jabez was appointed to the Rhode Island Supreme Court in 1776, became Chief Justice in 1781, served his state as Deputy Governor from 1778 to 1786, and was the first Chancellor of Rhode Island College (later Brown University) in 1785.

Thomas[2] Bowen, about whom little is known, all the Bowens mentioned were well educated, four being doctors and one a deputy governor.

However, Richard LeBaron[10] Bowen, Jr., has answered the question of what happened concerning any research into the source of the Bowen line in Wales. "My father was born in 1878; in the late 1920s and early 1930s he became interested in his family ancestry and worked his ancestry *back* to many of the basically 250 settlers who made up the 'fan' [chart].... He had joined the Rhode Island Historical Society and was a good friend of Howard Chapin, director and librarian of the then very small Society, who undoubtedly suggested that he make application for registering the stag with arrow coat of arms for Richard[1] in 1933. Probably through Chapin he met George Andrews Moriarty of Bristol who became a close friend. Later he met Harold Bowditch, M.D. of Cambridge and Arthur Adams, an English Professor at Trinity College, Hartford, and sometime Editor of the *NEHGS Register*. Interestingly, Moriarty, Adams and Bowditch with Dixon Weston were members of the NEHGS Heraldry Committee to whom he had submitted the application.

"A few years after 1933 my father joined the Heraldry Committee, undoubtedly due to 'politics.' He was an excellent and artistic draftsman and the Committee needed someone to help Bowditch and Weston in drawing the arms accepted for publication in the Society's transactions. In the *Roll of Arms, 3rd Part* published in 1936 my father drew a third (22) of the arms. During the late 1930s my father met Anthony Wagner, Herald of the College of Arms in London. He paid Wagner considerable money to do English research to try to find the parents of Richard[1] Bowen in Wales. All efforts were fruitless. This ended abruptly in 1940 with the advent of World War II and was never renewed.

"Probably much of my father's spare time from 1935 to 1940 was spent on heraldry.... My father could not have been considered a scholar in 1933. He had never written or published any...work and in 1933 his application was rather *jejune* and speculative to say the least. But he learned fast under the guidance of Chapin, Moriarty and Bowditch, and later Adams.

"The English parents of the immigrant had to be known. Once the parents were known, valid proof of the use of the arms in England [or Wales] by the family had to be provided. The only evidence he had for the stag with arrow was the occurrence of a coat of arms on the tombstones (1754 and 1770) of a fourth generation descendant of Richard[1] Bowen whose...ancestors *could not* be found. This is vividly demonstrated by Harold Bowditch's rejection of the application.... One of the first tasks of the Committee was a search of the 17th and 18th century heraldry books to see if the arms had simply been appropriated without right.

"Near the armorial tombs of Jabez[4] Bowen at Newman Cemetery is a horizontal armorial tombstone for David[4] Carpenter (d. 1763) with Carpenter arms, a greyhound. William Carpenter, to whom these had been granted in England in 1633 died in 1672 without issue and Amos Carpenter failed to prove a relationship and any right of inheritance for immigrant William Carpenter from the other William Carpenter [*R.I. Hist. Soc. Col.*, 23 (1930), 131]. It is not without significance that the Bowen and Carpenter armorial tombstones were erected for fourth generation descendants in the mid-18th century when borrowing English arms was prevalent.

"One *has* to assume that my father soon realized that in all probability Jabez[4] Bowen had simply appropriated a Coat of Arms from some heraldry book where they were shown as Bowen arms. Indeed, a letter he wrote to Harold Bowditch on August 11, 1939 indicates that he was actively searching for the specific English work from which the arms had been copied.

"In Rehoboth my father lived 'next door' (probably a quarter of a mile away) to Henry Goff, the Rehoboth Town Clerk, who had all of the early Rehoboth town records in an old iron safe in a damp cellar with a dirt floor! Starting in 1939 my father *borrowed* (if you can believe it) various volumes, starting with the first *Town Meetings, 1643-1674*, and had them photostated in Providence so that he could work with them at his leisure. He gradually became completely absorbed in the History of Rehoboth and lost interest in heraldry.

"I believe you will realize that statements in his 1933 application would not have been written in 1940 or 1950. In fact I am quite sure that in 1940 he would not have bothered to make an application, fully realizing (1) the type of *proof* necessary to link the arms to the immigrant and (2) the strong probability that the arms were simply copied from some contemporary heraldry book."

There is no known connection to Griffith Bowen, of Boston, whose Welsh line to Bleddyn ap Maenyrch and beyond is well documented [Herman Nickerson, Jr. "Griffith and Margaret (Fleming) Bowen of Wales and Massachusetts," *NGSQ*, 67 (1979), 163-166, and Nickerson, "Griffith Bowen of Wales and Massachusetts," *The Connecticut Nutmegger*, 19 (1987), 588-596].

1884 saw the publication in Boston, by Rand, Avery, and Company, Franklin Press, of Elisha Chandler Bowen's *Memorial of the Bowen Family*, which stated that Richard[1] Bowen's father was James Bowen, who was living in Pembrokeshire, in Llwyngwair, in 1591. The location of Llwyngwair is described in Nicholas' *Annals and Antiquities* [895] as a "mansion...beautifully situated, enrivoned by noble woods and rising grounds, near the historic Nevern and Newport, and a tidal river." Pembrokeshire is, however, quite far away from Richard[1] Bowen's alleged ancestral land of Glamorganshire.

E.C. Bowen further outlined pedigrees from the Vaughan, Dalton, Stradling [for which see *TAG*, 32:9-12] and Gamage families. Later, it was said that a coat of arms on the tombstone of Richard[1] Bowen was further proof of the connection [E.A. Bowen's *Bowens of Woodstock*, 6]. However, the falsity of the statement that Richard[1] Bowen's tombstone can be proven to have had any inscription whatsoever, let alone arms, has been made clear. The Llwyngwair Bowens used a rampant lion, rather than stag with arrow, for their arms. Sir James Bowen, who became seated at Llwyngwair about 1516, was not shown with any descendants named Richard who lived.

lion.

Moreover, E.C. Bowen's own words make obvious the reasons for a lack of trust in the statement that Richard[1] Bowen of Rehoboth was a son of James Bowen of Llwyngwair. "I have seen a record somewhere, and noted it, that Richard Bowen of Kittle Hill (who emigrated in 1640) had a son George, his eldest son and heir, whom he left in Wales (and this party was probably the sheriff in 1650), and that Hugh and the second George were his descendants." Cottingham identified positively George Bowen of Kettlehill in 1679 as son of Charles, who was son of George of Kittle Hill, sheriff in 1650, who in turn was a son of John Bowen of Pennard.

E.C. Bowen continued, "It will be borne in mind that Richard Bowen, son of James Bowen of Llwyngwair (living 1591), was among the seventeen children (eighth son), and, when he emigrated (1640), was doubtless over fifty years old, and his eldest son, George, in 1650, was probably thirty years old or more, and, when last sheriff (1679), over sixty. These dates all favor the supposition that George Bowen of Kittle Hill (1650) was the eldest son of Richard Bowen the emigrant.

"While there are discrepancies in the various authorities, I have always taken the most reasonable view...." [E.C. Bowen, 99]. E.C. Bowen stated that "Griffith and George Bowen, immigrants to Boston in 1638, were sons of Owen ap James Bowen of Llwyngwair" [100], but Griffith^{1} Bowen was actually the son of Francis Bowen of Langwith, Cower, Wales. The Gower peninsula is west of Swansea, Wales, in the county of West Glamorgan, but had been part of Caermarthenshire prior to 1536. Langwith is probably the name of a farm. Elisha Chandler Bowen relied upon a chart by one B.I. Bowen, who simply cannot be trusted.

Cottingham, whose work is mentioned below, had George Bowen of Kettlehill, Esq., Sheriff 1679, Admin. gr. 1698, as son of Charles Bowen of Kettlehill, living in 1686, who was son of George Bowen of Kettlehill, Sheriff 1650. This George was in turn the son of John Bowen of Pennard, whose will was proved 1609, and his wife Margaret, daughter of John Daniel of Kitthill and widow of Matthew Hamon. It is apparent that much of E.C. Bowen's work was fabricated, and none of the data in it can be trusted without verification from independent sources. Elisha Chandler Bowen [101] quoted Dwn [*sic*; reference is to Lewys Dwnn] by saying that he used "a term (an equivalent), which, being translated into English, signifies that Richard, son of James Bowen of Llwyngwair, 'chose the hunter's armor, and left the country with it....'" This is false, for the term published is *mort*, which means "dead," implying died young.

Then in 1897 Edward Augustus Bowen [*Lineage of the Bowens of Woodstock*, Cambridge, which was primarily a genealogy of the Griffith^{1} Bowen family] misquoted E.C. Bowen on page 6: "It appears also that a Richard Bowen, but of what family is not clearly known, died and was interred in the burial ground attached to Rehoboth, and the Bowen arms, a stag trippant with an arrow stuck in his back, were cut on the tombstone." Dick Bowen made the point that this was known to come from E.C. Bowen because E.A. Bowen's next sentence said the same arms were born by Griffith Bowen's family, a mistake E.C. Bowen had made on page 102. The arms of Griffith Bowen were a stag lying down *without* an arrow.

A fatally flawed three generations of Welsh ancestry were given by MacKenzie [*Colonial Families of U.S.*, 3:360, which repeated without citation a portion of the work of Elisha C. Bowen], the first being that of Sir James Bowen, whose wife, Mary Hale, was a daughter of Sir John and Margaret Hale. Mary Hale's maternal grandfather was given as Thomas ap Griffith ap Nicholas. James and Mary (Hale) Bowen had a son, Mathias Bowen, who married Mary Phillips, daughter of John Phillips of Pictou Castle. Their alleged son, James Bowen, married Eleanor Griffith, daughter of John Griffith, Esq., of Richley, and granddaughter of William Griffith, Penrhyn Knight. This compiler has found this family in Peter C. Bartrum's *Welsh Genealogies*, in the newer series relating to the period from 1400 to 1500, in Bartrum's chart Gwynfardd 4(C_2); James Bowen's ancestry can be found at great length in the Gwynfardd charts. Mary, second wife of James Bowen, is given as daughter of Thomas, son of John Herl. Sources for descendants of Matthias Bowen are given as P 407; LD.i.162, 166, 170, 171, and Pembs. 54 with reference to Llywn-gwair, Nevern (LD.i.166). Bartrum's work further identifies these references. However, Lewys Dwnn's manuscript visitation [Peniarth MS No. 268 at the National Library of Wales in Aberystwyth] clearly lists James Bowen's children, with Richard and two others labeled *mort*, or deceased, with no issue.

In 1913 Almira Larkin White, in her *Ancestry of John Barber White*, stated that Obadiah^{2} Bowen, below, was born in Swansea, Wales, 1 Sept. 1627, a fabrication she copied from MacKenzie. Anthony R. Wagner, Portcullis, of the College of Arms, in August 1939, had the Swansea registers searched for the period for Bowens, and found none, but there were no baptisms entered before 1631 [Cottingham], and Wagner noted also that there were no baptisms of record from March 1632 to April 1638 [letter Wagner to Richard LeBaron^{9} Bowen, 22 Aug. 1939]. Anthony Wagner's later correspondence, which continued through the first months of World War II, mentioned the idea that Richard Bowen's father might well have been known as Owen ap "X". He searched wills at Llandaff from 1620 to 1652, saying, "These reveal an interesting but rather disconcerting fact, that even at this date hereditary surnames were anything but the rule in this region." The original manuscript (as well as a photostat copy) of the records of the first Baptist Church at Ilston, Swansea, Wales, kept by John Myles, the pastor, and now in the Brown University library, cannot be expected to shed much light on this question, for the records date only from 1 August 1649, the year this first Baptist church in Wales was formed. The book includes Reverend Myles' records in Swansea, Plymouth Colony, to 1669 [in a letter of 30 June 1994 Richard LeBaron^{10} Bowen, Jr., pointed out that statements made by Isaac Backus in his *History of the Baptists* (1796) concerning Obadiah^{2} Bowen coming to America with Mr. Myles were incorrect; Obadiah was of record in Rehoboth in 1654, long before the arrival of the Reverend Mr. Myles, and the only Welshman certain to have come to New England with John Myles was Nicholas Tanner].

Ilston is located on the Gower peninsula about seven miles westsouthwest of central Swansea, Glamorganshire [Gardner, *Genealogical Atlas*, 59]. Bartholomew's 1972 *Gazetteer* lists it as 3109 acres in size, with a population of 231. In June 1992 Nicholas Sewall^{11} Bowen, son of Richard LeBaron^{10}, visited the site of the first Baptist church in Wales, founded in Ilston in 1649 by John Myles, and provided the following account of the ruins. "They can be reached by two roads, the first a modern one leading from Swansea to Port Eynon on the south of the Gower peninsula, and the other a secondary road off the first leading to Ilston, running a little north of the first. Taking the first road to the Gower Inn, one will find just before arriving at the Gower Inn several signs indicating paths to Ilston, a kilometer to the north. Just to the west of the parking lot at the Inn is a wide iron gate, to the left of which is a bronze plaque which reads: "The path beyond this gate leads to the Ilston Memorial erected in 1928. On the ruins of the meeting place of the Baptist church founded by John Myles in 1649. The memorial built from the original stones and the ruins are now scheduled as an ancient monument." To the right of the gate is another plaque, "This gate presented by J.T. Morgan, Esq. Chairman of the Ilston Memorial Committee to Commemorate the Dedication by Alexander Coombe-Tennant, Esq. (WNDON) to the Baptist Union of Wales & Monmouthshire. The land surrounding the memorial was opened by Mrs. J.T. Morgan on Sat., 26 June 1954. At the ruin itself a plaque read, "'*Gorau Cof. Cof Grefydd.*' To commemorate the foundation in this valley of the first Baptist Church in Wales 1649-60 and to honour the m[illegible]ry of its founder John Myles. This ruin is the site of the pre-Reformation chapel of Trinity Well and is claimed by tradition as a meeting place of the above Cromwellian Church—This memorial has been erected with the permission of Admiral A.W. Heneage Vivian, C.B.M.V.O. and was unveiled by the Rt. Hon. D. Lloyd George, M.P.O.M., 13th, June 1928."

The years 1926-1943 saw publication of Edward Augustus Bowen's eight volume *The Bowens of Woodstock*, which stated, "There was an ancient family of Bowens of Court House, in the parish of Ilston, but I have not been able to connect it with that of the Bowens of Slade; this is a rather singular thing; the peninsula of Gower is a comparatively small locality, and it would be very strange if the two families should be distinct.... The Arms of those of Bowen of Slade are those of Griffith Gwyr, namely, a stag lodged, holding an oak branch in his mouth; while those of Bowen of Court House are a stag, trippant with an arrow stuck in his back..." [illustrated in *Matthews' American Armory and Blue Book* (London, 1908), 11]. Bartrum's chart Bleddyn ap Maenyrch 30(C,H) shows that Morgan ab Owain ap Gruffudd bought Court-house in 1441 and left a will dated 1467. He had a son Richard Bowen who was flourishing 1490-1515 and had a son Harry, who had a son Thomas, who had a son Harry Bowen, who died in 1582, having married Elen, daughter of Jenkin Franklin. The children of this family of Court-house, Ilston, are dealt with in a source Bartrum listed as GG 1545, The Golden Grove Book, compiled by Hugh Thomas, Deputy Herald, in 1703 [Cottingham, 8], which sheds no further light on the ancestry of Richard¹ Bowen.

However, before this compiler could have someone look at "The Golden Grove Book," Richard LeBaron Bowen, Jr., provided a copy of Lieut. Col. E.R. Cottingham's *Pedigree of Bowen of Court House* (1927, 36 pages plus charts), which described "The Golden Grove Book" as being by Hugh Thomas, Deputy Herald (1703), and cited many specific mistakes. The heralds traveled about, often under miserable conditions which led to complaints about the lack of hospitality from those whose pedigrees they recorded, and took down what they were told, rather an ancient version of the untrustworthy Virkus. Thomas worked and researched in the British Museum, Somerset House and the Public Record Office over a three year period.

Included were mentions of Richard Bowen with no proof of any connections with Rehoboth, Massachusetts, or the American Colonies. Harleian MSS. No. 4181, fo. 66 (Brit. Mus.) included Jane, only child of Henry ap William, married Thomas Bowen of New Court, and had issue (1) Henry Bowen of Court House, who married Catherine, dau. to Hopkin ap Hoel A.D. 1610, (2) Richard Bowen, (3) a daughter, and (4) a second daughter.

Survey of Lordship of Gower with list of Freeholders, A.D. 1650 [after Richard¹ was well settled in Rehoboth; Cottingham, 9], included "Richard and Thomas Bowen, Owners and Occupiers of "Lonnon," 21 acres. Rent 14s.2d." The will of Henry Bowen of Court House, dated 30 March 1582, mentioned no son Richard [Cottingham, 13]. The will of Rowland Bowen of the parish of Bishopston, county Glamorgan, dated 2 Aug. 1623 (proved at Carmarthen 12 Aug. 1623), requests that his brother George be tutor and guardian to his sons, but if George cannot act, then the duty would fall to "my well beloved Cousin Richard Bowen." "Cousin" was not a precise term at that time.

The parish registers of Swansea were extracted by Cottingham, but contain no Richard prior to 1779 ("Richard s. of Richard Bowen"), the registers themselves having begun only in 1631. The earliest Richard Bowen marriage was in 1803. The name was not mentioned in the burial records of the parish before the 1800s. Of Cottingham's two large charts, only the first dealt with Bowens before the late 1700s, and it contained only one Richard, who was Richard ab Owen, Receiver of Gower and Camwyllion, executor to his father, who was Morgan ab Owen, second son of Owen. Morgan ab Owen purchased from Geoffrey de la Mare by Deed Poll dated 1 July 1441, Court House, Mawr House and lands pertaining to Ilston, with lands of Wogan Hill in Pennard (fee to Morgan ab Owen and his heirs forever). Morgan ab Owen's will was proved 12 Feb. 1467/8.

In 1931 Jesse Montgomery Seaver of 2002 North Park Avenue, Philadelphia, circulated a typescript Bowen genealogy which simply stated that Thomas ap Harry Bowen of Court House, Wales, left a will dated 4 July 1567, and that Harry Bowen, who died in 1582, was son of Thomas Bowen, six generations removed from Gwellian, the granddaughter of Tuedor Mawr, King of South Wales who was slain in battle in 993!

Ruth (Mrs. F.H.) Obenauer, of 23717 S.W. Zephyr Hill Court, Dunnellon, Florida 34431, provided on 11 July 1993 a copy of "Bowen Welsh Genealogy" by Dorothy Smith Coleman of Washington, D.C. This work is an undated three page typescript with cover sheet which cites as sources the work by Clark, the ninth volume of *Colonial and Revolutionary Lineages of America* [p. 178], an otherwise unidentified "The Bowen Genealogy" by B.B. Bowen, and Browning's *Americans of Royal Descent*. Unfortunately, the spelling in Coleman's work illustrates a total lack of knowledge of Welsh names on the parts of the contributors, and curiously she listed the children of Harry Bowen (d. 1582), who married Ellen, daughter of Jenkin Franklyn of Parc la Broase, as William, John Hen, Jenkin Hen, John and Jenkin, as least in terms of format, and then went to mention Thomas Bowen as the next generation. She confused data on the ancestry of Jenkin Franklyn with the children of Harry Bowen.

According to Coleman, Thomas Bowen (d. 1587) married Jane, daughter of Harry Williams of Bryncoch. Their son Richard¹ Bowen was born in Ilston, near Swansea, and married first Anne, and second in 1654 (no name given). Then on the very next page Coleman gives another Bowen line, this time listing Richard¹ Bowen as the son of James and Eleanor (Griffith) Bowen of Llwyngwair (spelled Llungwair one line above)!

too late)

In 1954 Lester C. Gustin provided the most fanciful tale of the Bowen ancestry in *The Ancestry of Herbert E. Gustin and his wife Julia L. Carlisle and Their Descendants* (2 volumes). In short, Richard¹ Bowen is listed in descent in the fortieth generation from Beli Mawr, who was given as King of Britain in 55 B.C. Gustin stated that Richard's father was Thomas Bowen of Court House [which has been said by locals to have been the place where they held the Flemish Court years ago], who died in 1587, son of Harry Thomas Bowen of Court House, who also died in 1587, son of Theodore Bowen, who was in turn son of Harry Bowen of Court House, whose will was dated 4 July 1467. The dates alone are enough to generate suspicion. No Theodore Bowen is found in Bartrum's charts. John S. Wurts in *Magna Charta*, part VIII (1959), published this line without the offending dates, allowing eighteen generations of descent from Teudor Mawr [*sic*, spelled Tewdwr Mawr in Welsh], who was killed in battle in 993, to Richard¹ Bowen, who died in 1674/5 [pp. 2630-31, 2926]. Charles H. Browning's *Americans of Royal Descent*, 6th ed. (Philadelphia, 1905) presents the line with more questionable dates [pp. 162-63].

The Order of Americans of Armorial Ancestry, Incorporated, has published a *Complete Register of Members with Coats of Arms* which this compiler has not seen, listing items to 15 Dec. 1964, with Richard Bowen of Rehoboth listed as registered by members numbered 11, 12, 50, 62 and 67.

E.A. Bowen continued, "In 1790, Mary Bowen, daughter of Jabez^6 wove an elaborate Bowen Coat-of-Arms out of various colored silks and this is still in possession of the family.

"The next appearance of the Bowen Coat-of-Arms is on the tombstone of Deputy Governor Jabez^6 Bowen, buried in Swan Point Cemetery in Providence, R.I. He was 41 years of age when his greatuncle Jabez^4 died, and 73 years of age at the death of his father Ephraim^5, who was brought up from the age of nine by his uncle Jabez^4.

"On this tombstone it is especially set forth that Jabez^6 is *the fifth in descent...from Richard Bowen who emigrated from Glamorganshire in South Wales, A.D. 1640*.... This is especially significant in view of the fact that we now know there are several different Bowen Coat-of-Arms. This must have been known to him and have been the reason for the special reference to the ancestor." However, this may well be idle speculation.

Bartrum also treats Bowen of Hanmer in chart Edwin 15(A); Bowen of Llechdwni in chart Einion ap Llywarch 7(B$_1$); Bowen of Llwchmeilir in chart Meilir of Ll. M.; Bowen of Pentre Ieuan Cemais in Gwynfardd 4(C$_{1,2}$); Bowen of Upton in Einion ap Llywarch 7(B$_2$), and Bowen of Welshpool in Llowdden 7(C).

Don Charles Nearpass of 9526 50th Place, College Park, MD 20740-4509 (1993) has provided criticism and copies of his sources for the Bowen lineage as follows: George Thomas Clark of Talygarn published a "corrected" Bowen pedigree in his *Limbus Patrum Morganiæ et Glamorganiæ*, which on pages 513-515, lists Owen ab Owen [here perhaps "ab Owen," given by the English as "ap Owen," is used as a surname] ap Griffith Glyn-Tawe [ab Owain Gethin, for whom see Bartrum's *Welsh Genealogies, 300-1400*, chart Bl. ap M. 30] as the father of Morgan ab Owen, who was father of Philip, Richard, Harry Bowen and Isabel (Bartrum omits Owen [said in *Colonial and Revolutionary Lineages of America*, 9:180, to have married first Alison or Alice, daughter of Worgan ap Howel Melyn] ab Owain ap Gruffudd ab Owain). Richard ab Owen was the father of Harry Bowen of Court-House, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Hopkin David Lleia of Avan, from "Einon ap Collwyn" [from the family of Einion ap Collwyn], and had sons Thomas and Theodore; from Theodore came the Bowens of Kettle-Hill in Gower. Theodore, the second son of Harry Bowen of Court-House, married Jennet, daughter of "David ap Evan-ychan" [probably Dafydd ab Ieuan Fychan in Welsh]; they had Harry Thomas Bowen, who died 1578, having married Ellen, daughter of Jenkin Franklen of Park le Brewes. Harry Thomas and Ellen (Franklen) Bowen had sons John, Harry (from which came another branch), Thomas (from which came Bowen of Court-House), Margaret (who married Rowland Dawkins of Cilvrough), Ann (who married Hugh Thomas) and Maud (who married William Grant).

G.T. Clark continued with Thomas, who was given as the third son of Harry Thomas Bowen, and died in 1587, having married Jane, daughter of Harry Williams of Bryncoch, and had sons Harry, and Richard of Ilston, who was supposedly the immigrant. Thomas Bowen's will, dated 30 March 1582, was proved in Canterbury 4 July 1582 [Cottingham, 14]. Clark dealt only with Bowens of Court House, and related nothings of the Bowens of Slade.

Bartrum's chart Bleddyn ap Maenyrch 30(G,H) in *Welsh Genealogies AD 1400-1500* provides substantiation of Owain ap Gruffudd who had sons Gruffudd and Morgan. Morgan bought Court-house in 1441 and left a will dated 1467 (Bartrum referenced LPM 513). Morgan had a son Richard who flourished 1490-1515 [*The Principality of Wales in the Later Middle Ages*, by Ralph A. Griffiths (Cardiff, 1972), vol. 1, 189-90] and Richard had Harry who married Elsbeth ferch William, of generation 13 on the chart Ein. ap G. 15(A). Harry's son Thomas married Margred ferch John Landeg of Cil-fai (possibly of Maenyrch 33[H]). Thomas and Margred had Harry Bowen who died 1582, having married Elen ferch Jenkin Franklin (for whom see Franklin chart at the sixteenth generation). Descendants are referred to "The Golden Grove Book," page 1545 (three volumes plus index), based on the works of David Edwardes and William Lewes, which was begun in 1765 and is paged continuously. This work, mentioned above, is now in the Dyfed County Council in Carmarthen, Wales. Nearpass has pointed out that there is a Golden Grove about fifteen miles from Swansea.

However, the possibility of a connection between Richard^1 Bowen and the Bowen's of Slade has not been exhausted. The William Bennet MS, which belongs to the Royal Institute of South Wales in Swansea, and at present (1993) kept in the Library of the University College, Swansea, covers Gower families and was compiled in the early 1600s. It should be consulted.

G.A. Moriarty wrote to Richard LeBaron Bowen on 3 July 1937 with the suggestion that Richard^1 Bowen might have gone from Wales to Ilfracombe, in Devon, and emigrated from there with friends. A check of printed registers only led Moriarty to the conclusion that Bowens were not established early in Devon, Somerset or Cornwall. Capt. Richard Bowen of *H.M.S. Terpsichore*, who was killed during an attack on Santa Cruz, Tenerife, 24 July 1797, mentioned in *Gentleman's Magazine*, was from Ilfracombe and bore arms indicating descent from the Court House Bowens.

This family has been treated through the third generation, with less discussion of the Welsh ancestry, in this compiler's *How to Publish and Market Your Family History*, 4th ed., pp. 115-127, where the treatment is given as an example of style.

The possibility of a connection between Richard^1 Bowen and the Bowens of Slade in Wales has not been investigated.

The compiler also wishes to express appreciation to Alice Hovey.

1. RICHARD^1 BOWEN, born, according to tradition, in Glamorganshire, South Wales, died in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, and was buried there 4 Feb. 1674/5 [1:52].

It is said his first wife was named Anne, but there is not a shred of documentation to support this allegation. He is said to have married second, in Hingham, Plymouth Colony (C. Fuller gives Weymouth as the location), Nov. 1648, Mrs. Elizabeth (Rey) Marsh, who was buried in Rehoboth in 1675. She was the widow of George Marsh, who died in Hingham 2 July 1647 [R.L. Bowen, 2:13]. She had been born in Hempstead, England, married in 1623, and came to America on the *Blessing* in 1635 [see *Desc. of John Page*, 106-107].

If Richard Bowen emigrated in 1640 from Great Britain, he may have spent a couple of years in Salem, where his daughter Alice may have married Rob

! This is widow of this!

Wheaton.

Clarence C. Fuller's *Record of Robert Fuller* (1969) quotes the *History of Weymouth* in describing the "earliest land record of Richard^1 Bowen," dated 1642: "Tenn acres Eyght of them upland two of swampe lying in the plaine first given to Thomas White bounded on the East with the land of Martin Phillipes, of Ralph (Allin) on the west, of his owne on the south, a highway on the north.

"Two acres of upland and salt marsh first given to Tho White bounded on the East with the comon, on the west with the land of Ralph Allin, on the north with his owne land, on the south with John Uphams marsh.

"Two acres first giuen to John King bounded on the East west & north with his owne land and of Mr. Newman on the south."

He was soon one of the first settlers at Seekonk, later Rehoboth, with his estate valued at an above average £270.

Richard Bowen was listed as a proprietor of Rehoboth in 1643 and as freeman 4 June 1645. Rehoboth's first Board of Selectmen, chosen 9 Dec. 1644, included Alexander Winchester, Richard Wright, Henry Smith, Edward Smith, Walter Palmer, William Smith, Stephen Paine, Richard Bowen and Robert Martin. At the time the town was called Seacunk, and was not clearly attached to either Massachusetts Bay or Plymouth Colony. However, the Commissioners of the United Colonies in Boston decided that it would be under the jurisdiction of Plymouth; at this time the town was named Rehoboth.

His twelve acre home lot was adjacent to the "Ring of Green" of Rehoboth, ✓ which was a common pasture for the town, as well as the location of the first meeting house. This area faces Pleasant Avenue and is just south of Newman Avenue in present East Providence, Rhode Island.

He was of record 20 or 29 Dec. 1645 with Robert Martin and Stephen Paine as the three "layed out y^t necke of land called knowne by the name of Wanomoycet," and on 16 March 1645/6 he was appointed with Robert Titus, William Smith, Capt. Richard Wright, Alexander Winchester, Thomas Bliss, Stephen Paine and Thomas Cooper to get the fences in Rehoboth in order by the 23rd of the month. He was elected townsman (selectman) again on 26 May 1647 with Mr. Browne, Mr. Peck, Stephen Paine, Mr. Winchester, William Carpenter and Edward Smith [R.L. Bowen, 1:28, 3:121 and 142].

According to Michael Bowen's correspondence, he was elected in 1651 to serve the town as Deputy to Plymouth Colony's General Court, and as "Father Bowen" he served as the town's first moderator.

On 13 May 1653 "Richard Bowen & James Ridwaye" were chosen "for overseers of the wayes," and a list of "the Subscriptions of the Inhabitants" of Rehoboth empowering Richard Bowen, Stephen Paine, Thomas Cooper and William Sabin to represent them in settling the status of Rehoboth lands lying within the bounds of the new Sowams purchase was drawn up on 28 June 1653 [R.L. Bowen, 1:18 and 126].

In the spring of 1654 it was found necessary to appoint William Carpenter, Richard Bowen and John Allen as arbitrators in a dispute between Richard Titus and Nicholas Ide over a parcel of salt meadow [R.L. Bowen, 2:138]. In 1671 Richard Bowen was recorded as having been assessed 3/7 in taxes, a figure somewhat below the median, and by 28 May 1672 he was recorded as having sold his one-half share in the 1666 North Purchase distribution to Thomas Ormsbee [R.L. Bowen, 1:39 and 41].

Leonard Bliss, in his *History of Rehoboth* [45], stated that he served as town clerk. Richard LeBaron Bowen, Jr. pointed out in a letter of 16 May 1994 that the records [1:108] of the Rehoboth town meetings make it clear that it was Richard^1 Bullock who was chosen town clerk on 14 Seventh Month 1654.

His signature on his will was a mark, even though he was literate, probably because he was too sick to write his name [R.L. Bowen, 1:111]. The will was proven 4 June 1675. The inventory totaled £175.15s.8d. His daughter Ruth "Kenericke" inherited one mare, one colt and a pewter platter.

Children, by first wife:

i. Alice^2, m. Salem, Mass., c. 1640, Robert^1 Wheaton, who was from Wales; they moved to Rehoboth.

* ii. Ruth, bur. Rehoboth 31 Oct. 1688 [1:89]; m. there 23 April 1647 George^1 Kendrick, who m. (2) 1 April 1691 Jane Ide, who was buried 12 May 1694 [see John G. Erhardt's *Rehoboth*, vol. 2, and Deane's *History of Scituate*, 300].

iii. Sarah^2, killed by Indians, bur. Rehoboth 14 Oct. 1676; m. before 1647 Robert^1 Fuller; he was a bricklayer.

✓ iv. Richard, will probated "25 March 1722/3" [Rounds' *Abstracts of Bristol Co. Probate Records, 1687-1745*, 94]; m. (1) Rehoboth 4 March 1656 [original vital records] Esther Sutton, m. (2) Rehoboth 20 Jan. 1689/90 Martha (Allen) Saben [prenuptial agreement of 20 Dec. 1689 mentioned in probate]. cor S

v. William, bur. Rehoboth 10 March 1686/7 [1:57]; while mentioned in deeds, he was apparently incapacitated and was never given any duties by the town.

vi. Obadiah, d. Swansea, Mass., 10 Sept. 1710 [Bristol Co. Probate, 2:290-291], bur. with wife in Bowen Family burial lot, Read Farm in Warren, R.I. [photocopy of typescript by George Bowen Arnold, in the R.I. Hist. Soc., F89.W19A7]; m. c. 1649 Mary Clifton (perhaps a dau. or sister of Thomas Clifton of Rehoboth) or Chilton; lived in Swansea, and never of Gloucester [S. Perley in the *Essex Antiquarian*, 2 (1898), 35, stated that an Obadiah Bowen was licensed to sell wine in Gloucester in 1638; Richard LeBaron Bowen, Jr. noted in a letter of 11 May 1994 that the name was copied incorrectly and the date was wrong as is shown by *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts* (1911), 77: "Mr. Obadiah Brewen of Gloucester licensed to draw wine" in Jan. 1644].

2. vii. Thomas, d. c. 1663; m. Elizabeth Nichols.

2. THOMAS^2 BOWEN, probably born in Wales before 1638, died in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, after he made his will there on 11 April, 1663, and before it was sworn to Governor Thomas Prince at Plymouth the last of February 1663/4. He was described in 1663 as late of New London, Connecticut.

His married about 1659 ELIZABETH^3 NICHOLS* [*MD*, 39 (1989):86; D.L. Jacobus, *Families of Old Fairfield*, 1:434], who was mentioned in his will and married second, in 1665 or 1666, the Reverend Dr. Samuel^2 Fuller of Middleborough, physician and son of the renowned surgeon of Plymouth Colony, Samuel^1 Fuller. She died in Plympton, Mass., 11 Nov. 1713, presumably at the home of her stepson Samuel³ Fuller [see *VR Plympton*, 479]. In 1667 she gave a power of attorney, as the sometime wife of Thomas Bowen, late of Rehoboth, and Samuel Fuller of Plymouth, to their brother-in-law John Prentice of New London, blacksmith, to sell Thomas Bowen's land in New London [*MD*, 39 (1989):86; Charles Shepard, "Bowen Family Notes," 141]. John² Nichols of Fairfield had daughters Esther, Elizabeth and Hannah. John Prentice married Esther Nichols. Having lived in Plymouth through King Philip's War, they built afterwards in Middleborough. At Rehoboth town meeting on 3 July 1663, "It was voted & concluded by the towne that a Letter should be sent to Samuell ffuller of Plymouth. Mr. Peck, Goodman Payne, & Leiftenant Hunt were made thereto of to write to him, viz: That if he will come upon triall according to his owne proposition, the towne is willing to accept him, & in case the towne & he doe accord, the towne is willing to accommodate him in the best way they can for his encouragement" [*Rehoboth Town Meetings*, 1:151; condensed slightly in L. Bliss, *History of Rehoboth* (Boston, 1836), 53]; perhaps he had attended the Reverend Samuel Newman, who died 5 July 1663, as well as Thomas Bowen, who was also sick.

F.M. Caulkins stated in her *History of New London, Connecticut* [New London, 1852, pp. 93, 132, 133] that Thomas Bowen became an inhabitant of New London in 1657, was there in May 1662, and moved to Rehoboth, where he died in 1663. He was made a freeman of Connecticut in 1658 [see *Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut*, 1:315]. On 29 Jan. 1662/3 at a special town meeting in Rehoboth, "It was voted & agreed upon by the town that Thomas Bowen should have one aker of ground upon the Greene freely given to him to set a house & other comodities. Leiftenant Hunt & Ensigne Smith were depueted by the Towne to see whear the most convenient place might be for him & Least prejudicall to the Towne. And in case he should remove from ye towne, or when he shall dye, if his successors be minded to put it away, the Towne is to have the refusall of it, payeing all disbursmts Layd out on it" [*Rehoboth Town Meeting*, 1:147]. He was a cooper, and the gift of prime land was to entice him to practice his trade in Rehoboth. This land was confirmed to his widow at a town meeting on 6 May 1664 [1:158].

In his will Thomas Bowen named his wife Elizabeth as executrix, and his brother Obadiah² Bowen and his brother-in-law Robert¹ Fuller (no relation to Samuel Fuller) as overseers [*MD*, 16 (1914):128]. He left a house and seven and one-half acre home lot with a thirty-six acre allotment in New London to his wife, stipulating that his wife bring up his son Richard "in the feare of the Lord and teach him to write and Read." [Except for a few introductory lines the data above on Thomas² was provided by Richard LeBaron¹⁰ Bowen, Jr. in a letter on 2 June 1994.]

The Thomas Bowen who appeared as a witness 27 Oct. 1642 in Essex County, Massachusetts Bay [see *Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County*, 1:47], was fined in Salem in 1647, and was apparently a planter and fisherman in Marblehead, Mass., from 1642 to 1681 or later [Perley's *Hist. Salem*; Shepard, 140], was a different man. Administration on his estate was granted in 1705, according to Pope's *Pioneers*. This Thomas also was married to an Elizabeth. He was one of the original forty-four grantees of land in Marblehead and appeared in court over thirty times from 1642 to 1679, eighteen times as a witness in cases involving land disputes, drunkeness, theft, debt, slander and defamation, damage to crops by cattle, the scandelous behavior of two women on the Lord's day, and adultery. He was himself fined or presented to the Governor for excessive drinking in 1645 [1:17], 1648 [1:152] and 1653 [1:324]. In Feb. 1647/8 he was fined for sailing from Gloucester Harbor, five miles northeast of Marblehead, on the Lord's day with hay in his boat [1:134]. In 1665 he was accused of selling liquor to an Indian [3:297].

While Thomas Bowen of Marblehead (which town had been set off from Salem) gave his age seven times in depositions, he was not consistent. His birth might have been from 1621 to 1628. In Nov. 1671 his daughter Ruth appeared in court on a charge of fornication. In June 1674 John Legg called Thomas "pitiful, beggarly, rouge and rascal" in court. In Jan. 1677/8 John Bowen, possibly a son of Thomas, was convicted as a horse thief. Richard LeBaron Bowen, Jr., has suggested he might have been a nephew of Richard¹ Bowen of Rehoboth, because of the name Thomas, and because both had daughters named Ruth, not a common name. A Richard Boone or Bown (Bowen?) of Marblehead was identified as from England [*Records and Files of Quarterly Court Essex Co.*, 244; the details of the preceding two paragraphs were provided by Richard LeBaron Bowen, Jr. on 13 June 1994].

Children, the first mentioned in his will, with vital information provided by Richard LeBaron Bowen, Jr. on 2 June 1994:

3. i. Richard³, probably b. New London, Conn., Aug. 1660 [Rehoboth VR, 1:2; gs]; m. Rehoboth 9 Jan. 1683 Mercy³ Titus.
   ii. Abijah, b. Dec. 1663 [orig. Rehoboth VR, 1:2; gs; Arnold's *VR Rehoboth*, 546, has Abigail]; d. Middleborough 21 May 1746 in 83rd year; m. there by Major William Bradford in Dec. 1683 [Merrick's *Middleborough VR*, 1:1] Abiel² Wood, who b. c. 1659, d. there 10 Oct. 1719 in 61st year, son of Henry¹ and Abigail (Jenn[e]y) Wood [J.S. Wood, *Wood Family Index*, 8; Thomas Weston's *History of the Town of Middleboro* (Boston, 1906), 61].

Children, hers by second marriage, surnamed Fuller:

   iii. Elizabeth, m. Middleborough 24 May 1694 Samuel Eaton.
   iv. John, d. Middleborough 10 March 1709/10; m. Mercy Nelson.
   v. Experience, m. 12 April 1693 James Wood.
   vi. Hannah, m. Eleazer Lewis.
   vii. Mercy, d. Eastham 25 Sept. 1735; m. Daniel Cole.
   viii. Isaac, m. Plympton 1 Sept. 1709 Mary Pratt; a physician.

3. Dr. RICHARD³ BOWEN, born in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, in August 1660 [original Rehoboth vital records, 1:2; gs], lived in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, which town was earlier under the jurisdiction of Plymouth Colony and the Dominion of New England, and died there 12 Feb. 1736/7, in his 77th year [Arnold, *Rehoboth VR*, 800; gs; Trim, *Gravestone Records*, 186].

He married in Rehoboth, 9 Jan. 1683 [1:48], MERCY³ TITUS*.

When his grandfather Bowen died he was fourteen, and had lived for ten years in Plymouth. He was a medical doctor, having been raised by his stepfather, Dr. Samuel Fuller, who had been born about 1633.

His will may be found in *Mayflower Descendants*, 16:128.

Children, births recorded in Rehoboth [original vital records, 1:57], listed as

This needs some revising!
More has been learned since
this was written. —
Place in Wales not really
known.

BOWEN FAMILY

The overseas origins of our Welsh family, the Bowens. are clouded in mystery, like many of the first settlers of New England, but Richard Bowen was proud of his lineage. Proof of his gentle birth is proven by the coat of arms carved on his tombstone. Something like that was not taken lightly in those times--severe punishment would have been dealt out to any family using coat armory without being so entitled, so We may be positive he was of gentle birth. A special registry in the College of Heralds was and still is kept in Britain. His arms were traced to Bowens of the Swansea area, on the Gower Peninsula of Glamorganshire, thus coinciding with Richards reputed statement that he came to this country from Kittle Hill, which is in that area.

Most vital records of Wales during that era, and of New England's beginning years, no longer exist, causing researchers to fall back on heralds' visitation records, Lloyd's Welsh histories, and so on. One tradition claims that Richard was son of a young gentleman, Thomas Bowen, who died in 1587, leaving behind a young widow and two tiny sons. The widow was Jane, daughter of Harry Williams of "Brynock" probably meaning Brecknock, an area NE of Glamorgan. The little sons were Harry and Richard. Those Bowens, whose pedigree is shown in a separate section of this material, were descended from ancient Princes of Wales. A different, even older theory of Richard's ancestry is that he was the eighth son of seventeen children of the very prolific James Bowen of Llyngwair, Pembrokeshire, and his wife, Eleanor (Griffith) Bowen, daughter of John Griffith, Esquire, of Richley Anglesea and grand-daughter of Sir William Griffith of Penhryn, a knight. In cases like the one just described the bulk of the estate always went to the oldest son, on down the line with not much left over for the youngest son except the right to display the coat of arms. But seemingly that family did possess some land on Gower Penninsula. Many people favor that line, probably because it is very prestigious and, as well as including Princes of Wales, it also leads to Kings of England through an illegitimate birth of a daughter to Cardinal Beaufort, son of John of Gaunt. Part of that pedigree is charted next to the other pedigree, but it is so long and involved that the rest is in a separate binder. It has been entertaining and instructive recreating it, but really it seems somehow more probable that, if either of the described pedigrees is truly his, it would more likely be the first mentioned.

Not knowing more, both of those descents sound possible if not probable but remain matters of conjecture. Since he lived to 1674/5, if he were either of those men he would have been very old. What we do know for sure is that he had at least some claim to gentility and was one of the more affluent and respected citizens of his Rehoboth community, and served on many committees as well as sometimes being representative to the Plymouth County government.

As the collected data shows, several well-intentioned descendants have attempted it, but no really professional-quality genealogy of the descendants of Richard Bowen has been done. Carl Boyer's little sketch is the most accurate, but even it cannot be depended upon to be error free. He and his correspondents knew little about the offspring of our Richard Jr., all being descended from other siblings.

The best informed descendant, Richard LeBaron Bowen, a skilled antiquarian, wrote a beautiful, very accurate treatise, the 4-volume Early Rehoboth, in which he sometimes proffers vignettes about family members, but he wrote no Bowen genealogy. One suspects that, even with his expertise, he could not untangle conflicting claims the family's origins and chose to duck the subject. Old standbys like Pope's Pioneers and Savage's Dictionary, though helpful, have mixed-up data as regards the Bowens. The few early 17th century New England vital records which still exist were mainly kept by Puritan clergy--but it seems thisfamily was Baptist. Town records help a little.

Richard and Ann Bowen migrated to America about 1638 with seven children, some of them young adults. Evidently they remained for about five years in the Salem-Boston-Marblehead-Weymouth area, where it seems two daughters and one or more sons married. The Bowen Memorial (E. C. Bowen, 1884) postulates that an eldest son, George Bowen, remained behind in Kittle Hill and became sheriff there in 1650. That might be, but at present we cannot prove it. Even in Rehoboth, the only trace of another son, William, is his will and burial. Some of the married children stayed in Mass. Bay Colony a while, but all eventually gravitated to Rehoboth--though Thomas lived a while in New London, CT.

It seems likely other Welsh families came to America with the Bowens, for part of their community came to be called Swansea in honor of the nearest city to their home in Wales. Time has not been set aside to figure out whom they were but one of them, though they arrived later than most, was that of Rev. John Myles of Ilston, who had baptized at least one of their children, Obadiah, in 1627. He later had a pastorate in Swansea before emigrating. Myles, also, lived in Salem a while before moving to Rehoboth, where he had a congregation. It is said that some of his records are now preserved at Brown University in Providence, originally a Baptist institution.

As is the case in most families, much more has been recorded about the first-generation patriarch than any of the others. Many of the activities of Richard Sr. will be listed but we know very little of those of Richard Jr., who seems to have been a hardworking and one assumes prosperous husbandman--at least enough so that his children married into very nice families, despite having lost their mother when John Bowen, the youngest, was only five. It is partly from this same many-great granduncle John, who testified 66 years later, that we learn that in the beginning, before the coming of the white man, the Wampanoag Indians who dwelt there called the place "See-conk" from the loud conking of numerous flocks of geese living there. The first bridge (over upper Ten Mile River?) was called "Bowens Bridge," and sometimes people spoke of the stream as Bowens River due to the bridge being there.

Some say the original Bowen family resided a while in Weymouth, which is next to Hingham on the south side of Boston Harbor. Whether or not that is the case, a good many of the first proprietors were from

both towns. When the first inhabitants "brought in their estates" for apportionment and taxation purposes, Richard Bowen's was one of the higher amounts, £270-00-00. That of Edward Bennett, which later went to Richard Bowen, Jr., was £134-10-00.

This is perplexing, for later writers, seeing the list, assumed that Richard, Jr., was one of the first proprietors. If that were true, one would assume he was at least 21 and probably engaged if not already married, thus born in 1622 or before and probably the oldest son. But on the other hand, some genealogists usually estimate that he was born about 1630 or 32. There were 15 cases like that on that list, where a first purchaser's name, such as Bennet's, was given followed by "now (new name)'s." Funny thing, but six month's later on a new list granting additional farmland, there were still 58 proprietors; a few of the names were different, indicating divers men had sold out to new proprietors--but none of the 15 young men like Richard Jr. were mentioned, though his future father-in-law John Sutton was. Over three and a half centuries have gone by since then, and I cannot read minds and may be way off base on this, but does it not seem as though those 15 names were added to that record a few years later? And that those were 15 young men who did subsequently possess the properties originally allocated to someone else? Richard Junior is our Averill ancestor so we want to learn all we can about him--none of the genealogies follow him, so any information is helpful.

On 9 December 1644 a general town meeting of Seaconk was held, wherein a committee of nine men were selected for "handling and straightening out town affairs." Richard Bowen, Sr. was one of them. Ensuing meetings set rates, ordered good fencing on penalty of forfeiture for noncompliance, and so on. On 16 March 1645 he was first on a list of men to hear the grievances of those whose meadows were defective, and to lay out new lots accordingly and in proportion to their estates (this was long before the era when all men were considered equal!). On 9 June 1645, 58 new lots were drawn by the proprietors for meadows on "the great plains."

On 29 December 1645 a second agreement was reached with the Wampanoag Indians to remove from Wannamoiset for the sum of £15 sterling, which was paid to them by Mr. John Browne, who will be told about in a separate section. "Afterward Richard Bowen, Robert Martin, Stephen Payne, by appointment of the rest of the townsmen, viewed and laid out that neck of land called and known by the name of Wannamoyset neck, from the salt water where the Indians had formerly had a hedge, ranging unto the north end of the Indian field and so round about the said Indian field unto the salt water." On 18 February 1646, 46 of the proprietors drew lots for the new meadow. Cattle were prohibited from the whole area, thus eliminating some of the need for fencing. At this same meeting, Mr. Browne, Mr. Peck, Stephen Paine, Mr. Winchester, Richard Bowen, William Carpenter, and Edward Smith were chosen townsmen (selectmen) for the year. (Mr. was a title of great respect back then, and usually only the oldest, wealthiest in the family held it. Ministers were included. Though the Bowens were held in much esteem, Rehoboth records do not call them mister.)

Our foremother, Ann Bowen, died during the first few years of the family's arrival at Seaconk. The exact date isnot known, but it was probably about 1646/7. Most of the children were grown, and some were married with children of their own, so that she was a grandmother. Judging by what we know of her offspring, she was a loving mother, devoted to her family's good upbringing and to her husband. It is a pity we have not learned more about her, and her ancestry.

In November 1648 Richard again visited Hingham, where he married again, to Elizabeth (   ) widow of George Marsh. Perhaps a few words about the Marshes will indirectly add to our knowledge of the Bowens, though the two families' origins were probably dissimilar. Most of the early Hinghamites were strict Puritans who had come there from Norfolk and other sections of Southeast England. The Marshes arrived on 3 March 1535 and acquired land right away. George, like Richard, was a town officer. He died, probably suddenly, on 2 July 1647, for he made his will the same day, leaving behind Elizabeth and four children, sons Thomas Marsh (1618-1658) and Onesiphorus Marsh (1630?-1713); and daughters Elizabeth Turner (Mrs. John -1705) who died 2 October 1647 after having given birth to little Elizabeth III on 27 September; and Mary Page who was perhaps wife of Abraham Page, a tailor, from Great Badstow, Essex. The Marsh sons lived in Hingham. No mention is made of them ever being in Rehoboth.

From the above we can see that for Elizabeth Marsh Bowen to have had a son in 1618, she most likely was born about 1590 give or take, and probably about the same age as our Ann Bowen. Since customarily men were older than their wives--at least the other Bowens were--this demonstrates that Richard could indeed have been the son of Thomas Bowen of Court House, Ilston, Wales, who died in 1587 leaving two tiny sons. Richard and Ann did have a son Thomas--named for his grandfather?

Richard and Elizabeth were married for nearly 30 years before he died, and she died not long after, but they were both quite elderly.She must have been a strong influence on him. If she were a strict Puritan that might help explain some of his later actions, as traditionally the Bowens were Baptists.

On 12 April 1648 (before the remarriage) thesame men were re-elected selectman as in February 1646, seemingly having served all this time in the interim, Richard being one of them. On 11 May 1649 he and Thomas Redway were supervisors of the ways. (Not explained in Rehoboth History, but early proprietor Obadiah Holmes, from Manchester vicinity Lancashire, who like the Bowens, came to Salem in 1638, hated out of Salem, came to Seaconk in 1643 and joined Rev. Samuel Newman's church, but his Baptist leanings soon got him into trouble again as he led others in private home meetings. On a trip north in 1649 to visit friends, he was whipped in Boston--30 lashes with a 3-tailed whip= 90 lashes, having a profound sympathetic effect on viewers. He was forced to escape to Newport Rhode Island to live in 1650, but continued to encourage Seaconk Baptists.)

In October 1653 Richard was among five men chosen as "raters for the Plymouth county pay" (tax assessors). On 12 December 1653 he was again chosen to be one of the selectmen. On 10 Jan 1653/4 it was voted that "the Indians that kill any wolves are to be paid out of the rate by the constable." Wolves were a very dangerous problem in the early years, and numerous--a threat to cattle and even young children. On 28 June 1654 "Were chosen forthe considering of such lands as shall be recorded in thetown books, for the clearing the rights of any person," Mr. Pecke, Thomas Cooper, John Allin, Stephen Payne and Richard Bowen. At themeeting of 15 September 1654 Richard was on a committee of five to set rates. "At the same time Richard Bowen was chosen Town Clerk."

In June 1655 some notable developments occurred. Though many of the families had moved to Rehoboth to be under the Plymouth Colony government because it was an area of comparative religious tolerance, before this time all the New England colonies had formed a confederation for common defense, brought on as a result of the Pequot Indian uprising and subsequent developments. Massachussetts Bay Colony was far the most populous, also militantly Puritan, with Connecticut not far behind. Laws in both of those colonies mandated tithes to support Puritan clergy. So much pressure was placed on Plymouth Colony to do likewise that they felt forced to comply. Richard Bowen's actions that month cause one to question whether he was really a strong Baptist as some descendants claim--but on the other hand, being both town clerk and a selectman, it is probable he felt a duty to carry out official policy whatever it was. Many of his neighbors did not go along so quietly, for

> "Rehoboth had been afflicted already with a serious schism, and by its proximity to Providence and its plantations, where there was a universal toleration, the practice of free inquiry was tolerated... The schism here referred to was caused by Obadiah Holmes and several others withdrawing themselves from Mr. Newman's church in 1649, and setting up a separate meeting of their own...."

On 26 June 1655, "at a town meeting it was agreed upon that Mr. Newman, our teacher, should have fifty pounds a year; and these seven men whose names are hereto appended were chosen committees for the levying of a rate according to person and estate for the raising of said maintenance: Joseph Peck, Thomas Cooper, Richard Bowen, Stephen Payne, Robert Martin, Peter Hunt, Will. Sabin."

More about Rev. Samuel Newman will be told in the Walker Family, sketch. This author is interested also in Rev. Obadiah Holmes because he, also, is my ancestor, though not in the Averill lines. More will be told about John Browne in another Rehoboth families section, for he was Widow Walker's brother and, as we will see, he stepped forward to pick up the pieces after this decree was enacted.

On 9 February 1655/6, Mr. Peck; Richard Bowen, senior; Stephen Paine, senior; Thomas Cooper, senior; Robert Martin, William Carpenter, senior; and Peter Hunt were chosen Townsmen. "It was also granted that they shall have power to order the prudential affairs of the town, and that they shall have power to call a town-meeting when they see cause." "At the same time Father Bowen was chosen Moderator to see good order in our town meetings." "Mr. John Brown, a principal inhabitant of Rehoboth, as well as a Plymouth Colony Governour's Assistant , was opposed to coercing people to support the ministry, although he was willing to contribute his full proportion." (The upshot of all this was that Mr. Browne sold his Rehoboth property and moved away, using proceeds to pay the rates of those who objected on religious grounds for a period of seven years.)

Attention is drawn to the fact that, for the first time in town records, Richard Bowen (and several others) are sytled "senior," because their sons of the same name are now grown men. Our Richard Junior is now married, or about to be. (He is also styled "Father Bowen.)

On 3 July 1656 at Plymouth Colony court, "Robert Abell is allowed by the Court to keep an ordinary at Rehoboth. The Court appointed and deputed Mr. Joseph Pecke to administer marriage at Rehoboth. And the said Mr. Pecke, Mr. Stephen Paine, and Richard Bowen are appointed to authorize to hear and determine all controversies there between any, so as it amount not to above thevalue of three pounds; liberty being left to any to make their appeal to the Court of Plymouth, if there shall be reason." (In other words, three justices of the peace, today's equivalent of a judge.)

On 22 June 1658 "At a town-meeting lawfully warned, lots were drawn for the meadows that lie on the north side of the town, in order as followeth, according to person and estate. 49 allotments were given, among them Richard Bowen, Sr., Obadiah Bowen, Richard Bowen, Jr, John Sutton, Philip Walker, John Peck, George Kendrick, Robert Wheaton, and others who married into the family such as Carpenters, Abell, Fuller, etc.

Richard was growing elderly. At a meeting of 30 Jan 1659 it was voted that Richard Bullock should become Town Clerk with a stipend. In those days officials were not usually paid but donated their time, though being "in on things" there were certain advantages.

The last time Richard is mentioned in the Rehoboth history is on 19 February 1660 when "at a general town meeting, Capt. Willet, Mr. Peck, Richard Bowen, Stephen Payne sen, and Lt. Hunt were chosen by the town, and empowered to view the town book, and to see that it be transcribed into a new book, all such things as they shall judge material forthe good of the town, also for the clearing of evidence in men's lands, according to Court orders, made in 1654." Question: If this means those men transcribed all of the records into a new book, was that when the confusing words, "now Richard Bowen Jr's, was entered into the records?--see top of page 3.

Later that year Captain Thomas Willet (a Walker-Browne in-law) was empowered by Plymouth Court to purchase the land which later became Attleboro, having first obtained consent from the town of Rehoboth, from Chief Wamsutta, son of Massasoit, chief sachem of Pockanocket. The land was called Rehoboth North Purchase, and some of our clan owned land there before long.

Rev. Samuel Newman died in 1663 and a temporary successor was chosen, but religious affairs were far from quiet around that time, for though he now lived in Rhode Island Obadiah Holmes still had many Rehoboth adherents. In 1663* Rev. John Myles along with part of his congregation from Swansea, Wales, arrived there, having been ejected from Wales for nonconformity to the Puritan religion during the Cromwell reign. It is said that he went to that city in 1649 (from the Ilston area?). ~~This is the~~ same pastor who had baptized little Obadiah Bowen in Ilston in 1627. According to tradition, that year he formed a Baptist church in Rehoboth, said to have been the fourth officially organized in America. The first members were James Browne, Nicholas Tenner, Joseph Carpenter, John Butterworth, Eldad Kingsley, and Benjamin Alby, though more joined soon after. The seven were fined £5 each and forced to remove from Rehoboth. They moved to Wannamoiset in a settlement they entitled Swansea (sometimes styled Swansey) after the home place in Wales. Son Obadiah Bowen and his wife Mary Clifton and Obadiah, Jr., are mentioned frequently in Rev. Myles' records, as are many others. Myles died early in 1783. I have not seen other Bowens that Obadiah's branch listed in Myles records but do not rule it out.

id to be

During Richard Sr.'s old age he started disposing of his assets. The "town rate to pay debts" shows him with only 00-03-97 taxes in 1671, one of the lower rates, but he was quite aged then. By 28 May 1672 he had disposed of his half-share in the 1666 North Purchase (Attleboro) to Thomas Ormsby. His will was written 1 February 1674/5 and he signed with an "R" though he was quite literate--one assumes either that he was too ill to sign, or that his sight had failed in extreme old age. He died three days later, February 4th. The estate was appraised 4 June 1575 at £175-15-08. The widow, Elizabeth Marsh Bowen, died shortly after Richard. Surviving children were sons William, Obediah and Richard Bowen and daughters Alice Wheaton, Sarah Fuller and Ruth Kendrick. A copy of his will, as printed in the Mayflower Descendant, is included here.

---

*NEHGR 139:21-49 article by R.C. Anderson disputes the chronology and presents Swansea MA Church records commencing 1666 by Myles, mostly disciplinary meetings, no vital statistics.

THE WILL OF RICHARD BOWIN, SR.

TRANSCRIBED BY GEORGE ERNEST BOWMAN

THE will and inventory of Richard Bowin, Sr., of Rehoboth, were recorded in the Plymouth Colony Wills and Inventories, Volume III, Part I, pages 147–149. They are here printed in full, at the expense of Mr. Herbert Bowen.

Especial attention should be called to the married name of Richard Bowin's daughter Ruth. Pope's "Pioneers of Massachusetts", page 60, calls her Ruth "Leverich"; but the original record plainly reads "Ruth Kenericke", in two places. The first letter of the surname is the same as in the word "Knowne", at the beginning of the will, and is entirely unlike the capital letter in "Leanto" and "Lands", in the same record.

From: Mayflower Descendant Vol 17 pp 247-251
(1915) Wi SHS F68 M46

Inventory – see over

[RICHARD BOWIN'S WILL]

[3 : 1 : 147] The last Will and Testament of Richard Bowin seni^{r} of Rehoboth in the Collonie of Plymouth in New England exhibited to the Court held att Plymouth aforsaid the fourth of June Ann^{o}: Dom 1675 on the oath of M^{r} John Pecke as followeth

Be it Knowne unto all men by these p^{r}sents that I Richard Bowin seni^{r}: of Rehoboth in the Collonie of New Plymouth in New England Doe the Day and Date above written ordaine and make this my last will and Testament being in my Good and p^{r}fect Memory and understanding as followeth;

Item I Give to my beloved wife Elizabeth two Cowes and one heiffer a yeer old and a Mare 5 yeer old and a Mare Colt two yeer old and one Colt that followeth the Mare;

Item I Give unto my wife my best bed; with all that belonges to it; and all my linnine two Pewter platters; with som other smale peeces of pewter; both the bras kettles 1 Iron pott 1 skillett one frying pan all my poultry and halfe my swine younge and old alsoe I Give to my wife one Coffer; and halfe my provisions after my buriall; halfe my Corne; halfe my hay that is Gathered in or may be Growing att my Decease; halfe my butter Cheese Bacon and porke; one hake with the eke belonging to it; one Cherne one brewing tubb one powdering tubb one beer barrell and my milk vessells; Cushens one Candlesticke; all these foremensioned p^{r}ticulars; I Give to my beloved wife to Dispose of att her Death unto whom shee will; moreover I Give unto my wife my bible my warming pan; halfe my house that p^{r}te of the Leanto, nearest unto the Chimney; as alsoe halfe my orchyard; and halfe my home lott; excepting that p^{r}te I sould unto Steven Paine seni^{r}: being an acree more or lesse; all these I say I Give unto my beloved wife, the full tearme of her life; moreover my wife shall have libertie to mow two load of hay on my meddow att Palmers River and three load more on my meddow on the New meddow necke, every yeer soe longe as shee liveth;

Item I Give to my son Willam one hundred pounds Comonage; my lott on the East syde of the plaine my lott in the second Devision; my p^{r}te of ffresh meddow lying and being neare the mile run; my ffresh meddow att Palmers River all my meddow that I have mowed att my meddow on the New meddow necke The other pte of this meddow, I have Given unto my son Obadiah; and my son Richard, as will appeer by a Deed of Gift under my hand; Morover I Give unto my son Willam; halfe my house halfe my barne; halfe my orchyard halfe my home lott except that I sould to Steven Paine seni^{r}: and it is my Will that that after my wifes Decease that my son Willam shall have all my housing and barnes orchyard homlott with all those lands and meddowes before mensioned unto him and his heires forever;

Item I Give unto my son Willam halfe my swine halfe my Corne halfe my hay; Ingathered or may be Growing and halfe my provisions; butter Cheese bacon Porke;

Item I Give to my son Willam halfe my Cart and wheeles my Cart Rope with my plow and plowirons belonging to it 2 Chaires two hogsheads, and all other Corne vessells my wife

Can spare; my hake with the Ringe; on it; my Great brasse pott an Iron pott and my Great brasse pan; and alsoe it is my will that hee shall have the land which is to be Devided according to the Devision of 20 acrees to the hundred pound estate; and alsoe my lott lately layed out on the necke Called Wachamaquat necke; and all such lands as shalbe Devided after the Date heerof; according to the proportion of an hundred pound estate; I alsoe Give unto my son Willam; my Chest in the hall my Coffer in the seller loft my Chaine my hay knife Dung forke Pikes Rakes hand saw augers 2 beetle ringes and all my Iron wedges; as alsoe that oxe Called Duke; and my bible after my Wifes Decease;

Item I alsoe Give unto my son Willam the bed hee now lyeth on and the furniture belonging to it; and one bed sheet and my winnow sheet; and all my boards about my house, and all my wearing apparrell;

Item I Give unto my son Obadiah halfe a hundred pounds of Comonage; my Plow Irons of my breakeing plow and my thawrtcutt saw and halfe my logg Chaine; and the other halfe I Give to my son Willam;

Item I Give to my Daughter Allice Wheaton my Daughter Sarah ffuller and my Daughter Ruth Kenericke my old mare and a Colt that suckes on her;

Item I Give to my Daughter Allice Wheaton my fflagon and two pewter platters;

Item I Give to my Daughter Sarah ffuller my warming pan after my wifes Decease; and a pewter platter when the will is proved;

Item I Give to my Daughter Ruth Kenericke one pewter platter;

It is alsoe my will that if any of these fornamed beasts [p. 148]: viz: neat beasts or horses given Doe Die or come to any lose, the lose shalbe to the pticular p^{r}son or p^{r}sons unto whom they were Given; my executor shalbe free hee shall not make it Good to him or them;

Item all the Rest of my Goods lands Chattles or whatsoever I have not Given in this my Will and Testament; I Give to my son Richard whom I make and ordaine my sole executor to pay my Debts and to Discharge my legacyes and to see my body buried; witnes my hand the Day and yeer above written

Witnes
Stephen Paine Jun^{r}:
John Pecke;

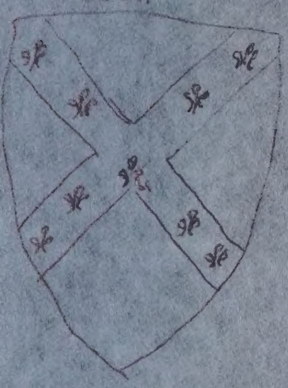
The marke R of Richard
Bowin seni^{r}:

A true Inventory of the estate: viz: Lands Goods and Chattles of Richard Bowin seni^{r} of Rehoboth late Deceased exhibited to the Court held att Plymouth the 4th of June 1675 on the oath of Richard Bowin Juni^{r}: as followeth:

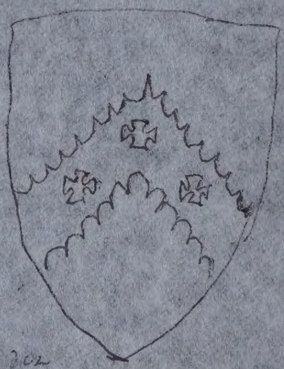
Imp^{r}: his wearing apparrell	004	00	00
Item a bed beding bedsteed & furniture belonging to it	007	00	00
Item 6 great pewter platters att 5^{s} apeece	001	10	00
Item 3 smale pewter platters	000	10	00
Item 2 old pewter platters	000	003	04
Item 2 smale pewter basons	000	05	00
Item severall smale peece of pewter	000	07	00
Item an old fflagon	000	03	00
Item an old Chamber pott	000	01	06
Item an old warming pan	000	03	00
Item 2 brasse pans	001	10	00
Item 2 brasse kettles one brasse skillett 1 Candle sticke and some other old brasse	001	00	00
Item an Iron pott	001	00	00
Item 2 old shirts 4 Capps 1 bolster Case 1 pillow Case	000	07	06
Item 1 sheet and a remnant of Canvas	001	10	00
Item more in sheets and a smale Table Cloth 2 towells	00	17	06
Item a smale remnant of Cloth	000	02	06
Item a fflocke bed & bolster and uper Covering 1 blankett and a Canvas sheet and bedsteed	003	00	00
Item 20 bushells of Indian Corne	003	00	00
Item a Cart Rope	000	07	00
Item a paire of tonggs	000	02	06
Item 2 pothangers	000	06	00
Item a handsaw	000	02	00
Item 3 wedges 2 beetle ringes	000	06	00
Item a bilhook and pease hook	000	04	00
Item an ax and an old hatchett	000	04	06
Item a frying pan	000	02	00
Item an old hoe	000	02	00
Item a hammer pincers and borier 3 Chissells & a paire of pronggs	000	04	00
Item some peeces of old Iron	000	02	00
Item a Great bible	000	10	00
Item 4 Chistes	000	14	00
Item 2 tubbs 1 butter tubb and a Cover	000	10	00
Item 3 old barrells	000	03	00
Item tryed sewett	000	02	00
Item 2 old Chaires 3 Cushens	000	02	00
Item 2 old smale trayes a straining Dish a pudding pan	000	01	06
Item an old bagg	000	07	00
Item a Cherne a Cover a tray and old hatchett	000	06	00
Item an hay knife and an old hatchett	000	02	00
Item a spitt and pronges	000	04	00
Item scales and waights and a pestell	000	16	00
Item a smale barell	000	01	00
Item 5 nibbs & a ringe	000	02	06
Item Rye and pease	000	02	03
Item a Great brasse pott	002	00	00
Item a logg Chaine	000	12	00
[p. 149] Item in horse kind	12	00	00
Item 2 oxen	10	00	00
Item 2 Cowes	06	00	00
Item in hay	02	05	00
Item: a plow: Chaine yoakes & Cart	01	04	00
Item in Debts	00	18	9
Item more in lumber	00	03	00
Item in porke	00	05	00
Item in houses lands and Comonage	100	00	00
sume totall	175	15	08

John Read seni^{r}:
Willam Carpentor
John Pecke

Abell

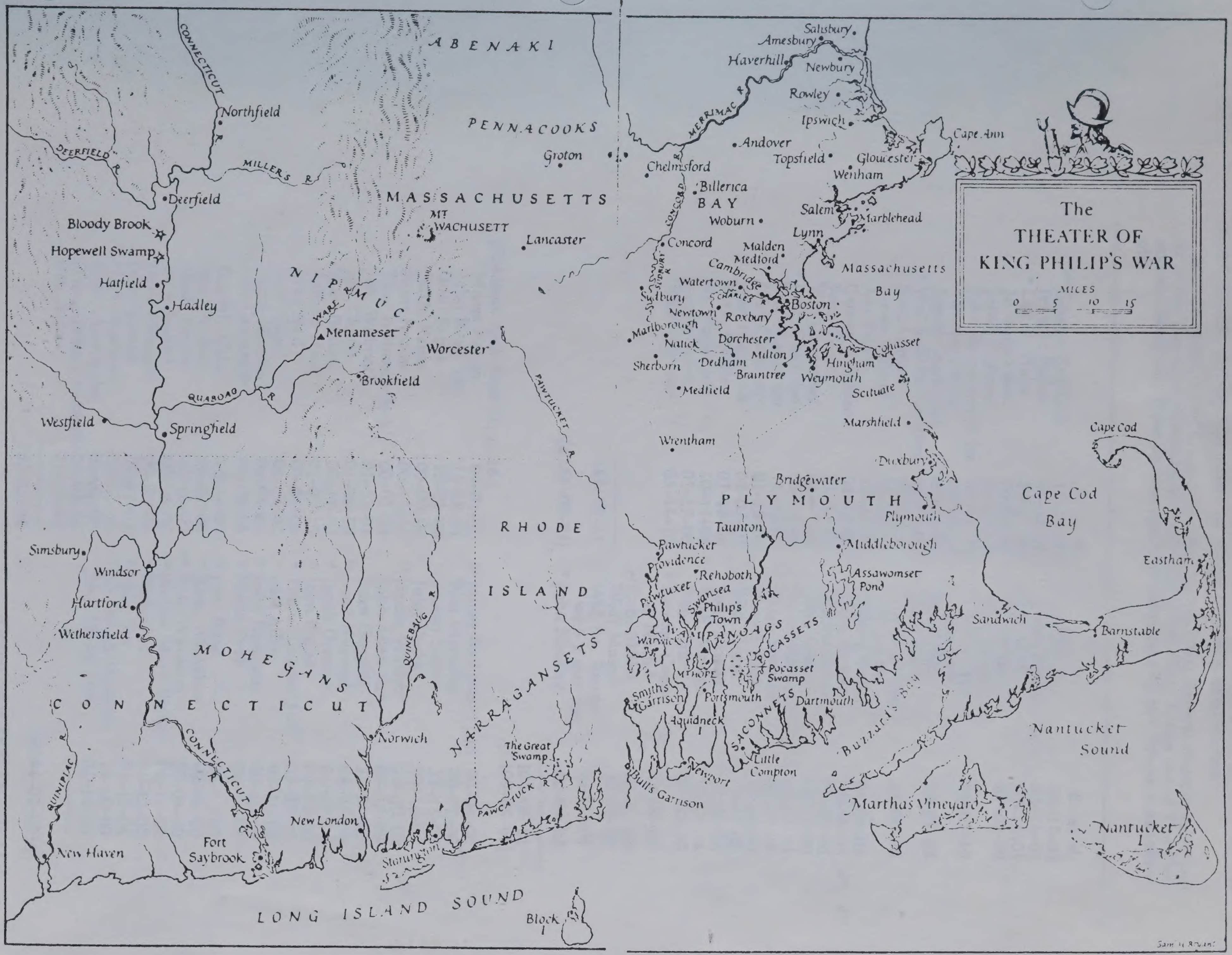


Peck



302

Crux Christi Salus Mea



The THEATER OF KING PHILIP'S WAR

MILES
0 5 10 15
ABENAKI
PENNACOOKS
MASSACHUSETTS BAY
NIPMUC
MOHEGANS
CONNECTICUT
RHODE ISLAND
NARRAGANSETS
PLYMOUTH
WAMPANOAGS
POCASSETS
SACONNETS
CONNECTICUT R
DEERFIELD R
MILLERS R
QUABOAG R
WARE R
PAWTUCKET R
QUINEBAUG R
QUINIPIAC R
PAWCATUCK R
MERRIMAC R
CONCORD R
SUDBURY R
CHARLES R
Northfield
Deerfield
Bloody Brook
Hopewell Swamp
Hatfield
Hadley
Menameset
MT WACHUSETT
Groton
Lancaster
Worcester
Brookfield
Westfield
Springfield
Simsbury
Windsor
Hartford
Wethersfield
Norwich
New London
Stonington
Fort Saybrook
New Haven
The Great Swamp
LONG ISLAND SOUND
Block I
Salisbury
Amesbury
Haverhill
Newbury
Rowley
Ipswich
Cape Ann
Andover
Topsfield
Gloucester
Wenham
Chelmsford
Billerica
Salem
Marblehead
Woburn
Lynn
Concord
Malden
Medford
Massachusetts Bay
Cambridge
Watertown
Sudbury
Newtown
Boston
Roxbury
Marlborough
Natick
Dorchester
Milton
Cohasset
Hingham
Sherborn
Dedham
Braintree
Weymouth
Medfield
Scituate
Marshfield
Wrentham
Duxbury
Cape Cod
Cape Cod Bay
Bridgewater
Plymouth
Taunton
Pawtucket
Providence
Middleborough
Rehoboth
Assawomset Pond
Pawtuxet
Swansea
Philip's Town
Warwick
MT HOPE
Pocasset Swamp
Smith's Garrison
Portsmouth
Dartmouth
Buzzard's Bay
Aquidneck I
Little Compton
Newport
Bull's Garrison
Sandwich
Barnstable
Eastham
Nantucket Sound
Martha's Vineyard
Nantucket I
Sam H. Bryant

The lists of the Rehoboth inhabitants who advanced money to the town for defraying the costs of King Philip's War follow:

"Jan: 26 1676 [/7] An account of The charges That Several Persons have ben at in the Towne of Rehoboth Relating to the late Warr Taken out of The Constables: Bookes by those persons apointed thereunto by the Towne is as followeth.

	£. s. d.
"George Kendrick	11–13–01
Jonath: ffuller	01–18–08
* Leften. Hunt	32–17–00
Jo. Miller Sen	06–05–04
Jonah Pallmer	01–10–10
John Butterworth Ju.	03–11–05
Thomas Reade	08–14–04
Joseph Buckland	06–03–00
[1] Wid & Abra.* Perem	14–02–00
Rice Lenord	02–00–06
James Gillson	04–18–02
An: Perey	14–00–02
George Robonson	04–12–00
John Perem	01–13–10
Will Carpenter	08–17–03
[2] John Titus Sen	05–06–03
Sam^{l} Carpenter	11–19–05
John Carpenter	01–18–06
John titus, Juñ	02–07–07
Nath. Chaffe	03–16–06
Str. Paine Juñ	10–11–05
Joseph Saven	01–17–00
Gilbert Brooke	03–14–10
	149–19–11
	[£164–09–01]

	£. s. d.
[3] Wid Smith	04–17–05
James Redway Sen.	05–14–04
Pre Abell	07–15–01
Will Bukland	02–09–00
Ben. Bukland wth y^{e} loss of a gun	04–03–10
Sam^{l} Peck	09–02–08
John Fitch with y^{e} lose of a gun	13–06–04
Robert ffuller	04–10–03
[4] Rich. Bowen	04–04–08 ✓ Jr.
Widow Saben	01–07–06
John Ormsby	02–15–00
Tho: Willmath Sen	06–12–03
ffran. Stevens	01–10–06
Joseph Peck	02–10–00
[5] Wid. Beere	0–17–08
John Savage	2–06–08
Rich. Marten	1–05–04
Tho. Grant	00–09–00
[6] Deacon Coper & Nath *	08–00–00
Rob: Miller	05–17–06
Wid: Mason	13–05–10
Wid Ra. Reade with a gun lost	04–03–00
[7] John Kinsley	02–04–03
	109–06–01"
	[£109–08–01]

[*Rehoboth Rate Book* II, p. 16.]

"Moses Reade	04–01–10
John Read Sen.	13–18–11
Will: Saben	15–05–08
Nath. Paine	100–00–00
Sam: Reade	00–17–10
Tho. Willmoth Juñ	00–07–04
Joh. Willmoth	01–02–04
Jos. Chaffe	01–08–08
Sam^{l} Bulluk	00–12–03
Rebeka Hunt	01–07–10
John Hall	00–01–06
Sam^{l} Saben	04–14–02
Eldad Kinsley	00–09–04
[8] Wid Carpenter	01–00–06
Daniell Allen	00–14–00
Sam^{l} Homes	00–09–00
Noah Mason	00–15–00
John Jonson	00–16–06
Jere: Wheaton	00–03–00
Oba: Bowen	02–17–08
Nath. ffoulsom	00–05–06
Eben: Amidowne	00–01–06
[9] (Tan.) John Crossman	00–02–06
Ben. Saben	01–00–06
	152–13–06
	[£152–13–04]

[10] James Red.[way] Juñ	00–06–00
Will Blanding	00–07–00
Daniel Smith	37–11–07
John Pecke	04–12–06
[11] Decon Walker	26–00–10 ✓
John Allen Juñ	00–16–09
John Doggett	11–01–03½
[12] Sam^{l} Nueman	04–07–10
* Jacob Ormsby	01–09–06
* John ffuller	00–17–00
* Thom̃. Copper Juñ	07–05–11
* Isak Allen	03–11–03
* John Readway	00–16–06
* Nicho Peck	08–12–05
* Jon: Blise	04–11–07
* Rich. Whitaker	02–00–00
* Rob. Wheaton	02–04–10
Widow Mary ffuller	00–12–00
* Nicho Ide	06–12–02
* John Ide	01–13–04
* Mr. Noah Newman	16–00–00
* John Miller Juñ	02–12–06
	[£144–02–09½]

[Grand total £570 13s. 3½d.]

"There was advns.

* to John Hall	00–13–6
* to John Marten	00–13–6"

[*Rehoboth Rate Book* II, p. 17.]

In most Colonial families much more is known about the founding fathers than, as a rule, about the children. The Bowens are no exception. We do not even know the birth order of Richard and Ann's children, though it appears Alice and Sarah were the oldest to come to America. Whether older children died young or stayed in Wales is unknown. Most that is known about the daughters comes from a study of their husbands' families.

Alice Bowen (sometimes with the old-fashioned version "Ealce) was born in Wales in 1618 or earlier. Perhaps she and Robert Wheaton were married before coming to the Massachussetts Bay Colony. The Wheaton Genealogy says that he was born in 1605 in Swansea, Wales and arrived here by 1636. The first mention of him in the Salem Town meeting on 6th 11th mo. 1636 says, "Robert Wheaton refused to be an inhabitant." (11th month old style is January because the new year than started in March.) It was dangerous for the sailing ships of that day to arrive in the dead of winter, so obviously they were there well before Jan. 1637. On 26 9th mo. 1638 he was granted 10 acres of land on Marblehead. On 1st day 2nd mo 1644 "Robert Wheaden desireth some ground at ye great lotts." "Granted to Robert Wheaden 20 acres of Land neere to the marsh at Mr. Bishops ffarme," in a fertile-sounding area now part of Danvers.

At least four sons were born to Robert and Alice in Salem before 1645 but, the family being devout Baptists, they naturally are not reflected in baptismal records there. They were adherents to the teachings of Rev. Obadiah Holmes, and moved to Rehoboth to be part of his group; they received his nice home site (allotment #25 on the south side of town) when Holmes was forced to seek refuge in Rhode Island after a horrible whipping at the post in Boston. He still continued to lead meetings, however, but discreetly. Later, after a reign of terror ensued following the restoration of King Charles II to the throne, Rev. John Myles and several families in his congregation in Swansea, Wales, fled to America hastily, finally winding up in the new town of Swansea, near Rehoboth, not being welcome in Rehoboth proper. The Wheatons, Obadiah Bowen, and others went there to join him. (According to the Wheaton Genealogy written in 1887, Myles brought his old church records, written in Welsh and at that time still well preserved and housed in the custody of the Baptist Church in North Swansea MA. Some writers have suggested that those records were since sent back to Wales or England to be translated and that perhaps the earliest part not returned, that now they are kept at Brown University in Providence. The true status I do not know!) Robert Wheaton was active in Rehoboth from 1645 on, later moving to the new Baptist settlement at Swansea. The Wheatons had eight boys and three girls. All but the youngest boys fought in King Phillips War. During the early onslaught in 1675, as Rev. Myles was conducting services, the Wheatons being among the worshipers, the Indians began to close in. As people started returning home many were killed, others wounded, and half the town burned. Myles' home was made into a garrison. Suffering was great, with many children orphaned, but the Wheatons all survived. Rev. Ephraim Wheaton, the youngest, was ordained and became the third minister at that church. Robert Wheaton died in Feb. 1696 and Alice survived him.

BOWEN FAMILY

Sarah Bowen, born perhaps about 1619 or earlier in Wales, Married about 1639 Robert Fuller who had come to Salem in the "Bevis" in 1638. Details are lacking because I have not yet seen the Fuller genealogy which states that he was a bricklayer, and was of Rehoboth in 1668. All Pope says about him is that at a Salem town meeting in 1643 there was some question about his removing to Rehoboth. He drew lot #43, on the original proprietors list rated at Ŀ150-00-00, but was not mentioned in the Rehoboth 1644 drawing, but on the one of 18 Feb 1646 list when 20 lots were drawn for the new meadow--among them were Robert Fuller, John Fitch, Robert Titus, Widow Walker, Nicholas Ide, Richard Bowen--all inter-related by marriage.

On 22 Feb 1658 Robert was made a freeman of the town and at a 22 June 1658 meeting was amont the 49 who drew lots at the North Purchase (later Attleborough & Cumberland). On 26 May 1668 the town voted "for the encouragement of a bricklayer...if any come he shall have free liberty of wood and clay at the half-mile swamp to make what brick he will." The same day he was one of those who drew lots for new meadowlands at the North Purchase.

King Phillips War was not just a terror--it was deadly for this Walker Family circle. One son, Captain Samuel Fuller, was killed by the Indians and buried at Rehoboth on 15 August 1676. His only child, Samuel Jr., was born that 25 November 1676. His brother, John Fuller, was killed and buried 23 August 1676, and his son Abiell was born 30 December 1676. After the heartbreak of losing two young sons, our Sarah (Bowen) Fuller, herself, was massacred by the Indians and buried on 14 October 1676.

A list of Sarah and Robert's children has not yet been seen. Samuel had been married in 1673 to Mary Ide, who later married John Redway. John was married the same year to Abigail Titus. Other descendants were probably Jonathan Jr. & Sr., David, and Benjamin (a mason later of Salem?) who are all mentioned on a 1689 list along with "orphants" Samuel and Abiell. Names of the daughters have not yet been recovered. It is a little tricky separating their children from those of Dr. Samuel Fuller of Plymouth, who later married into the Bowen family. Robert himself married the second time to Mrs. Margaret Waller, widow of Christopher. He died 10 May 1706.

The couple had at least one daughter, Elizabeth Fuller, who married 17 April 1678, Eleazer Wheelock at Rehoboth, later of Mendon & Medfield. son of the highly educated and powerful Ralph Wheelock, a strict Puritan. Elizabeth died in 1689. Her uncle William Bowen had left her a legacy in 1687.

BOWEN FAMILY

Thomas Bowen, named perhaps for his grandfather in Wales, has been the subject of several little attempts at genealogies, but yet the few details of his life which have surfaced so far are confused with a different Thomas Bowen of Marblehead, who also had a wife Elizabeth, but who died several years later, in 1676.

Boyer, quoting Perley's History of Salem II, says he was a planter and fisherman in Marblehead in 1642 and was fined by Salem Court in 1647. But Boyer admits not being well informed about the family--that could have been either Thomas. Our family did reside in that area for a time.

Our Thomas married Elizabeth Nichols about 1660 or so, perhaps in New London CT. (This may or may not be a clue, but Torrey's marriages lists a William Nichols who died in 1673, who had come there from Salem, conceivably Elizabeth's relative.) At any rate, Thomas, who also may have been a younger son who went there from Rehoboth, moved to that place to live. R. L. LeBaron, the only truly qualified reporter (Early Rehoboth Vol I:104-5)is quoted below. He says,

"When Thomas Bowen returned to Rehoboth from New London Conn., in December 1662, he was a very sick man, having been under the care of Gov. John Winthrop. As there was no resident doctor in Rehoboth at that time, it is possible that Dr. Fuller of Middleborough attended him and became acquainted with Elizabeth Bowen, whom he afterwards married. Thomas Bowen in his will proved in February 1664 directed that his wife Elizabeth should bring up his son Richard 'in the feare of the Lord and teach him to write and read.'" His brother-in-law Robert Fuller and his brother Obadiah Bowen were named as executors. Thomas died of a lingering illness, but of what kind is not known.

Medicine in that day and age was quite primitive, consisting to a large degree of herbal remedies. Dr. Fuller, a son or nephew of Dr. Fuller of the Mayflower, had been trained as a minister, the first at Middleborough where he preached for many years though not ordained until the year before hisdeath in 1695. His biographers call him a sober, grave, industrious, enlightened and self-denying man. When he married Elizabeth he was a widow with four little children, ages 2 to 9 years old,, the littlest one only three years old when baby Elizabeth of the second marriage was born. The widow died 11 Nov. 1713 in Plympton.

Dr. Fuller trained his little step-son, Richard Bowen, to become a physician, and he is said to have been of much help during King Phillips War, though only a teenager. The Fuller home in Middleborough was burned down during the War. He married in Rehoboth 9 Jan 1683, Mercy Titus, and became the progenitor of a long string of physicians.

BOWEN FAMILY

William Bowen lived in Rehoboth, but little is known about him, not even whether he married. One would assume he did. Perhaps he lived elsewhere part ofthe time. Rehoboth deed abstracts say that on 23 Dec 1679, William Bowen of Rehoboth for a valuable consideration deeded to Jane Walker, widow, and Samuel Walker, both of Rehoboth, 20 acres "which is now due to me to take up on the Commons of Rehoboth within the 2000 Acre Division." Witnesses: William Carpenter Jr. and Sr. (Vol V:133) (Walker Family data in this series will reveal that this was our foremother, Jane (Metcalfe) Walker, widow of Philip, and their eldest son Samuel.)

The only other mention is an abstract of court proceedings of 7 March 1687--"William Bowen of Rehoboth died leaving no instrument disposing of his house and land, and administration was granted to "Richard Bowen Brother unto ye said Dec'd William Bowen." It was agreed between said Richard Bowen and Obediah Bowen of Swanzey, "Eldest Brother of ye Said Dec'd William Bowen that the said estate, both real and personal should be divided among: said Obadiah Bowen; Richard Bowen son of Thomas Bowen deceased who was a nephew of said Dec'd William Bowen; Richard Bowen son of said Richard Bowen administrator; John Bowen son of Richard Bowen who was a brother to William Bowen deceased; Alice Wheaten Sister of Deceased William Bowen; Ruth Kinrick Sister of sd. Dec'd William Bowen; Elizabeth Whelleck Daughter of Robert Fuller formerly of sd. Rehoboth, 'ye said woman being ye nephew (niece) of said Dec'd William Bowen'; and Richard Bowen brother of Dec'd William Bowen." Witnesses: Nathl. Chaffee and Daniel Read (Vol I, p. 66)

Conditions being what they were then, chances are that William had a wife and possibly children who predeceased him--a bachelor would not likely have had that much property to divide. He bequeathed to his living brothers and sisters; to son of brother Thomas Deceased, to the sons of his (favorite?) brother Richard, and to Elizabeth Wheelock, daughter of his sister Sarah (Bowen) Fuller who had been killed by the Indians.

Ruth Brown

Wheelock, Samuel (1642–) & Sarah Kenricke/Kendrick – 3 April 1676; Medfield

(Eleazer m. Fuller) (1654–1731)

Plympton, John & Jane Dammin/Damon
13 Mar 1643/4 Dedham.

Thos Kendrick + Mary Perry 17 Jan 1681 – Reho

~~John Kendrick (1641–1721) & Esther Hall (1654–1723)~~ +

m/2 Mrs Jane Ide (w Nicholas) 1 Apr. 1691 – ~~she~~ she bore 12 May 1694

Kendrick, Geo + (of) Ruth Brown (–1688); 23 Apr 1647 Reho.

Wilmarth, John (–1719) + Ruth Kendrick (–1706) 6 Feb 1671 Rehoboth

Polson, Jonah (1662–) + Eliz Kendrick 28 May 1687 Reho.

Bliss, Samuel (1650–1720) + Mary Kendrick (1659–) 15 Apr 1685 Reho.

(Nicholas Hyde/Ide + Jane (Damon?) Plympton
to John 16 Nov 1679/80
Medfield)

Kendrick

was this all used – or needed?

Mary 78, Ruth 824 (Wilmarth), Sarah 802 (Wheelock)

Kendrick – (433) Dane 804, 845 / Elija 408 / Eliz. 554 / Hannah 506 / John 381 / Lydia 107

4 Providence platform

By February 1748 when Richard witnessed the Grubb Family land transaction he had a wife and two little daughters. Probably he was also operating the farm his father had bought from Peter Helton with hired help, though he spent enough time there to be considered a resident. He must have been about the same size as his father George who bequeathed him his best wearing apparel. This would have been quite expensive, imported from abroad. It is apparent George admired this middle son, though he made youngest son Robert executor and estate manager, for Robert was on the spot in 1749 and 1752 and the others were not.

What size were George Sr. and Richard? Probably fairly slender, for the necessary exertion of his profession would have been somewhat slenderizing. Later in Kentucky, Richard's grandson Reverend Paris Peater was called a "giant of a man," mischevious and pugnacious. Did he get that from his mother Sarah's side of the family? (Maybe both sides. Cherokees and soldiers all respected Richard's leadership. A commanding presence augmented by stature might have helped; but Cherokee leader Attakullakulla, the Little Carpenter and even the great Napoleon were petite men.) For many years before George died, Richard, with assistance of Jacob Hite whom George greatly respected and others, had operated a trading post--on Long Island in 1751 or before, as partner of Thomas Price and ~~heavily~~ indebted to the ~~great~~ Christopher Gist for goods, as a result of which he later went into parternership with son Nathaniel Gist. Both he and Nathaniel were later to become French and Indian War Captains, both of them ambitious young men who thought alike.

One could not operate a business like that alone. One man had to be in charge of the post taking in furs and leather, and paying for them in Indian goods, hunting supplies perhaps including the repair of firearms (as those were by no means standardized so long ago), ammunition supplies, and by then kettles and sophisticated

BOWEN FAMILY

Ruth Bowen born in Wales, married in Rehoboth on 23 April 1647, George Kendrick, born probably in England. Boyer suggests he may have been somehow related to a Yorkshire man of the same name who came to Plymouth on the James and settled in Scituate in 1634. Pope, who is often mixed up, seems to confuse the two. He says, "George, came in the ship with Rev. Richard Mather from Bristol, England 23 May 1635. Settled at Scituate; yeoman, took John Gardiner as apprentice, etc., naming children and wife Jane but adds that he married Ruth Bowen. There was a John Kendrick of Boston who married into some of our Hingham families, but there is no evidence he was related, either, though the surname was not common that early. Many Hingham people did come to Rehoboth as first proprietors, however.

Our George Kendrick, a single man, drew lot #19, and his estate was appraised at £50-00-00 in December 1643. He was #27 in the June 1644 division of the woodland, and participated in the 12 July 1644 covenant and divisions, the 9 June 1645 drawing of lots at the great plain, the 18 Feb 1646 division of meadows at the great plains, the 22 June 1658 drawing of meadows at the North Purchase and the 26 May 1668 drawing there also. He is still listed as an inhabitant in 1689. The family advanced £11-13-01, a very respectable amount, toward the costs of defraying King Phillips War in January 1676. It appears he was a quiet, hard-working man, not involved in politics.

The Plymouth Colony deed of 7 Mar 1645--George Kenricke of Scituate deeded to William Randall of Marshfield 35 acres in Scituate, obviously refers to the other man of the same name. However, "In 1681 a fifth town "great gate" was added to the common fence near George Kendrick's home lot, at a point which is now the intersection of Bourne and Hoyt Avenues, for on 4 May 1681 the selectmen 'granted Libwrtye to George Kendrick to fence in the heade of The Lane by his house. He then promised and Ingaged to make set up and Maintaine a greate Gate for carts and cattel to passe within one months tyme after the date hereto; and at the same tyme the Said George Kendrick disclaimes any partikiller right titell or interest in the said Lane and swamp or in the feede or hearbedge thereof.'" Originally there were four great gates at the main town crossroads, for the purpose of keeping the cattle in and not obstructing traffic, and these were constantly needing repair. This is the fifth, and it reveals where the family lived. George was not interested in using the "herbage" for feed, only in restraining traffic (or tresspassing?).

No genealogy has been written about this family group. Ruth and George had eight children, but three boys died young. Only Thomas survived. He was the oldest child, and married 17 June 1681 Mary Perrey. Ruth (1650-1707) m. 6 Feb. 1672 John Wilmarth. Sarah (1652-?) m. 3 April 1676 at Medfield or Mendon, Samuel Wheelock (1642-?) brother of her cousin Elizabeth Fuller's husband in 1678--the Wheelocks were a very influential family! Thiswas during the War which might help explain how diverse families came together. Mary (1659-?) m. 15 Apr 1685 Samuel Bliss, Elizabeth (1662-?) m. 28 May 1689 Jonah Palmer. Ruth (Bowen) Kendrick was buried at Rehoboth 31 October 1688. On 1 April 1691 George married second Jane (Damon)(Plympton) Hyde (16 -1694) widow of John Plympton of Dedham whom she m. in 1643 and of Nicholas Hyde whom she had married at Medfield in 1780. Perhaps he met her while visiting his daughter in Medfield.

BOWEN FAMILY

Obadiah Bowen baptized 1 Jan 1627 in Ilston, Wales by Rev. John Myles, later became a very active member of Myles' Baptist congregation in Swansea, MA, as did his Older sister Alice Wheaton and her family, having previously supported Rev. Obadiah Holmes. About 1650 he married Mary Clifton, daughter of Thomas Clifton (1606-1681) by an unrecorded first wife to whom he was married in England or Wales. Pope says, "Thomas Clifton, Weymouth, frm. 2 June 1646. Mr. James Parker was authorized by Gen. Ct. 28 (1) 1640 to m. Thomas Clifton and Mary Butterworth. Rem. to Rehoboth 1643, Juror 1647; prop., frm 7 June 1647." Mary was widow of Henry Butter worth whom she had married in 1625, and cannot have been Mary's mother but may well have been mother of John b. 1626, and of Samuel Butterworth who drew lot #19 in 1643 appraised at £50-00-00. Thomas Clifton drew lot #40, rated at £160-00-00, which later went to Stephen Payne Jr. After participating in other drawings through 1645, it appears the Cliftons left for Newport RI, perhaps to be near Holmes when he was forced to flee by the Puritans. If that is the case, no wonder Obadiah and Mary Clifton Bowen were such active Baptists!

Obadiah became a Rehoboth freeman in 1658 and received lot #22 in the 22 June 1658 drawing of meadowlands. His brother Richard did likewise, and their father also received land. He was one of those who drew land in the "Swanzey" settlement in 1668, and again in Nov. 1670 as did his son Obadiah Jr., John Butterworth, and other kin, He also paid Rehoboth taxes that year for land still owned there.

In Jan 176/7 he paid charges of £02-17-08 to help defray the costs of King Phillips War, in which many of his kin had been killed. As previously mentioned, he was an executor of his brother Thomas's will. He also received an inheritance from his brother William's estate.

Obadiah's will of 11 Dec 1708 was proved 10 Sep 1710. Mary had died 18 Feb. 1697. Reportedly they had the following children, though there are some discrepancies in birthdates and one wonders whether some of the last-mentioned are really theirs.

1. Obadiah Jr	18 Sep 1651	-11 Jul 1699	m.26 Jul 1697	Abigail Bullock
2. Mary	18 Jan 1652/3		30 May 1673	Isaac Allen
3. Sarah	06 May 1654			
4. Rev. Samuel	16 Jul 1659		26 May 1684	Eliz.(Wood)Wheaton
5. Joseph	26 Jun 1652			Elizabeth
6. Thomas	??07 Aug 1664	1743	17 Jan 1689	Thankful Mason
7. Hannah	??03 May 1665		10 Nov 1685	Timothy Brooks
8. Lydia	23 Apr 1666		04 Sep 1686	Joseph Mason
9. Marcy	18 Mar 1672			
10. Isaac	30 Sep 1674			
11. James	29 July 1680 — son of Obadiah Jr (thus grandson per VR Swansea (p9) (births))			
12. Hezekiah			1716	Elizabeth Condon

If Joseph #5 above was really John, perhaps he m. Elizabeth Rounds. Of the above, Rev. Samuel and his family moved to Bristol and then to New Jersey. Hannah and Timothy Brooks moved to Conaway NJ as well. Samuel became the progenitor of a long line of ministers and/or doctors in the then-frontier of SW NJ.

Did I use all this?

~~[illegible]~~

~~Not very much has been~~

I have not found a great deal more about Richard Bowen, Jr. than what is indicated on the second Pedigree chart. The list of 1643 proprietors shows that allotment # 35 worth £134 assigned to Edward Burnett, went to ~~[illegible]~~ our young ancestor. Perhaps he was ~~[illegible]~~ of age at that time, but if perhaps ~~[illegible]~~ that notation was added to the record later, ~~[illegible]~~. He married ~~[illegible]~~ ~~[illegible]~~ Esther Sutton in 1646. Their parents probably helped them acquire a house that expensive. On 22 [illegible] 1658 he and his brother Obadiah, his father, ~~[illegible]~~ Robert Fuller, and John Sutton drew lots for a division of meadows on the north side of town. Ten years later (26 May 1668) lots were drawn for meadow lands in the North Purchase. Richard Jr, Obadiah, and brother-in-law Robert and other Fullers and George Kendrick and "Mr Myles" and others were recipients

Richard Jr and many kin were listed as inhabitants 7 Jan 1689. ~~[illegible]~~ Obadiah owned property there but was no longer a resident. There were many orphans including little Fullers & Walkers. Town records of Freemen in ~~[illegible]~~ 1658 included Richard Bowen, Philip Walker, Robert Fuller, George & Thomas Kendrick, ~~[illegible]~~ Obadiah & Richard Bowen Jr and others. Richard ~~[illegible]~~ Jr (now Sr) is listed again in 1670.

Hoskins of Virginia + Related Families - C.W. Beaver (1971)

Re: Vass FHL US/CAN 929.2 B H 793 wc

"Ashtrib", home of
Mr. and Mrs. William Austin Trible
Tappahannock, Virginia

Copied "in case" Oct 1993. Don't really think this Vass family was our Vests. ygg

THE DESCENDANTS OF
COL. JOHN HOSKINS OF "MOUNT PLEASANT",
KING AND QUEEN COUNTY, VIRGINIA

6. Colonel John Hoskins of "Mount Pleasant", King and Queen Co. b. March 22, 1751 - d. November 19, 1813 was a captain in the 7th division of the Virginia Militia during the Revolutionary War, 1780 -81, and was in the Siege of Yorktown.[102] He lived at "Mount Pleasant" all of his life, kept fine horses and enlarged his plantation. By 1813 his estate consisted of 1,218 acres of land.[103] By 1794, John Hoskins was a gentleman justice of the county. He handled legal cases as a lawyer. On June 18, 1810 the court recorded that "John Hoskins brings into court a claim by account against the Commonwealth of Virginia for services in criminal prosecutions, which is examined by the court, allowed and awarded to be certified to the auditor of Public Accounts."[104] John Hoskins was very much interested in politics as is evidenced by the fact that in 1800 he was chosen by Republican members of the General Assembly to be on a committee to spread party information in King and Queen County.[105] On January 2, 1799, he was appointed to the most important political and social position in the county as Lieutenant Colonel Commander of the county militia. Since 1794, two other brothers had been captains, Samuel and William, and another brother Robert, a major. On July 29, 1800 John Hoskins, Richard Brooke and William Lyne were appointed by the legislature to be the commissioners in King and Queen to supervise the Presidential election, (Jefferson vs. Adams).[106]

Col. John Hoskins was further tied to the Jefferson faction in Virginia by the marriage of his daughter Elizabeth b. August 30, 1781, living in 1822, to Judge Spencer Roane (1762-1822). Judge Roane was Jefferson's chief supporter, Chief Justice of the Virginia Supreme Court of Appeals and the principal originator of States Rights political thought in America. His views preceded those so often quoted of John Taylor of Caroline, (See Appendix for a sketch on Judge Roane, also Waring and Upshaw families). John Hoskins' son, daughter and a granddaughter married into the Ruffin family. The Roanes, Ruffins and Hoskins were strong states rights people, probably being so influenced by their common link to Spencer Roane and through him to Jefferson.

Col. John Hoskins was married by 1778 to Elizabeth Chaney of Essex County, b. April 11, 1760 - d. November 1825.[107] She was a daughter of John Chaney who married Anna Brooke in 1758. Anna Brooke was a daughter of Peter Brooke and Anna Vass. Anna Vass was the daughter of John Vass, son of Vincent Vass who married in 1688 Anna, daughter of John Sharp. This John Sharp owned the land which later became known as "South Hill" and the Glebe tract. The Vass family inherited this land in lower Essex. They gave the land for

BOWEN FAMILY

Richard Bowen, Jr. was our ancestor, so I regret not finding more about him in the records and histories. Perhaps some records about him are mistaken for his father's or nephews of the same name. He was born probably at Kittle Hill on the Gower Peninsula of Glamorganshire, Wales, and brought to New England during the Great Migration by his parents. He reached manhood in old Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, and married Esther Sutton, daughter of John and Julian, featured in another section, Depending on whom you believe, they were married on 4 March 1646 (according to Pope and others) or on March 1655/6, which seems more likely for a number of reasons including birth of their first child within the year.

Possibly the original marriage record is faded or damaged--also some writers assume he was an original Dec. 1643 proprieter because on the record his name is written as having received Edward Bennet's lot #25 rated at £134-10-00, obviously a nice property. But Bennet was still there the next year when he received more land, and "Widow Bennet" received part of a division at the New Meadow in April 1647 though none later. (Pope says Edward Bennet, Weymouth frm. 25 May 1636. Rcd. arms from Mr. Pynchon 1636. Moved to Rehoboth, prop 1643, frm 4 June 1646 1645. Torrey does not mention any Rehoboth Bennetts.)

It seems significant that at a town meeting on 9 Feb 1655/6, in which Richard his father was re-elected as a selectman, he is for the first time styled Richard Bowen, senior and "at the same time Father Bowen was chosen moderator to see good order in our town meetings." Would that not suggest the son of the same name is getting himself a wife, and that the banns have been announced in church? Two years later Richard Jr. and his brother Obadiah were made freemen and were among those allowed to draw lots on 22 June 1658 for new meadows on the north side of town. The general rule in New England at the time was for a freeman to be a church member in good standing, usually with a wife and family and financial security. He and Esther were probably by now living in the former Bennet home. Others to draw meadowlands were both their fathers, and brothers-in-law George Kendrick, Robert Wheaton, Robert Fuller, plus more future extended family. The same for divisions in 26 May 1668 for divisions at the North Purchase in now Attleborough.

It was probably he who with John Peck witnessed a document wherein Abraham Martin appointed Peter Hune and Ens. Henry Smith his attorney on 26 May 1668. On the 26 Jan 1676/7 collection to defray Rehoboth's expenses during King Phillips War, he paid the sum of £04-04-08.

There is some confusion ~~as~~ to when Richard Junior was married. Some records or ~~reports~~ ~~[illegible]~~ reports indicate 1646, others March 1656. The eldest ~~that~~ known child, Sarah, was born "in 1656." Perhaps she came early, unless ~~[illegible]~~ she was daughter of an earlier wife who died. Richard Jr, you will recall, was a very early landholder, which ordinarily would lead one to believe he was married then. ~~[illegible]~~ Hester Sutton Brown, previously assumed to have been mother of all the children, died in 1675, the year King Phillip's War broke out, and ~~[illegible]~~ a heavy burden thus fell on Sarah, ~~then just~~ about 19 years old, in caring for the younger children. John, the youngest was just five, Mary 10, Richard 13 and Hester 15. Sarah ~~did not marry until~~ was ~~[illegible]~~ around 30 when she married widower Presume Abell

Sarah

Richard Brown^3 born 17 Jan 1662 d 17— m. 28 ~~7e~~/1690// Patience Pack

born BCT.

PEARIS FAMILY

Fur traders, of course, had to go where the product was to be had. That meant isolated areas, for animals fled or became depleted with even a little white settlement. Account books were maintained, but no enduring records of where individuals were--often they moved with the trade--nor whom all associates or competitors were. To supply the missing information, most histories of very early Kentucky and Southwest Virginia include details from the Journal of the renouned Dr. Thomas Walker, agent for the Loyal Land Company and his 1750 exploratory trip into Kentucky through the Cumberland Gap.*

Reading between the lines, one can perceive that for a long time before 1750 there must have been long hunters and other whites in Kentucky and far upper Tennessee, for how else would he have heard all those rumors of the fertile bluegrass, which he determined to check out for possible acquisition for his company? From the Journal writers have deduced that no Cherokees had actual homesites or towns north of what is now Tennessee, but that they did still hunt in the lower Valley of Virginia.

Walker knew that the Cumberland Gap was already being used to get through the mountains to that fertile land, but he had no idea how to find it (and back then people did go past the Long Island area to get there). He determined to find fur trader Samuel Stalnacker, whom he hoped to employ as a guide. Stalnacker was slightly elusive, for every so often he moved his abode closer to the Indians, but they finally discovered him erecting his latest log cabin. Walker and his crew tarried to give him a hand, but Stalnacker said he could not go with them because of a prior comitment with the Cherokees. However, he gave them good detailed instructions about how to reach the Gap, which they reached not long after without much difficulty.

Rare documents like Walker's Journal teach us a lot. First, we admire men like Stalnacker, who obviously understood the Cherokees' nature and knew that they held in contempt any white man who did not keep his word. Also, we see that the Upper Tennessee route to Cumberland Gap had already been used for some time by Indians, hunters, and traders prior to that time, and furs becoming increasingly depleted--why else would Stalnacker have had to keep moving? No trader was mentioned by name except the one with whom they had dealings, but this shows us that men like the then quite youthful and ambitious Richard Pearis had been there for quite a while, at first accompanied by others who showed him the ropes or gave financial support in the 1740's. Perhaps he, like Stalnacker, started out in Southwest Virginia and moved his trade increasingly toward his clientele. (Had he hunted early on Pearis Mountain??)

---

*The Wilderness Road by Robert L. Kinkead pages 43-53 has a very readable version of Walker's trip.

BOWEN FAMILY

Third Generation-- Children of Richard^2 and Esther Sutton Bowen

Sarah Bowen bca 1656 d 1703 m. 27 Dec 1686 Preserved Abell (1644-1724) his second marriage. The first was to Martha Redaway (1648-1686) on 27 Sep or Nov. 1667 at Rehoboth. 1689 list of Rehoboth residents calls him "Sgt. Preserved Able." Pope's Pioneers "Abel,Abell, Robert, Weymouth, frm. May 18, 1631; propr 1643 Wife Hoanna; ch. Abraham bur 14 (9) 1639, Mary b. 11 (2) 1642. Rem. to Rehoboth; propr. 1643; lic. to keep an ordinary, 1656. Inv. of his est. taken 9 Aug. 1663; admin. granted to widow Joanna. House and lands given to eldest son; a ciw and calf to dau. Mary; the widow to have her thirds; rest to other five children." The original proprietor's meeting of 1643, lot #28, shows "Job Lane, now Robert Abell's £50-00-00." I do not show him on the other lists. Torrey shows "Abell, Robert^1 (-Jun 1663) & Joanna ? (-1682+) m/2 William Hyde of Norwich CT 1667; b. 1639; Weymouth,Rehoboth. A Samuell Abell is shown as staying in Rehoboth, and Benjamin, Caled & Joshua in Norwich. More search would need to be done to learn more about Sarah's in-laws and children. (Torrey's cutoff date is 1700.)

Hester Bowen b. 20 Apr 1660 m. 20 July 1682 Samuel Millard (1658-1726). She died in 1699 and he m/2 Esther Jenckes (1664-) Providence; intention 1 Jun 1700, Rehoboth. Pope's Pioneers calling the family Miller, says"John Miller, Sr. was Rehoboth proprietor 1643, town officer 1648. Children: Hannah b. 23 Dec 1653, Sarah b. 15 Oct 1655, Samuel b. 5 Oct 1658, Joseph b. Aug 1660, Benjamin b. 22 Sep 1662. He was cousin and heir of Thomas Millard of Boston in 1669." The 1643 Rehoboth list shows him as #17 John Millar £69-10-00 and John Miller later though John Jr. is called Millard. John Miller Sr. & Robert Miller drew lots in the North Purchase in May. 1668. Torrey has a number of Millard and Miller marriages, hard to keep straight.'

Richard Bowen^3 b. 17 Jan 1662 m. 9 Jan. 1683 Mercy or Mary Titus b.1665. Pope's Pioneers shows "Titus or Tytus, Robert, husbandman, ae. 35 with wife Hannah ae. 21 and children John ae 8 and Edmund ae 5, came in the Hopewell in April 1635, settled at Boston. Had land adj. Mr. Blackstone 14 (10) 1635. Frm. 13 May 1640. Rem. to Weymouth. Rem. to Rehoboth ca 1644. Frm. Plymouth Colony 7 June 1650. Ch. Rec at Weymouth shows Abel b. 17 (1) 1640, Content b. 18 (1) 1643. From Torrey's marriages, it appears that the child Edmund went to Long Island . John settled in Rehoboth--his son md. Sarah Miller (2) & Lydia Redway (1) Abel also went to LI as did Content. Others are listed both in LI & Rehoboth. Robert's wife Hannah (1604-1679) as well as he evidently went to LI too, leaving John (& Joseph?) in Rehoboth. Undoubtedly John was Mercy's dad. Robert was among those who drew lots for the new meadow in Feb. 1746. Richard LeBaron Bowen Early Rehoboth V2 p.13, says he sold his Rehoboth property to Richard Jones of Nantasket and removed to Long Island NY in 1654. John Titus, his son was born in England in 1627 and buried in Rehoboth 16 Apr. 1689/90. Joseph Titus was evidently Mary (Titus) Bowen's brother. He was b. 17 Mar 1665 at Rehoboth & m. 19 Jan 1687/8 Martha Palmer. He was a wheelwright.

Mary Bowen b. 3 Oct 1666 is our ancestress. She was married 31 Dec 1687 in Rehoboth Philip.Walker. Jr. More details will be told about her in the Walker section. She died in an epidemic on 8 May 1694 as a young mother leaving behind three young children including our little Esther, named for her maternal grandmother.

BOWEN FAMILY

Third Generation, Continued.

John Bowen was born 15 March 1670 and died there 1 April 1748. He married 12 September 1700 Elizabeth Brockett. Pope's Pioneers mention Bracketts who lived much farther north in New England, but no Brocketts, since his work is confined to Massachusetts. Torrey shows five Brockett marriages (men) at Wallingford or New Haven CT. Since John's uncle had been a sometimes (Stonington) CT resident there must be some connection there. All I have learned about this John Bowen comes from Richard LeBaren Bowen, who mention's Uncle John's deposition regarding the settling of the colony line between Rhode Island and Massachussetts.

"15 June 1741--John Bowen of Rehoboth, otherwise called Seconk, yeoman, testified: I am 71 years of age and have lived in said town ever since I can remember; that the Indian name of Barrington was Naut and the Neck now called Seconk Neck was called by them Wauchemooquet; that the Island a little distant from the Mills belonging to Hyde and others in said Seconk was called by the name of Seconk and that the said Town derived its name from said Island, which word signifies Goose Island and derives its name from the plenty of Geese that used formerly to be there, which the Indians called Coonk from the noise they were wont to make, and they called the Falls above, Pawtucket Falls, and I am not acquainted further up the said River. I have heard by my parents, the first settlers and other ancient piople of Rehoboth, that they were not within Plimouth Patent, but had submitted themselves to that Government for their protection; but if the line should be run they of Rehoboth would fall into Rhode Island Government. (Signed) John Bowen. "
(R.L. Bowen quoted RI State Archives p. 14, John Carter Brown Library pp 1 104-5)

Thank you, Uncle John--that is a really beautiful piece of history!

pages of "Early Rehoboth" by Richard LeBaron Bowen

The sons of Maturin and Hannah (Pike) Bellew,—James, 26 years old, and Peter, 25 years old, are listed, but the name of their eldest brother, John, who was living in Providence and whose name is in a ten months earlier tax list, is not in the list. On 29 Oct. 1684 the Assembly allowed him £3 for cure of his wound received in the late Indian War, and it may well be that his war service secured him tax exemption. Of the four living sons of Widow Mary (Harris) Borden, daughter of William Harris, only the names of the eldest son, Richard, about 23 years old, and Joseph, the third son, 19 years old, appear in the list, while the names of the second son, William, about 20 years old, and Mercy (later Lieutenant), the fourth son, 16 years old, are missing. These few unanswered questions are sufficient to point out the possibilities of additions to this list.

Examining next the three earlier tax lists, one wonders why the names of Henry Fowler, Richard Prey, Thomas Cooper, Thomas Baker, and John Belloo appear in the rate list of 31 Oct. 1687 and ten months later are not in the list of August 1688, and why the last twelve names appearing in the rate list of 1 Sept. 1687 are thirty days later crossed off the list of 31 Oct. 1687, and ten months later disappear entirely from the rate list of August 1688.

The possibilities of making a more complete male inhabitant list of Providence for August 1688 are practically unlimited, for the early records contain a great deal about most of these men. With the revised alphabetical list of 1688 male inhabitants, printed in this chapter, as a starting point, it is first necessary to make a separation of the names into families, and then a study of each individual family, which will show missing names of fathers or sons. Then a check of these families with the known families will show any name not included in the list.

In any study of this tax list it must be constantly borne in mind that the inhabitants were opposed to Governor Andros' taxation, and that every expedient was probably employed to keep off this list. The subject is a fascinating study, and the writer will feel rewarded for his work if some one interested in the early history of the Town of Providence will continue on, from the point where he has left off, and construct a list as complete as additional research can make it.*

---

* The writer is indebted to Bradford Fuller Swan, Esquire, Assistant Editor, *Rhode Island Historical Society*, for carefully checking the proof pages of this chapter with the original records quoted.

This tells about the death of our ancestress, Mary (Bowen) Walker, grand daughter of Richard Bowen the Immigrant through her father Richard, Jr (also born in Wales) and his wife Esther Sutton. Mary's daughter, Esther Walker, married Isaac Averill. Esther + Isaac were ggg grandparents of William Wesley White, (Norma's grandfather) whose mother was Sarah Jane Averill.

See Walker file for more detail + many pages of "Early Rehoboth."

CHAPTER VII

AN EARLY EPIDEMIC

Research in the old Rehoboth, Massachusetts, records has brought to light a heretofore unknown epidemic,* thought at first to have been smallpox, but possibly one of the so-called "malignant" fevers,† that swept through the town in the month of May 1694, two hundred and forty-eight years ago. Out of the thirty-five people in seven families, sudden death claimed the lives of ten, four out of twelve in the Perrin family, and four out of the families of its relatives. When this plague had finally ceased its ravages there were left three widowers, three widows, six fatherless children, seven motherless children and six orphans. Of a total of fourteen deaths recorded in Rehoboth for that year, one occurred before the May epidemic, and only three in the seven months following.

This virulent epidemic occurred fifty-one years after the 1643 settlement of Seekonk, later called Rehoboth. No mention of it is made in any of the town or church ‡ records, and only a grouping of the deaths by years has brought to light this two and a half century old catastrophe, the severity of which is better understood when it is known that in the year before, 1693, the town had only one recorded death, that of Abraham² Perrin's wife, Sarah, and in the year following the epidemic, 1695, a total of only four deaths, which was about the normal yearly death rate.

The frontispiece in this book shows the house, now (1944) standing, of Philip² Walker whose twenty-eight-year-old wife Mary,³ daughter of Richard² and Ester² (Sutton) Bowen, was the third victim in this epidemic, leaving her husband with three small children, ranging in age from six years to nine months.

The writer is unable to find mention of any other nearby 1694 epidemic. In the town of Providence, Rehoboth's nearest neighbor, there were two recorded deaths in April; none in May; one in

---

* In the early days the country was periodically swept by epidemics that were "appalling in their virulence and merciless fatality". Smallpox was a dreaded visitor and early fell upon the inhabitants of the colony of Rhode Island, especially those of Newport and Providence, and many died.

† Another disease which was called by such names as "Milignant fever", "black vomit" and "yellow fever" raged in 1690/1 with great violence in the colony of Rhode Island, especially at Newport where the assembly, then in session, did little business and private trade transactions were practically suspended.

Dr. Cotton Mather preaching at Boston in 1698 said that "the smallpox had four times been a great plague upon us. In one twelve months about 1,000 of our neighbors had one way or other been carried into their long home".

Samuel Sewall in his Diary mentions an epidemic of "Fleet-Fever" [probably yellow fever] at Boston in July 1693 [5 *Mass. Hist. Col.*, vol. V, p. 380].

John Josselyn, writing in his book "An account of two voyages to New England", 1674, speaks of arriving in Boston in 1671 and finding "the inhabitants exceeding afflicted with griping of the guts, and Feaver, and Ague, and bloody Flux". Late in the century, from 1691 to 1693, there was an epidemic of yellow fever in Boston [*A Brief History of Medicine in Massachusetts*, by Henry R. Viets, M.D., 1930].

‡ Rev. Thomas Greenwood, ordained pastor of the Church of Christ at Rehoboth 24 Oct. 1694, kept some records but makes no mention of this epidemic.

July; three in November; and one in December, a total of seven deaths recorded for the year 1694.

In the town of Bristol, now in Rhode Island, with which the Rehoboth people had considerable connection, there were three deaths in 1694, one each in July, August, and December, but none in May.

The only clue as to the nature of this 1694 sickness is contained in the bill of charges,[*] dated 7 May 1695, of Thomas Read and Samuel^3 Walker, executors for the estate of their brother-in-law Abraham^2 Perrin, where appear the following items:

> "Paid for two girls, tending and diet, one five weeks, the other 18 weeks, £2/06."
>
> "For diet and tending the youngest child [Ruth] one year until the 25th of May 1695, £7/00."

Dr. Harold Bowditch says that "on the evidence of the length of time the two Perrin girls were sick, this epidemic was consistent with typhoid fever; that typhus fever and typhoid fever were not differentiated until many years later; that diseases were called by their most prominent symptoms, and that we shall not be able to identify the causes from any of the old records. Typhoid, too, has complications which may last, such as phlebitis (inflammation of a vein) and especially neuritis with resulting paralysis which may last as long as two years—consistent with the long care which had to be given to little Ruth Perrin.

"Further, the fact that so many connected individuals were infected suggests a dietary cause and infected backhouses, clothes, etc. With no knowledge of sterilization, ordinary washing would be useless. With relatives and neighbors running in and out, sharing the family's meals, and means of their ultimate disposal, it is no wonder (if it was typhoid) that one after another fell victims."

Dr. Ernest Caulfield, of Hartford, Conn., who has spent fifteen years in research on Colonial Epidemics, says that on the available evidence he could not make an exact diagnosis of this epidemic, and without more time for study would not even suggest one. He makes the following comments, which he says, may, or may not, be helpful:

"There was a severe epidemic in Stonington, Connecticut (which is very near the Rhode Island boundary), during March, 1694, and it was probably influenza. There is a good account of it in the REGISTER, vol. XLIX (1895), p. 285. I do not believe the Rehoboth deaths were caused by dysentery (or "Flux") because of the season and the age distribution of deaths (mostly adults). I am certain that it was not diphtheria, or measles or any of the childhood epidemic diseases. It could have been "spotted fever", or meningitis, but we have no records of that disease in this country before 1800. It might have been a typhoid fever epidemic, though I doubt if all the deaths would have occurred in May had typhoid fever been the cause".

"I am not certain that the items concerning the care of the children for long periods of time necessarily mean that they were sick. I gather that they were left without parents and the expenses might have been for ordinary care."

"Taking everything into consideration, my guess is that it was smallpox or influenza. Had it been a severe type of influenza it is a little difficult to understand why it was limited to a small group. A lot would depend upon the total population of the town at that time. The colonists naturally were terribly afraid of smallpox and strict precautions could explain the limitation of the epidemic."

Of course, it must be remembered that in the early days these virulent plagues were usually so fatal (especially smallpox) and so dreaded by the inhabitants that the relatives were generally the only people who would go near a stricken family, as is so plainly illustrated in this Rehoboth epidemic.

On the matter of nursing, nothing is known except the three items in the executors' bill:[*]

> "To Leftenant [Samuel^3] Walker for a week's work tending the Sicke, 12s."
>
> "Paid to others for help tending the sicke, 11s."
>
> "For sugar for the sicke . . . & veale for the Sicke."

Perhaps the "veale" for the sick was for making jelly similar to our calf's foot.

The item in the executors' bill,[*] "paid for two coffins & digging two graves, 11s, 7d"—two coffins and two graves for three people, is easily explainable. Thirteen-year-old daughter Elizabeth^3 died on the 14th of May, and before she could be buried her father Abraham^2 died, and they were both put in the same coffin and buried in the same grave.[†] Son Abraham,^{3} Jr., was buried five days later.

The only mention in the records of medical attendance in this epidemic is the item in Widow Perrin's account[‡] in the settlement of her husband John^3's estate, "to the Doctor for phisicke for her husband, £1/00", and item in the account[§] of the executors of the estate of Abraham,^{2} 7 May 1695, "to the doctors for phisicke for the sicke, 16s".

It would seem that the charges for "phisicke" were a little out of proportion in the two estates; £1/00 for the estate with one death and 16s for the estate with four deaths.

In the early days of Rehoboth there was so much intercourse between that town and its nearest neighbor, the Town of Providence, and with parts of Rhode Island, that in order to understand better the medical situation in Rehoboth it is necessary to review briefly the known doctors in the surrounding territory.

---

[*] *Post*, p. 117.

[*] *Post*, p. 117.

[†] This was a quick, simple burial. We know that in smallpox cases interments were immediately made in a nearby field, and never in the regular cemetery. In Rehoboth, so late as 1778, James Wheaton's wife, Sarah, died of smallpox on 29 June, and he died on 8 July, nine days later. Both were buried on their own farm in what is now a patch of pine scrub, easterly of their house, and rough field stones mark the graves. In Burial Hill Cemetery, about two miles away, are two slate stones erected to their memory. These stones say that they died of smallpox, which is the only knowledge we have of what may perhaps have been another unrecorded epidemic.

[‡] *Post*, p. 119.

[§] *Ibid.*, p. 119.

Of course, the first mention of doctoring was in 1623 when Edward Winslow journeyed from Plymouth to Sowams, later a ward of Rehoboth, and cured the sick Massasoit.

The earliest mention of a doctor in the Town of Providence was in 1638 when Thomas James, physician, went over into Seekonk, with Roger Williams, to attend the Narragansett Indian murdered by Arthur Peach of Plymouth. Dr. John Clarke was at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in 1638, and moved to Newport the following year. "John Green, Surgeon", Roger Williams's contemporary, removed to Warwick, R. I., in 1643. Robert Jeffries, gentleman, was authorized at Newport in 1641 "to exercise the functions of Chirurgerie". In 1648 Roger Williams wrote to John Winthrop of Connecticut for advice and medicine.

In 1663 Dr. Samuel^{2} Fuller of Plymouth negotiated with the town of Rehoboth to settle there as physician, but for some unknown reason never came. On 1 Mar. 1664 the Rhode Island General Assembly licensed Capt. John Cranston, of Newport, "Doctor of phissick & Churrurgery" to practice throughout the whole colony. In 1668 Richard Smith of Wickford, R. I., was writing to John Winthrop of Connecticut for advice and medicine.

At Rehoboth 16 June 1676, "ther was an agreement made with Docter Dunster by the towne. The said docter promising to be helpful to the Towne for three months as a chyurgen: Promising to do his best indevor with the help of God to cure any of our towne y^{t} may be wonded by the enemye or come to be lame or hurt upon the towne or countrye service during the said three months beginning at the date hear of. The Towne ingaging to him three pounds in money to procure instruments and medeciments for healing and also of an accomodation of a suitable place and his diet and twenty shillings a month" [*Rehoboth Town Meetings*, Book II, p. 15].

Rev. Samuel Lee, pastor of the church at Bristol, in a letter * "June 25, 1690 at Mount Hope" to Dr. Nehemiah Grew, London, speaks of "one Mr. Arnold a practitioner in Physick of good request in Rhode Island". This was beyond doubt Caleb Arnold of Portsmouth, R. I., son of Gov. Benedict Arnold. There was also James^{2} Tallman of Portsmouth who was practicing "Physic" previous to the end of the seventeenth century, and after.

For more than twenty-five years after King Philip's War Dr. Richard^{3} Bowen † was located at Rehoboth and was the only resident physician taking care of the sick in that town and in nearby Providence. For a period of time well into the eighteenth century the Town of Providence was dependent on Rehoboth for its doctors. Dr. Bowen, then thirty-five years old, was undoubtedly the attending physician in this 1694 epidemic.

) grandson (Richard 3) Thomas 2 Richard 1

We know from the probate records * that he attended Gilbert Brooks who died on the 30th of June the following year.

If additional help was required in the epidemic emergency Dr. Bowen might reasonably have been expected to call in his stepfather, Dr. Samuel^{2} Fuller, who was living at Middleborough, seventeen miles away, or call for help from Rhode Island. The records mention only two other doctors as being in Rehoboth anywhere near this time.

A Doctor Hanson is mentioned in 1692/3 as having been "paid two bushels of corn, 4s 6d", by the town of Rehoboth on the order of the Selectmen. For what service is not stated. So far as known this is the only mention of him in the records. Nothing more is known of him.

John Green, mariner, of Newport, R. I., made his will † at Rehoboth, 4 Sept. 1694. He calls Jeremiah Child ‡ [wife Martha] his landlord. Dr. James Collins [who had a wife Elizabeth] of Boston wrote the will "from the mouth of Mr. John Green before Nicholas Peck, Esq & his wife and Mrs. Childs". Green "was suddenly taken in a fitt" and died before he could sign the will. Who this Dr. James Collins was is not known to the writer. He was certainly in Rehoboth, perhaps to attend Green. In the will

bequests are made to Dr. Collins and to a Dr. William Hughes (spelled also Hues) of Boston, who later signed for his bequest by making his mark H.

---

* *The Colonial Soc. of Mass.*, vol. XIV (1912), p. 144.

† In 1663/4 when Dr. Richard^{3} Bowen was about three years of age his father Thomas^{2} (*Richard*^{1}) died leaving his wife Elizabeth a widow with Richard the only child. She married secondly, at Middleborough, Mass., about 1665, Rev. and Dr. Samuel^{2} Fuller, son of Dr. Samuel^{1} Fuller of Plymouth who was one of the signers of the "Mayflower" compact in 1620, and New England's earliest physician. She died at Plympton, Mass., 11 Nov. 1713.

Samuel^{2} Fuller, born at Plymouth about 1625, died at Middleborough 17 Aug. 1695 in his 71st year, was one of the 26 original proprietors of Middleborough, which is about 17 miles east of Rehoboth. In 1676 the Indians burned his home at Middleborough, and he removed to Plymouth, returning after the war was over. Although educated for the ministry, he practiced medicine, as did most ministers; perhaps best exemplified by Rev. and Dr. John Clarke of Newport, R. I. In 1663 he negotiated with the town of Rehoboth to settle there as doctor, but never came. His mother [Bridget Fuller] was also asked to come as mid-wife. He was the first minister at Middleborough and preached there for several years although he was not ordained until 1694. By his biographers he is called a sober, grave, industrious, enlightened and self-denying man. When he married for the second time he had four motherless children ranging from 9 down to about 2 years of age. When the first child Elizabeth, by his second wife, was born in 1666, the last child by his first wife was 3 years old.

When Thomas^{2} Bowen returned to Rehoboth from New London, Conn., in December 1662, he was a very sick man, having been under the medical care of Gov. John Winthrop. As there was no resident doctor located at Rehoboth at that time it is possible that Dr. Fuller of Middleborough attended him, and became acquainted with Elizabeth Bowen whom he afterwards married.

Thomas^{2} Bowen in his will proved in February 1664 directed that his wife Elizabeth should bring up his son Richard "in the feare of the Lord and teach him to write and read". The son probably obtained his medical knowledge from his stepfather Dr. Fuller. Later in King Philip's War, with the shortage of medical skill, young Dr. Bowen had plenty of opportunity to practice.

In 1676 most of the inhabitants were driven from Rehoboth and Providence by the Indians who had burned their houses. In three or four years after the end of the war most of the inhabitants returned, and Dr. Richard^{3} Bowen, who was the first settled physician in Rehoboth, attended the sick there and in the nearby Town of Providence, being the only recorded physician up to the early seventeen hundreds.

Dr. Richard^{3} Bowen, who was the progenitor of a long line of famous Bowen doctors, covering a period of more than 150 years, educated two of his four sons to the profession. Col. and Dr. Thomas^{4} Bowen, born in 1689, practiced in Rehoboth with his father and was 48 years old when Dr. Richard^{3} died. He had three sons, one of whom, Ephraim,^{4} lived in Providence with his uncle, Dr. Jabez,^{4} from the age of 9; studied medicine with him and became a doctor. He had six sons, two of whom, William^{5} and Pardon^{5} Bowen, became noted physicians in Providence and vicinity.

The second son, Dr. Jabez,^{4} born in 1696, 41 years old when his father Dr. Richard^{3} died, had a large practice in Rehoboth and nearby Providence, where he moved to the home lot of Roger Williams, a few rods north of St. John's Church, corner of North Main and Bowen Streets. Bowen Street was named after him. The house is still [1942] standing. He had a doctor son who succeeded him and a doctor grandson who died in Glocester, R. I.

For additional on 4th and 5th generation Bowen doctors see *Sketches of R. I. Physicians*, by Usher Parsons, M.D., 1859.

* *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. I, p. 153.

† *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. I, pp. 103–4.

‡ He ran a tavern. Judge Samuel Sewall in his diary says: "13 Sept. 1697—Lodged at Child's, Rehoboth" [5 *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, vol. V, p. 459].

After the turn of the century there are records of Rehoboth people sending out of the town for medical skill, as shown on 23 Feb. 1721/2 in the account * of the estate of Joseph[3] Peck, Rehoboth—"to Docter Tolman, 10s". This was undoubtedly James[2] Tallman (Peter[1]), born at Portsmouth, R. I., about 1668, died there in 1724, calling himself in his will, "doctor of Physic". The will of Thomas Barnes of Providence, 24 Sept. 1706, refers "Especially to my careful & kind Doctor Mr. James Tallman".

On 18 Mar. 1728/9 the account of Jacob Ormsbee, administrator of the estate of his sister Esther Redway,† Rehoboth, deceased, lists the charges: "to Doctor Sweeting, 23s; to Doctor Walbridge, 48s; to one Jorney to Norridge [Norwich] to fetch Doct. Walbridge £2/08; to keeping the doctor and his horse one week, 12s". This was probably Henry[2] Sweeting of Attleboro, son of Mr. Henry[1] Sweeting of Rehoboth. We do know that he was called doctor in 1743.

The first epidemic death in May was that of the wife of Benjamin Allen who had just moved into the town from Salisbury, Massachusetts. Just where he lived we do not know. We do know, however, that the focal center of this epidemic was in the northwest corner of the "ring of the greene" ‡ where George Kendrick, on the west, and John[2] and Abraham[2] Perrin lived side by side on three home lots on the north side of what is now Hoyt Avenue, between the present Bourne Avenue and the Wannamoisett Country Club house, in the town of East Providence [Rumford], R. I. In these three houses occurred six of the ten epidemic deaths, four in the house of Abraham Perrin, one in John Perrin's, and one in George Kendrick's.

← (Ruth Bowen's husband)

Philip[2] Walker's house § was about a mile southwest of the "ring of the greene". Ephraim Hunt's house was about three-quarters of a mile southeast on the west side of the "ring of the greene" on what is now called Greenwood Avenue. Ensign Thomas Willmarth lived on this same street about two hundred yards south of him. This section of the "ring" is now called "East Providence Centre".

An analysis of the Rehoboth deaths for the year 1694 shows that the first one was that of Isabell Newsome, the 3-day-old daughter

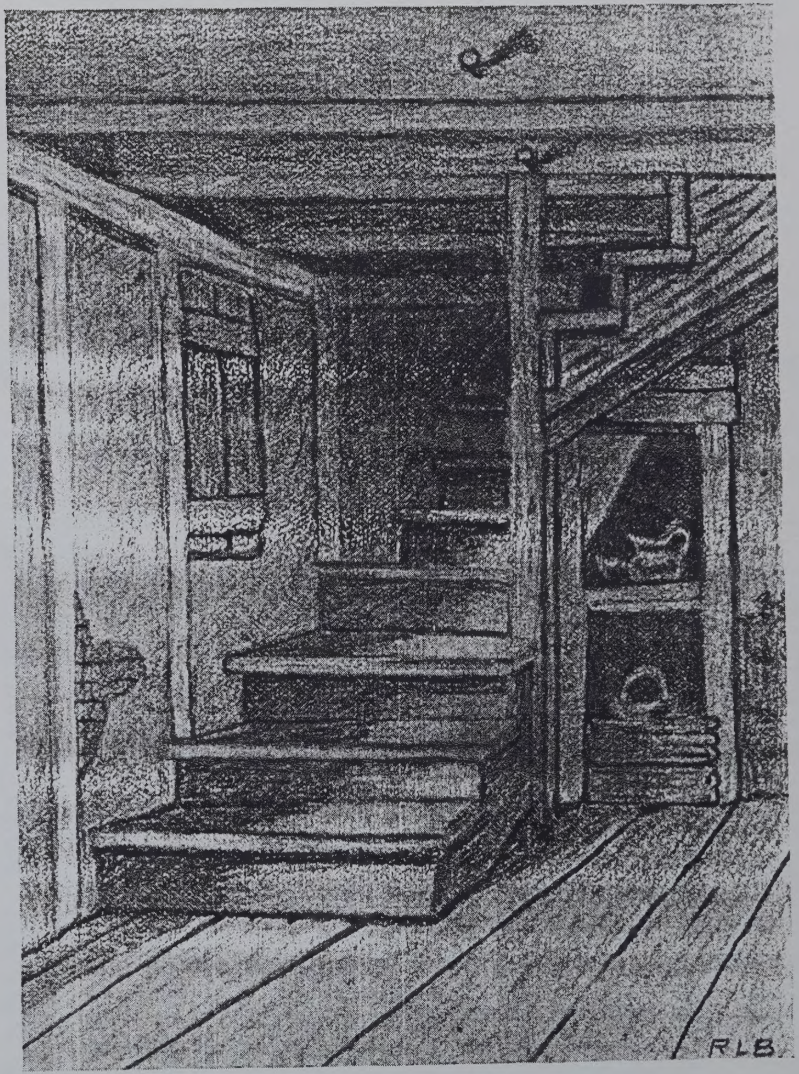
---

* *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. IV, p. 40.

† *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. VI, p. 219.

‡ The home lots were first laid out fronting a rectangle which extended northeast and southwest about half a mile wide by about three-quarters of a mile long, the total distance around being two and seven-tenths miles. Each settler fenced the front of his home lot, and this fence extended around the rectangle, which was called the "ring of the greene", or common. The settlers' houses stood on their "home lots" back of the fence, and the "greene" or common in front of the houses and fence was the common pasture for cattle. The first church stood in the center of the green, about seventy-five yards from where the present Newman Congregational Church now stands.

§ Philip[2] Walker's house was burned by the Indians in King Philip's War. After the war he started to rebuild his house on the foundations of the old one, but died in 1679 before the new house was finished. The same year, two hundred and sixty-five years ago, the Plymouth Court gave his widow Jane permission to finish the house at the expense of the estate, so we know the documented history of this house, which is still [1944] standing. The house has never been out of the possession of the family and is still occupied by descendants in the tenth generation. This is the oldest surviving house in old Rehoboth, and was built thirty-six years after the settlement of Seekonk in 1643.



The original attic staircase in the old Philip Walker house, home of Mary (Bowen) Walker who died on 8 May 1694 during the Rehoboth Epidemic. From a pencil sketch made by the author in 1892. This ancient staircase was removed in 1899 to provide space for a bathroom. See pages 106 and 107.

V2

of their claims. The testimony of the various witnesses was sworn to under oath and signed. In this mass of evidence are the depositions of three Rehoboth men who testify that there was a little island in the salt water Cove northwest of the Mill River Falls called by the Indians *Seaconk*, and by the English *Goose Island*, from which the town of Seekonk, now called Rehoboth, derived its name.

This is the testimony of John^3 Bowen whose father and grandfather were proprietors of the Seekonk settlement in 1643, and of Isaac^3 Bucklin and John^3 Butterworth whose grandfathers were also early settlers. Unnoticed by historians, these records, here printed for the first time, give us the long-sought-for evidence establishing location-data for the Indian place-name Seekonk; a location that would not have been guessed, and if guessed would not have been accepted.

15 June 1741—Isaac Bucklin [*] of Seaconk, otherwise Rehoboth, yeoman, testified: I am in the 67th year of my age and was born in Rehoboth and have generally lived there ever since I was a child. The place now called Barrington was by the Indians called *Naut;*[†] that now called Seaconk Neck was called by the Indians *Wachemoket;* that there is a little Island below Seaconk or Rehoboth Mill now belonging to one Hide & others that was called by the Indians Seaconk, which in English is Goose-Island, from which the town of Seaconk, now Rehoboth, took its name; that the Falls higher up the River of Patucket were called *Poountucket*, now Pawtucket Falls; that there is a place about half a mile to the Eastward of said Falls called by the Indians *Papachemanesuck;* that there is a run of water still higher up said River, now called Abbot's Run, that was called by the Indians *Montequasquequish;* that the next place above the said Run was by the Indians called *Sanechadesonet* near to which one Solomon Smith and the Bartletts now live; and that there is a pond near it which I have seen. I never heard the lands described or called by the general name of *Pochenoket* Country. King Philip's men dwelt on these lands and they were called *Wamponeugs*. I have heard my Father and other first settlers of Seaconk say that they of Seaconk were not under Plimouth Government and that they submitted themselves to that Government because they would be under some Government, and that they did not count themselves within the bounds of Plymouth Patent.

Mark
Isaac F Bucklin's

Witness Mr. Robinson Clerk.

[*Proceedings of the Commissioners for Settling the Eastern Boundary between Rhode Island and the Massachusetts Bay* (1741), *John Carter Brown Library* copy, pp. 102, 3; *R. I. State Archives* copy, pp. 62, 3.]

15 June 1741—John Butterworth[‡] of Rehoboth, house carpenter, testified: I am in the 63rd year of my age and have lived in Rehoboth all my daies. That now called Barrington was by the Indians called *Naut*, and the upper part of it where Mr. Brown now lives was called *Wanemoiset*, and that now called Seconk Neck was by the Indians called *Wachemoket* (where *Tias* one of King Philip's captains lived) and is so called on record at Seconk, and goes up to Seconk Mill belonging to Hide and others; and that there is a small Island about twenty [330 feet] or thirty rods [495 feet] from said Mill which was called Seconk, from which the town of Seconk, now called Rehoboth, derives its name of Seconk; but I know no other Indian name of any particular places 'til I come to *Pautucket* now called *Pautucket Falls*, nor above the Falls till I come to *Sanacheteconet*, and that the Pond so called lies about one mile and a quarter or half, east from Pautucket River, and there are Indian Fields lying West of said Pond, between it and Pautucket River, and said place extends up to the reputed South Line of the Massachusetts as I have heard say. The Indians who dwelt on these lands were called *Wampanoougs*, and were King Philip's subjects, which I was informed of by one Mr. Dogget who was an Interpreter in the Indian tongue. Seconk was under Plimouth Government but not within Plimouth Patent, as Mr. Dogget and others told me; and I have heard my Grandfather say that he questioned the Seconk People's being within the limits of said Patent, and that they had put themselves under that Government for refuge. I have always heard that Pautucket River called Blackstones River from *Wonsocket Falls* down to the Ferry and so on to *Naut*, were the parting boundaries between *Mauntomy* the Narragansett Sachem and King Philip, and that *Wonsocket Falls* are four or five miles above Clark's Furnace in *Sanacheteconet* up Paukucket River. The mouth of the Providence River is at the old Ferry Point on the East side and *Tocwodden* Point which is a few rods to the Northward of Darling's Ship-yard on the West side. (Signed) John Butterworth

[*Ibid., John Carter Brown Library*, pp. 106, 7, 8; *R. I. State Archives*, pp. 65, 6.]

15 June 1741—John Bowen [*] of Rehoboth, otherwise called Seconk, yeoman, testified: I am 71 years of age and have lived in said town ever since I can remember; that the Indian name of Barrington was *Naut*, and the Neck now called Seconk Neck was called by them *Wauchemooquet;* that the Island a little distant from the Mills belonging to Hyde and others in said Seconk was called by the name of Seconk and that the said Town derived its name from said Island, which word signifies Goose Island and derived its name from the plenty of Geese that used formerly to be there, which the Indians called Coonk from the noise they were wont to make, and they called the Falls above, *Pawtucket Falls*, and I am not acquainted further up the said River. I have heard by my parents, the first settlers and other ancient people of Rehoboth, that they were not within Plimouth Patent, but had submitted themselves to that Government for their protection; but if the line should be run they of Rehoboth would fall into Rhode Island Government.

(Signed) John Bowen

[*Ibid., John Carter Brown Library*, pp. 104, 5; *R. I. State Archives*, p. 64.]

16 June 1741—Joseph Titus[†] of Rehoboth, wheelwright, testified: I am 76 years of age and have lived in Rehoboth all my daies . . . I knew very

---

27 Oct. 1845 from the original record preserved in the State Paper Office, London, America No. 378. Robert Lemon, Chief Clerk in his Majesty's State Paper Office, made the copy by special permission.

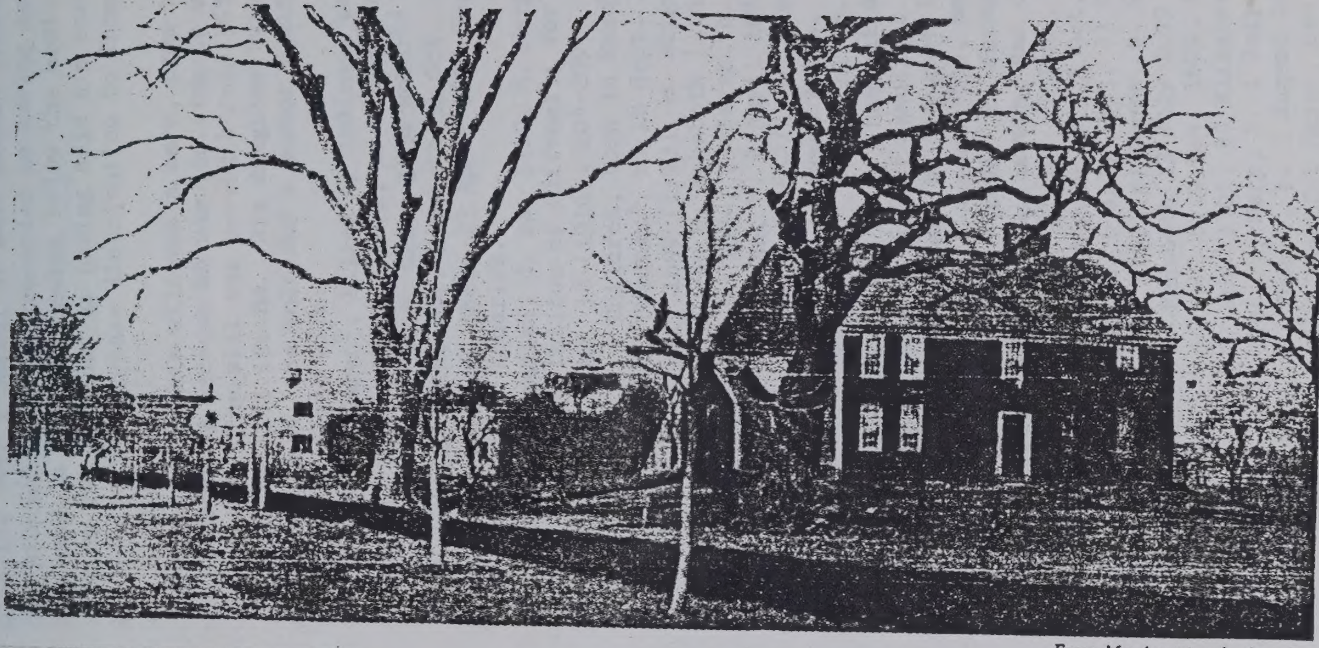
[*] ISAAC^3 BUCKLIN (*Joseph,^{2} William^1*), yeoman, b. at Rehoboth 31 Jan. 1672/3; m. at Rehoboth 3 Jan. 1698/9, Mary Marsh. His father, Joseph^2 Bucklin, d. at Rehoboth 28 Mar. 1718; m. at Rehoboth, 5 Nov. 1659, Deborah Allen, d. there 1 Apr. 1720. His grandfather, William^1 Bucklin, was buried at Rehoboth 1 Sept. 1683; m. in England, Mary Bosworth, buried at Rehoboth 29 July 1687, dau. of Edward and Mary Bosworth. William^1 Bucklin and his family moved from Hingham to Rehoboth between 22 Sept. 1652 and 1 Feb. 1654/5.

[†] This is a new Indian name for Barrington, here first printed.

[‡] JOHN^3 BUTTERWORTH (*John,^{2} John^1*), house carpenter, b. at Rehoboth 7 May 1679, d. 11 Dec. 1771, in 93rd year; m. at Rehoboth 1 Mar. 1710/11 Mary^4 Peck (the counterfeiter), b. at Rehoboth 27 July 1686, d. there 7 Feb. 1775, in her 89th year, dau. of Joseph^3 and Elizabeth^3 (Smith) Peck. His father, Capt. John^2 Butterworth, b. at Rehoboth 8 Sept. 1651, d. there 20 Mar. 1730/1; m. at Rehoboth 4 Sept. 1674, Hannah^2 Wheaton, b. at Rehoboth 18 Sept. 1654, d. there 7 Oct. 1724, dau. of Robert^1 and Alice^2 (Bowen) Wheaton. His grandfather, John^1 Butterworth, b. probably in England about 1624; d. at Bristol, Mass., in 1708; m. about 1650, Sarah ———. The first mention of John^1 Butterworth found in the Rehoboth records is on 11 Jan. 1648/9 when at a town meeting he was voted land.

[*] JOHN^3 BOWEN (*Richard,^{2} Richard^1*), yeoman, b. at Rehoboth 15 Mar. 16[70]; d. there 1 Apr. 1748; m. at Rehoboth 12 Sept. 1700, Elizabeth Brockett. His father, Richard^2 Bowen, was b. probably about 1632; d. about 1722/3; m. (1) 4 Mar. 1656, Ester Sutton, buried at Rehoboth 6 Nov. 1688, probably dau. of John Sutton; m. (2) 20 Jan. 1690, Martha (Allen) Sabin, widow of William Sabin. His grandfather Richard^1 Bowen was buried at Rehoboth 4 Feb. 1674; m. (2) at Hingham, Mass.,—Nov. 1648, Elizabeth (———) Marsh, buried at Rehoboth —— 1575, widow of George Marsh who d. at Hingham 2 July 1647. Both father and grandfather were original proprietors of Seekonk in 1643.

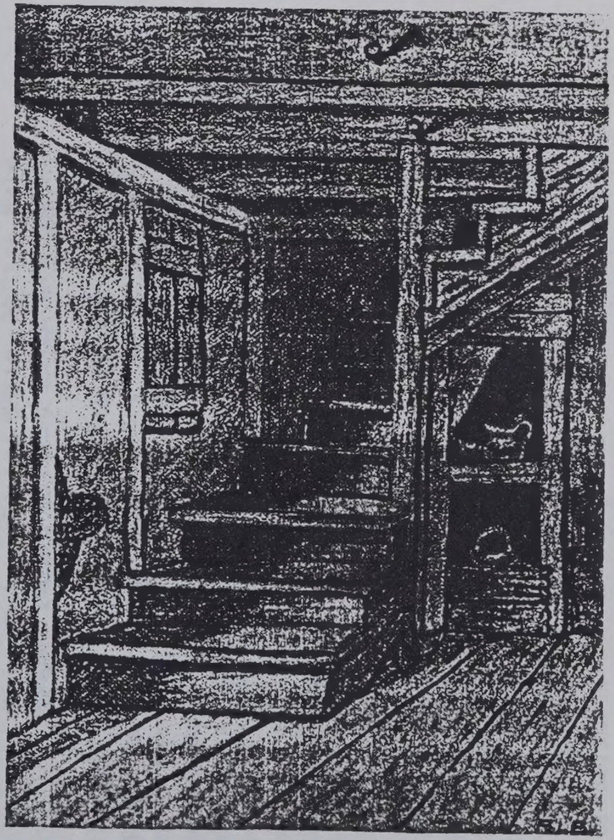
[†] JOSEPH^3 TITUS (*John,^{2} Robert^1*), wheelwright, b. at Rehoboth 17 Mar. 1665; m. at Rehoboth 19 Jan. 1687/8, Martha Palmer. His father, John^2 Titus, was b. in England about 1627 and was buried at Rehoboth 16 Apr. 1689/90. He had a home lot, formerly Mathew Pratt's, granted him at Rehoboth 28 June 1647. His grandfather, Robert^1 Titus, sold his Rehoboth property to Robert Jones of Nantasket and removed to Long Island, N. Y., in 1654.



From My Ancestors in America.

Deacon Philip Walker's house, corner of Massasoit Ave. & North Broadway, E. Providence RI, as it appeared in 1890. The house is still standing, and still in the possession of descendants. The right hand half is the original house built by Deacon Walker in 1679; the left hand half was added about a hundred years later. This is the oldest surviving house in Old Rehoboth, built 36 years after the settlement of Seekonk in 1643.

Right- original attic staircase in the old Philip Walker house, home of Mary (Bowen) Walker who died in the epidemic on 8 May 1694. (Pencil sketch-R.L. Bowen, 1892) The ancient staircase was removed in 1899 to provide space for a bathroom.



Carl Boyer III (1975 Vers'n) "Ancestral Lines"

starts here ↘

§ § §

(39)

BOWEN

A number of published works present data concerning the ancestry of Richard[1] Bowen, but this compiler has not been able to substantiate (or refute) any of the material with references to primary materials.

Three generations of Welsh ancestry are given by MacKenzie [*Col. Families of U. S.*, 3:360], the first being that of Sir James Bowen, whose wife, Mary Hale, was a daughter of Sir John and Margaret Hale. Mary Hale's maternal grandfather was given as Thomas ap Griffith ap Nicholas. Sir James and Mary (Hale) Bowen allegedly had a son, Mathias Bowen, who married Mary Phillips, daughter of John Phillips of Pictou Castle. Their alleged son, James Bowen, married Eleanor Griffith, daughter of John Griffith, Esq., of Richley, and granddaughter of William Griffith, Penrhyn Knight.

John Barber White stated that Obadiah[2] Bowen, below, was born in Swansea, Wales, 1 Sept. 1627. The original manuscript (as well as a negative photostat copy) of the records of the first Baptist Church at Ilston, Swansea, Wales, kept by John Myles, the pastor, in the Brown University library,

See Third Edition (in this file) for update!!!

might shed some light on this question, although the card in the catalog indicates the record dates only from 1 August 1649. The book includes Reverend Myles' records in Swansea, Plymouth Colony, to 1669.

Another Bowen source stated that Richard's father, Sir James Bowen, was living in Pembrokeshire, in Llwyngwair, in 1591. It further outlines pedigrees from the Vaughan, Dalton, Stradling and Gamage families, with descent from, among others, John of Gaunt and King Edward III. It said further that a coat of arms on the tombstone of Richard^{1} Bowen is further proof of the connection. Having not seen this stone the compiler must remain skeptical.

1. RICHARD^{1} BOWEN, according to tradition born in Wales, probably shortly after 1600, died in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, and was buried there 4 Feb. 1674/5 [1:52].

It is said his first wife was named Ann. He married second, in Hingham, Massachusetts, in Nov. 1648, Mrs. Elizabeth Marsh, who was buried in Rehoboth in 1675. She was the widow of George Marsh, who died in Hingham 2 July 1647 [Bowen, 2:13].

Apparently he was in Salem and Boston before going to Rehoboth [J. B. White], where he was listed as a proprietor in 1643 and as freeman 4 June 1645. Rehoboth's first Board of Selectmen chosen 9 Dec. 1644 included Alexander Winchester, Richard Wright, Henry Smith, Edward Smith, Walter Palmer, William Smith, Stephen Paine, Richard Bowen and Robert Martin.

He was of record 20 or 29 Dec. 1645 with Robert Martin and Stephen Paine as the three "layed out y^{t} necke of land called knowne by the name of Wanomoycet," and on 16 March 1645/6 he was appointed with Robert Titus, William Smith, Capt. Richard Wright, Alexander Winchester, Thomas Bliss, Stephen Paine and Thomas Cooper to get the fences in Rehoboth in order by the 23rd of the month. He was elected townsman (selectman) again on 26 May 1647 with Mr. Browne, Mr. Peck, Stephen Paine, Mr. Winchester, William Carpenter and Edward Smith [Bowen, 1:28, 3:121 and 142].

On 13 May 1653 "Richard Bowen & James Ridwaye" were chosen "for overseers of the wayes," and a list of "the Subscriptions of the Inhabitants" of Rehoboth empowering Richard Bowen, Stephen Paine, Thomas Cooper and William Sabin to represent them in settling the status of Rehoboth lands lying within the bounds of the new Sowams purchase was drawn up on 28 June 1653 [*Ibid.*, 1:18 and 126].

The lack of definite law in early Rehoboth is illustrated by the fact that in the spring of 1654 it was found necessary to appoint William Carpenter, Richard Bowen and John Allen as arbitrators in a dispute between Robert Titus and Nicholas Ide over a parcel of salt meadow [*Ibid.*, 2:138]. In 1671 Richard Bowen was recorded as having been assessed 3/7 in taxes, a figure somewhat below the median, and by 28 May 1672 he was recorded as having sold his one-half share in the 1666 North Purchase distribution to Thomas Ormsby [*Ibid.*, 1:39 and 41].

His signature on his will was a mark, even though he was literate, probably because he was too sick to write his name [*Ibid.*, 1:111]. The will was proved 4 June 1675. The inventory totaled £175.15s.8d. His daughter Ruth "Kenericke" inherited one mare, one colt and a pewter platter.

Children, by first wife:

i. Sarah^{2}, killed by Indians, bur. Rehoboth 14 Oct. 1676; m. Robert^{1} Fuller.
ii. Alice, m. Salem 1636 Robert^{1} Wheaton.
* iii. Ruth, bur. Rehoboth 31 Oct. 1688 [1:89]; m. there 23 April 1647 George^{1} Kendrick.
iv. Obadiah, d. *ca.* 1710; m. Mary (a Titus, Chilton or Clifton?); for his will *vide MD*, 18 (1916), 204-209.

Children, born in Rehoboth [1:27]: 1. Obadiah^{3}, b. 18 Sept. 1651, d. 11 July 1699 [1:93], m. Abigail, had children b. Rehoboth [1:83] α) Aron, b. 6 Nov. 169-, β) Sarah, b. 5 Nov. 169-, γ) Nathan, b. 4 April 1698. 2. Mary, b. 18 Jan. 1652/3, m. Rehoboth [1:43] 30 May 1673 Isaac Allen. 3. Sara, b. 6 Nov. 1654. 4. Samuel, b. 16 July 1659, moved to N. J., had children b. Rehoboth [1:65] α) Samuel, b. 1 Jan. 1687/8, β) Dan, b. 1 August 1690, γ) Elijah, b. 4 August 1695, and δ) Joanna, b. 1 Dec. 1696. 5. Joseph, b. 26 June 1662, m. Elizabeth, had children b. Rehoboth [1:49] α) John, b. 26 Sept. 1689, β) Ruth, b. 15 Oct. 1691, γ) Elisha, b. 6 July 1693, δ) Obadiah, b. 7 July 1695, ε) Naoma, b. 9 Sept. 1697, d. Rehoboth 13 July 1699 [1:181], ζ) Joseph, b. 9 Nov. 1699, η) Jabish, b. 23 Nov. 1701, θ) Elizabeth, b. 6 June 1704, ι) Mary, b. 1 July 1706. 6. Thomas, b. 3 August 1664, m. 17 June 1689 Thankful Mason, had children α) Josiah, β) Isaac, γ) Stephen, m. 17 Oct. 1723 Phebe^{3} Slade [Boyer, 81], δ) Samuel, ε) Nathaniel, ζ) Richard, η) John, θ) Mary, m. Gilbert Seamens, ι)

Hannah, m. Charles Seamens, κ) Marcy, m. Luther and had ch. Lydia and Constant, λ) Katherine, m. Curtis. 7. Hannah, b. 3 May 1665, m. Timothy Brooks. 8. Lydia, b. 23 April 1666, m. Joseph Mason. 9. Marcy, b. 18 March 1672. 10. Isaac, b. 30 Sept. 1674. 11. James. 12. Hezekiah, m. 1706 Elizabeth London of Swansea.

2. v. Thomas, d. *ca*. 1663; m. Elizabeth.

vi. William, bur. Rehoboth 10 March 1686/7 [1:57].

vii. Richard, m. Rehoboth [1:44] 4 March 1646 Esther Sutton, poss. m. (2) Rehoboth [1:49] 20 Jan. 1689/90 Martha Saben, perhaps the Martha Bowen recorded in Rehoboth [2:242] as b. 10 Jan. 1644/5, d. 11 Jan. 1734/5.

Children, born in Rehoboth [3R, 1:2]: 1. Sarah^{3}, b. 1656. 2. Hester. 3. Richard. 4. Mary. 5. John.

2. THOMAS^{2} BOWEN, perhaps born in Wales, probably died in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, in 1663, after he made his will there on 11 April of that year.

He married, perhaps in Essex County, Massachusetts, Elizabeth. She was mentioned in his will and married second the Reverend Samuel^{2} Fuller of Middleborough. She died in Plympton, Mass., 11 Nov. 1713.

According to Perley [*Hist. Salem*, vol. 2], he was a planter and fisherman in Marblehead, Mass., in 1642, and was fined in Salem court in 1647. He moved to Rehoboth in later years. His will mentioned his wife Elizabeth and his son Richard, and named his brother-in-law Robert^{1} Fuller and his brother Obadiah^{2} Bowen as executors [*MD*, 16:128].

Bowen data was not readily available to the compiler insofar as works held by the Library of Congress are concerned, and, the birth of Richard not being of record, it was necessary to prove his relationship to his father Thomas by elimination, as well as other ways. Even so, many questions concerning the early Bowens remained, concerning other lines. Which Sarah married John Savage? Who was Esther who married Samuel Miller? Which Sarah married John Abell? Who were the parents of Mary who married in 1687 Philip Walker? The family is worthy of further, scholarly, study.

Child, mentioned in his will:

3. i. Richard^{3}, m. Rehoboth 9 Jan. 1683 Mercy^{3} Titus.

3. RICHARD^{3} BOWEN, born about 1650 (the entry in Rehoboth, Mass., records [1:2] for August 16-- may apply), lived in Rehoboth, Massachusetts.

He married in Rehoboth, 9 Jan. 1683 [1:48], Mercy^{3} Titus*.

He was about 13 when his father died. He was a medical doctor.

Children, born in Rehoboth [1:57], listed as children "of Richard (of Thomas)":

* i. Elizabeth^{4}, b. 11 Nov. 1684; m. (1) Rehoboth 10 Dec. 1706 Enoch^{4} Hunt, m. (2) there 2 Dec. 1711 James^{4} Brown of Swansea.

ii. Abijah, b. 10 April 1687; m. Rehoboth [1:176] 2 June 1708 Potter Hunt.

iii. Thomas, b. 20 August 1689; m. Rehoboth [1:177] 8 August 1710 Sarah Hunt.

iv. Damaries, b. 26 April 1692; m. Rehoboth [1:157] 18 June 1713 Stephen^{4} Hunt.

v. Jabesh, b. 19 Oct. 1696; m. Rehoboth [2:134] 30 Jan. 1717/8 Huldah Hunt.

vi. Ebenezer, b. 23 August 1699; m. Rehoboth [2:138] by Rev. John Greenwood 17 June 1724 to Anne Newman.

vii. Urania, b. 23 Sept. 1707; m. Rehoboth [2:148] by Rev. John Greenwood 4 March 1736/7 to John Bush.

§ § §

—by Carl Boyer III (1981)

which at the time of his birth was in Swansea, Plymouth Colony, then in Massachusetts, then in Barrington, Mass., later Warren, Rhode Island, and, finally, from 1770, in Barrington, R. I. Thus the records were to be found in several towns. He was a carpenter, and on 16 March 1718/9 was chosen a surveyor of highways in town meeting at Barrington, Mass.

Children, born on Nockum Hill: Bosworth

i. Elizabeth^{5}, b. 30 April 1703; d. Barrington, Mass., 7 April 1725; m. John Thomas, Jr.
ii. Mary, b. 4 April 1705; m. Swansea 27 March 1729 Richard Thomas.
* iii. Hannah ("Anna"), b. [date torn from Swansea records] 1706; d. after 1780; m. Barrington, Mass., 8 Dec. 1734, Samuel^{4} Bullock.
iv. Nathaniel, b. 14 August 1709; d. Sandisfield, Mass., 25 Oct. 1807; m. (1) Lebanon, Conn., 22 Nov. 1733, Bethiah Hinckley, m. (2) Middletown, Conn., 21 Jan. 1748/9, Elizabeth Eddy.
v. John, b. 9 Sept. 1711; d. before June 1745; m. Swansea 3 Jan. 1732 Elizabeth^{5} Wheaton.
vi. Lydia, b. 17 Sept. 1713; d. Warren, R. I., 11 March 1791; m. Warren 18 Oct. 1747 John Kelley [1:62].
vii. David ("Daniel" in town records), b. 14 Feb. 1717/8; d. probably in Lennox, Mass., after 1798; m. Lebanon, Conn., 27 June 1743, Mary Strong.
viii. Oliver, d. probably in Portland, Conn.; m. Chatham, Conn., 26 Sept. 1745, Susannah Collins.

(Mr Boyer is a desc of) the daughter Ruth Kendrick.

§ § §

BOWEN

(See long later version!)

A number of published works present data concerning the ancestry of Richard^{1} Bowen, but this compiler has not had the opportunity to substantiate, or refute, any of the material with references to primary materials.

Three generations of Welsh ancestry have been given by MacKenzie [*Col. Families of U. S.*, 3:360], the first being that of Sir James Bowen, whose wife, Mary Hale, was allegedly a daughter of Sir John and Margaret Hale. Mary Hale's maternal grandfather was given as Thomas ap Griffith ap Nicholas. Sir James and Mary (Hale) Bowen allegedly had a son, Mathias Bowen, who married Mary Phillips, daughter of John Phillips of Pictou Castle. Their supposed son, James Bowen, married Eleanor Griffith, daughter of John Griffith, Esq., of Richley, and granddaughter of William Griffith, Penrhyn Knight.

John Barber White stated that Obadiah^{2} Bowen, below, was born in Swansea, Wales, 1 Sept. 1627. The original manuscript (as well as a negative photostat copy) of the records of the first Baptist church at Ilston, Swansea, Wales, kept by John Myles, the pastor, in the Brown University Library, might shed some light on this question, although the card in the catalog indicates the record dates only from 1 August 1629. The book includes Reverend Myles' records in Swansea, Plymouth Colony, to 1669.

W1 5145 CS 69 73

Another Bowen source stated that Richard's father, Sir James Bowen, was living in Pembrokeshire, in Llwyngwair, in 1591. It outlined further pedigrees from the Vaughan, Dalton, Stradling and Gamage families, with descent from, among others, John of Gaunt and King Edward III. It said further that a coat of arms on the tombstone of Richard^{1} Bowen is further proof of the connection. None of these presentations has been supported with photographic evidence, which would have been helpful in the case of discussion of the tombstone, or documentation. Thus the genealogist must remain skeptical.

1. RICHARD^{1} BOWEN, according to tradition born in Wales, perhaps shortly after 1600, died in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, and was buried there 4 Feb. 1674/5 [1:52].

It has been said that his first wife was named Ann. He married second, in Hingham, Massachusetts, Nov. 1648, Mrs. Elizabeth Marsh, who was buried in Rehoboth in 1675. She was the widow of George Marsh, who died in Hingham 2 July 1647 [Bowen, 2:13].

Apparently he was in Salem and Boston before going to Rehoboth [J. B. White], where he was listed as a proprietor in 1643 and as freeman 4 June 1645. Rehoboth's first Board of Selectmen, or town council, chosen 9 Dec. 1644 included Alexander Winchester, Richard Wright, Henry Smith, Edward Smith, Walter Palmer, William Smith, Stephen Paine, Richard Bowen and Robert Martin.

He was of record 20 or 29 Dec. 1645 with Robert Martin and Stephen Paine as the three "layed out y^{t} necke of land called knowne by the name of Wanomoycet," and on 16 March 1645/6 he was appointed with Robert Titus, William Smith, Capt. Richard Wright, Alexander Winchester, Thomas Bliss, Stephen Paine and Thomas Cooper to get the fences in Rehoboth in order by the 23rd of the month. He was elected townsman (selectman) again on 26 May 1647 with Mr. Browne, Mr. Peck, Stephen Paine, Mr. Winchester, William Carpenter and Edward Smith [Bowen, 1:28, 3:121 and 142].

On 13 May 1653 "Richard Bowen & James Ridwaye" were chosen "for overseers of the wayes," and a list of "the Subscriptions of the Inhabitants" of Rehoboth empowering Richard Bowen, Stephen Paine, Thomas Cooper and William Sabin to represent them in settling the status of Rehoboth lands lying within the bounds of the new Sowams purchase was drawn up on 28 June 1653 [Bowen, 1:18 and 126].

The lack of definite law in early Rehoboth was illustrated by the fact that in the spring of 1654 it was found necessary to appoint William Carpenter, Richard Bowen and John Allen as arbitrators in a dispute between Robert Titus and Nicholas Ide over a parcel of salt meadow [Bowen, 2:138]. In 1671 Richard Bowen was recorded as having been assessed 3/7 in taxes, a figure somewhat below the median average, and by 28 May 1672 he was recorded as having sold his one-half share in the 1666 North Purchase distribution to Thomas Ormsby [Bowen, 1:39 and 41].

His signature on his will was a mark, even though he was literate [Bowen, 1:111], probably because he was too sick to write his name. The will was proved 4 June 1675, and the inventory totaled £175. 15s.8d. His daughter Ruth "Kenericke" inherited one mare, one colt and a pewter platter.

Children, by first wife:

i. Sarah^{2}, killed by Indians, bur. Rehoboth 14 Oct. 1676; m. Robert^{1} Fuller.

ii. Alice, m. Salem 1636 Robert^{1} Wheaton.

* iii. Ruth, bur. Rehoboth 31 Oct. 1688 [1:89]; m. there 23 April 1647 George^{1} Kendrick.

iv. Obadiah, d. *ca*. 1710; m. Mary (a Titus, Chilton, or Clifton?); for his will see *MD*, 18:204-209.

Children, born in Rehoboth [1:27]: 1. Obadiah^{3}, b. 18 Sept. 1651, d. 11 July 1699 [1:93], m. 25 July 1677 Abigail^{2} Bullock, had children b. Swansea α) James^{4}, b. 29 July 1680, β) Hezekiah, b. 19 Nov. 1682, m. 1706 Elizabeth London of Swansea, γ) Mary, b. 24 Dec. 1684, δ) Elizabeth, b. 17 Nov. 1686, ε) perhaps Abigail [b. 1678 or 1688?], ζ) Daniel, b. 29 July 1689, and children b. Rehoboth [1:83] η) Aron, b. 6 Nov. 169-, θ) Sarah, b. 5 Nov. 169-, ι) Nathan, b. 4 April 1698. 2. Mary, b. 18 Jan. 1652/3, m. Rehoboth [1:43] 30 May 1673 Isaac Allen. 3. Sara, b. 6 Nov. 1654, m. 16 May 1672 John Savage. 4. Samuel, b. 16 July 1659, m. 26 May 1684 Mrs. Elizabeth^{3} (Wood) Wheaton, moved to New Jersey, had children b. Rehoboth [1:65] α) Samuel, b. 1 Jan. 1687/8, β) Dan, b. 1 August 1690, γ) Elijah, b. 4 August 1695, δ) Joanna, b. 1 Dec. 1696. 5. Joseph, b. 26 June 1662, m. Elizabeth Rounds, had children b. Rehoboth [1:49] α) John, b. 26 Sept. 1689, β) Ruth, b. 15 Oct. 1691, γ) Elisha, b. 6 July 1693, δ) Obadiah, b. 7 July 1695, ε) Naoma, b. 9 Sept. 1697, d. Rehoboth 13 July 1699 [1:181], ζ) Joseph, b. 9 Nov. 1699, η) Jabish, b. 23 Nov. 1701, θ) Elizabeth, b. 6 June 1704, ι) Mary, b. 1 July 1706. 6. Thomas, b. 3 August 1664, m. 17 June 1689 Thankful Mason, had children α) Josiah, β) Isaac, γ) Stephen, m. 17 Oct. 1723 Phebe^{3} Slade, δ) Samuel, ε) Nathaniel, ζ) Richard, η) John, θ) Mary, m. Gilbert Seamens, ι) Hannah, m. Charles Seamens, κ) Marcy, m. Luther and had children Lydia and Constant, λ) Katherine, m. Curtis. 7. Hannah, b. 3 May 1665, m. 10 Nov. 1685 Timothy Brooks. 8. Lydia, b. 23 April 1666, m. 4 Sept. 1686 Joseph Mason. 9. Marcy, b. 18 March 1672, d. young. 10. Isaac, b. 30 Sept. 1674. 11. James (son of Obadiah^{3}?).

Sara not dau of Richard^{2}
Savage to N.J.

2. v. Thomas, d. *ca*. 1663; m. Elizabeth.

vi. William, bur. Rehoboth 10 March 1686/7 [1:57].

vii. Richard, m. Rehoboth [1:44] 4 March 1646 Esther Sutton, possibly m. (2) Rehoboth [1:49] 20 Jan. 1689/90 Martha Saben, perhaps the Martha Bowen recorded in Rehoboth [2:242] as b. 10 Jan. 1644/5, d. 11 Jan. 1734/5.

Children, born in Rehoboth [3R, 1:2]: 1. Sarah^{3}, b. 1656. 2. Hester. 3. Richard. 4. Mary. 5. John.

2. THOMAS^{2} BOWEN, perhaps born in Wales, probably died in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, in 1663, after he made his will there on 11 April of that year.

He married, perhaps in Essex County, Massachusetts Bay, Elizabeth. She was mentioned in his will and married second the Reverend Samuel^{2} Fuller of Middleborough. She died in Plympton, Mass., 11 Nov. 1713.

According to Perley [*Hist. Salem*, vol. 2], he was a planter and fisherman in Marblehead, Mass., in 1642, and was fined in Salem court in 1647. He moved to Rehoboth in later years. His will mentioned his wife Elizabeth and his son Richard, and named his brother-in-law Robert^{1} Fuller and his brother Obadiah^{2} Bowen as executors [*MD*, 16:128].

Bowen data was not readily available to the compiler insofar as works held by the Library of Congress were concerned, and, the birth of Richard not having been found of record, it was necessary to prove his relationship to his father Thomas by elimination, as well as other ways. Even so, many questions concerning the early Bowens remained, concerning other lines. Who was Esther who married Samuel Miller? Which Sarah married John Abell? Who were the parents of Mary who married in 1687 Philip Walker? The family is worthy of further study, of a scholarly nature. Wayne Miller of Greensburg, Kentucky, has been helpful.

Child, mentioned in his will:

3. i. Richard^{3}, m. Rehoboth 9 Jan. 1683 Mercy^{3} Titus.

3. RICHARD^{3} BOWEN, born about 1650 (the entry in Rehoboth records [1:2] for August 16-- may apply here), lived in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, which town was earlier under the jurisdiction of Plymouth Colony and the Dominion of New England.

He married in Rehoboth, 9 Jan. 1683 [1:48], Mercy^{3} Titus*. When and where they died has not been found.

He was about 13 when his father died, and was a medical doctor.

Children, born in Rehoboth [1:57], listed as children "of Richard (of Thomas)":

* i. Elizabeth^{4}, b. 11 Nov. 1684; m. (1) Rehoboth 10 Dec. 1706 Enoch^{4} Hunt, m. (2) there 2 Dec. 1711 James^{4} Brown of Swansea.

ii. Abijah, b. 10 April 1687; m. Rehoboth [1:176] 2 June 1708 Potter Hunt.

iii. Thomas, b. 20 August 1689; m. Rehoboth [1:177] 8 August 1710 Sarah^{4} Hunt (of Ephraim^{3}, Peter^{2}, Enoch^{1}).

iv. Damaries, b. 26 April 1692; m. Rehoboth (1:157] 18 June 1713 Stephen^{4} Hunt.

v. Jabesh, b. 19 Oct. 1696; m. Rehoboth [2:134] 30 Jan. 1717/8 Huldah Hunt.

vi. Ebenezer, b. 23 August 1699; m. Rehoboth [2:138] by Reverend John Greenwood 17 June 1724 to Anne Newman.

vii. Urania, b. 23 Sept. 1707; m. Rehoboth [2:148] by Rev. John Greenwood 4 March 1736/7 to John Bush.

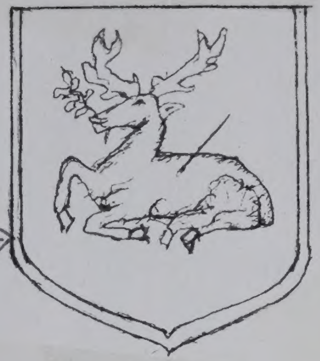
§ § §

Bowen Genealogy -
by Harold W Hein
CR 929.2 B7864

(Only the first generation
here is ours -)

wrong - coat of Arms - in ours
the stag is standing

The Bowen Coat of Arms was carved on Richard Bowen's large boulder which marks his grave. (The Griffith Bowen Genealogy gives the Coat of Arms.



BOWEN - (Swansea Co., Glamorgan, Wales) A stag with an arrow stuck in his back.

Physicians In The Richard Bowen Family

Richard Bowen
B. 1600 Wales
D. Feb. 1, 1674, Buried in Rehoboth, Mass.

Sarah Bowen
B.
D. Killed by the Indians 10-14-1676 at Rehoboth

Obadiah Bowen

Dr. Thomas Bowen, M.D. Under Medical care of Gov. John Winthrop. Lived in Rehoboth & New London
B.
D. 1663- His widow Eliz. mar. (2) abt. 1665 Dr. Samuel Fuller son of Dr. Samuel Fuller of Plymouth, Mass., signed "Mayflower" pact. First N.Eng. M.D.

Dr. Richard Bowen, M.D.
B. 1660 - First settled M.D. in Rehoboth
D. 1737 Only child and progenetor of 150 years of a long line of famous Bowen physicians.

Dr. Jabez Bowen, M.D.
B. 1690 Providence, R.I.
D. after 1737
Practiced in Rehoboth & nearby Providence where he moved to the home lot of Roger Williams, Corner Main and Bowen St. House standing in 1843

a son who was an M.D.
B.
D. after 1790 in Providence

a grandson M.D.
B.
D. at Glocester, R.I.

Col. & Dr. Thomas Bowen, M.D.
B. 1689
D. 177 4 - Living in Rehoboth in 1759

son

son

son

Dr. Ephraim Bowen M.D.
B. Oct. 3, 1716
D. Oct. 26, 1812 Providence
Lived with his Uncle Dr. Jabez in Providence

son

son

son

son

Dr. Jabez Bowen, M.D.
B. June 2, 1739 Providence
D. May 8, 1815 at Providence

Dr. Pardon Bowen, M.D.
Was President of the R.I. Medical Soc. 1815-1823 and on Faculty of Brown Univ. Medical School

Dr. Henry Bowen, M.D.
B. Jan. 5, 1785
D. Apr. 16, 1867
Providence, R.I. Grad. Brown U. & on Faculty

Wm. H. Bowen
Dr. Wm. C. Bowen
Graduate of Edinburgh, Scotland Med. School 1809
Pres. R.I. Med. Soc. 1814-15

CHAPTER I

The Earliest Records Of The Bowen Family

One story of the early beginning of the Bowen family is that when England was invaded on October 14, 1066 A.D. by William of Normandy, one of his head generals was named Owen. This Owen stayed in England and when he had a son he was called bo Owen, boy of Owen. The name then became Bowen.

Another history states that Bowen is a baptismal name and means the son of Owen; in the Welsh language ap Owen does mean the son of Owen.

The progenitor of this Welsh family in America is Richard Bowen who came from Swansea, Glamorganshire, Wales, with his wife and seven children in 1639 and is recorded as being in Weymouth, Massachusetts in 1642. In 1643 he was in Rehoboth and in December of 1644 is listed as a founder of the town and on the board of selectmen. In 1650 he became a deputy of the Court of Plymouth Colony and had been made a freeman.

He married first, Miss Ann ——— and in 1648 was married the second time to a Mrs. Elizabeth Marsh. She died in 1676 and Richard died on February 1, 1674, both are buried in Rehoboth, Massachusetts.

Richard and Ann had a son named Obadiah born in Wales, September 1, 1627. He made a will in America December 11, 1708 and died in Swansea, a town close to Rehoboth, Massachusetts, September 10, 1710. This will mentions a son named Thomas Bowen and a grandson named Nathan. Obadiah had married Mary Clifton in 1649, a daughter of Thomas and Mary Butterworth Clifton of nearby Weymouth, Massachusetts.

This couple had ten children, Thomas being the sixth child. He was born August 3, 1664, made a Will December 25, 1730 and died in 1743. This Will mentions a wife Thankful and a son Nathaniel. He had married Thankful Mason June 17, 1689. She was born in Rehoboth October —, 1672 youngest daughter of Sampson and Mary Mason and died after 1743. Thomas Bowen and Thankful, his wife, had twelve children, my great-great-great grandfather Nathaniel Bowen being the sixth child.

Nathaniel or "Nate" Bowen was born January 1, 1703 and lived in Warren, Rhode Island. He married Esther Bardine and they had eleven children. My great-great grandfather William Bowen was the ninth child and a copy of his birth certificate is on record at Warren, Rhode Island. I have one, shown on his Pension Application for Revolutionary War service.

Still another old lineage of the Ap Owen (son of Owen) is that a Griffith Bowen came to America from Llangeydd, Glamorganshire, Wales in 1638. He is first mentioned in Boston, Massachusetts then as living at Roxbury, Massachusetts and apparantly returned to England as he was in London in 1670. Obadiah Bowen was at Rehoboth, Mass. in the 1650's, then became a founder of Swansea, Mass. (after a town in Wales). His brother Richard came from Wales to America and was made a freeman at Rehoboth, Mass. in 1645. He is listed in New London, Conn. in 1657. A Thomas, brother of Richard is recorded in Salem, Mass. in 1648 and with his brother Richard in New London, Conn. in 1657. A Henry Bowen is also in America in 1657, living in Boston, Mass. This all suggests three Bowens were probably brothers, coming over from Wales, as was always told in my Bowen family by my mother, Aunt Harriet Bonn Fleming, Libbie May and Mary Bowen. (3 bros. tale)

Miss Ruth Potter, of Lake Mills, Wisconsin a Genealogist and at present the President of the Wisconsin State Genealogical Society and a descendant of Richard and Griffith Bowen SAYS BOTH have such a background. She also says Richard Bowen of Rehoboth is supposed to be related to Griffith Bowen another early New England immigrant.

Another early family history states that Richard Bowen came from Wales in 1640 and settled in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, his first marriage was to Ann or Anne, and that he died in 1674. Obadiah Bowen who was born about 1627 was in Mass. early and married Mary Clifton daughter of Thomas and Mary Butterworth. This Obadiah was connected with the Massachusetts General Court and died in 1699. Two of their children were Thamas and Samuel. Obadiah who was born 1627 lived at Rehoboth and then Swansea, Mass. and later at Warren, Rhode Island. He married Mary Clifton about 1647. Another of their children was given the father's name Obadia. He lived at Swansea and died in 1710.

ABOVE Richard Bowen was born in 1600 in Wales and first settled in Weymouth, Mass. with his family. In 1642 he moved to Rehoboth. His second marriage was to Elizabeth Marsh in 1648 and in 1650 or 51 he was made a Deputy to the Plymouth Colony General Court.

The photocopy of the Deed of William Bowen deceased, was obtained from Bristol County, Northern District Land Records. Book I, page 66-67. It is hard to read but states substantially as follows:

A Bowen to Bowen Deed

Whereas it hath pleased God of late to remove by Death William Bowen of ye Towne of Rehoboth in y Territory and Dominion ---- but no legal Disposition thereof ---- Administration given to his brother Richard Bowen brother of said Dec'd, William Bowen ---- Determined and fully and jointly agreed by Obadiah Bowen of Swanzey ---- eldest brother of Dec'd. William Bowen and ---- Richard Bowen of Rehoboth brother of said William Bowen dec'd ---- that estate both real and personal should be divided as follows: to Obadiah Bowen, Richard Bowen son of Thomas Bowen Dec'd., who was a nephew of the Dec'd William Bowen, Richard Bowen son of said Richard Bowen the administrator, John Bowen son of Richard Bowen a brother to William Bowen Dec'd., Alice Wheaton sister of Dec'd. William Bowen, Ruth Kinrick, sister of the Dec'd. William Bowen, Elizabeth Whelleck daughter of Robert Fuller formerly of Rehoboth, she bein a niece of Dec'd. William Bowen and Richard Bowen brother of Dec'd. William Bowen.

---- Seventh Day of March in ye fourth yeare of ye Reigne of James ye Second King of England, Scotland - one thousand six hundred eighty seven.

Witnesses --	Signed --
Nathan Chaffe	Obadiah Bowen
Daniel Read	Richard Bowen

The Names Peter and Giles are carried into the Family

76

William Bowen B. 1760 M. 1779 Lydia Pearce. She was dau. of Giles Pearce who M. (1) Tataman Schreech M. (2) Mercy Rouse, she was dau. of George Rouse of Little Compton and his wife Elizabeth Horswell who was dau. of Peter Horswell.

also our ancestors in the Pearce line!

Thomas Bowen - B. 1782 M. Sarah James

Peter Giles Bowen - B. 1822 M. Harriett Trenchard

Sources: *Pg 76 Cont'd*

1. Vital Records of Rhode Island. Vol. 4 Newport County, P. 145 Also pages 144 Little Compton, R.I.
2. The Wildbores In America. Wilbor, Vol. 1, p. 204; Vol. 1, p. 48; page 39, page 35 and page 72.
3. Genealogy Of The First Settlers of New England - Savage
4. Compendium Of American Genealogy, Virkus, Vol. 3, p. 641, p. 650 and Vol. 4, p. 672.
5. Vital Records of Warren, Mass. until 1747 then in Rhode Island, Wills and Deeds.

End of chapter

CHAPTER I - BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. Hubert Bowen of Torrance, California
2. Vital Records of Rehoboth, Massachusetts.
3. National Archives Record File Designation S21,654.
4. The Mayflower Descendant. Vol. XVII, p. 247 by James Savage.
5. Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island. Vol. II, pp. 1004, 1010.
6. Registry of Deeds, North District, Bristol County, at Tounton, Mass. Book I, p. 66.
7. Rhode Island Historical Society Collections, Vol. XXIV, p. 133.
8. History of Swansea, Mass. page 180, Leonard Bliss, Jr.
9. Various Vital Records Of Rhode Island, Warren, City Records.
10. D. A. R. Lineage Books
11. Cemetary Inscriptions.
12. Family Records
13. Plymouth Colony Deeds, Vol. II, Pt. 1, p. 78; Sowams Records, pp. 8,9.
14. Plymouth Colony Deeds, vol. II, pt. 1, p. 79; Sowams Records, pp. 9, 10.
15. Compendium of American Genealogy by Virkus, Volumes III and IV.
16. Early Rehoboth, Mass. Volume I, Bowen.
17. Miss Ruth Potter's Letter
18. Mrs. Dobson, Town Historian of Sweden, N.Y.
19. Wisconsin State Historical Library, Madison, Wis.
20. Record of Administration of Estate of Dec'd. William Bowen; from Deed obtained from Bristol County, Northern District Land Records Book.I,.p. 66-7, Taunton, Mass.

Miscellaneous Clippings

(Averill Ancestors) Bowen

Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England
by James Savage – Vol 1 pg. 222-3

BOWEN, GRIFFITH, Boston 1638, from Llangenydd, Glamorgansh. freem. 22 May 1639, by w. Margaret had Esther, bapt. 10 Feb. 1639, wh. d. 28 Mar. 1654; Abigail, 18 Apr. 1641; Peniel, b. 10 May 1644; and Eliz. wh. m. Isaac Addington. He was some yrs. at Roxbury, but went home and liv. at London 1670. HENRY, Boston, by w. Frances had Mary, b. 14 Aug. 1657. HENRY, Roxbury, perhaps s. of Griffith, m. 20 Dec. 1658, Eliz. Johnson, had Henry, b. 13 Oct. 1659, bapt. 12 Feb. foll. wh. was a soldier in Dec. 1675 of Johnson's comp.; Eliz. 26, bapt. 27 Jan. 1661; John, 1, bapt. 7 Sept. 1662; Margaret, d. young; Maria, b. 12 Sept. 1666; Margaret, again, 26 Jan. 1668; Penuel, 8 Mar. 1671; Esther, 8 Mar. 1675; and Isaac, 20 Apr. 1676. His wid. Eliz. d. 20 Apr. 1701. JOHN, Plymouth 1651. *OBADIAH, Swanzey, rep. 1681, had been of Rehoboth 1657, an active mem. of the Bapt. communion, had s. Obadiah, beside Isaac, b. 30 Sept. 1674. OBADIAH, Swanzey, s. of the preced. had Hezekiah, b. 19 Nov. 1682. RICHARD, Rehoboth 1643, d. 4 Feb. 1675, and his wid. d. the same yr. RICHARD, Rehoboth, call. jr. 1658, perhaps s. of the preced. m. Mary Titus. THOMAS, Salem 1648, (was of New London 1657–60,) rem. to Rehoboth, d. 1663. His wid. Eliz. was, in 1669, w. of Samuel Fuller of Plymouth. His will, of 11 Apr. 1663, made her extrix. names his s. Richard, and br. Obadiah. THOMAS, Marblehead 1674, may have been s. of the preced. Sixteen of this name had been gr. at N. E. coll. 1834.

Careful – both of these are misleading

NEW ENGLAND MARRIAGES PRIOR TO 1700 R – 87
by Clarence Almon Torrey

BOWEN, Daniel & _?_; b 1699; RI
BOWEN, Griffin[1]/Griffith? & ?1/wf Mary [?RIFEL]; Wales
BOWEN, Griffin[1] (-1675) & ?2/wf Margaret [FLEMING]; Wales, ca 1627?, ca 1633?; Boston/Roxbury/London
BOWEN, Henry (1633-) & Elizabeth JOHNSON (-1701); 20 Dec 1658; Roxbury/Woodstock, CT
BOWEN, Henry & Susannah (KING)/BARKER? HEATH, w Peleg; 14 Apr 1686, 1684; Roxbury
BOWEN, Isaac (1676-) & 1/wf Hannah [WINCHESTER]; ca 1698, ca 1699; Roxbury/Framingham
BOWEN, John & Hannah DIXCY; 2 Dec 1680; Marblehead
BOWEN, John (1662-1718) & Hannah [BREWER] (1665-1721+); ca 1695; ?Springfield/Roxbury
BOWEN, John & Elizabeth BUCKETT/BRACKETT (1671-); 12 Sep 1700; Rehoboth
BOWEN, John & Elizabeth [ROUNDS?]; b 1689; Rehoboth
BOWEN, Josiah (-1703) & Susannah CLARKE, m/2 Samuel CURTIS; 9 Nov 1694; Wethersfield, CT
BOWEN, Obidiah (1627-1710) & Mary CLIFTON (-1697); b 1651; Rehoboth
BOWEN, Obidiah & Abigail BULLOCK; 25 Jul 1677; Swansea
✓ BOWEN, Richard[1] (-1674/5) & 1/wf Ann [?BORN]; Eng or Wales, b 1627, b 1622; Rehoboth
BOWEN, Richard[1] (-1675) & 2/wf Elizabeth MARSH (-1675+, 1675?), w George; Weymouth, Nov 1648; Hingham
✓ BOWEN, Richard[2] & 1/wf Ester SUTTON (ca 1626-); 4 Mar 1656, 1646, 1656; Rehoboth
BOWEN, Richard & Mercy/Mary TITUS (1665-); 9 Jan 1683; Rehoboth
BOWEN, Richard & 2/wf Martha (ALLEN) SABIN/SABEN, w William; 20 Jan 1689/90; Rehoboth
BOWEN, Richard & Patience PECK (1669-); 28 Feb 1690/1; Rehoboth
BOWEN, Samuel & Elizabeth [?WHEATON], w Samuel; 26 May 1684; Swansea/Rehoboth/Bristol, RI
BOWEN, Thomas (1622-1674+) & Elizabeth _?_ (1628?-); ca 1646/52?, b 10 Dec 1646; Salem/Marblehead
BOWEN, Thomas (-1663) & Elizabeth [NICHOLS] (-1713), m/2 Samuel FULLER b 1669, ca 1665, (see John PRENTICE & Hester _?_); b 1660, ca 1656?; New London, CT/Rehoboth
BOWEN, Thomas & Sarah _?_; b 1685; Roxbury
BOWEN, Thomas (-1743) & Thankful MASON (1672-); 17 Jun 1689; Swansea/Rehoboth
BOWEN, William & Mary ? : b 1699: Boston

Founders of American Families – by Meredith Colket

CMPL 929.2 C686

BOWEN

GRIFFITH Boston (Mass.) 1638, Wales 1650, d London Eng. by 17 Apr 1676. "Perambulator" in Boston. Gentleman. From Wales. *Family of Griffith Bowen* 1893; *Lineage of the Bowens of Woodstock* 1897;** *Register* 47:453 (biog and children). N.G.S.Q. 67:163 (royal anc, wife's royal anc).

RICHARD Born ca 1600. New England ca 1640, Weymouth (Mass.) 1644. d. Rehoboth 4 Feb 1674. *Memorial of the Bowen family* (caveat) 1884. Shepard, *Richard Bowen's descendants*, chart, 1921 (rev. 1928). For possible Welsh anc, see Carl Boyer, *New England colonial families*, 2nd ed.

CS 69 B 68

This coat of arms is of Griffith Bowen – Richard's had the stag standing, with an arrow in the back.

Pioneers of Massachusetts
Charles Henry Pope – p 60

BOWEN, BOWIN, BOWINE,

Griffin, or Griffith, gent., Boston, adm. chh. with wife Margaret 6 (12) 1638. Was from Langenith, Glamorganshire; had a bond from Henry Bowen May 15, 1640. [Suff. De. I.] Propr. 1644-1652. Ch. Esther bapt. 10 (12) 1638, Abigail bapt. 18 (2) 1641, Peniel b. 10 (3) 1644, Deriah bapt. 11 (2) 1647, ae. about 6 days. He rem. to London, whence he deeded his Boston lands April 17, 1669, to Isaac Addington, chirurgeon, who was contracting marriage with his dau. Elizabeth. Admin. gr. 3 Jan. 1676 to his son Henry. Division of his estate was made 6 Nov. 1683, to sons Francis, William and Henry; to Mr. John Weld and the widow Child. See Reg. XLVII, 453.

Obediah, Rehoboth, 1643-4. Ch. Obediah b. Sept. 18, 1651, Mary b. Jan. 18, 1652, Sara b. Nov. 6, 1654, Samuel b. July 16, 1659, Joseph b. June 26, 1662, Thomas b. Aug. 3, 1664, Hannah b. May 3, 1665, Lydia b. April 23, 1666, Marcy b. March 18, 1672, Isaac b. Sept. 30, 1674. ✓

Will dated 11 Dec. 1708; grown ancient; prob. Oct. 14, 1710; beq. to sons Samuel and Joseph and dau. Hannah Brooks; gr. ch. Aaron, Daniel and Nathan, sons of dec. son Obediah; four pewter platters, given to him when he was baptized, he beq. to four gr. daus. Katharine, Sarah, Alice and Elizabeth B.; some land, recorded in Reh. he gave to James and Hezekiah B.; also beq. to Lydia Mason.

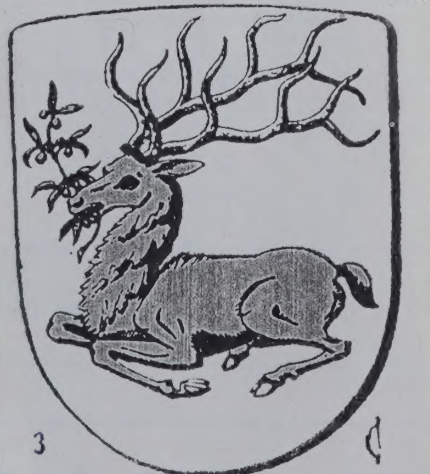
Confuses father & son

Richard, Rehoboth, town officer, prop. frm. 4 June, 1645, adm. frm. 5 June, 1651. He m. 4 (1) 1646, Esther Sutton. ✓
He was bur. Feb. 4, 1674. Will prob. 4 June, 1675, beq. to wife Elizabeth, ch. William, Obediah, Richard, Alice Wheaton, Sarah Fuller and Ruth Leverich. His widow was bur. in 1675.

Robert, cutler, Boston, contract after marrying his second wife, 3 (1) 1639. [L.]

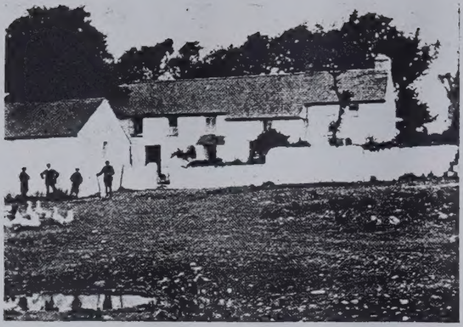
Thomas, fisherman, Salem, Marblehead, deposed 26 (10) 1646, ae. 24 years; his wife Elizabeth confirmed the testimony which he gave. She deposed in March, 1654, ae. 26 years. ?
Admin. of his estate was gr. March 28, 1705, to John Roades of Marb. who had married his oldest daughter.

Griffith – Bowen



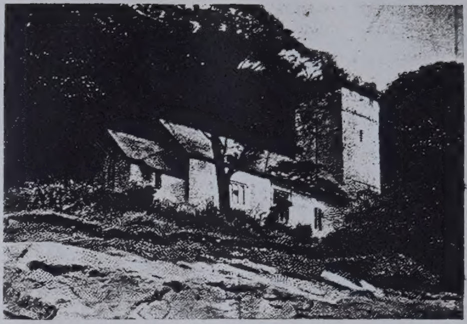
Silver a stag lodged gules attired and hoofed gold, in the mouth an olive branch vert. (green).

3



HOME, NOW STANDING, AT OXWICH, GOWER, WALES, OF GRIFFITH AP OWEN, GREAT-GRANDFATHER OF GRIFFITH BOWEN, THE BOSTON IMMIGRANT OF 1638

From photo owned by author.



OXWICH CHURCH, NEAR SWANSEA, WALES
Where Griffith Bowen of Boston was baptized.

From photo owned by author.

Mayflower Descendant Vol 17 (1915) p. 247-

THE WILL OF RICHARD BOWIN, SR.

TRANSCRIBED BY GEORGE ERNEST BOWMAN

THE will and inventory of Richard Bowin, Sr., of Rehoboth, were recorded in the Plymouth Colony Wills and Inventories, Volume III, Part I, pages 147–149. They are here printed in full, at the expense of Mr. Herbert Bowen.

Especial attention should be called to the married name of Richard Bowin's daughter Ruth. Pope's "Pioneers of Massachusetts", page 60, calls her Ruth "Leverich"; but the original record plainly reads "Ruth Kenericke", in two places. The first letter of the surname is the same as in the word "Knowne", at the beginning of the will, and is entirely unlike the capital letter in "Leanto" and "Lands", in the same record.

[RICHARD BOWIN'S WILL]

[3 : 1 : 147] The last Will and Testament of Richard Bowin seni^{r} of Rehoboth in the Collonie of Plymouth in New England exhibited to the Court held att Plymouth aforsaid the fourth of June Ann^{o}: Dom 1675 on the oath of M^{r} John Pecke as followeth

Be it Knowne unto all men by these p^{r}sents that I Richard Bowin seni^{r}: of Rehoboth in the Collonie of New Plymouth in New England Doe the Day and Date above written ordaine and make this my last will and Testament being in my Good and p^{r}fect Memory and understanding as followeth;

Item I Give to my beloved wife Elizabeth two Cowes and one heiffer a yeer old and a Mare 5 yeer old and a Mare Colt two yeer old and one Colt that followeth the Mare;

Item I Give unto my wife my best bed; with all that belonges to it; and all my linnine two Pewter platters; with som other smale peeces of pewter; both the bras kettles 1 Iron pott 1 skillett one frying pan all my poultry and halfe my swine younge and old alsoe I Give to my wife one Coffer; and halfe my provisions after my buriall; halfe my Corne; halfe my hay that is Gathered in or may be Growing att my Decease; halfe my butter Cheese Bacon and porke; one hake with the eke belonging to it; one Cherne one brewing tubb one powdering tubb one beer barrell and my milk vessells; Cushens one Candlesticke; all these foremensioned p^{r}ticulars; I Give to my beloved wife to Dispose of att her Death unto whom shee will; moreover I Give unto my wife my bible my warming pan; halfe my house that p^{r}te of the Leanto, nearest unto the Chimney; as alsoe halfe my orchyard; and halfe my home lott; excepting that p^{r}te I sould unto Steven Paine seni^{r}: being an acree more or lesse; all these I say I Give unto my beloved wife, the full tearme of her life; moreover my wife shall have libertie to mow two load of hay on my meddow att Palmers River and three load more on my meddow on the New meddow necke, every yeer soe longe as shee liveth;

Item I Give to my son Willam one hundred pounds Comonage; my lott on the East syde of the plaine my lott in the second Devision; my p^{r}te of ffresh meddow lying and being neare the mile run; my ffresh meddow att Palmers River all my meddow that I have mowed att my meddow on the New meddow necke The other pte of this meddow, I have Given unto my son Obadiah; and my son Richard, as will appeer by a Deed of Gift under my hand; Morover I Give unto my son Willam; halfe my house halfe my barne; halfe my orchyard halfe my home lott except that I sould to Steven Paine seni^{r}: and it is my Will that that after my wifes Decease that my son Willam shall have all my housing and barnes orchyard homlott with all those lands and meddowes before mensioned unto him and his heires forever;

Item I Give unto my son Willam halfe my swine halfe my Corne halfe my hay; Ingathered or may be Growing and halfe my provisions; butter Cheese bacon Porke;

Item I Give to my son Willam halfe my Cart and wheeles my Cart Rope with my plow and plowirons belonging to it 2 Chaires two hogsheads, and all other Corne vessells my wife

Can spare; my hake with the Ringe; on it; my Great brasse pott an Iron pott and my Great brasse pan; and alsoe it is my will that hee shall have the land which is to be Devided according to the Devision of 20 acrees to the hundred pound estate; and alsoe my lott lately layed out on the necke Called Wachamaquat necke; and all such lands as shalbe Devided after the Date heerof; according to the proportion of an hundred pound estate; I alsoe Give unto my son Willam; my Chest in the hall my Coffer in the seller loft my Chaine my hay knife Dung forke Pikes Rakes hand saw augers 2 beetle ringes and all my Iron wedges; as alsoe that oxe Called Duke; and my bible after my Wifes Decease;

Item I alsoe Give unto my son Willam the bed hee now lyeth on and the furniture belonging to it; and one bed sheet and my winnow sheet; and all my boards about my house, and all my wearing apparrell;

Item I Give unto my son Obadiah halfe a hundred pounds of Comonage; my Plow Irons of my breakeing plow and my thawrtcutt saw and halfe my logg Chaine; and the other halfe I Give to my son Willam;

Item I Give to my Daughter Allice Wheaton my Daughter Sarah ffuller and my Daughter Ruth Kenericke my old mare and a Colt that suckes on her;

Item I Give to my Daughter Allice Wheaton my fflagon and two pewter platters;

Item I Give to my Daughter Sarah ffuller my warming pan after my wifes Decease; and a pewter platter when the will is proved;

Item I Give to my Daughter Ruth Kenericke one pewter platter;

It is alsoe my will that if any of these fornamed beasts [p. 148]: viz: neat beasts or horses given Doe Die or come to any lose, the lose shalbe to the pticular p^{r}son or p^{r}sons unto whom they were Given; my executor shalbe free hee shall not make it Good to him or them;

Item all the Rest of my Goods lands Chattles or whatsoever I have not Given in this my Will and Testament; I Give to my son Richard whom I make and ordaine my sole executor to pay my Debts and to Discharge my legacyes and to see my body buried; witnes my hand the Day and yeer above written

Witnes The marke R of Richard
Stephen Paine Jun^{r}: Bowin seni^{r}:
John Pecke;

A true Inventory of the estate: viz: Lands Goods and Chattles of Richard Bowin seni^{r} of Rehoboth late Deceased exhibited to the Court held att Plymouth the 4th of June 1675 on the oath of Richard Bowin Juni^{r}: as followeth:

Imp^{r}: his wearing apparrell	004	00	00
Item a bed beding bedsteed & furniture belonging to it	007	00	00
Item 6 great pewter platters att 5^{s} apeece	001	10	00
Item 3 smale pewter platters	000	10	00
Item 2 old pewter platters	000	003	04
Item 2 smale pewter basons	000	05	00
Item severall smale peece of pewter	000	07	00
Item an old fflagon	000	03	00
Item an old Chamber pott	000	01	06
Item an old warming pan	000	03	00
Item 2 brasse pans	001	10	00
Item 2 brasse kettles one brasse skillett 1 Candle sticke and some other old brasse	001	00	00
Item an Iron pott	001	00	00
Item 2 old shirts 4 Capps 1 bolster Case 1 pillow Case	000	07	06
Item 1 sheet and a remnant of Canvas	001	10	00
Item more in sheets and a smale Table Cloth 2 towells	00	17	06
Item a smale remnant of Cloth	000	02	06
Item a fflocke bed & bolster and uper Covering 1 blankett and a Canvas sheet and bedsteed	003	00	00
Item 20 bushells of Indian Corne	003	00	00
Item a Cart Rope	000	07	00
Item a paire of tonggs	000	02	06
Item 2 pothangers	000	06	00
Item a handsaw	000	02	00
Item 3 wedges 2 beetle ringes	000	06	00
Item a bilhook and pease hook	000	04	00
Item an ax and an old hatchett	000	04	06
Item a frying pan	000	02	00
Item an old hoe	000	02	00
Item a hammer pincers and borier 3 Chissells & a paire of pronggs	000	04	00
Item some peeces of old Iron	000	02	00
Item a Great bible	000	10	00
Item 4 Chistes	000	14	00
Item 2 tubbs 1 butter tubb and a Cover	000	10	00
Item 3 old barrells	000	03	00
Item tryed sewett	000	02	00
Item 2 old Chaires 3 Cushens	000	02	00
Item 2 old smale trayes a straining Dish a pudding pan	000	01	06
Item an old bagg	000	07	00
Item a Cherne a Cover a tray and old hatchett	000	06	00

Item an hay knife and an old hatchett	000	02	00
Item a spitt and pronges	000	04	00
Item scales and waights and a pestell	000	16	00
Item a smale barell	000	01	00
Item 5 nibbs & a ringe	000	02	06
Item Rye and pease	000	02	03
Item a Great brasse pott	002	00	00
Item a logg Chaine	000	12	00
[p. 149] Item in horse kind	12	00	00
Item 2 oxen	10	00	00
Item 2 Cowes	06	00	00
Item in hay	02	05	00
Item : a plow : Chaine yoakes & Cart	01	04	00
Item in Debts	00	18	9
Item more in lumber	00	03	00
Item in porke	00	05	00
Item in houses lands and Comonage	100	00	00
sume totall	175	15	08

John Read seni^{r}:
Willam Carpentor
John Pecke

THE WILLS OF OBADIAH AND THOMAS BOWEN

By the Editor

The wills of Obadiah Bowen and Thomas Bowen, both of Swansea, Mass., with all other records or documents on file relating to their estates, found in the Bristol County, Mass., Registry of Probate, at Taunton, are here printed at the expense of Mr. Herbert Bowen, of Detroit, Mich.

The only original papers now in the files, relating to the estate of Obadiah Bowen, are the executor's bond and the inventory.

Obadiah Bowen's will was twice recorded, in Book II, page 290, and in Book III, page 1. At the end of the record in the third book is a note, in the same hand as that record, referring to the record in the second book.

The original will of Thomas Bowen is still preserved in the probate files. The only other paper remaining is the bond of the executrix.

The proper reference, to the record, or to the original document on file, is given with each copy or abstract presented.

[Obadiah Bowen's Will]

[2:290] In the Name of God Amen the Eleventh day of Decemb^{r} one Thousand seven Hundred & Eight I Obadiah Bowen of Swanzey in y^{e} County of Bristol in New England Yeoman being Grown Ancient & weake of body Yet of sound mind & memory blessed be God for the same And being willing & desirous to set my house in Order & settle my outward Estate which the Lord in mercey hath Lent me I Do make this my Last will & Testam^{t} In manner & form following Viz^{t}: Imprimis I Commit my soul into the hands of God who gave it hopeing through grace to Receive the Remission of all my sins And through the Mirrits of my Blessed Saviour Jesus Christ to be made pertaker of the Inheiritance of y^{e} saints in Light And my Body to be Decently buried according to the discresio of my Executors of this my Last will and Testament hereafter Named And as touching such worldly Estate wherewith it hath pleased

God to Bless me in this life I give Demise and Despose of the same in the following manner and form

My will is that all my Just Debts which I owe to any person or persons whatsoever be be duely payd by my Execut^{r} out of my Estate in time Conveinient after my Decease

Imp^{ms} I give to my well beloved son Samuel Bowen of Cohansey Ten pounds silver money at the fifteen peny weight and seventeen pounds of the like money I give to my said son Samuel Bowen and my Daughter hannah Brooks Equally to be divided betwixt them I do also give to my daughter hannah Brooks my bed and beding

Item I give to Lidia Mason a Cow

Itt: I give & bequeath unto my Grandsons Aron Bowen & Daniel Bowen sons of my son obadiah Bowen Deceased to them and Each of them for Ever All y^{t} my Right & Interest of and in the lands both divided and undivided scittuate Lyeing & being within the Township of Attleborrough in the County of Bristol afores^{d} Equally to be divided between them:

Item I give unto my Grandson Nathan Bowen son of my s^{d} son obadiah Bowen to him the said Nathan Bowen for Ever All that my two Divissions of lands in Rehoboth the one being allready laid out & the other now due to be layd out by y^{e} selectmen of Rehoboth afores^{d} that land w^{ch} is allready layd out being somewhat distant from Blisses saw mill . and allso all my Right of fresh meadow viz^{t} two peices of fresh meadow the one lyeing at a place called the great meadow the other somewhat distant from s^{d} meadow

Itt I give and bequeath unto my son Joseph Bowen his heires and Assignes for ever All that my Division or Divisions of land layd out adjacent to said Josephs lands within the Township of Rehoboth afores^{d} and allso the whole of all my undivided lands throughout the Commons of undivided lands both in the township of Rehoboth & Swanzey aforesaid

Itt I give and bequeath unto James Bowen & Hezekiah Bowen forever Respectively all that my lot of land of land lyeing & being in Rehoboth afores^{d} Contayning Twenty acres it being Recorded to william Bowen in said Rehoboth land Records And to all other of my Relations not herein mentioned that should under any Tollerable pretence Claime any portion of my Estate left I give one shilling allso in full sattisfaction to them all: And whereas there is Amongst my household stuff four pewter platters that were given to me in my infancy when I was Baptized I do now give one of s^{d} platters to my Grand Daughter Katherine Bowen And one of them to my Grandaughter Sarah

Bowen and one of them I give to my Granddaughter Allice Bowen and the fourth & last platter I give to my Grand daughter Elizabeth* Bowen . that is to say to each of them a Platter

Item I Give to my Grand daughter† a smale iron Kettle

Itt I give and bequeath to my son Thomas Bowen all the Rest of my Estate not yet disposed of And ffinally I do hereby make Constitute Appoint & ordain my said son Thomas Bowen to be my sole Executor of this my last will and Testament & doe allso Charge him to see it [p. 291] Punctually and duely performed according to the purpose & true meaning thereof And I do allso hereby Revoke and utterly null & make void all former wills & Testaments by me at any time made Either by word or wrighting to be of no Effect or Use But this my last will & Testament to stand firm & good In witness whereof I the said obadiah Bowen have hereunto subscribed my name and affixed my seale with my own hand given and published and Declared the day & year first above written

Signed sealed and Delivered Obadiah Bowen (S)
In the presence of us
Caleb Eddy
John Paddock
John Devotion

Bristol ss: october 14th 1710 then Caleb Eddy and John Paddock Jun^{r} two of y^{e} wittnesses of the within written will of Obadiah Bowen above Named Came before me Natha^{l} Paine Esq^{r} Judge of the Probate of wills & granting Administrations within the County aforesd & made Oath that they were present and did see the said Deceased signe seal publish & declare this Instrum^{t} as his will and Testam^{t} & that he was of a Disposeing mind when he so did and that they together with John Devotion the othe other witness set their hands as witnesses at the same time

John Cary Reg^{r} Nath^{l} Paine
Entered Nov^{r} 29 1710 By John Cary Reg^{r}:

[From original bond] On 14 October, 1710, "Thomas Bowen of Swanzey in the County of Bristol" as "Executor . . . . of his late Father obadiah Bowen of Swanzey Deceased" with "Joseph Bowen & James Bowen of Rehoboth" gave bond for £300, "Currant Money". The bond bears the autograph signatures of "Thomas Bowen", "Joseph bowin" and "James Bowen", also of "Caleb eddy" and John Cary as witnesses.

---

* Recorded as "Mary" in Vol. III, p. 2.
† The name was omitted.

[From original inventory] An Inventory of the Estate of Obadiah Bowen late of Swanzey Deceased Apprized by us the subscribers hereof october the 4th day Anno Domini 1710:

Imp^{rs} his wearing Cloathes both woollen & Linning	05	10	0
his Bookes two Bibles old &c:	00	12	00
one Sword 5^{s}	00	05	00
one feather Bed & boster a pillow 2 pair of shet & a pair blankets and Coverlids	08	00	00
A pair of old Curtaines	00	10	0
one feather Bed & beding	07	00	0
Three bedsteeds at	01	08	0
A Table & Nine Chaires & 3 Chushings : at	01	13	6
A Cubbard 40^{s} A Chest 8^{s}	02	08	0
3 pewter platt^{rs} a plate 2 Cupes and warming Pann & one pewter bason	01	00	0
A pair of stilliard	01	00	0
5 wooden bowles & a tray & Churn	00	09	6
in silver money at 15^{d} weight	17	00	0
one Iron pott & 2 iron Kettles at	01	05	0
hack tongs a pair of Pothook Candlestick	00	05	0
one old Brass Kettle & skillet	00	08	0
two Chaines 12^{s} Horss Chaines 6^{s} old Iron at 10^{s} a share & Coulter 6^{s}	01	14	0
one old hand saw 2^{s} bark shave & beaming Knifes 7^{s}	00	09	0
An old wheel and a hammer — with Real	00	04	0
more silver money 13$^{£}$ 7–2^{d} in y^{e} house 5$^{£}$ 5–0 : abroad	18	12	2
Tubs & barills & old Lumber	00	05	0
his lands in Attlebororough divided and undivided	40	00	0
his lands & meadows in Rehoboth given to Nathan bowen	20	00	0
lands & Rights to land in Rehoboth & Swanzey given to his son Joseph Bowen at	15	00	0
Twenty acres given to James an Hezekiah Bowen	05	00	0
	149	18	2

Caleb eddy
John Carey prisers

since brought in by the Exe^{r}:

Octb^{r} 14 : 1710 An old horss	1	5	0
frying pan Cops Ring & staple	0	6	0
a bill from Rob^{t} Cartter	2	0	0

Thomas Bowen Exe^{r} of the last will and Testament of obadiah Bowen late of Swanzey deceased Appeared this fourteenth day of october 1710 Before Natha^{l} Paine Esq^{r} Judge of Probate of wills &c within the County of Bristoll & made Oath the Inventory on y^{e} other side Containes the whole of the Estate that the s^{d} Deceased Dyed seized of & is come to his knowledge & that when he knowes of any more he will reveal it that it may be of Record herewith

John Cary Reg^{r} Nath^{l} Paine

Bristol ss In the second Book folio 291 Novemb^{r} 29 : 1710 the above and within written was Entered By John Cary Reg^{r}

[3:57] On 16 October, 1711, "Samuel Bowen of Cohanze In the County of Salem in the Province of West New Jerzey" gave power of attorney to "Isaac Ayars of Cohanze aforesd late of Rhod Island" to receive from "Thomas Bowen of Swanzey . . . . New England" everything "Due by will from his & my Honrd Father Obadiah Bowen Sen^{r} Deceased". The witnesses were William Porter and Sarah Wheaton. On 24 October, 1711, Samuel Bowen acknowledged the instrument, before Abraham Porter and Woollo Dalbo, Justices of the Peace for "the County of Glossester & of Province of New Jerzey".

On 16 November, 1711, Isaac Ayars of Cohanzey, as attorney for Samuel Bowen, receipted to Thomas Bowen, executor, for £18, 10s., "in full of a Legacie" in will of Obadiah Bowen. The witnesses were Nathaniel Millerd and John Cary. The power of attorney and receipt were recorded 16 November, 1711.

[3:76] On 16 October, 1711, "Timothy Brooks & Hannah Brooks his wife of Cohanse . . . . west New Jerse" gave power of attorney to "Our well beloved Brother John Brooks of Rehoboth . . . New England" to receive from Thomas Bowen of Swanzey everything "due by will from his and our Honrd Father Obadiah Bowen Sen^{r} Deceased". Hannah signed by a mark. The witnesses were Samuel Bowen, Isaac Ayars and Nicholas Johnson. On 24 October, 1711, Samuel Bowen and Isaac Ayars "did Testify this to the Act and Deed of the persons whose hands are to the seals" before Abraham Porter and Woollo Dalbo, Justices of the Peace for Gloucester County, New Jersey.

On 10 March, 1711/12, John Brooks of Swanzey, as attorney for Timothy and Hannah Brooks, receipted to Thomas Bowen, executor, for £8, 10s., in money, "& one bed & beding in full of a Legacie . . . . unto s^{d} Hannah Brooks". The witnesses were Jonathan Peck and John Cary. The power of attorney and receipt were recorded 10 March, 1711/12.

[3:95] Bristol ss In Bristol May the 12 : 1712 :

The accompt of Thomas Bowen of Swanzey in the County of Bristol Executor of the last will and Testament of Obadia Bowen Late of said Swanzey Deceased

Imp^{rms} the said Accomptant Chargeth himself with the Estate Left by the s^{d} Deceased Obadiah Bowen Contained in an Inventory upon Record Amounting to the sum of 153$^{£}$ 09^{s} 02^{d}

The Accomptant further desireth allowance for such & so much of the Estate as he hath payd in Legacies to severall of the Children and Grand Children of the s^{d} Dec^{d} Obadiah bowen given & bequeathed in his last will and Testament

Payd unto Isaac Ayres for the use of Samuel Bowen of Cohanse as by Receipt the sum of 18–10–00

payd to John Brooks for the use of Timothy Brooks and Hannah his wife as p^{r} Receipt 08–10–00 & one bed and beding a Legacie given s^{d} Hannah

payd to Joseph and Lidia Mason one Cow as p^{r} Recipt

Delivered to Jacob Chase one pewter platt^{r} give to his wif Allice, as p^{r} Receipt

Certain lands given to Joseph bowen Accepted of by him as p^{r} his Receipt

Certain lands given unto James and Hezekiah Bowen by them Accepted as by their Receipt

Certain lands given to Daniel and Aron Bowen by them Accepted as by their Receipt

Delivered to Mary Bowen Alias Bush as p^{r} her Receipt a pewter platter given to her in and by s^{d} will

Delivered to Abigail Bowen for the use of her Daughter Sarah Bowen one platter as by her Receipt

Delivered to Ephraim Smith for the use of his wife Mary a smale Iron Kettle

the Rest of the Estate given to the Executor as by the sd will may appear

Bristol ss By Nathal Paine Esqr Judge of Probate &c

Thomas Bowen Executor as abovesaid presented the above written accompt of his Administration upon the Estate Left by his sd Father Obadiah Bowen and Made Oath that it Containes a Just and true accompt of his said Administration so far as he hath proceeded therein which I do Accordingly allow and approve off and order the same to be off Record.— Bristol May the 12:1712

Jurrt Coram Nathal Paine

Entered May 14:1712 By John Cary Registr

[3:96] On 1 January, 1710, Lydia Mason and Joseph Mason receipted to Thomas Bowen for "one Cow given to me by will: By my Honrd Father"

"January ye 6:1711 this is to signify that Allice the Daughter of Joseph Bowen the wife of Jacob Chase hath Recd a pewter plattr which was given to her by her Honored Grandfather in his last will". Signed by Jacob Chase.

"october ye 24th 1710. Then Recd of Thomas Bowen a Certain pewter platter which my hond Grandfather gave me in and by his will". Signed by the mark of "Mary Bowen Alias Mary Bush".

These three receipts were recorded 24 May, 1712.

[THOMAS BOWEN'S WILL]

[From original will] "Thomas Bowen of the Town of Swanzey . . . . yeoman; being grown Aged" made his will 25 December, 1730. Bequests were as follows:

To "my beloved wife Thankfull all my housold goods and Stoke of Cattle and my movable Estate fully to be at Her Dispose During har Life for her Support and to help my two Daughters Namly Mary and Hannah wives of Gilbert and Charles Seamans and what Remains of Sd goods or Chatles after my wifes Decease shall be Equally Devided to my sd two Daughters or their heirs: Excepting the Housold goods that I Have in possesion: that I gave to my Daughter Marcey Luther Deceasd which good I give to my grand Child Lydia Luther: Daughter of my sd Daughter Marcey at the age of Eighteen years"

To "my Daughter Katheren Curtice one Cow or the vallue of a good Cow in money"

"I have given to my Eldes Son Josiah Bowen Lands by a Deed of gift"

"I have given to my Son Isaac Lands by a Deed of gift"

"I have given to my Son Stephen Lands by a Deed of gift"

"I have given to my Son Samuel one Hundred and fifty pound in Currant money and he has Recived sd money"

"I have given to my Son Nathaniel a Deed of gift of my house and Land where I now Dwell"

"and I have given to my Son Richard one Hundred pounds in money Received by him"

To "my Son John one Hundred pounds in Currant bill of Credit to be paid by my Executrix"

To "my Grand Son Constant Luther the Sum of three pounds money"

To "wife Thankfull the use and profite of the one half of a peice of Salt meadow Lying between the meadow of my Son Samuel and my Son Nathaniel on New meadow river in Swanzey During her Life and after her Decease to my Son Stephen"

"I make . . . . my well beloved wife Thankfull Bowen my Sole Executrix"

The witnesses were Thomas Wood, Jr. (who signed by a mark), Rebecca Wood (who signed by a mark) and Joseph Mason.

On 21 June, 1743, Thomas Wood and Joseph Mason made oath to the will, before Nathaniel Blagrove, Judge of Probate.

The will and testimony are also recorded, Book 10, pages 287 and 288.

[10:283] On 21 June, 1743, the will was proved and letter of administration was granted "To Thankful Bowen of Swanzey . . . . Widdow" on the estate "of your Husband Thomas Bowen Late of Swanzey . . . . yeoman Deceased"

[From original bond] On 21 June, 1743, "Thankful Bowen widdow & Sole Executrix . . . . of Thomas Bowen Late of Swanzey . . . . yeoman Deceased" gave bond for £500. The bond was signed by a mark. The witnesses were Stephen Paine and William Richmond.

Right - family of youngest daughter, Ruth (Bowen) Kendrick

First + Second Generation (Clippings)

Below - First husband and descendants of Elizabeth ( ) Marsh, second wife of Richard^1 Bowen.
From: History of Hingham Mass Vol II by George Lincoln

MARSH.

1. George, prob. from old Hingham or some of the adjoining parishes in Norfolk County, Eng., came to New Eng., and settled in our Hing. with Rev. Peter Hobart and his company, 1635. On the 18th of Sept. of that year he drew a house-lot on Town (North) St., which was bounded and described in the town's first book of grants as foll.: "Given unto George Marsh for a house-lot, five acres of land bounded by Richard Osborn, eastward; with the highway leading to Squirrel Hill, westward; with the Town Street, southward," etc. But little is known concerning his active life or family history. Tradition, however, says that he was descended from the Marshes in Eng., who trace back their ancestry more than two hundred years before America was first settled; and that before they came into Eng. the surname was spelled "Marisco." The chris. name of his w. was Elizabeth. She survived him, and m. secondly, Nov. 1648, Richard Bowen. George was made "freeman" 3 March, 1636, and was one of the selectmen, 1645. He d. 2 July, 1647. Will made on the day of his death.

Ch., all b. in Eng., were —

2. i. Thomas, ——.
3. ii. Onesephorus, 1633.
   iii. Elizabeth, ——. m. —— Turner.
   iv. Mary, ——. m. —— Page, prob. John Page, who became a resident of Haverhill.

2. Thomas^2 (George^1), b. in Eng. m. in Hing. March 22, 1648–49, Sarah Beal, dau. of John and Nazareth (Hobart) Beal. She was b. in Eng., and surviving him m. secondly, Sept. 5, 1662, Edmund Sheffield of Braintree, where she d. 9 Nov. 1710, æt. ab. 86th yr. Thomas d. 2 Sept. 1658, leaving a will dated three days prior to his decease. "Farmer." Resided on the paternal homestead, North St.

Ch., all b. in Hing., were —

   i. Sarah, Dec. 22, 1649, d. soon.
4. ii. Thomas, Dec. 4, 1651.
   iii. John, Feb. 5, 1653–54, d. in 9 dys.
5. iv. Ephraim, July 1, 1655.
   v. Mary, Feb. 22, 1657–58.

3. Onesephorus^2 (George^1), b. in Eng. m. in Hing. Feb. 6, 1654–55, Hannah, dau. of John and Mary Cutler. Freeman 1672. He removed with his fam. to Haverhill, Mass., and d. 1713, æt. 80 yrs. Will proved 29 Oct. 1713. He left a numerous posterity, traceable throughout New Eng., New York, and the British Provinces. His

Ch., b. in Hing., were —

   i. Onesephorus, Nov. 5, 1655; was m. and had issue.
   ii. Hannah, June 28, 1657. m. Dec. 14, 1677, Henry Kimball.
   iii. Mary, March 12, 1658–59. m. Cornelius Page.
   iv. John, Sept. 3, 1663; was m. and resided at Haverhill.
   v. Thomas, Oct. 1, 1666, d. 1690.
   vi. Sarah, Feb. 26, 1668–69. m. —— Pike.
   vii. Abigail, Feb. 21, 1670–71. m. Abiel Mercer.

4. Thomas^3 (Thomas^2 George^1), b. in Hing. Dec. 4, 1651. m. May 6, 1675, Sarah Lincoln, dau. of Thomas and Margaret (Langer) Lincoln (p. 16). She was b. in Hing. Sept. 29, 1650, and d. 9 July, 1738, æt. 88th yr. He d. 22 March, 1724–25, æt. 73 yrs. Selectman in 1692, 1696, 1709, and 1710. Resided on the paternal homestead, North St.

Ch., all b. in Hing., were —

6. i. Thomas, Oct. 24, 1676.
7. ii. Caleb, Oct. 24, 1678.
   iii. Sarah, July 9, 1681. m. Feb. 3, 1702–3, Joseph Lewis of Barnstable.
   iv. Mary, Feb. 17, 1683–84. m. Jan. 13, 1708–9, Philip Torrey of Wey.
   v. John, Dec. 1, 1686, d. in 17 dys.
   vi. Jonathan, June 20, 1688, d. 14 July foll.
   vii. Jonathan, Aug. 10, 1689.

5. Ephraim^3 (Thomas^2 George^1), b. in Hing. July 1, 1655. m. first, Jan. 26, 1681–82, Elizabeth Lincoln, dau. of Stephen and Elizabeth (Hawke) Lincoln (II. 476). She was b. in Hing. Nov. 3, 1660, and d. 6 Jan. 1710–11, æt. 50 yrs. He m. secondly, Nov. 10, 1713, Abigail Stodder, dau. of Daniel and Abigail (Lane) Stodder. She was b. in Hing. Sept. 18, 1670, and d. 4 Nov. 1737, æt. 67 yrs. He d. 21 Apr.

KENDRICK

According to Eva L. Moffatt of Boston, who researched this line in the 1930s, George^1 Kendrick, below, may have been a cousin of another man of the same name who came to Plymouth on the *James* from Yorkshire and went to Scituate about 1634 with his wife Jane, and children Deborah, Joseph, and Priscilla.

1. GEORGE^1 KENDRICK, born no doubt in England about 1625, died possibly in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, after 1691.

He married first, in Rehoboth, 23 April 1647 [1:44], Ruth^2 Bowen*, who was buried there 31 Oct. 1688. He married second, in Rehoboth, 1 April 1691, Mrs. Jane Ide, widow of Nicholas Ide; she was buried there 12 May 1694. It has been suggested that she was a Bliss, but this is not likely [see Thomas^1 Bliss, above].

He was listed in the division of lands of Rehoboth dated at Weymouth on 24 Oct. 1643 as the owner of a £50. estate, typically consisting of a six acre home lot, seven acres of wood lot and salt meadow, and one-half acre of fresh meadow. He was nineteenth in the list for the division of fifty-eight lots [Bowen, 4:4; Dryer, 159]. On 28 June 1653 he was one of forty-one who signed a document empowering Richard Bowen, Stephen Paine, Thomas Cooper and William Sabin to resolve all differences arising out of meadow land. About 1676 he advanced £11.13s.1d. towards the expenses of King Philip's War, and he was one of twenty-nine mentioned in a list of "Debts due to Several persons for their work about the Meeting house in the yeare 1678," in the amount of £1.14s.8d.

Children, recorded in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony:

   i. Thomas^2, b. 23 Jan. 1647/8; m. 1681 Mary Perry.
* ii. Ruth, b. 16 Feb. 1649/50; d. 19 Feb. 1706/7; m. 6 Feb. 1671/2 John^2 Wilmarth.
   iii. Sarah, b. 12 April 1652; no data.
   iv. Isaac, b. 12 Feb. 1654; bur. 13 June 1675.
   v. Mary, b. 16 June 1659; m. 15 April 1685 Samuel^3 Bliss.
   vi. Elizabeth, b. 12 Sept. 1661; m. 1689 Jonah Palmer.
   vii. Abraham, b. 2 May 1663; d. infant.
   viii. Abraham, b. 19 May 1665; bur. 9 March 1682.

§ § §

Richard^1 Bowen's Second Wife
(not our ancestor) Elizabeth
Widow of George Marsh

family of eldest daughter, Alice (Bowen) Wheaton
(did she marry in Wales?)

(Richard Bowen Eldest daughter)

ROBERT WHEATON,

SWANSEA, WALES, SALEM AND REHOBOTH, MASS.

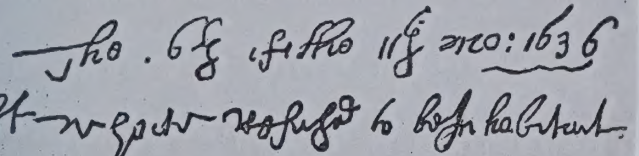
Second Generation

---

1. ROBERT[1] WHEATON, of Rehoboth, Mass., was born 1605, in Swansea, Wales, and came to this country between the years 1630 and 1636; married Alice Bowen, daughter of Richard Bowen; died 1695–6, aged 90 years. The first mention we have seen of him is on the town records of the city of Salem, Mass., as follows: —

"TOWN MEETING, The 6th, 11th mo., 1636.

"Robert Wheato. refused to be Inhabitant."



The . 6th of the 11th mo: 1636
Robt Wheaton refused to be Inhabitant.

"TOWN MEETING, 26th, 9th mo., 1638.

"Of the several proportions of land laid out at Marble Head this 14th of the 9th moneth 1638, To Robert Wheaden granted x (10) acres of Land."

That on the

"1ST DAY OF YE 2ND MONETH, 1644.

"Robert Wheaden desireth some ground at ye great lotts.

"Graunted to Robert Wheaden xx (20) acres of Land neere to the marsh at Mr. Bishops ffarme, to be laid out by the towne, conditionallie that if hee depte from the towne before hee improve it, it shall return to the towne."

This last-mentioned land was in that part of Salem now known as Danvers; it was at the foot of the hill, near the pear-tree said to have been set out by Governor Endicott on his farm. This pear-tree is now enclosed by a rail fence.

No further record of Robert Wheaton appears on the town records of Salem, and none appear at the Registry of Deeds or at the Probate Office; and although it is known that children were born to him in Salem, no record of their baptism, or any mention of him or his family, appears on the church records of Salem.

This is not surprising, when all the facts in the case are considered.

First. That Robert Wheaton came from the pure, unmixed, *native* Welsh, or rather Cumry race, which was of Tartaric origin; which race, though often driven to the mountain fastnesses of Wales by the Angles, Saxons, and Normans, was never subjugated. They never intermarried as did the Angles, Saxons, and Normans, and never since A. D. 180 changed their religion. They never gave adherence to the Church of Rome, and when the followers of Martin Luther and John Calvin came among them, they found nothing to reform. While they were not Romanists, they were not of the Church of England; neither were they like the Pilgrim Fathers on the one hand, or the Puritans on the other; yet, in common with the two latter, they desired the same religious freedom that all in time obtained in coming to these then inhospitable shores.

Second. Their religion, creed, church government, and mode of worship were, and ever had been, essentially like the Baptists of the present day. Their views were wholly unlike those held by the Puritans and Pilgrim Fathers in many respects.

Robert Wheaton was in active sympathy with Obadiah Holmes and Roger Williams, the latter being banished from Salem and the Colony in the fall of 1635, by the Puritans. Roger Williams, who was a Welshman and a Baptist, removed to Rehoboth, which was in the jurisdiction of the Pilgrim Fathers of Plymouth, who, though more tolerant than the Puritans, yet drove him still farther on and across the Blackstone River, where he founded the present city of Providence. The principles which he laid down, both in religion and politics, may be summed up in one word, TOLERATION.

Robert Wheaton and his family removed from Salem to Rehoboth between the years 1643 and 1646, where he, and some of his sons, were instrumental in the upbuilding of the first Baptist church in Massachusetts, which was located in that part of Rehoboth afterwards ceded to the Baptists, and named Swansea. Robert Wheaton, like Roger Williams, was a pioneer, a forerunner of a large number of Welsh Baptists, who, a few years later, came over from Wales and settled in that region.

Who shall say that the influence of those early Welsh settlers *for good* upon the destinies of the people of this country was second to that of the Puritan or Pilgrim Fathers?

The reasons are, therefore, apparent why Robert Wheaton "refused to be Inhabitant" of Salem in 1636, and why lands in 1644 were granted him, "conditionallie that if he depte from the towne before hee improves it, it shall return to the towne," and why there is no mention of him, or the baptism of any of his children, on the church records of Salem.

During the year 1643, the proprietors of Rehoboth were "required to give in the value of their estates." There were fifty-eight in all returned; No. 26 reads as follows: —

"Mr. Obadiah Holmes, formerly of Salem, now Robert Wheaton's, £100 : 00 : 00."

"On the 18th of the 12th Moneth (Feb.) 1646, at a meeting of the town, it was agreed to draw lots for the new medow, and to be divided according to person and estate, only those that were under £150 estate to be made up to £150."

Robert Wheaton drew lot No. 25. In 1658, and also in 1668, he drew other lots of land (see Bliss' "History of Rehoboth"). In 1657 he took the "oath of fidelitie," and in 1658 was admitted freeman.

In 1683, Aug. 18, he gave deed of land in the North Purchase, now Attleboro, to his son Benjamin. He suffered all the horrors of the Indian War of 1675, being where it first broke out in all its savage fury, King Philip having his home at Mount Hope, not far distant from Rehoboth.

His homestead was in the south part of the town, and has been in successive generations of his descendants up to, and including, the present (1886) time. As before stated, he was instrumental in the upbuilding of the first Baptist church in Massachusetts, at this place, and over which his son Ephraim became a distinguished minister. He died 1695–6, leaving widow Alice or *Alace*, as then spelled, sole executrix of his will. He lies interred in the ancient burying-ground (which was near to his homestead farm), near by the grave of his son Ephraim, but with no stone to tell the spot.

ROBERT WHEATON'S WILL.

Be it known Unto all men by these presents, that I, Robert Wheaton of the Town of Rehoboth, in y^e county of Bristol, In his Majesties Territory and Dominion of New England, being weake & aged, Yet through the goodness of god of a good Competent Memory and Understanding, Doe this Second Day of october Anno Dom. 1687, Make this my last will and Testament hereby Revoking and Disanulling and making Voyde all former Wills and Testaments made by me.

Imp^{es}. I give and bequeath Unto my Eldest son Joseph and to the heirs of his Body, Twenty acres of land that was layd out on the East side of Palmers River and a parcell of Salt Marsh at the hundred acres above the Dirth, and Ten pounds Estate of Commons in Rehoboth. And if it so happen that Joseph Dye without Issue then all the said lands given to my said Son Joseph at his Decease (alowing the thirds to his wife her lifetime) shall Descend to my son Samuel's Children.

Ittem. I give and bequeath to my son Jeremiah My lott last layde out in wachamoket Neck, and my Medow at Bushy Medow, and Ten pounds Estate of Commons in Rehoboth to him & to his heirs and Assigns forever.

Ittem. I give & bequeath Unto my Son John & his heires & Assigns forever Ten pounds Estate of Commons in the Town of Rehoboth.

Ittem. I give & bequeath unto my son Obadiah & his heirs & Assigns for ever all y^e Rest of my lands in the North Purchased lands which I have not given "to my sons Ephraim & Benjamin by Deed under my hand & Seale."

Ittem. I give unto my son Ephraim Twenty acres of land at Palmers River & a piece of medow at Palmers River, being the upper piece joyning to Rivo Leonards and a third part of the undivided land on the North side and Ten pounds of Commons in Rehoboth all which s^d lands and medow I have given him as appears by Deed of Gift.

Ittem. I give Unto my Son Benjamin one half of my fifty acre lott on the North side and my share of Medow on y^e North side and one Third part of my Undivided land in the North Purchase all which I have formerly given a Deed of Gift.

Ittem. I give to my son Samuel's Children Ten pounds Estate of Commons in Rehoboth to them their heires & Assigns forever.

Ittem. I give & bequeath unto my three Daughters Bethia, Hannah, & Mary Twelve pounds apiece.

Ittem. I give & bequeath to my Beloved wife Alice my House & lands & medows Divided & Undivided and all my house-hold Goods & Stock of Cut wood of all sorts which I have not before Disposed off her Comfortable lively hood. And that at her Decease She shall have Liberty & Authority to Dispose it according to her Discression.

Ittem. It is my Will & I do hereby ordain & appoint my Beloved wife Alice to be my Sole Executrix of this my last will.

Ittem. It is Likewise my will that if it please god by his Providence so to order that if my beloved wife Decease before me that what Housing lands or other Estate which I have given my wife by this Will or what Remains of "it at my Decease shall be equally Divided among" my Children both Sons & Daughters. And it is my will that my Son Joseph have my house & home lott Upon an Indifferent apprisal made by Indifferent men Paying the Value so apprised (Excepting his part) to his Brothers & Sisters. In witness hereof that this (is) my last Will & Testament, I have hereunto sett my hand & Seale the Day & year first written on the other side.

ROBERT WHEATON. [L. S.]

Signed, Sealed & acknowledged in the presence of us.
JOHN PECK.
WILLIAM CARPENTER.
JOHN BUTTERWORTH.

Proved, The 24th Feb^{ry} 1695(6). Ent Mch 2 1695(6).
JOHN CAREY, *Reg^r.*

Robert Wheaton in his lifetime gave to his children nearly all of his handsome property. What remained after his death was appraised at £75 10*s*. 8*d*., and was sworn to by his widow and executrix, on the 24th February, 1695–6.

Children of Robert and Alice Wheaton:

I. Joseph^2, born in Salem; inhabitant Rehoboth, 1669; drew lands in Swansea, 1670; gave deed of lands to Thomas Wood, 1676; trooper under Captain Hutchenson, in King Philip's War; member Baptist church, Swansea.

II. Samuel^2, born in Salem prior to 1645; died in Swansea, Feb. 2, 1683–4; drew lands in Swansea, 1670; inhabitant, 1670; trooper in Captain Hutchenson's company; member Baptist church; had son Samuel^3, born July 21, 1683.

m. Elizabeth w
who m/2 Rich
Bowen 5 Dec 1
Swansea
(Dau of Obadiah
Bowen)

III. Jeremiah^2, born in Salem, living in Rehoboth, 1689; married Hannah Amidown (-1719); had seven children, as follows: Hannah^3, born July 3, 1666; Jeremiah^3, born March 8, 1669; John^3, born Sept. 2, 1671; Sarah^3, born Sept. 29, 1673; Ebenezer^3, born March 7, 1677; Mary^3, or Mehitable^3, born April 2, 1681; Nathaniel^3, born March 6, 1682.

IV. Christopher^2, born in Salem probably, and prior to 1645; lived at Hull, 1675; soldier in Captain Johnson's company during the Indian War; married Martha Prince; died at Hull, 1684. Will proved at Boston, May 6, 1684; inventory, £79 7*s*. 6*d*. Had son Christopher^3, of Hingham, who married Sarah ——; he died 1719; will proved Oct. 28, 1719; inventory, £292 3*s*. He had four children: Benjamin^4, Christopher^4, Isaiah^4, and Benjamin^4 again. The latter removed to Mendon, Mass., and died Aug. 12, 1726; he married Margaret ——; was a cooper by trade. In his lifetime he, by "Deeds of Gift," gave lands to his sons; he died intestate; inventory, £150 9*s*. 6*d*. He had four children: Benjamin^5, who married, April 14, 1719, Abigail Green, and sold eighty acres land in Mendon; Daniel^5, David^5. One Samuel Wheaton, son, perhaps, of Benjamin^4, married Feb. 24, 1718, and had Mary, born Oct. 23, 1718. Family no further traced.

birth
ab. prob Oct 1

V. Obadiah^2, born in Rehoboth, 1647; removed to Milton, Mass., from whence he joined Captain Johnson's company, in the war 1675. m Sarah (   ) (birth 1684)

VI. John^2, born in Rehoboth, April 20, 1650; died July 25, 1737; married Elizabeth Carpenter, and being of our line, will be taken up later on.

VII. Bethia^2, born May 20, 1652; married, Sept. 4, 1674, William Blanding, of Rehoboth; mentioned in her father's will; living 1687. (d 1709)

VIII. Hannah^2, born Sept. 15, 1654; -1724 married JOHN —— Butterworth; living 1687. m 4 Sep. 1674 Reho.

IX. Mary^2, born Nov. 4, 1656; living 1687. m 1 Thos. Man (Reho. 16 Dec) 9 Apr 16
m 2 Ebenezer Darling 1698 30 Mch Reho

XI. Benjamin^2, born February, 1661; living 1687; received gift of lands in Attleboro, from his father, Robert, in 1683. (a cooper) - to Mendon before 20 Nov 1684/5 - deeded this land to Jonathan Fuller, his cousin.

X. Rev. Ephraim^2, born in Rehoboth, Oct. 20, 1659; died in the same place, April 26, 1734; married, 1st, August, 1676, Mary, daughter Sampson and Mary (Butterworth) Mason. She was born Feb. 7, 1660. Married, 2d, Hannah ——, who probably survived him, as she was mentioned in his will, which bore date of May 20, 1729, and proved May 10, 1734. He was a distinguished Baptist minister, and was settled over the first Baptist church of Massachusetts (which was located at Rehoboth, afterwards Swansea) from 1704 to the

-Second Generation (Wheaton)

(BOWEN) ~~Gill~~

day of his death, 1734. To afford some idea of the religious character of Mr. Wheaton, his father, Robert, and his brothers, and what they endured for their freedom of worship, the following will be added.

This church, which Rev. Ephraim Wheaton, his father, Robert, his brothers, John, Joseph, and Samuel, were instrumental in organizing, was constituted at Rehoboth in the year 1663. Mr. Obadiah Holmes, previously of Salem, was their first minister. Four petitions were soon lodged at court against the members of this church: one from Rehoboth, signed by thirty-five persons; one signed by all the clergymen in the Colony, only two excepted; the third from Taunton, and the last from the government of Massachusetts Bay.

The Plymouth magistrates merely *ordered* them to desist from practices disagreeable to their brethren. They, however, bound their leader and minister, Mr. Holmes, in the sum of ten pounds for his appearance at court. Mr. Holmes was seized and confined in jail, in Boston. He was charged with the crimes of preaching the Gospel, administering the sacrament, re-baptizing persons who had previously been baptized, and disclaiming against the sprinkling of infants; which being proved, he was fined thirty pounds, or to be well whipped. He was publicly whipped, receiving thirty lashes. Each member of this church was fined five pounds, and *ordered* by the government to desist from their meetings. Later on, they were *ordered* to remove their "meeting" to some other place, "where they might not prejudice any other church." Still later, viz., in 1667, the Plymouth court granted to these people "a grant of a town to be called Swansea" . . . "that the Baptists might have a resting-place."

Their second minister was Elder John Myles, who had been minister over the Baptist church in Swansea, in Wales, from 1649 to 1662. After the death of Oliver Cromwell, Charles II. came into power, and the Act of Uniformity was passed in 1662, by which some two thousand of the best ministers were ejected from their places, because they refused to conform to the Church of England. Among these ministers was Elder John Myles. This was a reign of terror in Great Britain, and it is said that more than eight thousand persons were imprisoned. In this state of affairs, Elder Myles, ~~and many~~ members of his Welsh church, emigrated, somewhat hastily, to this country; and, fortunately for the future historian and genealogist, brought over with them the book of records of their ancient church in Wales; which book is well preserved at the present time, and is in the custody of the Baptist church now at North Swansea, Mass. Elder Myles was pastor of this church when the war of 1675 was raging; here it first opened. While this church, including the Wheatons, were engaged in public worship, the Indians began to close in around them; and while the people were wending their way to their several homes, the Indians attacked them, killing some outright, and wounding many others, and succeeded in burning more than half the town. The house of Elder Myles was made into a garrison. The suffering which these people endured during this horrible war can never be fully known.

Soon after receiving a grant of a township, these Baptists laid out sundry parcels of land, which they called pastors' and teachers' lots. The surveys of those lots were recorded in the book of church records brought over from Wales, before alluded to; the doings of the church here were also recorded in that ancient book. In 1718, Richard Harden became both a deacon and a clerk of this church. He began to build a house, and to make improvements upon one of these lots set apart as pastors' and teachers' lots. "He was tempted with the notion that by destroying the record of those lots he could obtain that on which he lived, as common land; and behold *all* the records of the Swansea church, between 1663 and 1718 (a space of fifty-five years), were taken out of the book, and never have been recovered." The loss of all these records will explain, in part, why our Wheaton record is so meagre between 1663 and 1718.

Rev. Ephraim Wheaton was the next pastor, and was settled over it, as before mentioned, in 1704. The Rev. J. J. Thatcher, pastor, in 1863, said: "Mr. Wheaton appears to have been a man who exerted a great and good influence on the church, and on others, also, and the church was highly prosperous. According to the records we have, in about five years after, having become sole pastor, he baptized fifty into membership of the church." Of this revival, Rev. Mr. Wheaton gave an account in a letter to Mr. Thomas Hollis, of London, an eminent Baptist, and the generous founder of the Hollis Professorship in Harvard University, at Cambridge, he giving £1,400.

- Copied from: Family Record of Deacons James W Converse and Elisha S. Converse by William G, Hill (1887) pp44-52

Genealogy - Robert Fuller of Salem & Rehoboth

(His wife Mary was daughter of Richard Bowen)

Bowen

town as well as to the other churches in the colony. *(f)* The Court at Plymouth fined each member of Rev. Myles' Baptist group Ŀ 5, and prohibited them from worship for one month. The Court also advised their removal from Rehoboth to some place where they might not prejudice the existing church. *(g)*

Swansea is Founded by the Baptists

On March 5, 1667/8, the Plymouth General Court approved a new township at Wannamoisett (a part of Rehoboth), and certain adjacent areas, all of which became the township of Swansea. Here the Rev. Myles' Baptist church found freedom to resume activity. The leaders in the establishment of Swansea *(h)* were all Baptists as well as being the top officials and most influential men of Rehoboth. Stephen Paine, Sr., James Browne (son of John), and John Allen, Sr., made up Rehoboth's first board of Selectmen. They had been chosen by the Townsmen June 26, 1666. As soon as Swansea was organized they were removed from their town office in Rehoboth. Thus the full control of the Rehoboth church, and consequently the town, went back into the hands of Congregationalists and remained there for many years.

Rev. Noah Newman

In March 1667/8, Rev. Noah Newman (son of Rev. Samuel) was ordained the fourth minister of the Rehoboth Congregational Church. He was the religious teacher of the Rehoboth people for ten years. The town built and gave him a house in 1668, which was probably the largest and best in Rehoboth at that time. During King Philip's war it served as the principal of four garrison houses in the area and was the town's military headquarters. Many of the important military commanders met there to plan their campaign strategy. The Rehoboth town meetings also were held there during the war. Rev. Newman was thoroughly knowledgeable of people and

events. His advice and counsel was undoubtedly sought by both the military and the civil authorities. His guidance carried the Rehoboth people through the days and nights of the war when a courageous leader and sympathetic counsellor was sorely needed. He died in 1677.

Events Leading to King Philip's War

Much has been written concerning the events leading up to the Indian war which is known in history as King Philip's war. The war itself has been covered in much detail in several excellent books, some of which are listed in the bibliography. It was the most severe of all the Indian wars of colonial days.

King Philip was the planner, organizer and leader of this war which united many of the Indian tribes against the English. Philip, whose Indian name was Metacomet, was the younger son of Massasoit, Sachem of the Wampanoag tribe. Massasoit was a good friend of the English settlers during his lifetime and sold them much of his land including the Rehoboth area. He died in 1662 and his oldest son Wamsutta (named Alexander by the English), became Sachem. In less than a year, however, Wamsutta died from a fever. The leadership then passed to Philip.

Philip saw the ever-growing power of the white men, brooded on that which was past, and tried to surmise what was in the future for his people. He felt a growing concern over the increasing indications that their own way of life was slowly but surely being undermined by the English. Basic to the problem was the fact that the English were gaining more and more control over the lands which once belonged to the various Indian tribes. The greatly reduced territory of the Wampanoags was only one case of many where the white men had pushed the Indians aside and fenced them out of their former land.

In addition to taking their lands, which was clearly realized by the Indians, the English tried to make them live under English laws, and to convert them to the white man's religion. Both of these latter efforts were incompatible with the Indian way of life. Philip doubtless realized the alternatives were total submission to the English or a war to drive them from the country and restore the land to the Indians. His mind dwelt upon the possibility of uniting all of the Indian tribes for a powerful attempt to crush the English. He secretly conferred with other tribal leaders and formed an alliance with many of the tribes of New England.

(f) Rev. Samuel Newman died July 5, 1663. He was succeeded by Rev. Zachariah Symes, who however, was in poor health and could only partially carry on his duties. Rev. Myles, although a known Baptist, was employed to lighten Rev. Symes duties by preaching every other week. This of course, was not satisfactory, and Rev. Myles was dismissed.

(g) *Plymouth Colony Records*, Vol. IV, p. 162.

(h) Shortly after Swansea was organized, it was voted to divide and proportion the common lands according to three ranks. Persons of the first rank were to have three acres; the second rank would have two acres; and those of the third rank one acre. A committee of "first rank" officials decided the rank to which each inhabitant was classified. This method of proportioning land allotments was not used elsewhere in New England, and was abolished in Swansea after being in effect for nearly 25 years.

The number of Indians in southern New England at that time can not be accurately determined, but has been estimated at about 20,000. *(i)* The English population has been estimated at nearly twice that number, viz., Massachusetts Bay 16,000; Connecticut 10,000; Plymouth Colony 5,000; Rhode Island about 3,000, making a possible total of about 34,000. *(j)* It is doubtful that Philip knew the Indians were so heavily out-numbered. In any event his mind was filled with a single purpose.

On June 23, 1675, in Swansea, just across the line from Rehoboth, the opening shot was fired by a boy twenty years old when, at the order of his father, he shot and killed a pilfering Indian. The next day a band of Philip's Indians attacked Swansea, killing the boy and his father and a number of other inhabitants, thereby precipitating the war which became a struggle for the survival of the English race in New England.

During the following fourteen months of the war, much of the action took place in and near Rehoboth. It was the concentration point for some 700 Massachusetts and Plymouth Colony troops who gathered there to commence their march against the Narragansett Indians, which ended in the Narragansett Great Fort Fight on December 19, 1675. Other troop concentrations took place in Rehoboth during the war. Robert Fuller and his family witnessed and participated in these critical months. How this war affected Robert and his son Samuel is described in Chapter III.

(i) Douglas E. Leach, *Flintock and Tomahawk*, Chapter 1.

(j) Richard LeBaron Bowen and his *Early Rehoboth*, Vol. I, Chapter 1, has a detailed and scientific computation of the probable population in the year 1675 of the three colonies, Massachusetts Bay, Plymouth, and Connecticut.

VALUE OF ESTATES

Rehoboth Land Records, Book I

		Ł s d
1.	Mrs. Bur (Rich Ingram accepted in her place)	100-00-00
2.	Widdow Walker	50-00-00
3.	John Read	300-00-00
4.	John Cooke (wch still is in the townes hands)	300-00-00
5.	The Schoolmaister	50-00-00
6.	Will Cheesbrook	450-00-00
7.	Mr Winchester	195-00-00
8.	Richard Wright	834-00-00
9.	Mr Newman	330-00-00
10.	Will Smith	196-10-00
11.	Walter Palmer	419-00-00
12.	James Clark now John Perrums	71-00-00
13.	Ralph Shepard now James Redeways	121-10-00
14.	Zachariah Reads	50-00-00
15.	John Mathews	50-00-00
16.	John Perrum	67-00-00
17.	John Millar	69-10-00
18.	Samuel Butterworth	50-00-00
19.	George Kendrick	50-00-00
20.	Abram Martin	60-10-00
21.	The Teacher	100-00-00
22.	Edward Sarle	81-00-00
23.	John Browne	50-00-00
24.	Mr Howward	250-00-00
25.	Mr Peck	535-00-00
26.	Obadiah Holmes now Robert Wheatons	100-00-00
27.	Edward Smith	252-00-00
28.	Job. Lane now Robert Abells	50-00-00
29.	Thomas Hitt	101-00-00
30.	James Walker now John ffitches	50-00-00
31.	Thomas Blyss	153-00-00
32.	The Governors Lott now Richard Bullocks	200-00-00
33.	Isaack Martin now Thomas Wilmots	50-00-00
34.	Robert Morris	94-10-00
35.	Edward Bennet now Rich. Bowens Junior	184-10-00
36.	The Pastor	100-00-00
37.	Mr Henry Smith	260-00-00
38.	Mathew Pratt	236-00-00
39.	John Meggs	120-00-00
40.	Thomas Clifton now Stephen Paynes Junior	160-00-00

		Ł s d
41.	Joseph Tory now John Pecks	134-00-00
42.	Tho. Cooper	367-00-00
43.	Robert ffuller	150-00-00
44.	John Allen	156-00-00
45.	Ralph Allen	270-00-00
46.	Edward Gillman now Joseph Pecks	306-10-00
47.	Tho: Houlbrook	186-10-00
48.	Will Carpenter	254-10-00
49.	John Houlbrook now Nicholas Ides	83-10-00
50.	Robert Titus now Robert Jones	156-10-00
51.	Will Sabin	53-00-00
52.	Stephen Payne	535-00-00
53.	Mr Browne but now three hundred & the other Ł 300 comonidg was given to Capt Willet by the towne the 28 of the 12 month 1660.	600-00-00
54.	Edward Patteson now John Woodcocks	50-00-00
55.	Peter Hunt & one hundred pound more added to it afterwards by the consent of the Towne.	327-00-00
56.	Robert Martin	228-10-00
57.	Robert Sharp but now Rice Lenerds	106-00-00
58.	Richard Bowen	270-00-00

This listing of estates was not dated but was probably done a few years before the new book was completed and approved by the town in 1668. Most of the above proprietors were on the original list of estate values made in 1643 or 1644. The original list is in *Rehoboth Town Meetings*, Book I, but is faded and difficult to read and part of one page has been torn off.

CHAPTER II

ROBERT^1 FULLER

ca 1616 – 1706

Robert's Arrival in America

The probability that Robert Fuller of Salem came to America in 1638, appears to be the result of research by Francis H. Fuller of Jamaica Plain, Massachusetts. *(a)* That he came on the ship "Bevis" appears to have been first published in 1898 by Newton Fuller of New London, Connecticut in his *Fuller Memorial.* His opening paragraph states: "Robert Fuller of Salem, according to the best evidence at our command, came from Southampton, England, in the ship Bevis, in the year 1638." Neither of these assumptions is documented, which is unfortunate, as both of these writers were experienced genealogists, and we believe that they must have had a reasonable source on which to base their statements. The "Bevis" is on record as making one voyage to America, sailing in May 1638 from the port of Southampton, but the published list *(b)* of about 60 passengers does not include any Fuller. There is, of course, the possibility that Robert worked for his passage across as an ordinary sailor, in which case his name would not have been on any list of

---

(a) Cf: *New York Genealogical Biographical Society*, Vol. 33, p. 172.

(b) In his *Topographical Dictionary of 2885 English Emigrants to New England, 1620-1650*, by C. E. Banks, there is no Robert Fuller listed. Neither is his name in John C. Hotten's *Original Lists of Persons of Quality from Great Britain to the American Plantations from 1600 to 1700*. On page 298 is the "Bevis" passenger list.

passengers. In his *Planters of the Commonwealth,* C. E. Banks states that in 1638 Governor Winslow ceased to record arrivals of ships, but about September 1st he recorded that more than 20 ships came over during the summer with at least 3,000 persons. Robert could have been one of this large group of unrecorded emigrants.

Early Years in Salem

The earliest record of Robert^1 Fuller in Massachusetts is in *Salem Town Records,* Book I. The selectmen met on November 18, 1639, and on the record of this meeting is found this entry:

> Robert ffuller desires accomodation, 5 acres to plant.

The record does not tell us whether or not the selectmen granted his desire. It is very probable that they did, as they approved many many requests for land during these early years when there were many new arrivals in town. In his *History of Salem,* Vol. II, p. 74, Sidney Perley states: "At this meeting was the first appearance of Robert Fuller."

A list of the first settlers of Salem to 1651, published by J. B. Felt in his *Annals of Salem,* includes Robert Fuller and the date 1639. This is a list of those settlers who were not members of the First Church of Salem. The names of the church members to 1650 are on a separate list, but Robert is not included. These two lists of the early settlers have been corrected and revised by J. D. Phillips in his *Salem in the 17th Century,* but no change was made regarding Robert. The lists were made from early town and church records. They include the first period when Robert was living in Salem.

An extensive list of freemen is published in *Massachusetts Bay Records,* and in Vol. II, p. 378, is recorded:

> made free the 2th 4th mo 1641
> Rob^{rt} ffuller
> Willi: ffuller *(c)*

It is not stated that this was Robert of Salem. *(d)* The fact that he was not included among the church members by J. B. Felt raises an interesting question. A freeman had the privilege of being allowed to vote and to hold public office, but others could not. At that time

---

(c) William Fuller is on record as coming to New England with his brother John in 1634. We have no direct evidence that they were related to Robert.

(d) There is a possibility that this was Robert Fuller of Dorchester, later of Dedham, who is said to have come to New England about 1640.

there was a rule that no one could become a freeman unless he was a member of the Congregational church. No one could be a member of the church except by consent of the minister. It seems probable, however, that the rule of the church membership was not rigidly enforced. Robert of Salem may have been one of the exceptions who obtained his freedom from the court, but was not yet accepted as a member of the church.

We find Robert called as a witness in a case before the Salem Court held March 30, 1641/2. The case is recorded in *Quarterly Courts of Essex County,* Vol. I, p. 25:

> Ruben Guppi to be severely whipped for running away to the Estward fro his wyfe great wth childe: for stealing & Blasfemie Lying & Swearing – in complaint of W^{m} Vincent. Rob^{t} Pease complained that Guppi had stolen his axe. O^{r} Collonell finds him to be a thief not only in stealing wood axes but Sargeant Dixie and others had seen a hen in Guppis breeches. Samuel Fuller *(e)* & Robert Fuller testified that they went to Guppis house and Guppi said that he did not go to meeting and that the paring of his nails and a chip were as acceptable to God as the day of thanksgiving. He also swore.

There is one more item in early Salem records concerning Robert:

> The 4th of the ffirst moneth (March) 1643, at a pticular meeting of the seven men: Graunted to Robert ffuller 20 acres of Land at Jeffryes Creeke to be layed out by the Towne, if he dwell there, otherwise to desert the Land.

Jeffries Creek is an inlet from the sea and is now known as Manchester harbor. A village was formed in the area in 1640 by 17 families, and Salem people were invited to take up land and settle there. By order of the General Court in 1645, the area was to be called Manchester. The early records of Manchester are not in existence, but it seems certain that Robert did not accept this offer of 20 acres. Sidney Perley in his *History of Salem,* Vol. II, p. 156 and p. 174, states that he (Robert) "probably went away without coming into its possession." From evidence given later in this chapter, it appears that Robert was more interested in the new settlement at Rehoboth.

(e) This Samuel Fuller was perhaps one of the Samuels from Plymouth, either Dr. Samuel's son or Edward's son. There does not appear to have been any Samuel Fuller living in Salem at the time of this trial.

Robert's Marriage and Family

The early Salem Vital Records do not tell us of Robert's marriage, nor the birth dates of his children. By means of other documentary evidence quoted later in this chapter, we know that Robert Fuller's wife was Sarah Bowen, daughter of Richard Bowen. It would be interesting to know where and when Robert first met Sarah. He might have known her in England. Possibly they came to New England on the same ship. It is perhaps more probable that he met her in Salem shortly after he arrived there, as the Bowens were in Salem before moving to Weymouth, and then in 1643 to Rehoboth. Robert and Sarah may have been married in Salem about the time he requested land for planting in November 1639.

The names and probable birth years of Robert's children have been published by Newton Fuller in his Fuller Memorial as follows:

Johnathan	c. 1640	(24)
Elizabeth	c. 1645	(27)
John	c. 1647	(26)
Samuel	c. 1649	(24)
Abigail	c. 1653	
Benjamin	c. 1657	(27)

The probable age of marriage is noted in parenthesis. They are consistent with usual ages of first marriage in those years, and accordingly furnish an approximate check on the birth years offered by Newton Fuller. In the case of Benjamin, we have a confirmation from the record of the Rowden court trial of November 3, 1680 in Salem. This trial is quoted later, but the fact that the record states "Benjamin Fuller, age about 22 years," puts the year of his birth at about 1657. In a deed dated May 28, 1696, Robert calls Jonathan his eldest son. Other deeds of Robert gives us the names of his sons John, Samuel, and Benjamin. Elizabeth is identified as Robert's daughter in the division of her Uncle William Bowen's estate in 1687 which is recorded in *Bristol County Deeds* Book 1, p. 67. We can find no direct or indirect confirmation of daughter Abigail.

As we have no recorded birth of any of Robert's children, we can only assume that the first four were born in Salem and the last two perhaps in Rehoboth. Although it would be helpful to know the exact date and place of birth, it is not of essential importance in view of other facts we have concerning their later years. *Rehoboth Vital Records,* Book 1, gives us the marriage dates for Jonathan, Elizabeth, John, Samuel, and for Benjamin's second marriage.

Robert was a Bricklayer

There is no doubt about Robert being a bricklayer (mason) by trade, as he is repeatedly so specified in legal documents. Prior to reaching age 21, he must have served an apprenticeship for a number of years. It seems highly probable that he would have completed his apprenticeship before coming to New England.

We have to disagree with Newton Fuller's statement that he was the "first and only bricklayer in New England for many years." Salem had a source of good clay to make bricks, tiles, and earthen pots. The first brick kiln was in operation there in 1629. There were bricklayers in the Colony as early as 1630. At the first Court of Assistants held that year in Charlestown, the rate of pay for mechanics was fixed by an order to the effect that carpenters, joiners, sawyers, bricklayers, and thatchers should receive no more than two shillings a day. The order was repealed the following year, as it was found that it discouraged skilled labor which was not too plentiful. In Sidney Perley's *History of Salem,* Vol. I, p. 303, we find "Richard Adams and wife came from Northampton (to Salem) in the ship "Abigail" in 1635. He was a bricklayer by trade and 29 years old. He probably removed to Charlestown or Malden." The foregoing seems to be good evidence that the Bay Colony was reasonably well provided with bricklayers several years before the arrival of Robert in 1639.

Early Years in Salem

During his early years in Salem, when the town was growing rapidly, Robert doubtless had plenty of work building fireplaces, bake ovens and chimneys. Some would have been built of brick, but field stones were more commonly used. Foundations and cellar walls were also part of his work. Some houses were back-plastered on walls and ceilings with lime mortar to keep the house warmer. Much of his time was spent in gathering the bricks or stones and lime in preparation. A drag or sledge made of heavy planks and drawn by his horse, was a simple and practical method to transport his heavy materials. His trade required rugged strength as well as skill.

Some of his customers might have paid him in currency, but by order of the General Court October 7, 1640, debts need not be paid in money, but could be paid in corn at 4 shillings per bushel, barley at 5 shillings per bushel, wheat and peas at 6 shillings per bushel, or in cattle, fish, or other commodities. For Robert, this was no hardship as he did comparatively little farming.

Salem records from March 1643 through 1650 have no further items concerning Robert or his family. As will be seen later, his name begins to appear in Rehoboth records during this period and he was granted land there in 1645. He was probably dividing his time between Salem and Rehoboth, with work available in both towns. The decision to move his family from Salem may not have been an easy one for him to make.

Robert and Family Move to Rehoboth

The earliest record indicating that Robert had actually moved with his family to Rehoboth is in *Rehoboth Town Meetings,* Book I. On page 14, the various ear marks of animals owned by some of the proprietors are listed and described. Robert is listed at the bottom of the page, which has been worn and torn so badly that only part of the original entry is readable. The page is titled:

> yeare 1651
> ye markes of Beastes

The item concerning Robert reads:

> Robert ffuller his eare mark is . . . (torn)
> & a slitt in ye right eare & the . . . (torn)
> w^{ch} some call a spare mark.

In these early years, when all horses, cattle, and other animals were turned out to common pasturage, these ear marks were important as a means of identifying the owner. It was required that they be recorded with the Town Clerk. The day and month of the above entry is not given, but the year 1651 is the first list in which Robert's name is included. As the calendar year began in March, Robert could have been in Rehoboth in time to do his spring planting in 1651. There is also the possibility that he came in the summer or fall of 1650. Perley in his *History of Salem* Vol. II, p. 75, states "About 1650, Robert Fuller, bricklayer, removed to Rehoboth."

By that time, Robert was well known by many of the settlers in Rehoboth. Since the settlement of the town in 1643, he had doubtless visited his wife's relatives, the Bowens. It is also probable that he had been employed by some of the settlers to build their chimneys and fireplaces. He did work for the town as early as 1645/6 as recorded in a list of town debts found on page 18 of *Rehoboth Town Meetings* Book I.

> . . . 11th month (January) 1645 work Endepted by the town . . .
> . . . (torn) . . . t ffuller 1-2-6

Although the entry is dated January, the work was done some months previously. Robert probably charged two or two and a half shillings per day while working at his trade, in which case he worked about nine or more days for the town. The nature of the work done is not recorded.

It was in December 1645, that he was granted land in Rehoboth by vote of the Townsmen. This is described in detail later in the section "Rehoboth Early Land Records Concerning Robert Fuller." Five or more years elapsed from the time he was given this land until he actually settled in Rehoboth. During this time he held his land by paying the taxes. He also built his house on his "home lot" at the southwest end of the "Ring of Green." Five years was a long time to delay his move from Salem, but he undoubtedly had more work to do at his trade in the Salem area than there was available in and near Rehoboth. In many respects, his wife Sarah and the children were better off and safer in the established town of Salem than they would have been in the limited facilities of a new and distant settlement. Ultimately, however, the time came to make the move.

Much is left to the imagination in attempting to look back to 1650 and decide how a move of this magnitude would have been accomplished. The exact ages of the four children of Sarah and Robert are not known, but the oldest, Jonathan, was about ten, and Samuel the youngest, was about two years old. They had some furniture as well as their household goods and clothing to be moved. Cattle and other farm animals could have been sold before the move, but they would need their horses. The overland distance from Salem to Rehoboth is about 60 miles, but at best there were only Indian trails to follow, and such a journey would have been slow and hazardous. Salem was a busy seaport, and there were many sailing vessels available to travel around the Cape, as most of the inter-colony commerce was handled that way. This was the easiest and safest method for Sarah and the children, especially in good weather. The distance by water is about 200 miles. In any event, the journey was accomplished, and the family settled in Rehoboth for a quarter of a century.

Sarah had Relatives in Rehoboth

✓ Sarah did not find herself wholly among strangers, as other members of the Bowen family were already well established in Rehoboth. Her father, Richard^1 Bowen, was among the first settlers, as were her sister Ruth and husband George Kendrick. Her brother Richard, not yet married, lived with his father and step-mother. Sarah's sister Alice and husband Robert Wheaton, had their home lot adjoining the Fullers. Her brother Obadiah and wife Mary also appear to have been living in Rehoboth about then.

Robert goes to Plymouth Court

At the annual election of town officers on May 14, 1652, Robert was chosen to be one of the two Grand Jurymen from Rehoboth. On June 2, 3, and 4, the Grand Enquest of 20 Jurors met at Plymouth, with Robert attending. Their proceedings are recorded in *Plymouth Colony Court Orders,* Vol. III, p. 9. They discussed numerous subjects and made twelve presentments. This same jury met again in Plymouth for six more sessions before it was discharged and a new group was elected June 7, 1653.

At this June 1652 session of the Court, the names of several Rehoboth men, including Robert's, were placed before the Court of Elections to take up their freedom. Quoting from the record:

> Att the General Court of Elections holden att Plym̃ for the Jurisdiction of new Plym̃ the 3d of June 1652, Bradford, Gouvernor. The names of such as stand propounded to take up their freedom . . . Robert ffuller . . . .

Robert delayed taking the oath of fidelity at this time, and was again propounded at the General Court of Elections in 1655.

Robert's Land Recorded in 1652

In February 1652 Robert purchased most of William Devel's land and also his £ 75 of Rehoboth Commonage Rights. This made a total of £ 150 owned by Robert. At this time he held about 65 acres of land in Rehoboth and was well established as a proprietor. Shortly after his purchase from Devel, he recorded all of his land holdings and Commonage with the Rehoboth Town Clerk.

Indian Complaints

Robert was appointed to a special committee to deal with certain complaints made by the Indians. At the town meeting held on 2d of 11 month (January) 1652/3 . . . "likewise Walter Palmer, Robert fuller and Henry Smith are intrusted to answer the complaynt against Ashemecom (Massasoit) and what charges that be att to be payd by the towne." The nature of the complaint was not recorded. It appears to have been due to the horses or cows or other animals of the Rehoboth owners getting into the Indian's cornfields, resulting in considerable damage. At the town meeting held October 25, 1653, it was then "agreed on by the town that the Indians should have four pounds in wampum in recompence of the damage they have suffered in their corn by hogs and horses this two years."

Robert Becomes a Freeman in Plymouth Colony

On June 8, 1655, Robert was again propounded to take up his freedom by the Plymouth Court.*(f)* However, he again delayed in taking the oath of fidelity. The Rehoboth record of February 22,1657/8 reads: "these men whose names are heare subscribed are accepted as the freemen of the town to take up their freedom, viz., . . . Robert ffuller . . . " (and eight others). Twelve years later, a list of Rehoboth men, 31 names in all, was recorded at Plymouth under date of May 29, 1670.*(g)* This was, in effect, a list of the voters in Rehoboth on that date. Robert was included.

Considering the long delay of six years from the time his name was first proposed at the Plymouth Court in 1652, to 1658 when he was recorded by Rehoboth as one of the freemen, it would seem that Robert was hoping to exempt himself from public service by refusing to take the oath. As far as can be determined however, Robert was a loyal Congregationalist, and apparently believed that the oath of allegiance to the state conflicted with his allegiance to God and the church. He was not alone in holding this belief.It probably was the real reason for his delay in taking the lengthy formal oath after moving to Rehoboth. There were many other men who either refused to take the oath, or who took it reluctantly in order to be able to vote and participate in town affairs. Shortly after coming to the throne in 1660, Charles II ordered that qualifications of a freeman should be based entirely upon standards outside of church membership.

Rehoboth Ordered to Prepare a Book of Land Records

The divisions of the common lands made to the Rehoboth proprietors since the settling of the town in 1643, were causing an increasing number of boundary problems. Laying out the lots for the

---

(f) Plymouth Colony Court Orders, Vol. III, p. 78.
(g) Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. V, pp. 278, 279.

individual proprietors was not done by professional survey, but rather by committees of townspeople who did the best they could with limited equipment and experience. Apparently no official town records were made of the boundaries of individual allotments. Each proprietor knew about where his various tracts of land were located, and probably had boundary markers of a sort. Since the first division there had been changes in ownership of many lots. Some of the original owners had died or left town, which added further uncertainties to the ensuing boundary problems. The General Court at Plymouth took action on the matter in 1654, by ordering the town of Rehoboth to prepare a book of land records. Each tract of land was to be bounded and measured and set down in the record book under the owner's name. It was a difficult task to accomplish. It was not until the town meeting of November 12, 1655 that the town took formal action as follows:

> It was also agreed upon that these men whose names are heare expressed were chosen to settle lotts layd out as it may be least prejudicial both as to the generall & pticular
>
> Peter Hunt
> Steven Payne Junior
> Henry Smith
> Robert ffuller
> Richard Bowen Junior
> Nicholas Peck

More Meadow Land Acquired

The need for meadow land reached a point where, at the town meeting held February 23, 1657/8, it was voted:

> that all the meadows lying on the north side of the town which were given and granted to the town by the Court, shall be laid out according to person and estate. At the same time those men who are here subscribed have promised to go and see what meadows they can find on the north side of the town: that they may notify our town to their best judgement what quantity there may be of it, and this they do freely on their own charge.

This land, which later became part of the Rehoboth North Purchase, had been granted to Rehoboth by the Plymouth Court, but had not then been purchased from the Indians. However, the necessity for more meadow land was great, and in accordance with their promise made at the above town meeting, ten men agreed to go for two days each. William Carpenter agreed to go for three days, and Robert Fuller agreed to go for one day. Evidently the investigators reported favorably on their findings, as on June 22, 1658, lots were drawn by 49 proprietors for this meadow land, Robert drawing No. 45.

Robert on Special Jury at Plymouth

At the Plymouth General Court held March 1, 1658/9, a jury of fifteen was impaneled to render a verdict on the drowning of a Rhode Island man. Robert was No. 5 on the panel. Governor Thomas Prence presided. The jury reported as follows:

> Wee, whose names are underwritten, doe testify, that Nathaneell West, a stranger to us, belonging to Road Iland, being by Gods providence amongst us, and being under cure of an infirmitie of his body, it appeers that hee had occasion to goe to Providence, and goeing upon the iyce, it brake, and hee fell in and was drowned: when his body was taken up, it appeered to us that his death was in noe way violent or wilfull, but accidentall as farr as wee apprehend.
>
> Mr. Joseph Peck, Mr. Stephen Paine, and Thomas Cooper were not att the takeing of him up; but when hee was brought to the towne, they found him to bee as above expressed, to theire best apprehensions. John Perrum and Gorg̃ Kenericke did alsoe see him, and found as above mentioned.
>
> Phillip Walker, Cunstable
> Lieftenant Hunt
> John Read
> Roger Annadowne
> Robertt Fuller
> Robert Wheaton
> Anthony Perry
> Thomas Wilmoth
> Daniell Smith
> Edward Hall
> James Reddaway
> Nicholas Iyde
> John Martin
> Richard Bullocke
> Richard Bowen

Town Debts Due Robert

In *Rehoboth Town Meetings* Book I, pages 199 through 202, are listed names and amounts due for labor over a period of several years. These debts were approved for payment by vote of the town. The following amounts are listed as due Robert:

Year 1653 - - - Ł 2 - 4 - 0
Year 1655 - - - Ł 0 - 6 - 6
Year 1658 - - - Ł 0 - 10 - 0
Year 1659 - - - Ł 0 - 2 - 0

Tax Assessments

Robert seemed to earn money almost every year by working for the town, and sometimes it was more than enough to pay for his taxes. As taxes could be paid with certain farm products, Robert in turn, was doubtless paid for his labor in wheat or corn at the fixed price per bushel. The first detailed tax assessment recorded in the *Rehoboth Town Meetings* Book I, was for a rate made the 22th of the 10mo (December) 1657. Robert's tax was Ł 0 - 4 - 4. The highest tax on this list was for 18 shillings and the lowest was for four pence.

Although taxes were levied every year, and oftener on occasion, the amount levied against each proprietor was infrequently recorded in the Town Meetings Book. A detailed tax list was recorded on January 29, 1663/4 and shows Robert Fuller Ł 0 - 4 - 6, which was only two pence more than his tax in 1657. The total tax to be raised in 1663/4 was Ł 16 - 9 - 10.

Land and Road Maintenance

The town meeting held on March 14, 1659/60, voted on a number of items including the following:

> Item: John Perrum. George Kendrick, and Robert fuller is to burne the woods about the said fence and to be paid at the towns charge.

The said fence was one between Mr. John Brown's land and the town land. Burning the "woods about the fence" was a periodic requirement voted at town meeting. The fence was the general fence around the "Ring of the Green" built by each proprietor along his own boundary line.

At the town meeting held May 21, 1661, election of officers for the ensuing year was held. John Read and Robert ffuller were chosen way-wardens. They were thereby responsible for whatever maintenance the existing roads required, and for laying out new roads voted by the town. The early town records do not imply that this was a paid position.

At the April 2, 1662 town meeting it was time to burn the brush again, and it was voted:

> John Perrum & Robert ffuller were chosen to burne about ye ffence yt stands between the towne & the purchasers & to be done wth soth convenient speed as may be.

Another Jury Case for Robert

> Att a Court of Assistants att Ply. 7 May 1661 A verdict of Jury ordered to bee recorded. *(h)*
>
> The 23d of the 12th 1660
> Ꝑsons nominated by the Constable
>
> Mr. Joseph Pecke
> Father Bowin
> Deacon Cooper
> Lieftenant Hunt
> John Read
> Robert fuller
> William Sabin
> Henery Smith
> Joseph Pecke
> John Perren
> John Smith
> Richard Bowin Juni^{r}
>
> This jury haue heard what any ꝑson or ꝑsons could euidence conserning William Day his being found in his masters barne dead: and they doe all in one voyce deliuer this in as theire verdict: that the forenamed William Day was a selfe murderer.
>
> Attested upon oath before mee
> this 7th Day of Aprill 1661
> Thomas Willett

Second Group Appointed to Establish Boundaries

The leading proprietors were becoming seriously concerned about the uncertainty of the boundary lines of the town itself as well as those of the individually owned tracts of land. The first group appointed November 12, 1655, appear to have acted only to settle specific boundary questions. There was much work still to be done to comply with the order of the Plymouth Court to prepare the new book of Rehoboth land records. At the town meeting held April ye 20th, 1663:

> it was ordered yt Ensigne Smith should run the Lyne of the towne bounds and Joseph Peck and Nicholas Peck, Robert Fuller, William Carpenter, Jonathan Bliss, and Richard Bowen should assist him in the work and yt theay should begin the third week in May or before if theay see cause and if theay want more help theay are to have it. And Ensigne Smith is to have five shillings a day and the rest to have three shillings six pence a day

This was a very definite and forceful instruction to get the job done, and the town was willing to pay well to have it accomplished. However, as will be noted later, this group did not complete the task, and another group was chosen three years later.

(h) Plymouth Colony Court Records, Vol. III, p. 213.

Working on the town boundaries, Robert seems to have discovered something wrong with the boundaries claimed by John Allen for a tract of land at Palmers River. *(i)* At the town meeting held on May 6, 1664, we find that:

> Robert fuller did openly protest against the Recording and bounding of John Allens Lands . . . (illegible) . . . wch Land Lyes at Plamers River, in his bounding it on the River, for Robert ffuller Challanges a propriety by the river syde wth in the said John Allens bounds as he hath recorded it in the new towne booke.

In the completed *Rehoboth Land Records* Book I, which was accepted by the voters in 1668, the "Lands of John Allen Sr" are listed. Item 12 reads "My lot at Palmers River cont. seaventy two akers more or less bounded by . . . ." The boundaries are not recorded, and this may be the result of Robert's protest. It appears that John Allen refused to pay taxes on this undefined property, pending final agreement on the boundaries. The town took the matter to Plymouth Court, and on March 5, 1671, the Court decreed:

> Regarding Mr. Allins unpaid rate it is ordered by the Court that said Mr. John Allin of Swansey shall pay to Robert ffuller of Rehoboth the sum of thirty shillings . . . ."

Two years previously, Robert as constable, had been responsible for collecting taxes in the Palmer River area, and apparently was unsuccessful in making a collection from Mr. Allen at that time. There is nothing on the record to indicate whether the boundary question was also settled to Robert's satisfaction.

Robert Named Overseer in Thomas^2 Bowen's Will

Thomas^2 Bowen, son of Richard Bowen, died in Rehoboth in 1663. His will dated April 11, 1663, names his wife Elizabeth as executrix, and his "brother-in-law Robert Fuller," as one of the two overseers. This is further confirmation that Robert married Sarah, sister of Thomas Bowen. The will is quoted in full in *Mayflower Descendant*, Vol. 16, p. 128.

(i) John Allen was one of the earliest settlers of Rehoboth. He held important offices, and was one of the first group of three selectmen elected in 1666. He was a Baptist and one of the leading men in founding the town of Swansea in 1667/8. He was well-to-do, and appears to have held Ł 411 in Rehoboth Commonage, as well as one share in the Rehoboth North Purchase. He resided in Swansea and was a "first rank" proprietor of that town.

Jury Called for Another Drowning Case

Another jury verdict in which Robert participated is recorded in Vol. III, p. 83 of *Plymouth Colony Court Orders.* The jury was assembled at Rehoboth on August 7, 1664. Their verdict was:

> Wee, whose names are subscribed hereto, doe hereby signify to all ꝑsons whom it may concerne, that Elizabeth Walker, the daughter of Phillip Walker, of the town of Rehoboth, was accidentally drowned: shee, being sent to scoole, was found Alsoe accedentally in the river first by two youthes; they makeing knowne the same to two wemen, the wife of Nicholas Iyde, and the wife of Roger Annadowne, then to William Sabin, whoe forthwith came and drew her out of the water, as hee saith. From the testimony of the afor specifyed ꝑsons, together with other concurring cercomstances, wee the subscribers, conceive that the child, which was two yeares and an halfe old, before specifyed, came accedentally to her end.
>
> Stephen Paine, Seni^r
> Thomas Cooper
> John Read, Seni^r
> Peter Hunt
> John Perram
> Robert Fuller
> Anthony Perry
> Nicholas Pecke
> John Fitch
> Henery Smith
> John Butterworth
> Daniell Smith
>
> March 1, 1664.
> The jury gave in this verdict upon oath before
> Josias Winslow, Assistant.

It is of interest to note that a two and a half year old child was attending school, and was expected to walk there by herself.

Robert Witnesses a Release of Indenture

Robert Fuller, Thomas Southworth, and Nathaniel Southworth, on a document dated October 10, 1664, witnesses a release of Indenture of Thomas Morton and John Andrews who were bound to Nathaniel Warren. The document outlined method of payments, totalling Ł 25 each, by Morton and Andrews. All of the men lived in Plymouth except Robert, who apparently was in Plymouth at that time on other business. Cf: *Plymouth Colony Court Orders,* Vol. IV, p. 78, for the rather lengthy text of this Indenture.

Robert's Oldest Son, Jonathan, Marries

The first of Robert's children to marry was his oldest son, Jonathan, who married Elizabeth Wilmarth on December 14, 1664. She was the oldest daughter of Thomas^1 and Elizabeth (Bliss) Wilmarth. The ceremony presumably was performed by Mr. Joseph Peck, as he had been appointed by the Plymouth Court to "administer marriage" at Rehoboth. In the early years of the colony ministers did not perform marriages.

Land Divisions Voted but not Executed

A town meeting held February 14, 1664/5, voted in favor of another division of the common lands:

> . . . agreed that there should be a Division of Lands Layd out fourthwith for the supplying of mens nessesities to ye value of twelve or fifteen hundred akers, w^{ch} the Committe shall think meete, as alsoe to see where it might be the most Convenient for the towns use & least prejudicial and the towne gave them power to see it performed. The Committe Chosen by the towne ware Stephen Payne Sen^r, Ensigne Smith, Nicholas Peck, William Sabin, Robert ffuller, Phillip Walker, Anthony Perry, Richard Bowen Junior, Jonathan Bliss.

From the records, it does not appear that this division was laid out by this committee, because at the town meeting a year later, a new vote was taken and a new committee chosen. Perhaps the necessity for more land was not as urgent as certain of the voters thought, or the committee couldn't agree upon the location for this division. It seems more probable, however, that there was a determined minority who felt it was more essential to first define and bound all of the lands previously allotted to each proprietor before dividing out any more of the common land and thereby increasing the boundary problem. Although not stated in the records, Robert very possibly was one of a minority group which was against making further land divisions until the New Book of Land Records was completed and sent to Plymouth Court. It had then been over ten years since the Court had ordered Rehoboth to make up a new book of land records.

There appears, however, to have been much pressure for another land division, and no difficulty in getting a majority of the proprietors to so vote. At the February 6, 1665/6 town meeting the matter was again voted on:

> The Town being met together it was agreed by vote that Two thousand acres of Land should be Laid oute according to the Person & Estate for the supplying mens necessities. Leut. Hunt, Henery Smith, Nicholas Peck, Anthony Perry & Joseph Peck were chosen by the Town to se where the Land may be found as may be most conveanant to answer the Towns End and their shall be a Town meeting ye first Tuesday in April that those persons made Choice of may bring in their Return to the Town concerning the fore mentioned Land.

It is to be noted that six of the men named to the previous committee, including Robert Fuller, were not reappointed to the new committee. These men were, in all probability, the minority group opposed to laying out a new division at this time.

The new committee apparently took little or no action, and the proposed town meeting, scheduled for the following April is not on record. It was not a good time of the year for the committee to accomplish this task, as it would interfere with spring planting. To locate and lay out lots on two thousand acres would take a great deal of their time, and it should be noted that the town did not vote to pay them, nor the previous committee, to do this work. Three more years elapsed before a division of the common lands was actually made. In the meantime, the townspeople evidently became convinced of the necessity of completing the boundary records, and also decided that those who were to do the work should be paid.

Another Boundary Committee Chosen

The town meeting held March 23, 1666/7 resulted in the following action on this important matter:

> It was voted and agreed upon that the bounds of the towne shall be Layd out forthwth. Henry Smith, Wm Carpender, Joseph Peck & Nicholas Peck, Robert Fuller and Nicholas Ide were Chosen by the towne to doe it & to have 3^s 6^d a Day every man till the work be done and to begin the work the next second Day if the weather be seasonable after the date hearof.

The Book of Land Records is Completed

It appears to have been the work of this group of men who completed the project, and thus enabled the new book of land records to be finished and presented to the town for approval. This was done at the town meeting held May 13, 1668 and –

> It was votted and agreed upon that the New Booke of Records should be Recorded at plymouth this next June Court.

The original book of *Rehoboth Land Records,* now at Bristol County Registry of Deeds, Taunton, contains about 550 parcels of land distributed among 58 proprietors, and also the lands allotted to the pastor, the teacher, and the schoolmaster.

Land Divisions in the North Purchase Area

At an earlier town meeting, April 10, 1668, it had been voted to lay out meadows in the North Purchase area, and a committee was chosen to do it. Lots were drawn May 26, 1668 by 76 proprietors, Robert drawing No. 55. Each share owner probably received about two or three acres of meadow.

Another town meeting which voted for a land division in the North Purchase area was held March 1, 1668/9, and each full share owner received 50 acres. Robert drew No. 68.

Robert Elected Constable

The town meeting of May 13, 1668, which approved the new land record book for the Plymouth Court, also elected the town officers and made appointments for the ensuing year. Robert and his brother-in-law, George Kendrick, were chosen constables for one year. The Rehoboth elections were confirmed and approved:

> Att the General Court of Elections held att Plymouth the third Day of June, Anno Dom̃ 1668, Prence Gou^r,
>
> Constables of Rehoboth –
> Robert ffuller
> George Kendricke

In addition to their duties of keeping the peace, making arrests, serving warrants, etc., the constables were also the town tax collectors. Rates were made by the Townsmen, who gave the tax lists to the constables to collect. Three tax lists were made for the year 1668 and given to the constables for collection.

> There was a rate made the second day of July 1668, which amounts to the sum of £ 15 delivered into the constables hand, viz. George Kendrick and Robert ffuller.
>
> There was a rate made the 9th of December 1668 . . . of £ 22-10-0, to answer the warrant for Country charges and delivered to Constables, viz. George Kenderick and Robert ffuller.
>
> There was a rate made by the Townsmen the 25 of December (1668) delivered unto Robert ffuller and George Kendricks hands the sume of £ 11-19-4½ to be paid to Captaine Willett.

Thus Robert and his brother-in-law were given three separate collections to make in less than six months. As taxes were mostly paid in farm products at prices set by the Townsmen, it meant measuring grain or appraising other commodities and cattle. In a few cases they may have handled currency. It is of interest to note that the May 13, 1668 town meeting discussed the difficulty of transporting the Country rate, and a committee was chosen to file a petition with the Plymouth Court. The outcome was not recorded, but the fact that the problem of handling the products offered in payment of taxes was the subject of town meeting consideration, indicates that both the collectors and also the town treasurer faced a growing problem. It was the duty of the treasurer to use the tax collections to pay the town debts. He doubtless had a varying storage and handling problem.

Robert's Accounting with the Town

A list of debts owed by the town was approved for payment at the town meeting of April 6, 1669. One item reads:

> Rob. ffuller for one Jurney to Court – – £ 0-12-0

George Kendrick may have gone with Robert, as he also was paid the same amount for "one Jurney to Court." There is no clue as to why this journey to Plymouth was made. The trip would have been about forty miles each way on horseback, in addition to the time spent at the court.

Their first accounting of their tax collections is recorded in *Rehoboth Town Meetings* Book I, page 210:

> Robert ffuller and George Kendricke paid to Captaine Willet the sum of £ 11-19-2; at Corne 3^s ye Bushell upon the account of the 3 Barrels of porke for which they had a discharge ye 16th of December 1669.

The next accounting was made with the Townsmen at their meeting held February 21, 1669 and –

> accounted wth Robert ffuller and George Kendricke, Constables in 1668, for ther rates, two Country rate and a rate made for the Captain Willett and all accounts balanced and the towne is in thire dept 7^s: More, the towne in Rob. ffullers and George Kendricks dept for firkins & salt 4^s, the 11^s is to be paid to Robert fuler upon agreement.

Another list of debts owed by the town was made under date of April 12, 1670 and included the following due Robert:

Rob. ffuller: for going to Taunton: & firkins and salt	£ 00-08-06
Rob. fuller: for Lyming the walls and sealing over Head and Laying the Harthe, for washing and coullering, mending and pointing the seller	£ 04-04-00
Rob. fuller: for getting stones, and clay and making the backe oven	£ 01-01-00
Under "Debts for the ministers house" – Robert ffuller	£ 02-18-8

The new house for the minister, which the town had voted to build, was given to Rev. Noah Newman in 1669. It was probably the largest and best in Rehoboth at that time. It became the principal one of four garrison houses, and was the town's military headquarters during King Philip's War. *(j)* It would appear from the above listed town debts that Robert did most, if not all, of the masonry work on this house.

The Townsmen "reconed wth Robert ffuller and George Kendrick on the 15th day of December 1670 for the Town Rate and the house Rate and all accounts equaly Balanced." As this was two years after the tax year that they were responsible for collecting, it would seem that, even in those early years, all taxpayers were not equally prompt in paying, and the constables were not allowed to pass their uncollected items along to succeeding constables.

An early list of Rehoboth taxpayers, dated February 7, 1670/1, is found in *Rehoboth Rate Book* II, page 2, and includes:

> Robert Fuller - - £ 00-05-09
> Jonathan Fuller - £ 00-02-06

The tax rate was 3^s 7^d per £ 100, which sets the total valuation of Robert's property at about £ 164.

Another Land Division Voted

On February 21, 1670/1, the town voted to lay out undivided land at Wachamoket Neck. At this town meeting, Robert and others opposed laying out land in this part of town. The reasons for their dissent are not recorded. However, the majority of the voters approved the division and a year later, February 5, 1671/2, lots were drawn for this land at the Neck. In spite of his disapproval of the division, Robert took part in the drawing and drew No. 23. The amount of land per £ 100 of Commonage Rights was not recorded.

(j) Cf. Bowen, *Early Rehoboth,* Vol. IV, p. 28.

The list of debts owed by the town for 1671 includes:

> Rob. ffuller due him from the towne, £ 00-11-00.

The Proprietors Build More Fences

There is no mention of Robert in the *Rehoboth Town Meetings Book* for the years 1672 and 1673. At the town meeting held on December 9, 1674, the town approved fencing for certain land areas, and allotted amounts of fence to be supplied or built by each proprietor. Robert was assigned 22½ rods.

Three months later, March 10, 1674/5, more fence was allotted, this time to be built around the "plaine." Robert was assigned 15 rods. These fencing projects may have been activated because of threatening danger from the Indians, as well as to keep cattle from straying.

King Philip's War Starts

The opening shot of King Philip's War was fired in the adjoining town of Swansea on June 23, 1675. The war spread quickly into the surrounding areas. During the war years, Rehoboth held its town meetings in the Newman garrison house. A meeting was held on May 11, 1676 for election of officers. Robert ffuller and Gilbert Brooks were chosen "Surveyors of the Highwayes." Their appointment was confirmed by the Plymouth Court on June 7, 1676. It is doubtful that they were able to carry out the ordinary duties of this position during their term of office, as the Indians had destroyed most of the property in the town.

In *Rehoboth Rate Book* II, page 16, under the date of January 26, 1676/7, it is recorded that Robert advanced £ 4-10-3 to help in defraying the costs of King Philip's War. A total of £ 570 was contributed by Rehoboth people.

Tragedies of the War

In the year 1676, Rehoboth suffered losses of many people and much property. There are 37 deaths recorded in Rehoboth Vital Records for 1676, but there were also an unknown number of deaths which were never recorded. Robert's family had a succession of deaths that year, beginning with the loss of his son-in-law Nehemiah Sabin, killed in May. Robert's sons Samuel and John were killed in August. It is probable that a daughter, Abigail, was also a victim of the Indians, although there is no record to confirm. Robert's wife

Sarah was also presumed to have been killed by the Indians, and her death is recorded:

> Sarah ffuller ye wife of Rob. ffuller 14 Octob. 1676.

Administration of Estates

1. Nehemiah Sabin. Inventory of Nehemiah's estate was taken June 1, 1676, and totalled Ŀ 39-15-06. *(k)* On June 7, 1677:

> The Court doth order and impower Leift Peter Hunt of Rehoboth, and Robert Fuller, together with the widdow Sabine to adminnester on the estate of Nehemiah Sabine, deceased.

The widow Sabine was Robert's daughter Elizabeth. On April 17, 1678, she married Eleazer Wheelock of Medfield. Later they moved to Mendon, Mass., where she died January 11, 1688/9.

2. Samuel^2 Fuller. Inventory of Samuel's estate was taken August 29, 1676, and totalled Ŀ 24-14-06. *(l)* On June 7, 1677:

> Adminnestration is graunted unto Robert Fuller and Nicholas Iyde Seni^r and Mary Fuller on the estate of Samuell Fuller.

Mary evidently did not care to serve, as on July 3, 1677 a new order was issued:

> Letters of adminnestration was graunted unto Robert Fuller of Rehoboth and Nicholas Ide Seni^r, on the estate of Samuel Fuller of Rehoboth, deceas.

3. John^2 Fuller. Inventory of John's estate was taken on November 16, 1676, and totalled Ŀ 32-15-06. *(m)* Robert did not administer his son John's estate. However, on October 26, 1676, about two weeks after his wife Sarah was buried, Robert deeded 50 acres of upland and a piece of meadow on the Ten Mile River to his grandson John^3, to be his when he reached the age of 21. John^3, was two years old when his grandfather Robert made the deed.

Military Service in King Philip's War

The town records do not show that Robert or any of his four sons were drafted or enlisted for military duty during the war.

(k) *Plymouth Colony Wills*, Vol. III, p. 32
(l) *Ibid* p. 47
(m) *Ibid* p. 70

However, every able-bodied man had a musket, was supplied with ammunition, and did guard duty at the garrison houses.

Robert Returns to Salem

Robert continued to live in Rehoboth for about a year after Sarah died. The first definite indication that he had left town is the November 13, 1677 town meeting record where Jonathan was instructed to write his father to see if his house could be used for a school that winter. In the *Salem Town Records*, Vol. II, p. 250, we find the first mention of Robert having returned to Salem:

> At a meeting of ye Selectmen ye 7th 11th (January) 1677/8, Robert Fuller is admitted an Inhabitant Into this towne.

He Marries Margaret Waller

Perhaps a factor in Robert's decision to return to Salem was widow Margaret Waller, whose husband, Christopher Waller, had died in 1676. Margaret was executrix of his will which was allowed in Probate Court on December 30, 1676. Perley in his *History of Salem*, Vol. II, p. 75, says Robert married Margaret about 1678. The exact date does not seem to have been recorded, but most probably was late in 1677 or early in 1678. The Wallers had no children. A grand niece, Mary Salmon, had been living with the Wallers since her father died in 1673. She was about nine years old when Robert and Margaret were married, and she continued to live with them until they went to Rehoboth about 1697.

The New Church in Rehoboth

After his marriage to Margaret, Robert returned to Rehoboth sometime in 1678 to work on the second meeting house. He was paid Ŀ 1-18-00 for this work. The original church was too small as well as being in need of repairs. The larger, second church was started in 1674 but not finished until 1680.

Robert Deeds his Rehoboth House and Land

In 1679, Robert must have decided that he would not come back to Rehoboth to live, as he deeded his remaining Rehoboth land to his grandson Samuel, and to his youngest son Benjamin. These deeds are quoted in detail later in this chapter. The deed to young Samuel is dated May 20, 1679. Before deeding his home lot and house to son Benjamin, Robert had to settle a long-standing boundary dispute with his former neighbor, Robert Wheaton, who was also his brother-in-law. The agreement made between the two Roberts, who had been neighbors for nearly thirty years, is quoted from *Rehoboth Town Meetings* Book II:

> An agreement made the 28th of . . . (torn) . . . 1679 Betwixt Robat Wheaton and Robert ffuller, both of Rehoboth in order to make the ending of a contriversie that hath ben longe between them Respecting the Bounds of thire home lott, the said Robat Wheaton ingageing in the personne of Mr. James Browne and other neighbors: that betwixt this day and winter sets in he would pluk up his fence and set in it in the bounds where the thre stakes stands, and they both agreeing that those stakes shall be the bounds betwixt them: witness my hand the day and yeare above written.
>
> The marke of
> Robert Wheaton
>
> This was: acknowledged before me
> James Browne Assistant
>
> This is a true copey of the agreement betwixt Robert ffuller and Robert Wheaton Transcribed out of the originall By me
>
> William Carpenter
> Towne Clarke.

With this boundary matter settled to his satisfaction, Robert proceeded with deeding his house and home lot, together with other land in Rehoboth, to his son Benjamin on December 1, 1679. Presumably Benjamin was about 21 at this time, and according to the deed was living in Rehoboth. He was single, and did not marry until 1686.

Robert's Activities in Salem

Robert was well known in Salem, and he quickly became involved in town affairs. He was admitted to membership in the First Church of Salem. There are two entries on the record of admissions:

> 1678, 11 Aug. G. Fuller from Rehoboth. (Probably "Goodman" Fuller, who would have been Robert).
> 1679, 10 Mar. Robart Fuller from Rehoboth. *(n)*

Robert's name again appeared on the list of freemen of Salem, as he took the Freeman's Oath at Salem Court on December 30, 1680.

(n) *The Essex Institute Historical Collections*, Vol. 15, p. 78.

Church membership no longer being a requirement to become a voter, this listing of freemen would be similar to our present day list of registered voters.

John Rowden's Cattle in Robert's Corn Field

A court case which was tried on May 11, 1680, involved Robert's wife Margaret, and his son Benjamin. It is recorded at considerable length in *Essex County Court Records*, Vol. VII, p. 424. It appears that John Rowden's cattle were seen in Robert Fuller's field. Daniel Poole, age 25, testified that he saw them in the plowed land of Robert Fuller in the North field. Benjamin Fuller, age about 22 years, deposed that he was at work nearby and also saw the cattle in Robert's field. After listening to much questioning and the lengthy detail of several witnesses, "Margaret, wife of Robert Fuller, acquitted John Rowden of all damage done by his cattle," and the case was dismissed. John Rowden was a hard working farmer with a big family and had no money to pay a fine if the court had so ordered. He doubtless helped to repair any damage done.

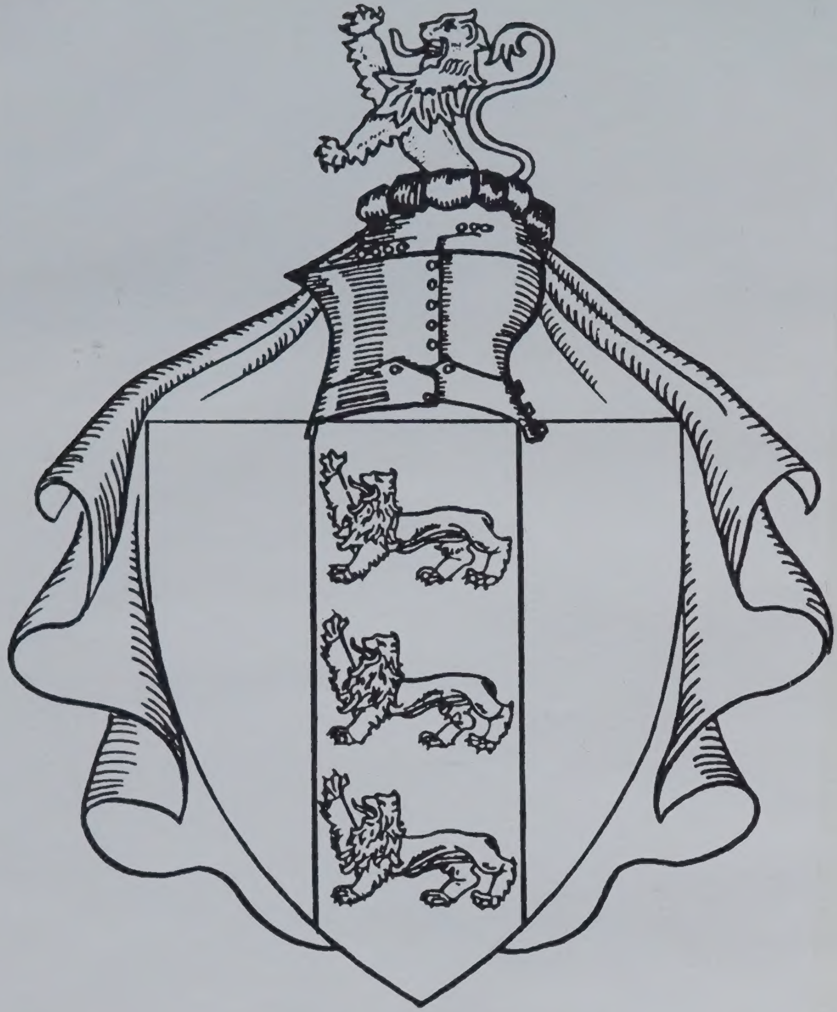
Salem Jury Duty for Robert

> Att a Towne Meeting the 6: Novem^{br} 1680 Chosen to Searve upon the grand Jury for ye yeare, Mr. Rob fuller . . . ."

Six other men were also chosen at this time. The next court was held at Salem December 30, 1680. The names of the men on the Grand Jury of that court were: Ruck, Holmes, Eborne, Buxton, Ray, Rand, Bread, Freind, Bennett, Sibley, Briggs, Ensigne Fuller, and Robert Fuller. *(o)* It is interesting to note that the surnames of the men associating with Robert on Salem juries are entirely different from those on the Plymouth Court juries.

The court held in Salem on June 28, 1681, lists Robert Fuller and Ensigne Fuller among those on the Grand Jury. On the list of Grand Jurymen for the court held at Salem December 28, 1682 were Robert Fuller and Serg^t Thomas Fuller. At the town meeting held November 1, 1684, Robert was again chosen to serve on the Grand Jury, but we cannot find that he actually served during this term.

(o) *Essex County Court Records*, Vol. VIII, p. 24.



GRIFFITH

This shows the Second Welsh Line Charted following

(James Brown married Eleanor Griffith. If the line is correct, the Coat of Arms below would have been those of Richard's Mother)

THE
GRIFFITHS
OF
WALES AND AMERICA

BY

ANNA LAURA GRIFFITH

COPYRIGHT @ 1979 by
ANNA LAURA GRIFFITH
All Rights Reserved

Anna Laura Griffith
Route 1, Box 306
Mayfield, KY 42066

U.S/CAN
929.273
G875ga

Originally believed to have been our Richard's lineage

BOWEN LINEAGE. (Griffith)

Sir James Bowen,of Wales,m.Mary Hale,daughter of John Hale,Esq.,who m.Margaret,daughter of Thomas,ap Griffith,ap Nichols.

Issue:

1-Mathias Bowen,of Wales,m.Mary Phillips,dau. of John Phillips,of Pictou Castle,

Issue:

James Bowen,of Wales,m.Eleanor Griffith,daughter of John Griffith,esq.,fo Richley,son of Sir William Griffith,Penrhyn Knight,

Issue:

Richard Bowen,b.Wales,came with his wife,Anne, and children to New England,in 1638;lived a short time in Salem and Boston,Mass,but was of Rehoboth,Mass.,in 1643,where he died,buried on February 4,1675;will probated,June 4,1675. Married 2nd.Elizabeth,who died in 1675,who is mentioned in his will together with the names of his children.

Issue:

1-Alice Bowen,b.in Wales,m.in Salem,Mass,1636 to Robert Wheaton,b.1606;died 1696.

2-Thomas,b.Wales,m.in Essex Co.,Mass.,to Elizabeth, He made a will in Rehoboth,April 11, 1663;his widow married again before 1669 to Samuel Fuller,of Plymouth.

3-William Bowen,died in Rehoboth,Mass.,March 10,1687;came from Wales with his parents.

4-Richard,born in Wales.

5-Sarah Bowen,born in Wales,buried Oct.14,1676, m.Fuller(problet Robert)died,May 10,1706,who was a freeman in Rehoboth,in 1658.

6-Obadiah Bowen,b.Swansea,WALES,Sept.1,1627; m. abt.1649,Mary Chilton.He was one of the first settlers in the new town of Swansea, Mass.named by him,in honor of his birthplace.

7-Ruth Bowen,born in Wales,m.______Leverich.

Richard Bowen,born in Wales,buried in Rehoboth, June 4,1678,settled with his father in Mass; m.March 1646,Esther Sutton,died,November 6,1688 probley the daughter of John Sutton.

Issue:

1-Sarah,b.2-7-1656 2-Hester,b.4-20-1660

3-Richard,b.1-17-1662 4-Mary,b.10-5-1666

5-John,b.3-15-167-

**A complete lineage on this family can be found in,"Colonial Families of the United States," Vol. 111,page 60-62.

were fined five shillings for want of scales, and weights in their mill, and at the same time Waltham was fined three pounds for taking too much toll. (Massachusetts Historical Collections, Series 5, Vol. 1, pp. 311, 312; also Massachusetts Colony Records, Vol. 1, p. 267.)

One of the daughters of Thomas Richards married Thomas Hinckly, afterwards governor of Plymouth Colony, and another married William Bradford, Deputy Governor of the same Colony. (See Savage's Genealogical Dictionary.)

In 1640 came William, afterward Capt. William Torrey, from Coombe St. Nicholas, in Somersetshire, Eng. He was the father of the famous Rev. Samuel Torrey, also was twice elected President of Harvard College, but declined in both cases, the only instance of a man declining that honor. Another descendant of Capt. William Torrey was the Hon. William H. Taft, President of the United States, and at present Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States, and who was the chief guest and speaker at the celebration of the three hundredth anniversary of Weymouth.

Proof that Richard Bowen(1) lived in Weymouth before moving to Rehoboth)

Chapter XVII

FEAR OF LAND SHORTAGE IN WEYMOUTH

It is stated by some writers that there came a time in 1640 when the population became so great that there was not land enough in Weymouth, and it had become necessary for some of the people to go to other regions. Charles Francis Adams tells us that in 1642 the townspeople thought themselves so numerous that it was expedient for a portion of them to remove to a new settlement, and it was voted that such a removal should be made.

✓ The Rev. Samuel Newman, the pastor at the time, offered to go with others, and he, with about two hundred persons, went to Rhode Island. ✓

There are other writers who take issue with such a statement and say that it was religious differences that made Newman remove with some of his people.

Gilbert Nash, in his "Weymouth in Its First Twenty Years," says this removal was due to religious differences.

— Rev. Samuel Newman came to Weymouth in 1639 and remained for four years, but the former religious troubles had not ceased. The spirit of unrest that had possessed the people could not so soon be quieted, and he found his position anything but pleasant. A man with the Episcopal education, ancestry, and tendencies which Newman had, although he was very liberal, could not easily become reconciled to the spirit which was fast growing in Weymouth, so he resolved to emigrate, and with about forty families of his people went to Seekonk in Rhode Island which he called Rehoboth, meaning "The Lord hath made room for us." —

It was not because Weymouth had become too narrow in territory at this time, for not more than one-quarter of its acres were occupied then.

The pressure was on the spirit, not on the body, and instead of continuing the quarrel Newman thought best to leave.

Bliss, in his "History of Rehoboth," states that the Rev. Samuel Newman was the real founder of the town of Rehoboth. It seems strange that Rev. William Blackstone, who was an early settler in Weymouth, and the first settler in Boston, should also be the first settler in the town of Rehoboth, for he was the first settler in that region.

Roger Williams, when he had to fly for his religious views for a time, lived in a tent in the same region, but went from there to what is now Providence, and became the founder of that city.

Bowen

Samuel Newman, with his people from Weymouth, was the real founder. Newman's people in Weymouth obtained the first grant of land in Seekonk in 1641, and with them were some people from Hingham.

The first meeting of the "Original Planters" of Rehoboth was held in Weymouth Oct. 24, 1643, and the next meeting was also held in Weymouth on Dec. 10, 1643, and Richard Wright was employed to build a corn mill at Rehoboth.

The people who went with Newman had different religious views, for Robert Tucker, who was one of them was a Baptist. The names of these early settlers or proprietors of Rehoboth are given in Bliss' "History of Rehoboth," and the list in 1643 and 1644 is as follows:

1. Ruth Ingram.
2. Widow Walker. ✓
3. John Read.
4. John Cooke.
5. Will Cheesbrook.
6. Mr. Winchester.
7. Richard Wright.
8. Mr. Newman.
9. Will Smith.
10. Walter Palmer.
11. James Clark.
12. Robert Tucker.
13. Ralph Shepherd.
14. Zacharia Roades (Rhodes).
15. James Redeway.
16. John Matthews.
17. John Perrum.
18. John Miller.
19. Samuel Butterworth.
20. George Kendrick.
21. Abram Martin.
22. Edward Seal.
23. John Brown.
24. Mr. Howard.
25. Mr. Peck.
26. Obediah Holmes. ✓
27. Robert Wheaton.
28. Edward Smith.
29. Job Lane.
30. Thomas Hitt.
31. James Walker.
32. Thomas Blyss.
33. Richard Bullock.
34. Isaack Martin.
35. Thomas Wilmot.
36. Thomas Cooper.
37. Robert Morris.
38. Edward Bennet.
39. Henry Smith.
40. Mathers Pratt.
41. John Meggs.
42. Thomas Clifton.
43. Joseph Torrey.
44. Robert Fuller.
45. John Allen.
46. Ralph Allen.
47. Edward Gilman.
48. Thomas Holbrook.
49. Will Carpenter.
50. John Holbrook.
51. Robert Titus.
52. Will Sabin.
53. Stephen Payne.
54. Edward Patterson.
55. Peter Hunt.
56. Robert Martin. ✓
57. Mr. Browne.
58. Robert Sharp.
59. Rice Leonard.
60. Richard Bowen. ✓

It is said that forty families went from Weymouth with Newman. There seems to be more than forty heads of families in this list, but some of the proprietors remained in Weymouth, and a few were from Hingham.

On Oct. 3, 1893, the town of Rehoboth celebrated its two hundred and fiftieth anniversary, and at the celebration Mr. Bradford Hawes represented Weymouth. In response to the toast, "Weymouth, the mother of Rehoboth," he made a most excellent speech, a report of which is published in the book issued by the town of Rehoboth, giving a description of the celebration. The book is edited by Hon. Thomas H. Bicknell.

It may be well to mention something as to records and sources. The statement is generally made that the early records of Weymouth were destroyed by a fire. There is truth in that, but there is also another statement made which is alluded to by Gilbert Nash, and that is, that by mutual agreement the parties in the religious disputes decided not to hand down to posterity the particulars of these disputes and therefore destroyed the records. This seems quite plausible.

Then, we do not find much of anything in the Plymouth records, except what is in Bradford, Winslow and Pratt, and the early records of Plymouth are also missing, for which no reason is given, and it has been said by those who ought to know, that these records also were purposely destroyed.

It also happens that there are outside sources and records from which much can be obtained, some of which I have mentioned. Then those people who were driven from Plymouth and Weymouth and settled in Maine, New Hampshire and Virginia have left records as to how they were forced to leave these places. For instance, William Hilton, who came with his wife and children in the good ship "Anne" in 1623 to Plymouth, and on account of the baptizing of which by Rev. John Lyford in 1624 had to go to New Hampshire, where he settled at Dover Point, sometimes called Hilton's Point, left a record behind him, and Rev. James Hill Fitts in his history of the town of Newfields, N. H., refers to this baptism, and states that this was the beginning of the trouble at Plymouth with the Rev. John Lyford.

Rev. Mr. Fitts was a Congregational minister, and for that reason it does not seem that any objection can be made to his statements. The argument used sometimes in favor of the course pursued at Plymouth and Massachusetts is that the religion set up in those places was that of the Separatist and Puritans, therefore others should conform to it. But this argument can be used in favor of the Church of England against the Separatists and Puritans, as there is no question but that the Church of England was the religion of England, and therefore the others should have conformed to it.

The truth is that there is a great deal of misunderstanding and misrepresentation of this whole matter in England. The Church of England cannot justly be accused of intolerance, for at first the views of these people were permitted, and even churches were set apart for their use. Thus, when in 1567 the Duke of Alva's persecution in the Netherlands drove many Dutch Protestants to England, they were allowed to settle themselves in eight English towns and have their form of religion.

In London the well-known church of the Austin Friars was set apart for their use, and the Dutch Reformed Church has held that church to the present time, and when the massacre of St. Bartholomew caused many Huguenot families to flee to England, they also were tolerated and permitted to have their form of religious worship.

During the reign of Queen Mary many Protestants and clergy had to flee to the continent, and while there these people imbibed the views of Calvin Luther and others, and later, when they returned to England, they were tolerated, but when they tried to overthrow the Church of England, and turn it over to the views and ways of Calvin and such like, then there was trouble.

These Brownists, Separatists, Puritans, Congregationalists, or whatever we choose to call them, tried to force laws through Parliament to change the order of things in the Church of England and make it like their views, and there came opposition. The law said that no bills concerning the Church could be passed through Parliament unless they were first acted upon by Convocation of the Church, but these non-conformists ignored Convocation, and tried to make Parliament supreme, and this led to the laws of conformity, for the violation of which these people were punished, and they call it persecution.

We always talk in favor of the separation of Church and State, and the Magna Charta and Bill of Rights preserved the independence of the Church from the State, but these so-called reformers were actually trying to deprive the Church of that independence, and now, because in those days the effort was made to make these people obey the law, we call it persecution.

Then, as far as Priority is concerned in Weymouth and around Boston, the Church of England was first, and if we are to use that argument in favor of Plymouth or Governor Winthrop, it should also be used in Weymouth, and the actions against the earlier settlers of Weymouth were, then, all wrong. But after all, the whole question was one which was settled in England rather than in the New World. It became in the end a contest between King and Parliament, and had Charles I been victorious, then Sir Ferdinando Gorges and not Winthrop would have ruled the destiny of New England, but Cromwell and his party were victorious. The power and influence of Gorges fell, and Winthrop and Endicott ruled in Massachusetts, and the Church became the State, and Winthrop in the end became the head of both Church and State.

No wonder Blackstone said he left England to get away from the power of the lord bishops, but he left Boston to get away from the power of the "Lord's Brethren."

Perhaps a more important part of the history than church squabbles and Indian fights is how the people lived. We find by records that some of the men are spoken of as mariners, some as fishermen, others as planters, some as farmers, others as clapboard ryvers, some as bridge builders and others as ferrymen. As early as 1635 there was a ferry between Weymouth and Wollaston, and in 1637 between Weymouth and Hingham.

In 1637 came the Indian War, called the Pequot War, and Weymouth had her share in that war, as in a levy of one hundred and sixty men to carry it on, Weymouth had to furnish five men, and this would indicate a population of five hundred souls in the settlement.

We find some of the men, as John King for instance, were mariners, that is, they went off to other parts of the world for trade, and brought back things that were needed in Weymouth.

On the flats by the sea the people made salt from the salt water and from the salt that had settled on the marsh land. This was placed in bags, and, together with furs and various articles obtained in Weymouth, put on board the small ships owned by the mariners and seamen, and carried to other parts of the world, going as far as the Barbadoes and bringing back goods that were to be obtained there.

Thus in those early days people in Weymouth were engaged in trade, and saw something of the outer world. Planting, farming, raising fruits and other things from the soil was the work of some. The men worked in the fields, the women in the house, and so all were busy. Some cut down trees and made them into lumber and clapboards, and thus houses and buildings were put up and the people were busy from morning to night. Sheep were valuable; the women tended to the wool from the sheep, scouring, carding, spinning and weaving it into cloth, with which garments were made. Horses, oxen, cows, swine, fowl and sheep were kept, and we find the men engaged in the questions of boundaries, bridges, highways and fences to keep in swine that seemed disposed to wander, even in those early days.

Even then the tax collectors went on their rounds, and in 1637 a tax of £27 was levied on Weymouth. By an order of the General Court in Boston, it was declared that no dwelling house should be built more than half a mile from the meeting-house.

This order was made for safety, for fear of the Indians, but the order was not enforced in Weymouth, for the people were spread over a territory of two or three miles. This territory extended from the neighborhood of King's Cove along the shore and up the river and over the neck to Watch House Hill, a distance of a mile, and there were a number of plantations extending south and east over King Oak Hill, and also as far as Whitman's Pond in East Weymouth.

We might say that Weymouth grew slowly in population, and this was natural, but we must remember that in addition to the company that went with Rev. Mr. Newman to Rehoboth there were others who went to Easton and Abington, thus causing Weymouth to grow more slowly than it otherwise would have done. This did not trouble the "Town Fathers" of the time, for it was a question with them whether there was land enough to serve for the growing population, and they made careful laws to regulate the coming in of strangers.

THE LAND OF RICHARD ADDAMES

Nine acres in the East field first granted to him bounded on the East with the land of William Reade on the west with the land of Richard Newberry the swampe on the north the streete on the south

Fowerteene acres on the wester neck first granted to him bound on the East with the land of Edward Smith on the west with the land of William Smith on the north with a Swampe one the south with the commons

An Acre of Salt Marsh at the wester neck first granted to William Reade and an acre and halfe of Upland first granted to mr Busley bounded on the East by the land of Thomas White and of William Richardes on the west with the marsh of Thomas holbrooke on the north with the land of William Richardes on the south by the Creek that Runes to monotticot

An Acre of Marsh at burying Iland the land of Robert Martin on the west with the sea on the north with the marsh of mr Parker of Robert Martin on the south

Three acres of fresh Marsh the marsh of John Harding and Stephen ffrench on the East the medow of Edward Smith on the west the common on the north and south

An Acre on King oke hill the land the hiewaies at the East and north endes the land of John Harding and Joseph Shaw on the north and of Thomas Dyer on the south

Twenty fower acres amongst the greate lotes buted on the East with a greate pond on the west with the common with the lot of Richard Siluester on the north with the lot of William Smith on the south

THE LAND OF ROBERT RANDOLL

Two acres in the East field first granted to John Gurny bounded on the East with the land of Edmond hart the hiewaie on the west the land of Robert Cooke on the north and of Nathaniel Addames on the south

Two acres more in East field first giuen to Edward Bate bounded on the East with the land of Edmond Harte with the land of Robert Cooke on the west Nathaniel Addames on the north and his owne on the south

Three acres more in the East field first granted to James Rogeres bounded with the sea on the East Nathaniel Addames on the west and south the sea on the north

THE LAND OF WILLIAM PITTY

Ten acres in the Ester neck first granted to him bounded with James Ludines land on the East of Nicholas Phillipes on the west a Swampe on the north and a hieway on the south

three acres of Salt-marsh lyinge neare the mill bounded with the land of Joseph Torrey on the north the mill on the south the mill lot on the west Five Acres of Upland at london Berge bounded on the East with the Sea the land of mr Torrie on the west of mr Waltham on the north and the Round marsh on the south

THE LAND OF JOHN BURRELL

Three acres in the Rainge first granted to Nicholas Norton bounded with a highwaie on the East the land of Thomas Baylie on the west the land of Hugh Roe on the north and the land of Goodman Hughes on the south

An Acre in King oke hill the land of Thomas Dyer on the East and north the hiewaie on the west the land of mr Webb on the south

Two acres in the Rainge first granted to mr Robert Jeffery bounded on the East with a hiewaie on the west with a swampe on the north with a hiwaie on the south with the land of Thomas Clifdon

THE LAND OF SAMUEL NEWMAN

Kinsmen?

Twenty fower acres in the East ffield thirteene acres of it was first granted to Henry Kingman Seuen of it to William Smith and fower acres first to William Richardes all of it together bounded on the East with a Highway by the meeting house the land of Robert Martin on the south salt marsh on the west the common on the north

Two acres of salt marsh first granted to Henry Kingman bounded on the East with a swampe on the west with the highway the land of Edward Poole on the North and the land of Edward Bate on the south

Two acres of salt marsh one of them first granted to Henry Kingman the other to Thomas White bounded at the East with the land of Nicholas Phillipes and Edward Bate westward with a bridge south with the com̄on northward with the land of Richard Bowin

Two acres of swampe bounded on the East with the East fieldes on the west with his owne salt marsh on the south with the swampe of Edward Bate

Twenty acres of upland first granted to Henry Kingman bounded on the south a greate pond on the north with John Randes marsh

Twenty acres of upland and swampe giuen him by the Towne bounded on the East with the land of William Hewes the land of Thomas Holbrook on the west the Com̄ons on the south Harrises Rainge on the north

Two acres of wood in a great swampe neere my Howse first giuen Edward Bate now taken by way of exchange of him for two acres in the Swampe aforesd aboue specyfied

THE LAND OF JOHN TAYLOR

Three acres in the plaine first granted to Robert Louell the highwaie on the East the land of William Brandon on the south the land of John ffussell on the north

THE LAND OF RICHARD NEWBERY

Two acres in the East field first giuen to Richard Addames bounded on the East with the land of Richard Addames on the west and south with the highwaie on the north with the wachhouse hill

ffive acres in the wester neck first giuen to mr Hull bounded on the East with the land of mr Jener on the west with the land of John Whitman on the north to the Sea on the south with mr Jeneres marsh

THE LAND OF THOMAS CLIFTON

Six acres in the west field fower acres first granted to mr Robert Jeffrie and two acres first granted to William Hues bounded on the East with the highway on the west with a swampe on the north with the land of John Burrell on the south with the land of John Holester

Two acres in Harrises Rainge first giuen to Samuel Butterworth bounded on the East with a swamp on the west with a swampe on the north with the land of Jacob ffrench on the south with the land of William Carpenter

THE LAND OF THOMAS FFOSTER

Three acres in the East ffield first granted to John Allin bounded on the East with Jeffery Staples land on the west with the land of Edward Bate

THE LAND OF WILLIAM READE

Tenn acres in the East ffield three acres first granted to Robert Stone three acres of it to George Allin fower acres to Richard Knight bounded on the East with the land of Nathaniel Addames on the west with the streete on the south with the land of Aingell holard on the north with the land of Thomas ffoster m^r Jefferies marsh the high waie to the west James Smithes marsh on the north and of m^r Torrey on the south A halfe acre of salt marsh addioyning to the other that hee bought of m^r Torrie

The land of Jeffery Staple

Three acres in the East ffield first giuen to himselfe bounded on the East with with the land of Thomas ffoster of Thomas Streame on the west of Edward Benet on the north the mill path on the south

Six acres at the farther end of Harrises Rainge first giuen to himselfe bounded on the East with the com̄on on the west with the land of m^r Newman on the north with the land of William Hughes of John Butterworth on the south

Halfe an acre in the west field first giuen to m^r Hull the streete on the East the land of John Whitman on the west and south of Richard Waling on the south

The land of James Prist

On acre in King Oke hill first giuen to Edward Benet bounded on the East with the streete that ledeth to the mill James Snookes land on the north Edward Benet on the west the land of Thomas Rider on the south

Two acres in the East ffield first giuen to William Hughes bounded with the land of Thomas Rider on the East the highway to the west the land of William Hughes to the north and south

The land of Martin Phillipes

Three acres and halfe first giuen to Thomas White bounded on the East with the land of Nicholas Phillipes on the west with the land of Richard Bowin the waie on the north and of Richard Bowin on the South

On acre of salt marsh first giuen to William Richards bounded with the marsh of Nicholas Phillipes on the west with m^r Newmans marsh with the land of Nicholas Phillipes on the north and a creeke on the south

The land of John ffoster

Two acres and halfe first giuen to John Taylor bounded on the East with the land of William Weedon on the west with the land of Nicholas Byram on the north with the sea south with the land of m^r Glouer

Two acres upon the plaine first giuen to William Richardes bounded on the East with the land of Nicholas Whit on the north with the land of Nicholas Phillipes with a swampe on the south

The land of Andrew fford

Seuen acres in the East fild first giuen to Masachill Barnard on the East with Edmond Hartes land on the west and north with the land of m^r Jener on the south with the Indianes land

The land of Masachel Barnard

Six acres in the plaine first giuen to Richard Longe bounded on the East with the land of Arthure Warren of John ffusell on the west the sea on the north and his owne land on the south

Three acres in the plaine first giuen to Thomas Baylie bounded on the East with the land of Clement Weauer on the west and south with the land of John ffusell of Arthure Warren on the north

Eight acres in the mill field first giuen to himselfe bounded East and south with Hingham land on the west with the Com̄on on the north with the land of Walter Harris

The land of James Snooke

On acre in Kingoke hill first giuen to Edward Benet bounded on the East with the land of m^r Parker of James Prist on the west of Edward benet on the north

Three acres in the East ffield first giuen to Edward Sale bounded on the East with the land of Nathaniel Addames of Edmond Hart on the west a swampe on the north to the streete on the south

Three acres in the mill field the land of Nicholas Norton on the East of Thomas Clape on the west a swampe on the south the mill foote path on the north

On acre of salt marsh at the back riuer first giuen to Robert Able almost Round with the sea the sedar swampe on the west of it

The land of Richard Bowin ✓

Tenn acres Eyght of them upland two of swampe lying in the plaine first giuen to Thomas White bounded on the East with the land of Martin Phillipes of Ralph [Allin] on the west of his owne on the south a highwaie on the north

Two acres of upland and salt marsh first giuen to Thō White bounded on the East with the com̄on on the west with the land of Ralph Allin on the north with his owne land on the south with John Uphams marsh

Two acors first giuen to John King bounded on the East west & north with his owne land and of m^r Newman on the south

The land of William Richardes

Nineteen acres and halfe in the westernecke first giuen to m^r Buslem bounded on the East with the sea the land of Richard Addames on the west of Robert Martin on the north of Thomas Streame on the south

Two acres of salt marsh in the same neck first giuen to William Smith bounded on the East with William Smithes marsh with the sea on the west and north and with the land of Robert Martin on the south

ffower acres in the same neck first giuen to himselfe bounded on the east & north with the land of Henry Kingman a high waie on the south

The land of Robert Tytus ★

Six acres in the plaine 3 of them first giuen to George Allin 3 to Arthure Warren bounded on the East with a highwaie on the west and north with high waies on the south with the land of John Ozborne

ffower acres on the other side first giuen to James Ludden the greate swampe being on the west and south of it

On acre of ffresh marsh at his dore beinge at the north end of the greate swampe

The land of Edward Benet

ffive acres in Kingokehill first giuen to himselfe bounded on the East with the land of James Snooke with a high waie on the west the Pounde on the north the land of Thomas Rawlinges on the south

Twenty and two acres in the westerneck 14^{ton} of them giuen him by the towne and eight of them first giuen to Aingell Hollard bounded on the East and west with highwaies on the north with the land of John Rogeres of m^r Glouer on the south

Five acres in the East field 2 acres first giuen him by Towne and 3 acres first giuen to Thomas White bounded on the East and north with the land of Nathaniel Addames on the west with the land of William Reade of Thomas Rawlinges on the south

Six acres at hockley first giuen to himselfe bounded on the East with the Riuer his meddow on the west the com̄on on the south

On acre of salt marsh at the back riuer first giuen to himselfe the riuer on the east and south the land of Steephen ffrench on the north of Joseph Torrie on the west

★ Though not in our direct line of descent, Titeses married siblings of both our Averill & Bowen ancestors.

HISTORY OF WEYMOUTH
MASSACHUSETTS

IN FOUR VOLUMES

VOL. 1

HISTORICAL

Published by the
WEYMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY
HOWARD H. JOY, *President*
Under Direction of the Town

1923

It is surprising to note the distance to which stray horses roamed. Strays are recorded as being picked up in Rehoboth with the brand marks of the towns of Plymouth, Duxbury, Scituate (forty miles away), Taunton, Sandwich, Yarmouth (sixty miles away), and Marshfield, all in Plymouth Colony, besides many stray horses from various towns in the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

While the brand marks established by the Court identified the towns in Plymouth Colony in which the horses belonged, these brands did not identify the individual ownership in the Town. This was very important, for in the early days all horses, cattle, and other animals, were turned out to common pasturage, which made it necessary for the owner to have a way of identifying his "Creatures"; hence the establishment of "Creature Earmarks" which each owner registered with the Town Clerk.

The basic Rehoboth "Creature Earmarks" consisted of the following cuts and perforations:

1. "*Hole*"—A circular perforation.
2. "*Light Crop*"—A little piece cut horizontally off the top of the ear.
3. "*Crop*"—A larger piece cut horizontally off the top of the ear.
4. "*Sque Cut*"—An oblique cut off the top of the ear.
5. "*Slit*"—A perpendicular cut in the eartop; called a "*Cut*" when applied at right angles to the side of the ear.
6. "*Swallow's Tail*"—A "V" shaped notch, usually in the top of the ear.
7. "*Spade*"—A square cut taken out of one side of the eartop, and called a "*Gagg*" when cut out of the under part of the ear.
8. "*Half Gad*"—A slant cut on the under part of the ear, which was probably the same as the "*Sque Cut*" of the top of the ear.
9. "*Hapenny*"—A semi-circular cut on the side of the ear.
10. "*Square Hapenny*"—A square cut on the side of the ear.
11. "*Notch*"—A "*Swallow's Tail*" cut on the under part of the ear.

At the first settlement of Rehoboth, with its less than fifty proprietors, it was possible to have simple "Creature Earmarks", but as the population grew more different earmarks had to be devised, with the result that by 1718 some ears carried as many as six cuts or perforations. On another page is shown a photograph from *Rehoboth's Book of Laws*, page 213, showing eight entries of cattle earmarks, each entry illustrated by a drawing of a pair of ears on which are shown the marks as registered by the owner. The first earmark illustration in this Book of Laws is dated 1712.

On 10 Apr. 1759, Dr. Thomas Bowen and Jesse Perrin described horses that were "to run on the Common" and especially mentioned the fact that neither had a "brand or earmark". From this statement it would seem that by this date horse brands and earmarks were no longer required. Rehoboth's population had multiplied. In 1790 it had reached a total of more than 4,600 persons, with 837 heads of families, who, under the old system, would all have required individual earmarks.

This absence of brands and earmarks undoubtedly encouraged

Nehgr - Vol 15

(Third Generation)

BAPTISMS, FROM REHOBOTH CHURCH RECORDS.

[Transcribed by ELISHA L. TURNER of Dedham.]

(Kent) Pearce ancestors

Hannah Greenwood; Rebeckah, ye daughter of John Pain, bap. Feb. 17, 1694.

Judith ye daughter of Sam^{ll} Pain, bap. March 7, 1695.

Judith ye daughter of John Hunt, bap. April 14, 1695.

Abigail ye daughter of George Robinson, and Elizabeth daughter of Israel Read, bap. May 12, 1695.

Abigail ye daughter of John Titus, bap. May 26, 1695.

Jonathan son of James Thirber and Bathsheba daugh^{r} of Saml Newman, bap. July 28, 1695.

John son of John Read, bap. November 17th, 1695.

Sarah daugh^{r} of Phill. Walker, bap. Jan. 12, 1695–6.

Rebeckah daugh^{r} of Enoch Hunt, Elizabeth daugh^{r} of Sam^{ll} Pamer, Feb. 16, Hezekiah son of Hez. Peck, Elizabeth daugh^{r} of Josiah Peck, Jun., Hannah daugh^{r} of Joseph Dagget, bap. 5 April, 1696.

John son of John Lane, bap 19 April, 1696, also wife of Sam^{l} Sabin, sen^{r}.

An daugh^{r} of Israel Read, bap. May 3, 1696.

James son of James Sabin, & Noah ye son of Joseph Titus, bap. May 24, 1696.

Adin: Josiah son of Josiah Carpenter, & Rachel & Experience, daugh^{rs} of Tim: Ide, bap. July, 1696.

Obediah son of Israel Ingraham, & Thom. son of John Friend, bap. Oct. 5, 1696.

Daniel, Ichabod, Solomon, Jethniel, Esther, children of Jethniel Peck, bap. Ap: 11, 1696.

Noah son of Sam^{l} Pain, bap. April 25, 1697.

Jabish son of Doct^{r} Brown, bap. May 9, 1697.

Henry, Joshua, Rebeckah, Elizabeth, children of Joshua Smith, & Nathaniel, Deliver, children of John Smith, all bap. 9 May, 1697.

John Greenwood & ye Wife of John Sheperdson, bap. May 30, 1697.

Ebenezer son of Jethniel Peck, bap. June 14, 1697.

✓ James, Phillip, Esther, children of Phillip Walker, bap. July 4, 1697.

Solomon son of John Pain, & Hannah, daugh of John Hunt, bap. July 18, 1697.

Daniel son of Mary Newman, bap. Aug. 1, 1697.

Nathaniel, Josiah, Susannah, children of Thom. Cooper, Jun^{r}, bap. Aug. 15, 1697.

Abia Carpenter, bap. in a private house, Sept. 1, 1697.

Eben son of Sam^{l} Robin, bap. Sept. 5, 1697.

Abia, Thomas, Mehitabel, Sarah, children of Abiah Carpenter, and Elizabeth, daugh^{r} of Capt. Mason & a member of the Church at Norwich, bap. Sept. 12, 1697.

Tabitha & Sibill children of Benj. Hunt, Sept. 19, 1697.

Sarah Fuller & Elizabeth Allen, bap. (in a private house) Oct. 27, 1697.

Nat. Chaffe, Jan. 2, 1697–8.

Huldah Hunt, March 20, 1698.

Hannah daughter of George Robinson, Ruth, daugh^{r} of Is. Read, Mar. 27, 1698.

Leah daugh: of Nat. Carpenter, Joseph, Deborah, Martha, children of Jos. Buckland, Jun. bap. on ye 17 April, 1698.

Israel son of Josiyah Peck, Noah, son of Tho. Cooper, Jun^{r}, Nat., Phillip, Elizabeth, Rachel, Experience, children of Nat Whittaker, Susannah, daugh^{r} of Jos Kent, sen. bap. April 24, 1698.

Moses son of John Read, May 26, 1698.

Bathshebah daugh^{r} of John Smith, Rachell daugh^{r} of Hezek^{h} Peck, June 19, 1698.

Ezekiel son of Benj. Fuller, bap. Nov. 13, 1698.

Rebeck: daugh^{r} of David Carpenter, Nov. 27, 1698.

Josiah son of Tim. Ide, bap. Dec. 21, 1698, Joseph Polley ye same time, Israel Peck being sponsor.

Rachell daugh^{r} of Sam^{l} Cooper, Jan. 8, 1698–9.

Martha daugh^{r} Joseph Titus, Jan. 15, 1699.

David son of James Sabin, bap. Feb. 12, 1698–9.

Benjamin son of John Lane, Ephraim son of John French, bap. Feb. 20, 1698–9.

Benjamin son of Joseph Buckland, bap. Mar. 5, 1699.

Sarah daugh^{r} of John Peck, & Sarah daugh^{r} of John Sheperdson, bap. Apr. 16, 1699.

Noah Greenwood, Joseph son of Joseph Dagget, bap. April 25, 1699.

Ezra son of Nat Carpenter, & Rebeckah, daugh^{r} of Nat. Whittaker, bap. April 30, 1699.

Hannah Graunt (personally owning ye covenant) was bap. June 4, 1699, also Sarah daugh^{r} of Charles Williams ye same time.

Elizabeth wife of Sam^{l} Titus & her children Elizabeth & Abigail, bap. June 11, 1699.

Ebenezer son of John Butterworth, Rachell daugh^{r} of Abia Carpenter, bap. June 18, 1699.

Stephen son of Sam^{l} Pain, bap. Aug. 6, 1699.

Sarah daught^{r} of Abraham Follet, bap. Aug. ye 13, 1699.

Joshua son of Israel Read, bap. Oct. 8, 1699.

Sarah daugh^{r} of Elisha Maye, and Abigail daugh^{r} of Stephen Read, bap. Oct. 21, 1699.

Elizab^{h} wife of Benj. Wilson, Benj. son of John Pain, Ebenezer son of Dan^{l} Pamer, Mercy daugh^{r} of Leonard Newsom, bap. Novem^{r} 19, 1699.

John, Amos sons of Benjamin Fuller, bap. Decem^{r} 10, 1699.

Benjam: Mary children of Benj: Fuller bapt: Decem^{r} 21, 1699.

Obediah son of Robert Fuller, bap. Mar. 3, 1700.

Benjamin, Nicholas sons of Nicolas Ide, Timothy son of John Reed, also Elizabeth daugh^{r} of Josiah Carpenter, bap. March 24, 1700.

Mary daugh^{r} of Phillip Walker, bap. March 31, 1700.

Oliver, Hezekiah sons of Jabesh Brown, Bap. May 5, 1700.

Hector, (Negro man servant of Benj. Allen,) bap. May 26, 1700.

James son of Jonathan Viall, bap. July 14, 1700.

An daugh^{r} of Mr. Lowe, bap. Sept. 1, 1700.

James son of Thos. Cooper, John son of Hezekiah Peck, bap. Oct. 13, 1700.

Sarah daugh^{r} of Sam^{ll} Newman, & Mercy daugh^{r} of Sam^{l} Pamer, bap. Feb. 2, 1700–1.

Elijah son of Nat. Carpenter, bap. Mar. 30, 1701.

Rebeckah daugh^{r} of Benj. Wilson, bap. Aprll 6, 1701.

Rebeckah daughter of Jabesh Brown, bap. April 20, 1701.

Hannah daugh^{r} of Nat. Whittaker, also Noah & Sam^{l} sons of David Newman, bap. April 27, 1701.

Ephraim son of Joseph Ingraham, bap. May 11, 1701.

Rebeckah daugh^{r} of Jethniel Peck, Peter son of Abia Carpenter, Freelove & Abigail daugh^{s} of Daniel Smith, also Peter & Judah, children of Nat. Cooper, bap. May 25, 1701.

David son of David Carpenter, Sam^{l} son of Sam^{l} Loe, John son of Joseph Bucklen, John son of John Smith, bap. June 8th, 1701.

Joshua son of Benj. Fuller, bap. June *ult*, Sabbath.

Daniel son of Tim. Ide, bap. July 14, 1701.

Isaac & Rebeckah children of Abraham Follet, bap. July 21, 1701.

Jonathan son of Mr. Jonathan Viall, bap. Aug. 17, 1701.

Esther Greenwood, Nathan son of John Pain, also Sarah daugh^{r} of John Lane, bap. August 24, 1701.

Hannah daughter of David Newman, & Abigail daugh^{r} of John Follet, bap. August 31, 1701.

Mercy daugh^{r} of Joseph Titus, bap. Sept. 28, 1701.

Hephzibah and Martha daugh^{s} of Joseph Dagget, bap. Dec. —, 1701.

Judah daugh^{r} of Is: Reed, bap. Dec. 10, 1701.

Nat. son of Nat. Cooper, bap. Jan. 25, 1701–2.

David son of Daniel Smith, Jain daugh^{r} of Phillip Walker, bap. March 29, 1702. ✓

Daniel son of Sam^{l} (——), Martha daugh^{r} of James Sabin, bap. April 12, 1702.

Mary daugh^{r} of Sam^{l} Cooper, bap. June 7, 1702.

Stephen son of Joseph Peck, and Joseph son of Jethniel Peck, bap. 14 June, 1702.

Eliezar son of Sam^{l} Palmer, bap. July 12, 1702.

Mary daugh^{r} of Leonard Newsom, bap. 2 August, 1702.

Elizabeth daugh: of Cornet Walker, bapt: Aug. 16, 1702.

Jerusha dau: of Jabesh Brown, bapt: Sept. 27, 1702.

Rachell daughter of Sam^{ll} Lowe, bapt: Novemb: 1, 1702.

Benj., Jonathan and Hannah, children of Benj. Wilson, bap. Nov. 14, 1702.

Sarah daugh^{r} of John Reed, April 11, 1703.

Mary daugh^{r} of Joseph Ingraham, Experience daugh^{r} of Goodman Wedge, bap. May 9th, 1703.

Sarah daugh^{r} of Baruck Buckland, bap. June 22, 1703.

Jonathan son of John Smith, bap. July 1, Sab: 1703.

Dan. son of Nat. Carpenter & Margaret daugh^{r} of Nat. Whittaker, bap. 18, 1703.

Joseph son of John Follet, bap. March 25, 1703.

Benjamin son of Cornet Walker, Melatiah son of John Lane and John son of Sam^{l} Titus, bap. —— 15, 1703.

Martha d. of John Hunt, bap. Aug. 29, 1703.

Hannah daugh^{r} of Sam^{l} Peck, bap. Sept. 12, 1703.

Lidia daugh^{r} of Joseph Titus, bap. Sept. 19, 1703.

Ebenezer, Nath^{l}, Thomas sons of Nath^{l} Peck, bap. Sept. 26, 1703.

Gideon son of John Pain, Christopher, Ichabod, Dan, Peter, Mary, children of Rich^{d} Bowen, bap. Oct. 10, 1703.

Henry, Paul, Sam^{l}, Thom., Will^{m}, Phebe, children of Paul Healy, bap. Jan. 2, 1703–4.

Rachel daugh^{r} of Jos. Buckland, bap. Jan. 30, 1703–4.

Nat. son of Phillip Walker, bap. Feb. 6, 1703–4.

Ruth daugh^{r} of Elisha Maye, bap. March 12, 1704.

John son of Benj. Viall, bap. Mar. 19, 1704.

My own daugh^{r} Elizabeth, bap. April 4, 1704.

LISTS OF PURCHASERS, SETTLERS AND INHABITANTS.

A list of the first purchasers, with the value of their alottments, about 1643.

		£.	s.	d.
1.	Mrs. Bur, (Ruth Ingram accepted in her place)	100	00	00
2.	Widdow Walker,	50	00	00
3.	John Read,	300	00	00
4.	John Cooke, which is still in the town's hands,	300	00	00
5.	The Schoolmaster,	50	00	00
6.	Will Cheesbrook,	450	00	00
7.	Mr. Winchester,	195	00	00
8.	Richard Wright,	834	00	00
9.	Mr. Newman,	330	00	00
10.	Will Smith,	196	10	00
11.	Walter Palmer,	419	00	00
12.	James Clark, now John Perrun's,	71	00	00
13.	Ralph Shepherd, now James Redeways,	121	10	00
14.	Zachariah Roades,	50	00	00
15.	John Mathewes,	40	00	00
16.	John Perrum,	67	00	00
17.	John Miller,	69	10	00
18.	Samuel Butterworth,	50	00	00
19.	George Kendrich,	50	00	00
20.	Abram Martin,	60	10	00
21.	The Teacher,	100	00	00
22.	Edward Seale,	81	00	00
23.	John Browne,	80	00	00
24.	Mr. Howward,	250	00	00
25.	Mr. Peck,	535	00	00
26.	Mr. Obadiah Holmes, now Robert Wheaton's,	100	00	00
27.	Edward Smith,	252	00	00
28.	Job Lane now Robert Abells,	50	00	00
29.	Thomas Hitt,	101	00	00
30.	James Walker, now John Fitche's,	50	00	00
31.	Thomas Bliss.	153	00	00
32.	The Governor's lot now Richard Bullocks,	200	00	00
33.	Isaac Martin, now Thomas Wilmot's,	50	00	00
34.	Robert Morris,	94	10	00
35.	Edward Burnetts, now Richard Bowen, Jr.'s,	134	10	00
36.	The Pastor,	100	00	00
37.	Mr. Henry Smith,	260	00	00
38.	Matthew Pratt,	239	00	00
39.	John Meggs,	120	00	00
40.	Thomas Clifton, now Stephen Paine, Jr.'s,	160	00	00
41.	Joseph Terry, now John Peck's,	134	00	00
42.	Tho Cooper,	367	00	00
43.	Robert Fuller,	150	00	00
44.	John Allen,	156	00	00
45.	Ralph Allen,	270	00	00
46.	Edward Gillman, now Joseph Peck's,	306	00	00
47.	Tho Houlbrook,	186	10	00
48.	Will Carpenter,	254	10	00
49.	John Houlbrook, now Nicholas Ide's,	186	10	00
50.	Robert Titus, now Robert Jones's,	156	10	00
51.	Will Saben,	53	00	00
52.	Stephen Paine,	535	00	00
53.	Mr. Brown,	600	00	00
54.	Edward Patteson, now John Woodcock's,	50	00	00
55.	Peter Hunt,	327	00	00
56.	Robert Martin,	228	10	00
57.	Robert Sharp, but now Rice Leonard's,	106	00	00
58.	Richard Bowen,	270	00	00

At a Town Meeting, the 31st day of the 4th month (June), 1644, lots were drawn for a division of the woodland, between the plain and the town. Shares were drawn to the number of 58 as follows:

1. Mr. Winchester.
2. Mr. Leonard.
3. Peter Hunt.
4. William Cheeseborough.
5. Ralph Allen.
6. John Holbrook.
7. John Perren.
8. The Schoolmaster.
9. Matthew Pratt.
10. William Carpenter.
11. Ephraim Hunt.
12. Samuel Butterworth.
13. Edward Patterson.
14. James Browne.
15. Richard Bowin.
16. Mr. Newman.
17. Mr. Peck.
18. Walter Palmer.
19. Abraham Martin.
20. John Sutton.
21. Robert Morris.
22. John Matthews.
23. Isaac Martin.
24. James Walker.
25. Robert Titus.
26. Edward Seale.
27. George Kendrick.
28. ———.
29. Thomas Bliss.
30. The Pastor's.
31. Stephen Paine.
32. Edward Smith.
33. William Smith.
34. James Clark.
35. The Governor.
36. Edward Bennett.
37. Obadiah Holmes.
38. Mr. Browne.
39. Thomas Cooper.
40. Thomas Holbrooke.
41. Thomas Hitt.
42. John Allin.
43. John Meggs.
44. William Sabin.
45. Mr. Henry Smith.
46. Zachary Rhodes.
47. Edward Gilman.
48. Thomas Clifton.
49. Joseph Torrey.
50. Thomas Dunn.
51. Robert Martin.
52. Widow Walker.
53. John Miller.
54. Mr. B——.
55. The Teacher.
56. John Cooke.
57. Ralph Shepherd.
58. John Reade.

The following names appear on the 1st covenant which bears date 3d of 5th month (July), 1644:

Walter Palmer.
Edward Smith.
Edward Bennett.
Robert Titus.
Abraham Martin.
John Matthews.
Edward Sale.
Ralph Shepherd.
Samuel Newman.
William Cheeseborough.
Richard Wright.
Robert Martin.
Richard Bowen.
Joseph Torrey.
James Clark.
Ephraim Hunt.
Peter Hunt.
William Smith.
John Perren.
Zachary Rhoades.
Job Lane.
Alex Winchester.
Henry Smith.
Stephen Paine.
Ralph Alin.
Thomas Bliss.
George Kendricke.
John Allen.
William Sabin.
Thomas Cooper.

Walker, Bowen et al

The following are the names of the first Board of Selectmen, chosen 9th of 10th month (December), 1644:

Alexander Winchester.
Richard Wright.
Henry Smith.
Edward Smith.
Walter Palmer.
William Smith.
Stephen Paine.
Richard Bowen.
Robert Martin.

A list of those whose shares were declared forfeited to the town for non-fillment of conditions, on the 24th of 8th month (October), 1643:

Ralph Shepherd.
James Browne.
Mr. Leonard.
Mr. Peck.
Obadiah Holmes.
James Walker.
The Governor's lot.
Matthew Pratt.
Thomas Dunn.
John Megges.
Thomas Cooper.
John Sutton.
Edward Gilman.
Tho Holbrooke.
John Holbrooke.
Mr. Browne.
Edward Patterson.
Ephraim Hunt.

The names of those appearing on the register of 1645 as owning land in the town:

Mr. Alexander Winchester.
Mr. Howard.
Peter Hunt.
William Cheeseborough.
Ralph Allin.
John Holbrooke.
John Peram.
The Schoolmaster.
Matthew Pratt.
William Carpenter.
Samuel Butterworth.
Edward Patterson.
James Browne.
Richard Bowen.
James Clarke.
William Smith.
The Governor.
Edward Bennett.
Obadiah Holmes.
Mr. John Brown.
Thomas Cooper.
Thomas Holbrooke.
Thomas Hett.
John Allin.
John Meggs.
William Sabin.
Mr. Samuel Newman.
Mr. Peck.
Abraham Martin.
John Sutton.
Robert Morris.
John Matthews.
John Fitch.
Robert Titus.
George Kendrick.
Robert Sharp.
Thomas Bliss.
The Pastor.
Stephen Paine.
Edward Smith.
Henry Smith.
Zachary Rhodes.
Edward Gilman, Sr.,
Thomas Clifton.
Joseph Torrey.
Widow Walker.
Richard Ingram (now Ingraham)
The Teacher.
Thomas Loring.
Ralph Shepherd.
John Reade.
John Miller.
Richard Wright.

The names of Robert Fuller and Thomas Wilmot (now written Wilmarth), appear in Baylies' list, but Mr. Bliss thinks these men were not here at this early date.

On the 9th of 4th month (June), 1645, lots were drawn for the great plain, beginning on the west side, and he that is first on the west side shall be the last on the east:

1. Stephen Payne.
2. Widow Walker.
3. Robert Martin.
4. Edward Gilman.
5. Ralph Shepherd.
6. Richard Wright.
7. Abraham Martin.
8. The Teacher.
9. Will Carpenter.
10. Robert Titus.
11. Walter Palmer.
12. James Walker.
13. Alexander Winchester.
14. Samuel Butterworth.
15. William Sabin.
16. Thomas Hitt.
17. Edward Smith.
18. Edward Bennett.
19. Thomas Clifton.
20. John Cooke.
21. Mr. Browne.
22. William Cheeseborough.
23. Ralph Allin.
24. James Browne.
25. The Governor.
26. William Smith.
27. John Sutton.
28. Job Laine.
29. Thom Cooper.
30 Thomas Bliss.
31. John Peram.
32. Joseph Torrey.
33. John Holbrooke.
34. James Clarke.
35. Edward Sale.
36. George Kendricke.
37. Mr. Leonard.
38. Richard Bowen.
39. Edward Patterson.
40. John Reade.
41. John Matthews.
42. Matthew Pratt.
43. Robert Sharpe.
44. Ephraim and Peter Hunt.
45. Zachary Roades.
46. John Meggs.
47. John Miller.
48. Thomas Holbrook.
49. The Schoolmaster.
50. Mr. Peck.
51. Richard Ingram.
52. Isaac Martin.
53. John Allin.
54. Mr. Henry Smith.
55. Mr. Newman.
56. The Pastor.
57. Obadiah Holmes.
58. Robert Morris.

The 18th of the 12th month (February), 1646, lots were drawn for the new meadow and to be divided according to person and estate, only those that were under £150 estate to be made up 150. They were drawn as follows:

1. Robert Sharp.
2. Nicholas Ide.
3. Isaac Martin.
4. Mr. Newman.
5. Thomas Clifton.
6. Ralph Allen.
7. Robert Fuller.
8. Edward Sale.
9. Joseph Torrey.
10. John Fitch.
11. Abraham Martin.
12. Walter Palmer.
13. William Devill.
14. Edward Gilman.
15. Richard Bowin.
16. Robert Titus.
24. William Sabin.
25. Robert Wheaton.
26. Thomas Bliss.
27. Widow Bennett.
28. Mr. Henry Smith.
29. Edward Smith.
30. Ademia Morris.
31. John Peram.
32. Peter Hunt.
33. John Miller.
34. Richard Ingram.
35. Mr. Alexander Winchester.
36. George Wright.
37. Zachary Roades.
38. George Kendricke.
39. John Matthews.

17. Robert Martin.
18. Widow Walker.
19. George Robinson.
20. Thomas Cooper.
21. Obadiah Holmes.
22. Stephen Paine.
23. James Redwaie.
40. John Dagget.
41. Robert Abell.
42. William Carpenter.
43. Mr. Peck.
44. John Allin.
45. Will Cheeseborough.
46. William Smith.

June 22, 1658, lots were drawn for the meadows that lie on the north side of the town, in order as followeth, according to person and estate:

1. John Peck.
2. George Robinson.
3. Robert Abell.
4. Nicholas Ide.
5. James Reddeway.
6. Jonathan Bliss.
7. Mr. Winchester's children.
8. Mr. Newman.
9. George Kendrick.
10. Stephen Paine, Sr.
11. John Butterworth.
12. John Read.
13. Thomas Wilmoth.
14. John Fitch.
15. Henry Smith.
16. Will Carpenter, Sr.
17. John Millerd, Jr.
18. Robert Wheaton.
19. Richard Bullock.
20. Robert Martin.
21. John Perram.
22. Richard Bowen, Sr.
23. Obadiah Bowen.
24. Anthony Perry.
25. Joseph Peck.
26. John Matthews.
27. John Allin.
28. John Sutton.
29. Peter Hunt.
30. Tho Cooper, Jr.
31. Will Sabin.
32. Philip Walker.
33. Daniel Smith.
34. John Daggett.
35. Nicholas Peck.
36. Rice Leonard.
37. Robert Jones.
38. Francis Stevens.
39. Thomas Cooper, Sr.
40. John Woodcock.
41. Edward Hall.
42. Stephen, Paine, Jr.
43. Roger Amadowne.
44. Richard Bowen, Jr.
45. Robert Fuller.
46. Will Bucklin.
47. Mr. Peck.
48. John Willard, Sr.
49. Will Carpenter, Jr.

May 26, 1668, lots were drawn for the meadow lands in the North Purchase, by the following persons:

Obadiah Bowen.
Samuel Luther.
Stephen Paine, Sr.
John Savage.
Goody Hide.
Children's lands.
Thomas Reade.
Preserved Abell.
William Carpenter.
Gilbert Brooks.
Thomas and Jacob Ormsby
Robert Jones.
John Reade, Sr.
Nathaniel Paine, Sr.
Samuel Carpenter.
Richard Whitaker.
Mr. Tanner.
Stephen Paine, Jr.
Jonathan Palmer.
James Redeway.
Mr. Daniel Smith.
Mr. Browne.
Robert Miller.
John Titus.
Nathaniel Peck.
George Robinson.
Robert Fuller.
John Fitch.

James Gibson.
Rice Leonard.
Samuel Newman.
John Daggett.
Anthony Perry.
Thomas Cooper, Jr.
George Kendricke.
John Butterworth.
Mr. Myles.
Richard Bowen, Jr.
Mr. Newman.
Joseph Peck.
William Sabin.
Ichabod Miller, Jr.
Robert Wheaton.
Widow Carpenter.
Benjamin Buckland,
Philip Walker.
John Peram, Sr.
John Ormsby.
Jaret Ingraham.
Nathaniel Paine, Jr.
Henry Smith.
Nicholas Peck.
Jonathan Bosworth.
Thomas Willmot.
William Buckland.
John Kinslye.
Jonathan Fuller.
John Miller, Sr.
Joseph Carpenter.
Samuel Peck.
Sampson Mason.
John Allin, Jr.
Nicholas Ide.
Deacon Cooper.
Joseph Buckland.
Thomas Grant.
Israel Peck.
Captain Willett.
Jonathan Bliss.
Lieutenant Hunt.
Eldad Kinsley.
John Reade, Jr.
John Lowell.
Francis Stephens.
Edward Hall.
John Woodcock.
John Allin, Sr.
Abraham Martin.
Ovid Bullock.

A list of the Proprietors and Inhabitants of Rehoboth, Feb. 7, 1689.

INHABITANTS.

Mr. Samuel Angeir.
Deacon Thomas Cooper.
Joseph Peck, Sr.
John Fitch.
John Woodcock, Sr.
Sergt. Thomas Reade.
George Kendricke.
Nichollas Ide, Sr.
George Robinson, Sr.
Robert Wheaton.
Richard Martin.
John Peren.
Jonathan Fuller, Sr.
James Sabin.
John Sabin.
Noah Sabin.
Heirs of Thomas Kendrick.
Samuell Robinson.
Mosses Reade.
Mr. Christopher Sanders.
Jonah Palmer, Sr.
Samuell Palmer.
Noah Mason.
Samuell Mason.
Enock Hunt.
John Hunt.
Ephraim Hunt.
Rice Leonard.
Samuel Butterworth.
Philip Walker.
Francis Stephens, Sr.
John Ormsby.
Nathaniel Chaffee.
Samuel Sabin.
Sergt. Preserved Abell
Daniell Reade.
Israel Reade.
James Sabin.
Samuell Tittus.
Joseph Tittus.
John Carpenter.
Thomas Grant.
John Willmarth.
Samuel Blise.
Jonathan Blise.
Joseph Buckland.
Samuel Paine.
Joseph Browne.

Nicholas Ide, Jr.
Samuell Millerd, Sr.
Samuell Millerd, Jr.
John Hall.
John Redway.
Samuel Carpenter.
John Tittus.
Samuel Newman, Jr.
John Kinsley.
Timothy Ide.
Jonathan Fuller, Jr.
Jeremiah Wheaton.
John Shaw.
Joseph Sabine.
Richard Whiteaker.
Samuel Bullock.
Thomas Ormsby.
Thomas Man.
Robert Millerd, Sr.
Mr. Henry Sweeting.
Jathniell Peck.
Joshua Smith.
John Smith.
Richard Evens.
Nathaniel Whitaker.
Ephraim Wheaton.
Abiah Carpenter.
James Carpenter.
Samson Mason.
Joseph Mason.
Joseph Buckland, Jr.
Barak Buckland.
Sillas Tittus.
Nathaniel Paine, Jr.
William Robenson.
Josiah Carpenter.
Francis Stephens, Jr.
Richard Bowen, Jr.

William Carpenter, Jr.
Isack Allen.
Thomas Wilmarth, Jr.
John Woodcok, Jr.
Iserall Woodcok.
Thomas Woodcok.
Jonathan Woodcok.
James Thurber.
Samuel Bowen.
Jonathan Willmarth.
John French.
Joseph Barsworth.
Joseph Peck, Jr.
Hezekiah Pecke.
Richard Bowen.
Thomas Bowen, Jr.
John Marten.
Jonah Palmer, Jr.
Samuel Cooper.
Nathaniel Perry.
John Daggett.
Thomas Cooper.
Joseph Daggett.
Nathaniell Daggett.
Joseph Millerd.
Benjamin Millerd.
John Bowen.
Benjamin Robinson.
David Newman.
David Fuller.
John Jenkings.
John Jonson.
Daniel Shepherd, Sr.
? David Freeman.
James Wilson.
James Welch.
John Bullock.
John Callender.

John Bartlett's heirs.

ORPHANS.

Thomas and Nathaniel Cooper, sons of Nath'l.
Benjamin Buckland's heirs.
Samuell Fuller.
Eldad Kinsley, heirs.
Jonathan Carpenter.
David Carpenter.
Sollomon Carpenter.
Zachariah Carpenter.
Abraham Carpenter.
Robert Joanes heirs.
Daniel Sabin, of Nehemiah.

William Allen, heirs.
Thomas Smith.
Henry Smith.
Abiall Smith.
Ebenezer Walker.
John Reade.
Thomas Reade.
John Reade, Jr., heirs.
Eliphellet Carpenter.
Rebeckah Carpenter, of Abiah.
Mary Walker.
Mary Ormsby.

John Fuller.
Abiall Fuller.
Benjamin Paine.
George Robinson, Jr.
Isake Mason.
Thomas Bowen.

Jacob Ormsby, daughter of.
Mr. Pilebeame, heirs.
James Myles, of John.
Nathaniel Myles, of John.
John Savage heirs.
Philip Amidowne.

Henry Amidowne.

PROPRIETORS NOT INHABITANTS.

James Browne, Esq.
Thomas Daggett, Esq.
Mr. Nathaniel Paine.
Mr. John Allen, Sr.
Mr. Henry Newman.
Dea. John Butterworth.
Mrs. Elizabeth Viall.
Daniell Allen.
Obadiah Bowen, Sr.
Samuell Viall.
William Ingraham.
Mr. Nicholas Taner.
Mr. Andrew Willett.
Mr. Phillip Squire.
Obadiah Bowen, Jr.
John Paine.
Joseph Chaffee.
Henry Sweet.
Mr. Samuel Myles.
Joseph Carpenter.

Benjamin Carpenter.
John Carpenter, Jr.
Benjamin Fuller.
Thomas Wood.
Israell Peck.
John Allen, Jr.
Elizabeth Patey.
Ensign Tho Estabrooks.
William Howard.
John Blackstone.
Jarett Ingraham.
John Lowell.
Mr. Noah Floiade.
Anthony Sprague.
Humphrey Tiffany heirs.
George Webb.
Thomas Barnes.
Richard Daggerworth.
Joseph Woodard.
Thomas Patey.

* From Bliss' History of Rehoboth.

LIST OF THE FREEMEN, 1643 TO 1673.

1643.

Stephen Paine.
William Carpenter.
Walter Palmer.
Sam'l Newman.

1657.

Have taken oath of fidelities,
Robert Abell.

1658.

Have taken oath of Fidelities.
Abraham Martin.
John Matthews.
John Miller, Sr.
Tho Cooper, Sr.
Phillip Walker.
William Buckland.
Edward Hall.
Rob Wheaton.
John Miller.
John Woodcocke.

Francis Stevens.
Josepth Carpenter.

1658.

Town Record.

Mr. John Brown.
Mr. Samuell Newman.
Mr. Stephen Payne.
Mr. William Carpenter.
Walter Palmer.
Nicholas Ide.
Mr. Tho Cooper.
Richard Bowin.
Leift. Peter Hunt.
John Allin.
Mr. Nicholas Pecke.
William Sabin.
Daniell Smith.
Mr. John Browne, Jr.,
Mr. James Brown.
Phillip Walker.

Anthony Perry.
Rob Fuller.
Roger Annadowne.
Jonas Palmer.
Richard Bullock.
John Phitte.
Rice Leonard.
Jonathan Blisse.
Henry Smith.
John Doghead.
Obadiah Bowin.
John Butterworth.
Jonathan Bosworth.
Tho Wilmot.
Rob Joanes.
Joseph Pecke.
John Pecke.
Stephen Paine, Jr.
John Miller, Jr.
James Riddaway.
George Kenericke.
George Robinson.
William Carpenter, Jr.
John Read.
John Perren.
Josepth Peck, Jr.
Rob Morton.
Richard Bowin, Jr.
Enocke Hunt.
Jonathan Bosworth, Sr.
Preserved Abel.
John Ormsbey.
Jonathan Blisse.
George Kenericke.
John Wilmouth.
John Titus, Jr.
Stephen Paine.
Noah Mason.
Daniel Read.
Thomas Kenericke.
John Hunt.
Joseph Bosworth.
Samuell Robinson.

1658.

By Nathaniel Morton.

Mr. Daniell Smith.
Mr. Samuell Anger.
Thomas Cooper.
John Read, Sr.
Capt. Peter Hunt.
Serg. Thomas Wilmouth.
Richard Whittacare.
Samuell Sabin.
Joseph Peck.
Abraham Perram.
Leift. Nicholas Pecke.
William Sabin.
Anthonie Perry.
Jonah Palmer.
John Titus, Sr.
William Carpenter, Sr.
John Perram.
Samuell Newman.
Nicholas Iyd, Sr.
Thomas Read.
Gilbert Brookes.
Jonathan Fuller.
John Pecke.
Samuell Pecke.
Thomas Cooper, Jr.
Nathaniel Chaffey.
Samuel Walker.
Samuell Bullock.
Jonathan Wilmouth.
Nicholas Iyde.
Joshua Smith.
George Robinson.
Joseph Sabin.
John Perram.
Christopher Sanders.
John Woodcock, Sr.
Phillip Walker.

1662.

Samuell Newton, Jr.

LIST OF FREEMEN OF REHOBOTH. 1670.

Mr. Daniel Smith.
Mr. Noah Newman.
Mr. Stephen Paine.
Mr. Thomas Cooper.
Richard Bowin.
Leiftenant Peter Hunt.
Mr. Noah Newman.
Nicholas Hyde.
Gilbert Brookes.
John Pecke.
Anthony Perrey.
John Woodcocke.
Samuell Carpenter.
Samuell Pecke.
John Titus.
Jonathan Blisse.

Selected pages from History of Rehoboth by Leonard Bliss (1836)

fetch John Hassell, that lives at Sickuncke, to answer his contempts at the General Court: which was made and signed by all the assistants present." [Plym. Col. Rec. vol. II. p. 55.]

John Hazell continued to reside at "Seacunck," where he had lands granted him in 1669. And he appears to have owned largely before, for, in describing the bounds of the grant, mention is made of "his other allotment, being six hundred acres, bounded on the east with his fresh meadow and a little run of water and a cedar swamp; on the west side Patucet river; on the north side the woods; on the south side the towne land; only the Island and little upland above mentoned is part of the six hundred acres." [Plym. Col. Rec. vol. II. p. 193.]

"Seacunck," we have seen, was first granted to people of Hingham; but they were soon joined by Mr. Newman and the majority of his church at Weymouth, in their projected settlement; and it is even possible that some of the people of Weymouth were among the original grantees, of 1641, though none of them are among the names mentioned. It appears, however, that those whose names are given were a committee acting for "themselves and divers others."

The first meeting of the original planters of Rehoboth, to be found on record, is dated at "Weimoth the 24th of the 8th month* [October,] 1643." The record is as follows: "At a general meeting of the plantores of Seacunk, it was ordered,

"(1) That the [illegible] lottes shall not exceed the number of sixty and five, and in case anny of those that have these lottes granted already fale, that Goodman [illegible] of Cambridge to be admitted if he please; and in case so manny fale as may limit to sixty, then not to exceed sixty lottes."

"(2) It is agreed that the ground that is most fit to be planted and hopefull for corne for the present to be planted and fenced by such as possess it according to [illegible.]"

"(3) It is ordered that those that have lottes granted and are [illegible] inhabitants shall fence the one end of their lottes and their part in the comon fence, in the same time, by the 20th day of April next, or else forfit their lottes to the disposal of the plantation; and likewise to remove themselves and family to inhabit [torn off] by this time twelvesmonth, or else forfite their lottes againe to the plantation, allowinge them their necessary improvements, as they in their discretion shall think meet."

"(4) That if anny damages shale fale out by anny man's particular fence, the owner of the fence shale pay the damage, and if [torn off] generall fence, then those persons that one the fence to pay [torn off.]" [Rehoboth Rec. vol. I. p. 1.]

The next meeting of the proprietors was held at Weymouth, "the 10th day of the 10th month" [December,] when regulations were made as to the planting of corn. The teacher to have a certain portion from each settler. Servants, after four years, to be inhabitants, and entitled to their privileges. Richard Wright employed to build a corn-mill.

During the year 1643, and probably before any other division of land had been made other than for house-lots, the proprietors were required individually to give in the value of their estates, in order that the allotments of land might be made accordingly, as appears from the Proprietors' Records: "About the year 1643, a joynt agreement was made by the inhabitants of Sea-conk alias Rehoboth, ffor the bringing in of their estates; that soe men's lotments might be taken up according to person and estate, as alsoe for the carrieing on of all publick chardges both for present and future; furtheremore the means and interest of what is heare expressed is that by which lands, now granted by the Court of Plymouth to the towne, is to be divided according to person and estate, as is expressed in this following list.*

	£	s.	d.
1. Mrs. Bur Ruth Ingram accepted in her place.	100	00	00
2. Widdow Walker	50	00	00
3. John Read	300	00	00
4. John Cooke which still is in the town's hands.	300	00	00
5. The Schoolmaster	50	00	00
6. Will Cheesbrook	450	00	00
7. Mr. Winchester	195	00	00
8. Richard Wright	834	00	00
9. Mr. Newman	330	00	00
10. Will. Smith	196	10	00
11. Walter Palmer	419	00	00
12. James Clark, now John Perrum's.	71	00	00
13. Ralph Shephard, now James Redewaye's.	121	10	00
14. Zachariah Roads	50	00	00
15. John Mathewes	40	00	00
16. John Perrum	67	00	00
17. John Millar	69	10	00
18. Samuel Butterworth	50	00	00
19. George Kendrick	50	00	00

---

* This is Old Style. The year then commenced the 25th of March. The correction of the calender by Pope Gregory, in 1582, was not adopted by the British Parliament till 1751. I have inserted the names of the months, designated by "1st mo." "2d mo." &c. but have not made the correction for the eleven days, ordered to be struck out of September, 1752.—*See also year* 1669.

* In transcribing the names in this list, as in most of the extracts from the ancient records, I have followed the orthography of the original.

	£ s. d.		£ s. d.
20. Abram Martin	60 10 00	40. Thomas Clifton, now Stephen Payne's Jr.	160 00 00
21. The Teacher	100 00 00	41. Joseph Torry, now John Peck's.	134 00 00
22. Edward Seale	81 00 00	42. Tho. Cooper	367 00 00
23. John Browne	50 00 00	43 Robert ffullor	150 00 00
24. Mr. Howward	250 00 00	44. John Allen	156 00 00
25. Mr. Peck	535 00 00	45. Ralph Allen	270 00 00
26. Mr. Obediah Holmes, now Robert Wheaton's.	100 00 00	46. Edward Gillman, now Joseph Peck's.	306 00 00
27. Edward Smith	252 00 00	47. Tho. Houlbrook	186 10 00
28. Job Lane, now Robert Abell's.	50 00 00	48. Will. Carpenter	254 10 00
29. Thomas Hitt	101 00 00	49. John Houlbrook. now Nicholas Ide's.	186 10 00
30. James Walker, now John ffitche's.*	50 00 00	50. Robert Titus, now Robert Jones's.	156 10 00
31. Thomas Blyss	153 00 00	51. Will. Sabin	53 00 00
32. The Governor's lot, now Richard Bullock's.	200 00 00	52. Stephen Payne	535 00 00
33. Isaack Martin, now Thomas Wilmot's.	50 00 00	53. Mr. Browne	600 00 00
34. Robert Morris	94 10 00	54. Edward Patteson, now John Woodcock's.	50 00 00
35. Edward Bennet, now Rich. Bowen's, Jr.	134 10 00	55. Peter Hunt	327 00 00
36. The Pastor	100 00 00	56. Robert Martin	228 10 00
37. Mr. Henry Smith	260 00 00	57. Robert Sharp, but now Rice Leonard's.	106 00 00
38. Mathew Pratt	239 00 00	58. Richard Bowen	270 00 00
39. John Megg's	120 00 00		

[Proprietors' Records, vol. I. p. 1.]

At a meeting of the proprietors of Seekonk, (the date of which is torn off, though it was probably among the first,) it was voted, that nine men should be chosen to order the prudential affairs of the plantation, who should have power to dispose of the lands "in lots of twelve, eight, or six acres, as in their discretion they think the quality of the estate of the person do require." This applied to house-lots. It was further ordered, "that all other lots to be divided according to person and estate. One person to be valued at £12 sterling in the division of lands, and that no person should sell his improvements but to such as the towne shall accept of;" also voted, "that the meeting-house shall stand in the midst of the town."

On "the 21st of the 4th month" [June,] a town meeting was holden, but the records of it are so mutilated as to be mostly illegible.

---

* Instead of a capital letter, the small letter is frequently doubled.

It appears, however, to relate to a new division of land. It was resolved, that on every fortieth day, a meeting should be holden by all the inhabitants "for the consideration and acting of such necessary affairs as concern the plantation."

"At a town meeting, the 31st day of the 4th month [June], 1644, lots were drawn for a division of the woodland between the plain and the town. Shares were drawn to the number of 58, as follows:

1. Mr. Winchester,
2. Mr. Leonard,
3. Peter Hunt,
4. William Cheesborough,
5. Ralph Allin,
6. John Holbrook,
7. John Perram,
8. The Schoolmaster,
9. Matthew Pratt,
10. William Carpenter,
11. Ephraim Hunt,
12. Samuel Butterworth,
13. Edward Patterson,
14. James Browne,
15. Richard Bowin,
16. Mr. Newman,
17. Mr. Peck,
18. Walter Palmer,
19. Abraham Martin,
20. John Sutton,
21. Robert Morris,
22. John Matthewes,
23. Isaac Martin,
24. James Walker,
25. Robert Titus,
26. Edward Seale,
27. George Kendrick,
28. ———,*
29. Thomas Bliss,
30. The Pastor's,
31. Stephen Payne,
32. Edward Smith,
33. William Smith,
34. James Clark,
35. The Governour,
36. Edward Bennett,
37. Obadiah Holmes,
38. Mr. Browne,
39. Thomas Cooper,
40. Thomas Holbrooke,
41. Thomas Hitt,
42. John Allin,
43. John Meggs,
44. William Sabin,
45. Mr. Henry Smith,
46. Zachery Roades,
47. Edward Gilman,
48. Thomas Clifton,
49. Joseph Torrey,
50. Thomas Dunn,
51. Robert Martin,
52. Widow Walker,
53. John Miller,
54. Mr. B——,* (Mrs. Burr?)
55. The Teacher,
56. John Cooke,
57. Ralph Shepherd,
58. John Reade.

Jos. Torrey
Robt Sharpe
James Clarke
Robt Steph

On "the 3d of the 5th month [July], 1644," the inhabitants signed a compact in the following words:

---

* These names I was not able to decipher.

"This combination, entered into by the general consent of all the inhabitants, after general notice given the 23d of the 4th month."

"We whose names are underwritten, being, by the providence of God, inhabitants of Seacunk, intending there to settle, do covenant and bind ourselves one to another to subject our persons [torn off,] (according to law and equity) to nine persons, any five of the nine which shall be chosen by the major part of the inhabitants of this plantation, and we [torn off] to be subject to all wholesome [torn off] by them, and to assist them, according to our ability and estate, and to give timely notice unto them of any such thing as in our conscience may prove dangerous unto the plantation, and this combination to continue untill we shall subject ourselves jointly to some other government."

Walter Palmer,
Edward Smith,
Edward Bennett,
Robert Titus,
Abraham Martin,
John Matthewes,
Edward Sale,
Ralph Shepherd,
Samuel Newman,
William Cheesborough,
Richard Wright,
Robert Martin,
Richard Bowen,
Joseph Torrey,
James Clark,
Ephraim Hunt,
Peter Hunt,
William Smith,
John Peren,
Zachery Rhoades,
Job Lane,
Alex. Winchester,
Henry Smith,
Stephen Payne,
Ralph Alin,
Thomas Bliss,
George Kendricke,
John Allen,
William Sabin,
Thomas Cooper.

"The 12th of the 5th mo. [July,] 1644. At a meeting upon public notice given, it is ordered that such as shall have allotments in the three divisions of lands presently to be laid out by Mr. Oliver and his partner, Joseph Fisher, and shall not pay the surveying of it, by the 28th of the 8th month [October,] next, at Boston or Dedham, according to the proposition of Mr. Oliver, shall forfeit all such lands laid out in the three aforesaid divisions,

into the hands of the nine men entrusted with the town affairs, who are desired to undertake with Mr. Oliver to satisfy him for the laying out of the aforesaid divisions."

"It is further ordered, the day above written, that Will. Cheesborough is to have division in all lands of Seakunk for a hundred and fifty-three pounds besides what he is to have for his own proportion, and that in way of consideration for the pains and charges he hath been at for setting off this plantation."

"At a general meeting of the town of Seacunk, being the 9th of the 10th month [December], 1644, at lawful warning given, by reason of many meetings and other strong causes for the easing of the great trouble and for the [illegible] and the deciding of controversies between party and party, as well as the proposing of men's levies to be made and paid, and for the well ordering of the town affairs, as may stand with future equity, according to our former combination, the inhabitants of said place have choose these men here named:"

Alexander Winchester,
Richard Wright,
Henry Smith,
Edward Smith,
Walter Palmer,
William Smith,
Stephen Payne,
Richard Bowen,
Robert Martin.

The first meeting of these townsmen, as they were styled, was on "the 3d day of the 11th mo. [January] 1644," when they voted to give Robert Morris, "in consideration for the spare lot he hath taken," the first lot in the next division.

"The 26th of the 10th mo. [December,] 1644, at a meeting of the town it was ordered, that, for time past, and for time to come, that all workmen that have or shall work in any common work, or shall work for any particular men, shall have for their wages for each day's work as followeth: for each laborer, from the first day of November until the first day of February, 18*d.* a day, and for the rest of the year 20*d.* a day except the harvest, that is to say while men are reaping harvests."

"It is ordered that the work of 4 oxen and a man for a day [torn off,] shilling and sixpence; and that for 6 oxen and a man seven shillings; and for eight oxen and a man, eight shillings."

"The 10th of the 11th mo. [January,] 1644, at a meeting of the townsmen it was agreed upon that all those that are underwritten have forfeited their lots for not fencing, or not removing his land is not till 1652, though it stands on the record in the place he has assigned to it. The name of Thomas Wilmot, (now written Willmarth,) is also found in the same list, though I am confident that there were none of that name in town at so early a period as 1645; and another name appears to have been erased, and this written over it in a handwriting of more modern date.

"The 16th of the 1st mo. [March,] 1645, at a general meeting of the towne upon public notice given, it was agreed that all the fence in the general field shall be fenced by the 23d of this present month; and whosoever shall be negligent, and not repair or set up his fence by the day above written, shall pay sixpence for every rod deficient, and the damage that shall come to any man by the same."

"The same day, the men after mentioned were made choice of to view the fences and to judge of the sufficiency of them, viz: Richard Bowen, Robert Titus, William Smith, Captain Wright, Alexander Winchester, Thomas Bliss, Stephen Payne and Thomas Cooper."

"The same day were made choice of for townsmen those men whose names are underwritten, for one whole year, viz:

Mr. Browne,
Stephen Payne,
Mr. Henry Smith,
Robert Martin,
Thomas Cooper,
William Carpenter,
Edward Smith."

"The 16th of the 1st mo. [March,] 1645, it was agreed upon by the towne that the towne shall be divided into two parts for the making of the foot bridges and the keeping of them, and the highways leading to them to be done by the whole town; the division to begin at the Widow Walker's and so on to Will. Carpenter's and so on to half; and Robert Martin and Thomas Cooper were made choice of to be surveyors to oversee the work."

"29th of the 2d mo. [April,] 1645, at a town meeting it was agreed upon that if any person or persons shall be lacking in [illegible] to the number of six months shall pay 12*d.* for every default, to be laid upon their goods and chattells."

"The same day, Richard Bowen, Walter Palmer, Stephen Payne, Robert Martin, William Carpenter, and Peter Hunt were made choice of to hear the grievances of all those that their meadow is defective, and give allowance to every man according as they in their discretion shall think meet, both in fresh meadow and salt, when they have viewed the meadows that are yet unlotted, and shall give to every man as they shall fall by lot."

"It is agreed that they shall lay out lots to those that have not according to their estate. That they shall begin at the upper end of the meadow next to the fresh water. That if there shall not prove fresh meadow enough to satisfy all that want fresh meadow, that then for them to give salt for fresh. It is agreed that these six, or any four of them, shall determine of any of those particulars above mentioned."

"The 28th of the 3d mo. [May] 1645, at a meeting of the townsmen, Richard Wright, Richard Bowen, Walter Palmer, Mr. Henry Smith, Mr. Winchester, William Smith, and Edward Smith being present, it is ordered that a levy shall be made and forthwith gathered, of 12*d.* on each £100 estate, to be paid either in butter at 6*d.* a lb. or in wampum: and it is also concluded that Robert Titus and William Sabin shall be collectors of said revenue."

"The 31st of Maie,[*] 1645, at a meeting of the town upon public notice given, Stephen Payne and William Carpenter were chosen to go to Plymouth, to the Court, to certify the town's minds."

"The 2d of the 4th mo. [June] 1645, at a general meeting of the town upon public notice given, it was agreed upon that Walter Palmer, William Smith, Mr. Newman, Alexander Winchester, William Cheesborough, and Richard Wright, if they will, shall lay down their lots of salt marsh, where it was cast by lot, and shall have their lots in the new meadow."

"Those whose names are above written have layed down their lots, and are appointed to have their lots in the new meadow; and whensoever the town shall dispose of those lots that they leave, whoever shall purchase them shall pay unto them 6*d.* an acre."

"It is agreed that those men that were chosen the 29th of the 2d mo. [April] 1645, to recompense those that have not sufficient salt marsh and fresh, shall view the new meadow by John [illegible] house, and if they see it meet, shall allow it to Richard Wright in lieu of so much salt marsh."

"It is agreed that Robert Martin shall have the lot in the woodland plain that was laid out to Mr. Leonard, being the second lot."

---

[*] This is the first place the name of the month is written in the original records. I have preserved the orthography of the original.

"The 9th of the 4th mo. [June] 1645, at a meeting of the town upon public notice given, those seven men underwritten were chosen to order the prudential affairs of the town for half a year, viz:

Mr. John Browne, sen.
Stephen Payne,
Richard Wright,
Walter Palmer,
William Cheesborough,
Mr. Alexander Winchester,
Edward Smith."

"The same day lots were drawn for the great plain, beginning upon the west side; and he that is first upon the west side shall be last upon the east."

The lots were drawn by the following persons, in the following order, viz:

1. Stephen Payne,
2. Widow Walker,
3. Robert Martin,
4. Edward Gilman,
5. Ralph Shepherd,
6. Richard Wright,
7. Abraham Martin,
8. The Teacher,
9. Will. Carpenter,
10. Robert Titus,
11. Walter Palmer,
12. James Walker,
13. Alexander Winchester,
14. Samuel Butterworth,
15. William Sabin,
16. Thomas Hitt,
17. Edward Smith,
18. Edward Bennett,
19. Thomas Clifton,
20. John Cooke,
21. Mr. Browne,
22. William Cheesborough,
23. Ralph Allin,
24. James Browne,
25. The Governour,
26. William Smith,
27. John Sutton,
28. Job Laine,
29. Thom. Cooper,
30. Thomas Bliss,
31. John Peram,
32. Joseph Torrey,
33. John Holbrooke,
34. James Clarke,
35. Edward Sale,
36. George Kendricke,
37. Mr. Leonard,
38. Richard Bowen,
39. Edward Patteson,
40. John Reade,
41. John Matthews,
42. Matthew Pratt,
43. Robert Sharpe,
44. Ephraim & Peter Hunt,
45. Zachary Roades,
46. John Meggs,
47. John Miller,
48. Thomas Holbrooke,
49. The Schoolmaster,
50. Mr. Peck,
51. Richard Ingram,
52. Isaac Martin,
53. John Allin,
54. Mr. Henry Smith,
55. Mr. Newman,
56. The Pastor,
57. Obadiah Holmes,
58. Robert Morris.

"The 28th of the 5th mo. [July] 1645, at a town meeting, it was agreed upon, that a rate of 10*s.* in every £100 estate should be levied upon every man, upon his land and goods."

"The 29th[*] of the 10th month, [December,] 1645.

"Whereas there was a second agreement made with the Indians for their full consent in their removing from Wannamoiset, and the value of fifteen pounds sterling to be paid them, or thereabouts in several commodities: it was in several town meetings expounded that if any one man would pay that particular purchase, they should have that land, with twelve acres lying at Wachemoquit cove, and so much more land at Wanamoyset as should be thought worth the payment of the same. Afterward Richard Bowen, Robert Martin, Stephen Payne, by the appointment of the rest of the townsmen, viewed and laid out that neck of land called and known by the name of Wannamoyset neck, from the salt water where the Indians had formerly made a hedge, ranging unto the north end of the Indian field and so round about the said Indian field unto the salt water. Whereupon, the 29th of the 10th month, 1645, Mr. John Brown, in a town meeting, did promise and undertake to pay the said purchase in consideration that the said lands to belong to him and his heirs and assigns forever. And it was further agreed upon in the said town meeting that in all divisions of lands that was, or hereafter should be made, that what proportion should fall to his share after the rate of £300 estate should be laid forth to him, adjoining to the aforesaid lands on the farther side of the town, or towards the salt marsh, or so as may be both least prejudicial to the town or to himself, saving that 44 acres upon the Wachemoquit neck already allotted him to be part of the same; and he doth farther agree to accept of ten acres of salt marsh where he mowed this year, formerly allotted to him in full of all meadow land belonging to the town; and doth further promise, that when the rest of the townsmen shall fence the rest of their lands already allotted on Wachemoquit neck, he to fence his part with them, and to bear his part in town charges after the aforesaid sum of £300 estate; and he doth further promise not to make any such fence so far into the salt water upon the westerly side of Wanamoyset neck as shall bar out hogs from coming, nor fence the south point of the said neck a quarter of a mile on the west side of the said neck."

---

[*] Baylies says "20th," but incorrectly: the manuscript is plain and cannot be mistaken.

"It was agreed upon that John Peram shall have a platt of meadow that lyeth near Manton's neck, in satisfaction of his meadow, so far as it shall be thought fit by those that are to view the defect of the meadow."

"The 9th of the 12th mo. [February] 1646, at a meeting of the townsmen, were made choice of, to view the fence of the town lots, those persons following, viz: William Carpenter and Robert Titus, William Smith and John Dogget, Stephen Paine and Thomas Cooper, Thomas Bliss and Alexander Winchester."

"The same day it was agreed that Edward Sale, John Dogget, William Sabin, John Peram, and William Thayer, shall have leave to set up a weier* upon the cove, before William Devill's house, and one upon Pawtucket river; and they shall [illegible] the [illegible] of them during the [illegible] of [illegible] provided that they hinder not either English nor Indians from fishing at the falls in either place; and they shall sell their *alwives* at 2*s*. a thousand, and their other fish at reasonable rates; and they shall make their *weieres* so as shall not hinder the passage of boats, and that no man shall fish above their weier with any draft net: provided if they set not up their weier in a twelvemonth, that it shall be lawful for any man else to set up a weier upon the same terms."

"The 18th of the 12th mo. [February] 1646, at a meeting of the towne it was agreed to draw lots for the new meadow, and to be divided according to person and estate, only those that were under £150 estate to be made up 150. They were drawn as followeth:

1. Robert Sharp,
2. Nicholas Ide,
3. Isaac Martin,
4. Mr. Newman,
5. Thomas Clifton,
6. Ralph Allin,
7. Robert Fuller,
8. Edward Sale,
9. Joseph Torrey,
10. John Fitch,
11. Abraham Martin,
12. Walter Palmer,
13. William Devill,
14. Edward Gilman,
15. Richard Bowin,
16. Robert Titus,
17. Robert Martin,
18. Widow Walker,
19. George Robinson,
20. Thomas Cooper,

---

* These were for catching fish. I have followed the orthography of the original, as in most of the quotations where there is any thing singular. I have written proper names as I found them in the original, in all cases.

21. Obadiah Holmes,
22. Stephen Paine,
23. James Redwaie,
24. William Sabin,
25. Robert Wheaton,
26. Thomas Bliss,
27. Widow Bennet,
28. Mr. Henry Smith,
29. Edward Smith,
30. Ademia Morris,
31. John Peram,
32. Peter Hunt,
33. John Miller,
34. Richard Ingram,
35. Mr. Alexander Winchester,
36. George Wright,
37. Zachary Roades,
38. George Kendricke,
39. John Matthewse,
40. John Dogget,
41. Robert Abell,
42. William Carpenter,
43. Mr. Peck,
44. John Allin,
45. Will. Cheesborough,
46. William Smith."

"The 28th of the 2d mo. [April] 1647, George Wright sold unto William Dogget, all his rights, privileges and immunities, consisting of his house and house-lot of seven acres, seventeen acres in the woodland plain, a lot upon the great plain, and 15 rods of fresh meadow lying in the forty-acre meadow."

"The 26th of the 3d mo. [May] 1647, at a general meeting of the town upon public notice given, Stephen Paine and Walter Palmer were chosen to be committees for the Court. At the same time Thomas Cooper and Thomas Clifton were chosen to be grand-jury-men for this year. And at the same time William Smith was chosen constable for this year; and Thomas Bliss and Robert Titus were chosen supervisors of the highways for this year; and Mr. Browne, Mr. Peck, Stephen Paine, Mr. Winchester, Richard Bowen, William Carpenter, and Edward Smith, were chosen townsmen for the present year."

(Select men)

At the same meeting, cattle were prohibited from the planting grounds of Wachemoquit, on a fine of 12*d*. per head.

"The 28th of the 4th mo. [June] 1647, the towne gave to John Titus the lot before granted to Matthew Pratt; and also gave to John Woodcocke the lot before granted to Edward Pateson."

"The 29th of the 7th mo. [September] 1647, at a general meeting of the towne upon public notice given, the island of salt marsh, that lyeth in the river between the neck of land belonging to the town and Mr. Henry Smith's salt marsh, was given to Richard Ingram, in lieu of an allotment of salt marsh."

"At the same time a parcel of salt marsh that lyeth in Edward Smith's land in the woodland plaine was given to Edward Sale." "The same day it was ordered that no man shall keep any *gotes* upon any common, or any man's property but his own, within three miles of the town, after the first day of the 6th month next, upon penalty of five shillings for every *gote* so kept."

"The 24th of November, 1647, at a meeting of the townsmen it was agreed that every inhabitant that hath a team shall work with his team and one man four days in a year at the highway, and every inhabitant that hath no team shall find a sufficient labourer four days in a year, being lawfully warned by the supervisor of the highway; but if the supervisors in their discretion shall see more need of labourers than of teams, that those that have a team shall send two labourers instead of their teams, being so warned of the supervisor."

"The 4th of the 11th mo. [January] 1647, at a meeting of the town upon public notice given, the residue of the allotment that was given unto Matthew Pratt, he not having remained in town, was given unto Richard Bulok," (now written Bullock.)

"The 13th of the 11th mo. [January] 1647, Ademia Morris, executor to Robert Morris, sold to Nicholas Ide his home lot."

"The 3d of the 12th month, [February] 1647, at a general meeting of the town upon public notice given, it was agreed upon that every inhabitant in the town, that hath land upon the woodland plain, shall meet together at his alotment, and set up sufficient stakes for bound marks to his land, upon the second day in the second month next: and it was ordered that the drum shall be beat up near the meeting-house as a signal for each man to repair to his lot."

At the same meeting it was also "agreed upon, Whereas it hath pleased the Court of Plymouth to give us power to try all manner of differences by way of action between party and party, that is under the value of ten pounds, that there shall be four Courts kept every year, upon the several days following, viz: upon the last Thursday of the third month, upon the last Thursday of the sixth month, upon the last Thursday of the ninth month, and upon the last Thursday of the twelfth month. And it is agreed that the jurors shall have sixpence apiece for every case tried by them."

"It is ordered that the constable shall have 6*d*. for every jury warned by him, and 6*d*. for attending upon the jury for every action."

"The 12th of the 2d mo. [April] 1648, at a general meeting of the town upon public notice given, John Allin was chosen constable for the year following, and John Dogget and Robert Titus were chosen deputies for the towne, and Joseph Torrey and Robert Sharpe were chosen grand-jurymen, and John Miller and John Peram were chosen supervisors of the highways, and Mr. Browne, Mr. Peck, Richard Bowin, Stephen Paine, William Carpenter, William Smith were chosen townsmen."

"At the same meeting it was agreed upon that there shall be added to the row of lots from Thomas Clifton's to Robert Titus's lot 2 rods out of the common; and it shall begin at a notching at the outside of Thomas Clifton's lot, and so go on to 2 rods; but, if it be not prejudicial to the highway, it shall begin at 2 rods wide throughout."

"The 18th of July, 1648, the towne gave to Roger Ammidowne a house-lot between Walter Palmer's house-lot and the mill," besides a piece of salt marsh and other lands.

"The 11th of the 11th* mo. [January] 1648, at a general meeting of the town upon public notice given, Mr. Peck and Stephen Paine were chosen assistants to assist Mr. Browne in matters of controversy at Court."

"It was agreed that the townsmen shall make a levy for the finishing of the meeting-house, and for the county tax and to set the town out of debt."

"The lot that was given unto George Robinson, being forfeited into the town's hands, was given unto John Sutton, he paying unto George Robinson his necessary charges laid out upon it."

"The 11th of the 3d mo. [May] 1649, at a general meeting of the town upon public notice given, it was agreed upon that William Devill shall be constable for the next year; Stephen Paine and Robert Titus were chosen deputies for the Court; Thomas Cooper and Obadiah Holmes were chosen grand jurymen; and Richard Bowen and Robert Sharpe were chosen surveyors of the highways."

"July 12th, 1649, at a general town meeting upon public notice given, it was agreed upon that there should be a dilligent search made to find out the nearest and most convenient way between Rehoboth and Dedham; and Mr. Browne and Stephen Paine were chosen to compound with the surveyors, and to agree for such help as should be requisite for him or them to have."

---

* Baylies says "11th of the 1st," which is a mistake.

Thomas Cooper, deputies; William Sabin and Joseph Pecke, grand jurymen; Robert Martin, constable; Richard Bowen and Thomas Redway, overseers of the ways."

"There were chosen at time of training, Peter Hunt for Lieutenant, and John Browne for Ensign." (J.B. Senior)

This is the first notice found in the records of the appointment of military officers. This company is said to have been commanded for some years by a Lieutenant, and to have been styled "a Lieutenant's company," the number of members not being large enough to entitle it to a higher officer.

"The 25th of October, 1653, at a town meeting lawfully warned, the following men were chosen raters for the sums of the county pay, viz: Stephen Payne, Richard Bowen, William Smith, William Carpenter, senior, and Peter Hunt."

"At the same meeting it was agreed on by the town, that the Indians should have 4 pounds in wampum, in recompence of the damage they have suffered in their corn by hogs and horses, this two years; and the wampum to be paid out of the wampum which remains in Walter Palmer's hands."

"At a town meeting lawfully warned, the 12th of December, in the year 1653, voted that the price of corn should be 5*s.*, wheat 5*s.*, rye 4*s.*, and Indian corn 3*s.* (provided that the corn be current and merchantable corn.)"

"At the same time those men were chosen to be townsmen, viz:

(Mr. back then was a title of exceptional respect)

Mr. Brown,	Thomas Cooper,	William Smith,
Stephen Payne,	William Carpenter,	Robert Martin."
Richard Bowen,		

"The 10th of the 11th mo. [January] 1653. Voted that the Indians that kill any wolves are to be paid out of the rate by the constable."

"The 22d of the 12th mo. [February] 1653. At a town meeting lawfully warned, Stephen Payne, senior, and Thomas Cooper, senior, were chosen deputies, to be present at Plymouth, at the next Court in March, to performe the business there that the warrand doth require, in behalf of the town, with full power in that behalf."

"The 10th of the 3d mo. [May] 1654, Stephen Payne, senior, and Peter Hunt were chosen deputies for the Court; Anthony Perry and John Allin were chosen grand-jurymen; for constable, Stephen Payne, jr. or Mr. Peck; for surveyors of the highways, William Carpenter, senior, George Kendricke and Stephen Payne, jr."

"The 22d of the 3d mo. [May] 1654, were chosen for military officers, Peter Hunt, for Lieutenant; John Brown, jr. for Ensign, and allowed to stand by the Honourable Bench at Plymouth Court."

"The 15th of the 7th mo. [September] 1654, at a town meeting lawfully warned, there were chosen raters for the making of the county rate, and for a town rate for the present debts, viz: Stephen Payne, Richard Bowen, Peter Hunt, John Reed and Robert Martin."

"At the same time Richard Bowen was chosen Town Clerk."

"The 28th of June, 1654. Were chosen for the considering of such lands as shall be recorded in the town books, for the clearing the rights of any person, Mr. Pecke, Thomas Cooper, John Allin, Stephen Payne and Richard Bowen."

"The 21st of July, 1654. At a town meeting lawfully warned, Stephen Payne, sen., and Peter Hunt were chosen deputies for the attendance of the Court in August next."

"The 13th of the 10th [December] 1654. At a meeting of the townsmen it was agreed on that the price of corn for to pay the town debts [something here appears to have been omitted] "that wheat should pass at 5*s.*, rye at 7*s.* and Indian pass at 3*s.*"

"The 1st of the 12th mo. [February], 1654, at a town meeting lawfully warned, it was agreed and voted, that Mr. Browne should have for his use four square rods of ground to build a house on, something near the meeting-house."

"At the same time Robert Abell was ordered to keep the Ordinary."

"In the year 1655,* the 22d of the 1st mo. [March] at a town meeting lawfully warned, it was agreed upon by vote that the new highway towards the bay shall be perfected, and that it should be done under the inspection of Goodman Payne and Goodman Carpenter."

"In the year 1655, the 17th of the 3d mo. [May], at a town meeting lawfully warned, Stephen Payne, sen., and Peter Hunt were chosen deputies; for constable, Stephen Payne, jr.; for grand-jury-men, Philip Walker and Jonathan Bliss; Richard Ingraham and John Fitch were chosen way-wardens."

At the same time it was voted, "that there shall be no common grass mown before the last of June; and, in case any do

---

* Baylies has 1654; this in old style is correct.

transgress this order, it shall be lawful for any that know it to fetch away the hay or grass so cut, without any damage to them."

"June the 26th, 1655. At a town meeting it was agreed upon that Mr. Newman, our teacher, should have fifty pounds a year; and those seven men whose names are hereto appended were chosen committees for the levying of a rate according to person and estate for the raising of said maintenance:

Joseph Peck,	Robert Martin,
Thomas Cooper,	Peter Hunt,
Richard Bowen,	Will. Sabin."
Stephen Payne,	

"At this period," says Baylies, "so much indifference as to the support of the clergy was manifested in Plymouth Colony as to excite the alarm of the other confederated Colonies. The complaint of Massachusetts against Plymouth, on this subject, was laid before the Commissioners, and drew from them a severe reprehension. Rehoboth had been afflicted already with a serious schism, and by its proximity to Providence and its plantations, where there was a universal toleration, the practice of free inquiry was encouraged, and principle, fancy, whim and conscience, all conspired to lessen the veneration for ecclesiastical authority."

[Hist. Memoir of Plym. Col. vol. II. p. 205.]

The schism here referred to was caused by Obadiah Holmes and several others withdrawing themselves from Mr. Newman's church, in 1649, and setting up a separate meeting of their own. A full account of this affair will be given in the ecclesiastical history of the town.

February 9th, 1655, Mr. Peck, Richard Bowen, senior, Stephen Paine, senior, Thomas Cooper, senior, Robert Martin, William Carpenter, senior, and Peter Hunt, were chosen Townsmen. "It was also granted that they shall have power to order the prudential affairs of the town, and that they shall have power to call a town-meeting when they see cause."

"At the same time Father Bowen was chosen Moderator to see good order in our town-meetings."

By the following extract from the records of Plymouth Court, it will be seen that Mr. John Browne, a principal inhabitant of Rehoboth, and for a long time one of the Governour's Assistants, was opposed to coercing people to support the ministry, although he was willing to contribute his full proportion

(Mr John Browne, a wealthy man & sympathetic to the plight of those who did not believe in Paedobaptism, offered to sell lands to pay their tithes for seven years)

"Whereas, a petition was presented unto the General Court, at Plymouth, the first of June, 1655, by several of the inhabitants of the town of Rehoboth, whose hands were thereunto subscribed, desiring the Court to assist them in a way according to the orders of other Colonies about them, for the raising maintenance for their minister; the sum of the petition seemeth to hold forth that those whose hands were not subscribed contributed nothing, or so little as was not esteemed of, which petition occasioned some discourse about a forcible way to compel all the inhabitants of that town to pay a certain sum every year towards the maintenance of the minister. Whereupon Mr. John Browne, one of the magistrates then sitting in Court, and being one of the inhabitants of that town, and not being made acquainted with the said petition until the names of the inhabitants were subscribed; to issue the said troublesome controversy, and take off the odium from others, did propound that forasmuch as those whose hands were to the petition desired to submit themselves to a rate, that if the Court would send two of the magistrates unto Rehoboth to take notice of the estates of the petitioners, he would engage himself in the behalf of those who were the inhabitants of the said town, whose hands were not subscribed to the petition, that they should voluntarily contribute according to their estates; and if any of them fell short in this business, he would supply that want of his own estate; and this he would make good by engaging his lands for seven years in their behalf, while they staid, though he himself should remove from the place, which was approved of, and Captain Standish and Mr. Hatherly were then made choice of by the Court to see it ordered accordingly."

In 1655, "Liberty is granted by the Court to the neighborhood in which Mr. Brown liveth at Rehoboth to make a pound to empound all horses or hogs that shall trespass upon them."

[Plym. Col. Rec. vol. III. p. 84.]

Plymouth, July 3, 1656. "Robert Abell is allowed by the Court to keep an ordinary at Rehoboth."

"The Court have appointed and deputed Mr. Joseph Pecke to administer marriage at Rehoboth." "And the said Mr. Pecke, Mr. Stephen Paine, and Richard Bowen are appointed and authorized to hear and determine all controversies there between any, so as it amount not to above the value of three pounds; liberty being left to any to make their appeal to the

like justice of the Peace.

Court of Plymouth, if there shall be reason." [Plym. Col. Rec. vol. III. p. 102.]

July 13th, 1657. Voted, "That all such persons, or any person that is behind hand in their accounts with Mr. Newman for this year present, that they shall make up their accounts with Mr. Newman by a month after Michaelmas; and in case it be neglected, then such townsmen as may be deputed, together with the deacons also, to go to such persons and labor to convince them of the neglect of their duty; in case they find them obstinate, then the Court order is to be attended on."

November 20th, 1757. Stephen Paine, senior, was chosen to assist Deacon Cooper, "to go to certain the inhabitants of the town, to put them on to clear their accounts with Mr. Newman."

"It was also agreed that there shall be a town-meeting this day fortnight, and in case it appear that any person or persons be behind hand with Mr. Newman, that then some effectual course may be taken according to Court order, to make such to pay as have been negligent in their duty for the settling of Mr. Newman amongst us."

It was also voted that persons neglecting to attend town-meeting should be fined 6*d*.

December 9th, 1757. It was voted, "that Sampson Mason should have free liberty to sojourn with us, and to buy houses, lands or meadows, if he see cause for his settlement, provided that he lives peaceably and quietly."

Samuel Mason had been, according to Benedict, [Hist. Bap. vol. I. p. 427] a soldier in the Commonwealth's army, commanded by Cromwell. He became a Baptist, emigrated to America, and, after having resided several years at Rehoboth, became ultimately one of the founders of Swansey.

February 22, 1658. "The following persons are accepted as freemen of the town, to take up their freedom, namely, Joseph Peck, John Peck, Henry Smith, Robert Fuller, John Fitch, Stephen Paine, Jonathan Bliss, William Buckland, Rice Leonard."

June 22d, 1658. "At a town-meeting lawfully warned, lots were drawn for the meadows that lie on the north side of the town, in order as followeth, according to person and estate:"

1. John Peck,
2. George Robinson,
3. Robert Abell,
4. Nicholas Ide,
5. James Reddeway,
6. Jonathan Bliss,

7. Mr. Winchester's children,
8. Mr. Newman,
9. George Kendrick,
10. Stephen Payne, sen.
11. John Butterworth,
12. John Read,
13. Thomas Wilmoth,
14. John Fitch,
15. Henry Smith,
16. Will. Carpenter, sen.
17. John Millard, jun.
18. Robert Wheaton,
19. Richard Bullock,
20. Robert Martin,
21. John Perrum,
22. Richard Bowen, sen.
23. Obadiah Bowen,
24. Anthony Perry,
25. Joseph Peck,
26. John Matthews,
27. John Allin,
28. John Sutton,
29. Peter Hunt,
30. Tho. Cooper, jr.
31. Will. Sabin,
32. Philip Walker,
33. Daniel Smith,
34. John Dogget,
35. Nicholas Peck,
36. Rice Leonard,
37. Robert Jones,
38. Francis Stevens,
39. Thomas Cooper, sen.
40. John Woodcock,
41. Edward Hall,
42. Stephen Payne, jun.
43. Roger Amadowne,
44. Richard Bowen, jr.
45. Robert Fuller,
46. Will. Bucklin,
47. Mr. Peck, M not W
48. John ~~W~~illard, sen. Millard!
49. Will. Carpenter, jun.

From the expression "the meadows that lie on the north side of the town," it appears that this division was of land afterwards included in the North Purchase, now Attleborough and Cumberland.

The 2d of the 9th mo. [November,] 1658. The Indians were forbidden to set their traps within the town's bounds.

"December the 9th, 1659. It was agreed upon between the town of Rehoboth and Lieutenant Hunt and William Bucklin that the said Lieutenant Hunt and William Bucklin is to shingle the new end of the meeting-house, and to be done as sufficiently as the new end of Goodman* Payne's house; and they are to furnish nails, and to be done by May-day next ensuing, provided that the frame be ready in season: in consideration whereof they are to have £8 to be paid in good, merchantable wampum, when their work is done."

"30th of the 11th mo. [January,] 1659. Voted to agree with Richard Bullock to perform the office of Town Clerk;

---

* This title *Good-man*, I have been informed, was used formerly much the same as *Mr.*, *Master*, or *Mister* is with us at the present day.

to give him 16*s*. a year, and to be paid for births, burials, and marriages besides."

March 17th, 1659, the town made an agreement with William Bucklin "to enlarge the meeting-house the breadth of three seats throughout, to find boards and to finish it complete and answerable to the rest, with seats, the town finding nails."

"The 19th, 12th mo, [February] 1660, at a general town meeting, Capt. Willet, Mr. Peck, Richard Bowen, Stephen Payne, sen., Lieutenant Hunt, were chosen by the town, and empowered to view the town book, and to see that it be transcribed into a new book, all such things as they shall judge material for the good of the town, as also for the clearing of evidences of men's lands, according to Court orders, made in 1654."

21st of the 12th mo. [February] 1660. In town meeting it was voted "that Mr. Willet should have liberty to take up five hundred or six hundred acres of land northward or eastward, beyond the bounds of our town, where he shall think it most convenient for himself."

1st day 2d mo. [April] 1661. Gilbert Brooks of Scituate, had "free liberty to be an inhabitant of Rehoboth, and to purchase what he may, if he be minded to come among us."

illett was
r John
Browne's
son-in-law
also influential
n New
Amsterdam)

In this year, Captain Thomas Willet, empowered by the Court of Plymouth, and having obtained the consent of the town of Rehoboth, purchased of Wamsitta,* or (as he is more commonly called,) Alexander, the elder brother of king Philip and son of Massassoit, a large tract of land, which was called *Rehoboth North Purchase*, now Attleborough (Mass.) and Cumberland, R. I. "It was bounded," says Daggett, "West by Pawtucket river, now Blackstone; North by the Massachusetts Colony or the bay line, (so called;) East by territory which was afterwards the Taunton North Purchase, now Mansfield, Norton, and Easton; and South by the ancient Rehoboth, now Rehoboth, Seekonk, and Pawtucket. This purchase included Attleborough, Cumberland, R. I., and a tract of a mile and a half in width, extending east and west, (which was annexed to Rehoboth as an enlargement,) and a part of Mansfield and Norton. This purchase was afterwards, viz. April 10th, 1666,

---

* The then Sachem of Pokanoket. His original name was Mooanum. He succeeded Massassoit as Sachem of the Wampanoags, and died in the summer of 1662. His wife's name was Namumpum or Wetamoo.— See *Drake's Book of the Indians*, b. 3, c. 1, p. 1—8.

granted and confirmed by the Plymouth government to the inhabitants of Rehoboth."—*Daggett's History of Attleborough*, p. 6.

The following is a copy of the Deed of this tract from Wamsitta, or Alexander, to Mr. Willet.

(Indian deed of Chief Wamsutta for "Rehoboth North Purchase")

"Know all men that I Wamsetta, alias Alexander, chief Sachem of Pokanokett, for divers good causes and valuable considerations me thereunto moving, have bargained and sold unto Captain Thomas Willet, of Wannamoisett, all those tracts of land situate and being from the bounds of Rehoboth ranging upon Patuckett unto a place called Waweypounshag, the place where one Blackstone now sojourneth, and so ranging along to the said river unto a place called Messanegtacaneh and from this upon a straight line crossing through the woods unto the uttermost bounds of a place called Mamantapett or Wading river, and from the said river one mile and a half upon an east line, and from thence upon a south line unto the bounds of the town of Rehoboth. To have and to hold unto him the said Captain Willet and his associates, their heirs and assigns forever; reserving only a competent portion of land for some of the natives at Mishanegitaconett for to plant and sojourn upon, as the said Wamsetta alias Alexander and the said Thomas Willet jointly together shall see meet; and the rest of all the land aforementioned, with the woods, waters, meadows, and all emoluments whatsoever to remain unto the said Thomas Willet and his associates, their heirs and assigns forever. Witness my hand and seal this eighth day of April, in the year 1661.

"The mark of Λ X Λ
Wamsitta alias Alexander,
his seal [L.S.]

"Signed, sealed and delivered
in presence of
John Browne, jr.
Jonathan Bosworth,
John Sassaman, Interpreter.

"April 10th, 1666. Witnesseth these presents, that Captain Thomas Willet above said hath and doth hereby resign, deliver and make over all and singular the lands above mentioned, purchased of Wamsitta alias Alexander, chief Sachem of Pokanokett, according unto the bounds above expressed, with all and singular the benefits, privileges, and immunities thereunto appertaining, unto Mr. Thomas Prence, Major Josias Winslow,

(our Pearce ancestor)

Capt. Thomas Southworth, and Mr. Constant Southworth, in the behalf of the Colony of New Plymouth. In witness whereof he doth hereunto set his hand and seal.

"Thomas Willet. [L.S.]"

"Signed, sealed and delivered
in presence of
Daniel Smith,
Nicholas Peck."

"6th, 7th mo. [September] 1661. Lieutenant Hunt and Joseph Peck were chosen to view the damage in the Indians' corn upon Kickamuet neck, and Consumpsit neck, and to give the town notice of it."

The 14th of the 9th mo. [November] 1661. "Lieutenant Hunt and William Sabin were chosen to confer with Mr. Willet to know what he hath done about the north side of the town in the behalf of the town."

27th of the 12th mo. [February] 1661. Samuel Luther was permitted to be a sojourner to buy or hire.

"Plymouth, 1661. It is ordered by the Court that the ward of Rehoboth shall extend unto Sowamsett* and unto all the neighbours there inhabiting, as to the constable of Rehoboth, his execution of his office, as occasion shall require, which he is required by his orders to do and perform, as well there as in any other part of that constablericke." [Plym. Col. Rec. vol. III. p. 234.]

"The 28th of the 5th mo. [July] 1662. It was voted that John Woodcock should have two rods of land to build a small house on for himself and his family to be in on the Lord's day, in some convenient place near the meeting-house; and Goodman Paine and Lieutenant Hunt were chosen to see where the most convenient place for it might be."

December 16th, 1662. A fine of 1*s*. 6*d*. was ordered to be imposed on those who neglected to attend town-meeting.

Obituary for Mr John Browne

During this year the town was afflicted with the loss of one of its most influential and useful inhabitants, Mr. John Brown. He died April 10, 1662,† at Wannamoiset. The following notice is made of him by Morton in his "New-England's Memorial" [pp. 295, 296, 297]. "This year Mr. John Brown ended this life; in his younger years travelling into the low countries, he came acquainted with, and took good liking to, the reverend pastor of the church of Christ at Leyden, as also to sundry of the brethren of that church: which ancient amity induced him (upon his coming over to New-England) to seat himself in the jurisdiction of New Plimouth, in which he was chosen a magistrate; in which place he served God and the country several years; he was well accomplished with abilities to both civil and religious concernments, and attained, through God's grace, unto a comfortable perswasion of the love and favour of God to him; he, falling sick of a fever, with much serenity and spiritual comfort, fell asleep in the Lord, and was honourably buried at Wannamoiset near Rehoboth, in the spring of the year abovesaid." He was first elected to the office of assistant in Plymouth Colony in 1636, which office he ably filled for seventeen years. He was also one of the Commissioners of the United Colonies of New England from 1644 to 1655. The mention of this latter fact may serve to show in what estimation he was held in the colony, when we recollect that only two persons were chosen from each colony to that office. He was made a freeman of the colony of Plymouth in 1634.* He was one of the original proprietors of the town, and owned large estates in land both at Rehoboth and Wannamoiset. Mr. Brown was a friend to religious toleration, and was the first of the Plymouth magistrates who expressed scruples as to the expediency of coercing the people to support the ministry. He was a man of talent, integrity, and piety, and his death was deeply felt through the whole colony. James Brown, who also was assistant in 1655, and lived at Swansey, was his son.

"July 3d, 1663. It was voted by the town to send a letter to Samuel Fuller of Plymouth, that if he will come upon trial according to his own proposition, the town is willing to accept of him; and in case the town and he do accord, the town is willing to accommodate him in the best way they can for his encouragement."

"It was also voted and agreed that his mother should be sent to, to see if she be willing to come and dwell amongst us, to attend on the office of a midwife, to answer the town's necessity, which at present is great."

Dr. Fuller did not come, but his mother came as midwife & medical assistant

Mr. Fuller was a physician residing at Plymouth.

At the same town meeting, Goodman Searle was accepted as an inhabitant, and a home lot voted to him.

---

* Bristol or Barrington,—probably the former.

† Rehoboth Town Records of deaths and burials.

* Baylies' Hist. Mem. of Plym. Col. vol. II. p. 201.

In this year the town experienced a severe loss in the death of their learned and venerable pastor, the Rev. Samuel Newman. He died on the 5th of July, 1663.

(Puritan) Cong.

Deacon Philip Walker assisted Dr. Newman in writing his Concordance, referred to [illegible].

"The manner of his death," says Elliot, "was peculiar. He had a certain premonition of it, and seemed to triumph in the prospect of its being near. He was apparently in perfect health, and preached a sermon from these words, Job. xiv, 14, "*All the days of my appointed time will I wait till my change come.*" In the afternoon of the following Lord's day, he asked the deacon to pray with him, saying he had not long to live. As soon as he had finished his prayer, he said the time was come that he must leave this world. But his friends seeing no immediate signs of dissolution, thought it was the influence of imagination. But he turned round, saying, "angels do your office," and immediately expired.* This may appear like other marvellous circumstances related in the Magnalia, but it is handed down by persons not connected with that author, and was as much confirmed as any report depending upon tradition: and it is said that accounts of the death of Mr. Newman were written at the time and sent to England, as well as propagated through the towns of New-England."

He was born at Banbury, (Oxfordshire) England, in 1600, of a family "more eminent and more ancient," says Mather, "than most in the realm of England." At the age of sixteen† he entered the university at Oxford, where he received his education. He commenced his ministry in England; but, being a puritan, the molestations of the Episcopal clergy compelled him to no less than seven removes in his own country, and finally to his eighth and last remove, to America. He came to New-England in 1636 or 1638.‡ He spent some time at Dorchester; removed to Weymouth in 1639,* where he preached about four and a half or five years; and thence, at the close of the year 1643 or the commencement of 1644, emigrated with a majority of his congregation to Rehoboth, where he passed the remainder of his life.

He was a hard student, an animated preacher, and an excellent and pious man. He was ardently beloved by his people, and his death was long and deeply lamented.

He compiled a Concordance of the Bible,—a herculean labor,—the third† in English that ever was published, and which far surpassed either of the two that preceded it. The first edition of this Concordance was published at London, 1643,‡ in folio. After his removal at Rehoboth, he revised this Concordance and greatly improved it, using in the evening, according to President Stiles, pine knots instead of candles. This edition was published at London, in 1650. A third edition was published at London, in 1658, in a thick folio.‖ It contains an advertisement to the reader, by Daniel Featly, and another by W. Gouge. These three editions of Mr. Newman's Concordance, which were published during his lifetime, bear his name; but another edition was published soon after at Cambridge, considerably improved, which took the name of the "*Cambridge Concordance*,"§ which title it has since borne.

---

* A tradition of this circumstance still exists in Rehoboth, which says, as he pronounced the words, "*Now ye angels of the Lord do your duty*;" he turned and fixed his eyes on a particular part of the room, as though he saw the angels present.

† Wood's Athenæ et Fasti Oxonienses, 3d ed. 4to. London, 1817, with additions by Philip Bliss, Fellow of St. John's College, Oxford, vol. III. p. 648. See also note A, Appendix, where all that is said by Wood concerning Newman is transcribed.

‡ Judge Davis, in his edition of the Memorial, p. 217, says that Mr. Newman came to New-England in 1636, and was admitted a freeman in 1638. In a Chronological and Topographical account of Dorchester, furnished by Dr. Harris, of that place, [Mass. Hist. Coll. ix. 191, 1st Series,] it is stated that Mr. Newman was in the list of church members of that town in 1636. All the other authorities,—Mather, Elliot, Holmes, Neal, &c. place his arrival in 1638.

* See Appendix to Rev. Mr. Bent's sermon at the dedication of the North meeting-house in Weymouth. The notes there found were prepared by the Hon. Christopher Webb, who has in preparation a history of Weymouth, and to whose kindness I acknowledge myself indebted, in this history.

† See Preface to Cruden's Concordance, and also of Newman's Concordance, 3d edition, fol. Lond. 1658.

‡ Judge Davis in his notes to Morton's Memorial says 1640: I have followed Wood, who gives 1643.

‖ I have seen no mention of this edition by any writer. I found a copy of it in the Athenæum Library, Boston. It is a very thick folio, bearing the name of "Newman's Concordance" stamped on the back. The title page says, "A large and compleat Concordance," &c. by "Samuel Newman, now teacher of the Church at *Rehoboth* in *New-England*." [For the title-page see Appendix, note B.] This Contains a Concordance of the Apocrypha, which is written separately, and placed in the end of the volume.

§ Cruden, in the preface to his Concordance, published at London in 1738, and dedicated to the Queen of England, appears to have been ignorant that Newman's Concordance was essentially the same as the Cambridge Concordance, the latter only a more improved edition of the former. Speaking of the various English Concordances that had preceded his, he says the first was by Marbeck, in 1550, and referred only to chapters; the second by Cotton, in 1631: the third, by Mr. Newman, "more complete; and lastly we have had one published under the title of the *Cambridge Concordance*." An author of a life of the Rev. Hugh Peters, (the Rev. Samuel Peters, L.L.D.) erroneously states that Cruden wrote his Concordance at Rehoboth, and that it was the first Concordance ever written in the English tongue. [See Appendix, note C.]

June 26, 1666. "Stephen Paine, senior, Mr. Browne, and Goodman Allen were chosen Selectmen to answer the Court order."

They were the first Selectmen chosen by the town. The Townsmen still continued to be chosen as usual.

"August the 13th, 1666. It was voted and agreed upon by the town that an able man for the work of the ministry shall, with all convenient speed, be looked for, as an officer for this church, and a minister for the town, such a one as may be satisfactory to the generality."

"At the same time it was also voted and agreed upon by the town, that Mr. Myles shall still continue to lecture on the week day, and further on the Sabbath, if he be thereunto legally called."

"At the same time, the town made choice of Deacon Cooper, Lieutenant Hunt, Nicholas Peck, and Ensign Smith, as messengers, to look out for an able man for the work of the ministry, according to the vote aforesaid, and they are to go in the first place to Mr. Esterbrook's."

October 16, 1666. "At a town meeting it was concluded, that the purchased lands on the north side of the town shall be divided between this and the first of May next ensuing."

It was also voted by the town, "that no person shall fall any trees upon the aforesaid lands on the north side of our town before the said lands be divided, upon the penalty of ten shillings for every tree so fallen."

The same day, "John Doggett, John Woodcock, and John Titus were chosen by the town to see what timber trees are fallen on the late purchased lands, on the north side of our town, and they shall have the forfeiture for their pains, and the trees to those that the land shall fall to."

December 10, 1666. "At a town meeting it was voted and agreed upon, that Mr. Burkley should continue still amongst us till the first of April next ensuing, upon further trial, in reference to the vote of August 13, —66, which is in order to the settlement in the ministry, if he be approved of."

The same day, Thomas Esterbrook was admitted as an inhabitant.

"June 22, 1667. At a town-meeting it was voted by the town that the meadows lying on the north side of the town shall be for this present year as they were last year."

Since the disturbances caused in the church at Rehoboth, in

Welsh Baptist minister John Myles was the Bowen's Pastor in Wales. In Ilston in 1627 — to Swansea 1649 & Rehoboth 1663 according to Bliss. He says this was the 4th Baptist Church in America

1649, by Obadiah Holmes and his adherents, the religious affairs of the town had been far from being in a quiet state; and the number of Baptists, so far from being lessened by persecution, had been gradually increasing. In 1663 it was strengthened by the arrival of the Rev. John Myles, with a part of his church, from Swansea, in Wales, (England,) whence he had been ejected for non-conformity. This church he had founded at Swansea (Wales) in 1649. On their removal to this country, they brought with them their records, which were in Welch,* large extracts from which, says Benedict, in his History of the Baptists, were made by Mr. Backus, and sent over to Mr. Thomas of Leominster, England, the historian of the Welsh Baptists. In 1663, Mr. Myles formed a Baptist church in Rehoboth, the fourth formed in America. It was organized in the house of John Butterworth, and commenced with seven members. Their names were, John Miles, (or Myles, as more frequently spelled in the records,) pastor, James Brown, Nicholas Tanner, Joseph Carpenter, John Butterworth, Eldad Kingsley, and Benjamin Alby. This measure was offensive to the Congregational church of the town, and to the other churches of the colony; and the interposition of the Court of Plymouth was soon called for to arrest the growing schism. Each member of this new church was fined £5, prohibited from worship, for the space of one month; and they were advised to remove from Rehoboth to some place where they might not prejudice any existing church. In pursuance with this advice, they removed to Wannamoiset, and erected a house near Kelley's bridge, on a neck of land which is now in the town of Barrington. Afterwards they erected another house, on the east side of Palmer's river, about half a mile from the bridge, which is still known by the name of "Myles's bridge." It stood a short distance from the spot where the present house of the same church now stands. In 1667, these Baptists were incorporated into a town

Obadiah Holmes was our Pearce (not Averill) Ancestor.

---

* Benedict states that these records, in Welch, are still in the possession of this church. The only records which that church now possesses are in English. These commence in 1649, at Swansea, Wales, and contain copies of letters addressed to the church by several Baptist churches of England and Ireland. I am inclined to think that the *whole* of the original Welch records were sent to England by Mr. Backus, and there translated into English; and that a copy of the translation was returned to the Swansey church. They are in an excellent state of preservation, and written in a hand altogether too modern for the date which they bear. (These are now in Brown University in Providence RI)

(There may have been others sooner but no building.)

by the name of Swansey.* This town originally comprised within its limits the present town, together with Somerset, Mass., Barrington, and the greater part of Warren, R. I.

Mr. Miles continued the minister of Swansea till his death, which occurred February 3, 1683. His wife was Ann, the daughter of John Humphrey. [*Baylies' Mem. of Plym. Col.* ii. 213, 235—250. *Allen's Am. Biog. & Hist. Dic. Backus'* and *Benedict's Histories of the Baptists.*]

On the 30th of March, 1668, Philip, who had succeeded his brother Alexander, as Sachem of the Wampanoags, or Pokanokets, as they are sometimes called, confirmed to the town the purchase of the "eight miles square," made of Massassoit, or Ossamequin, his father, in 1641, and relinquished all claim and title to the same, by giving the town a quit-claim warrantee deed. † Of this deed the following is an exact copy; in transcribing it the original orthography has been preserved.

QUIT-CLAIM DEED OF KING PHILIP.

"Know all men by these presents that, whereas Osamequin, Sachem, deceased, did, for good and valuable considerations, in the year one thousand Six Hundred and forty and one, give, grant, convey, assure ence offe, and confirm unto Mr. John Brown, and Mr. Edward Winslow deceased, a tract of land of Eight miles square, scituate, lying and being both on the East and west sides of a river now called Palmer's river to the property and behoof of the townsmen of Seacunck, alias Rehoboth: I Phillip Sachem, eldest son, heir and successor to the said Osamequin Sachem, do hereby for my self, mine heires, assigns

---

* This name has been written in three different ways, viz: Swansea, Swanzey, and Swansey. The first is the way in which it is written in the earliest records, and is the orthography of the town in Wales, from which this derived its name.

† The original deed is still extant, and in the possession of the proprietors of Rehoboth, in the keeping of Capt. Worcester Carpenter, proprietor's clerk. The mark of Philip is large and bold, resembling a Roman p, or, perhaps, more nearly a short dagger. I hope the proprietors will be induced to deposit this deed in the archives of the Rhode Island Historical Society, at Providence. There it would be carefully preserved, and be within only a short distance of Rehoboth.

and successors remise, release, and for ever quit all manner of right, title, claime or interest that I the said phillip Sachem have, or by any colour or pretence whatsoever might or ought to have to the said tract of lands Eight mile square, lying on the East and west sides of Palmer's river aforesaid, unto Mr. Stephen Paine the elder, Peter Hunt, John Allen, Henry Smith, and others, the select men of the town of Rehoboth; ffor and to the use of themselves and of all the other Townsmen of the said town, as they are respectively concerned and estated therine, and to the use of all and every of their heires and assigns for ever. And furthermore I the said Phillip sachem do hereby firmly bind my self, mine heires, assigns and successors to free and discharge, secure and save harmlesse the said Stephen Pain, Peter Hunt, John Allen, Henry Smith and the select men aforesaid, and all other the Inhabitants of Rehoboth, their heirs and assigns for ever from all former and other bargains, sales titles, and all other incumbrances whatsoever had, made, done or suffered by me the said phillip sachem, or the said Osemequin my father deceased; or hereafter to be made, done, committed or suffered by me the said phillip sachem, mine heires, assigns or successors. In witnesse whereof I have hereunto put my hand and seal, the thirtieth day of the ffirst Month, Called March, In the yeare of our lord one Thousand Six Hundred Sixty and Eight."

"Signed, Sealed
and delivered in the
presence of

the mark of Umptakisok ┤ Counsellor.

the mark of phillip ∼ Counseller.

the mark of S Sunconewhew phillip's brother.

the mark of peebee ┬ Counsellor.

"be it remembered that Philip aknowledged before the ensealing and delivery hereof that osemequin receaved full satisfaction of the said Mr. Brown and Mr. Winslow for the said Eight mile square, and ffor the hundred acres, lying on the south side of the bounds of Rehoboth, now called by the name of the Hundred acres to the use of the said town.

The mark of phillip þ sachem.

the mark of ⌶ Tom Interpreter.

(seal.)

John Myles Junio:

John | Landon's mark.

the mark ∩ of wm. Hammon.

Joseph Sabin.

Phillip the Sachem did
acknowledge this deed,
this first of June, 1668,
Before
Jos. Winslow,
Assist.

April 10, 1668. At a town meeting "it was voted that, whereas the select townsmen did give Philip, Sachem a gratuity at the sealing of an evidence of our eight mile square, the sum of eight pounds twelve shillings; that the said select townsmen shall make a rate for the payment of it."

At the same meeting the town chose a committee, "to go and view the meadows that are in the North Purchase, and to acre them out, to divide them into three score and eighteen parts and a half, and to mark and bound out each part, and put in such swamps as in their prudence they think meet, to be laid out in the said division: provided they do it equally as they can. The said committee are Anthony Perry, Philip Walker, ✓ Thomas Wilmot, Nicholas Ide; to be paid by the whole company of purchasers.

May 13, 1668. "It was voted and agreed upon that the new book of records should be recorded at Plymouth, this next June Court."

"William Carpenter at the same time was chosen Town Clerk."

Voted, that the deed given by the Indians to the town "be delivered to the committee of the town, that they may record it at the Court of New Plymouth, the next June Court."

Voted, "that a committee shall be chosen to draw up a petition to send to the Court at Plymouth, the next General Court, that we might have some redress in respect of the difficulty of the transportation of our county rates. The committee chosen, were Mr. Stephen Payne, sen., Lieut. Hunt, and Ensign Smith, committe to sign this petition in the name of the town."

It was also voted "that the rates upon the north side of the town be lowered, and part taken off; that is to say, whereas the lands upon the North Purchase paid forty shillings of 5 pounds in all rates, that now the said lands shall pay 20 shillings in 5 pounds, until the town see cause to alter it."

May 26, 1668. "It was voted and agreed upon for the encouragement of a brickmaker, in the town, the town ordered that if any come, he shall have free liberty of wood and clay, at the half-mile swamp, to make what brick he will."

The same day lots were drawn for the meadow lands in the North Purchase by the following persons:

✓ Obadiah Bowen,
Samuel Luther,
Stephen Paine, sen.
John Savage,
Goody Hide,
Children's lands,
Thomas Reade,
Preserved Abell,
William Carpenter,
Gilbert Brooks,
Thomas & Jacob Ormsby,
Robert Jones,
John Reade, sen.
Nathaniel Paine, sen.
Robert Wheaton,
Widow Carpenter,
Benjamin Buckland,
✓ Philip Walker,
John Peren, sen.
John Ormsby,
Jaret Ingraham,
Nathaniel Paine, jun.
Henry Smith,
Nicholas Peck,
Jonathan Bosworth,
Samuel Carpenter,
Richard Whitaker,
Mr. Tanner,
Stephen Paine, jun.
Jonathan Palmer,
James Redeway,
Nicholas Ide,
Deacon Cooper,
James Gilson,
Rice Leonard,
Samuel Newman,
John Doggett,
Anthony Perry,
Thomas Cooper, jun.
George Kendricke,
John Butterworth,
✓ Mr. Myles,
Richard Bowen, jun.
Mr. Newman,
Joseph Peck,
William Sabin,
Ichabod Miller, jun.
Mr. Daniel Smith,
Mr. Browne, (son)
Robert Miller,
John Titus,
Nathaniel Peck,
George Robinson,
Robert Fuller,
John Fitch,
Thomas Willmot,
William Buckland,
John Kinslye,
Jonathan Fuller,
John Miller, sen.
Joseph Carpenter,
Samuel Peck,
Sampson Mason,
John Allin, jun.
John Reade, jun.
John Lowell,

Joseph Buckland,
Thomas Grant,
Israel Peck,
Captain Willet,
Jonathan Bliss,
Lieutenant Hunt,
Eldad Kinsly,
Francis Stephens,
Edward Hall, ← (our Dodge ancestor)
John Woodcock,
John Allin, sen.
Abraham Martin,
Ovid Bullock.

During this year, the Rev. Noah Newman, son of the Rev. Samuel Newman, was settled by the church and town as their minister.

December 4, 1668, the following vote was passed by the town relative to his support; "that Mr. Newman should have forty pounds a year and his wood provided, to begin last March, for his comfortable maintenance, for the carrying in end the work of the ministry amongst us. Deacon Carpenter, Lieutenant Hunt, and Goodman Roades were chosen to see that the aforesaid order should be accomplished, and to speak to those that are defective in their not doing their duty."

From the above vote it appears that Mr. Newman commenced his ministry in Rehoboth, in March.

January 1, 1668—9.* "It was voted that there should be some land broke and fenced about the minister's house, for the planting of an orchard, and other conveniences; and the townsmen were appointed to see the thing accomplished."

May 14, 1669. "It was voted and agreed upon, that the house which was built for the ministry Mr. Newman should enjoy as long as he continues in the work of the ministry amongst us."

"It was also at the same time voted, that Mr. Newman should also, enjoy the lands, meadows, commons, &c. of the pastors

and teachers, as long as he continues in the work of the ministry amongst us: excepting there shall be another officer chosen and settled amongst us, and then Mr. Newman is to have one of the accommodations of pastors or teachers, and the other officer, if ever any be joined with him, is to have the other accommodations so long as they attend their work."

"At the same time it was voted, enacted, and agreed upon, that, seeing it is the intention of the town to preserve the house built for the ministry, and to keep it for that use; the town therefore seeth cause to engage themselves, that, if it should please God, that by his providence he should remove Mr. Newman by death, while he continues in the ministerial work, and should leave a wife and family behind him; that his wife or family that he leaves behind him, shall have four-score pounds paid to her or them, at their leaving or removing out of the house, and the said four-score pounds to be raised by a rate of the inhabitants of the town, according to their several proportions. The former word family, to be interpreted Mr. Newman's children."

"At the same time it was also voted, that Mr. Newman should have three-score pounds a year paid him yearly, for his comfortable subsistence in the work of the ministry. And Mr. Stephen Pain, senior, Deacon Cooper, and William Sabin, were chosen by the town, desiring them to take some pains to see how it might be raised: that if it might be, it might be raised freely; for every person whom it concerns to contribute towards it freely; and that thenceforward persons will take care that it might be effectually accomplished; and also, that the forty pounds a year which is past be inquired into, to see if it be accomplished: and if these persons do apprehend that the aforesaid way will not effect the thing, then the town are to seriously consider of some other way, that it may be effected for the comfortable carrying on of the worship and ordinances of God amongst us."

At the same meeting, "the town with one consent declared by vote, that the proposition from the Court about sales of guns, powder, and shot to the Indians, they apprehend it will be greatly detrimental to our English interest, and therefore declare themselves against it."

July 29, 1669. At a town meeting it was voted "that a rate should be made to answer the warrant from the Court; and the raters chosen were Mr. Stephen Paine, senior, Lieutenant

---

*Style is Old and New. In Old Style the year commenced on the 25th of March. The correction of the calender by Pope Gregory, in 1582, was not adopted by the British Parliament till 1751, when it was ordered that eleven days should be struck out of September of 1752, and the third day of that month was reckoned the fourteenth. This latter mode of reckoning is called *New Style*, and the year commenced on the first of January. Before the year 1752, there was sometimes a confusion in dates, it being difficult to determine whether January, February, and a part of March closed the year or began another. Hence the mode of double dates, as "Jan. 1, 1668–9," which is 1669 New style. And in order to find the day of the month in New Style, corresponding to a given day of any month in Old Style, we must consider the latter as eleven days in advance of the former, and add eleven days to the present date. For instance, the 24th of March 1668, Old Style, corresponds to April 4th, 1669, New Style.

Hunt, Henry Smith, Nicholas Peck, Deacon Cooper, Philip Walker."

"Voted that those that pay butter, shall pay for the transportation of butter, and they that pay wheat, shall pay for the transportation of their wheat, and they that pay money, to pay for no transportation of either wheat or butter."

There was a rate made the 30th of July, 1669, being the first part of the payment of the county rate, amounting to the sum of £13 3*s*.

November 4, 1669. "It was voted and agreed that there should be a rate made for the purchasing of powder and lead, as much as will make up the town stock, according to the order of the Court, with what there is already. Mr. Stephen Paine, Lieutenant Hunt, Ensign Smith, Philip Walker, and Nicholas Peck, were chosen to make the rate."

December 12, 1670. At a town meeting, "Deacon Cooper, Lieutenant Hunt, John Reade, senior, and William Sabin, were chosen raters, to make a rate for Mr. Newman's maintenance, according to a former vote."

November 8, 1670. "At a town meeting lawfully warned, it was voted that the line should be forthwith run between the North Purchase and the mile and a half given to the town for enlargement."

The "mile and a half," here referred to, was the subject of considerable dispute between the town of Rehoboth and the proprietors of the North Purchase, being claimed by both. It was given to Rehoboth by a mere verbal grant from commissioners of the Colony; and was at length confirmed to them by the Plymouth Court, in the following act of June, 1668. "This Court have ordered, that a tract of land, containing a mile and a half, lying on the north side of the town of Rehoboth, is allowed to be the proper right of the said township. And such lands as are lying betwixt the Bay line and it, is to be accounted within the constablerick of Rehoboth, until the Court shall order otherwise. And that such farms as lyeth within the said liberties shall be responsible in point of rating at the Colony's disposal."—*Plym. Col. Records.*

November 23, 1670. A committee was chosen to meet the Treasurer of Taunton to settle the bounds between the North Purchase, and Taunton North Purchase. The committee were Ensign Smith, William Sabin, and William Carpenter.

"January 9, 1670–1. At a town meeting lawfully warned, it was voted and agreed, that Capt. Hudson of Boston, and

John Fitch (probably of Rehoboth) shall have liberty to build a ware-house at the water side, and a wharf; and Mr. Paine, senior, and Ensign Smith were chosen to appoint them the place and quantity of ground for the ware-house.—John Dogget also had the like liberty granted him."

May 12, 1671. "It was voted and agreed upon by the town, that, whereas Mr. Newman's maintenance hath not reached unto what hath been engaged unto him by the towne, that there shall be a trial made by contribution every Sabbath day, to see whether it may amount to his comfortable maintenance; and that the next Sabbath day there be a trial made, and all persons whom it concerns do bring in, the first Sabbath, for the time that is past from the first of March last."

November 7, 1671. "It was voted that a fence be built to the minister's house, and weather-boards put upon the house for the preservation of it; and the townsmen were chosen to see it effected, and also they were empowered to make a rate for the payment of it."

May 16, 1692. "It was agreed and voted that the townsmen are to draw up such particulars as may be necessary for the general good of the town, as instructions for the deputies to manage at the Court."

February 6, 1673. "It was voted and agreed that the townsmen and Anthony Page should treat with our Reverend Pastor, Mr. Noah Newman, respecting the house and lot that he lives in."

May 14, 1673. John Woodcock, Thomas Willmarth, Josiah Palmer, Thomas Reade, and John Ormsby, were propounded to the freemen at the town meeting, to take up their freedom, and approved of.

May 20, 1673. "At a town meeting lawfully warned, it was voted and agreed upon, that the house that our Reverend Pastor now lives in, and the lot that the house stands upon shall be his forever, in consideration and in lieu of the four-score pounds that was engaged at Mr. Newman's death; and that the former act of the town, concerning the four-score pounds, shall be invalid when the town give our Reverend Pastor assurance of the aforesaid house and lot."

November 13, 1674. "It was voted and agreed upon, that to every hundred pounds estate rate, such persons shall carry in to our Reverend pastor half a cord of wood for his winter fire."

ground near the Congregational meeting-house in Seekonk, though, to mark the spot,

> "—— No stone may tell
> His name, his worth, his glory."

"April 29, 1678. It was voted that Mrs. Newman, the relict of our late Reverend Pastor, shall have fifteen pounds for this present year, and a sufficiency of wood brought to her gate, if she please still to abide with us, and thus to be paid according to present subscription." It was also agreed upon that the townsmen shall agree with Mrs. Newman in the town's behalf for the diet of Mr. Angier."

new minister (Puritan)

"June 20, 1678. The town unanimously agreed that Mr. Angier should have forty pounds a year for his encouragement, and his diet; and ten pounds of the forty in money, if God incline his heart to settle amongst us in the work of the ministry. And this proposal was made for the present, persons manifesting themselves to be freely willing for the future to augment to the aforesaid sum, according to their ability and Mr. Angier's necessity. And the townsmen and Deacon Walker were chosen to treat with Mr. Angier about it."

"Lieut. Hunt and Ensign Peck were chosen, and desired to go down with Mr. Angier, the next week, and to do as then is requisite to be done in order to the settlement of Mr. Angier."

"It was also agreed, that there should be a six-acre lot, in convenient time, laid forth below the burial place, for a building of a house for the ministry."

It appears from the tenor of the records, that Mrs. Newman soon removed from Rehoboth. She probably removed to Braintree (now Quincy), the place of her nativity.* August 30, 1678, there is a vote of the town recorded, appointing several persons as a committee, "to treat with any person or persons that shall be employed by Mrs. Newman, concerning her house and lands." January 17, 1678–9, also "It was voted, for the encouragement of Mr. Samuel Angier to settle amongst us in the work of the ministry, if it please the Lord to incline his heart thereunto, to purpose unto him to give him forty pounds in money, either to the purchasing of the house and lot which were Mr. Noah Newman's, if it please him to buy it, or towards the building of another house and settling himself."

It was at the same time "voted by the town that Mr. Angier shall have the use and improvement of all the lands and meadows, and all the privileges belonging to the pastors and teachers' lots, as long as he doth continue in the work of the ministry amongst us. It was also voted, that Mr. Angier shall have seventy pounds a year for his salary, ten pounds of it in money, and sixty in country pay, as it passeth between man and man."

"June 25, 1679. The town voted, that Mr. Angier shall have, for the two following years, seventy pounds for each year; ten pounds of it in money, and fifteen of the sixty as money, and the rest of it as it passeth between man and man, and a sufficiency of wood to be brought to his house."

"The town chose Gilbert Brooks a deputy to attend the General Court."

"July 24, 1679. The raters chosen were Mr. Daniel Smith, John Peck, Ensign Nicholas Peck, Gilbert Brooks, and William Carpenter."

"May 18, 1680. Lieut. Peter Hunt and Ensign Peck chosen deputies." "Lieut. Peter Hunt, Ensign Nicholas Peck, and Gilbert Brooks, selectmen." "Mr. Daniel Smith, John Reade, Lieut. Hunt, Ensign Peck, Gilbert Brooks, John Peck, and Anthony Perry, townsmen."

"The townsmen acquainting the town, that they had a treaty with Mr. Edward Howard to teach school, acquainted the town with the said Mr. Howard's terms, viz: twenty pounds a year in country pay, and his diet, besides what the court doth allow in that case. The town then did vote and agree that his proposals were accepted, and that the speediest provisions should be made for his maintenance; Mr. William Sabin freely proffering to diet him the first quarter of the year."

"It was also agreed upon that William Blanding should have half an acre of land upon the common, to build a house upon the edge of Rocky Hill. Lieut. Hunt, Samuel Carpenter, and John Peck were chosen to lay out the said land, and set the expense of it, and also to perfix him a time when he shall build; which if he neglect, he shall forfeit the land to the town again." This is the first time that the name "Rocky Hill" occurs in the town records. This name is still given to a hill, or elevation of some extent, about a mile north-west of "Palmer's river" meeting-house; and from the character of its surface, no one can dispute its title to the cognomen "rocky."

"October 22, 1680. Voted that the burying place should be fenced in with a stone fence."

in the first year of the reign of our late Sovereign Lord King Charles the first, anno Domini 1629, doth and may more large appear, wherein, among other favours, is also expressed the said Council's great respect in said grant, that after so long travel and great pains so hopeful plantations might not only subsist but also might be encouraged to proceed in so pious a work which might effectually tend to the propagation of religion which was also the chief and known ened of their first adventure at their own proper cost through so many foreseen, after-felt difficulties, losses, and pinching distresses, in this then vast, howling desert, and was accordingly attended through the pious care of the said William Bradford, with the advice and consent of such as he took to him, to be his associates in Court or Council, in granting such competent lands to each township as the inhabitants thereof might not only be accommodated for their own subsistence but also be comfortably enabled to give encouragement and maintenance to such godly, able minister or preacher of the word as was or should be obtained amongst them: And whereas the said William Bradford, my father, his grants, surrender, or conveyance of any part of said land and other the premises to his declared associates or assigns, and also his or their grants to particular persons or townships, and amongst others in the year of our Lord 1641, granted to Joseph Peck, Stephen Paine, Henry Smith, Alexander Winchester, Thomas Cooper, Gent. and others with them and such others as they should associate to themselves, a tract of land for a plantation or township, formerly called by the natives Seconke, upwards of forty-five years since settled and planted, now called and known by the name of Rehoboth; and likewise for several years since the inhabitants of said town did purchase a tract of land, as additional and enlarging of said town, of Thomas Prince, Esq'r. then Governour, Major Josiah Winslow, Capt. Thomas Southworth and Constant Southworth, Esq'r. agent for the colony of New-Plimouth, as may fully appear by an instrument given in the name of the said colony, under the seals of the said agents, bearing date the tenth of April, anno Domini, 1666: the said lands lying within the county of Bristol, in said colony of New Plimouth in New-England, all which aforesaid lands are contained within the limits and boundaries expressed in the aforesaid Pattent or grant from the Council established at Plimouth in the county of Devon, (for the planting, ruling, ordering and governing of New-England,) unto the said William Bradford,

his heirs, associates, and assigns, together with power duly to dispose of said lands, for the ends aforesaid, to such as should be admitted inhabitants and proprietors with them in said town of Rehoboth, and such other privileges and immunities as are usually given to the inhabitants and proprietors in other towns within this their Majesties' most ancient colony of New-Plimouth aforesaid, for the more perfect sure-making and better confirmation thereof.—Now Know Yee, that I William Bradford of New-Plimouth, son and heir to the said William Bradford deceased aforesaid, as well in performance of the true intent and meaning of the said William Bradford, my father, in and by the said grant, and for the ends afore mentioned as also for and in consideration of the sum of fifteen pounds in current money of New-England, to me in hand, at or before the unsealing of these presents, well and truly paid by Daniel Smith, Esq'r. Capt. Peter Hunt, Capt. John Brown, Esq'r. John Peck, Lieut. Nicholas Peck, Gilbert Brooks, Thomas Cooper, Samuel Newman, William Carpenter, Samuel Peck, Stephen Paine, Richard Bowen, and Ensign Thomas Willmath, yeomen, some of the proprietors of said tract and tracts, and most of them ancient inhabitants of said town of Rehoboth, the receipt whereof I do hereby acknowledge, and for divers other good causes and considerations especially at this time moving me, have granted, remised, released, and forever quit-claim, and by these presents for me and my heirs do grant, remise, release, and forever quit-claim, unto the said Daniel Smith, Peter Hunt, John Brown, John Peck, Nicholas Peck, Gilbert Brooks, Thomas Cooper, Samuel Newman, William Carpenter, Samuel Peck, Stephen Paine, Richard Bowen, Thomas Willmarth, and Jr to their heirs and assigns forever, in the behalf and use of themselves and all other the allowed inhabitants and proprietors of the said town of Rehoboth, whose names are entered in the town records of Rehoboth as inhabitants or proprietors and by their own desire shall be specified by name in the schedule or list of names hereto annexed, in their and every of their full and peaceable possession and seizen now being according to their and every of their common or several and respective interest and to their and every of their heirs and assigns forever, all such right, estate, title, interest, possession and demand whatsoever which I, the said William Bradford, have or ought to have," &c.

"A list of the names of the inhabitants and proprietors of the Towne of Rehoboth having Rights and Titles to the Measuages, Tenements and Lands contained in the above written Instrument hereunto annexed and affixed, which hath been reade and allowed in a full Towne meeting, ffebruary the 7th, 1689."

1689

Inhabitants.

Mr. Samuel Angeir,
Decon Thomas Cooper,
Joseph Peck, sen'r.
John ffitch,
John Woodock, sen'r.
Serj. Thomas Reade,
George Kenricke.
Nichollas Ide, sen'r.
George Robinson, sen'r.
Robert Wheaton,
Richard Martin,
John Peren,
Jonathan ffuller, sen'r.
Enoch Hunt,
John Hunt,
Ephrahim Hunt
Rice Leonard,
Sam'l. Butterworth,
Philip Walker,
ffrancis Stevens, sen'r.
John Ormsby,
Nathaniel Chaffee,
Samuel Sabin,
Serj. Preserved Able,
Daniell Reade,
Israll Reade,
James Sabin,
John Sabin,
Noah Sabin.
The Hieres of Thomas Kenrick.
Samuel Robinson,
Mosses Reade;
Mr. Christopher Sanders,
Jonah Palmer, sen'r.
Samuell Palmer,
Noah Mason,
Samuell Mason,
Nicholas Ide, jun'r.
Sam'l. Millerd, sen'r.
Sam'l. Millerd, jr.
Johe Hall,
John Redway,
Sam'l. Carpenter,
John Tittus,
Samuell Tittus,
Joseph Tittus,
John Carpenter
Thomas Grant,
John Willmath,
Samuel Blise.

Inhabitants.

Jonathan Blise,
Joseph Buckland,
Samuell Paine,
Joseph Browne,
William Carpenter, jr.
Isack Allen,
Thomas Willmath, jr.
John Woodcok, jun'r.
Iserall Woodcok,
Thomas Woodcok,
Jonathan Woodcok,
Samuel Newman, jr.
John Kinsley,
Timothy Ide,
Jonathan ffuller, jun.
Jeremiah Wheaton,
John Shawe,
Joseph Sabine,
Richard Whiteaker,
Samuel Bullock,
Thomas Ormsby,
Thomas Man,
Robert Millerd, sen'r.
Mr. Henry Sweeting,
Jathniell Peck,
Joshua Smith,
John Smith,
Richard Evens,
James Thurber
Sam'l. Bowen,
Jonathan Willmath,
John ffrench,
Joseph Borsworth,
Joseph Peck, jun'r.
Hezekiah Pecke,
Richard Bowen,
Thomas Bowen, sen'r.
John Marten,
Jonah Palmer, jun'r.
Samuel Cooper,
Nathaniell Perry,
John Daggett,
Thomas Cooper,
Joseph Daggett,
Nathaniell Daggett,
Nathaniell Whitaker,
Eprahim Wheaton,
Abiah Carpenter,
James Carpenter,
Samson Mason,
Joseph Mason,

Inhabitants.

Joseph Buckland, jun'r.
Baruk Buckland,
Sillas Titus,
Nath. Paine, jun'r.
William Robenson,
Josiah Carpenter,
ffrancis Stevens, jun'r.
Richard Bowen, jun'r.
Joseph Millerd,
Benjamin Millerd,
John Bowen,
Benjamin Robinson,
David Newman,
David ffuller,
John Jenkings,
John Jonson,
Daniell Shepard, sen.
David ffreeman,
James Wilson,
James Welch,
John Bullock,
John Callender,
John Bartlet's heires.

Orphans.

Thomas Cooper and Nathaniell Cooper, sons of Nath. Cooper.
The Heires of Benjamin Buckland,
Samuell ffuller,
The Heires of Eldad Kinsley,
Jonathan Carpenter,
David Carpenter,
Sollomon Carpenter,
Zacheriah Carpenter,
Abraham Carpenter,
The Heires of Robert Joanes,
Daniell Sabin, son of Nehemiah Sabin,
John ffuller,
Abiall ffuller,
Benjamin Paine,
George Robinson, jr.
Isake Mason,
Thomas Bowen.

The Heires of William Allen,
Thomas Smith,
Henry Smith,
Abiall Smith,
Ebeunezar Walker,
John Reade and Thomas Reade,
The Heires of John Reade, jun'r.
Eliphellet Carpenter,
Rebeka Carpenter, daughter of Abiah Carpenter,
Mary Walker,
Mary Ormsby,
Jacob Ormsby's daughter.
The Heires of Mr. Pilebeame.
James Myles and Nathaniel Myles, sons of Mr. John Myles,
The Heires of John Savage,
Philip Amidowne,
Henry Ammidowne,

Proprietors not inhabitants.

James Browne, Esq.
Thomas Daggett, Esq.
Mr. Nathaniell Paine,
Mr. John Allen, sen'r.
Mr. Henry Newman,
Decon John Butterworth,
Mrs. Elizabeth Viall,
Daniell Allen,
Obidiah Bowen, sen'r.
Samuell Viall,
William Ingraham,
Mr. Nichollas Taner,
Mr. Andrew Willet,
Mr. Phillip Squire,
Obadiah Bowen, jun'r.
John Paine,
Joseph Chaffee,
Henry Sweet,
Mr. Samuel Myles,
Joseph Carpenter,
Benjamin Carpenter,
John Carpenter, jun'r.
Benjamin ffuller,
Thomas Wood,
Iserail Peck,
John Allen, jun'r.
Elizabeth Patey,
Ens. Tho. Estabrooks,
William Howard,
John Blakstone,
Jarett Ingraham,
John Lovell,
Mr. Noah ffloaide,
Anthony Sprague,
The Heirs of Humphrey Tiffany,
George Webb,
Thomas Barnes,
Richard Daggerworth,
Joseph Woodard,
Thomas Patey.

"December 17, 1692. The town council and selectmen of Rehoboth delivered to Ensign Thomas Read 136 pounds of powder and 250 pounds of bullets, to be taken care of by him for the town, and not to be disposed of but by the order of the selectmen of the town."

"May 1, 1693. Samuel Peck was chosen and elected to serve as the town representative in the great and general assembly."

This was the year after the union of the colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay under the charter of William and Mary, and Mr. Peck was the first representative from the town to the General Court of Massachusetts.

"August 15, 1663. It was voted by the town, that as it was their desire, so it should be their utmost endeavour to obtain Mr. Thomas Greenwood to dispense the word of God unto us in the time of our vacancy, until our reverend pastor, Mr. Angier, returns to continue with us. In order hereunto Mr. Samuel Peck and Joseph Browne were chosen by the town to go down to Mr. Greenwood, this week, to do their endeavour to bring him up this week, if it may." "A committee was also chosen to agree with Mr. Angier, in behalf of the town, respecting his support and maintenance."

Mr. Angier was at this time at Cambridge, whither he had removed in the latter part of 1692, or the early part of 1693, assigning, as the cause of his removal, ill health.

Pages from Early Rehoboth (4 vols)
(in date, not volume order).

29 Sept. 1650—Memorandum: Edward Gilman of Ipswich deeded to Joseph Peck the younger of Rehoboth all his houselands and meadowlands in Rehoboth to be paid for in installments and entered in installments, first payment to be made on above date. Witness, John Peck [*Ibid.*, vol. III, pt. 1, p. 5]. [This memorandum is entered in the Rehoboth Town records.]

29 Mar. 1653—"To all People to whom these presents shall come, Osamequin and Wamsetto his eldest sone Sendeth greeting . . . that we the said Osamequin & Wamsetto for and in consideration of thirty five pounds Sterling to us the said Osamequin and Wamsetto in hand payd by Thomas Prince Gent: Thomas Willett Gent: Miles Standish Gent: Josiah Winslow Gent: for and in the behalfe of themselves and divers others of the Inhabitants of Plymouth Jurisdiction whose names are hereafter specified with which said summe we the said Osamequin and Wamsetto doo acknowledge ourselves fully satisfyed contented and payed Have freely and absolutely bargained and sold enfeoffed and confirmed . . . unto Thomas Prince Thomas Willett Miles Standish, Josia Winslow Agents for themselves and William Bradford Senr Gent: Thomas Clark John Winslow Thomas Cushman, William White John Adams and Experience Mitchell to them and every of them . . . All those severall parcels and necks of upland Swamps and Meadows Lyeing and being on the South syde of Sinkhunch Els Rehoboth Bounds and is Bounded from a Little Brooke of water called by the Indians Mosskituash Westerly, and so ranging by a dead swamp Estward and so by markt trees as Osamequin and Wamsetto directed unto the great river with all the meadow in and about ye sydes of both the branches of the great river, with all the Creeks and Brookes that are in or upon any of the said meadows as also all the marsh meadows Lying and being wth out the Bounds before mentioned in or about the neck called by the Indians Chachacust

"Also all the meadows of any kind lyeing and being in or about Popasquash neck as also all the meadows lyeing from Kickomuet on both sides or any way joyning to it on the bay on each side To Have and to Hold all the aforesaid uplands swampe marshes, Creeks and Rivers with all their appurtenances unto the aforesaid Thomas Prince Thomas Willett Miles Standish Josia Winslow and the rest of the Partners aforesaid to them and every of them, their and every of their haiers executors and assignes forever And the said Osamequin and Wamsetto his sone covenant promise and grant, that whensoever the Indians shall remove from the neck that then and from thenceforth the aforesaid Thomas Prince Thomas Willett Miles Standish Josiah Winslow shall enter upon the same by the same agreement as their Proper Right And interest to them and their heirs forever

"To and for the true performance of all and every one of the aforesaid severall Perticulars wee the said Osamequin and Wamsetto Bind us and every of us our and every of our heirs, Executors Administrators and assignes firmely by these presents

"In Witness whereof wee have hereunto sett our hands and seales this twentieth day of March Anno Domini 1653

Signed sealed and delivered in
ye presence of us
John Browne
James Browne
Richard Garrett

The mark of
Osamequin & a seale
Wamsetto M & seale"

[Original *Sowams Records*, pp. 8, 9; *Plymouth Colony Deeds*, vol. II, pt. 1, p. 78; *Bristol County Deeds*, vol. II, p. 25.]

28 June 1653—"Wee whose names are heare underwritten do further empower and authorize Richard Bowin Stephen Payne Thomas Cooper and William Sabin to conclude agree and compose all differences that may arise concerning the said meddow and upland or any thing arising in or about the same as amply as if we were there present in our owne persons with any person or persons with whom any question may arise in or about the premises to which formensioned business we bind ourselves truly and faithfully to observe; witness our hands this 28th of June 1653

by Richard LeBaron Bowen

Samuell Newman
Joseph Peck, Senior
Stephen Payne
Richard Bowine
Walter Palmer
Thomas Cooper
John Reade
Robert Martin
William Smith
Abraham Martine
Robert Titus
John Meller
Peter Hunt
Richard Ingrame

John Allen
Joseph Peck, Junior
Robert Fuller
John Sutton
John Peren
George Kinwicke
William Sabin
William Carpenter
Jonathan Bliss
Robert Abel
Stephen Payne, Junior
Obadia Bowin
Henry Smith
James Redaway

Daniell Smith
Robert Wheaton
Thomas Smith
Abnah Ordway
John Mathews
John Woodcocke
John Titus
John Butterworth
Phillip Walker
John Dogget
Richard Bullock
Nicholas Ide
William Carpenter, Junior"

[*Plymouth Colony Deeds*, vol. II, pt. 1, p. 79.]

29 June 1653—"The Conclusion with the men of Rehoboth—Whereas the Towne of Rehoboth the 28th of June 1653 did dispute and authorize Stephen Payne Richard Bowin Thomas Cooper and William Sabin as theire delegates to treat and conclude with Capt. Myles Standish Capt. Thomas Willett and Josiah Winslow concerning such lands and all other matters as are in difference between the Towne of Rehoboth and the aforesaid Capt. Myles Standish Capt. Thomas Willett Josiah Winslow and the rest that are interested in the said lands It is concluded as followeth:

"1 That all such marsh or meddow lying on either side of the river running under the bridge commonly called Bowins Bridge to the common fence and usally called the hundred acres which said meddows were alloted in several allotments at the first settling of the towne: All those meddows are to remayne unto the severall inhabitants of the town as their true proprieties.

"2 That all such lands as the Towne of Rehoboth formerly passed over unto Mr. John Browne by an agreement of such articles as now stand in the towne booke bearing date the 29th of the 10th month 1645 and also recorded in the court of Plymouth the summe of the said lands soe many acres at the said lands shall rise unto when it is measured shall be layd forth for the use of the said Capt. Myles Standish Capt. Thomas Willett Josiah Winslow and the rest on the north side of the line betwixt the towne and the marked tree near to Mr. Brownes fence from the salt water to the river called Bowins Bridge River.

"3 For all such mershes as lye on the west side of the river running downe towards the common fence and buttin on the East end of som house lots now layed forth if the said Capt. Standish Capt. Willett Josiah Winslow and the rest shall desire the same at any time hereafter they shall have them allowing the true valuation thereof out of such meddows as do lye on the west side of Sowamet River at the upper end of the same as [torn] vallued by two indifferent men.

"4 That if the towne of Rehoboth at any time within three years after the date hereof shall remove the common fence and in the meantime sufficiently require the same and when they doe remove the same they sett it upon theire owne land in this line betwixt the towne and the p'ties aforesaid from the salt water att tid water marke of Pawtucket river into the river running under Bowins Bridge and uphould it.

"5 The Town of Rehoboth shall make a sufficient fence to keep horses and poultry from ranging into the necks of land called the New Meddow necke and mayntaine the same.

"6 That timber on either side shall be lawfull to be made use of from time to time for the meddows aforesaid for theire fencing.

"7 That for such meddows as lye to the north side of the Great Playne

V1

record does not say that he took part in the trial. At any rate he is recorded as a member of the court and certainly won his suit. John Allen of Rehoboth, who was clearly a Baptist and later took a leading part in the founding of the Baptist town of Swansea, was Mr. Browne's chief witness.

29 Mar. 1653—Ousamequin Sachem and Wamsitto his eldest son for £35 sterling sell to Thomas Prence, Thomas Willett, Myles Standish, Josiah Winslow, gentlemen, in behalf of themselves and diverse others, "severall prcells and neckes of upland Swamps and meddowes lying and beinge on the southerly side of Sinkcunke els Rehoboth bounds . . . bounded from a little brook of water called by the Indians Mosskititusash westerly and soe ranging by a Dead Swamp Eastward . . . unto the great river with all the meddow in and about the sides of both the branches of the great river with all the creeks and brookes that are in or upon any of the said Meddow as also all the mersh meddow lying and being without the bounds before mencioned in or about the necke called by the Indians Chachacust; also, all meddow of any kind lying and being att or about Popasquash necke as alsoe all the meddow lying from the bay to keccomewett on both sides or any Joying to it or the Bay on Eich side . . . and the Ousamequin and Wamsitto Doe alsoe covenant promise and grant that when soever the Indians shall remove from y^{e} necke that then and from thenceforth [the grantees] shall enter upon the same agreement as theire proper right and enterest". Witnessed 29 Mar. 1653 by John Browne, James Browne and Richard Garrett [*Plymouth Colony Deeds*, vol. II, Pt. I, p. 78; *Sowams Records*, pp. 8, 9].

The above Indian deed transferred that tract of land known as Sowams, the same land that in 1637/8 the Plymouth Colony Magistrates told Dr. John Clarke and Roger Williams "was the garden of their patent and the flour in the garden."

This deed also included the so-called "one hundred acres" of salt marsh, and other lands, that ten years before had been parceled out to the inhabitants of Rehoboth when the original township of Seekonk was settled by these men in 1643.

Three months after Ousamequin had sold the Sowams tract of land to the "Gentlemen Purchers" (so-called in the Rehoboth Records) forty-one of the inhabitants of Rehoboth appointed Richard Bowen, Stephen Paine, Thomas Cooper, and William Saben to represent them in settling the status of the Rehoboth uplands and meadows lying within the bounds of the new Sowams purchase.

28 June 1653—"The Subscriptions of the Inhabitants of Rehoboth appointed to be recorded Impowering Richard Bowin Stephen Payne Thomas Cooper and William Sabin The 28th of June 1653.

"Wee whose names are hear underwritten Doe further Impower and authorise Richard Bowin Stephen Payne Thomas Cooper and William Sabin To conclude agree and compose all Differences that may arise conserning the said meddow and upland or anything arising in or about the same as amply as if wee were there p^{r}sent in our owne prsons with any prsons or prsons with whom any question may arise in or about the p^{r}mises to which formensioned business wee bind ourselves truely and faithfully to observe:

Witnesse our hands this 28th of June 1653

"Samuell Newman
Josepth Peck senior
Stephen Payne
Richard Ingrame
John Allen
Josepth Pecke Junior
James Redaway
Daniell Smith
Robert Wheaten husband of Alice Bowen

Richard Bowine
Walter Palmer
Thomas Cooper
John Reade
Robert Martin
William Smith
Abraham Martine
Robert Titus
John Meller
Peeter Hunt
Robert ffuller
John Sutton
John Peren
Gorge Kinwicke husb of Ruth B.
William Sabin
William Carpenter
Jonathan Blise
Robert Abell
Stephen Payne Junier
Obadia Bowin
henery Smith
Thomas Smith
Abner Ordway
John Mathews
John Woodcocke
John Titus
John Butterworth
Philip Walker
John Dogget
Richard Bullock
Nicolas Ide
William Carpenter Junior"

[*Plymouth Colony Deeds*, vol. II, Pt. I, p. 79.]

29 June 1653—The committee appointed by the town of Rehoboth, Stephen Payne, Richard Bowen, Thomas Cooper, and William Sabin, record an agreement made with Capt. Miles Standish, Capt. Thomas Willett, and Josiah Winslow representing the purchasers of Sowams [*Plymouth Colony Deeds*, vol. II, Pt. I, p. 79; *Sowams Records*, pp. 9, 10].

Shortly after the purchase of the Sowams lands most of the new owners sold their holdings to Rehoboth men.

2 Apr. 1655—Eight of the proprietors of the Sowams lands, "Thomas Prince, Thomas Willett, Stephen Pain, John Allen, Josias Winslow, Resolved White, Samuel Newman, and Joseph Peck . . . being the purchasers of some tracts of land bounding upon the bounds of Rehoboth as is now devided into some lots and other greater lots" agree with John Brown, "one of the proprietors with ourselves . . . to let his home lot which he bought of Thomas Willett Lye as Common Amoungst us, etc" [*Sowams Records*, p. 13].

8 June 1655—At a General Court held at Plymouth, before William Bradford, Governor, Rehoboth inhabitants present a petition, dated 5 June 1655, asking that the court forcibly compel all the inhabitants of the town to contribute towards the maintenance of the ministry. John Browne, "one of the Magistrates then sitting in the Court, and being one of the inhabitants of that towne", said he was not acquainted with the petition until the names were subscribed, but in so much as those who had signed the petition desired to submit themselves to a rate, he would, in order to end the troublesome controversy and take the odium from others, personally guarantee to pay the rates of the rest of the inhabitants whose names were not on the list and would make good "by ingaging his land for seven yeares in theire behalfe".

At this same court Stephen Paine and Peter Hunt were the Rehoboth deputies; Jonathan Bliss and Philip Walker were the grandjurymen; and John Butterworth, Robert Fuller, Philip Walker, and Jonathan Bliss, all of Rehoboth, were propounded to take up their freedom [*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. III, pp. 81, 2]. (made freemen)

2 Oct. 1660—At the General Court held at Plymouth "Cushenah is required to pay by rate for comn charges the sume of £1 10s.; Sowamsett £2 10s.; Mr. [William] Brinton 10s.

"Capt^{n} Willett is to bee sent vnto to put those that have lands att Sowamsett into some way for the leviing and paying of their rates

"The like . . . Cushenah [later Dartmouth] . . . to Mr. [William] Brenton" [*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. III, pp. 201, 2].

25 Dec. 1660—John Brown, Thomas Willett, Stephen Pain, Joseph Peck, John Allen, Peter Hunt, Henry Smith, Philip Walker, Thomas Chafey, and Samuel Newman, ten of the proprietors of the Sowams Lands, agree not to let or sell any of their lands to any stranger not already a proprietor without the joint consent of all; that Henry Smith of Rehoboth measure out all lands; and that Thomas Willett by way of exchange is to have thirty Acres of upland measured out adjoyning unto the land of his formerly measured out by William Carpenter, etc. [*Sowams Records*, p. 13].

22 Feb. 1668/9—"At a town-meeting Lawfully warned on the two and twentieth day of the twelfth moneth commonly called February, in the year of our Lord one Thousand six hundred sixty and nine, it is ordered that all persons that are or shall be admited Inhabitants within this Town, shall subscribe to the three proposalls abovewriten and to the several Conditions and Explanations therein Expressed, before any Lot of Land be confirmed to them or to any of them.

"[We] whose names are hereunderwritten, doe freely uppon our [admissi]on to be Inhabitants of This town of Swansey, assent to the above[writt]en agreement, made betwen the Church of Christ now meeting [here] at Swanzey, and Capt Thomas Willett and his associats, as the said agreement is specified and declared in the three [p]roposalls aforewriten, with the several Conditions and Explanations [t]hereof, concerning the present and future settlement of this Township. In witness whereof, we have hereunto subscribed.

Swansea (Baptist congregation!)

*Thomas Willett
*John Myles
*John Allen
*James Brown
*[Nic]holas Tanner
[Hu]gh Cole
[Ben]jamin Alby
*[Jo]hn Brown
[C]aleb Eddy
*[J]ohn Myles Ju.
[T]homas Lewis
*[Jo]seph Carpenter
*[Robert] [J]ones
*[Eldad] [King]sley
[——— ———]

*Samuel Wheaten
Thomas Barns
*Thomas Estabrooke
Richard Sharp
William Ingraham
Thomas Man
William Coohoon
George Aldrige
Nathanail Lewis
John Thurber
Jonathan Bozworth
Joseph Lewis
William Haward
John Thurber
Jerat Ingraham
Zachariah Eddy
Hezekiah Luther
John Paddock
*Samuel Luther
*Obadiah Bowen, Sener
*Joseph Wheaton
*Nathnail Paine
Stephen Brase

Gideon Allen
John Dickse
William Battrom
Joseph Kent (our Pearce ancestor)
Samuel Woodbery
Nehemiah Allen
*Sampson Mason
Job Winslow
*Obadiah Bowen, Ju.
Richard Burges
*John Butterworth
John West
Thomas Elleot
*Timothy Brooks
Nathanail Toogood
Jeremiah Child

"Truly drawn of out of the
beginning of Land Book of
Records Attest
"Joseph Mason Town Cle[rk]"

[*Swansea Town Meetings* (1667–1793), p. 18 (this original page is numbered in pencil).]

1 July 1669—"Phillip Pometacome Chief Sachem of Pocanakett and Atunkamomok allies Coshonwashed . . . in consideration of twenty pounds of Currant New England . . . payed by Constant Southworth, Josias Winslow Senr., Hugh Cole, Captaine James Cudworth and John Coggshall . . . and the Rest of theire p^r^tenors . . . Grant . . . unto them . . . one p^r^cell of upland lying and being in the Township of Swansey in the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth being five hundred acres be it more or lesse" [*Plymouth Colony Deeds*, vol. III, Pt. 1, p. 156].

5 July 1669—The Court held at Plymouth passes the following order:

"In answare vnto a petition prefered to the Court by the towne of Swansey for a necke of land called Papasquash Necke, that it may be graunted vnto them for the promoting of a way of trade in this collonie, the Court haue graunted the said necke of land vnto the said towne for the ends aforsaid, excepting one hundred acres of land graunted vnto M^r^ John Gorum by order of Court, and M^r^ Browne, John Allin, and Ensigne Smith being ordered by the Court to lay it out soe as it may be as little prejudiciall to his or theire interest as may bee.

---

* This name also appears in the Rehoboth 1671 tax list.

"Further, in answare vnto the said petition, it is ordered and graunted by the Court, that for the accom̄odateing of more inhabitants in the said township, that all such lands as the Indians can well spare shalbe purchased by Captaine Willett or M^r^ Nathaniel Paine, alwaies prouided that the Goũ be acquainted with such lands before any purchase be made of them; further, that the towne of Swansey shall haue the same privildges in receiueing of townsmen into theire towne as other townes in this jurisdiction haue; onely, forasmuch as many in our collonie are in want of land, such, being com̄ended to them by this goũment, shalbe supplyed by them before any others".
[*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. V, p. 24.]

The provision that the Town of Swansea should provide lands for individuals recommended by the government before granting lands to other applicants is unusual and shows the close relationship between the Plymouth Colony Court and the officials of the new township.

19 May 1670—At a Swansea Proprietors' meeting it is voted that there should be three ranks. The first rank should receive three acres and pay £3 12s.; the second rank should receive two acres and pay £2 8s.; and the third rank should receive one acre and pay £1 4s. [*Swansea Proprietors' Grants & Meetings* (1668–1769), p. 5].

Besides the 1669 list of men intending to settle at Swansea and the 1670 list of Swansea inhabitants, we are fortunate in having a 1671 Rehoboth tax list, also a 1670 Plymouth Colony Court list of freemen for both Rehoboth and Swansea. A comparison of these lists shows the shift of inhabitants from Rehoboth to Swansea, and also those inhabitants who although apparently residents of Swansea, still owned land and were proprietors in Rehoboth.

29 May 1670—"An exact List of all the Names of the Freemen of the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth, transcribed by Nathaniel Morton, Secretary of the Court for the said Jurisdiction, the 29 May, Ann° Dom̄ 1670.

(It would appear that in Plymouth Colony (unlike MA Bay Colony) one could be a Baptist!) These are of mixed religions.

Swansey

"Captaine Thomas Willett
Mr. James Browne
John Allin
M^r^ Nicholas Tanner
Nathaniel Pecke

Hugh Cole
Sacaryah Eedey
Samuel Luther
M^r^ John Myles Junir

Rehoboth

Mr. Daniel Smith
Mr. Noah Newman
Mr. Stephen Paine
Mr. Thomas Cooper
Richard Bowin
Lieftenant Peter Hunt
Nicholas Hyde
William Sabine
Nicholas Pecke
Philip Walker
Nathaniel Paine
Ensigne Henry Smith
John Read
Samuel Newman
William Carpenter
Gilbert Brookes

John Pecke
Anthony Perrey
John Woodcocke
Samuel Carpenter
Samuel Pecke
John Titus
Jonathan Blisse
Robert Fuller
George Kencricke
Steven Paine, Juni^r^
Preserued Abell
John Read, Juni^r^
Peter Hunt, Juni^r^
John Ormsbye
Nathaniel Cooper"

[*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. V, pp. 278, 9.]

27 Oct. 1670—Regarding controversy between Rehoboth and Swanzey "about the Rating of lands which belongs to the Inhabitants of one of them Lying within the Lyne of the other", the court ordered:

"first that the meadows commonly Known by the name of the hundred acre Meadow though they Ly within Swanzey Lyne yet to be and belong to the Township of Rehoboth and there to be Rated as they have

"That the Meadows belonging to Sowamset called the five ten Acre Lots Lying within the Line of Rehoboth shall be and belong to the Township of Swanzey and their to be Rated and not unto Rehoboth

"That the Rest of the Land be Rated to Each Township Respectively as they be and shall fall within their line

"Nathll. Morton, Secretary".

[*Swansea Proprietors' Records* (1667–1730), p. 2.]

18 Nov. 1670—At a town meeting held on this date the following list of three-rank inhabitants is recorded, the first of four such lists found in two different record books: 46-62-07

Swansea

"First Rank	Second Rank	Third Rank
*"Capt. Thomas Willett	*Samuel Luther	Hezekiah Luther
Mr. Nathaniel Pain	*Robert Jones	Joseph Lewis
*Mr. James Brown	Zachary Eddy	Caleb Eddy
*Mr. John Allen, Sen.	Hugh Cole	John Paddock
*John Butterworth	John Myles, Jun.	Nathaniel Lewis
Mr. John Dikse	*Nicholas Tanner	Samuel Wheaton
Mr. Richard Sharp	Benjamin Alby	Thomas Man
William Ingraham	*Samson Mason	William Cohoon
*Mr. John Myles, Pastor	Thomas Barnes	*John Martin
A Pastors Lot	John Cole	Isaac Allen
A Teachers Lot	*Joseph Carpenter	*Eldad Kingsley
On 18 Oct. 1680 added:	*Gerrard Ingraham	Samuel Woodbury
John Saffin	William Howard [Hayward]	Joseph Wheaton
	Gideon Allen	John Wheaton
	Thomas Lewis	John Harding
	Jonathan Bozworth	Child
	Anthony Low	
	*Obadiah Bowen	
	*Thomas Eastabrooke	
	William Bartrum	
	George Aldridge	
	William Salisbury	
	John Brown	
	A Schoolmaster	
	on 12 Sept. 1679 added:	
	Jeremiah Child	

"Look for this order as Its fully and Plainly Laid down According as it was Voted and ordered In Page 13th".

[*Swansea Proprietors' Grants & Meetings* (1668–1769), p. 5.]

7 Feb. 1670/1—At a town meeting "It was ordered that all Lots and Divisions of Lands that are or hereafter shall be granted to any perticular person shall be proportioned according to the threefold Ranks underwritten so that where those of the first rank shall have three acres: those of ye second ranke shall have two acres and those of ye third Ranke shall have one: and that it shall be in the power of the select men for the time being or committee for admision of Inhabitants to admitt of and place such as shall be received as Inhabitants into either of the sd Ranks as they shall Judge fit till the full number of threescore Inhabitants shall be made up & that when ye sd number of threescore is accomplished the Lands that are already bought shall be devided and proportioned according to the sd threefold Ranks that in the mean time ye sd Select men or committie shall have full power to grant Lots unto such persons as may not be placed unto any of the sd Ranks until further order provided the Grants exceed not nine acres to a man

"the above sd first [Rank] are only such as are in this Collumn	the above sd second Rank are only such as are in this Collumn	the above sd third Rank are only such as are in this collumn
*"Capt Thomas Willet	*Samuel Luther	Joseph Lewis
*Mr John Myles pastor	*Robert Jones	Caleb Eddy
Mr Nathanal pain	Zechariah Eddy	John paddock
*Mr James Brown	John Myles Junor	Nathaniel Lewis
*Mr John Allen Senr	Hugh Cole	Samuel Wheaten
*John Butterworth	*Nicholas Tanner	Thomas Man
Mr John Dikse	Benjamin Alby	William Cohoon
Mr Richard Sharp	*Samson Mason	*John Martin
William Ingraham	Thomas Barns	Nehemiah Allen
Pastor } Lots Teacher }	John Cole	*Eldad Kingsley
	*Joseph Carpenter	Samuel Woodbury
Capt John Brown	William Howard	Joseph Wheaten
*Ens Thomas Eastabrooke	Gideon Allen	John Harding
Sar Samuel Luther	Thomas Lewis	Obadiah Bowen Junr
Sar Hugh Cole	Jonathan Bozworth	*Jarat Ingraham
Mr Nicholas Tanner	Anthony Low	John Crabtree
	*Obadiah Bowen	John Wheaten
Stephen Brace for not performing ye condition of his grant ye grant is by the Townsmen ye 12th of September 1679 declared void	a school master John Thurber Hezekiah Luther Jeremiah Child Hugh Cole	John West"

Ref 974.4 - B77

[*Swansea Town & Proprietors' Records* (1670–1718), p. 14.]

2 Nov. 1671—At a town meeting the first rank proprietors are ordered to pay £3 12s.; second rank, £2 8s.; third rank, £1 4s. [*Swansea Proprietors' Grants & Meetings* (1668–1769), p. 7].

The following is the earliest extant tax list of the town of Rehoboth, here printed for the first time. In this list appear the names of fifteen taxpayers, marked with daggers, listed as inhabitants of the Town of Swansea on 18 Nov. 1670 and 7 Feb. 1670/1:

"The Towne Rate to pay Towne Debts 1671

	£ s. d.
†"Capt. Willett	00–12–05 q
†Mr. Browne	00–14–06
Samll Nueman	00–10–11 oh
†John Allen, Sen	00–19–05 oh
John Wodcoke	00–17–10 3q
Tho: Willmot	00–02–06
†Samp. Mason	00–02–09
An. Perey	00–09–06
†Jo Butterworth	00–05–02
Phill Walker	00–11–00
Roger Amydown	00–02–00 oh
John Ormsby	00–06–08 oh
Rich: Martin	00–04–08 oh
Rich Bowen, Sen	00–03–07
Stev. Pain, Jun	00–10–08
†Rob. Joanes	00–07–02
†Oba. Bowen	00–03–07 oh
Jo. Peck	00–05–11 oh
Ja. Redeway	00–06–07 oh

There is another rate made for ye Bu ld mo of [ ] [ ] [ ] of [ ] Same.

	£ s. d.
Mr. Noah Newman	00–00–08 oh
Wid Buluke	00–00–11
Samll Buluk	00–03–00
Jo. Miller Jun	00–05–02
Left. Hunt	00–19–09
Rob. Fuller	00–05–09
Rob. Wheaton	00–03–10 oh
Wid Hall	00–02–07 ←(Dodge ancestors Esther Hall)
Jo Miller Sen	00–04–04
†Jaret Ingraham	00–03–01 oh
†John Martin	00–00–06 oh
Jo. Kinsley	00–01–05 oh
Gill: Brooke	00–01–03 3q.
†Jos. Carpenter	00–01–00 oh
Tho. Reade	00–03–01 oh
Tho. Grant	00–00–06 q.

---

* This name also appears in the 1671 Rehoboth tax list.

* This name also appears in the 1671 Rehoboth tax list.

† This name also appears in the 18 Nov. 1670 Swansea inhabitant list.

v2

The lists of the Rehoboth inhabitants who advanced money to the town for defraying the costs of King Philip's War follow:

"Jan: 26 1676 [/7] An account of The charges That Several Persons have ben at in the Towne of Rehoboth Relating to the late Warr Taken out of The Constables: Bookes by those persons apointed thereunto by the Towne is as followeth.

	£. s. d.
"George Kendrick	11–13–01
Jonath: ffuller	01–18–08
* Leften. Hunt	32–17–00
Jo. Miller Sen	06–05–04
Jonah Pallmer	01–10–10
John Butterworth Ju.	03–11–05
Thomas Reade	08–14–04
Joseph Buckiand	06–03–00
[1] Wid & Abra.* Perem	14–02–00
Rice Lenord	02–00–06
James Gillson	04–18–02
An: Perey	14–00–02
George Robonson	04–12–00
John Perem	01–13–10
Will Carpenter	08–17–03
[2] John Titus Sen	05–06–03
Sam^l Carpenter	11–19–05
John Carpenter	01–18–06
John titus, Juñ	02–07–07
Nath. Chaffe	03–16–06
Str. Paine Juñ	10–11–05
Joseph Saven	01–17–00
Gilbert Brooke	03–14–10
	149–19–11
	[£164–09–01]

	£. s. d.
[3] Wid Smith	04–17–05
James Redway Sen.	05–14–04
Pre Abell	07–15–01
Will Bukland	02–09–00
Ben. Bukland wth y^e loss of a gun	04–03–10
Sam^l Peck	09–02–08
John Fitch with y^e lose of a gun	13–06–04
Robert ffuller	04–10–03
[4] Rich. Bowen	04–04–08 Jr.
Widow Saben	01–07–06
John Ormsby	02–15–00
Tho: Willmath Sen	06–12–03
ffran. Stevens	01–10–06
Joseph Peck	02–10–00
[5] Wid. Beere	0–17–08
John Savage	2–06–08
Rich. Marten	1–05–04
Tho. Grant	00–09–00
[6] Deacon Coper & Nath *	08–00–00
Rob: Miller	05–17–06
Wid: Mason	13–05–10
Wid Ra. Reade with a gun lost	04–03–00
[7] John Kinsley	02–04–03
	109–06–01"
	[£109–08–01]

[*Rehoboth Rate Book* II, p. 16.]

"Moses Reade	04–01–10
John Read Sen.	13–18–11
Will: Saben	15–05–08
Nath. Paine	100–00–00
Sam: Reade	00–17–10
Tho. Willmoth Juñ	00–07–04
Joh. Willmoth	01–02–04
Jos. Chaffe	01–08–08
Sam^l Bulluk	00–12–03
Rebeka Hunt	01–07–10
John Hall	00–01–06
Sam^l Saben	04–14–02
Eldad Kinsley	00–09–04
[8] Wid Carpenter	01–00–06

Dodge line

[10] James Red.[way] Juñ	00–06–00
Will Blanding	00–07–00
Daniel Smith	37–11–07
John Pecke	04–12–06
[11] Decon Walker	26–00–10
John Allen Juñ	00–16–09
John Doggett	11–01–03½
[12] Sam^l Nueman	04–07–10
* Jacob Ormsby	01–09–06
* John ffuller	00–17–00
* Thom. Copper Juñ	07–05–11
* Isak Allen	03–11–03
* John Readway	00–16–06
* Nicho Peck	08–12–05

---

* This name is omitted in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 117.

[1] The "& Abra." is omitted in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 117. For the last hundred years this error of omission has caused the genealogists a great deal of trouble, for while there was a widow Perem who had a son Abraham, there was no known widow Abraham Perem.

Daniell Allen	00–14–00
Sam^l Homes	00–09–00
Noah Mason	00–15–00
John Jonson	00–16–06
Jere: Wheaton	00–03–00
Oba: Bowen	02–17–08
Nath. ffoulsom	00–05–06
Eben: Amidowne	00–01–06
[9] (Tan.) John Crossman	00–02–06
Ben. Saben	01–00–06
	152–13–06
	[£152–13–04]

* Jon: Blise	04–11–07
* Rich. Whitaker	02–00–00
* Rob. Wheaton	02–04–10
* Widow Mary ffuller	00–12–00 (Bowen)
* Nicho Ide	06–12–02
* John Ide	01–13–04
* Mr. Noah Newman	16–00–00
* John Miller Juñ	02–12–06
	[£144–02–09½]

[Grand total £570 13s. 3½d.]

"There was advns.

* to John Hall	00–13–6
* to John Marten	00–13–6"

[*Rehoboth Rate Book* II, p. 17.]

Following the preceding four lists of those who advanced money to the town to meet the expenses of the war, 26 Jan. 1676[/7], the *Rehoboth Rate Book* records two lists of soldiers, one of thirteen "that went to Nariaganset", and the other of sixteen "under Major Bradford".

As both groups of soldiers were under Maj. William Bradford, who was commander of the Plymouth Colony forces, historians of King Philip's War have made the mistake of saying that all twenty-nine men were in the Narragansett Expedition. That is not a correct statement of historical fact, for the records show conclusively that the thirteen men on the first list were of the first army of 1,000 men that went on the Narragansett Expedition, and that the sixteen men on the second list were of the second army of 1,000 men which was not raised until 25 Dec. 1675, six days after the Narragansett Fort Fight.

As these two lists of soldiers have so much historical importance in Rehoboth's history of King Philip's War, it is advisable to consider them separately, beginning with the list of thirteen men. The list as printed in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth* does not give the amounts of money received by the different soldiers, neither does it give the number of days service.

---

[2] This amount is not £5 6s. 6d. as stated in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 117.

[3] This name is not David Smith as stated in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 117. This error has also caused the genealogists considerable trouble, for there was a widow Smith, but no known David Smith.

[4] Richard^2 Bowen (*Richard^1*)

[5] This name is not David Beers as stated in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 117. This error has also caused the genealogists considerable trouble. Widow Beere was the known wife of Robert Beere, slain by the Indians 28 Mar. 1676, but there was no known David Beers.

[6] Not "Deacon Nathaniel Cooper" as stated in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 117. Thomas Cooper, Sr., was a deacon at this time; Thomas Cooper, Jr., and Nathaniel Cooper were both constables in 1676.

[7] This amount is not £2 4s. as stated in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 118.

[8] This amount is not £6 6d. as stated in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 118.

[9] "Tan.", meaning that John Crossman was of Taunton, is omitted in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 118.

[10] This amount is not 5s. as stated in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 118.

[11] This amount is not £26 as stated in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 118.

[12] This amount is not £4 17s. 10d. as stated in Bliss' *History of Rehoboth*, p. 118.

in the year 1641 unto Mr. Alexander Winchester, Richard Right, Mr. Henry Smith, Mr. Joseph Peck, Mr. Stephen Paine, and Divers others", etc., then gives said bounds [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 341].

1 Apr. 1686—Justus Eames of Marshfield deeded to John Dogget of Marshfield land in Marshfield [*Ibid.*, vol. VI, p. 31]. A John and Thomas Dogget are mentioned; probably not the Rehoboth men.

26 Dec. 1689—Maj. William Bradford, son and heir of William Bradford, Governor of Plymouth Colony, for £15, gave the inhabitants of Rehoboth a quitclaim confirmatory deed covering all the lands in the Township of Rehoboth [*Bristol County Deeds*, vol. XXXIII, pp. 356–360].

This deed was not recorded until 21 Apr. 1736, forty-six and a third years after it was executed. For a complete transcript, names of the inhabitants, picture, and description of this deed, cf. *Early Rehoboth*, vol. I, chap. III, pp. 47–67.

In the Registry of Deeds for Bristol County, at Taunton, Massachusetts, are recorded the deeds for the county from 1686. Although Plymouth Colony was divided into the three counties of Barnstable, Bristol, and Plymouth on 2 June 1685, some Bristol County deeds after that date are recorded at Plymouth. The records from 1686 are found at Taunton in the following four volumes: vol. I (1686–1696), 387 pages; II (1696–1699), 373 pages; III (1699–1702), 464 pages; and IV (1694–1705), 512 pages. Excerpts from these volumes follow:

Plymouth Colony divided x 3

9 Oct. 1677—John Doggett of Rehoboth in consideration "of a valuable sum in Lands & other goods", without naming them, deeded to "My Brother Thomas Dogget of Edgartown on Martha's Vineyard", Mass. "my home or house lott containing twenty-two acres . . . within . . . Rehoboth". Signed, John Doggett and Anne Dogget [*Bristol County Deeds*, vol. I, p. 22]. ✓

21 Oct. 1679—Thomas Barnes of Newport, R. I., for "a good & valuable consideration", without naming it, deeded to Zechariah Eddy of Swanzey "my House Lot being twelve acres . . . & two acres which I had of Jonathan Bosworth" being in Swanzey. Signed, Thomas Barnes [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 14].

This is undoubtedly the land granted to Thomas Barnes by the Swansea proprietors on 19 Jan. 1674.

1 May 1682—Elizabeth Smith, widow and administratrix of Ensign Henry Smith, and Joshua Smith, Eldest Son and Heir of Ensign Henery Smith, deceased, and Abraham Peren and Phillip Walker, with the consent of his guardian Daniel Smith, as tenants in joint partnership deeded to Nathaniel Bosworth and Benjamin Jones, both of Hull, Mass., land in Bristol, Mass. [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 23].

20 Mar. 1684/5—Benjame. Wheaton of Mendon, Mass., "late of Rehoboth, cooper" for £3, 10s deeded to Jonathan Fuller of Rehoboth all his shares of meadow and swamp in the North Purchase of Rehoboth, "given me by my father Robert Wheaton" lying partly upon Ten Mile River and partly upon Seven Mile River. Witnesses: William Carpenter and Benjamin Carpenter [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 53].

7 Feb. 1686—Samuel Hall, Sr., of Taunton, "the son of Edward Hall of Rehoboth, Deceased" and Abigail his wife, for 8 acres of land in Rehoboth deeded to Thomas Leonard of Taunton land in Taunton [*Ibid.*, vol. II, p. 35]. – Hall (Dodge line)

5 Aug. 1686—Christopher Saunders of Bristol, "Mercht., with . . . free consent of Elizabeth his wife" for £150 deeded to Simeon Stoddert of Boston, "shopkeeper", his tenement and house lot in Bristol "in ye said Saunder's present possession & occupation". Signed by both Christopher and wife Elizabeth [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 9].

1 Nov. 1686—Francis Stevens of Rehoboth for £8 deeded to Jonathan Fuller of Rehoboth 16 acres in Wachamokett Neck in the last division of Rehoboth. Witnesses: William Carpenter and Nathaniel Carpenter [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 54].

15 Nov. 1686—Bounds of Land of "John Blaxton in ye Town of Rehoboth . . . Transcribed out of the Town Records and Recorded 23 Nov. 1686" [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 18].

7 Mar. 1687—William Bowen of Rehoboth died leaving no instrument disposing of his house and land, and administration was granted to "Richard Bowen Brother unto ye said Dec'd. William Bowen". It was agreed between said Richard Bowen and Obediah Bowen of Swanzey, "Eldest Brother of ye said Dec'd. William Bowen that the said estate, both real and personal should be divided among: said Obadiah Bowen, Richard Bowen son of Thomas Bowen deceased, who was a nephew of said Dec'd. William Bowen, Richard Bowen son of said Richard Bowen administrator, John Bowen son of Richard Bowen who was brother to William Bowen deceased, Alice Wheaton Sister of Deceased William Bowen, Ruth Kinrick Sister of sd. Dec'd. William Bowen, Elizabeth Whelleck Daughter of Robert Fuller formerly of sd. Rehoboth, 'ye said woman being ye nephew [niece] of said Dec'd William Bowen' and Richard Bowen brother of Dec'd. William Bowen". Witnesses: Nathl. Chaffee and Daniel Read [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 66]. Bowen —

Proof that William Bowen was son of Richard I

15 July 1687—Christopher Saunders of Rehoboth, merchant, and Elizabeth his wife for £12, 10s deeded to Nathaniel Byfield of Boston, merchant, one two & thirtyeth part of a 200 acre farm on Mount Hope Neck at Bristol known as the ferry farm which included Beach flats, wharfs, ferry boat oares, masts & sails belonging to said ferry boat. Witnesses: Samuel Peck and Mary Peck [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 195].

2 Nov. 1687—Samuel Sabin of Rehoboth, miller, quitclaimed to "my mother Martha Sabin, relict & Executrix unto my ffather William Sabin Deceased & unto my Brother James Sabin Executor" all houses, lands, orchards, meadow ground, uplands, Swamps of "my ffather William Sabin" in Rehoboth now in the occupation "of my sd. Mother in Law & Brother". Witnesses: Joseph Bosworth and William Carpenter [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 80].

✓ 3 Dec. 1687—Benjamin Fuller of Salem, mason, deeded to Sampson Mason of Rehoboth, cordwinder, house lot of 6 acres in Rehoboth in exchange for a house lot in Wachamoket Neck of 18 acres belonging to said Mason. Witnesses: Richard Bowen, Samuel Potter, and William Carpenter [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 57]. Jr

1 May 1688—Thomas Eastabrook of Swanzey, yeoman, deeded to John Shaw of Freetown, husbandman, land in Swanzey. Witnesses: James Brown, Jr., and Jabez Brown [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 218].

6 Sept. 1688—As Jonathan Bliss of Rehoboth died leaving an estate undisposed of by legal instrument, Samuel Bliss, "his eldest son" of Rehoboth quitclaimed to his brother Jonathan Bliss land in Rehoboth and Swanzey. Witnesses: Henry Newman and Samuel Bullock [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 104].

12 Sept. 1688—As "our Father Samuel Carpenter late of Rehoboth" died intestate and the court had ordered a division of the estate, Samuel Carpenter, eldest son of the said Samuel Carpenter, deceased, and Abiah Carpenter, second son, Planters, procured a confirmation of said lands of "our unkle Capt. John Carpenter" divided to our brother, deeded to James Carpenter, land in Rehoboth. Witnesses: William Carpenter and Nicholas Peck [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 210].

12 Dec. 1688—Samuel and Abiah Carpenter deeded to brother Jacob Carpenter land in Rehoboth. Witnesses: William Carpenter and Nicholas Peck [*Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 212].

1 July 1689—Joseph Buckland, Sr., of Rehoboth, yeoman, for £35 deeded to Joseph and Nathaniel Browne of Rehoboth 265½ acres in Providence

Status as of 1689
(3rd generation)

"A List of the Names of the Inhabitants and proprietors of the Towne of Rehoboth haveing Rights and Tittells to the Mea-suages. Tenements and Lands Contained in the above written-Instrument hereunto Anexed, and affixed which hath. ben. Reade and allowed in a full Towne metting ffeabuary the 7th 1689"

Inhabitants

"Mr Samuell Angar
Decon. Thomas Cooper
Joseph Peck Senr
John ffitch
John Woodcok Senr
Serj Thomas Reade
George Kenrick
Nichollas Ide Senr
George Robinson Senr
Robert Wheaton
Richard Marten
John Peren
*Abraham Peren
Jonathan ffuller Senr
Enoch Hunt
John Hunt
Eprahm Hunt
Rece Lenoard
*Saml. Walker
†Serj John Butterworth
Phillip Walker
ffrancis Stevens Senr
John Ormsby
Nathaniell Chaffe
Samuell Sabin
Serj Preserved Able
Daniell Reade
Iserall Reade
James Sabin
John Sabin
Noah Sabin
The Heires of
Thomas Kenrick
Samuell Robinson
Mosses Reade
Mr Christopher Sanders
Jonah Palmer Senr
Samuell Palmer
Noah Mason
Samuell Mason
Nicholas Ide Junr
Saml Millerd Senr.
Saml Millerd Junr
‡John Hall

Inhabitants

John Redway
Saml Carpenter
John Tittus
Samuell Tittus
Joseph Tittus
John Carpenter
Thomas Grant
John Willmath
Samuell Blise
Jonathan Blise
§Joseph Buckland Sr
Samuell Paine
Joseph Browne
William Carpenter Jr
Isack Allen
Thomas Willmath Jur
John Woodcok Junr
Iserall Woodcok
Jonathan Woodcok
Thomas Woodcok
Samuell Newman Junr
John Kinsley
Timothy Ide
Jonath. Fuller Junr
Jeremiah Wheatton
John Shawe
Joseph Sabine
Richard Whiteaker
Samuell Bullock
Thomas Ormsby
Thomas Man
Robert Millerd Senr
Mr. Henry Sweeting
Jathniell Peck
Joshua Smith
John Smith
Richard Evens
James Thurber
Saml Bowen
Jonathan Wilmath
John ffrench
Joseph Borsworth
Joseph Peck. Junr
Hesekiah Pecke

Inhabitants

Richard Bowen Sr
Thomas Bowen Senr
John Marten
Jonah Palmer Junr
Samuell Cooper
Nathaniell Perry
John Daggett
Thomas Cooper
Joseph Daggett
Nathaniell Daggett
Nathaniell Whitaker
Eprahm Wheaton
Abiah Carpenter
James Carpenter
Samson Mason
Joseph Mason
||George Robinson Jn.
Isake Mason
Thomas Bowen
Joseph Bukland Junr
Baruk Buckland
Sillas Titus
Nath. Paine Junr
William Robenson
Josiah Carpenter
ffrancis Stevens Junr
Richard Bowen Junr
Joseph Millerd
Benjamin Millerd
John Bowen
Benjamin Robinson
David Newman
David ffuller
*Daniell ffuller
John Jenkings
John Jonson
¶Daniell Shepardson
David ffreeman
**James Gilson
James Welch
John Bullock
John Callender
John Bartletts
Heires"

---

* Left out by Bliss, *Hist. of Rehoboth*, p. 128.

† Serj. John Butterworth, not *Saml Butterworth* as read by Bliss, *Hist. of Rehoboth*, p. 128.

‡ John Hall, not *Johe Hall* as read by Bliss, *Hist. of Rehoboth*, p. 128.

§ Joseph Buckland, Sen., not *Joseph Buckland* as read by Bliss, *Hist. of Rehoboth*, p. 128.

|| These three men, "inhabitants" are placed by Bliss in the list of *orphans*, *Hist. of Rehoboth*, p. 128.

¶ Daniel Shepardson, not *Daniel Shepard, sen.*, as read by Bliss, *Hist. of Rehoboth*, p. 128.

** James Gilson, not *James Wilson* as read by Bliss, *Hist. of Rehoboth*, p. 128.

Orphants

"Thomas Cooper
and Nathaniell Cooper
Sons of Nath. Cooper

The Heires of
Benjamin Buckland

Samuell ffuller
*The Heires of
Nathaniell Peck

The Heires of
Eldad Kinsley

Jonath: Carpenter
David Carpenter
Sollomon Carpenter
Zacheriah Carpenter
Abraham Carpenter

The Heires of
Robert Joanes

Daniell Sabin
Son of Nehemiah Sabin

John ffuller
Abiall ffuller
Benjamin Paine

The Heires of
William Allen

Thomas Smith
Henery Smith
Abiall Smith
Ebennizar Walker

John Reade and
Thomas Reade
The Heires of John
Reade Junr

Orphants

Eliphellet Carpenter

Rebeka Carpenter
Daughter of Abiah
Carpenter
Mary Walker

Mary Ormsby
Jacob Ormsbys
Daughter

The Heires of
Mr Pilebeame

James Myles and
Nathaniell Myle
Sons of Mr John Mylles

The Heires of
John Savage

Phillip Amidowne
Henery Amidowne

Propriater not Inhabitants

James Browne Esqr
Thomas Dagget Esqr
Mr Nathaniell Paine
Mr John Allen Senr
Mr Henery Newman
Decon John Buterworth
Mrs Elizabeth Viall
Daniell Allen
Obidiah Bowen Senr
Samuell Viall
William Ingraham
Mr Nichollas Taner
Mr Andrew Willett
Mr Phillip Squire
Obadiah Bowen Junr
John Paine
Joseph Chaffe
Henery Sweet
Mr Samuell Myles
Joseph Carpenter
Benja. Carpenter
John Carpenter Junr
Benjamin ffuller
Thomas Wood
Iserall Peck
John Allen Junr
Elizabeth Patey
Ens. Tho. Estabroks
William Howard
John Blakstone
Jarrett Ingraham
John Lovell
Mr Noah ffloaide
Anthoney Sprauge
The Heires of
Humphery Tiffaney
George Webb
Thomas Barnes
Richard Daggerworth
Joseph Woodard
Thomas Patey"

THE SWANSEA QUITCLAIM DEED

This Swansea deed from William Bradford, dated 23 July 1689, is an indented deed written on two membranes of vellum sewed together, measuring over all 24 inches wide by 37 inches long. The top half, 24 inches wide by 22 inches long, is a heavy membrane of vellum on which is written the body of the deed. Below this, sewed to the top part, is a much lighter membrane of vellum, 24 inches wide by 15 inches long, on which is written the names of the inhabitants, proprietors, etc. Whoever prepared this deed appar-

---

* "The Heires of Nathaniel Peck" is left out by Bliss, *Hist. of Rehoboth*, p. 128.

r2

of their claims. The testimony of the various witnesses was sworn to under oath and signed. In this mass of evidence are the depositions of three Rehoboth men who testify that there was a little island in the salt water Cove northwest of the Mill River Falls called by the Indians *Seaconk*, and by the English *Goose Island*, from which the town of Seekonk, now called Rehoboth, derived its name.

✓

This is the testimony of John^3 Bowen whose father and grandfather were proprietors of the Seekonk settlement in 1643, and of Isaac^3 Bucklin and John^3 Butterworth whose grandfathers were also early settlers. Unnoticed by historians, these records, here printed for the first time, give us the long-sought-for evidence establishing location-data for the Indian place-name Seekonk; a location that would not have been guessed, and if guessed would not have been accepted.

15 June 1741—Isaac Bucklin * of Seaconk, otherwise Rehoboth, yeoman, testified: I am in the 67th year of my age and was born in Rehoboth and have generally lived there ever since I was a child. The place now called Barrington was by the Indians called *Naut;*† that now called Seaconk Neck was called by the Indians *Wachemoket;* that there is a little Island below Seaconk or Rehoboth Mill now belonging to one Hide & others that was called by the Indians Seaconk, which in English is Goose-Island, from which the town of Seaconk, now Rehoboth, took its name; that the Falls higher up the River of Patucket were called *Poountucket*, now Pawtucket Falls; that there is a place about half a mile to the Eastward of said Falls called by the Indians *Papachemanesuck;* that there is a run of water still higher up said River, now called Abbot's Run, that was called by the Indians *Montequasquequish;* that the next place above the said Run was by the Indians called *Sanechadesonet* near to which one Solomon Smith and the Bartletts now live; and that there is a pond near it which I have seen. I never heard the lands described or called by the general name of *Pochenoket* Country. King Philip's men dwelt on these lands and they were called *Wamponeugs*. I have heard my Father and other first settlers of Seaconk say that they of Seaconk were not under Plimouth Government and that they submitted themselves to that Government because they would be under some Government, and that they did not count themselves within the bounds of Plymouth Patent.

Mark
Isaac F Bucklin's

Witness Mr. Robinson Clerk.

[*Proceedings of the Commissioners for Settling the Eastern Boundary between Rhode Island and the Massachusetts Bay* (1741), *John Carter Brown Library* copy, pp. 102, 3; *R. I. State Archives* copy, pp. 62, 3.]

15 June 1741—John Butterworth‡ of Rehoboth, house carpenter, testified: I am in the 63rd year of my age and have lived in Rehoboth all my daies.

---

27 Oct. 1845 from the original record preserved in the State Paper Office, London, America No. 378. Robert Lemon, Chief Clerk in his Majesty's State Paper Office, made the copy by special permission.

* ISAAC^3 BUCKLIN (*Joseph,^{2} William^1*), yeoman, b. at Rehoboth 31 Jan. 1672/3; m. at Rehoboth 3 Jan. 1698/9, Mary Marsh. His father, Joseph^2 Bucklin, d. at Rehoboth 28 Mar. 1718; m. at Rehoboth, 5 Nov. 1659, Deborah Allen, d. there 1 Apr. 1720. His grandfather, William^1 Bucklin, was buried at Rehoboth 1 Sept. 1683; m. in England, Mary Bosworth, buried at Rehoboth 29 July 1687, dau. of Edward and Mary Bosworth. William^1 Bucklin and his family moved from Hingham to Rehoboth between 22 Sept. 1652 and 1 Feb. 1654/5.

† This is a new Indian name for Barrington, here first printed.

‡ JOHN^3 BUTTERWORTH (*John,^{2} John^1*), house carpenter, b. at Rehoboth 7 May 1679, d. 11 Dec. 1771, in 93rd year; m. at Rehoboth 1 Mar. 1710/11 Mary^4 Peck (the counterfeiter), b. at Rehoboth 27 July 1686, d. there 7 Feb. 1775, in her 89th year, dau. of Joseph^3 and Elizabeth^3 (Smith) Peck. His father, Capt. John^2 Butterworth, b. at Rehoboth 8 Sept. 1651, d. there 20 Mar. 1730/1; m. at Rehoboth 4 Sept. 1674, Hannah^2 Wheaton, b. at Rehoboth 18 Sept. 1654, d. there 7 Oct. 1724, ✓ dau. of Robert^1 and Alice^2 (Bowen) Wheaton. His grandfather, John^1 Butterworth, b. probably in England about 1624; d. at Bristol, Mass., in 1708; m. about 1650, Sarah ———. The first mention of John^1 Butterworth found in the Rehoboth records is on 11 Jan. 1648/9 when at a town meeting he was voted land.

Alice Bowen desc.

That now called Barrington was by the Indians called *Naut*, and the upper part of it where Mr. Brown now lives was called *Wanemoisel*, and that now called Seconk Neck was by the Indians called *Wachemoket* (where *Tias* one of King Philip's captains lived) and is so called on record at Seconk, and goes up to Seconk Mill belonging to Hide and others; and that there is a small Island about twenty [330 feet] or thirty rods [495 feet] from said Mill which was called Seconk, from which the town of Seconk, now called Rehoboth, derives its name of Seconk; but I know no other Indian name of any particular places 'til I come to *Pautucket* now called *Pautucket Falls*, nor above the Falls till I come to *Sanacheteconet*, and that the Pond so called lies about one mile and a quarter or half, east from Pautucket River, and there are Indian Fields lying West of said Pond, between it and Pautucket River, and said place extends up to the reputed South Line of the Massachusetts as I have heard say. The Indians who dwelt on these lands were called *Wampanoougs*, and were King Philip's subjects, which I was informed of by one Mr. Dogget who was an Interpreter in the Indian tongue. Seconk was under Plimouth Government but not within Plimouth Patent, as Mr. Dogget and others told me; and I have heard my Grandfather say that he questioned the Seconk People's being within the limits of said Patent, and that they had put themselves under that Government for refuge. I have always heard that Pautucket River called Blackstones River from *Wonsocket Falls* down to the Ferry and so on to *Naut*, were the parting boundaries between *Mauntomy* the Narragansett Sachem and King Philip, and that *Wonsocket Falls* are four or five miles above Clark's Furnace in *Sanacheteconet* up Paukucket River. The mouth of the Providence River is at the old Ferry Point on the East side and *Tocwodden* Point which is a few rods to the Northward of Darling's Ship-yard on the West side. (Signed) John Butterworth

Hannah Sutton
m. John Doggett Jr.

[*Ibid., John Carter Brown Library*, pp. 106, 7, 8; *R. I. State Archives*, pp. 65, 6.]

✓ (See below)

15 June 1741—John Bowen * of Rehoboth, otherwise called Seconk, yeoman, testified: I am 71 years of age and have lived in said town ever since I can remember; that the Indian name of Barrington was *Naut* and the Neck now called Seconk Neck was called by them *Wauchemooquet;* that the Island a little distant from the Mills belonging to Hyde and others in said Seconk was called by the name of Seconk and that the said Town derived its name from said Island, which word signifies Goose Island and derived its name from the plenty of Geese that used formerly to be there, which the Indians called Coonk from the noise they were wont to make, and they called the Falls above, *Pawtucket Falls*, and I am not acquainted further up the said River. I have heard by my parents, the first settlers and other ancient people of Rehoboth, that they were not within Plimouth Patent, but had submitted themselves to that Government for their protection; but if the line should be run they of Rehoboth would fall into Rhode Island Government.

(Signed) John Bowen

[*Ibid., John Carter Brown Library*, pp. 104, 5; *R. I. State Archives*, p. 64.]

16 June 1741—Joseph Titus† of Rehoboth, wheelwright, testified: I am 76 years of age and have lived in Rehoboth all my daies . . . I knew very

---

If Richard Bowen Jr. died in 1723 he ✓ must have been younger than supposed — but this says about! not definite

* JOHN^3 BOWEN (*Richard,^{2} Richard^1*), yeoman, b. at Rehoboth 15 Mar. 16 [70]; d. there 1 Apr. 1748; m. at Rehoboth 12 Sept. 1700, Elizabeth Brockett. His father, Richard^2 Bowen, was b. probably about 1632; d. about 1722/3; m. (1) 4 Mar. 1656, Ester Sutton, buried at Rehoboth 6 Nov. 1688, probably dau. of John Sutton; m. (2) 20 Jan. 1690, Martha (Allen) Sabin, widow of William Sabin. His grandfather Richard^1 Bowen was buried at Rehoboth 4 Feb. 1674; m. (2) at Hingham, Mass.,—Nov. 1648, Elizabeth (———) Marsh, buried at Rehoboth —— 1675, widow of George Marsh who d. at Hingham 2 July 1647. Both father and grandfather were original proprietors of Seekonk in 1643.

† JOSEPH^3 TITUS (*John,^{2} Robert^1*), wheelwright, b. at Rehoboth 17 Mar. 1665; m. at Rehoboth 19 Jan. 1687/8, Martha Palmer. His father, John^2 Titus, was b. in England about 1627 and was buried at Rehoboth 16 Apr. 1689/90. He had a home lot, formerly Mathew Pratt's, granted him at Rehoboth 28 June 1647. His grandfather, Robert^1 Titus, sold his Rehoboth property to Robert Jones of Nantasket and removed to Long Island, N. Y., in 1654.

Palmer's River in Rehoboth. Witnesses: John Read, Jr., and John Ormsbey [*Ibid.*, vol. IV, p. 16].

13 Mar. 1667/8—Philip who succeeded his brother Alexander as Sachem of the Wampanoags or Pokanokets confirmed to the Town of Rehoboth the purchase of "the eight miles square" lying and being on the east and west sides of Palmer's river, made of Massassoit or Ousamequin, his father, in 1641. Signed by Philip Sachem; the mark of *Umptakisok*, councillor; the mark of Philip, councillor; the mark of *Sunconewhew*, Philip's brother; the mark of *Peebee*, councillor; and the mark of Tom, interpreter. Witnesses: John Myles, Junio, John Landon's mark, the mark of Wm. Hammon, and Joseph Sabin [*Ibid.*, vol. III].

28 May 1668—Abraham Martin of Rehoboth appointed Lieut. Peter Hunt and Ensign Henry Smith of Rehoboth his attorneys. Witnesses: John Peck and Richard Bowin [*Ibid.*, vol. III, pt. 1, p. 109].

3 June 1668—A General Court of Elections held at Plymouth ordered "that a tract of land containing a mile and a halfe, lying on the north side of the towne of Rehoboth, is allowed to be on the proper right of the said township, and for such lands as are lying betwix the Bay line; and it is to be accompted within the constablerick of Rehoboth until the Court doe order it otherwise; and that such farmes as lyeth within said liberties shall be responsible in point of rateing att the Collonies despose" [*Plymouth Colony Records*, vol. IV, p. 185].

5 June 1668—Acknowledged this date. Whereas Pameyken Sachem deceased for valuable consideration in 1641 conveyed to Mr. John Browne and Mr. Edward Winslow, deceased, on behalf of the Town of Rehoboth, a plot of land 8 miles wide on East and West of a River called Palmer's River in Rehoboth. Therefore King Philip, son and heir of above sachem, now confirms this deed of this same land to Stephen Paine, the eldest, Peter Hunt, John Allin, and Henry Smith, selectmen of Rehoboth [*Plymouth Colony Deeds*, vol. III, pt. 1, p. 116].

27 June 1668—Capt. Thomas Willett & John Allen Sr., and James Brown, Inhabitants of Swansey and Steven Paine, Sr., of Rehoboth, release all rights in all their lands at New Meadow Neck in Swansey to Town of Swansey. Witnesses: John Brown and John Dickse [*Ibid.*, vol. V, p. 128].

8 Dec. 1668—Richard Martin of Rehoboth and John Ormsbey of Rehoboth "haveing an Estate fallen to them by the Death of their kinswoman lately deceased" who is not named divided said Rehoboth land between them. Witnesses: William Carpenter and John Carpenter [*Ibid.*, vol. III, pt. 1, p. 135].

2 Apr. 1669—Thomas Chafy of Swansey deeded to Joseph Carpenter, yeoman, of Rehoboth land in New Meadow, Swansey. Witnesses: Nicholas Tanner, John Martin, and Joseph Chafy [*Ibid.*, vol. III, pt. 1, p. 174].

3 Apr. 1669—Abigail Carpenter of Rehoboth, widow, deeded to John Titus of Rehoboth all rights in land in North Purchase being the whole share of the lands purchased from the Plymouth Government. Witnesses: William Carpenter and Samuel Carpenter [*Ibid.*, vol. III, pt. 2, p. 225].

11 May 1669—Nathaniel Paine of Rehoboth, merchant, for valuable consideration deeded to William Allen of Prudence Island, R. I., land in the North Purchase of Rehoboth that was purchased from the agents of Plymouth Colony. Witnesses: Daniel Smith and Thomas Briggs [*Ibid.*, vol. IV, p. 249].

28 May 1669—John Sutton of Rehoboth, carpenter, with consent of his wife Juliom Sutton deeded to Jonathan Fuller of Rehoboth 3 acres and 3 rods of upland at Wachemachett. Witnesses: William Carpenter and Joseph Bowin [*Ibid.*, vol. III, pt. 1, p. 146].

4 June 1669—A writing of the lands of John Doged, Jr. of Rehoboth [*Ibid.*, vol. III, pt. 1, p. 140]. Copied from town records.

30 May 1672—John Peck of Rehoboth, planter, deeded to John Titus, Sr., of Rehoboth 8 acres upland in Rehoboth. Witnesses: William Carpenter and Samuel Carpenter [*Ibid.*, vol. III, pt. 2, p. 224].

4 July 1672—The Lands of Stephen Paine, Jr., recorded [*Ibid.*, vol. III, pt. 2, p. 232]. Copied from town records.

2 Dec. 1672—"To all people to whom this present writing shall come William Sabin* of Rehoboth within the Collonie of New Plymouth in New England husbandman sendeth greeting; whereas I the said William Sabin by my deed of bargain and sale bearing date the eighteenth day of September in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred fifty and foure for the consideration therein mentioned did seek and absolutely bargain sell and enfeof and confirm unto Anthony Perrey of Rehoboth aforesaid husbandman; and to his heirs and assigns forever one moyety or half she of sixteen acres of salt meddow or marsh in Rehoboth aforesaid at a place called and knowne by the name of the hundred acres tongue, be the same more or less which said moyety I the said William Sabine bought with other lands of *my father in law Richard Wright*;† and is bounded on the east by the meadows of mee the said William Sabine, and on the west by the meddow of Phillip Walker, as it is possessed by the said Anthony Perrey and his assigns, and one moyety or half she of such acrees of fresh meadow be it more or less in Rehoboth aforesaid at a place comonly called bushey meadow, sittuate lying and being between the meddow of the children of Allexander Winchester, deceased on the south and the meddow of Phillip Walker on the north and the sixth lott once belonging to the said Richard Wright on the north and of the place comonly called the Great Plaine in Rehoboth aforesaid consisting of thirty acres be it more or less and one moyety or half she of the second division lott, belonging formerly to the said Wright consisting of fourscore acrees be it more or less, and as the same is now by the free and full consent and agreement of me the said William Sabine possessed by the said Anthony Perrey and his assigns, it is bounded on the west by the land of John Titus, and of mee the said William Sabine and of Ester Hall widdow and on the south by the way or comon; and on the east by the land of mee the said William Sabine; and on the north by the comon; and three hundred and fifty pound estate of Comonage, in the township of Rehoboth aforesaid with the priviledges rights and emunities whatsoever thereunto belonging, *all aforementioned premises I the said William Sabine bought of my said father in law Richard Wright*,† to have and to hold, etc.

William Sabine

Witnesses: Daniel Smith, Mark X of
Richard Leonard, Nathaniel Paine,
Nicholas Peck

"Acknowledged by William Sabine of Rehoboth on 4 Mar. 1672/3 before Constant Southworth, Asst." [*Ibid.*, vol. III, pt. 2, p. 262].

10 May 1673—John Woodcocke, Sr., of Rehoboth, planter deeded to "my eldest son John Woodcock Jr." of Rehoboth 60 acres upland, meadow

---

* This deed is printed here in full for the reason that it is the only evidence we have that the first wife of William Sabin was a daughter of Richard Wright, the Rehoboth miller. This discovery was first published by the writer in the New England Historical & Genealogical *Register* in 1944. William Sabin was buried at Rehoboth 9 Feb. 1687. Although he had twenty children, he had no son named William, so that there can be no confusion in names. He was probably in Braintree with his father-in-law before coming to Rehoboth. He must have married his first wife about 1640 or 1641. The date of birth of his first child, Samuel, is unknown, but a daughter Elizabeth, according to her gravestone in the Newman Cemetery, was born in 1642. The names of the remaining eighteen children are found in the Rehoboth records,—from 1645 to 1660 by his first wife and from 1664–5 to 1680 by his second wife. His first wife died after her last child was born on 27 July 1660. He married, secondly, at Medfield, Mass., 22 Dec. 1663, Martha Allen, born 11 Dec. 1641, daughter of James and Anna Allen [cf. Register, vol. XXXVI, p. 52]. It seems likely that Richard Wright was living in 1672, since his son-in-law William Sabin does not refer to him as "deceased" in his deed dated that year.

† These italics are the writer's.

NEHGR CXXXIX Jan 1985

SWANSEA, MASSACHUSETTS, BAPTIST CHURCH RECORDS

Edited by Robert Charles Anderson, F.A.S.G.

In November of 1982, Jerome E. Anderson attended an antiquarian book fair in Boston and saw there a small volume described as the original records of the Baptist Church in Swansea, Massachusetts, commencing in 1666/7. Two days later, after looking into the history of Swansea, I called the dealer who was offering the volume and arranged an appointment. By two in the afternoon I had seen the volume, had verified that it was what it purported to be, and had purchased it from the dealer, who could not recollect how it had fallen into his hands, or when. Later examination of a variety of sources gives no indication that anyone had seen this volume between the time of the last entries in 1772, and its reappearance 210 years later.[1] These records are now in the possession of the Society.

The manuscript now contains 96 pages measuring approximately seven inches by five inches. The pages were at one time bound into a book, as traces of glue remaining along the spine testify, but this binding has vanished, and the pages are now held together by modern thread, which has the appearance of being nylon or some other synthetic fiber. Most of the pages have been folded into signatures of varying size, but there is some indication of rearrangement, so precise statements about the original order cannot be made. Several pages came loose at some point, and are now at the end, held in place by glue to newer strips of paper. Furthermore, three leaves, or six pages, have been cut away from the front of the volume. The numbering used in the transcript below includes these six missing pages.

The records included in this volume fall into three distinct time periods, although only three or four different hands were at work albeit with frequent changes in ink. The bulk of the material falls into the years when the Reverend John Myles was at the head of this congregation, and these records are undoubtedly in his hand. The earliest item is dated 20 January 1666[/67] (page 11), followed by entries running in chronological order, and in the same but deteriorating handwriting, until 15 September 1682, only a few months before the death of John Myles (page 51). There is a significant gap in this sequence, between 22 April 1675 and 18 December 1679. King Philip's War began at Swansea, with the first deaths occurring on 24 June 1675; the town, along with several others on the frontier, was soon abandoned, and was not reoccupied for some years. John Myles appears in this interval at the Baptist church in Boston, but it is somewhat surprising that these important events make no appearance whatsoever in these church records.[2] Other material in this same hand, although not always dated, is found on pages 89 through 98. There is a year date of [16]55 on page 89, but comparison of meeting dates in 1674 and 1675 (pages 46 and 47) shows that the latter year was intended. The names on pages 90 and 91 appear to be an early list of church members, with the few names on page 90 being in fact the conclusion of the list begun on page 91; these two pages are among the loose sheets at the end of the volume, and have at some point been reversed in order.

---

[1] Carroll D. Wright, *Report on the Custody and Condition of the Public Records of Parishes, Towns, and Counties* (Boston, 1889), 21; George D. Langdon, Jr., *Pilgrim Colony: A History of New Plymouth, 1620–1691* (New Haven, 1966), 260; William G. McLoughlin, *New England Dissent, 1630–1883: The Baptists and the Separation of Church and State* (Cambridge, Mass., 1971), 1:129.

An important entry in this portion of the records is the letter on pages 17 through 20. This letter survives in other copies, with minor variations, and in these other copies the signatures of John Myles, pastor, and John Butterworth are appended.[3]

The second group of entries (pages 52 through 57, 60, 61, 70, 72) falls into the ministry of Samuel Luther, successor to John Myles.[4] Most of these entries date from 1705, 1709, 1713 and 1715. The entries on page 61 record the beginning of the ministry of Ephraim Wheaton; records maintained by this minister are in the library of Brown University. One other entry during this period demands comment. The first two sentences on page 55 are undated, but are in an earlier hand than the surrounding material, which is from 1715. These two sentences, judging from the sentiment expressed in the second, may well have been made immediately after the death of John Myles, in an unsuccessful attempt to continue his careful keeping of records. These few pages are in fact all that we have for the years from 1683 through 1717.

The third group of entries (pages 62 through 65, 74, 75) are a scattering of deacon's accounts from the late 1760s and early 1770s.

The vast majority of the entries in this volume come from the earliest years of the church, and will be of immense interest to historians of the early Baptist church in New England. The only other seventeenth-century New England Baptist church records to survive are those of the church in Boston. The material from the Myles ministry consists for the most part of disciplinary proceedings, discussions of application for admission to church membership, and matters of church government.

---

2. Nathan E. Wood, *The History of the First Baptist Church of Boston (1665–1899)* (Philadelphia, 1899), 123-33.

3. A copy of this letter exists in the papers of Samuel Maxwell, minister of this church from 1733 through 1739; these papers are at the Society. See also McLoughlin, *New England Dissent*, 132-34, for location of other copies, and for a discussion of the points covered by the letter.

4. Otis Olney Wright, *History of Swansea, Massachusetts: 1667–1917* (Swansea, 1917), 101-4.

This rich trove of data will be left for others more skilled in Baptist history to examine, except for one point—the date of founding of the Swansea church. The traditional date of founding has been 1663, which has allowed the Swansea church to claim itself as the first Baptist church in Massachusetts, preceding the church in Boston by two years. But the records here presented cast considerable doubt on that claim.

Samuel Newman, the first minister of the church at Rehoboth, had died on 5 July 1663, and the town had immediately begun a search for a replacement. In September of 1663 they invited Zechariah Symes, a 1657 graduate of Harvard, to fill the pulpit, which he did for some years, although he was never permanently settled. John Myles first appears on Rehoboth records on 23 March 1665/6, when he was allowed to purchase land. A short time later, on 18 April 1666, Myles was permitted to preach in Rehoboth on various occasions. By 13 August 1666, Myles was still being permitted to lecture, but at the same time the town was initiating a search for a permanent minister, with the clear implication that this would not be Myles. Then on 2 July 1667 the General Court of Plymouth Colony cited Myles and two other Rehoboth men for "their breach of order in setting up of a public meeting without the knowledge and approbation of the Court." All of this preceded the establishment of Swansea as a town on 30 October 1667.[5]

Looking at the records presented here, we find that the first meeting recorded is on 20 January 1666/7, approximately midway between the apparent rejection of Myles as replacement to Newman as Rehoboth's minister, and the citation by the Court for setting up an unauthorized church. Although there are some pages missing from the beginning of these recently discovered records, there are indications that little has been lost; a comparison of the apparent list of early church members (pages 90 and 91) with the recorded admissions, and other information, does not leave us with the need for postulating many lost meetings. This list contains the names of twenty-two men and sixteen women. Seven of these men (Myles, Tanner, Butterworth, Brown, Alby, Kingsley and Carpenter) are acknowledged as the founders of the church, and they would have become members at the time the church covenant was adopted.[6] The meeting minutes now available to us record the admission of another dozen of these men. This leaves only three (Aldridge, Allen and Estabrook) unaccounted for. If in fact this church had been in existence since 1663, it would be hard to believe that only three men had been admitted as new members between that date and early 1667, a period of more than three years. Given the rate of admissions as seen in the surviving records, we would require only a few additional meetings to allow for the admission of these men, and also for the women not otherwise accounted for. We would, for example, expect that the wives of

---

5. Richard LeBaron Bowen, *Early Rehoboth* (Rehoboth, 1945), 1:32-34.
6. Wright, *History of Swansea*, 101.

John Myles and Nicholas Tanner were admitted as church members in the first meeting after the adoption of the covenant.

Given these circumstances, we can propose the following sequence of events in 1666 and 1667. John Myles arrived in Rehoboth early in 1666, or perhaps late in 1665, with the expectation that he would be called to fill the pulpit vacated by Samuel Newman. He is in fact called on a trial basis, but after some months he is rejected by the church members in Rehoboth, a majority of whom must have retained their adherence to Congregational principles. Sometime after 13 August, Myles and those adhering to his Baptist ways took the bold step of setting up their own church, without the permission of town or colony. We would probably not be far wrong if we placed this event in September or October of 1666. There would thus be time for an additional few meetings in November and December, at which those members would have been admitted who appear in various entries as being brethren in the church, but whose actual admission is not recorded.

In 1667 the church met regularly from January through June. On the 27th of the latter month, the church took note of the impending action of the Court, which action took place on 2 July 1667. The church was to discontinue meeting in Rehoboth within one month from that date; but the Court suggested that the church might be tolerated "in case they shall remove their meeting unto some other place, where they may not prejudice any other church." Another church meeting was held on July 11, at which time plans were made for an additional meeting to be held on the 25th; there is no record of this latter meeting. Both of these meetings were within the month of grace, and then no more meetings were held until October 22. This latter date came only eight days before the Court action which actually established the town of Swansea, and we must assume that the Court had already given a clear indication of what it intended to do.[7]

This scenario has the additional advantage that it makes the action of the General Court of Plymouth Colony more reasonable. Had the Swansea church been founded in 1663, why would the Court wait four years to bring charges against the founders?

If we accept this reasoning, and place the organization of the Swansea Baptist Church in the autumn of 1666, then the Boston church becomes the first Baptist church in Massachusetts, having been founded in 1665.

In transcribing these records, the Expanded Method, as described in the *Harvard Guide to American History*, revised edition, pp. 30-31, has been used. In accord with the Expanded Method, each entry in the church records has been concluded with a period, where no other punctuation is supplied, and the first word in each entry has been capitalized, regardless of the actual usage in the manuscript.

When the deliberations of the congregation result in the recording of a specific church order, the entry frequently begins "It is ordered that . . ." In the manuscript the first two words of this formula are rendered in various abbreviated forms, but in the transcription always as "It is . . ."

---

[7] Bowen, *Early Rehoboth*, 34.

I wish to thank Jerome E. Anderson of Boston for his expert assistance in reading difficult passages in the manuscript, and for other valuable suggestions.

SWANSEA BAPTIST CHURCH RECORDS

[pp. 1-6] Missing

[pp. 7-10] Blank

[p. 11] 20th of 11th mo 66

Abigail Carpenter widdow proposed for comunion.

It is ordered that in regard she hath been [illegible] about 14 years ago by the church in this town that bro: Tanner and bro: kingsley bro Brown and bro Butterworth goe by 2 and 2 to every member of that church to enquire what is objected against her reception.

Robt Miller proposed it is ordered that bro Kingesley with our pastor speak with him in pr[ivate] in order to satisfaction;

Ordered that next fifth day after Lecture the church meet.

24th of 11 mo 66

The brethren who were sent to enquire [faded] Ab: Carpenter haveing been with most of that other church doe find that there was nothing against her but her contempt of [faded] not comeing when sent for.

Robt Miller this day satisfying in point of knowledge yet not being suffic[iently] [recommended?] and being [reported?] to be apt to [2-3 words faded] is deferred [3-4 words faded]

[p. 12] concerning his conversation.

Robt Jones propounded and in the declaration of his faith & experiences gave full satisfaction and is to be admitted to comunion with us the next sabbath if nothing be materially objected against him in the mean time.

7 of 12th mo 66

Sam: Luther proposed and satisfied us as to declaration of faith & experiences and is to be receaved the sabb[ath] com[e] 7night if there be noe materiall objection against him.

Gerard Ingram proposed and though wee are in a good measure satisfied yet that hee shall be put of till further consideracion in other [respects?].

Ordered every 2d 5th day after Lecture there be a church meeting.

Ordered that Lords day come 7night wee break bread and that bro Brown serve the table then.

21 of 12th mo 66

Samuel Luther was admitted to full church com[munion].

It is ordered that a fast day shall be kept 6th day come 7night at this howse

[p. 13] to seek the lord for help and direction to cary on his work and that he would frustrate the designes of all that seek to hinder us.

It is ordered that Br Brown and bro: Carpenter desire bro Easterbrooks to appear before us to give an account of his miscariages in relacion to neglect of meetings & ordinances on the said 6th day.

Ordered that wee break bread the next lords day come 7night if we shall not otherwise order next first day morning meeting.

7 of 1 mo 67

Gerard Ingram propounded again and was assented to and is to be receaved the next Lords day if there be noe materiall objection proved then brought against him.

It is ordered that wee break bread the lords day come moneth and afterward at every moneths end.

21 of 1 mo 67

Sarah Butterworth propounded and was assented to and appointed to be receaved the next day of our breaking bread.

[p. 14] 4th of 2d mo 67

Ordered that in regard bread and wine could not be obtained for our breaking of bread as was expected soe as that wee could have given timely warning thereof that thereupon it be deferred till next lords day come 7night.

2d of 3d mo 67

William Buckland propounded for Com[munion] and haveing satisfied us wee thought it expedient before wee passe any order for his reception to defer the same till this day fourtenight that soe our brethren that are absent may have opportunity to satisfy themselves with him in private. He was since assented to.

3 of 3d mo 67

Ordered that if Abigail Carpenter continues her desire of comunion that it bee proposed the next lords day come 7night in the congregacion that then wee agree to receave her the next 5th day if there be not at or before the said day some just cause proved that may be sufficient for the keeping of her out.

Ordered that the 3d day next be set apart to humble ourselves before the Lord and seek him by fasting and prayer that he would be pleased to pardon sins regulate the sp[irits] of those that are in Civill authority that they may not doe any thing

[p. 15] to our hindrance in gods wayes and that he would disapoint the purposes of such as seek our hurt and soe guide us by his bl[essed] sp[irit] as that wee may walk wisely warily and holily giveing noe just occasion of offence to any, and give us power not onely to doe but alsoe to suffer according to his will whatsoever he shall call us to.

13th of 4th mo 67

Robert Miller propounded again, and it was ordered that he be receaved next lords day if no new objection be brought between and next lords day noon:

mehetabell the wife of our bro: kingsley propounded for com[munion]; and was deferred for want of a cleare declaration of the work of conversion and bro tanner and bro Butterworth speak with her in relacion to further satisfaction and report the same to the church.

Ordered that the next 3d day at noon the church meet to consult together about the carying on of the necessary affaires of the Church.

27 of 4th mo

Robert Miller was receaved the said day.

Our brethren Nich: Tanner & Jo: Butterworth haveing spoken with Mehitabell Kingsley doe certify that shee gave such an account as satisfyed them, whereupon it is ordered that shee come before us this day fortenight and be propounded publickly the lord day before.

[p. 16]

Whereas some brethren are summoned to appear to answer before the Court for to give an account of our setting up a meeting, on the 3d day next; It is ordered that the brethren here behind seeke the lord by fasting and prayer for them and for the church etc. the said day.

11th of 5 mo 67

Ordered that the church meet this day 14night at 6 a clock in the morning and spend the forenoon in seeking the lord about our present condition and the afternoon in consulting thereabout.

October 22

Ordered that wee hold a church meeting for government and exercise of gifts and other church work on 5 day come 5 weeks and thence forward monethly on the said day of the week where the [1-2 words illegible] shall appoint.

23 of 11 mo 67

Jonathan Bosworth propounded for comunion and is to be published the next lords day, and if no new objection be brought in before that day moneth, he is then to be receaved in.

[p. 17] 20th of 12 – 67

James Redaway the elder propounded and it is agreed that hee shall be published the next lords day and if no objection be brought in before that day mo: that he be then receaved;

Jonathan Bosworth acknowledged that Elder Coachman gave him a parcell of meadow upon an agreement with his fatherlaw that he should give him a parcell thereunto adioyning as the said elder told him which his fatherlaw did not do: and for his miscariage herein as alsoe for negligence in his [calling?] was deferred.

Upon which day this following addresse was signed by the church

To our honoured friends Capt. Tho. Willet Mr Stephan Pain Sen Mr James Brown John Allen Sen Stephan Pain junr and Nath. Pain

Sirs

We being with you engaged (according to our capacity in the carying out of a Township according to the grant given us by the honored Court and desireing to lay such a foundation thereof as may effectually tend to gods glory our future peace and comfort and the reall benefit of such as shall hereafter ioyn with us herein, As also to prevent all future iealousies and causes of dissatisfactions or disturbances in so good a work, do in relation to the 3 proposalls made by our much honored Capt. Willet humbly

[p. 18] present to your serious consideration (before we further proceed therein) that the said proposalls may be consented to and subscribed by all and every Townsman under the following explications First proposall was that no erronious person be admitted into the said township either as an inhabittant or sojourner; which we desire may be understood either

1 of such as hold damnable heresies inconsistent with the faith of the gospell; As to deny the Trinity or any person thereof; the deity or sinlesse humanity of Christ; or the union of both natures in him, or his full satisfaction to the divine iustice by his active and passive obedience, for all the elect; or his resurrection, ascention into heaven, intercession or his second personall comeing to judgement. Or else to deny the truth or divine authority of any part of canonicall script[ure] or the resurrection of the dead; or to maintain any merit of works consubstantiation transubstantiation, giveing divine adoration to any creature; or any other Antichristian doctrine clerely opposeing the priestly propheticall or kingly office of Christ or any part thereof.

or 2dly of such opinions as are inconsistent with the welbeing of the place; As to deny the magistrates power to punish evill doers, as well as to encourage those that do well; or to deny the first day of the week to be observed by divine institution as the lords day or christian sabbath or to deny the giveing of honor to whom honor is due or to oppose those civill respects that are usually performed according to the laudable

[p. 19] custome of our nation each to other, as boweing the knee or body putting off the hat etc. or else to deny the office use and authority of the ministery or a comfortable maintenance to be due to them, from such as partake of their teaching; or to speak reproachfully of any of the churches of christ, in the countrey, or of any such other churches, as are of the same common faith with us and them

3 we desire that it be also declared, that this is not understood of any holding any opinion different from others in any disputeable point yet in controversy among the godly learned; the beliefe thereof being not essentially necessary to salvation, such as paedobapt. Antipaedob: church discipline or the like; But that the minister or ministers of the said Town may take their liberty to bapt[ize] infants or grown persons, as the lord shall perswade their consciences; and so also the inhabitt[ants] to bring their children to bapt[ism] or to forbear.

The second proposeall was that no man of any evill behavior such as contentious persons etc. be admitted. Wee desire also that this may be understood of those truely so called, and not of those who are different in judgement in the particulars last mentioned; and may be therefore accounted contentious by some; though they are in all fundamentalls of faith orthodox in judgement and (excepting comon infirmities) blamelesse in conversation.

The third proposeall was that none may be admitted that may become a charge to the place. Wee desire also that this may be understood so as that it may not hinder any godly man from comeing among us while there's accommodation that may satisfy him; if som responsible townsman will be bound to save the township harmelesse.

[p. 20] These humble tenders of our desires we hope you will without offence receave, excuseing us herein, considering that gods glory the future peace and welbeing of not onely us and our posterity who shall settle there but also of those severall good and peaceably minded men whom you already know are like (though with very inconsiderable outward accommodations to come among us, are very much concerned herein; Our humble prayer both for ourselves and you is, that our god would be pleased to cause us to aime more and more at his glory, and lesse at our own earthly concernments that so wee may improve the favors that he hath handed to us by our honored nurseing fathers to the advancement of the glory of god, the interest of our lord Jesus Christ; and to the comon benefit both of the Township and Colony where he hath providentially disposed of us to serve our generation.

your brethren to serve you
in christ

[p. 21] [2?] 9th of 1d mo

Ordered that a day of thanksgiveing bee kept next 3d of the week at bro: Browns for to return praise to our god for preserving our libertyes and vouchsafeing us such other mercies both corporall and spirituall as wee do enjoy;

13 of 2d mo 68

Mary the wife Obadiah Bowen propounded and was assented to if noe objection be brought in before 5 day mo:

Rebekah the wife of bro: Gerrard Ingram propounded and is to be receaved if nothing bee brought against her before the 5 day moneth;

Whereas our bro: Wm Buckland is reported to have taken up and kept a mare of Arthur Fenner unjustly it is ordered that bro Tanner require him to appear 5 day mo. before us to give an account thereof.

Lydia the wife of bro Brown proposed and was assented to as abovesaid.

14 of 3d mo

Bro: Buckland was not charged with any sin about the mare abovesaid.

[p. 22] 3d of 10th

Ordered unanimously that the names of such brethren and sisters as shall be absent on any of our church meetings shall be taken and that they are to give an account thereof the next church meeting on week dayes.

24 of 10 mo.

Ordered that the congregation breaking bread next lords day be aquainted with the churches debt viz 4.18.6. and desired between that and that day moneth or then at furthest to signify particularly what everyone is willing to contribute towards the same; and that from thence forward there be a monethly collection after breaking of bread towards the churches use.

21 of 11 mo.

Whereas by forgetfullnesse the order for the raising of money to pay the churches debts was not performed it is now ordered that all that usually comunicate with us be desired to meet with us this day moneth to take further effectuall course for the satisfaction of the same.

[p. 23] 18 of 12 mo.

It is ordered that hence forward there be a weekly contribution in the afternoon of the lords dayes according to laudable practise of primitive times to the necessary uses of the church among which the maintenance of the church ministery to be one.

It is further ordered that bro: Brown be chosen deacon and ordained as soon as the church see it conveniently can be done. And that bro: Butterworth assist in that office untill wee take further order therein.

18 of 1 mo

It is ordered that all our brethren and sisters that comunicate with us in the lord supper be desired to be present on the dayes of our church meetings to assist us in what they can and to partake of such comunion with us on those dayes as may better fit us all for the receaving of the lords supper.

15 of 2d mo 69

Ordered that the church meetings on week dayes be by 9 a clock and that some time be spent before the publick exercise in private duties of the church.

[p. 24] 13 of 3d mo 69

Ordered that our next church meeting on this day mo: be at bro Tanners before a publick sermon and that the accounts of the deacons be then brought and further order then taken how the contribution for bread and wine shall be payed and when.

5 of 6 mo 69

Mary the wife of Sampson Mason propounded for admission and was approved of; if no objection be brought against her by this day mo:

Ordered that henceforth none shall be admitted to setled comunion with this church but such as shall give personall satisfaction by declaration of their faith and experiences of a work of grace on their souls though they may be members of any other churches whatsoever unlesse they be recomended to [us?] according to the word of god; And that none shall have comunion with us transiently but such as will evidently make to appear to us that they are members of some particular church.

Ordered that in relation to the fulfilling of the order of 13 of 3d mo last bro: Tanner with the pastor and deacons meet to state the whole matter and make such proposalls concerning the same as may be most expedient; and report what they have therein done next church meeting.

In regard of the great judgements of god upon this countrey in diverse [respects?] It is ordered that the 3d of next week be kept as day of humiliation etc.

[p. 25] 2 of 7 mo 69

Ordered that every member shall this Autumne for his or her own self as also all others that have hitherto comunicated with us pay 2-6d in silver or butter at 5d per lb. to bro: Brown toward bread and wine that hath bene already by him bought to the use of the church.

30th of 7th mo. 69

In regard of gods heavy visitation by sicknesse of severall known to us and generally of all [1 word illegible] [parts?] of the Countrey It is ordered that the 3d day of next week be kept a day of publick humiliation and prayer to seek the lords mercy and favor etc.

Willm Bartram propounded for Com[munion] and in case he be found free from sinfull offence in his cariage to bro: tanner about his howse and that there be no further materiall objection against him that he be receaved in the lords day moneth.

Sarah Bartram likewise propounded and is to be receaved if there comes not some material objection; as abovesaid.

1 of 8 mo 69

Ordered that this day mo: be kept publickely a day of thanksgiveing for gods gracious return of our prayers on two late dayes of humiliation (viz) in giveing us seasonable weather and restoreing of health to such as were visited and preserving others from sicknesse according to our poor petitions etc.

[p. 26]

Willm Bartram is put of till further enquiry be made concerning his conversation and especially whether he be addicted to curseing or other like wicked or vain cariages in his passions.

Ordered that bro Redway and bro kingseley doe in the name of the church repair to sister Ingraham and require her thence forward to continue constant her comeing to the assembly of the church.

Ordered that conferences be set up by the members of the church and that the time place and manner be concluded on this day month.

18th of 1 mo – 70

Ordered that bro Brown and bro Butterworth go yet to Sister Ingram with the same message from the church as formerly was sent by bro Redway and bro kingesley.

Ordered that whereas Sarah Bartram had been once accepted of as fit for reception into the church yet now upon serious consideration It is ordered that before shee be admitted she be further considered of in relation to some things that are newly objected against her.

Ordered that a conference be kept at the pastors house on this day 3 weeks and from thence forward at such time and place as shall be then agreed.

[p. 27] 14 of 2d mo 70

For contempt of the churches counsell and cov[enan]t etc. our sister Ingram was admonished to keep to her meetings and com[munion] with the church better hence forward;

Ordered that at every monethly church meeting the time place and questions to be at any conferences that shall be in the insuing moneth be agreed on.

9th of 4 mo – 70

That in regard of bro Tanners and bro luthers absence this day in answer to Willm Bartram and his wife who proposed again that day is deferred till this day moneth.

Question agreed on from Feb. 8.; what is the tenour of the cov[enan]t of grace and how men come to be interested in it; to be this day 14night at bro Aldridges howse.

7 of 5 mo 70

Willm Bartram again proposed and was deferred for a final answer till this day moneth.

Sarah Bartram proposed and was assented to.

Elizabeth Bullock propounded and is to be admitted lord day come moneth.

That the conference be this day 14night and that the same quest[ion] which was appointed for the last time be then conferred on at the meeting howse;

4 of 6 mo: – 70

That the conferrence be at bro: Browns this day three weeks and the question to be how shall wee know whether we have put of the old man and put on the new according to Eph 4 – 22 23 24.

[p. 28]

Hannah Bosworth propounded for bapt[ism] and com[munion] and was assented to upon the terms that others are now admitted.

Jonathan Bosworth propounded etc. and was assented to if there be nothing further objected between this and this day moneth.

1 of 7th mo — 70

Willm Bartram was for the present deferred and the generality of the church being for his reception it is desired that such brethren as have any objections against him may endeavor to satisfy themselves before next church meeting otherwise they are ordered to bring the grounds of their dissent to be then judged by the church.

Zach: Edey proposed and was deferred for want of a cleer satisfaction given in his declaracion before the church.

Alce Edey propounded and was assented to and is to be receaved if no objection be brought in before lords day come mo:

Bro: Tanner acknowledgeing his failing in not proced according to endeavor with bro: Allen and bro Brown in chargeing them with sin without following the rule in Matt. 18 etc. the church hath taken satisfaction.

And as to the merit of the Cause wee desire that they may end their controversy among themselves and if they cannot so do that they all appear before the church this day moneth prepared to make good and answer their severall charges.

[p. 29] before the church.

29 of 7ber — 70

William Bartram upon further consideracion of the dissatisfaction of bro Brown bro Tanner and bro kingsley and with his own consent is put off untill there be a fuller closure of spirit the reception [illegible] of him but on further consideracion it is ordered that if bro brown can be satisfied with he be [rcd?] lord day.

Whereas bro Allen is not heare present to answer or make out his charge against bro: Tanner and that it is not certifyed that they are agreed among themselves It is ordered that brother Allen be required to come before the church and if they cannot agree among themselves before this day mo: that every one present the whole of the matter then to the church.

11th of 11th mo 70

Ordered that bro Redway and bro kingsley require our sister Ingraham to appear before the church on 3rd day of next week by [9?] a clock to answere for her contempt of the church and other things that shall be objected against her.

That this day fourtenight be at bro Tanners kept by the church a day of humiliation in the sence of the many endeavors of men against us and the need we have of the lords help and presence in this day of temptation; wherein we may expect all other helps to fail us and to desire wisdom and strength to perform all such duties as the lord shall call us in relation to our future welbeing as also to help us wholy to trust in him in all our needs.

[p. 30]

That bro Brown and bro Butterworth formerly chosen deacons upon triall haveing behaved themselves faithfully in that work be ordained by imposition of hands with fasting and prayer on this day 3 weeks the meeting is to be at the pastors house by 9 a clock in the morning and bro: Alby is chosen with the pastor to lay on hands etc.

1[9?]th of 11th mo — 70

Sister Ingraham in relation to seeming readiness to hearken to the churches admonition hath time to consider of her falts and miscariages to see whether the lord will convince her and humble her for the same etc. was referred till this day mo: and then required to attend the church meeting.

16 of 12th mo.

Ordered in regard that sister Ingraham hath by our bro: her husband signified her weaknesse of body and present incapacity for travail that the church wait for her appearance till this day moneth and that she then appear to answer to her charge and that bro Butterworth and bro kingsley acquaint her with this order and require her to appeare as aforesaid; absent bro Miller, Aldridge.

[p. 31]

Ordered that next 5 day of the week be set apart to seek the lord by fasting and prayer on the behalf of suffering Sts and kept at the pastors howse.

Every member is ordered speedily to pay 1s in silver and 1 peck of Indian corn towards wine.

[1?]th of 4th mo 71

Ordered that this day fourtenight by 8 a clock the church do all meet.

22th of 4th mo

Zach: Edey propounded again and was assented to.

Joseph Kent propounded and was deferred untill further satisfaction be given, concerning his conversation.

Hugh Cole propounded and was assented to if no materiall objection be brought in before next church meeting for government.

Ob: Bowen propounded and is assented to.

Concerning Sister Ingraham Sister Bowen saith that she being to be baptized the same time with her she the said Sister Ingraham said at the waters side that she did believe that if she would not have been baptized that the stones would have risen up against her and that she had receaved much light and benefit by the ministery and ordinances that she enjoyed from this church.

[p. 32] 6 of 5 mo – 71

Joseph Kent is referred to this day moneth and bro: Butterworth and bro kingsley are in the mean time to enquire into his conversation and to report what they can find unto the church.

John Therbor propounded and was deferred till he can give a cleerer account of the work of conversion on his soul.

13 of 6 mo – 71

Joseph Kent is referred to next lecture day till bro Redway hath time to be satisfied concerning some accounts twixt them.

31 of 6 mo – 71

Joseph Kent was put off till further triall of his conversation.

26 of 8 mo – 71

It is ordered that such brethren as are dissatisfied with Joseph Kent should bring in the grounds of their dissatisfaction next meeting and that such whose dissatisfaction ariseth from any reports doe endeavor to bring him and the reporters face to face and so bring the result of their discourses together to the Church.

John Martyn propounded and is deferred till this day moneth.

[p. 33] 27th of 10 mo. – 71

John Martyn propounded for bapt[ism] and com[union] with this church and was deferred till next meeting for government.

Agreed upon by the church that every member thereof do foorthwith set upon the catechiseing of their whole families in the principles of relligion and the pastor should come to every neighborhood where any of these church members do inhabit at stated times successively to try the proficiency of such families.

And if there should be any unwilling to be catechized among the younger sort or with other company that [illegible] It is desired that they speak with the said pastor privately concerning the same.

19 of 11 mo:

John Martyn is put of till further consideration.

Bro: Miller was sent to by bro: Bowen to keep more closely to the meetings etc.

15 of 12 mo 71

In answer to the order concerning Joseph Kent 26 of 8 mo — 71 bro brown, butterworth and kingsley went to goodwife Wilmot Joseph Kent being present and desireing them to come with him to her and Jonathan Fuller who both testified that he chalenged Jo: lovell to come foorth of the yard. And that he would [rull??] his coats if he would catch him driv[ing] his calfes any more out of the cornfield and that he called Jo: lovell divill and son of a divill often and that he labored to justify his so doeing by Jo .8.44.

Joseph Kent is to have further heareing this day mo: and bro: Alby to acquaint him with it.

[p. 34] 14 of 1 mo. 73 [sic]

Joseph Kent is to have further heareing this day moneth and the pastor and bro: Allen to go with him to Mr Pain to understand how things stand between them.

John Martyn is to be considered next meeting and bro: Cole to bring in his accusations then against him.

Obadiah Bowen junior propounded and gave present satisfaction.

27 of 1 mo 73 [sic]

It is agreed with one consent that the next meeting for government it shall be ordered that all such persons as do or shall enjoy constant or continued comunion with this church shall also be under the discipline and government of christ exercised therein, and to that end that they who are or were members of other churches may the more orderly comply herewith that they speedily endeavor to procure letters of comendacion from the church from whence they came, to this church, and in case they cannot obtain the same upon full satisfaction that they have endeavored to procure the same they are to be admitted to continuance of comunion and be under discipline as aforesaid provided that if any just objection be brought against any particular hereof that then it shall be further debated next meeting or then this order to be fully ratified.

[p. 35] 11th of 2d mo

Bro Aldrige and sister Aldrige and bro Alby have acknowledged themselves to be subject to the discipline of Christ in this church while continuing among us.

Bro Miller, bro Jones and bro Eastabrook to give an account of their absence;

Whereas bro Cole hath bene charged by Jared Bowen [i.e., Bourne] of lying and false witness beareing and unfitnesse for com[munion] in the lords supper with the church It is ordered that bro Luther and bro Edey desire the said Jared Bowen [i.e., Bourne] to come before this church this day moneth either to charge or vindicate our said bro: and the brethren are to require our said bro: Cole to apeare then to answer the said charge.

9 of 3d mo

Whereas bro: Cole was accused by Jared Bowen [i.e., Bourne] as is abovesaid the whole charge was upon examinacion found false and Jared Bowen [i.e., Bourne] hath acknowledged the same and taken the whole blame of so reporting on himself as fully appeares by a paper under his hand and fixed on the doorpost of this meeting howse.

Joseph Kent [sic]

[p. 36]

Ordered that hencefoorth no objection shall be presented to the church and accepted of by the church but such as shall be fully then proved against any person that shall propound for admission; but if any member do scruple the admission of one propounding by reason of some reports that he hath heard concerning him that then such as shall so scruple shall have opportunity to present the grounds thereof the next following meeting to the church and that well and sufficiently proved.

John Martyn propounded and being charged with 3 lyes or a ly 3 times told which he also owned and declared sorrow for the same was deferred till further satisfaction of his repentance.

6 of 4th mo 72

Ordered that there be a church meeting next week on the [blank] day.

Bro Luther to give account for his absence.

4 of 5 mo — 72

Ordered that bro Alby and bro Bosworth do require in the name of the church bro: Aldrige do appear before the church this day mo:

Obad Bowen junior is to be admitted next lords day.

[p. 37]

Bro Tanner Miller Bowen jun Eastabrook Buckland give an account of their absence next meeting.

24 of october 1672 [erased]

26 of december 1672

It is upon serious consideration of our great neglect and unprofitablenesse hitherto now agreed that through gods assistance we do meet oftner together hereafter to edify one another and to with our god viz

1 that the 5 day of the next week be kept a day of humiliation for our former miscariages and to seek the lord on the behalf of his people and Cause

2 that hence forward there be 3 church meetings of the church in every mo: viz one meeting for government after the lecture every 5 day of the week before we have the lords supper at this meeting house And one meeting on each 5 of the week befor the said Lectur at or near to Mattapoise[tt] And one meeting on each 5 of the 2d week after the Lord Supper here or neere this place. That every of the 2 last mentioned meetings begin by 11 a clock.

That as many of the church members as can conveniently doe repair to every of the said meetings; And that all be present at the meeting for government after the lecture aforesaid And that such as are neerest Mattapoiset do belong to that meeting on the dayes when they meet there and the rest to this viz with reference to their meeting on the said meeting Dayes.

[p. 38] 8 of 3d mo 73

John Martyn renued his proposall for admission and was deferred till this day mo:

3d of 5 mo

Bro Miller being often absent from the church meetings and once required to appear to answer; and haveing not appeared is now required to appear without fail next meeting for government and that bro Tanner warn him.

Tho: Barns proposed and was according to the former order of the church to be propounded the next day; and to admitted [sic] this day moneth if there be no materiall objection proved against him.

Sam: Bullock proposed and was admitted as Tho: Barns;

31 of 5 mo 73

Tho: Barns and Sam: Bullock were fully assented to an [sic]

John Martyn renued his proposeall for admission and is deferred till next meeting.

[p. 39] 17th of 7ber 73

Joseph Kent propounded for admission and is according to order to be propounded publickly next lords day.

23th of october 1673

Joseph Kent is put of till he answer the charge brought against him by bro Redway.

The church ordered to be together this day 7night to humble ourselves by fasting and prayer before the lord in consideration of our present condition etc.

15 of 11th mo: 73

Joseph Carpenter was charged with severall evills of walking towards bro: Brown and bro Allen particularly that he did come to bro: brown for a subpoena when he had obtained the same already from Henry Smith. And that he contrary to the law both of god relating to church com[munion] and christian charity, and man did prosecute the said subpoena against bro Allen without as much as speaking with him; Whereupon it is ordered that the church meet this day 14night to hear the said matter and proceed therein and that bro Carpenter in the mean while do take some course to endeavor to satisfy the said brethren, etc.

16 of 2d mo: 74

Joseph Carpenter was admonished to take heed of such things as are abovementioned and upon his acknowledgement of much frailty and ignorant actings and promise of amendment hee was admitted to continuance of comunion and exhorted to the [study?] and practise of church discipline according to the word;

[p. 40] 14th of 3d mo 74

Robert Miller is to appear this day moneth and to answer for neglect of meetings with the church.

Hannah Lewes haveing absented from com[munion] severall times It is agreed that bro: Eastabrook and bro Bartram enquire of her in the name of the church whether shee owns herselfe to be a member of this church and if shee doth not positively deny herself so to be that then she be by them foorthwith required to appear this day moneth before the church;

18 of 4th mo 74

It is agreed by the church that our bro Robert Miller be noted a disorderly walker for impenitently continuing in neglect of comunion with the church and the sentence be pronounced the next lords day after the dismission of the assembly if then he doth not manifest repentance to satisfaction which was accordingly done.

5 of 5 mo

It is ordered that Hannah Lewes shall not have any further com[munion] with this church untill she hath given satisfaction for her absenting herself from the com[munion] of the church;

[p. 41] 3d of 7ber 74

Obadiah Bowen Sen and junior are to appear the next lords day after the last sermon and bro Jones and bro Bullock to warn them;

6 of 7ber 74

Obadiah Bowen Senior came this day before the Church and hath time given him till this day fortenight to be reconciled to the brethren and to endeavor reconciliation with those hee's offended with and then to answer and the church to come to a full conclusion concerning him.

Obadiah Bowen junior to appeare and answere next lords day.

14th 7ber 74

Obadiah Bowen junior not appeareing this day according to order is to be summoned to appear this day 14night.

27th of 7ber

Bro bowen junior was admonished and counselled to repentance for his withdrawing from the com[munion] of the church in the lords supper, and so left till further triall of his repentance.

Bro Bowen junior not appeareing nor being present this day is to be summoned to appear this day 7night.

4th of October – 74

Bro bowen junior being demanded his reason for not appearing said that he could not come without travailing much by night. Being demanded of his reason for withdrawing saith that he conceaved there were such things acted in the church that were ground of his withdrawing and that he could say no more;

[p. 42]

Bro bowen giveing no other account than as before is required to appear before the church next fifth day to answer to such charges as are to be then brought against him.

And bro miller also to be summoned to appear then etc.

8 of 8ber 74

Robert Miller [be]ing charged with contempt of comunion ever since he was noted as disorderly he answereth that as the case then stood and now standeth he could not as well profit here as elsewhere and if we shall grant others to have the heareing as well as wee then he will [shew?] his reasons otherwise he will not speak any more. He charged the church with not suffering him to give in his reasons for withdrawing; witnesses hereunto Obadiah Bowen junior Jonathan Bosworth Thomas Barns; Though the church were in dealing with him from 14th of 3 mo to the 18 of 4th mo: and then from the 5th of the week when the sentence was passed on him to the next Lords day after the same giveing liberty to him till then to manifest repentance and upon the said Lords day he was again desired imediately before the sentence to be pronounced to speak and not to report that he should not be heard; Upon the serious consideration of the premisses and of our duty thereupon It was by the whole church concluded that the sentence of excom[munication]

[p. 43] bee pronounced the next lords day come seavenight against the said Miller unlesse he will then satisfy the Church with repentance for the both evills charged and proved and he is required without fail to be then present.

Bro Bowen junior charged with neglect and contempt of the ordinances of the lord supper and of com[munion] with the church. To this he answereth that he was much troubled in his mind and had heard diverse reports and [as there?] [illegible] some things acted in the church which [then?] he thought were groundless and therefore he did easely withdraw which he was afterwards sorry for that he did not acquaint the church with it before he withdrew; Charged with slandering the pastor of the church as one endeavored to cause his sister to renounce what shee had sworn etc. He answered that he must confesse that he sees it to be an evill to report things before he knows the truth of them; He saith that if those things that he hath done were to be done again he would not do them bec[ause?] of the sinfullnesse of them; In relation to neglect of com[munion] and [goeing?] from us on meeting dayes he acknowledgeth that he hath done amisse and not walked according to rule and that for time to come he will endeavor to amend and walk more closely with the church; Hereupon it is ordered that he be admonished against such evills the next lords day and thence forward if hee continues penitent to enjoy continued fellowship and full com[munion] with the church;

[p. 44] 11th of October 74

✓ Bro obadiah Bowen junior declareing repent[ance] to satisfaction for the evills charged upon him was further exhorted to see the evill of them and thereupon the church declared their continuance of him in full com[munion] with them.

18 of October 74

✓ Robert Miller makeing some acknowledgement of his evills in withdrawing from the church and of his reporting such things as he had of the church; the sentence of excom[munication] was for the present suspended; as also his admission to comunion untill such time as there be a further triall of his repentance etc.

25 of October 74

✓ The church agreed that obadiah Bowen senior shall appear the 5 of November before the church to answer etc. and that the next lords day he be warned hereof or that messengers be then appointed to warn him etc.

5 of November 74

✓ Bro: Bowen Senior being charged with contempt of the assembling of the church together and of the lords table gives in answer; that he did apprehend that his friends did goe on in an evill course and as he thought were not willing to discourse with him in it; beeing charged with uncharitablenesse in thinking evill of our bretheren the committee for management of the prudentiall affaires of the town and reporting that they had done him wrong about takeing away some of his rights in this town as to the first part of the charge, he saith he hath not done knowingly if it was uncharitablenesse

[p. 45] and the later part he absolutely denies. Whereupon he was deferred from comeing to his censure this day upon the desire of some brethren that they might have further opportunity to endeavor to bring him to the sight of the evill of his wayes and to wait if it may please god to bring him to repentance.

3d of december 74

Obadiah Bowen desireing his censure might be deferred till he should privately confer with the pastor and the said pastor desireing it might be in the presence of 2 such as the said bro: Bowen shall chuse he thereupon chuseing bro: Luther and bro: kingsley the church ordered that the said confeirence shall be at the said pastors house the 2d day of the next week at 11 a clock and a report given thereof the next meeting afterward to the church.

31th of 10ber — 74

Bro: Bowen being desired to give an account of gods dealing with his spirit with relation to repentance for his sins charged on him saith that he doth see and acknowledge his sin of uncharitablenesse towards the brethren; and that he acnowledgeth that he did misse in doeing contrary to the rule of gods word in abstaining from comunion so long and that it was not in any contempt of the church nor yet of the ordinance of the lords supper.

[p. 46] Upon the full and serious consideration of the premisses he was [with?] the full consent of the whole church, admitted to a continuance in full comunion with the church the church judgeing that his abstaining from com[munion] though actually manifesting or seeming to manifest a contempt yet that it was not in his mind to contemn the church or Lords supper.

28 of 11th mo. 74

Whereas bro: Miller lyes under censure and dealing It is ordered that bro: Butterworth and br. kingsley go to him from the church to labor to convince him of his evill and to do their best to understand how god deals with his soule, as also to summon him to appear before the church this day moneth;

And whereas our sister Mary Bowen hath for a long time absented from com[munion] in the lords supper with the church, the said two brethren are in the name of the church to go to her and labor to convince her of her evill therein and to inform themselves the best they can with her spirituall frame and to make report of their actings herein to the church as aforesaid.

Whereas hitherto the time for the beginning of account for contribution was about 13 of 12 moneth yearely It is ordered that hencefoorth the year shall begin the first Lords day in November and that upon the 5 day of the respective ensuing week in every year the deacons bring an account of all the [paper?] contributed and the first church meeting in 12 moneth they bring in account how the same is satisfied that so the church may see that their ministery be comfortably supported.

26 of 12 mo 74

Robt Miller not appeareing according to his summons is to be sumoned again to appear this day moneth; by the same brethren;

Our sister Mary Bowen is to be summoned to appear this day moneth to answer her long neglect of comunion;

[p. 47] 26 of 1 mo 75

Robert Miller apeared and gives answer to his charg for neglect of appearens 26 12m last that it was trayning day in Rehoboth which answer was judged insufficient. And he not fully manifesting repentans for the ly charged on him for which he lyes under dealing is left under his censures till this day moneth when he is to give the church a fuller account of the lords dealings with his soule in relacion to conviction of and conversion from those evills charged on him.

Sister Mary Bowen being prevented of appeareing this day by her litle childs sicknesse is to appear this day moneth.

22th of 2d mo — 75

Robert Miller being formerly charged with a ly and for that and other causes judged worthy of excom[munication] he doth yet persist therein contrary to plain proof made 8 of October 74 and doth not acknowledge the same to be a ly though it was manifestly then proved and beeing desired to show what he had to say to vindicate himselfe therein; he said that he had said what he had to say etc. And whereas bro: Cole hath by the desire of the church proposed now once more to him whether he hath any cause yet to shew for his withdrawing he giveing none but thereupon answered if that be the mind of the church then that he desired to have others indifferent persons to hear the same; and though he was often required to give the said reasons for withdrawing he answered severall times that he would not etc.

[p. 48] He further saith that everything is taken against him in the worst sense; and that wee do catch at his expressions according to his apprehension; hereupon consideracion of the whole [illegible] it is agreed that the next lords day after the last sermon the sentence of excom[munication] be pronounced against him unlesse the church shall see cause from his manifest repentance to revoke or defer his censure.

Sister Mary Bowen not appearing nor her husband our bro who was desired to require her to be here etc. It is ordered th[at] shee appeare this day moneth etc.

Abreviat of that dealing [with] Robt Miller

Robt Miller was often [hole in page] for neglect of comunion these severall years past. Upon 18th of 4th mo: noted [a] disorderly walker for impenitent continuance therein; And afterword viz 8 of [octob]er 74 being yet found further guilty of lying and falsly chargeing the church with not suffering him to give in his reasons for withdrawing It was ordered that the sentence of excom[munication] should be denounced against him on the lords day then next ensuing unlesse in the meantime hee should manifest repentance to satisfaction upon which lords day he made some acknowledgement of his evill in withdrawing from the church whereupon the sentence of his excom[munication] was thereupon suspended untill such time as there should be a further triall of his repentance and finding no further signes thereof he was by an order of 28th of 11th mo 74 sumoned to appear the 26 of the 12 But he then not appeareing was sumoned again to appear the 26 of 1 mo.; When he appeared and after many convinceing arguments and perswasions he was at that time put off till the 22th of the 2d mo. to the end that wee might see how the lord would deal with his soule etc. At which time appeareing he was found guilty as before
1 of that ly and false accusation of the church
2 of justifying himself contrary to manifest proof
3 of rejecting all the counsel and exhortations that were used to perswade him to see his evill and to repent

[p. 49]
4 of contumacy and contempt of the church
desireing even at this day to let them understand those his reasons which he had

falsely charged them with hindering him to declare etc. Whereupon excom[munication] was ordered to be without further delay denounced according to former agreement.

18th of december 79
Sarah Luther proposed formerly for bapt[ism] and this day is approved of.
John Thuber [sic] and Mary his wife are admitted to comunion with us and they beeing under the government of Christ in the church.
Joan Martyn proposed for bapt[ism] and was approved of.

16 of 11th mo — 79
John Martyn proposeing for bapt[ism] was assented to.
Thankful Bullock proposeing for bapt[ism] was assented to.

11th of 1 mo. 1680
Thankful Bullock proposed and was assented to.
John Martyn proposed and was assented to.
Hezekiah Luther proposed and was assented to.
Sarah Eastabrook proposed and was assented to.
Caleb Eddy proposed and was assented to.
Hannah Padock proposed and was assented to.
Priscilla Thurber proposed, and was put off till wee see a further change in her.
Bro Brown and bro. Allen are desired to speak with bro Redway with rellacion to his long absence.

[p. 50] 12 of 1st mo — 80
Priscilla Thurber was assented to.

6 of 3d mo — 80
John Thurber proposed; and was assented to.
Ordered that this day 7night there shall be a church meeting at the pastors howse.

4 of 4th mo:

1 of 5 mo:
Abigail Smith proposed and was referred to the meeting at kickamewet where bro cole bro eastabrook bro Caleb edey and J.M. [i.e., John Myles] are to see whether they can find her fit and to report what they do herein to the church this day moneth.
James Cole proposed and was referred to the Sts aforesaid.
Mary the wife of James Cole is to be propounded next Lds day.
Noah Mason; is to be propounded next Lds day.
[Abi?]
John Allen propounded;
Mary Cole Senior propounded.

29th of 5 mo
Mary Crabtree propounded.

[p. 51] Sept 1st — 82
Ruth Winslow propounded and was receaved into the church.

15 of 7ber 82
Jo Thurber being charged with severall evills but especially with a high contempt of the church, when dealing with him for his negligence of meetings and

com[union]; is called to an account this day for the same; and manifested some sorrow for his severall evills the church agree to defer the full determinacion of his case to this day 14night. Upon which day he acknowledged his evills, with relacion to bro Allen, the pastor and the whole church and being admonished against pride passion neglect of meetings and exhorted to a more circumspect walking for the future was admitted to continuance of com[union].

[p. 52] nathanell kingsly to be laid under admonition till hee repent

[p. 53] At A meeting of the Church the 27 of the 6 month brother miller Acknowledging his ofence with sorrow for the same was Admited to have communion with the Church.

At a church meeting the 28th of Agust 1707 it was then agreed and voated that all the difference which arose from a paper writt by brother sweeting shall no more be agitated upon in the church.

May the seventh 1713 the church meeting at swansey have concluded that Brother Hugh Cole and joshua Lowther be put By there Communion the next first day and untill such time as the[y] give the church sattisfaction and both to com heare next church meeting.

May the seventh 1713 Brother nath Kingsley and nath Lowther are put By there Communion nex firs day and untill thay shall give the church sattisfaction and next church meeting both to appeare.

June the 4th 1713 nathaneell kinsly charg nathanell Lowther with to be a wiced [i.e., wicked] and a deceiptful man and that nath Lowther said all kingslys doings was to make Joshua lowther sel his place kingsly also is charged with reporting evill in saying nat Lowther shuld say that laying on of hands was an invention of men and Docktrin of Divels.

[p. 54] Swansey at our Church meeting september the first 1715 concerning the difference between Zachchry [sic] yeedy [i.e., Eddy] and nathaneell Lowther thomas wood and Joseph Butterworth the Church have appointed five men to meet them on the spot of land on the 8th day of this month september and to make report to the Church the next Church meeting there names that are sent is thomas ormsbe: francis wilson: John west Edmond Ingals Ebenezer Bullock James Wheaten is mentioned.

October the 6th 1715 then the above mentioned Brethren made there return to the Church and found according to the Best of there understanding that the land in Contest was Laid out to Brother nathaneell Lowther at our Church meeting and at this Church meeting the Church have judged Brother Zachry yedy and Bro thomas wood to bee the parsons that are the offenders.

October the 6th 1715 Brother John Round Joshua Lowther and Benjamin Col are messengers sent to Thomas Wood to requier said wood to give his attendance here the next Church meeting day being the first 5 day in November to give reason why he attend not our church meeting.

November 3d 1715

Our messengers make there return and doth say that brother wood did say hee should take his one [i.e., own] time to com if hee were ready then hee would com but the church have agreed that if hee com not next church meeting then to proced with him according to Rule.

[p. 55] The 27 of the 6 month bro Coll and bro Caleb Eddy is ordered by the Church to warne bro butterworth to Appear befor the Church this day month And bro Ingraham.

It is ordered Also by the Church that our conferance is to be keept up in its Cours monthly begining first at bro martins.

At a church meeting Aprill the 7th 1715 then sent by Joshua Lowther and John Round to Thomas wood to warn him to appeare at our Church meeting May the 4th 1715 to give the reasons of his not coming to meeting or his absenting and hee came and haveing given no sattisfaction to the Church is put under the first admonition.

At a church meeting June the 2d 1715 Brother wood brought no witnes against Butterworth and Lowther but hee is requiered to do it against next church meet Bretheren witnesed that Lowther and Butterworth spake no thing of what he accused them with.

[p. 56] Agust the 30th 1705 Then att a Church meeting bro: Sweeting not appearing the church ordered [sic]

At a church meeting December the first 1715 then that Joseph Carpenter and William wood testified that yedy [i.e., Eddy] and wood said land was not laid and Butterworth and Lowther said it was and that william wood said Butterworth said to wood hee would mak him know it was laid out.

[p. 57] Agust the 30th 1705 Whereas bro: cornelius salisbury apeared this day before the church and was dealt withall for not paying bro: Tanner his mony due to him bro: Bozworth and bro: Thomas are ordered by the church to warn him to appeare before the church the 13th day of 7ber next for his ill behavior and cariadge.

Aprill the 24th att a church meeting it is ordered by the church that brother calender and bro: Thomas should warn bro: Salisbury to be att the next church meeting:

[pp. 58-59] Blank

[p. 60] July the second 1713 at a church meeting then was Chosen by the Church then assembled togather Henry Sweeting Ruling Elder and then was chosen Nathaniel Luther Deacon.

January the 5th 1714 then was Recd from Joseph Butterworth Hesikiah Eben Bullock and Richad Hardin the return concerning Zachery yedyes charge and they joyntly clear him of it.

[p. 61] At a church Meeting the 1 February 1717/18 then voted that Deacon Nathaniel Luther John Thomas and Richard Harding be Impowred to act for and in behalf of the church in all such matters and things as the church shall be concerned in respecting the law.

Swanzey Feb: 1 1717/18

At a meeting of the Church for Making Choice of a Man to Sustain the place of a Publick Minister In our Town In the Room and Stead of our Reverend Elder Samuel Luther late Deceased: After Some Agitation had Elder Ephraim Wheaten was Unanimously Chosen by the Church of Swanzey In order to his being Presented to the Town for their Concurrance.

[p. 62]
July the 4: 1765
Then reckoned and setteled the acounts on paper pind here unto, and find due to the commity one shiling: law[ful] m[oney]

1765 September the 1:	paid mr wood	1-3-6
1766 January:16:	paid mr wood	1-16-0
1766: February:14	paid Joseph Sanders for mr wood	1-5-4
1766: December:	paid mr wood 1 1/2 of wood	0-14-3
1767 March 25	paid mr wood	0-06-0
1767 March 3	paid mr wood	1-16-0
October 5/1768	paid to Brother Nicolas Thomas	1-07-6
paid to Brother peck		1-00-6
paid at the same time to Brother Nicolas Thomas		0-03-4
March 13	paid to mr wood	01-16-0

1770 – March:25 then paid to mr wood from daniel hill as use money	0-6-0

[p. 63]

1765: September: the 1 Receved of John Brown	1-3-6
1766: January:16: Receved of Sison	1-16-0
1766: March 1 Receved of Jeremiah Luther	0-9-0
1766: December Receved of John Thurber 1 1/2 of wood	0-14-3
1766 May 19 Receved of Daniel Hill	0-6-0
1767 March 25 Receved of Daniell Hill	0-6-0
1767 March 3 Recived of Georg Sison	1-16-0
October 5/1768 Receved of Jerimiah Luther	02-08-0
Januwary 16/1769 Reced of Jerimiah Luther	00-17-5
March 13 1769 then receved of Gorge Sison	01-16-0

[p. 64]

January 16/1769 then of the mony left to repair the meting house in remains in Brother Thomases hands	0-14-1

[pp. 65-69] Blank

[p. 70]
An Hymn to be Sung after the Lord's Super

The Bread of Life hath been our Meat

[p. 71] Blank

[p. 72]
May 1709 the Church meeting Day brother Thomas Wood did charge brother John Thomas for saying that he did beleive that they had the money amongst them

June the last day 1709 on the Church meeting Day: the matter abovesaid then examened brother Caleb Eddy and brother Nathll Luther gave evidence to the Church: that brother John Thomas did declare that if brother wood and his wife would say that they had not the money directly nor indirectly he would acknowlidg that hee had an evill surmise of them and would be sorry for it:

On the abovesaid Church meting day Jun the Church made choice of elder wheaton Samuell bulloock Thomas ormesbie Caleb Eddy Joseph Butterworth Nathll Luther James Bowen ware chosen to heare and Determine the matter betwen brother Thomas and brother Wood.

[p. 73] Blank

[p. 74]

1770 — may the 5	Provided for the table — by the order of the Church	L0-5-6
June 7	Provided for the table	0-0-6
July the 8	Provided for the table	0-2-0
August 5	Provided for the table	0-3-0
Sept th 8	Provided for the table	0-5-0
		0-16-0

July:18:1772 Then the Churches Committy met at the widdow Hannah Thomas and setteled all accounts of Deac[on] Nicholas Thomas Late of Swanzey Decased Concearning the Churches affaire and found due to the Church to Ballence foure pence Lawfull mony as witness our hands

Hannah Thomas

Aaron Barnes
James Short
Thomas Kingsley
Churches Committy

[p. 75]

1770 — May:6:	Received of the Church	0-4-0
June the 7	Recd of the Church	0-1-5
June the 10	Recd of the Church	0-2-2
July the 8	Recd of the Church	0-5-2
July 11	Recd of Brother Benjamin Thurber of Providence one dollar for the charge of the sacriment	0-6-0
August 5 —	Received of the Church	0-2-0
Sept the 8 —	Received of the Church	0-5-7
		1-6-4

July:18:1772	the widdow Hannah Thomas Cr By mony paid Aron Barny	0-0-4

[pp. 76-88] Blank

[p. 89]
persons absent 28 of 11th mo: from church mee[ting]

Zachary edey
obadiah Bowen sen
bro Ingraham

---

persons absent 26 of 12 mo persons absent
br Cole bro Luther bro Redway bro Joans bro obad Bowen sen, bro Carpenter
26 of 1 mo 55 [sic] there were absent
bro Cole bro Jones bro: Barns bro Butterworth
bro Bosworth bro Bowen jun
22th of 2d mo absent;
bro Jones, bro Bowen junior bro Bowen senior
bro Ingraham, br Bullock

[p. 90]
Joseph Carpenter
Robert Jones
X Allice Kingsley -00-01-04

[p. 91]
[worn] Myles
James Brown
Jo: Butterworth
Jo: Allen
Nic: Tanner
Tho: Estabrook
Hugh Cole
Eldad Kingsley
Ben: Alby
Jonathan Bosworth
Obadiah
Obadiah Bowen
Robt Miller
Wm Bartram
James Redway
Zach Edey
Wm Buckland
Gerard Ingraham
Sam Luther

Katherin Myles
Sarah Tanner
Sarah Butterworth
Lidia Brown
Dorothy Brown
Sarah Bartram
Elizabeth Edey
Allice Edey
Mary Bowen
Hannah Bosworth
Hannah Alby
Mary Mason
Hannah Lewes
Hannah Jones
X George Aldrige -01-04
X Katharine Aldrige -01-4d

[p. 92]

Mr Brown	00-15-00
Jo Allen	00-8-00
bro Tanner	00-03-00
bro Cole	00-03-00
bro: Bosworth	01-00
bro Alby	00-01-00
br Butterworth	00-04-00
br: Kingsley	00-01-00
br: Bartram	00-01-00
br: Eastabr:	00-2-00
br: Luther	00-2-00
John Myles	00-10-00
bro: barns	00-01-00
bro bullock	00-01-00

bro miller	00-02-00
ob: Bowen sen	
ob: Bowen junior	
Joseph Carpenter	00-02-00
Gerrard Ingraham	00-01-00
Zach Eddy	00-01-00
Robt Jones	
bro Redway	00-01-00
bro Buckland	
Sister Elis Edey	00-01-00
Caleb Edey	00-04-00

[p. 93]

Mr Willet	01-00-00
bro: Jo: B.	00-12-00
br: Tanner	-08-00
bro: Jones	00-07-00
br: Easta:	00-05-00
br: Luther	00-06-00
br: Buckl.	00-10-00
b Ingraham	00-04-00
b Carpenter	04-00
Mr pain	00-10-00
br: Redaway	00-08-00
br: Miller	00-04-00
br Allen	0-10-00
br kingsley	00-04-00
	05-11-00
Sister Bowen	00-02-00
Sister Kingsley	00-02-00
	5-06-00
Gilbert Brooks	00-06-00
	6-02-00
Mrs pain	00-05-00
	06-07-00

[p. 94]
[n]ames of brethren absent
[worn] Ingram and his wife
[worn] Tanner
[worn] Buckland
[worn] Bowen
[worn] sent the 24 of 10 mo.
[worn] Bowen

[p. 95]
bro: browns Account 26 of dece[mber]
– 72

In wine	02-06-07 ob
wheat	00-07-06
	02-14-01 ob

[p. 96]

A hymn to be sung after the lord supper

The bread of life hath been our meat
the word of life our light
the spirit of life taught us to eat
christs flesh; which is our right

The highest of our prayses be
returnes so short and low
for mercyes such as now wee see
god doth on us bestow

For wormes wee are our best works dung
our life, thoughts, words are vain
How can the fruit from such trees sprung
be to Jehovah gain

Besides, the mercie is soe great
that wisest angells misse
duely to prise that blessed meat
that now our portion is

It is the precious flesh and blood
of Jesus Christ the Lord
the which he offer'd for the good
of all that were abhorred

He on the cross our sinnes did beare
soe taking them away
that soe noe more should danger fear
who chuse him for our way

From law wrath hell he did us free
that we might alwayes be
Children and heyrs his face to see
even to eternity

then who condemnes? or who now layes
unto our charge a blot?
Christ dy'd and rose; yea god now sayes
you are without a spot

[p. 97]

At gods right hand [worn]
and doth a [worn] provide
whether his spirit [worn] leads
[illegible] though we daily [worn]

Now to our god who gave his [worn]
the sonne who suffer'd de[ath]
the holy ghost who leads us
by his celestiall breath

All glory honor laud and prayse
be given with all our might
not onely now but hence alwayes
as is most meet and right.
Amen

[p. 98]
[first column]
Tho Willet
Nathaniel Pain
John Dickse
Richard Sharp
Wm Ingraham
John Myles
Tho: Barns
John Cole
Wm Howard
[illegible] Allen
[T]ho Lewes
[— —thaniel?] Low
[worn] Salisbury
[Jo]hn Brown
[worn]zekia Luther
Joseph Lewes
Caleb Edey
[worn] padock
[worn]th: Lewes

[second column]
Sam Wheaten
Tho: Man
Wm Cohown
John Martyn
Isaack Allen
Samuel Woodbury
Joseph Wheaten
Jo: Wheaten
John Hardin
Mr Childs
Jo: Crabtree
Wm Brown
Allen Whilley[?]
Steph: Pain Sen.
Nath: Peck
Israel Peck
Nath: Chafy
Joseph Chafy
Jo Cobley
Dan Allen
Neh: Allen 39

[third column]
James [worn]
Jo: [worn]
Jo B[worn]
John W[worn]
Sam: Luther
Robt Jones
Zach Edey
Hugh Cole
Nich: Tanner
Ben: Alby
Samson Mason
Joseph Carpenter
Gere: Ingraham
Jonathan Bosworth
Ob: Bowen
Tho: Eastabrook
Wm Bartram
George Aldridge
Eldad kingesley 19

[fourth column]
[about eight names worn and illegible]
Jo Brown
Hezekiah Luther
Joseph Lewes
Caleb Edey
Jo Padock
Nath Lewes
Jo Padock
Tho Man
Wm Cohown
Jo: Martyn
Isaack Allen
Joseph Wheaten
Jo: Hardin
Jo Crabtree
Nath Peck
Isr: Peck
Nath Chafy
Jos: Chafy
Jo: Cobley
Dan Allen
Neh: Allen 29

[fifth column]
[about twelve names
worn and illegible]

[pp. 99-102] Blank

Robert Charles Anderson is a Fellow of the American Society of Genealogists, and specializes in colonial New England research. He currently resides in Salt Lake City, Utah.

ELIZABETH DEARBORN OF NORTH HAMPTON

George Freeman Sanborn, Jr.

Of five contemporary Elizabeth Dearborns in eighteenth-century Hampton, N.H., including the towns of North Hampton and Hampton Falls, three have been a source of confusion to genealogists over the years (see "Robert Drake's Two Wives" in the *Register* 138 [1984]: 107-114). One of these three remains untraced (ibid., 109). After a most painstaking search, the writer believes he can add to our knowledge of this woman.

Elizabeth[4] Dearborn, daughter of Samuel[3] (*Henry*[2], *Godfrey*[1]) and Mercy (Batchelder) Dearborn, was born at Hampton, in that part later set off as North Hampton, "the 11th of the 8th m: 1717" (Hampton Town Records, 1:472), or 11 October 1717. Samuel[3] Dearborn had settled at the "North Hill" very early, having come from Hampton center. This part of Hampton became known as North Hill Parish on 17 November 1738, and was incorporated as the Town of North Hampton 26 November 1742. Edmund B. Dearborn in his manuscript, "The Dearborn Family," located at the Society, states "Samuel has sometimes been called the pioneer of North Hampton, and is said to have built the first house in the town 'north of the brook'" (p. 22). Though Samuel[3] Dearborn and his wife both died at dates unknown, leaving no record of probate, it has been known what became of all their twelve children, with the exception of the above daughter, Elizabeth. Samuel deeded his land to his sons in his old age, thus obviating a division of his property, which would have been of inestimable value in this case.

Most of the first book of the North Hampton Congregational Church records has been missing and presumed destroyed for over 183 years. The portion of the first book which was saved, and subsequent books, are very complete and marvelously informative, and one can only regret that the rest of the first book is not available. Rev. Jonathan French, who began to serve the North Hampton Church on 18 November 1801, assiduously set about inventorying and organizing the church records, and wrote this interesting remark on the remaining portion of the first book of records: "This contains a remnant of North Hampton Church Records Vol. I AD. 1739–1766 . . . AD. 1801. At this date only pages 53-64, inclusive, of the I Vol. of North-Hampton Church Records are extant." The rest, he cryptically writes, are "said to have been destroyed through carelessness or otherwise" during the ministry of his predecessor, Rev. Benjamin Thurston, which lasted from 2 November 1785 through 27 October 1800. The surviving original North Hampton Congregational Church records, as well as a typed, indexed copy of the vital statistics contained therein, are now at the New Hampshire Historical Society in Concord. Neither Elizabeth's marriage, nor any other mention

bequests are made to Dr. Collins and to a Dr. William Hughes (spelled also Hues) of Boston, who later signed for his bequest by making his mark H.

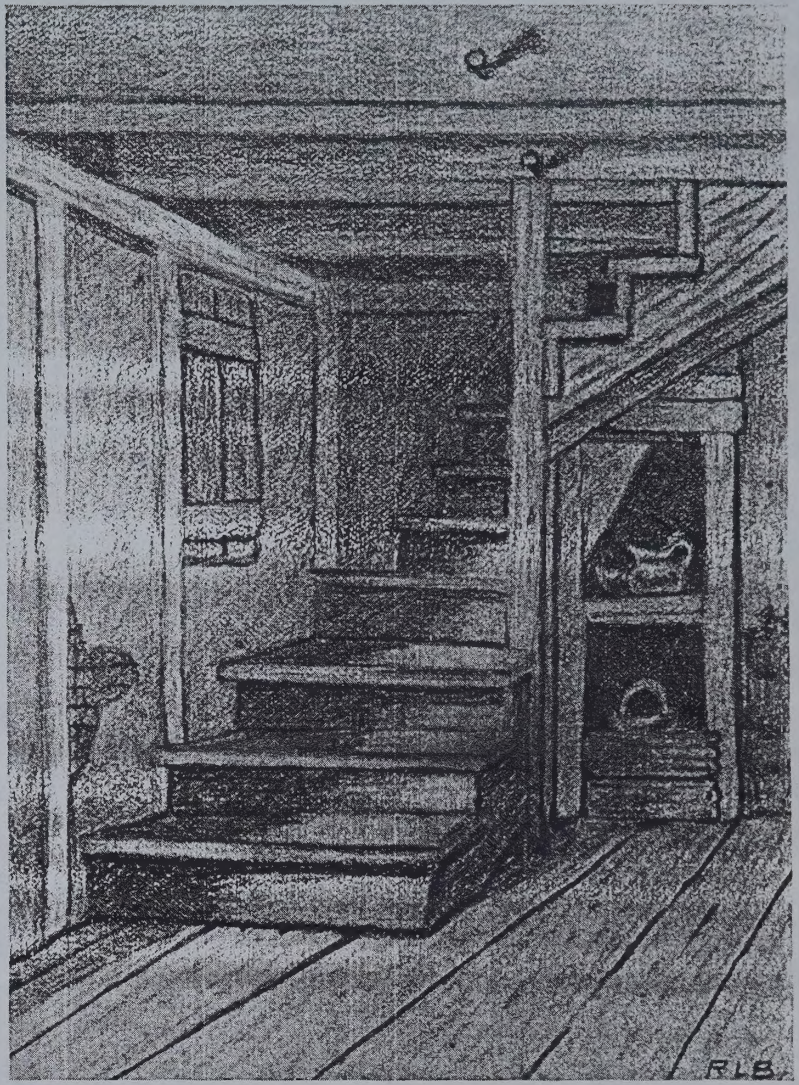
After the turn of the century there are records of Rehoboth people sending out of the town for medical skill, as shown on 23 Feb. 1721/2 in the account * of the estate of Joseph^3 Peck, Rehoboth—"to Docter Tolman, 10s". This was undoubtedly James^2 Tallman (Peter^1), born at Portsmouth, R. I., about 1668, died there in 1724, calling himself in his will, "doctor of Physic". The will of Thomas Barnes of Providence, 24 Sept. 1706, refers "Especially to my careful & kind Doctor Mr. James Tallman".

On 18 Mar. 1728/9 the account of Jacob Ormsbee, administrator of the estate of his sister Esther Redway,† Rehoboth, deceased, lists the charges: "to Doctor Sweeting, 23s; to Doctor Walbridge, 48s; to one Jorney to Norridge [Norwich] to fetch Doct. Walbridge £2/08; to keeping the doctor and his horse one week, 12s". This was probably Henry^2 Sweeting of Attleboro, son of Mr. Henry^1 Sweeting of Rehoboth. We do know that he was called doctor in 1743.

The first epidemic death in May was that of the wife of Benjamin Allen who had just moved into the town from Salisbury, Massachusetts. Just where he lived we do not know. We do know, however, that the focal center of this epidemic was in the northwest corner of the "ring of the greene" ‡ where George Kendrick, on the west, and John^2 and Abraham^2 Perrin lived side by side on three home lots on the north side of what is now Hoyt Avenue, between the present Bourne Avenue and the Wannamoisett Country Club house, in the town of East Providence [Rumford], R. I. In these three houses occurred six of the ten epidemic deaths, four in the house of Abraham Perrin, one in John Perrin's, and one in George Kendrick's.

Philip^2 Walker's house § was about a mile southwest of the "ring of the greene". Ephraim Hunt's house was about three-quarters of a mile southeast on the west side of the "ring of the greene" on what is now called Greenwood Avenue. Ensign Thomas Willmarth lived on this same street about two hundred yards south of him. This section of the "ring" is now called "East Providence Centre".

An analysis of the Rehoboth deaths for the year 1694 shows that the first one was that of Isabell Newsome, the 3-day-old daughter



---

* *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. IV, p. 40.

† *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. VI, p. 219.

‡ The home lots were first laid out fronting a rectangle which extended northeast and southwest about half a mile wide by about three-quarters of a mile long, the total distance around being two and seven-tenths miles. Each settler fenced the front of his home lot, and this fence extended around the rectangle, which was called the "ring of the greene", or common. The settlers' houses stood on their "home lots" back of the fence, and the "greene" or common in front of the houses and fence was the common pasture for cattle. The first church stood in the center of the green, about seventy-five yards from where the present Newman Congregational Church now stands.

Deacon Philip Walker's house, corner of Massasoit Avenue and North Broadway, East Providence, Rhode Island, as it appeared in 1890. The house is still standing. The right-hand half is the original house built by Deacon Philip Walker in 1679; the left-hand half was added about one hundred years later. On his death, in August 1679, the building was uncompleted, and on 1 Nov. 1679 the Plymouth Colony Court gave his widow Jane permission to finish it at the expense of the estate.

This was also the home of Philip Walker, Jr., whose wife, Mary Bowen, died on 8 May 1694 during the Rehoboth Epidemic. See pages 106 and 107.

Due to boundary line changes, this house, originally in Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony, was later in Seekonk, Massachusetts, and finally in East Providence, Rhode Island.

The original attic staircase in the old Philip Walker house, home of Mary (Bowen) Walker who died on 8 May 1694 during the Rehoboth Epidemic. From a pencil sketch made by the author in 1892. This ancient staircase was removed in 1899 to provide space for a bathroom.

bequests are made to Dr. Collins and to a Dr. William Hughes (spelled also Hues) of Boston, who later signed for his bequest by making his mark H.

After the turn of the century there are records of Rehoboth people sending out of the town for medical skill, as shown on 23 Feb. 1721/2 in the account* of the estate of Joseph^3 Peck, Rehoboth—"to Docter Tolman, 10s". This was undoubtedly James^2 Tallman (Peter^1), born at Portsmouth, R. I., about 1668, died there in 1724, calling himself in his will, "doctor of Physic". The will of Thomas Barnes of Providence, 24 Sept. 1706, refers "Especially to my careful & kind Doctor Mr. James Tallman".

On 18 Mar. 1728/9 the account of Jacob Ormsbee, administrator of the estate of his sister Esther Redway,† Rehoboth, deceased, lists the charges: "to Doctor Sweeting, 23s; to Doctor Walbridge, 48s; to one Jorney to Norridge [Norwich] to fetch Doct. Walbridge £2/08; to keeping the doctor and his horse one week, 12s". This was probably Henry^2 Sweeting of Attleboro, son of Mr. Henry^1 Sweeting of Rehoboth. We do know that he was called doctor in 1743.

The first epidemic death in May was that of the wife of Benjamin Allen who had just moved into the town from Salisbury, Massachusetts. Just where he lived we do not know. We do know, however, that the focal center of this epidemic was in the northwest corner of the "ring of the greene" ‡ where George Kendrick, on the west, and John^2 and Abraham^2 Perrin lived side by side on three home lots on the north side of what is now Hoyt Avenue, between the present Bourne Avenue and the Wannamoisett Country Club house, in the town of East Providence [Rumford], R. I. In these three houses occurred six of the ten epidemic deaths, four in the house of Abraham Perrin, one in John Perrin's, and one in George Kendrick's.

✓ Philip^2 Walker's house § was about a mile southwest of the "ring of the greene". Ephraim Hunt's house was about three-quarters of a mile southeast on the west side of the "ring of the greene" on what is now called Greenwood Avenue. Ensign Thomas Willmarth lived on this same street about two hundred yards south of him. This section of the "ring" is now called "East Providence Centre".

An analysis of the Rehoboth deaths for the year 1694 shows that the first one was that of Isabell Newsome, the 3-day-old daughter

The original attic staircase in the old Philip Walker house, home of Mary (Bowen) Walker who died on 8 May 1694 during the Rehoboth Epidemic. From a pencil sketch made by the author in 1892. This ancient staircase was removed in 1899 to provide space for a bathroom. See pages 106 and 107.

---

* *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. IV, p. 40.

† *Bristol County Probate Records*, vol. VI, p. 219.

‡ The home lots were first laid out fronting a rectangle which extended northeast and southwest about half a mile wide by about three-quarters of a mile long, the total distance around being two and seven-tenths miles. Each settler fenced the front of his home lot, and this fence extended around the rectangle, which was called the "ring of the greene", or common. The settlers' houses stood on their "home lots" back of the fence, and the "greene" or common in front of the houses and fence was the common pasture for cattle. The first church stood in the center of the green, about seventy-five yards from where the present Newman Congregational Church now stands.

§ Philip^2 Walker's house was burned by the Indians in King Philip's War. After the war he started to rebuild his house on the foundations of the old one, but died in 1679 before the new house was finished. The same year, two hundred and sixty-five years ago, the Plymouth Court gave his widow Jane permission to finish the house at the expense of the estate, so we know the documented history of this house, which is still [1944] standing. The house has never been out of the possession of the family and is still occupied by descendants in the tenth generation. This is the oldest surviving house in old Rehoboth, and was built thirty-six years after the settlement of Seekonk in 1643.